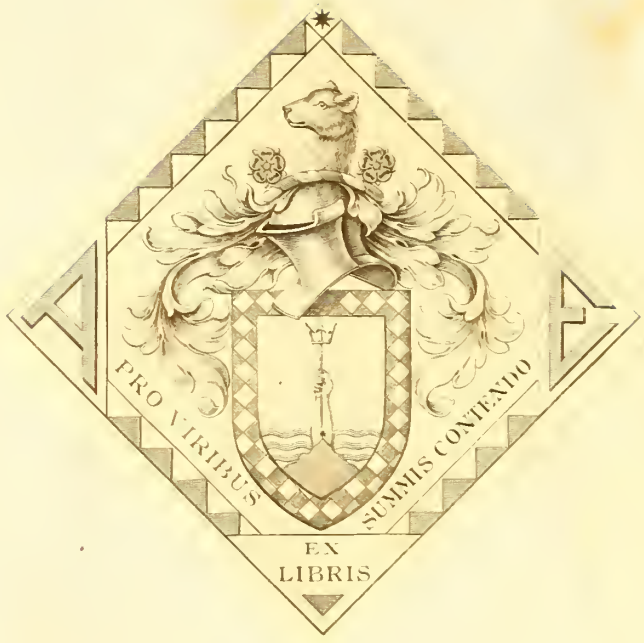
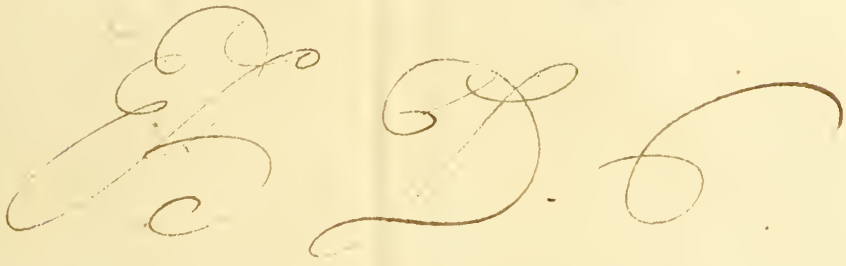

PRO VIRIBUS
SUMMIS CONTENDO
EX
LIBRIS

FABYANS CRONYCLE, newly prynted wyth the Cronycle, Actes and Dedes done in the tyme . . . of King Henry VII.
Finely printed in **black letter** with woodcut border to title-pages, 2 vols. in 1, folio, olive morocco extra, gilt edges (*a few blank margins or corners skilfully repaired and slight worming, otherwise* A CLEAN AND TALL COPY), **£50**
Printed by Wyllyam Rastell, 1533

The rare Second Edition of this famous Chronicle of which only four copies are recorded in the Short-Title Catalogue.



STC 10660

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2016

https://archive.org/details/fabyanscronyclen00faby

Fabyans cronycle

newly prynted/wyth the cronycle, actes, and dedes done in the tyme of the reygne of the moste excellent prynce kynge Henry the vii. father vnto our most drad soue-rayne lord kynge Henry the .viii.

To whom be all honour, reuerẽce, and ioyfull contynaunce of his prosperous reygne, to the pleasure of god and weale of this his realme

A M E N.

Prentyd at London
By wyllyam Rastell.

1533

CVM PRIVILEGIO.



The table of the fyrste volume of Fabyanes cronycle.

Albyon / and why thys ile of olde tyme so was called, it apereth in the fourth lefe the fyrst chapytre.

Brute the sonne of Siluius / and of hys ozygynall and fyrste cõmyng into thys lande. ca.ii. folio. iiii.

Brute of hys fyrst landynge. ca.iii. fo.v.

Thys Brute the sõ of Siluius Posthumus, descended of the noble blode of Troyans, entred fyrst ỹ ile of Albion which he after named Brytayne and now is called England, in the yere of the worlde.iiii. thousande lxiii / and before the incarnacyon of Chryst, as in the begynnyng of this worke is more openly shewed / & reygned yeres.xxiiii. Troynuaunt or London of thys kynge was fyrst foũded.ca.iiii. fo.v.

Locrinus or Locryne, the eldeste sonne of Brute / beganne hys reygne ouer Brytayne in the countrye called Leogria or Logiers, that after was named myddell Englande, in ỹ yere of the worlde.iiii.thousande.lxxxvii. and reygned yeres.xx. capi.v. folio. vi.

Gwendoloena or Gwendoleyn, ỹ wyfe of Locryne, began to reygne as quene ouer the Brytons or countrey of Logiers, in the yere of the worlde iiii.thousande.C.vii. and reygned yeres.xv.ca.vi. fo.vi.

Madan the sonne of Locrine and of the sayd Gwendolyne, began hys reygne ouer the Brytons, in the yere of the worlde.iiii. thousande.C. and xxii / and reygned after the agreement of many wryters and moste yeres.xl. ca.vii. fo.vi.

In the seconde yere of thys kyngs reygne ended the thyrde age of the worlde. And Dauyd began to reygne ouer Israell.

Memprycus or Memprycius the sonne of Madan, beganne hys rule ouer the Brytons, in the yere of the worlde.iiii.M.C.xii / & the yere before Chrystes incarnacyon. and reygned yeres.xx. ca.viii. folio. vi.

Ebrancus or Ebrank the sonñ of Memprycte, begã to rule the Brytõs in the yere of the worlde.iiii.M.C. lxxxii.& reygned yeres.xii. Thys kyng made the citie of yorke, ỹ town of Acryncte, & the castelles of Dunbarre & Eddynbourgh in Scotland ca.ix. fo.vii.

Brute Viriis scutum or Brute Grenesshelde, sonne of Ebranke, was made ruler of the Brytons, in ỹ yere of the worlde.iiii.M.ii.C.xlii / & reygned yeres.xii.ca.x. fo.vii.

Leylus or Leyr the sonne of the forenamed Brute, beganne hys rule ouer Brytayn, in the yere of ỹ worlde iiii.M.ii.C.liiii.and ruled yeres.xxv Thys kynge founded the towne of Carleyll.ca.xi. fo.vii.

Lud Hurdibras or Rudibras the sonñ of Leyl, begã hys dominiõ ouer ỹ Brytõs, in the yere of ỹ worlde.iiii. M.ii.C.lxxix.& ruled yeres.xxxix. This kyng made wynchester, Cauterbury, & Septõ now named Shaftesbury.ca.xii. fo.vii.

Baldud the ſonne of Lud, began hys dompnyon ouer the Bꝛytaynes, in the yere of the woꝛlde.iiii.thouſād iii.C.xviii/ and reygned yeres.xx. Thys kynge founded the towne of Bathe / and the bathes wythin the ſame after ſome wꝛyters. ca.xiii. folio. vii.

Leyꝛ oꝛ Leyer the ſonne of Baldud was made ruler ouer the Bꝛytons, in the yere of the woꝛlde.iiii.M iii.C.and.xxxviii/and ruled yeres.lx. Thys kynge made the towne of Leyceſtre.ca.xiiii. fo.vii.

Coꝛdeilla the yongeſte doughter of the foꝛenamed Leyer, beganne to rule the Bꝛytons, in the yere of the woꝛlde.iiii. thouſande.iii.C.xcviii. & ruled yeres .v.ca.xvi. folio.viii.

Cunedagius with Marganus his neuewes, ſonnes of the two ſiſters of Coꝛdeilla, beganne theyꝛ dominyon ouer Bꝛytayne, in the yere of ỹ woꝛld iiii.thouſande.iiii. hundꝛeth and.iii. & cōtynued yeres.ii.ca.xvii. fo.viii.

This Cunedagius foꝛenamed, after that he in batayll hadde ſlayne Marganus, beganne hys ſenyoury ouer the Bꝛytons, in the yere of the woꝛlde.iiii. M. iiii. C. v. and ruled after moſte wꝛyters yeres .xxviii. ca.xviii. fo.ix.

Reynaldus oꝛ Rilalnus the ſonn of Cunedagius, beganne to rule the Bꝛytons, in the yere of the woꝛld.iiii. thouſande.iiii.C.and.xxxviii. & reyg ned yeres.xlv. The.xxxii. yere of this kyng was Rome bylded, of the twoo bꝛetherne Remus and Romulus / whyche was the yere of the woꝛlde ca.xix. fo.ix.

Gurguſtius Gurguſto oꝛ Goꝛbodian, the ſonne of Riuallus, was made ruler of the Bꝛytons, in ỹ yere of the woꝛlde .iiii. M .iiii.C. lxxxiii. and ruled yeres.xxxviii.ca.xx. fo.ix.

Sicillius oꝛ Siluius the bꝛother oꝛ ſonne of Gurguſtus, began hys dompnyon ouer the Bꝛytons, in the yere of the woꝛld.iiii. thouſand.v.C. and.xxi.and ruled yeres .xlix. ca.xxi. folio. ix.

Jago oꝛ Lago the neuewe of Gurguſtius, was made ruler of Bꝛytayn in ỹ yere of the woꝛld.iiii. thouſande v.hundꝛeth.lxx.& reygned yeres.xxv. ca.xxii. fo.ix.

Kinimacus the bꝛother of Jago, and after ſome wꝛyters the ſonne of Siluius/began hys reygnyoꝛye ouer the Bꝛytons, in the yere of the woꝛld iiii.thouſand.v.C.xcv. & ruled yeres .liiii. In the.xiiii. yere of thys kynge ended the.iiii.age/& the Jewes were captyued by the Babylons. Alſo Jſopus oꝛ Jſoppe the feyner of fables, in the latter days of thys Kinimacus in the countre of Gꝛece, floꝛyſſhed & fayned hys fables.ca.xxiii. fo.ix

Goꝛbodug whome Geffrey of Mõmouth nameth Gꝛobodugo, ſoñ vnto Kinimacus, began hys dompnion ouer the Bꝛytons, in the yere of the woꝛld.iiii.thouſande.vi.C.xlix.& ruled yeres.lxii. Aboute the.xxvi. yere of this kynges reygne was Holiferne ſlayne of Judyth the wydow in the chamber of Papiliõ. As hath Jacobus Philippus.ca.xxiiii. fo.ix.

Ferrex with hys bꝛother Poꝛrex, ſonnes of Goꝛbodug, begã iointly to rule ỹ Bꝛytõs, in ỹ yere after Adam iiii.M.vii.C.& xi.& ruled yeres.v. Here endeth the lyne oꝛ oſſpꝛyng of Bꝛute.ca.xxv. fo.x.

The

The ſtoꝛys agꝛe, that after ꝑ deth of the foꝛſayd bꝛetherne/the Bꝛytõs, becauſe there remayned no heyꝛe of them, were in great dyſcoꝛde a longe ſeaſon, & were ſubdued vnder diuers kynges. But bycauſe ꝑ foꝛeſayd auc tours do nat certyfye ꝑ terme of this dyſcoꝛde, and alſo do wꝛyte dyuerſly of the reygnes of the foꝛſayd kynges ſo that ſome do aſſyne very few oꝛ no certayn yeres, and ſome other many yeres, ſo that in thaccomptyng of the yeres and of tymes there appereth a great alteracyõ. Therfoꝛe it is to be noted, as affermeth Ranulph monke of Cheſter, Guydo, Galfryde and o-ther/ that Cunedagius onely began to reygne in the yere of the woꝛld. iiii tyouſande. iiii. hundꝛeth. and. v. And he reygned. xxxiii. yeres. whyche ma-keth the yere of the woꝛlde. iiii. M. iiii. C. and. xxviii. And furthermoꝛe the foꝛeſayde authours wyth other affeꝛme, that the. ii. bꝛetherne Belti-nus and Bꝛennus, dyd enter Italy wyth a great noumber of men, in the xi. yere of Artaxarſes the. xi. kynge, of Perſe. whyche was the yere of the woꝛlde. iiii. thouſand. viii. C. and. xv. and the. viii. yere of the reygne of the foꝛſayd bꝛetherne, as ſayeth Martyn-nus ſuper Cronicas. whereby it playnly appereth, that from the laſte yere of Cunedage, vntyll the eyghte yere of the foꝛeſayd bꝛetherne, there paſſed. iii. C. lxxvii. yeres And further moꝛe all wꝛyters affeꝛme, that ꝑ ſayd Belinus and Bꝛennus dyd ſuccede theyꝛ father Dumuallo/ and that the ſayde Dumuallo reygned. xl. yeres. The fyꝛſt yere of whoſe reygne was the yere of the woꝛlde. iiii. M. vii. C. xlviii. So that from the laſte yere of Cunedage, vntyl the fyꝛſt yere of the ſayd Dunuallo, there paſſed. iii. C. xxix. yeres. Of the whych yeres, there paſſed from the fyꝛſt yere of Rtuallus oꝛ Renaldus vntyll the laſte yere of Doꝛrex. li. hũdꝛeth. lxxviii. yeres. By whyche accompte it appereth, that the Bꝛytõs, after the deth of the foꝛe ſayd bꝛetherne, were in dyſcoꝛd by the ſpace of. li. yeres. And ſo the laſte yere of the foꝛeſayde dyſcoꝛde was the yere of the woꝛlde. iiii. thouſande vii. hundꝛeth. lxvii.

Thus endeth the fyꝛſt parte of thys woꝛke that con-teyneht. viii. hun-dꝛeth & .iiii. yeres.

Mulumtius dũuallo, ꝑ whiche of ſome wꝛytters is named Donobant, and ſonñ of Cloton duke oꝛ kynge of Coꝛnewall, was made kynge of Bꝛytayne, in the yere of the woꝛlde. iiii. thouſande. vii. hundꝛeth lxviii. and reygned yeres. xi. Thys was the fyꝛſte that bare crowne in Bꝛytayne. Thys alſo founded the towne of Malmeſbury and of Uyes. Thys alſo began the. iiii. pꝛyncipall hye wayes. ca. xxviii. fo. x.

Belinus and Bꝛennus the twoo ſonnes of the foꝛenamed Dunuallo, beganne to reygne ioyntly ouer Bꝛy tayne, in the yere of the woꝛlde. iiii. thouſande, eyght hũdꝛeth, and. viii. and ruled yeres ioyntly, and Bely-nus alone. xxvi. Thys Belinus made the towne of Carleyll. Alſo in London he cauſed to be made the hauen of Byllyngſgate/ and ended the. iiii. wayes begonne of hys fader. Thys alſo made a tẽple in Londõ, & named it the Temple of Concoꝛde / whyche after ſome wꝛyters oppynõs ſhulde be the Temple barre, now the paryſſhe churche of the temple as ap pereth. ca. xxix. cum folio. xi.

In the tyme in whyche these two bretherne reygned, auctours somwhat dyscorde. For Policronicon sayeth that Belinus wyth Brennus dyd inuade Italy and besege Rome in the.CC.i. yere after the trãsmigracion of Italy. And also that the same tyme Furius Camillus was dyctatour of Rome. wherby it appereth that Rome was spoyled of them about the yere of the worlde.iiii.M. viii.C.and.x.But Jacobus Phylyppus wyth other sayth that ỹ forsayd Furius Camillus was dictatour of Rome about the yere of our lord.iiii.M.viii.hundreth.lvi. whereby there appereth a dyfference of.xlvi.yeres. But Radulphus monk of the order of Cystercien erreth very farre, that affirmeth in hys cronycle that ỹ said bretherne began to reyne ouer Bryttayn in the yere of ỹ world.iiii.M.v.C.and.iiii.whych dyffereth frome other aboue.ii.hundreth and.l.yere. And where it is noted of some, that ỹ sayde Belynus reyned.x.yeres / that is supposed for the tymes of hys reyn after hys retorne from Italy. The victory of the sayd bretherne is shewed in the story folowyng.

Gurguintus or Gurguyn the son of Belyn, was made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde.iiii. thousande.viii.C.and.xxxiiii.& reygned.xix. yeres.ca.xxxii. fo.xiii.

Guithelinus or Guitellius called in the Englysshe cronycle Guentolyn̄, the sonne of Gurguintus, was made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde.iiii. thousande.viii.C. and.liii. and reygned yeres.xxvi. Alexander the great began to reygne aboute the.xxi.yere of thys kynge. ca.xxxiii. fo.xiiii.

Sisillius or Cecilius the son̄ of Guithelinus, began his reygne ouer the Britons, in the yere of the world iiii.thousande.viii.C.lxxix. and reygned yeres.vii.ca.xxxiiii. fo.xiiii.

Kymerus or Kymere the son̄ of Sisillius, bega hys rule ouer ỹ Brytons, in the yere of the world.iiii.M. viii.C.lxxxvi.and ruled yeres.iii. ca.xxxv. fo.xiiii.

Elanius the sonne or brother of Kymerus, beganne hys reygne ouer Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde iiii.thousande .viii. hundreth.lxxxix. & reygned yeres.ix. ca.xxxvi. folio. xiiii.

Morindus or Marwyth the bastarde sonne of Elanius was made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde.iiii.thousande.viii.hundreth xci. and reygned yeres .viii. ca.xxxvii. fo.xiiii.

Gorbomannus or after the Englysshe cronycle Granbodyan sonne vnto Morindus, was ordeyned king of Brytayne, in the yere of the world iiii.thousand.viii.C.xcviii. and reygned yeres.xi.ca.xxxviii. fo.xv

Archigallo the second sonne of Morindus, beganne hys dompynyon ouer the Brytons, in the yere of the worlde.iiii.thousande.ix.C.x.& reygned yeres.v.ca.xxxix. fo.xv.

Elidurus the.iii. sonne of Morindus, began hys dompynyon ouer the Brytons, in the yere of the world iiii.thousande.ix.C.xv.and ruled yeres.v.ca.xl. fo.xv.

Archigallo before̅named, was by the compassyō of hys brother agayn restored to hys former dygnyte, in ỹ yere of the worlde.iiij. thousande.ix. hun-

hundreth.xx.and reygned after peres.x.ca.xli. fo.xv.

Elidurus beforenamed, was agayne of the Brytons made kynge, in the yere of the worlde.iiii. thousād ix.hundreth.xxx. and reygned yeres ii.ca.xlii. fo.xv.

Vigenius or Migenius wyth Peridurus hys brother, whyche in the Englyshe cronycle are named Hygamus and Petitur, brethern of Elidurus, deposed by strength theyr sayde brother, and began theyr reygne in ỹ yere of the worlde .iiii. thousande.ix hundreth.xxxii. and reygned joyntly and alone yeres.ix. Thys peridurus or Petitur made the towne of Pykeryngе after the opynyon of dyuerse writers.ca.xliii. fo.xv.

Elidurus beforenamed, was the thyrde tyme restored to the crowne, in the yere of the worlde.iiii.thousād ix.hūdreth.xli.and reygned.the thyrd tyme yeres.iiii. Galfride sayeth ỹ durynge the lyfe of the foresayd brethern, thys was inclosed in the towre of London.whych yf it be trew, than is nat trew that the floure of hystorys affermeth, whych sayeth that the towre of London was bylded of Cassibelan.ca.xliiii. fo.xvi.

Gorbonianus or Gorbomannus the sōn of Elidure, was made kyng of Brytayne, in the yere of the world iiii.thousande.ix.hundreth.xlv. And after hym reygned.xxxii.kynges, as in the story is after declared/ỹ which wyth the sayd Gorbonnaus by the reason that foloweth occupyed yeres lxxxvi.And in thys tyme duke Hanyball of Cartage about the yere of the worlde began to warre agaynst the Romayns. And Scipio Affrican vanquyshed Hanyball aboute the yere of the worlde .v.M.& ix.And about thys tyme Judas machabeus duke of Israell began to be theyr capytayne/ that is to say in the yere of the worlde.v.thousande.xlvi. or there about.ca.xlvi. fo.xvi.

To make the storyes to agre, and to kepe the order of the yeres begon, fyrst it is to be noted that as sheweth Ranulph wyth diuers other, Julius Cesar made Brytayn trybutary to Rome in the.xlviii. yere before the incarnacyon of Chryste, or in the yere of the worlde fyue thousande.C.li. which was in the.ix.yere of Cassybelan. From whēs takyng from ỹ tyme of Cassybelā before the trybute payd ix.yeres, & for the tyme of the reygne of Lud.xi.yeres/ it folowеth congruently that kynge Lud beganne to reygne in the yere of the worlde fyue thousande. C.xxxi. And so frome the last yere of Elidure, vntyll the begynnyng of the reygne of Lud, or in the tyme of ỹ.xxxiii.kynges/ there passed.C.lxxxvi.yeres.

Lud the sonne of Hely last kynge of the forsayd.xxxiii, was stablysshed kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde fyue thousande. C.xxxi.and reygned yeres.ix. Thys kynge made Ludgate the westgate of London, and walled a parte of the same, and named the cytye Caerlud. ca.xlvii. fo.xvi.

Cassibelan the brother of Lud was ordeyned kynge of Brytayn, in the yere of the worlde fyue thousand.C.xlii/ and reygned or he were made trybutary to the Romaynes yeres full and more.viii. ca.xlviii. folio. xvi.

The begynnyng of thys trybute as hath Peter Pyctauyensis, Polyd. iiii. crony-

cronycon and other authours, was in the yere of the worlde.v.thousand C.li/& the.xlviii. yere before Cristes comynge. And Eutropius sayeth in hys cronicle, that Caius Julius did conquere Bretayn by.ii.yeres before he was create emperour/and he regned as emperour.ii.yeres. And furthermore the sayde Eutropius affermeth, that Octauian Augustus successour of the sayde Julius, began to reygne in the yere of the worlde.v. thousande.C.lviii. and that he regned full.xli.yeres before Cryste was borne. whyche sayeng Jacobus Philippus and other auctours affirme. wherby it foloweth, that Julius Cesar subdued Bretayne.xlviii. yeres before the comyng of Cryste, and the yere of the worlde, as before is sayde, v.thousande.C.li. And so it appereth that Cryst was incarnate in the yere of the worlde after the account of the lxx.interpreters.v.M.C.xcix.

¶ Thus endeth the seconde parte that conteyneth.iii. C.lxxxiii.yeres .*.

CAssibelan, as before is sayde, was made tributarie to the Romayns, in the yere of the worlde v.M.C.li. and regned after, yeres vii.ca.l. fo.xviii.

Temancius or Tenanctus brother to Cassibelan, was of the Britaynes ordeyned kyng, in the yere of the worlde.v.thousande.C.and.lvii. and regned yeres.xxiii .ca.lii. folio. xviii.

Kymbelinus the sonne of Thenācius, was made kyng of the Britōs, in the yere of the world.v.M.C.lxxx. & regned yeres.xxxv. All writers agre that regnyng thys kyng, oure sauyour Jesus Christ was incarnat. And than began the.vi.age. ca.liii. folio. xviii.

Of the tyme of thys kynge Kymbelyus regn, dyuers auctours trete very darkly, for fewe of them do nat accoūt any yeres/for the tyme of hys reygne, excepte Peter pictauiensis, & the auctours of the Englysshe boke, whych afferme hym to reygne.xi.yeres. But Galfrido of Monmouth sayth, that whanne he had regned. yeres he begate.ii. sonnes. But the floure of hystoryes wytnesseth hym to reygne.xxxv.yeres, and þ Jesus Christ was borne in.xix.yere of hys reygne, whych wyth other cronycles or tymes dothe somwhat better agre.

Guiderius the sonne of Kymbalyne, was made kynge of Britayne, in the yere of our lordes incarnacyō xvi/& in the yere of the worlde.v.M. ii.C.xvii. and regned yeres.xxviii. ca.liiii. fo.xix.

Aruiragus the brother of Guiderius, began to reygne ouer the Britons, in the yere of our lordes incarnacyon.xliii.and regned yeres.xxx. In thys tyme Glouceter was buylded of Claudius. And in the.xxvi. yere of thys kynges reygne, whych was the.lxx.yere of the incarnacyō of our lorde/began the fyrst persecucyō of the chrysten men vnder Nero. ca.lv. fo.xix.

Marius, whyche the Englysshe cronycle nameth westmere, sonne of Aruiragus, was made kyng of Britayne/in the yere of our lorde.lxxiii. and in the yere of the worlde. and regned yeres.ii. Chester towne of thys kyng was founded. westmerlande also of thys kynge toke hys name.

name. And about the .xxi. yere of this kynges reygne was the second perse cucyon, vnder Domicianus. And also the thyrd persecucyon about the xxv. yere of thys kynge vnder Traianus. ca. lvii. fo. xx.

Coilus the sonn of Marius, was made kyng of Bzytayne, in the yere of our lozde. C. and. xxvi. and the yere from the fyrste Adam /and reygned yeres. liii. And about ỳ. xlv. yere of thys Coilus, was the fourthe persecucyon, vnder Marcus Antonius Amelius. ca. lviii. fo. xxii.

Lucius the sonne of Coilus, begā hys reygne ouer the Bzytons, in the yere of oure lozde an. C. lxxx. & of the wozlde. and reygned yeres. xii. Thys was the fyrste chzysten kyng in Bzytayne. The image of Cryst at the nozth dore in the church of Poulys, was founde in the ryuer of Thames by thys Lucius. But an other authoure sayeth that it was founden in ỳ. xiiii. yere of Coilus or in the yere of the wozlde. C. xl. ca. lix. folio. xxii.

Of thys Lucius auctours do dout fully treate. For Galfride sayth that Lucius dyed in the yere of our lozde C. lvi. And Guido de Calūpna sayth that Lucius was cristened in the fore sayd yere. And Peter pictauiensis sayth that Lucius began to reygne in the yere of our lozde. C. lxxx. & that he receyued the fayth in the. viii. yere of his reygn. And the Floure of histo ryes sayth that he reygned .xii. yeres after the fayth by hym receyued. Fur thermore it is shewed in a certeyne table hangyng on the nozth parte of the quyre of Poules in London, hat the sayd Lucius was crowned kyng of Bzytayne in the yere of grace. C. xxiii. and that he reygned .lxxvii. yeres. And the Englyshe cronycle agreeth therwith of hys cozonacion/ but it sayth that he reygned but only xii. yeres. And so there appereth a great dyscozd betwene these wzyters But all agreen that the sayd Lucius was conuerted to ỳ fayth in the tyme of pope Eleutherius/ which after the concozdance of many stozyes was made pope about the yere of our lozd C. lxxviii. wherfoze Galfrides sayng is to be denayd, that sayth, he died in the yere of grace. C. lvi. and also the sayeng of Guydo foz recepuyng of ỳ fayth. And rather wé oughte to gyue credence to the fozesayde table oz to Peter pictauiensis that affermeth ỳ sayd Lucius to reygne. xii. yere. But some wzyters that wzote the actes & the reygnes of kynges, haue ouerskypt as it semeth the tyme whyche Lucius reygned befoze he receyued the fayth. And if he reygned befoze he receyued the fayth. xx. yeres and ỳ he receyued the fayth in hys. xx. yere, & reygned after. xv. yeres/ they haue ac coūted the. xv. yere whyche he reygned as crysten kynge, and haue lette passe the other. xx. yere. And so is it to be thought that the fozsayd auctour Peter pictauiens dyd. whych reason beynge alowed, the sayde table maye agre wyth the sayd Peter wythoute any greate dyfference whyche testyfyeth ỳ sayd Lucius to reygne. lxxvii yere as kynge. After whose deth in so moche that he dyed wythout any law full heyre/ a great contēcion sprange amonge the Bzytons that endured by. xv. yeres, as shall apere by the sequel. Trouth it is after all histozies, that Seuerus a Romayne succeded Lucius in Bzytayne. But because ỳ tyme is nat certaynly sette whan the sayd Seuerus subdued the Bzytōs/ therfoze it is to noted, that whanne it was shewed to the Romaynes of the sedicion and discozde of the Bzytōs,

and of

& of the sleyng of the Romayns than beyng in Bꝛytayn / the senate sentte thyder the forsayd Seuerus wyth .ii. legions of men. whych bare thē selfe so manfully, that in shorte whyle he compelled the Bꝛytons to obey to the senate. whyche Policronicon affermeth to be about the yere of our lorde C.xcv. In whyche yere as hath Jacobus Philippus, the sayde Seuerus began to raygne ouer the Romayns. But that dysagreeth from other Cronycles. For Eutropius, Matheolus & the forsayde Jacobus Philippus sayth, that whan the sayde Seuerus had subdued the Arabyes, Parthys, and Gallys, after many battayls he came into Bꝛytayn. where he beynge troubled wyth dyuers chaunces/ at laste died in ỳ towne of yorke. where by it is to be supposed that in ỳ ende of hys reygn he came hether, & about the .xii. yere of hys reygne ouer the Romayns which was the yere of our lorde .ii.C.vii. and that after he reygned ouer the Bꝛytons .v. yere. wherefore it euydētly apereth, that the forsayd dyscord dured .xv. yeres/ whych tyme Bꝛytayne was wythoute a kynge.

Thus endeth the thyrde parte which conteyneth CC.lvi. yeres.

SEuerus emperour of Rome, as before is shewed, in the .xii. yere of hys empyre, and yere of oure lorde .ii.C.& .vii/ beganne hys reygne ouer the Bꝛytōs, and yere of ỳ worlde /and reygned as kynge yeres .v. The fyrst persecucyon of the chrysten men, was vnder this Seuerus, about the yere of our lorde .ii.C.& ca.lxi. fo.xxii.

Bassianus the sonn of Seuerus, began hys reygne ouer the Bꝛytons, in the yere of our lorde .ii.C.xii/ & the yere of the worlde /and reygned yeres .vi. ca.lxii. folio. xxii.

Carassius a yonge and lusty Bꝛytayne of vnknowē blode, by meanes as in hys storꝛy sheweth, began hys dompnyon ouer the Bꝛytons, in the yere of our lorde .ii.C. and .xviii. and yere of the worlde. & ruled yeres .viii. ca.lxiii. fo.xxiii.

Here agayn authours forget ỳ yeres of the kynges folowyng. Of whyche I nat greatly marueyll. For in thys tyme muche discencyon was among the Romayne prynces/ & also amonge the Bꝛytons cyuyl warre ceased nat. For they were so styrred wyth dyscencyon and warre, ỳ none coulde occupy the kyngedome any determynate tyme. For whyche cause and suche lyke, authours coude nat assyne any certeyne tyme to the prynces as me semeth. But that we maye come to some knowlege/ Policronicon sheweth that Constantius ỳ was father to Constantine the great, was sente by the senate into Bꝛytayne, about the yere of our lorde .ii.C.lxxix. and in the seconde yere of Probꝛus emperour / that he shuld subdue to ỳ Romayns Coelus than there kyng. From the whych tyme of the coming of the sayde Constantius vntyll the last yere of Bassianus accountynge bakwarde, there passed .lxi. yeres. In the tyme of whych yeres there reygned in thys Ilelande these .iiii. kynges that is to say Carassius, Allectus, Asclepiodotus, and Coelus.

Allectus a duke or senatour of Rome, began hys dompnyon ouer the Bꝛytons, in the yere of oure lorde .ii.C.xxvi. & of the worlde /& reygned yeres .vi. ca.lxiiii. fo.xxiii.

Asclepiodo-

Aſclepeodotus, or after the Englyſſhe boke Aſclepades/ began hys reygne ouer the Brytons, in the yere of our lorde god. CC.xxxii. And the yere of the worlde /and reygned yeres.xxx. The fyrſt perſecucyon of crysten men was about the yere of our lorde. CC.xxxviii. vnder Maximian. The.vii. perſecucyon was in ỹ yere of oure lorde. CC.lv. vnder Decius. In ỹ whych pope Fabyan was martyred. The.viii. perſecucion was in the yere of our lord. CC.lx. vnder Valeryan whych was the.xviii. yere of thys Aſclepiodotus. ca.lxv. folio. xxiiii

Coelus or Coyll erle of Colcheſter, by exptyng of the Brytõs was made kyng of Brytayne, in the yere of oure lord. CC.lxii. & reygned yeres .xxvii. Thys kyng after moſt wyters made the towne of Colcheſter in Eſſex. ca.lxvi. fo.xxiiii

Conſtancius a ſenatoure of Rome, by reaſon of marvage knyt wyth Eleyn doughter of Coelus, beganne to reygne as kyng of Brytayne, in ỹ yere of our lord. CC.lxxxix. and of ỹ worlde and reygned yeres xxx. The.ix. perſecucyon of the crystẽ men was vnder Aurelianus. Saint Albon prothomartyr in the tyme of thys Conſtancius as ſome haue, in ỹ x. perſecucyõ whych was vnder Diocleſian and Maximian, was martyred. ca.lxvii fo.xxiiii

Conſtancius ſurnamed the great, ſonn of Conſtancius and of the holy Heleyne, began his reygne ouer Brytayne, in the yere of oure lorde. iii. C. xix. and of the worlde. /and reygned as kyng yeres.x. ca.lxviii folio. xxv

Octauius duke of Jeſſes or Jeweſſes, and after named weſtſaxõs/ by extorte power began hys reygne ouer the Brytons, in the yere of oure lorde. iii. C. & .xxix. and of the worlde. and reygned yeres .liiii ca.lxxi fo.xxvii

Of thys kynge folowynge called Maximus or after ſome Maximianus, wryters dyuerſly ſpeke / ſo that ſome ſay he raygned few yeres. But in the concordaunce of cronycles, it playnly apereth that the ſayd Maximis began to reygn ouer the Brytõs in the yere of our lord. iii. C. lxxii / & that he was ſlayn of Theodoſius the elder in the thyrd yere of his reygne, whych began to reygne in the yere of our lord .iii. C. lxxxviii. And ſo it appereth playnly that he reygned ix. yeres.

Maximius or Maximianus, the ſonn of Leonyne brother to Traherſi vncle to Heleyne, began hys reygne ouer Brytayn, in the yere of our lord iii. C. lxxxii / and reygned yeres. ix ca.lxxii. fo.xxvii

Saynt Urſula wyth her felowes in thys kynges tyme were martyred of Enanus and Melga.

Gracianus an offycer or feede knyght of Maximius, began to oppreſſe the Brytons, in the yere of our lorde. iii. C. xc / and tyrannyſed yeres iiii. ca. lxxiiii fo xxviii

The ſtoryes agre, that after that Gracian was ſlayne / Brytayne was vexed a longe whyle wyth oftẽ dyſcẽſions & cyuyll warre. But how longe thys dyſcord dyd laſt authours trete diuerſly / for ſome ſay it laſted. l. yere, & ſome. xl. & ſome. xxx. Therfore to know ỹ certeynty it is requiſite that we dylygently ſerche, howe many yeres paſſed frõ the laſt yere of Graciã vntyll the

vntyll the begynnynge of the reygne of Constantyne/ or the certayn tyme whan Constãtyne was made kyng. who as witnesseth Gupdo was crowned at Cicester in the yere of our lord iiii.C.xxxv.The floure of hystoryes sayth also that in the thyrde yere of Theodocius the yonger emperour, Constantyne began to rule the Bry-tons. whych Theodocius begãne to reygne in the yere of our lorde.iiii.C. xxxi.wherby it apereth,that from the last yere of Gracià vntyll the begynnyng of Constantyne,there passed about.xl.yeres.But the very trewrule is ỳ in the yere of grace .iiii.C.li.the Sarons fyrst perced Bրytayne,and in the thyrd yere of Uortigern.From whych takyng awaye for the reygne of Uortigern.ii.yeres,& fro the reygn of Constãcius.v.yere,& fro the reygn of Constãtyne.x.yere / it folowth ỳ the sayd dyssencion or mysery of the Bրytons lasted.xxxix. yeres full. And here ended the trybute that was payd to the Romayns,that had endured aboue.iiii.C.lx.yeres.

Thus endeth the fourth parte that enclu-deth.CC.xxv yeres.

The line of the kynges of Fraunce.

Pharamundus the son of Mercomirus, began hys reygne as fyrst kyng of Fraunce,in the yere of our lord.viii.C.xx/ and the mysery of the Bրytons the.xxvi.yere/ & reygned yeres.xi. ca.lxxviii.
folio. xxxi

Clodius or Clodio , or after some Crynitus and Capillatus the sonne of Pharamude, was ordeyned the seconde kyng of Fraunce, in the yere of our lord.iiii. hundreth and.xxxi/& the.xxxvii.yere of the mysery of the Bրytons/and reygned yeres.xix. capi.lxxix. folio.xxxi

Here begynneth the fyfthe parte.

Constantinus the brother of Aldroenus kyng of lytell Bրytayne, beganne hys reygn ouer moche Bրytayne,Anno domini.iiii.hundreth and.xxxiii/and the yere of Clodio than kynge of Fraunce the thyrd yere/and reygned yeres.x. capi. lxxx
folio. xxxii

Constantinus the sonne of Constantyne before tyme a monke, was made kynge of moche Bրytayne, in the yere of oure lorde .iiii. hundreth and. xliii / and the. xiii. yere of Clodio than kynge of Fraunce/and reygned yeres.v. ca.lxxxi
folio xxxii

Uortigerus or Uortigernus duke of Cornewayll or Consull of Jesses, was by treason made kynge, in the yere of our lorde foure hundreth and lxviii / and the.xviii. yere of Clodio than kynge of Fraunce / and reyned yeres.xvii. The Sarons or Englyshemen,in the thyrde yere of this kynges reygne fyrste entred thys Jlande. capi.lxxxii
folio. xxxii

Meroneus neuewe or next allye vnto Clodio, was made kynge of Frenchemen, in the yere of our lorde iiii.hundreth and.l / and the seconde yere of Uortiger than kynge of Bրytayne/and reygned yeres.x. capi.lxxxv folio.xxxiiii

Chylbericus

Meroneus neuewe or next of Allye vnto Clodio, was made kynge of Frenchemen, in the yere of our lorde iiii.C.and.l / and the seconde yere of Uortiger than kyng of Brytayne / & reygned yeres.x.ca. lxxxv. fo. xxxiii.

Chyldericus or Hyldericus the sonne of Meroneus, was ordeyned kyng of Fraunce, in the yere of oure lorde .iiii.C.and.lx/ and the.xii. yere of Uortiger than kyng of Brytayne/ and reygned yeres.xxiii. ca.lxxxvi. folio. xxxv.

Uortimerus the sonn of Uortiger, was made kyng of Brytayne, in the yere of our lorde.iiii.C.lxxxiii/ & the iiii.yere of Chylderich than kyng of Fraunce/and reygned yeres.vii. ca.lxxxvii. fo.xxxvi.

Uortigernus before named, was agayne restored to the kyngdome, in the yere of our lord.iiii.C.lxxi/ and ỹ xi.yere of Chylderiche than kyng of Fraunce/and reygned yeres.ix. In thys kynges tyme aboute the yere of our lorde.iiii.C.lxxvi.the kyngdome of Kent the fyrste kyngdome of the Sarõs, began vnder Hengystas appereth. fo. xxxvii. ca. lxxix. folio. xxxvi.

Aurelius Ambrosius the seconde sonne of Constantyne, and brother to Constancius the monke slayne by reason of Uortiger, was made kyng of Brytayne, in the yere of oure lorde iiii.C.lxxxi/and the.xi.yere of Chylderich than kyng of Fraũce/and reygned yeres .xix. In thys kynges tyme about the yere of our lorde.iiii.C.lxxxii.beganne the kyngedome of Southsaxones vnder Ella and hys sonnes. And also in thys kynges tyme that is to saye in the yere of our lorde.iiii.C.lxxx.xii.begãne the kingdome of Estangles vnder Uffa. But Guydo sayeth it beganne in the yere of oure lorde.v.hundreth .lxx. as appereth. capi.xciii.fo.xxxviii.

Clodoueus the sonne of Chyldericus or Hyldericus before named, was ordeyned kynge of Fraunce, in the yere of oure lorde.iiii.hundreth lxxxiiii/ and the thyrde yere of Aurelius thanne kynge of Brytayne/ and reygned yeres .xxx. Thys was the fyrste cristen kynge whyche receyued the fayth of saynt Remygius aboute the yere of oure lorde.iiii.hundreth.xcix. whereby it appereth that the fayth came into Brytayne aboue iii.hundreth yere before it came into Fraunce.capi.xcvii. fo.xxxix.

Uter surnamed Pendragon, the yongest sonne of Constantyne & brother to Aurelius, was made kyng of Brytayne, in the yere of our lorde.v.C/and the.xvi.yere of Clodoueus thã kyng of Fraunce/and reygned yeres xvi.ca.c. fo.xli.

Clotharius or Lotharius the soñ of Clodoueus, beganne hys reygne ouer the Frenchemen, in the yere of our lorde.v.C.and.xiiii/and the yere of Uter than kyng of Brytayne/ and reygned yeres.l.ca.c.i. fo.xlii.

Arthurus the soñ of Uter begãne hys rygne ouer the Brytõs, in ỹ yere of our lorde .v.C.and.xvii / & the.iii. yere of Lotharius thanne kynge of Fraunce/and reygned yeres.xxvi. In thys kynges tyme the kyngdom of Sarõs begã vnder Serdicus about the yere of our lord.v.C.xxii. ca.c.iiii. fo.xliii.

Constantius the sonne of Cador, began hys reygne ouer the lande of Brytayne, in the yere of our lorde.v.

C.ℨ.xliii/and the.xxix.yere of Lotharius than kynge of Fraunce/ ℨ reygned yeres.iii. Totila kyng of Ostragathoris, about this time spoyled Rome ℨ other cytyes in Italy. ca.c.vii. folio. xlv.

Aurelius Conanus the neuewe of Cõstantyne, begã hys reygne ouer Brytayne, in the yere of our lorde .v. C.ℨ.xlvi / and ỹ.xxxii.yere of Lotharius forenamed / ℨ reygned yeres .ii. In thys kyngestyme the kyngdome of Northumbers began vnder Ida, about the yere of our lord.v.C.xlvii. ca.c.viii. fo.xlvi.

Uortiporius the sõn of Aurelius Conanus, began to rule the Brytõs, in the yere of our lord.v.C.ℨ.xlviii/ℨ the yere of Clothate kyng of Fraũce xxxiii/and reygned yeres.iiii. ca.c.x. fo.xlvii.

Malgo the brother of Uortiporius, begã hys reygne ouer the Brytons, in the yere of our lord.v.C.and lii / ℨ.xxxviii.yere of Lothayre fornamed/ℨ reygned yeres after moste accorde of wryters.xxxv. ca.c.xi. folio. xlvii.

Chilpericus the.iii. sonñ of Clotharius, began hys reygne ouer the Frenchmẽ, in the yere of our lorde.v. C.ℨ.lxiiii/ℨ the.xiiii.yere of Malr thã kyng of Brytayne / ℨ reygned yeres xiiii.ca.c.xii. fo.xlvii.

Careticus a Bryton of vncowthe byrth began hys tyrãny ouer the Brytons, in the yere of our lord.v.C.lxxx ℨ.vi/ℨ.xxii.yere of Chylperyche than kyng of Fraũce/and tyrannysed yeres.iii.ca.c.xviii. fo.liii.

Here it is to be noted that after ỹ sayd Careticus was expulsed out of Brytayne/the Brytõs abode in Cambria ℨ these partes, ℨ fought oftẽwith the Saxõs. Of whose captaynes fro thys Careticus vntyll Cadwan, the story remẽbreth none. yet by ỹ cõcordaũce of other cronycles ℨ hystories, it apereth ỹ betwene the laste yere of Careticus ℨ begynnyng of the reygn of Cadwan, there passed about .xxiii. yeres as apereth by ỹ sequell. Furthermore in this tyme Ethelbert king of Kent receyued the fayth about the yere of oure lorde.v.C.xcvi. Thys Ethelbert bylded Poules church. And about the yere of our lord.vi.C. xiii.began the kyngdome Estsaxons vnder Sebertus.

Lotharius or Clotharius ỹ sõn of Chylpericus, begã hys reygne ouer the Frẽchmẽ, in the yere of our lord.v C.lxxxviii/ℨ the.ii.yere of Careticus than kynge of Brytayne / ℨ reygned yeres.xliii.ca.c.xii. fo.lvi.

Cadwanus duke of Northwalis, was of ỹ Brytons chosen kyng, and begã to reygne ouer a parte of Brytõs, in the yere of our lorde.vi.C.and viii/ℨ the.xxv.yere of the secõde Clothayre/ℨ reygned yeres.xxii. In this kynges tyme the kyng done of Mercia began vnder Penda. ca.c.xxviii. folio. lxiiii.

Dagobertus ỹ fyrst of ỹ name, ℨ sonñ of ỹ secõd Clothayre, begã hys dominiõ ouer ỹ Frẽchemẽ, in the yere of our lord.vi.C.ℨ.xxxi/ℨ ỹ.viii. yere of Cadwan than kyng of Brytayne/ ℨ reygned yeres.xiiii. Sayn Denys with hys felowes were soũd by this king by myracle.ca.c.xxxi. fo.lxv.

Cadwallus the sõn of Cadwañ began hys reygne ouer a parte of Brytayne, in the yere of our lorde.vi.C.ℨ xxxv. and the .iiii. yere of the fyrste Dago-

Dagoberte than kynge of Fraũce/ & reygned yeres.xlviii. ca.c.xxxiii. folio. lxvii.

Clodoueus the yõger sonñ of Dagobertus, begã hys reygne ouer the Frenchmẽ, in the yere of our lord.vi.C.& xlv / and the.x.yere of Cadwall than kyng of Bzytayn/ & reygned yeres.xvi.ca.c.xxxvi. fo.lxxi.

Clotharius ỹ thyrde of that name and sonne of Clodoueus, was made kyng of Fraũce, in ỹ yere of our lord vi.C.lxii / and the.xxvi.yere of Cadwall than kyng of Bzytayne/ & reygned yeres.iiii.ca.xxxvii. fo.lxxii.

Theodozicus the bzother of ỹ forenamed Lothayre, began hys reygne ouer Fraũce, in the yere of our lorde vi.C.lxvi/and the.xxx.yere of the fore sayd Cadwall than kynge of Bzytayne/and reygned yeres.iii. ca.c.xxxviii. fo.lxxii.

Chylderycus or Hylderycus ỹ.iii. sonne of Clodoueus, began his reygne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of our lord.vi.C.lxix/ & ỹ.xxxiii.of Cadwall yet kyng of Bzytayne/and reygned yeres.xi.ca.c.xxxix. fo.lxxii

Cadwaladzus, or after Bede Cedwalla, sonne of Cadwallo, began to rule the Bzytõs, in the yere of oure lorde.vi.C.lxxx.and.iii/ & the.xii.yere of Theodozicus thã kyng of Fraũce/ and reygned yeres.iii. ca.c.xl. folio. lxxiii.

Of the tyme of the raygne of this Cadwalader, autours wzite diuersly and shew of him as of.ii. seuerall persones. For Galfryde & other say that whan he had reygned .xii.yeres, he went to Rome, & thereof pope Sergius was made a monk, and dyed in the yere of our lord.vi.C.lxxix.which sayeng differeth farre from other authours. For Guido de calũma sayeth in hys worke that he shortly gathered of the kynges of Bzytayne, that whan Cadwallader that also is named Cadwalla sonne of Cadwallon had peasably gouerned Bzytayne iii.yeres, he went to Rome & of pope Sergius was made monk/ & ended hys lyfe in the yere of our lord .vi.C. lxxxix.whych sayng Policronicon in hys.v.boke & .xx.chappter affermeth, where he nameth the sayd Cadwaladder king of Bzytons and westsarõs, and that kyng Iewo or Iue was hys successour. And so by these authours & other which Policronicõ alledgeth for hym, as Beda & other, whych name thys Cadwalader Ced walla, it apereth that it was one person & that thys tyme he reygned ouer the Bzytons and westsarones, whyche was last kyng of the stok of the Bzytons And because the kynges of westsarõ in proces of tyme subdued all the other kinges/therfore I wyll obserue the order of them vntyll I haue bzoughte thys ilande to one monarchy. Here endeth the lyne of the kynges of Bzytayne whyche contynued frõ the fyrst Bzute by.M.viii.C.& xxii. yeres.

Thus endeth the fyrst parte whyche includeth.CC.liii.

Iewe or Iue of ỹ blod of Sarons, or after som writers Iuo, beganne hys reygne ouer the westsarones to rekyn after the departing of Cadwalader, in the yere of oure lorde.vi.hundreth.lxxx.and.vii / and the.xvi.yere of the seconde Theodozicus thanne kynge of Fraunce / and reygned yered.xxxvii. ca.c.xli. folio. lxxvi

Clodoueus the.iii.of that name,& secõd sonne of the second Theodoricus,was made kyng of Fraũce, in ỹ yere of our lord.v.C.xc / and the.iii. yere of Jewe thã kyng of westsaxones/& reygned yeres.iii. ca.c.xlii. folio. lxxvi.

Chyldebertus the second sonñ of Theodorych, begã hys reygne ouer the Frẽchemẽ,in ỹ yere of our lord.vi C.lxxx.& xiii/& the.vi.yere of Jue yet kyng of westsaxones, & reygned yeres.xvii.ca.c.xliii. fo.lxxvi.

Dagabertus ỹ secõd of ỹ name, & sonne of Chyldeberte, was auctorysed kyng of Frẽchmẽ,in ỹ yere of our lord.vii.C. & x / and the.xxiii.yere of Jewe yet kyng of westsaxones / and reygned yeres.xi.ca.c.xliii. fo.lxxvi.

Daniell ỹ was named Chylperyk a clerke,was made kyng of Frenche men, in the yere of our lorde.vii.C.& xxi/& the.xxiii.yere of Jewe yet king of westsaxons and reygned yeres .v. ca.c.xlv. fo.lxxvi.

Ethelardus the neuewe of Jewe, begã his reygne ouer ỹ westsaxõs, in the yere of our lord .vii.C.& xviii / & the thyrde yere of Daniell than king of Fraunce/and reygned yeres.v. ca.c.xlvi. fo.lxxvii.

Theodoricus the secõd of ỹ name, and sonne of the seconde Dagobert, began hys reygne ouer Frenchymen, in the yere of our lord.vii.C.& xxvi/& the seconde yere of Ethelardus than king of westsaxones/and reygned yeres.xiii.ca.c.xlvii. fo.lxxvii.

Cutbertus ỹ neuewe of Ethelard, began to reygne ouer the westsaxõs, in the yere of our lord.vii.C.& xxix/& the thyrd yere of the secõd Theodoricus/and reygned yeres.xvi. ca.c.xlviii. fo.lxxix.

Hyldericus or Chyldericus the seconde of ỹ name,& sonne of Theodoricus, was made kyng of Frenchmẽ, in the yere of our lord.vii.C. and.xl/ & the.xi.yere of Cutbert than kyng of westsaxons/& reygned yeres.x. Here endeth the lyne of Meroneus, & begynneth the lyne of Peppyn .ca.c.xlix. folio. lxxix.

Sygebertus the neuewe of Cutbert,began hys reygne ouer the west saxõs,in the yere of our lord.vii.C.& xlv/& the.v.yere of Hyldericus the second than kyng of Fraũce/ and reygned yeres.ii.ca.c.l. fo.lxxx.

Kenulphus of the blode & lyne of Cerdicus, begã hys reygne ouer the westsaxõs, in the yere of our lord.vii. C.& xlviii/and ỹ.vii.yere of Hyldericus thã king of Fraũce/and reygned yeres.xxxi.ca.c.li. fo.lxxxi.

Pipinus the secõd sonne of Charles Martellus,was fyrst made king of Fraũce of ỹ blode, in ỹ yere of our lord.vii.C.& l/and the second yere of Kenulphus thã kyng of westsaxõs/& reygned yeres.xviii.ca.c.liii.fo.lxxxi.

Carolomanus wyth Charlys surnamed ỹ great sonnes of Peppyn, began to reygne ouer Fraũce, in ỹ yere of our lord .v.C.lxviii / & the.xx.yere of Kenulphus / and reygned yeres ioyntly and Charles alone.xlvii. This Charles was ỹ fyrst emperour of Romayns of the stok of the Frẽchmen/and reygned.xiiii.yeres. ca.c.liiii. fo.lxxxii.

Brightricus of the forenamed blod of Cerdicus,was made kyng of west saxons,in the yere of our lord.vii.C. lxxvii/and ỹ.x.yere of Charles than kyng

kyng of Fraũce/ & reygned yeres.xbii About the.ix.yere of thys kynge, the Danes fyrste entred this ile as more playnly apereth in ỹ story folowyng. ca.c.lbii. fo.lxxxbi.

Egbertus, or after the Englysshe boke Edbryght, the soñ of Alumundus, begã hys reygne ouer the westsaxõs, in ỹ yere of our lord.bii.C.lxxx and.xb/ & i the..xxbii.yere of Charles than kyng of Fraũce/ and reygned yeres.xxxbiii. Thys kyng cõmaunded the Saxõs to be Anglys/ & Bryptayn to be named Anglia, that in Englãd. ca.c.lbiii. fo.lxxxbi.

Lodouicus the fyrste of ỹ name & sonne of Charles the great, beganne to reygne as emperour and kyng of Fraũce, in the yere of our lord.biii.C and.xb/ & ỹ.xx.yere of Egbertus thã kyng of westsaxons/ and reygned yeres.xxbi.ca.c.lix. fo.lxxxbii.

Adeulphus or Ethelwolphus the sonne of Egbertus, began hys reygn ouer the westsaxõs and other, in the yere of our lord.biii.C.and.xxxii/ and the.xbi.yere of Lowys the fyrst than kyng of Fraũce/ & reygned yeres.xxii ca.c.lxii. fo.xci.

Charles the second of that name, & yongest sonne of the fyrste Lowys surnamed Balled, beganne to reygn ouer the west parte of Fraunce, in the yere of our lord.biii.C.&.xli/ & the.ix. yere of Adeulphus/ and reygned yeres.xxxbiii. The countre of Flaunders in thys Charles dayes began fyrste to bere name, as after in the ende of hys story is shewed. ca.c.lxiii. fo.xcii.

Ethelwaldus the eldest sonne of Adeulphus, began hys reygne ouer the westsaxõs, in the yere of our lord biii.C.&.lb / and the.x.yere of Charles the Balled than kyng of Fraũce/ and reygned but one yere. ca.c.lxbii. folio. xcbi.

Ethelbertus the seconde sonne of Adeulphus, was auctorysed kynge of westsaxõs, in the yere of our lorde biii.C.and.lbi/ & the.xi.yere of Charles the Ballyd yet kyng of Fraunce/ and reygned yeres.bi. In the tyme of thys kynges reygne / the.bii. Johan whyche was a womã was admitted for pope, aboute the yere of oure lorde.biii.C.lbiii, as sayth Jacobus Phylyppus.ca.c.lxbiii. fo.xcbi.

Ethelbredus the thyrde sonne of Adeulphus, was made kyng of west saxons wyth other, in the yere of our lorde .biii.C.&.lxii / & the.xbiii.yere of Charles forenamed yet kynge of Fraũce/ & reygned yeres.biii. In the tyme of thys kynges reygne, sayntе Edmond kynge of Eest Angles was martyred of the princys Danus and Martyrus.ca.c.lxix. fo.xcbi.

Alured or Alphredus the.iiii. sonne of Adeulphus, in ỹ yere of our lorde.biii.C.lxxii, began hys reygne ouer the westsaxõs/ & the.xxxi. yere of Charles forenamed yet kynge of Fraũce/ and reygned yeres.xxbiii. ca.clxxi. fo.xcbiii.

Lowys Balbus, the secõd of that name & sonne of Chales the balled, began hys reygne ouer the Frenchemen, in ỹ yere of grace.biii.C.lxbiii/ and the.bi.yere of Alerude thã kyng of westsaxons/ & reygned yeres.ii. ca.c.lxxiiii. fo.ci.

Lowys & Charles the sonnes of Lowys Balbus, beganne to reygne ioyntly ouer ỹ Frenchmẽ, in the yere of our lord.biii.C.&.lxxx/ & the.biii.

pere of Alurede than kyng of weſtſaxons/and reygned peres.v. ca.lxxv. folio c.ii.

Lowys the.iiii.of ỹ name,& ſonne of Charles laſt remẽbred, began hys reygn ouer Fraũce,in ỹ pere of grace viii.C.lxxx.and.vi/ & the.xiiii. pere of Aluredus yet kyng of weſtſaxons /& reygned peres viii.ca.lxxvii.fo.c.iiii.

Eudo or Oddo the ſoñ of Robert erle of Angeowe, began hys reygne ouer the Frẽchmen,in the pere of our lord.viii.C.lxxx.& xv / and the .xxiii. pere of Aluredus yet kyng of weſtſaxons/and reygned peres.ix.ca.lxxviii. folio. c.iiii.

Edwarde ſurnamed the elder, & ſonne of Alurede or Alphrede, began hys reygne ouer the more part of Englande,in the pere of our lorde.ix.C. and one/& the.vi.pere of Eudo than kynge of Fraunce / & reygned peres xviii.ca.c.lxxix. fo.c.iiii.

Charles ſurnamed the Simple,& ſonñ of the.iiii.Lowys, beganen hys reygne ouer the realme of Fraũce, in the pere of our lorde.ix.C.iiii / & ỹ.iii. pere of Edward than kynge of Englande/and reygned peres.xviii. ca.c.lxxxi. fo.c.vi.

Radulphus the ſonne of Rychard duke of Burgoyne,began his reygn ouer Fraũce, in the pere of our lorde ix.C.& xii/& the.xi.pere of Edward yet kyng of Englande/ & reygned peres.xii.ca.lxxxiii. fo.c.viii

Ethelſtanus the ſonñ of Edward the elder,begã hys reygne ouer the more partye of England,in ỹ pere of our lord.ix.C.& xv.& the thyrde pere of Rauffe thã kyng of Fraũce/& reygned peres.xvi.Thys kyng brought Brytayne or Englãde to one monarchy.But yet after ſome wryters Alurede dyd it.ca.c.lxxxiii. fo.c.viii.

Lowys the.v. of that name, and ſonne of Charles the Symple, begã hys reygne ouer Fraũce, in the pere of our lord.ix.C.& xxxiii / & ỹ.ix.pere of Ethelſtane thã kyng of Englãd/& reygned peres.xxi.ca.c.lxxxvi. fo.c.x.

Edmoũd the brother of Ethelſtane & ſonne of Edward the elder, began hys reygne ouer Englãd, in the pere of our lord.ix.C.& xli. / & the.vii.pere of ỹ.v.Lowys than kyng of Fraũce/ and reygned peres.vi. ca.c.lxxxviii. folio. c.xiii.

Edredus the brother of Edmoũd, begã his reygne ouer Englãd, in the pere of our lorde.ix.& xlvii/and ỹ.xiii pere of ỹ forenamed Lowys yet king of Fraũce/and reygned peres.ix. ca.c.lxxxix. fo.c.xiiii.

Lotharius the eldeſt ſonñ.of ỹ.v. Lowis,was anoited king of Fraũce, in the pere of our lord.ix.C.& xl/ and viii.pere of Edwardus thã kynge of Englãd/& reygned peres after moſte wryters.xxxix.ca.c.xc. fo.c.xiii.

Edwynus ỹ eldeſt ſoñ of Edmoũd brother of Ethelſtane, was enoynted kyng of Englãde,in the pere of oure lord.ix.C.lvi/ & the ſecõd pere of Lothayre thã king of Fraũce/& reygned peres.iii.ca.c.xcii. fo.c.xvi.

Edgarus the ſecõd ſonñ of Edmoũd & brother of Edwyn, begã to reygne ouer Englãd, in the pere of grace.ix. C.& lx/& ỹ.v.pere of Lotharius than kyng of Fraũce/& reygned peres.xvi ca.c.xciii. fo.c.xvi.

Edward the ſoñ of Edgare ſurnamed

named the Martyr, begā hys reygne ouer the ile of Englād, in the yere of our lorde .ix.C.lxxvii / & the.xxii.yere of Lothayre yet kyng of Fraūce/and reygned yeres .iiii.ca.c.xcvi.fo.c.xix.

Egelredus ỹ sonn̄ also of Edgare, was made kyng of Englād, in ỹ yere of grace.ix.C.lxxx.&. one / & the.xxvi. yere of Lothayre yet king of Fraūce/ and reygned yeres. xxxvi. ca.xcvii. folio. c.xx.

Lowys ỹ.vi.of ỹ name, & sonne of Lothayr/begā his reygn ouer Fraūce in ỹ yere of our lord.ix.C.lxxxvi/& the v.yere of Egelbertus thā king of England/& reygned yeres.iii. Jn thys kyng endeth the lyne of Peppyn
ca.cc.i. fo.c.xxiiii.

Hugt Capet ỹ sonn̄ of Roberte ỹ tyraūt, descended of Hugh le graūde begā to take vppō hym or vsurpe the crowne of Fraūce, in the yere of oure lord.ix.C.&.ix/and ỹ.ix.yere of Egelrede/and ruled yeres.ix. ca.cc.ii. folio. c.xxvi.

Robert the sonn̄ of Hughe, began to reygne ouer the Frēchmē, in ỹ yere of our lord .ix.C.lxxx / and.xviii.yere of Egelredus than kyng of Englād/ and reygned yeres .xxx. ca.cc.iii. folio. c.xxvii.

Edmoūde Jronsyde the sonne of Egelredus, with also Canutus ỹ son of Swanus, begā to reygn ouer Englāde, in the yere of our lord.M.and xvii/& ỹ.xix.yere of Robert thā kinge of Fraūce/& reygned one yere.
ca.cc.iiii. fo.c.xxvii.

Kanutus which in ỹ Englysh boke is named Knougth, begā after the deth of Edmoūd to reygn alone ouer Englād, in the yere of grace, M. and xix/& the.xx.yere of Robert thā kyng of Fraūce/and reygned yeres.xix.
ca.cc.v. fo.c.xxviii.

Hēry the sonn̄ of Robert begā hys dompynō ouer Fraūce, in the yere of our lord.M.&.xxix/& the.x.yere of Canutus thā king of Englād,& reygned yeres.xxxi.ca.cc.vii. fo.c.xxx.

Harolde surnamed Harefote ỹ son Canutus, began to reygne ouer England, in the yere of our lorde.M.and xxxix/& the.x.yere of Henry thā kyng of Fraūce/and ruled yeres.iii.
ca.cc.viii. fo.c.xxxi.

Hardikynitus or Hardiknought, ỹ son of Canutus & of Emma, was made king of Englāde, in the yere of our lord.M.&.xli/& the.xii.yere of Hēry thā kyng of Fraūce / and reygned yeres.ii. Jn this kyng ended the line of the Danes, that had cōtynued in thys lāde in great persecucīō aboue ii.C.l.yeres.ca.cc.ix. fo.c.xxxi.

Edward the holy cōfessour, & son of Egelredus and of Emma his laste wyfe, begā hys reygn ouer the realm of Englād, in the yere of oure lorde a M.and.xlii/& the.iiii.yere of Henry thā kyng of Fraūce / and reygned in vertue and holynes yeres.xxiiii. Jn this kynges tyme the chapell of walsynghm̄ was fyrst bylded, in ỹ yere of our lord.M.lxi.ca.cc.x. fo.c.xxxiii.

Philippe the fyrst of ỹ name and son of Hēry, begā to gouerne ỹ Frēchmē, in the yere of our lord a.M.lxviii and the.xvi.yere.of Edward the confessour thā kynge of Englande/and reygned yeres.xlviii.

Godfrey of Bulyō & nat Boleyn̄, i this Philippes tyme gat by strēgth the citie of Hierusalē/& was crowned kynge

kyng of ꝑ ſame, in the yere of our lord M.xcix.ca.cc.xv. fo.c.xxxviii.

Harolde ꝑ eldeſt ſon of erle Good wyn, begā to regn ouer Englyſhmē in the yere of our lord. M.lxvi/and ꝑ viii. yere of Philippe than kynge of Fraunce/and regned yeres.ix. ca.cc.xvi. fo.c.xxxviii.

Thus endeth the.vi. parte that conteyneth.iii.C.lxxxi. yeres.

WIllyam duke of Normādy the baſtarde ſonne of Robert the.vi duke of the ſayd prouynce, begā hys regne ouer the realme of Englande, in the.xv. day of Octobre, and yere of our lord. M.lxvii/& ꝑ.ix. yere of ꝑ fyrſt Philipe yet kyng of Fraūce & regned yeres vpō.xxii. In the.xx. yere of thys kyng, the church of ſaint Poule wyth a great parte of Lōdon was burned. Thys kyng foūded the monaſteryes of Batell and Barmū deſey. ca.cc.xix. fo.c.xlii.

wyllyam ſurnamed the Rede and ſonne of wyllyam Cōquerour, began hys regne ouer Englād, in the moneth of July & yere of our lord a. M. lxxx.& ix/& xxxi. yere of Philippe fore named yet king of Fraūce & regned yeres.xii.ca.cc.xxiii. fo.c.xlvii.

Henry ſurnamed Beawclerke and thyrd ſon of wyllyam Conqueroure, begā hys regne ouer Englād, in the yere of our lord. M.C. & one / and in the.xliii. yere of the foreſayd Phylyp yet kyng of Fraūce/& regned yeres xxxv.ca.cc.xxvi. fo.c.l.

Lowys ſurnamed the greate, and ſonn of ꝑ fyrſt Philippe, was enoyn ted king of Fraūce, in ꝑ yere our lord M.C.& vii/and ꝑ.vi. yere of the firſt Henry than kynge of Fraunce / and regned yeres .xxix. capi.cc.xxx. folio c.lv.

Stephan erle of Boloyng & ſonn vnto the erle of Bleſens, & of the wyues ſyſter of Henry the fyrſt, begā hys regne ouer Englād, in the yere of grace. M.C.& xxxvi/and the laſt yere of Lowys the great/& regned yeres xix.ca.cc.xxxii. fo.c.lvii.

Lowys the.viii. of ꝑ name and ſon of Lowys the great, begā his regne ouer Fraunce, in the yere of our lord M.C.xxxvi/& the fyrſte yere of Stephan than kyng of England / & regned yeres.xliii. ca.cc.xxxiiii. folio. c.lx.

Henry the ſeconde of that name, & ſonne of Geffrey Plantaginet and of molde the empereſſe, begā hys regn in Englande, in the yere of our lorde M.C. and.lv/and the.xix. yere of Lowys the.viii. than kyng of Fraunce/ and regned yeres.xxxv. Saynt Edwarde the confeſſour was trāſlated in the.ix. yere of thys kyng. And about the.xvi. yere of hys regne ſait Thomas of Caunterbury was martyred. cap.cc.xxxvi. folio. c.lxii.

Philippe the ſecond of that name ſurnamed a Dieu doñe, ſonne of the viii. Lowys, beganne hys regne in Fraunce, in the yere our lord a thouſande. C. and.lxxix / and.xxiiii. yere of Henry the ſeconde than kyng of Englande/and regned yeres.xliii. ca.cc.xli. fo.c.lxviii.

Thus endeth the table of the fyrſte volume.

FOR THAT IN the accomptynge of the yeres of the worlde, from the creacyon of Adam vnto the incarnacyon of Criſte, ben many and ſondery oppynyons/ as the Hebrewes, whych accompt for the ſayde terme. iii. thouſande. ix. hundred. lxiii. yeres/ the ſeuenty interpretours reken. v. M. C. lxxx, and. xix. yeres. Some there be, that reken. v. M. lxxx. and. xix. yeres/ and ſome. v. thouſande. CC. & xxviii. yeres. In the thyrde boke & fyrſte chappter of Polycronycon ben alſo ſhewed dyuers opinyons, wherof the greteſt nomber and moſt certayne is v. thouſande and. CC. yeres. And in other places alſo, ſome reken mo, and ſome haue leſſe/ by reaſon wherof the tymes ben dyuerſly ſette and accompted/ as the fyrſt foundacyon of Rome/ the ſubuerſyon of the famouſe cytye of Troye/ the fyrſt buyldynge of the cytye of London/ & dyuers other old thinges. But for I ſe, ỹ the accõpt of ỹ ſeuenty interptours is of holy Beda, and many other holy wryters allowed and followed: therfore I entendynge to ſhew in this rude worke folowyng, what yere of ỹ world Brute entred fyrſte thys ile, then called Albyon, and now England/ purpoſe to kepe the ſayde accompte, wherof the partyculers enſewe: that is to wyt, fyrſt from Adam to Noe flowyd. xxii. hundred and. xlii. yeres.

From Noe to Abrahã flowed. ix hundred and. xlii. yeres.

From Abrahã to Dauid flowyd ix. hundred and. xl. yeres.

From Dauid to the captyuyte of the Jewys paſſed. iiii. hundred. lxxx. and. v. yeres.

And from the captyuyte to the compynge of Criſte. v. hundred. lxxx. and tenne yeres.

The which in all make. v. thouſand a hundred, lxxx. and. xix. yeres.

AFter whych accõpt moſte accordynge to the purpoſe of thys worke, all be yt that diuerſe opinyons therof ben lefte in wrytynge and of dyuerſe autours: the famouſe cytye of Troye was ſubuerted of the Gzekes, as wytneſſyth holy Euſebius and other, in the yere of ỹ world. iiii. M. and. xxii.

Alſo folowyng the ſayd accompt, as wytneſſyth the forſayde Euſeby & dyuerſe other, the citye of Rome was begon to be buylded in the. xi. yere of Ezechias then kynge of Juda/ the whyche yere maketh after the ſayde auctours, the yere of the worlde. iiii. thouſand, foure hũdred, lxx. And the ſayd auctours affirme, that the ſayd cytye of Rome was edifyed after the ſubuerſion of Troye, iiii. hũdred and xlvii. yeres. By whych reaſon it muſt folowe, that yt was buylded in ỹ yere of the worlde, as is aboue ſayde.

Peter Pictauienſis and other teſtifye, that Brute entred fyrſte the ile of Albyon, now called England, in the xviii. yere of the preſte and iudge of Iſrael named Hely. And as affermeth dyuers auctours/ the ſayde Hely beganne to rule the Iſraelites, the yere of the thyrde age: that is from Abraham to Dauid. viii. hũdred, lxi. which maketh the yeres of the world foure thouſande and. xlv.

wherunto yf there be ioyned the aboue ſayde. cxviii. yeres: then muſte yt folow, that Brute ſhuld entre this lande, in the yere of the worlde foure thouſand. lxiii. To this agreeth ỹ auctour of Polycronicon/ whych ſayth, that Brute entred Albion. xl. yeres after the

ter the subuercyon of Troye. whyche xl.yeres ioyned to the former sayeng of Eusebius, maketh the sayd nomber of.iiii.thousand and.lxiii.yeres.

Also a wryter of hystoryes called Jacobus Philippus, affermeth that Troye was taken by the Grekes, in the thyrde yere ỹ Abdon or Labdon iudged the Jsraelytes. whych began his rule ouer the sayd Jsraelytes, after the accorde of moste wryters / in the yere of the worlde.iiii.thousande and .xx. wherunto yf there be ioyned thre yeres for ỹ thyrd yere of his rule in whyche yere Troye (as before ys sayde) was taken/and .xl. yeres that passed or Brute percyd Albyon: yt must folowe ỹ Brute entred fyrste. thys ile of Albyon (as before is sayd) in the yere of the worlde.iiii.thousand and.lxiii.

Then by these foresayde reasons Brute toke possessyō of this ile of Albyon/in the yere of the worlde, as before is sayde, before the buyldyng of the cytye of Rome, as by the foresayd reasons may be also prouyd.iiii.hundred and.vii.yeres: and before the incarnacyon of our blessyd sauyour folowynge the same accompte/ a thousand an hundred.xxx.and.vi.yeres.

Thus endeth thaccomptynge of the yeres of the worlde, from the creacyon of Adam vnto the incarnacyon of Chryst.

THE PROLOGE

When I aduertyse in my remembraunce
The manyfold storyes, in order duely sette
Of kynges and prynces, ỹ whylom had gouernaūce
Of Rome and Jtalye, and other further fette
As of Jewes and Grekes, the whyche haue not let
But that men maye se in order seryously
How longe they reygned, and how successyuely.

Of Fraunce and other I myght lyke wyse report
To theyr great honour, as of them doth appere,
But to England yf I shall resorte
Ryght mysty storyes, doutfull and vnclere
Of names, of tymes, and of the duraunt yere
That kynges or prynces ruled that famouse yle
Almoste vncertayne how I shulde guyde my style.

And for of cunnynge I am full destytute
To bringe to frame so great a mystery:
I nyll presume wythout other refute
To ioyne suche a worke, or yt to rectyfye.
To me yt semeth so farre sette awrye
In tyme of yeres, to other dyscordaunt
That to my dull wytte yt is not atteynaunt.

To bringe in order a thynge of such weyght
And cause yt to agre wyth other olde storyes,

But yt to rempte to them that ben sleyght
And sharpe in lecture, and haue kepte theyr studyes
And sought the bookes of many olde hystoryes
And haue in cronycles full experyence
To frame suche a worke by theyr great prudence

And I lyke the pretyse, that he wyth the rough stone
And bryngeth yt to square wyth hard strokes & many
That the mayster after may it ouergone
And pynte therin his fygures and hys storye
And so to worke yt after his proporcynary
That yt may appere to all that shall it se
A thynge ryght perfyte, and well in eche degre.

So haue I now sette out thys rude warke
As rough as the stone not cõmen to the square
That the lerned and the studyed clerke
May yt ouer polyshe, and clene do yt pare
Flowrysshe yt wyth eloquence, wherof yt is bare
And frame it in order, that yet is out of ioynt
That it wyth olde authours may gree in euery poynt

Besechynge hym that so wyll take the payne
Or any other, that lyst on thys to loke
where any errour in thys by hym is sayne
It to correcte and mende this rude boke
For by hym that neuer yet any order toke
Or gre of scole, or sought for great cunnynge
Thys worke is gaderyd wyth small vnderstandynge.

Not for any pompe, nor yet for great mede
Thys worke haue I taken on hande to compyle
But onely bycause that I wolde spryede
The famouse honour of thys fertyle yle
That hath contynued by many a longe whyle
In excellent honour wyth many a royall guyde
Of whome the dedes haue spronge to the world wyde.

But of those dedes me lyst not here to shewe
For in the sequele they shall well appere
And in shorte procesle, and in as wordes fewe
As I goodly may, I shall lynke in fere
The storyes of England, and Fraunce so dere
That to the reader it may well be sayne
what kynges togyther ruled these landes twayne.

And in the pryncyppll of the reygne of euery kynge

As well of one and other more and lesse
what pere of the worlde he toke begynnynge
To guyde hys realme: and farther besynesse
I wyll eke take, to shewe and expresse
what terme of peres euery prynce dyd reygne.
And in what honour he dyd his tyme maynteyne.

The tyme also how longe the Brytons ruled,
And how by Sarons they lastely were put oute.
Then of Danes/whyche bothe landes defoyled
By theyr outrage/and of theyr fury stoute:
Of whome both nacyons stode longe in great doute,
Tyll Fraunce wyth them allyed by maryage
And England lastely voyded that lynage.

Then how the Normayns, by wyllyam cõquerour,
Entrede this lande, and helde the seygnory
A certayne of tyme, tyll the hygh gouernour
Restored the blode of Sarons enterly
And of the Scottes, that neuer coude apply
To kepe theyr allegaunce/but many a tyme rebelled
And to be true were full often compelled.

The fatall warre, that hath dured so longe
Twene Fraũce and Englande, to both theyr damage
And of the peace, that hath ben vnderfonge
Bothe by great othes and eke by maryage.
Of walys gerysheneſſe/and of theyr lyght dotage
How they were scourged for theyr vnstedfastnesse,
wyth dyuers other, whyche I shall after expresse.

And for that London, that auncyent cytye
Hath euer perseuered in vertuous nobleſſe
To the great honour, as may consydered be,
Of all thys lande/in welth and great largesse
Therfore I thynke somwhat to expresse
Of theyr good order, and cyuyle polycy
That they so longe haue ruled theyr cytye by.

And of theyr rulers, as they are yerely chosen
To rule the cõmonte by theyr dyscrecyon,
I shall you shewe, and to you dysclosen
The names of mayres and shyryffes of that towne
And all suche actes/as by reuolucyone
In theyr dayes fyll/so that there shall appere
The prynces actes, whyche chaunged yere by yere.

Of Fraunce also the cronycle shall ensew
In his dewe ordre/so that ye may knowe,
when they beganne theyr pryncs to renewe
And from the seruage when they were kept lowe
Of the Romayns/whom they dyd ouerthrowe
And of theyr names that they whylom dyd chaunge
Of theyr fyrste baptysme,and ōf theyr names straunge.

Thus in thys boke maye you here and se
Of bothe landes the cronycles entyere,
wyth other maters/whyche regystred be
Of olde wryters,suche as wrote full clere
Actes of prynces done bothe farre and nere,
And them engrosed wyth great dylygence:
wherby to theyr folowers myght growe experyence.

Into.vii.partes I haue thys boke deuyded
So that the reder may chose where he wyll.
The fyrste conteyneth,how the Brytons guyded
This lande from Brute,Moliuncius vntyll.
And from Moliuncius I haue sette forth skyll
To the nynthe yere of kynge Casybelan
The seconde parte/for that the Romaynes than

Conquered Brytayne. And thens to Seueryne
The thyrde parte I haue also assygned.
The fourth endyth then at Constantyne
The fyfte at Cadwalader I haue also dyffyned.
At the conquest I haue eke determyned
The.vi.parte. And the.vii.or laste
At our redoubted pryncs I haue the ende caste.

Henry the.vii. whom god preserue and saue,
And hym defende from all aduersyte,
Beseechynge them that wyll the laboure haue
This boke to rede/or any parte to se
That where defaute is/yt may corrected be
wythout dysdayne/and that they wyll supporte
And ayde thys worke wyth all theyr comforte.

And for thys boke includeth storyes fele,
And towchyth thynges done in sondry place
So that one tyme must wyth an other dele
To kepe the yeres,the tyme, and the space
Therfore thys name it shall now purchace
(Concordaunce of storyes)by me prouyded
The auctor sans nome fynally deuysed

And for thys worke maye haue the better spede
To prayer me thynketh yt is ryght necessarye
That I shulde fall, consyderynge my nede
That I must haue, for lacke of due studye,
where through that connynge and perfyte memory
Of thynges taken, when I was ponge and hynde
Ben farre sette of, and putte from my mynde.

By this is ignoraunce now comen in place
And oblyuyon hath sette in hys fote
So that knowledge from me they done race,
wherby in olde auctours I myght fynde some boote
In latyn and frenche, that in theyr dytees swoot
These olde wryters haue so compendyously
Sette the olde storyes in order dylygently.

But in thys prayer I thynke nought to be vsed
As dyddyn these poetys in theyr olde dayes,
whyche made theyr prayers to goddes abused
As Iupiter and Mars, that in theyr olde lawes,
were named goddes, and fayned in theyr sawes,
That they were goddes of batayll and rychesse
And hadde in them great vertue and prowesse.

For what may helpe these fayned goddes all
As Saturne or Mercury, or yet bryght Apollo,
Bacchus, or Neptune, or Pluto the thrall,
Eolus, Morynos, or blynde Cuppdo,
Or yet that goddes, the fayre Iuno,
Diana, or Pallas, or Ceres the fre,
Or yet the Mulys that ben thryes thre.

wherto shulde I call vnto Calyope
Moder of Orpheus, wyth swete armony
That of eloquence hath the soueraynte,
Or to Carmentis, whyche by her fyrste studye
The latyne letters founde out perfytly
Syns all these were mynystres of god immortall
And hadde in them no power dyuynall.

wherfore to the lorde, that ys celestyall
I wyll now crye, that of hys influence
Of grace and mercy, he wyll a droppe lette fall,
And shappe my wytte wyth suche experience,
That this maye fynyshe wyth hys assystence,
wyth fauour of the virgyn, his moder moste excellent,
To whome I thus pray, wyth mynde and hole entent.

Assit principio sancta Maria meo.

Moste blessyd lady, comforte to such as calle
To the for helpe, in eche necessyte,
And what thou aydest, may in no wyse apalle
But to the best is formyd in ylke degre:
wherfore good lady, I praye yt may please the
At my begynnynge my penne so to lede
That by thyne ayde thys worke maye haue good spede

The thyrde chappter.

THis that I haue shewed vnto you, what season and tyme of the yeres of ỹ world Brute entred fyrste thys yle of Albyon: me semyth yt is cõuenyent, that I also shew how and for what cause yt was fyrste named Albyon. The whych so toke fyrst name, as wytnessyth Strabo and other writers, of the whyte clyues or rockes, ỹ stande vppon the sees syde, and are farre sene in clere wether and bryght dayes. wherof it was of olde wryters named Albyon, as yt were the whyte lande. whyche sayenge affermeth also Ranulphe & dyuers other: so that yt may certaynly be knowen, that yt toke not that fyrste name of Albyne doughter of Dioclecyan kyng of Syrye, as in the englyshe cronycle is affermyd. For in all olde storyes or cronycles is not founde, that any suche kyng of that name reygned ouer the Syryens, or yet Assyryens: nor yet any suche storye, that his .xxx. doughters shuld slee theyr .xxx. husbandes, as there is surmysed, was put in wrytynge. whyche yf any suche wonder hadde ben there wrought, shulde not haue bene vnremembred of the wryters & auctours of that partyes: consyderynge that many lesse wonders are put in wrytynge by the sayd wryters. wherfore it is more apparant, ỹ yt toke that fyrst name of Albyon, as aboue in sayde/then of Albyne doughter of the sayd Dioclecyon.

And as to the Geaũtes that Brute founde in this yle at hys arryuayll, they might be brought into this lãde by some meane of shyppes or other wyse, rather then to be borne of those women, as there is also imagyned.

Of this yle the auctours Alpherd and Beda tell many wonders/which in the fyrst boke of Policronicon are sufficiẽtly towched, where it is sayd, ỹ this yle is called an other worlde. For as sayth Solinus, the edge of the Frenche clyffe shuld be ỹ ende of the world, yf this yland ne were not. Many other thynges ben there specyfyed, the whyche I passe ouer.

Thys yle is closed on all sydes with ỹ see/& stretcheth in length out of the sowth into the north / haupnge in the sowthest syde Fraunce / in the south ỹ land of spayne / in the north ỹ coũtre of Norway/& in the west the coũtre of Irland. And hath in length from Totnesse to Catenessey .xv. myles beyonde Mychell Stowe in Cornewayle vpon .viii. hundred myles. And to reken the brede from sayute Daupds lande in walys called Menema to Douer clyffes: it cõteyneth after moste wryters .iii. hundred myles. And yf yt be rekened from ỹ sayd place in walys, vnto yarmouthe in Norffolk, not so mych, but lesse by .lx. myles, after some wryters. And Beda sayth it cõteineth ouer .CC. miles.

And

And this yle was fyrste as aboue is sayde, named Albyon: and secundaryly Britayne after Brute: & thyrdely Anglia of Anglis by cõmaũdemẽt of Egberte kynge of Anglys, and of westsaxons: all beyt that after some wryters yt was called Anglia, after the name of the quene of thys lande named Anglia: albeit that therof is founde lytell authoryte.

This yle was fyrste conquered by ỹ Romayns/and so contynued vnto them as trybutary, and vnder theyr rule, as after in the ende of the story of Gracianus shall appere, ouer. iiii. hundred yeres: secondely by the Saxõs: thyrdely by ỹ Danys: & fourthly by the Normans: and was deuyded fyrst by Brute in thre partes / as in the storye shall appere folowynge.

The.ii.chapiter.

BRute of the auncyent and noble blode of Troyans, descendyd of Eneas a Troyan and of the doughter of Pryame kynge of the Troyans: whyche Eneas receyued of his sayd wyfe a sonne named Ascanius, the whiche was kynge of the countre of Italye nexte after hys father Eneas.

For so it was, that after the foresayde cytye of Troy was, as before is sayde, by the Grekes subuertyd: Eneas, whych entendyd to haue saued frome dethe the fayre Polixena doughter of kynge Pryam / was for that dede by Agamemnon, duke or chyefe leder of the Grekes, exyled frõ Troy: the whiche accõpanyed wyth a great nomber of Troyans, wythin iii. yeres after his departynge frome Troye, landed in ỹ coũtre of Italye. And there after dyuerse conflyctes and batayllys hadde wyth Latynus then kynge of Italye: he maryed by the agrement of the sayde Latinus, hys doughter named Lauina. Upon ỹ which he gatte a sonne, and named hym Syluius Posthumus: of the whych after some wryters descendyd Brutus fyrste kynge of Albyon. But for a more concordaunce of this worke and conuenyencye of yeres, as testyfyeth Policronica, Guydo de Colũna, wryter of storyes, and other, Ascanius the fyrst sonne of Eneas, gotten vppon hys fyrste wyfe, hadde a sonne named Siluius/whyche after some wryters is named Siluius Eneas: this Siluius Eneas was father to Brute. Of this is dyuers opinyons, wherof some are manyfestely shewed in the. xxvii. chappter of the seconde boke of Polycronycon.

Then it foloweth in the story: this Brute beyng of the age of. xi. yeres, slewe his father in shotyng at a wyld beste. And as some authours haue/ he slewe also hys moder in tyme of his byrth. But for the laste dede, by agrement of all wryters, he was banyshed the countre: and after by fortune landed wyth hys company in a prouynce of Grece/ where at ỹ tyme reygned a kyng named Pandrasus, or after some wryters Pandarus: ỹ whyche kynge, as affermeth Geffrey of Monmouth, was lynyally descended of the blode of Achylles.

In thys prouynce Brute founde many Troyans, as captiuys & thrall to the Grekes, wyth the whych he cõspyred and faught wyth the Grekes sondry tymes: & lastely for a fynall concorde toke to wyfe the doughter of the sayd Pandrasus, named Igno gen. After whyche maryage solemnyzyd: the sayde Brute, by coũsayle of ỹ Troyans, with a certayne of shyppes well vytaylled/ departed out of Grece, and soughte hys aduenture. whyche after many daungers of the

see

passed/he landed wyth his company in a parte or yle of Affryca named(as sayth Guydo and other) Lergesia. wythin whyche yle at those dayes stode an old temple dedycate in ỹ honoure of Diua or Diana a goddesse of mysbyleued people. The whiche temple when Brute had appeyued anon he yode into yt/where knelyng before the aulter, wyth great deuocyon, sayde these versys folowynge.

Diua potens nemorum: terror syluestribus apris,
Cui licet amfractus ire per æthereos.
Infernasq; domos, terestria iura resolue,
Et dic quas terras nos habitare velis.
Dic certam cedem qua te venerabor in æuum,
Qua tibi virgineis templa dicabo choris.

The whyche versys are to be vnderstanden in our moder tonge as after is expowned.

Celestyall goddesse, that weldest fyth and woode
The wylde boze & beestes thou ferpst by thy myght
Guyder of shypmen passynge the vagpous flode,
The infernall howses, for and the erth of ryght,
Beholde and serche, and shew where ỹ shall ryght
Telle the certayne place, where euerlastynglp
A temple of virgyns to the ỹ shall edyfye.

After whyche prayer & obseruaunces after ỹ pagan ryte, with great deuocyon done and excercysed about ỹ auter of the sayd goddesse or idolle in those dayes vsed: Brute fill in a slepe In tyme of whyche slepe apperyd to hym the sayde goddesse, and sayde to hym in maner & forme as foloweth.

Brute sub occasum solis trans Gallica regna
Insula in oceano est vndeq; clausa mari:
Insula in oceano est habitata gigantibus olim,
Nunc deserta quidem, gentibus apta tuis.
Hic de prole tua reges nascentur, & ipsis
Totius terre subditus orbis erit.
Hanc pete, nanq; tibi sedes erit in illa perhennis:
Hic fiet natis altera Troia tuis.

The whyche versas may be englysshed as here after foloweth.

Brute farre by west, ouer the lande of Fraunce
An yle in occean there is, all closed wyth the see
Thys yle wyth gyauntes wylom inhabyt by chaūce
Now beynge deserte, as apte for thy people and the
In thys of thy body kynges borne shalbe
And of thys yle thou shalt be lorde and kynge
Serche thys, for here a perpetuall see to the
And here to thy chyldren a new Troy shal spryng.

The.iii.chapter.

When Brute awoke and remēbred hym of thys vysyon: anō he called to hym such as he most trusted/and shewed to them what he had seen & harde. wherof they all beynge greatly reioysed: caused greate fyres to be made, in the whyche they cast wyne, mylke, and other lycours, wyth dyuerse aromate and spyces of moste swetest odour, as in the olde pagan lawes and rytes were vsed.

whyche obseruaunce wyth other done: wyth greate ioye and myrthe they entryd into theyr shyppes, and pulled vp theyr sayles, & toke theyr course westwarde. And so sayled by the space of .xxx. dayes passynge by many auentures and daungers/ as of Philenes, ỹ lake called Lacus salinarum, or salte lake, or the place where salt is made, the ryuer called Malea, & Hercules pyllers/ & came lastly to the see. Tyrrhen or Turon, where he encoūtred wyth a small nauy of shyppes/of the whyche a Troyane and neuew to Brute called Corineus was captayne. whē eyther of them had saluted other, & reioysed of theyr metynge: they togyder made towarde land, and landyd in the prouynce of Gallia, now called Guyan: of whyche prouynce at that daye a prynce named Grossarius was ruler. The whych hauynge knowlege of ỹ landynge of these straungers: wyth hys power made towarde them, & to them

them gaue batayle. But the Troyãs were victours and ouercame Grossa rius wyth all hys knyghtes.

In thys batayle was slayne a noble Troyane & neuewe to Brute named Turonus, and there buryed. wherfore in remembraunce of ỹ sayd Turonus Brute buylded there a cytye, and named yt Turon as some authours testyfye. But it shuld seme by the sayenge of Polycronyca/that thylke cytye Turon was buylded afore: all be yt that ỹ authour of Cronica cronicaꝝ affermyth it to be buylded by Brute in remembraũce of his sayd cosyn Turonus, whiche cytye at this daye is yet of great fame wythin the realme of Fraunce.

This done, the sayd Brute & Corineus wyth theyr Troyans toke agayne shyppynge / the whyche after iii. dayes or few dayes saylyng, landyd at an hauen or porte in Cornewayle, named at this daye Totnesse & from thens yode serchyng the land and coũtre, the yere as before is sayd iii. thousande. lxiii/ before the buyldynge of Rome folowynge the forsayde accompte, iiii. hundred and. xx. before the incarnacyon of Cryste. xi. hundred, & .xxvi. and before Alexander the great conquered the worlde, eyght hundred and .xi. also before any kynge regned ouer the Frenshe men/or that they were clere quyte of theyr trewage agayne ỹ Romayns, xv. hundred and. lvi.

The. iiii. chaptyer.

Retourne we then to Brute / whyche after his landyng in this ile of Albyon: cyrcued & serchyd ỹ lande ouer all/and founde it full fertyle & plenteous of wode and of grasse, and gar nyshed with many fayre ryuers and stremes. And in his traueylynge the lande/ he was encountred wyth many great and myghty gyauntes/ the whych he destroyed. Among ỹ which as recherlyth that Englyshe cronicle: was one of passyng strength named Gogmagog/the whiche he caused to wrestle wyth Corineus or Corne his neuewe beside Douer: in which wrestlinge that gyaũt brake a rybbe in the syde of Corineus. where thorough Corine⁹ beynge sore amoued, wyth great strength supprysed that gyaunt, & cast hym downe the rocke of Douer. By reason wherof as affermyth ỹ said english cronycle, ỹ place was named the fall of Gogmagog.

But after that ỹ name was chaũged & called the fall of Douer/which to this daye endurith. For this dede and other Brute gaue vnto his sayd neuewe Corineus or Corn the hole countre of Cornewayll.

And whẽ Brute had thus destroyed the gyauntes, & serchyd the sayde yle of Albyõ thoroughly: he cõmyng by ỹ ryuer of Thamis, for pleasure ỹ he had in that ryuer, with also the cõmodytees therunto adioynynge/began there to buylde a cytye in ỹ remẽbraunce of the cytye of Troye lately subuerted, & named it Troynouant/ whiche is as myche to saye as newe Troy: whych name endured tyll the cõmynge of Lud after kynge of Brytayne vpon the tyme of a thousande lxbii. yere. But ỹ sayd kyng cõmaũdyd it to be callyd Luddys towne/ which by shortnesse of speche is now called London.

Then when Brute had thus buylded his cytye, & saw ỹ he was stablysshed in his realme quyetly: he thẽ by thaduise of his lordes/cõmaunded ỹ sayd yle & coũtre to be called Britayn and his people Brytons/and so contynued his regne prosperously.

In the

In the whyche tyme he stablysshed and ordred his people to lyue in tyllynge of theyr lande and otherwyse.

This Brute had receyued of hys wyfe thre sonnes, wherof the fyrste was named Locrinus or Locryne/ ỹ seconde Cambrius or Cambre / and ỹ third Albanactus or Albanakt. To the fyrst and eldest, he besette this yle of Bryptane, the whiche after was named myddell England/ whych is to meane Troynouant, wyth all ỹ coũtres there about lyenge, cõteynynge est, west & sowth. And for this cause, and for yt shulde sounde toward the name of the sayd Locryne: this part of Bryptayne was longe after called Loegria or Logiers.

To the seconde sonne Cambre, he beset or appoynted to hym the coũtre of walys / the whyche was fyrste named after hym Cambria. This in the eest syde was somtyme departed from Englande by the ryuer of Seuerne: But now in the north syde ỹ ryuer named Dee at Chester departeth Englande and walys: and in ỹ sowth the ryuer that is called Uaga at the castell of Strynglyng parteth Englande and walys,

To the thyrde sonne Albanakt, he beset the north parte of thys yle, and named yt Albyon / or more veryly the sayd countre toke after ỹ name of the sayd thyrde sonne, and was called Albania. Thys coũtre was after named Scotlande / and is deuyded from Loegria or Logiers, as sayeth holy Beda by two armys of ỹ see, but they mete not. The eest arme of these two begynneth about ii. myles from the mynster of Eburcurynge, in the west syde of Penultoñ. The weste arme of those twayne hath in ỹ ryght syde or somtyme hadde, a stronge cytye named Aclud, whych in ỹ Brettysshe tonge was called Clyntston, & stãdeth vpon the ryuer called Clynt

Thus whẽ Brute had diuided this yle of Bryptayne, as before is shewed in thre partes, and hadde holden the pryncypate therof nobly by the terme of .xxiiii. yeres after most cõcordaũce of writers: he dyed, and was enteryd or buryed at Troynouãt or London.

The .v. chappter.

Locrinus or Locryne ỹ fyrst or eldest son of Brute was made kynge of Bryptayne of ỹ countre of Logiers / the yere of the worlde .iiii. thousande .lxxx. and .vii. The whych helde to hys parte, as sayth Polycronicon, and also Guydo de Columna, the countre that stretcheth from the south see vnto the ryuer of Humbre, as before is expressyd.

whyle this Locrynus thus regned in Logiers: his brother Albanactus beynge ruler, as before in sayde of Albania or Scotlande, was warreyd by a duke, whome the cronycle of Englãd nameth Humbre/ ỹ which slewe Albanakt in playne batayle.

ye shall vnderstande ỹ this Humber at the daye of his commynge in to Albania was not named Humber but after olde wryters he was called kyng of Hunnys or kyng of Sithia without other addicion. This kynge as before is sayde, after he thus subdued Albanactus/ helde the lande of Albania, tyll after ỹ Locrinus wyth his brother Cambre, gathered a gret power of men of armys, and yode agaynst the sayde kynge of Hunnys/ and by strength of theyr Britons chasyd and subduyd the sayde Hũnys so sharpely, that many of thẽ with theyr king were drowned in a ryuer, which departyth England and Scotland. And for so myche as to the wryter of the

the ſtorye of Brytons, his name was declared to be Humber: therfore the ſayde auctor affermyth, that the ſayd Humber the ryuer toke the fyrſte name of hym/ whych yet contynueth to this daye.

Furthermore teſtifyeth the ſayde auctour, that after this victory thus obteyned by theſe two forſayde brotherne: thys Locrinus inamowred hym ſelfe vppon a fayre wenche named Eſtrylde, and doughter of the forenamed Humber/and her kept vnlefully by a certayne of tyme. where wyth his wyfe named Guendoloena beynge ſore diſcontent/ excyted her fader and frendes to make warre vpon the ſayd Locryne her huſbande. In the whyche warre laſtely he was ſlayne/ when he hadde reygned or ruled Loegria or Logiers after the concordaunce of moſt writers.xi.yeres: and was buryed by his father in the cytye of Troynouaunt/ leuyng after hym a ponge ſonne gotten vpon hys wyfe named Madan.

THE VI. CHAPITER.

Guendoloena or Guendolyne the wyfe of Locrinus, a doughter of Corineus duke of Cornewayle/ for ſo myche as Madan her ſonne was ponge to gouerne the lande: was by cõmune aſſent of all ỹ Brytõs made ruler of the yle of Brytayne, the yere of the worlde.iiii.thouſand, a hundred and.vii. And ſo hauyng poſſeſſyon of the ſayde yle, well and diſcretly ſhe ruled yt, to the comfort of her ſubiectes/ tyll the tyme her ſonne Madan came vnto his lawfull age. At the whych ſeaſon ſhe gaue ouer the rule and domynyon to hym/ after ſhe had ruled (as before is ſayde) thys yle xv. yeres.

THE VII. CHAPITER.

Madan the ſonne of Locryne & of Guendolyne before named: was made ruler of Britayne, in the yere of ỹ worlde iiii.thouſande.C. and.xxii. Of thys is lytell or no memorye made by any writers/ excepte that ſome write of hym, ỹ he vſed great tyranny among his Brytons. Neuertheleſſe all or the more parte of writers agreen/that he ruled this yle of Brytayn by ỹ terme of.xl.yeres. At ỹ ende of whych terme, he beynge at his diſporte or hũtyng, was of wyld beſtes or wolues ſlayne or deuourd: and left after hym two ſonnes, as ſayth Policronica, named Menprecius and Manlius.

THE VIII. CHAPITER.

Menprecius the eldeſt ſonne of Madan was made ruler of Brytayne/ in the yere of the worlde.iiii.thouſand.C.lxii. But he reygned not lõge in peace. For his ponger brother Manlius, of a malacyous and couetyſe mynde entendynge to be kynge, and to expell or ſubdue his brother: excyted the Brytons in ſuche wyſe to rebell agayn Menprecius, that great and dedely warre contynued longe amonge them. How be yt laſtely by medyacyons of frendes, a daye of communycacyon in louynge maner atwene theſe two bretherne was appoynted. At whyche daye of aſſemble Menprecius by treaſon ſlewe hys brother Manlius/ after whoſe deth he lyued in more tranquylyte and reſte. where through he fell into ſlowth, and by meane of ſlouth into vnlefull lykynge and lechery/ and by that

that vyce into hatered of his subiectes by takynge of theyre wyues and chylder: and fynally became so vnhappy, ỹ he forsoke his lefull wyfe and concubynes, and fyll into the synne of Sodomye. Thus from one vice he grew into a nother/so that he became odyble to god and man: and lastely goyng on huntynge, and lost of his people/was distroyed of wyld bestes, when he had reygned .xx. yeres: leuyng after hym a goodly yonlynge begoten of his lefull wyfe named Ebrauke.

THE .IX. CHAPITER.

EBrauke the sonne of Memprecius was made ruler of this lande of Brytayne/in the yere of the worlde foure thousande a hundred, lxxx. and. ii: and had, as testifyeth Policronica, Gaufryde, & other wryters .xxi. wyues: of the whych he receyued .xx. sonnes and. xxx. doughters/wherof the fayrest was named Gwales, or after some Gualea. He sent these doughters to Albia Siluius, whych was the .xi. kynge of Italye, or the. vii kynge of Latynes/to the ende to haue them maryed to the blood of Troyans. This Ebrauke was also a man of fayre stature, & of great strengthe, & by his power and myght he enlarged his domynyon/in so myche that he wanne and occupyed a great parte of Germania by ỹ ayde and helpe of the Latynes/and retourned thes wyth great pray & ryches. After whych retourne, he buyldded the cytye of Caerbrauk now called yorke: whych shulde be, as sayth the authour named Flos historiarū, or the Floure of histories wryten in frenche/in the .xxiii. yere of ỹ reygne of the sayd Ebrauke. which accompt to folow, yt shuld seme that Troynouant or Lōdon was buylded before the sayd cytye of yorke, about an hundred and .xl. yeres: supposyng the cytye of London to be begonne in the seconde yere of Brutes reygne.

Also he buylded i Albania or Scotlande the castell of Maydens, the whych is called Edynborgh. After which edyfyces ended and made: he wyth a great armye sayled into Gallia nowe Fraunce, and subdued the Gallis, and retourned wyth great triumphe and rychesse. And when he had guyded this lande of Brytayne nobly by the terme of. lx. yeres, after moste concordaunce of wryters, he dyed, and was buryed at Caerbrauk or yorke/leuynge after hym for hys heyre his eldest sonne(as sayth Gaufryde) named Brute Grenesshyelde.

THE .X. CHAPITER.

BRute Grenesshyelde, the sonne of Ebrauke, was made gouernour of this lande of Brytayne/the yere of the worlde. iiii. thousande. ii. hūdred and xlii. Of this Brute is no memory made touchynge any fame/excepte ỹ Gaufryde sayth that he ruled this lande of Brytayne(his fader lyuynge)a certayne tyme/& after his fader by the terme of. xii yeres. The whyche yeres expyred or endyd: he dyed, and lyeth buryed at Caerbrāk or yorke, leuynge after hym a sonne named Leyll.

THE .XI. CHAPITER.

LEillus or Leyr son of Brute Grenesshielde/was made ruler of Brytayne, in ỹ yere of ỹ worlde iiii. M. CC. & liiii. This was a iuste mā & a louer of peace & equyte/& in his tyme made the town of Caerleyr or Carlyle, and ruled this lande well and honourably by the terme of. xxb. yeres, as testifyeth the forenamed Gaufryde: and after dyed, and was buryed at Caerleyr be foresayde.

But of this Leyr speketh some dele the aboue named authour Floure of

hiſtoꝛyes ſayeng, ꝑ in the ende of his reygne he fyll to ſlowth and vnlefull lyſtyng of his body: by meane wher of cyuyle ſtryfe began to grow with in this realme/ꝑ which was not paci fyed by ſome termes after his dayes: the whyche ſayenge is not denyed by the foꝛeſayd authour Gaufrid. This Leyll lefte after hym a ſonne named Lud, oꝛ after ſome wꝛyters he was named Lud Hurdibꝛas.

THE .XII. CHAPITER.

LUd oꝛ Lud Hurdibꝛas ꝑ ſon of Leyll, was made ruler of the lande of Bꝛytayne, in the yere of the woꝛlde .iiii.thouſande.ii.hūdꝛed and.lxxix. This alſo of Gaufryde is called Hurdibꝛas: the whyche after he was ſtablyſhed in his reygne/ ap peaſyd and dꝛewe to accoꝛde of the dyſcoꝛde and varyaunce that hadde ſpꝛonge in his fathers lyues tyme. The whych diſcretely appeaſyd and endyd/he buylded the towne of Kaer kyn, nowe called Caunterbury: the towne alſo of Kaerguen, now callyd wynton oꝛ wyncheſter: and alſo a towne called Moūt Paladour, now named Septon oꝛ Shaftiſbury. In the tyme of buyldyng, of which town of Septon, as affermyth myne au thour Gaufride, an egle there ſpake certayn wordes, ꝑ which he ſayth he wyll not declare oꝛ wꝛyte foꝛ any cer taynte. Thus when this ſayde Lud hadde ruled this lande nobly by the terme of.xxxix. yeres, he dyed, & lefte after hym a ſonne named Baldud.

THE .XIII. CHAPITER.

BAldud ꝑ ſonne of Lud Hurdi bꝛas, was made gouernoure of Bꝛytayne in the yere of the woꝛld iiii. thouſand. iii.hundꝛed and.xviii. This as teſtyfyed Gaufryde, Poly cronica, and other, was well and ſuf fycyently inſtructe in the commynges oꝛ ſcyẽces of aſtronomy & nigroman cye. By thē he made the hote bathes wythin the town of Caerbadon, now named Bathe: the whyche towne oꝛ cytye he alſo buyldyd. But to that re pugnyth wyllyam de Malmeſbury, ſaynge that the foꝛeſayd hote bathes were made by the induſtrye, oꝛ of the induſtry of Julius ceſar fyꝛſte empe rour of Rome. This Baldud as af fermyth the foꝛeſayd authour Gau fride: taught this loꝛe of nigromācy thoꝛough his realme: & fynally toke in yt ſuch pꝛyde & pꝛeſumpſyon/ꝑ he toke vpō him to fle in ꝑ ayer. But he fyll vpon the temple of his god Apo lyn, & theron was all to toꝛne/ when he had ruled Bꝛytayne by the ſpace of .xx.yeres, leuynge after hym a ſon named Leyꝛ.

THE .XIIII. CHAPITER.

LEyꝛ ꝑ ſonne of Baldud was made ruler ouerꝑ Bꝛutōs, the yere of ꝑ woꝛld.iiii.M. ccc.& xxxvii. This Leyꝛ was noble of cōdicyōs, & guyded his land & ſubiectes in great welth. He made ꝑ towne of Caerleyꝛ nowe called Leyceter oꝛ Leycester. And all be yt ꝑ this man helde longe the pꝛyncypate of Bꝛytayne: yet ſof hym is nothynge left woꝛthy memo ry, excepte that Gaufryde ſayth, ꝑ he receyued of his wyfe .iii. doughters onely wythout any ſon/ whych were named Gonoꝛilla, Ragan, and Coꝛ deilla, the whych he mych loued/but moſte ſpecially he loued the yongeſt, Coꝛdeilla by name.

whē this Leyꝛ oꝛ Leyth after ſome wꝛyters, was fallen in competente age, to knowe the mynde of his thꝛe doughters, he fyꝛſt aſked Gonoꝛilla the eldeſte howe well ſhe loued hym: the whych callyng her goddes to re coꝛde, ſayd ſhe loued hym moꝛe then her owne ſoule. wyth this anſwere the father beynge well contented, de maunded of Ragan the ſeconde dou ghter, howe well ſhe loued hym.

To whom she answered, and afftermynge wyth great othes, sayde that she coude not wyth her tong expresse the great loue that she bare to hym: affermynge furthermore, that she loued hym aboue all creatures. After these pleasaũt answeres had of those two doughters, he called before hym Cordeilla ỹ yongest. The whych vnderstãdyng ỹ dyssymulacyõ of her.ii. susters, entẽdyng to proue her fader, sayd: most reuerent fader where my ii. systers haue dyssymuled wyth the with their pleasaũt wordꝭ fruteles, I knowyng ỹ great loue & faderly zele, that toward me euer before this time thou hast borne (for ỹ whych I may not speke to the otherwyse thẽ my cõscyence ledyth me) therfore I saye to the father I haue loued the euer as my fader, & shall cõtynually whyle I lyue, loue the as my naturall father. And yf thou wylt further be inquisityke of the loue that I to the bere: I ascertayne the, that asmyche as thou arte worthy to be beloued/ euen so mychel I loue the and no more.

The fader wyth this answere beynge discõtent: maryed his.ii. elder doughters, that one vnto the duke of Cornewayll, & that other vnto the duke of Albania or Scotlande & deuyded wyth thẽ two in maryage his lande of Britayne after his deth, and the one halfe in hand durynge his naturall lyfe. And for the thyrde Cordeilla reserued nothynge.

It so fortuned after, that Aganippus, whych the cronycle of England named Agamp and kyng of Fraũce/ harde of ỹ beaute and womãhode of Cordeilla, and sent vnto her fader, & axyd her in maryage. To whome yt was answered, that the kynge wold gladly gyue to hym his doughter, but for dowar he wolde not departe with: for he had all promysed vnto hys other two doughters.

Aganippus thus by his messagyers enfourmed: remembred the vertues of the forenamed Cordeilla/ & wythoute promesse of dowar maried the sayde Cordeilla.

But here is to be noted/ ỹ where this Aganippus or Agamp is called in dyuerse cronicles kyng of Fraũce: yt can not agre with other hystories, nor wyth the cronycle of Fraunce. For yt is testyfyed by Polycronica, by Peter Pictauẽce, by mayster Robert Gagwyne, by bysshop Antonyne and many other cronicles: that lõge after thys daye was no kynge in Fraunce/ nor longe after yt was called Fraunce: but at this daye the inhabytauntes therof were called Galli, and were trybutaryes vnto Rome wythoute kynge, tyll the tyme of Valentinianus emperour of Rome/ as hereafter in this worke shall be manyfestly shewed.

The storye of Britons sayth, that in the tyme that Leyr reygned in Britayne: the land of Fraunce was vnder the dompnyon of.xii. kynges, of the whych Aganippus shuld be one. The whyche sayenge is full vnlyke to be trew, whych myght be prouyd by many reasons, which I passe ouer for lengthe of tyme.

THE .XV. CHAPITER.

Then yt foloweth in the story, after this Leyr was fallen in age, these forsayde two dukes thynkyng longe or the lordshyp of Brytayne was fallen to theyr handes: arose agayne theyr father (as testifyeth Gaufryde) and beraft hym the gouernaunce of the land vppon certayne cõdycyons to be contynued for terme of lyfe: the whyche in processe of tyme more and more were mynyshyd, as well by Maglaunus as by Hẽninus husbãdes of the forenamed Gonorild & Ragan. But moste

dysplealed Leyr the vnkyndnesse of his two doughters, consyderynge theyr wordes to hym before spoken and sworne / and now founde & prouyd them all contrarye.

For the whyche he beyng of necessyte constrayned: fledde his lande, & sayled into Gallia, for to be comforted of his doughter Cordeilla. wherof she hauyng knowlege, of naturall kyndnesse cōforted hi: & after shewynge all the maner to her husbande, by his agrement receyuyd hym & his to her lordes courte / where he was cherished after her beste maner.

Longe yt were to shew vnto you ỹ circumstaunce of ỹ vtterans of the vnkyndnesse of his two doughters, and of the wordes of comfort gyuen to hym by Aganippus and Cordeilla, or of the coūsaile and purueyaūce made by the sayde Aganippus & his lordes for restorynge of Leyr agayn to his dominyō. But fynally he was by the helpe of the sayde Aganippus restored agayne to his lordshyp / and so possessed, lyued as ruler & gouernour therof by the space of .iii. yeres after. In whych season dyed Aganippus. And when this Leyr had ruled this lande by the terme of .xl. yeres, as affermeth dyuerse cronycles, he dyed and was buryed at his towne of Caerleir or Leycestre: leuynge after hym for to inheryte the lande his doughter Cordeilla.

THE .XVI. CHAPITER.

COrdeilla the yongeste doughter of Leyr / was by assente of the Brytons made lady of Brytayn / in the yere of ỹ world. iiii. thousande iii. hundred & .lxxxviii: the whyche guyded the lande full wysely by the tyme or space of .v. yeres complete. The whyche tyme erpyred and rōne her. ii. neuewes called Margan and Cunedagi9, sonnes of her. ii. susters came vpon her land / and made therin great waste and destruccyon / and at the laste toke her and cast her into a stronge prison / where she beynge dyspayred of ỹ recouery of her estate (as testyfyeth Gaufryde) slewe her selfe, whenne she hadde reygned as before is declared, by the terme of fyue yeres.

THE .XVII. CHAPITER.

CUnedagius and Marganus neuewes as before is sayde, of Cordeilla, departyd this lande of Brytayne betwene them, in the yere of the worlde. iiii. thousand. iiii. hundred and .iii. That is to wyt the coū trey ouer and beyond Humber fyll to Margan towarde Catenesse y: and the other parte of the lande towarde weste as reherseth Gaufride, fyll to Cunedagius.

After two yeres were ronne & ended / some euyll dysposyd came vnto Margan, and sayde, that to hym yt was great reproche and dyshonour (consyderynge that he was comen of Gonorilla the elder suster, & of Maglaunus her husbande / & Cunedag was descended of Ragan the yonger and Hemnius her husbande) that he had not ỹ rule of all ỹ land: to which sedycyous psons Margan gyuynge credence, was supprysed with pryde. and couetyse / and anon by theyr coū sayle assembled a great hoste & made warre vpon his sayde brother / brennynge and destroyeng his land with out mercy. wherof Cunedag beynge ware, in all hast gaderyd his people: & after certayne message sent to hym of the reconcylyacyon / seynge there was no peace to be made, but by the iudgement of batayll, he mette wyth his brother in playne felde: where ỹ goddes were to hym so fauourable, that he slewe myche of the people of hys

his brother, and cõpellyd hym to fle. After whyche victory thus had, he pursued Margan from coũtre to coũtre, tyll he came wythin the countre or prouynce of Cambria or walys: in the whyche coũtre the sayde Margan gaue one other batayll vnto his brother Cunedag: but for he was farre the weker, he there was ouercomen and slayne in the felde. whyche felde or coũtre, where the sayd Margan fought & was slayne, is to thys daye called Glaumargan/ whych is to meane in our vulgare tung, Margan lande. And thus was Margan slayne, whan he hadde regned wyth his brother two yeres.

THE .XVIII. CHAPITER.

CUnedagius before named the sonne of Hemnius and Ragan põger doughter or myddell doughter of Leyr, was made ruler and lorde of all Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde .iiii. thousande .iiii. hundred &.v. Of the whyche is nothyng worthy memorye lefte in wrytyng: but that he guyded ŷ lande after the deth of his brother well and honorably by the terme of .xxxiii. yeres. After which terme ended, he dyed and was buryed at Troynouant or London: leuynge for his heyre a sonne (as testyfyeth Gaufryde) named Riuallo or Rinallo/ or after some wryters Reyngnolde.

THE .XIX. CHAPITER.

RIuallus the sonne of Cunedagius, was made gouernoure of the Brytons/ in the yere of the worlde .iiii. thousand .iiii. hundred and .xxviii: the whyche of wryters is called fortunat and restfull. This Riuallus ruled ŷ Brytõs with great soberneſſe, & kepte the lande in great welthe and prosperyte/ all be yt that of hym is lefte no specyall memorye of acte done in his tyme/ except myn authour sayth, that in ŷ tyme of his reygne yt reyned blood by the space of .iii. days contynually wythin the lande of Brytayne. After the whych reyne ensued so great excedynge nõber of multitude of flyes/ the which were to the people so noyous and cõtagyous, that they slewe myche people. And after that (as sayth an olde authour, whose name is vnknowẽ) ensued great sykenesse and mortallytie, to the great desolacyon of thys sayde lande.

Then yt foloweth in the story, whẽ this Riuallus hadde regned, after moste cõcordaunce of wryters, by the terme of .xlvi. yeres: he dyed, & was buryed, as testyfyeth the sayde olde authour, at Caerbrank or yorke/ leuynge after hym a sonne (as wytnesseth Gaufride) named Gurgustius.

In the tyme of the reygne of thys kynge, after moste concorde of wryters: ŷ famous cytye of Rome shuld be buylded/ as is shewed more playnly in the treatyse in the begynnyng of this warke.

THE .XX. CHAPITER.

GUrgustius the sonne of ŷ fore named Riuallus, was made ruler of Brytayne/ in the yere of the worlde .iiii. thousane .iiii. hundred lxxxiii. This in ŷ cronicle of Englãd is named Gorbodiam sonne of Reygnold. Of the which is lytell memory made, other of his regne or of his dedes by any authours or wryters of ŷ hystorye of Brytayne/ except the aboue named olde authoure, and the authoure called the floure of hystoryes, wytnesseth, that he reygned xxxviii. yeres: leuynge after hym none heyre of his bodye begotten/ and lastely dyed and was buryed by his fader at Caerbrank or yorke.

Rome as aboue ys towched, was fyrste buylded & edyfyed in the tyme

of Riuallus/and after moſte wryters In the yere of the worlde.iiii.thouſande.iiii.hundred.lxx: after the buyldyng of Troynouāt or London. iiii. hūdred.vii. yeres: whych folowyng that accompte ſhulde be in the.xxxii. yere of the forſayde Riuallus.

THE .XXI. CHAPITER.

SIſillius, or after ſome wryters, Siluius the brother of Gurguſtius, as affermeth the forſayde olde cronycle, was made chyef ruler of Brytayne/ in the yere of the worlde. iiii. thouſande. v. hundred and.xxi.

This in ỹ englyſhe boke is named Seyzill. Of the whych is no mencyon made nother of his reygne nor dedes, excepte that Geffrey of Monmouth wryter of ỹ hyſtoryes of Brytons, ſayth that he reygned two yeres. whyche ſayenge is not accordaunte wyth other wryters. But more to the cōuenyency of tyme and agrement of other cronyclers, accordyng to the ſayeng of the forenamed old authour: he reygned by ỹ terme of.xlix. yeres/ and after dyed & was buryed at Caerbadon or Bathe/ and lefte after hym none heyre of his body begotten.

THE XXII. CHAPITER.

IAgo or Lago/ ỹ coſyne of Gurguſtius, as wytneſſeth Gaufryde, as nexte inherytoure, was made gouernour of Britayne/in the yere of the worlde.iiii.thouſande.v. hundred.lxx. This alſo ys vnmynded of wryters, other for reſtfulneſſe of tyme, or ellys for rudeneſſe of his dedes, that clerkes lyſte not to ſpēde any tyme in wrytynge of ſuch dedes. Of hym is nothynge ſpecyfyed, ſauynge the forenamed olde authoure ioyneth to his tyme of reygne.xxv.yeres: and alſo he ſayth he dyed wythoute iſſue, and was buryed by hys coſyn at Caerbrank or yorke.

THE .XXIII. CHAPITER.

BInumacus the ſonne of Siſilius as ſome wryters haue, but more verytably as ſayth the olde cronycle, ỹ brother of Lago, was made ruler of Brytayne / in the yere of the worlde.iiii.thouſand. iiii.hūdred.lxxx and xv: the whyche (as his brother before hym) paſſed his tyme without any notable actes or dedes: ſo that of hym is no more memorye made, thē of his brother. For the more party they that wrote the faytes & dedes of Brytons, make but a ſhorte reher ſayll of theſe.v.kynges/ ỹ is to ſaye, from Ryuallo to Gorbodug/ſayeng that after Ryuallo ſuccedyd Gurguſtius/ after hym ſuccedyd Lago, to Lago ſuccedyd Kinimacus / & after Kinimacus ſucceded Gorbodug. Of theſe.v. kynges or rulers is made lytell other mencyon. Thenne yt foloweth in the ſayd olde cronicle/ that when this Kinimacus had reygned liiii. yeres: he dyed and was buryed by his brother at Caerbrāk or york: leuynge after hym a ſonne, as teſtyfyeth Flos hiſtoriarū/ whych ſonne was named Gorbodug.

THE .XXIIII. CHAPITER.

GOrbodug the ſonne of Kinimacꝰ, was made ruler of Brytayne / in the yere of the worlde folowynge the forſayde accompt. iiii. thouſande. v. hundred and. xlix. whych all ſo paſſed his tyme lyke vnto the forenamed dukes or kynges/ wythout any ſpecyall memory of honour noted by wryters. This by moſt lykelyhode to brynge hiſtoryes to accorde: ſhulde reygne ouer the Brytons the terme of .lxiii. yeres. whych terme endyd, he dyed and lyeth buryed at new Troy or Lōdon/leuyng after

after hym two sonnes named Ferrer and Porrer / or after some wryters Ferreus and Porreus.

THE .XXV. CHAPITER.

HErrer wyth Porrer hys brother, sonnes of Gorbodug: were ioyntly made gouernours and dukes of Britayne/ in the yere of the worlde foure thousande. vii. hundred and .xi/ and contynued in amytye a certayne tyme. After whyche tyme erpyred, as witnessyth Policronica and also Gaufride, Porrer beynge couetouse of lordeshyp: gaderyd his peple, vnwetynge Ferrer his brother/entendynge to destroy hym. wherof he beynge warned, for lacke of space to assemble his people/for sauegard of his persone, fled sodeynly into Gallia or Fraūce, and ayrd ayd of a duke of Gallia named by Gaufryde Gunhardus or Suardus: the the whych duke hym ayded and sent hym agayne into Brytayne with his hoste of Gallis. After whose lādynge his brother Porrer with his Brytōs hym mete, and gaue to hym batayll: in the whyche batayll Ferrer was slayne with ỹ more part of his peple.

But here dyscordeth myn authour wyth some other wryters, and wyth the cronycle of Englande: for they testyfye, that Porrer was slayne, and Ferrer surupyd. But whether of them was lyuyng, the moder of these two brethern named Widen settynge a parte all moderly pytye: with help of her women entred the chambre (of hym so lyuynge) by nyght / and hym there sleppynge slew cruelly, and cut into small peces. And thus dyed the two foresayde bretherne / after they had thus ruled Brytayne in warre and peace to the agrement of moste wryters. v. yeres.

THE .XXVI. CHAPITER.

HEre now endeth the lyne or of spryngе of Brute / after the affermaunce of moste wryters. For Gaufride saith after the deth of these forenamed bretherne/ great discorde arose amonge the Brytons/ ỹ which longe tyme among them continued: by meane wherof the people and cōtre was sore vered and noyed vnder v. kynges. And further saith Guydo de Columna, that the Brytons abhorred the lynage of Gorbodug/ for so myche as fyrste that one brother slew that other/ and more for the innaturall dysposycyon of the morder, that so cruelly slew her owne chylde.

The cronycle of Englande sayth, that after the deth of the two forenamed bretherne/ no ryghtfull enherytour was lefte on lyue. wherfore the the people were brought in great discorde/ in so myche that the land was deuydyd in foure partyes. So that in Albania was one ruler / in Loegria or Logiers one other ruler / in Cambria the thyrde duke or ruler/ & in Cornewayle the .iiii. duke or ruler. But of these .iiii. dukes the english cronicle alloweth Clotoñ duke of Cornewayll for moste ryghtefull heyre.

Policronyca sayth that after ỹ deth of the foresayde two bretherne, great dyscorde was in the lande / whyche greuyd the people sore vnder. v. kynges. But he nother reheseth the names nor the tymes of theyr regnes/ excepte he addeth to, that the sayde dyscorde contynued tyll the tyme of Moliuncius Dumuallo. So ỹ here appereth no tyme certayn, how lōge this varyaunce and dyscorde amōg the Brytons contynued. But who so lyst to loke vpon a draught made by me in english in ỹ beginnyng of this boke: he shall se there (yf he please to

caste ouer the tymes and yeres there expressed) that this forsayde discorde contynued nere to the terme of .li. yeres. In whyche draught or conceyte yf any man here fynde errour: of his goodnes lette hym amende & correcte yt / and all other places where he shall by good proke fynde place of correccyon.

THE XXVII. CHAPITER.

THus here endyth ỹ fyrst parte of this worke, conteynynge or dyuyded in .vii. partes, as before is shewed. And in a waye of a thank to be gyuen to our moste blessyd aduocate & helper of all wretches, that to her lyste to call / I meane ỹ moste blessyd vyrgyne our lady saynt Mary moder of Cryste / for ỹ her grace hath fortheryd this worke hytherto / and for to impetrate of her the grace and ayde of her moste mercyfull contynuaũce to accomplysh this worke begonne as before is shewed, vnder suppорte of her most bouteous grace here wyll I wyth humble mynde salute her wyth the fyrste ioye of ỹ .vii. toyes whych begynneth,

Gaude flore virginali &c.
Moste virgynall flowre of all moste excellent
Perfynge of angelles the hyest Hierarchy
Joye and be glad, for god omnipotent
Hath the lyft vp, and sette moste worthily
Aboue the nomber and gloryous company
Of his blessyd sayntes, wyth moste hye dignite
Nexte after hym moste honoured to be.

This fyrst parte to be accompted from the fyrste yere of Brute, vnto the laste yere of the forsayde dyscorde, or vnto the fyrste yere of Mulmutius: includyth of yeres .vii. hundred and foure.

¶Thus endeth the fyrste parte.

THE SECOND PARTE.

THE .XXVIII. CHAPITER.

MUlmutius Dunuallo or as some haue Dunuallo Mulmutius, the sonne of Cloteñ as testyfyeth the englyshe boke, & also Gaufride: was benquesshour of ỹ other dukes or rulers / and began his reygn ouer the hole monarchy of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde .iiii. thousand vii. hundred & .xl viii. This is named in the englyshe cronycle Donebant: the whyche was a noble man, & causyd to be made wythin the cytye of Troynouant a temple, and named it the temple of peace. The whyche after some opynyons is that place or feld / where ỹ market of wollen cloth is holden called or named Blakwelhall. He also made many good lawes the which were long after vsed & called Mulmutiꝰ lawes. These lawes holy Gyldas wrote wyth great dylygence out of the brettisshe speche into latyne. And longe tyme here after ỹ Aluredus kynge of England turned those lawes oute of latyne into englyshe. He also gaue preuylege to temples, to plowghes & cytyes, and to the wayes ledynge to ỹ same. And as some authours wytnesse / he beganne the foure hye wayes of Brytayne / the whych were fynyshed and perfyted of Belinus his sonne, as after at length shall be declared. The olde cronycle testyfyeth ỹ this Mulmutius, whyche he in his boke nameth Molle, made the two townes of Malmesbury and Wyes. And all other writers affirme, that this Mulmutius, after he hadde stablyshyd his lande, and sette his Brytons in good

good and conuenyent order: by the aduyce of his lordes / he ordeyned hym a crowne or dyademe of gold / & caused hym selfe to be crowned wyth great solempnyte after the vsaunce of pagane lawe then vsed. And for this cause, after the oppynyon of some wryters / he is named the fyrste kyng of Britayn. And all ỹ other before re hersyd are named rulers, dukes, or gouernours.

Then yt foloweth in the storye / when Mulmuti⁹ had guyded ỹ land well and honorably by the terme of xl. yeres: he dyed and was buryed in the foresayde temple of peace within Troynouant or Lõdon / leuynge after hym two sonnes named Belinus and Brennus.

THE .XXIX. CHAPITER.

BElinus and Brenn⁹ the two sonnes of Mulmutius: beganne to raygne ioyntly as kynges of Bytayne / in the yere of the world iiii. thousande. viii. C. & viii: so that Belinus held to hym Loegria or Logiers, walys, and Cornewayll / and Brennus held to his parte all ỹ land ouer & beyonde Humber. with which partycyon eyther of them was cõten tyd & pleasyd, as testyfyeth Polycronica, by the terme of .v. yeres. After the whyche terme endyd and expired Brennus entendynge to haue more lande or all: arose agaynste his brother Belyne, and made vppon hym mortall warre. In the whych warre Brennus was ouersette, and was cõpelled to flye the land and sayle vnto Armorica now named lytell Britayn or as sayth Gaufryde, into a countre called Allebrog, as after shalbe more playnely declared / and there allyed hym after the foresayde terme (as be fore is sayd) of. v. yeres was expyryd as affermeth Policronica. For Gaufryde sayeth in his boke made of the hystory of Brytons / ỹ after ỹ terme of. v. yeres afore sayde were expyred and runne, Brennus by sterynge of ponge and euyll counsayll, entẽdyng as before is sayde: sayled vnwetyng his brother into Norway, and there maryed the doughter of Elfunge or Elfynge then ruler or duke of Norwaye. when this was shewed vnto Belyn, consyderynge the sodayne departyng: in all haste he sealyd Albania and all the other lande appertaynyng to Brenne into his owne hand, and strengthed the cytyes and other stronge places wyth his owne sowdyours. wherof when Brenne was warned: he in all possyble haste assembled a great people of the Norwayes, and toke hys shyppynge to sayle into Brytayne. And as he was keppynge his course vpon the see: he was encountred wyth Guilthdacus kynge of Denmarke, the whych had lyen in awayte for hym, for loue of ỹ wenche ỹ Brennus had maryed: for before tyme he had requyred her of Elfunge her fader. whẽ those. ii. flot̃ were mette: strong shotte and fyght was vppon both partyes. But fynally the Danes ouercame the Norwayes or Norganys, and toke the shyppe by strength whych the wẽche was in / ỹ whych anone was brought vnto the shyppe of Guilthdake: and Brenne wyth a fewe of his shyppes lefte was fayne to sauegarde hym selfe by flyght.

when Guilthdake hadde thus obteyned ỹ victorye, entendynge to haue sayled towarde Denmarke: in shorte whyle after ỹ tempestes came so hydous vppon the see, that hys nauye was deuyded and scatered that one frome the other / in suche wyse that he was in fere to haue ben drowned. And at the ende of fyue dayes not wetynge where he was / wyth few

wyth fewe shyppes landed in the cou̅tre of Northumberlande, where at that tyme was Belyn prouydyng defence agayne his brothers cōmyng. wherof when word was brought vn to Belyn of the landynge of the fore sayde Danoys prynce wyth a small company: he reioysed yt, and cōmaū ded hym wyth his shyppes & company to be put in sure holde & keppynge.

It was not long after but Brēne hadde reculyd and gaderyd to gyder the more parte of hys naupe before (as ye haue harde) chased. And when he hadde theym newely ryggyd and vytayled/ he herynge of the aryuayll of Guilthdacus in Northūberlād with his wife, sent word of manace vnto his brother Belyn/ wyllyng hym to sende vnto hym his wyfe wrōgfully raupshed by Guilthdacus/ & also to restore vnto him his land & patrymony/ or ellys he wold shortely inuade his lande, yt for to waste, & his enymy to destroye. The whych desyre or requeſt of Belynus was playnely and shortely denyed. whych knowlege had: Brenn⁹ shortly after landed in a parte of Albania, and made towarde his brother / and his brother towarde hym: so ỹ theyr hostes met nere vnto a wood named at that day Calater or Calaterium, where betwene them was a mortall batayll/ in so myche that mych people fyll vpon both partyes. But lastly the Brytons wanne the felde, and chasyd the Norganys or Norways vnto theyr shyppes / chasynge & sleyenge them without pyty. And as afermeth myne authour, ỹ fyght was so cruell and sharpe: that there was slayne to the nomber of.xl. M. men.

After this dyscumfyture Brenne was constrayned to flee / and wyth fewe in nomber recouerid the lande of Gallia.

Belinus hauyng thus victorye of his enemyes/ after thankes and oblacyons made vnto his goddes, after the pagane law: he then assembled his lordes at Caerbrank or yorke, to haue theyr aduyse what he shuld do wyth the prynce of Denmark. In ỹ whych counsayle yt was concludyd/ that the forsayd Guylthdac⁹ shulde holde and do homage to the kynge of Britayn for the land of Dēmark, and yerely bere to hym a certayne tribute. whyche done wyth suerty and hostages taken: the sayde Guylthdacus wyth his loue was sette at lybertye and leue, to retourne into his owne countre: whych yerely tribute as testyfyeth the englyshe cronycle, was a thousande pounde.

THE .XXX. CHAPITER.

Then yt foloweth in ỹ hystory, when Belyn hadde thus vyctory of this enemyes, and was alone possessoure of this realme of Brytayne: the lawes before made by his father he cōfermed, and ordeyned iustyce to be mynystred thorough the lande. And for so myche as the. iiii. wayes begon by his fader, were not perfyghtyd and endyd: he therfore caused workmen to be called, and set theym to paue wyth stone the sayde wayes, that they myght suffycyently be knowen of all waygoers or trauellers of the countres as hereafter ensuyth.

The fyrst of these.iiii. wayes was named Fosse, the whyche stretchyd oute of the southe into the north / and begynneth, or at that dayes beganne, at the corner of Totnesse in Cornewayle, and passed forth by Deuynshyre, Somersetshyre, & so forth by Tutbury vpon Cottelwolde, beyde Couētre vnto Leycestre, & from thennes by wylde playnes towarde Newerke, and endyth at the cytye of Lyncolñ.

The

The ſecond waye was named watlyngſtrete/ the which ſtretcheth ouer thwarte ỹ wayes of Foſſe out of the ſoutheſt into the noztheſt. This begānne at Douer, and paſſeth by the myddell of Kente ouer Thamys beſyde London by weſte of weſtmynſter/ and ſo foꝛth by ſaynte Albanys in the weſte ſyde of Dunſtable, of Stratfoꝛd, of Towceter, and of wedon/ by ſouth Kyllyngburne of Kyllebourñ, by Athirſtoñ, vnto Gylbertes hyll, that now is named wꝛekyn/ and ſo foꝛth by Seuarñ paſſynge beſyde wꝛokceter, & foꝛth vnto Strattoñ to the myddell of walys vnto a place called Cardycan/at ỹ Iꝛyſh ſe.

The thyꝛde waye was named Ermyngſtrete. The whyche ſtretcheth out of the weſte noꝛthweſte vnto the eeſt ſoutheeſt, & bygynneth at Wenema, the whych is in ſaynt Dauies lande in weſte walys / and ſo ſtretcheth foꝛth vnto ſouth Hamptoñ.

The fourth and laſt waye is called oꝛ was called Kykenyldis ſtrete. The which ſtretcheth foꝛth by woꝛceter, by wycombe, by Birmyngham, by Lychefyld, by Derby, by Cheſterfyeld, by yoꝛke. And ſo foꝛth vnto Tymmouth: ỹ whych was ſuffycyētly made. He graũted & confermed thē all ſuche pꝛiuyleges as befoꝛe were graũted by Dũuallo his fader. The whych pꝛiuyleges with other lawes by hym made, who ỹ is deſyꝛous to know: let hym rede ouer ỹ trãſlacyon ỹ holy Gildas made of Mulmutius lawes out of Bꝛytyſhe ſpeche into latyne/and there he ſhall ſe the circumſtaunce of euery thynge.

In this whyle that Belyn was thus occupyed aboute the nedes of his land/his bꝛother Bꝛenne beyng, as befoꝛe is ſayde, in a pꝛouynce of Gallia takynge ſoꝛe to mynde hys expulſyon from his naturall coũtre, not haupnge any comfoꝛte how he mpght attayn to his foꝛmer dignite, laſtely reſoꝛted (wyth .xii. perſones onely accompanyed) vnto the duke oꝛ ruler of that pꝛouynce oꝛ countre.

Foꝛ ye ſhall vnderſtande that at thoſe dayes (as teſtyfyeth Eutropi9 and other wꝛyters) the Gallis occupyed dyuers countres. And therfoꝛe Titus Liuius, whych wꝛote ỹ actes and dedes of the Romayns, made diſtynccyon of the Gallis/and nameth them that Bꝛẽne ladde, when he beſeigyd the cytye of Rome and after ỹ capitoyll, Cenonenſes Galli/ which is to name the Gallis of that coũtre where the cytye of Cena than ſtode & yet doth (as teſtyfyeth the authour of cronica cronicarũ, and other) in a countre of Italy named at this day Etruria. The whiche cytye, as affermen the ſayde authours, was fyꝛſte buylded of the foꝛeſayde Gallis, in ỹ tyme of Bꝛenne beyng theyꝛ duke oꝛ leder, befoꝛe the commynge oꝛ incarnacyon of Cryſte .iii. hundꝛed .lxxx. & vi. yeres: whyche maketh the yere of the woꝛlde folowynge the accompte of this woꝛke .iiii. thouſand. viii. hundꝛed and .xiii. yeres.

Then yt foloweth in ỹ ſtoꝛy, when Bꝛenne was comen to the pꝛeſence of the duke named by myne authour Gaufride Segin9 duke of Alebrog/ the whyche is to vnderſtande duke of Armoꝛica, now named lytell Bꝛytayne, as by Policronica and the englyſhe cronycle is ſuffycyently declared/and ſhewed vnto hym his aduerſyte & trouble: ỹ ſayd duke receyued hym into his courte. And foꝛ he was perſonable & well maneryd, hauyng great experyence in hawkynge and huntynge, and other pꝛopertyes appertaynynge to a gentylman: he had hym in ſhoꝛte whyle in eſpecyall fauour befoꝛe any noble man of hys courte. By meane wherof, he laſtly maryed his doughter / vpon condycyon

ryon that yf he dyed wythout Jſſue-male, that he then ſhuld be ruler of ỹ countre. And yf yt happened hym to haue an heyre male: that then yt not withſtãdyng, to ayde and helpe hym to recouer his lande before loſte.

The whych condycyons well and ſuerly vpon the dukes partye, by the aſſent of ỹ nobles of his lãde aſſured: the ſaid duke within cõpas of ỹ ſame yere dyed. After whoſe deth when by a conuenyent terme, yt was knowen that the ducheſſe his wyfe was not wyth chyld: all the lordes to Brẽne dyd homage, & became his men. To the whych lordes the more to wynne theyr loues, he departed nych of his treſour: and ſhortly after with theyr aſſente gadered a great armye / and ſo in all haſt ſayled into Britayne to make new warre vppon his brother Belyne/ & after a certayn tyme there landed. Of whoſe landyng when Belyne was enfourmed: he in all haſte gaderyd his Brytons in great nomber, & made towarde hym as to hys mortall enemye. But the moder of the two brethern named Cõnuuẽa, or after the englyſh boke Cornewey/ conſyderynge ỹ mortall hatered atwene her two chylder, and in partye of theyr both perſones: of a moderly and naturall pyty, went atwene her two ſonnes, and vſyd her in ſuch diſcrete maner and moderly cõpaſſyon, as ſhewyng her breſtes and other demeanures, that at length ſhe accorded them. After whych accorde both bretherne with theyr lordes and frendes ſped them vnto Troynouant or London/ and there after many thynges orderyd and made for the weale of ỹ land: they cõdeſcended & agreed to lede theyr both hoſtes into Gallia for to ſubdue to them the ſayde countre. And in as goodly haſte as they might ppare for ỹ iourney, they toke ſhyppyng, & ſo ſayled into a parte of Gallia brennyng & waſtynge ỹ countre without pyty. And as wytneſſyth myn authour Gaufryde, in a ſhorte whyle they ſubdued a great parte of Gallia Jtaly and Germania.

But here J entend to leue the farther proceſſe of myn authour Gaufryde for ſo mych as here he varieth from other writers of authority, as Eutropius, Titus Liuius, & other, that dyd great dilygence in wrytynge of ỹ dedys & actes of the Romayns, and of other people dwellyng at thoſe dayes in Jtalia, Gallia, & Germania. For where the ſayd Gaufryde ſayth, ỹ at ſuch tyme Belyn and Brenne made warre in Jtalye/ Gabius & Porſena were at that day conſules of Rome: that ſayeng is farre dyſcordaunt vnto the other forſayd authours. For as they affirme at the tyme whenne Brẽne beſegyd Rome, Claudius Emilius, & Lucius Lucretius were conſulis/ & Furius Camillus was at ỹ tyme dictatour of Rome / and none lyke vnto the other were cõſules many yeres before nor after.

But trouth yt is that the ſayde .ii. bretherne dyd many great actes in ỹ forenamed countres/ but not all accordynge wyth the ſayeng of ỹ ſayd Gaufride. For where he referreth all thoſe dedys to bothe bretherne: the forenamed Titus Liuius ſpeketh but of Brenne onely, as yt ſhall ſomedele be touched hereafter. wherefore to folowe the moſte wryters / when Belyn hadde dwelled a certayne of tyme wyth hys brother Brenne in thoſe partyes: by agrement of them both, Belyn retourned into Britayn and Brenne remayned there.

THE .XXXI. CHAPITER.

When Belinus or Belyn was retourned into Brytayne: he repayred olde cytyes, and buyldyd vpon

pon the ryuer of Uske a cytye, and called yt Caeruske nere vnto the ryuer of Seuerne. This city was after namyd ỹ cyty of Legiõs, for so mych as ỹ legions of Romaynes were lod gyd wythin ỹ same citye/ & now yt is called Caerleon or Carleon. Also he buylded an hauen wyth a gate there ouer wythin Troynouãt / in ỹ summet or pynacle wheron was set a vel sell of brasse/in the which was closyd the asshes of his brent body when he was dede. This gate was long after called Belyns or Belinꝰ gate/ but at this day yt is called Belyngesgate.

In this whyle that Belinus was thus occuppyd in Brytayne, his broder Brenne desyrous to wynne fame and honoure buylded in Italy and other partes of Gallia these cytyes and townes folowynge.

Mediolana or Myllyn in Lũbardy
Pappa or Papy.
Burgamum or
Sena or
Comum or
Brixia or
Uerona or
Uincentia or
Cremona or
Mantua or

The whyche cytyes and townes were buylded of the Gallis, or at the leste new repayred, in the tyme that Brenne was theyr leder or duke/ all be yt that some wryters wold meane that Comum & Cremona were buyl dyd after Brenne was dede. Policronica wytnessyth, that the Senons, whych he meaneth by ỹ Gallis dwel lyng aboute the cytye of Sena/ by ỹ ledyng of Brẽnus ouercame the Romaynes. xi. myle from Rome, at the ryuer Albia, & chasyd them to Rome and toke the city vnto the Capitoll/ & after leyd syege to ỹ same Capitol. And vppon a nyght whyle the wardeyns of ỹ Capitoll slepte: ỹ Frẽshe men or Gallys by a waye vnder the erth / came into the Capitoll & were lykely to haue wonne it. But a noble Romayne named Mallius or Manlius Torquatus, awoke by the cryẽg or noyse of a gander or gãders. The which Manlius awakyng the other Romaynes, put of the Gallys. For whych cause ỹ Romayns long tyme after heldẽ a feste of ganders, ỹ fyrst daye of June.

Neuertheless afterwarde they called it Junõs feste, for so mych as they thought that Juno ỹ goddes had by her influence gyuen that grace vnto the ganders, that they shuld by theyr noyse awake the Romayns. But yet the Gallis or frenchmen held ỹ Romayns so short, ỹ they were cõpelled to gyue vnto Bren theyr duke a thousand poũde weyght of gold, as therof is wytnesse Titꝰ Liuius. And further moze sayth ỹ sayd Liuiꝰ, that ỹ Gallis slewe of the senatours many in nomber, the whych fyrste they supposed hadde ben goddes bycause of theyr ryche apparell, whych they sat in. But shortly after this the forenamyd Furius Camillus, whiche was called agayne frõ the citye of Ardea, where he was outlawed before, & by the comontye of Rome in this nede made agayne dictatour.

The which pursued Brenne and his people, and to theym gaue batayll, slayng of them a great multytude, and wanne from them all the golde and iewellys that before tyme ỹ Gallis hadde wonne of the Romaynes. The whyche dede was done, as wytnessyth the forsayd Titus Liuius, the yere after the buyldyng of Rome iii. hundred and. lxv. whych was the yere of the worlde, folowynge the accompt of this worke foure thousand viii. hundred and. xxxv: and before Crystys incarnacyon kepynge the same accompt. iii. hundred and. lxiiii.

Then yt foloweth in the ſtorye of Brenne, when he was thus dyſcomfyted of the Romaynes: he tourned his people towarde the Macedones or Grekes, and dyuyded his people in two hoſtes. wherof he reteyned ỹ one with hym, and that other he ſent into a countre called then Gallacia, and after Gallogreci, and laſtly Galates. Then Brenne ouercame the Macedons with theyr duke Doſteñ and after ſpoyled the goddes & theyr temples/ & ſayde in his game, ryche goddes muſte gyue to men ſomedele of theyre rycheſſe. Alſo he ſpoyled the temple of the god Apolyne Delphicus ſtandynge in the hyll of the mounte Parnaſus. wherfore as teſtifyeth the wryter Policarpus: the people of that countre prayed to god for helpe / and ſodaynly the erth begane to quake, and a great parte of the hyll fell vpon the hoſte of Gallis, and thē ſlew. And after that enſued and fyll to grounde hayle ſtones of ſuche greatneſſe, ỹ yt ſlew one other great parte of the ſayde hoſte/ & duke Brennus was ſore wounded: wherby he fyll in ſuche dyſpayre, that he ſlew hym ſelf with his owne ſwerde. No man ſhall wonder, though thys Apolyn toke wreche of thē that ſpoyled the goddes and theyr temples. For god ſufferyd Apolyn to deſtroy many nacyons, becauſe of theyr treſpaſſes and euyll lyuynge. For yt is certayne that ſpyrytes of the eyre may vſe theyr ſhrewdnes in thē that be of myſbyleue and vſe euyll dedes. For grace is wythdrawen from ſuch maner of men: wherfore the ſpirites haue the more power to hurte and greue them.

Then ſyns I haue here ſhewed vnto you the fyne or ende of Brennus, I ſhall nowe retourne my ſtyle vnto his brother Belynus, the whyche, as before is towched, endeuored hym aboute the weale of hys lande of Bretayne and his people duryng ỹ tyme of his reygne, in executyng of many notable dedes, the whyche for length of tyme I ouer paſſe: ſo that laſtely he dyed and was buryed, as before is ſayde at Belius or Belinus gate wythin Troynouante or London/ when he had reygned wyth his brother and alone, after the moſt concordaūce of wryters. xvbi. yeres, leuyng after hym a ſonne called Gurguyntus, Gurguynt Brabtruc, or after ſome wryters Gurguynt Barberous, whyche is to meane Gurguynt wyth the red berde.

THE .XXXII. CHAPITER.

Gurguintus or Gurguynt the ſonne of Belyne, was made kynge of the lande of Bretayne, in the yere of the worlde foure .M. viii. hundred and .xxviii. This in the engliſhe cronycle is named Cozynbratus or Cozynbatus. The whych for ſo myche as the trybute before graūted by Guilthdak kyng of Dēmark, vnto the kynges of Bretayne for a perpetuyty, was denayed: he arrayed his army and naure, and ſayled into Denmarke / and there waſted and harmed the countre wyth iron and fyre: in ſuch wyſe that at length the kynge of Denmarke, wyth the aſſent of his Baronage, graunted to paye and contynue the forſayde tribute yerely of a thouſande poūde. After whyche victorye thus hadde of the Danys: he wyth great tryumphe retourned towarde Britayn. And in keppynge of hys courſe/ he encountred wyth a naure of .xxx. ſayle beſyde the yle of Orchades full of men and women / of whyche flote the chyefe captayne was called after moſte wryters Bartholomew. The whyche when he was brought vnto the

the kynges presence, shewyd that he wyth his people were putte or exyled out of the countre of Spayne, and were named Valenses / and had sayled longe tyme vppon the see, to the ende to fynde some pr̃ynce, that wold gyue to them a dwellynge place, and they to become his subiectys & holde theyr lande of hym / besechynge the kynge to haue compassyon of them, and to graunt to them some place to enhabyte them in / & that they shulde no lenger dwell in theyr shyppes, cõsyderyng theyr vytayle was spent by reason of theyr long lyeng vpon ỹ see. After whych request thus made by theyr captayne / the kyng with the aduyse of his barons, graunted vnto them a voyde and waste countre, whyche was and is the fartheste ile of all the iles / towarde the weste / the whych yle as sayth the Englysshe cronycle, was then named Irelande, after the name of theyr captayn called in the Englysshe cronycle Irlamal. But who so wyll knowe the fyrste cause of the nampynge of this yle Irlande: lette hym rede the. xxxii. and xxxiii. chapytres of the fyrste boke of Policronica / and there he shall fynd ỹ moze certaynly of ỹ fyrst nampynge therof, with many other thynges touchynge ỹ sayd yle, the whych I ouer passe for lengthe of ỹ mater. For there he shall be suffycyently enfourmed of that, and also of other thynges.

Then yt foloweth in the story, after this Gurguintus was retourned into his lande of Bzitayne: he ordeyned to be stablysshed & kepte ỹ lawes made by his forefaders / & exersysyd iustyce to his subiectes, and guyded his lande well and nobly by the terme, after moste wryters, of .xix. yeres / and then dyed, and was buryed at newe Troye or London, or at Caerleon / leuynge after hym a sonne named after myne authoure Guynthelinus, but after some he is named Guyntellius.

THE .XXXIII. CHAPITER.

Guintheliꝰ or Guintellius ỹ sonne of Gurguintus / was made kynge of Bzytayne, in tyme yere of the worlde. iiii. thousande. viii. hundred and .liii. This is named in the englysshe cronycle Gwentolyne, the whyche guyded his lande and Bzytons with great mekenesse and sobernesse. He hadde also a noble wyfe called Marcia, instructe and lerned in many sc̃yẽces / the whych amonge other noble dedys by her done, studyed and bzoughte forth a certayne good and conuenyent lawe amonge the Brytons / the whyche was named longe after the Marcyan lawe. This lawe for that yt was thought both good and necessary, Aluredus, whyche longe after was kynge of Englande, translated oute of Bzetysshe into Saxon speche / and then was yt called after that translacyon in the Saxon tonge Marthelage, whych is to meane the lawe of Marcia. To this womã for her wysdome was committed all the gouernaunce of the lande / in so myche, as wytnessyth myne authoure Gaufryde and other, she reygned as quene of Bzytayne a certayne tyme after her husbande was dede. But the yeres of her reygne be accompted with the yeres of her husbande, or wyth the yeres of her sonne Sisillius / so that no tyme asserteyned is to her deputed or sette.

Then yt foloweth, whẽ this Guinhelinus hadde reygned well and mekely by the terme of .xxvi. yeres, he dyed and was buryed at newe Troy or London, leuyng after hym a son named Sisillius or Cecilius.

The

THE .XXXIIII. CHAPITER.

SIsillius or Cecilis the sonne of Guynthelinus, was made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde .iiii. thousande. viii. hundred & lxxix. This in the Englysh cronycle is named Seyzyl. Of whych no mencion nor worthy memory is made. All be yt that Gaufryde meaneth, ỹ this Sisillius was but. vii. yeres of age when his father dyed. wherfore the charge of the realme was committed vnto Marcia his moder / the which guyded yt well and suffycyently tyll her sayde sonne came to his lawfull age, and then resygnyd to hym all ỹ rule: whyche so contynued/but how longe he reygned Gaufryde expresseth not. wherfore I now folowe the sayenge of the forenamed authoure called the Floure of hystoryes, which affermeth hym to reygne onely. vii. yeres / all be yt the Englyshe boke sayeth he reygned. xv. yeres, whyche agreeth not so well wyth the concordaunce of other hystoryes & tymes.

This Sisillius, as Gaufryde wytnesseth, left after him a sonne named Kymarus/ whome the englysh boke nameth Kymor.

THE .XXXV. CHAPITER.

KImarus the sonne of Sisillius/ was made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde. iiii. thousande. viii. hundred .lxxx. & vi. This in the englyshe boke is called Kymor/ of ỹ whych is made no mencyon nother of hys tyme of reygne, nor of his dedes.

For the more partye of wrpters reherse in moste breuest & shortest maner, ỹ after Kimar⁹ reygned Elani⁹. After Elani⁹ Morindus. But ỹ old cronycle, whych I haue before tyme spoken of, sayth that this Kymarus, which he nameth Kymarch⁹ Elani⁹, was a wylde yonge man, and lyued after hys pleasure. wherfore as he was in his dysporte of huntynge, he was by his euyll willers slayne, whē he hadde ruled skarsly. iii. yeres.

THE .XXXVI. CHAPITER.

ELanius the sonne of Kymar⁹, as wytnesseth the foresayde Floure of cronycles, but the broder of Kimarus as sayth Gaufride/ was made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of the worlde foure thousand. viii. hundred. lxxx. and. ix. the whyche in the englyshe boke is named Howan. Of this also is no mēcyon made nor memory nother of acte nor of reygn, but as the forenamed olde cronycle sayth, that Kymarus and Elanius was one persone/ and reygned as before is sayde: but the abouesayd writer called Floure of hystoryes sayth, he reygned fully two yeres.

THE .XXXVII. CHAPITER.

MOrindus the bastarde sonne of Elanius, as sayth Gaufryde and other/ was made kynge of Brytayne, in ỹ yere of ỹ worlde foure thousande. viii. hundred. lxxx. and. xi. the whych in the englyshe cronicle is called Morwith. This as witnesseth Gaufryde, was goten vppon the concubyne of Elanius named Tangueſtela, and was a man of worthy fame in dedys of chyualry / but he was so ouercome with wrath & cruelnesse, ỹ lyghtly he slew all men that hym tened or angred. He was also beauteouse of persone and lybefall of gyftes/ and wyth that he was of a meruelouse strength, in so mych that he had not his pere wythin his realm of any man of noble byrthe.

In his tyme came into Brytayne a prynce oute of a countre called Mauritania/ the whyche countre at those dayes is assygned by Strabo ỹ wryter, to be betwene the kyngdomes of

Hunga-

Hungary, and of Beame/the whych pryncewyth his cruell & fyers people wasted the lād of Britayne with iron and fyre wythout pyte. wherof Mozindus beynge warned/ in all haste gaderyd his people, and hym mette/ and faught in such wyse, that he chasyd the sayde pryncē agayne to the see, and toke many of his sowdyours as prysoners, the whyche in satysfyeng of his cruelnesse and tyranny, he caused to be put to deth in his syght by dyuerse maners of tormentes / as by heedynge, fleynge, brennynge, and other cruell executyons. Lastely as testyfyeth Guydo de Columpna and other, this Mozindus walkynge or rydynge vppon the see stronde espyed a wōderfull monstre, the whych of his corage and knyghthod he thought to sle. And by a māly corage and force assayled this monstre or beste, fyghtyng wyth yt a certayne of tyme. But in conclusyon he was deuoured and swalowyd of the sayd monstre: after he had reygned, after moste wryters, by the terme of viii. yeres / leuynge after hym, as wytnessyth Gaufryde, fyue sonnes, wherof the fyrste was named Gorbomānus: the secunde Archygallo, the thyrde Elidurus, the fourth Vigenius or Nigenius, and the fyfte or yongest, Peredurus.

THE .XXXVIII. CHAPITER.

Orbamānus the fyrste sonne of Mozindus/ was made kyng of Britayne/ in the yere of the worlde foure thousande. viii. hundred. lxxx. and. xviii. This in the englyshe cronycle ys named Granbodyan / the whyche as testifyeth Gaufryde, was a iuste and ryghtwyse man to ỹ godes and to his people, and yelded to eyther partye that was his / that ys to say to his goddes he yelded due reuerence & sacrifyce/ and to the people iustyce & equyte. And he renewed and repayred all olde temples thorough his realme, and buylded some newe. And in his tyme was more welth and plente in his realme, mych more thē was in any of his predecessours dayes. But fynally to ỹ great sorow of all his Brytons/ he was taken wyth syknesse, and dyed wythout issue of his body, when he hadde reygned after moste wryters by the terme of .xi. yeres.

THE .XXXIX. CHAPITER.

Archigallo the seconde sonne of Mozindus, and broder vnto Gorbomānus, was made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of ỹ worlde foure thousande. ix. hundred and .x. This in the englyshe boke is named Artogayll/ the whyche folowed nothynge the workes of his brother, but gaue hym selfe all to dissencyon and stryfe/ and imagyned causes agayne his nobles to put them from theyr goodes and dygnytyes /and in theyr places to sette and ordeyne vn noble and of rude byrthe and maner/ and from the ryche by synystre and wrongfull meanes he plucked theyr ryches and goodes. By whyche inordynate meanes he enryched hym self and impouerysshed his subiectes. For whyche condycyons his lordes & subiectes murmuryd agaynst hym/ and lastly of one assent toke him, or more verely, deprypyd hym of all honour and kyngly dygnyte, when he hadde reygned after moste concordaunce of wryters fyue yeres.

THE .XL. CHAPITER.

Elidurus the thyrde sonne of Mozindus, and the brother of Archigallo/ was by one assent of the

Bꝛytons made kynge of Bꝛytayne, in the yere of the woꝛlde .iiii. M. ir. hundꝛed and .xv. This in ꝑ englyſhe cronycle is named Hilider oꝛ Eſodyꝛ. The which became ſo myld and benygne to the Bꝛytons, that they gaue to hym a ſurname, and called hym Elidure ꝑ meke. Foꝛ he amõge other dedys of mekenes, as he was vpon a daye in his dyſpoꝛte of huntynge, in a wode nere vnto Caerbꝛãk oꝛ yoꝛke called Calater, oꝛ after ſome wꝛyters Caltras: he fande his elder bꝛother Archigallo late kynge, maſkelyng oꝛ wandꝛynge in the thykeſt of the woode/ whome louyngly and charytably he in ſecrete maner conueyed vnto his owne mancyõ into ꝑ cytye then named Aldud oꝛ Acliut. And as affermeth myn authour Gaufryde, to thentent to bꝛynge his bꝛother to his foꝛmer dygnytye as after foloweth: the ſayd Elidurus fayned hym ſelfe ſyke/ and in all haſte ſente his meſſagers aboute his realme to gather and aſſemble the Barons of his lãde. And when the daye of aſſemble was cõmyn, and his loꝛdes accoꝛdynge to his commaundement were pꝛeſent: he called them one by one, as they were of honour, into his ſecrete cubycle oꝛ chamber/ & there by his wyſe & diſcrete wordes as well in benygne and louynge maner, as other woꝛdes and countenaunce appertaynyng to his royall power and dygnyty/ he gat graunte of his ſayd loꝛdes, that they ſhuld ayde & ſtrẽgth hym to theyꝛ powers, to bꝛynge hys bꝛother Archigallo to his foꝛmer honour and regally. After which graũt by the loꝛdes made: he aſſembled a counſayll of his Bꝛytons at Caerbꝛank oꝛ yoꝛke/ & there cauſed ſuche meanes to be made to the cõmons, that in concluſion when the ſayd Elidurus hadde ruled the lande. v. yeres as kynge, he there reſygned his crowne and all kyngly power vnto his ſayde bꝛother Archigallo.

THE .XLI. CHAPITER.

When Archigallo was thus reſtored to his kyngly dygnyte, he remembꝛed well the euyl lyfe that befoꝛe tyme he had ladde, and the puniſhement which he had ſuffred foꝛ ꝑ ſame. wherfoꝛe in eſchewynge of lyke daunger: He chaunged all hys olde condicyons, and became a good and ryghtwyſe man, mynyſtryng to the people equyte and iuſtyce/ & bare hym ſo nobly agayne his loꝛdes and rulers vnder hym of his landes, that he was beloued & dꝛadde of all hys ſubiectes/ and ſo contynued duryng the terme of his naturall lyfe. But fynally he payde the dette of nature, when he hadde reygned nowe laſtly after moſte wꝛyters .x. yeres/ & was buryed, as ſayth the ſayde olde cronycle at Caerbꝛanke oꝛ yoꝛke.

THE XLII. CHAPITER.

Elidurus befoꝛe named was agayne by one aſſent of ꝑ Bꝛytons made kynge / in the yere of the woꝛlde .iiii. thouſande .ir hundꝛed & xxx. But his two yonger bꝛetherne Vigenius and Peredurus, hauynge of hym indignacyon, that he was foꝛ his vertue and good gouernaũce ſo well fauoured with the Bꝛytons: of malyce conſpyꝛyd agayne hym/ & gatheryd an army of ſoudiours, & made a felde wyth hym. And in the felde toke hym, and commaũded hym vnto the towꝛe of Troynouãt as ſayth Gaufryde, there as a pꝛyſoner to be ſauely kepte. After & when he hadde reygned nowe laſte by the ſpace, as wytneſſeth the old cronycle .ii. yeres.

THE .XLIII. CHAPITER.

Vigenius and Peredurus ꝑ yongeſt ſonnes of Moꝛind?, and

and bretherne of Elidurus before sayde/ were ioyntly made kynges of Bretayne / in the yere of the worlde foure thousande.ix. hundred .xxxii. These two bretherne are named in ỹ englesshe cronycle Higanius and Petytur / the whych as testifyeth Gaufryde departed ỹ land betwene thē, so ỹ all ỹ land from the water of Hūber westwarde, fyll to Vigenius or Nigenius: & the other part of the land with also Albania or Scotlande, fyll vnto Peredurus. But after the sayngе of Guydo de Columna, Vigenius or Nigenius was not kyng, but alonely Peredurus/ the whych, as he sayth, helde his brother Elidurus in prysone by his owne assent, for so myche as Elidurus was not wyllyng to be kynge. And as affermeth the sayde Guydo/ this Peredurus was cruell and tyrannous to the Britayns, and slew and entreated ỹ lordes in moste cruell maner. wherfore he became so odyous to them / that they rebelled agaynst hym and slew hym.

This sayeng contrarieth and enpugnyth myne authoure Gaufryde, sayeng ỹ Vigenius dyed after he had regned .vii. yeres. After whose deth Peredurus sealyd all the lande into his owne rule/ & ruled yt wyth great soberneſſe, in such wyse that he excelled or was preysed aboue all his brethern, so that Elidurus was clene forgoten of the Brytons. The englysh cronycle also sayth that this Peredurus founded the town of Pikeryng. But fynally he was taken wyth sodayne sykeneſſe / whereof he dyed, when he had regned wyth his brother and alone, after the accorde of moste writers .ix. yeres/ leuynge after hym no chylde to be his heyr.

THE .XLIIII. CHAPITER.

ELidurus before named so soone as Peredurus was dede, for as myche as he was next heyre to the crowne / was taken forth of prysone and made the thyrde tyme kynge of Britayne, in the yere of ỹ worlde .iiii. thousande.ix. hundred and .xli. The whyche as before tyme he had vsyd hym selfe so he contynued styll in my nystrynge to all persones ryght and iustyce all the dayes of his lyfe. And lastely beynge of good age he dyed, whē he had now regned after moste concordaunce of writers .iiii. yeres/ leuynge after hym a son named Gorbonianus or Gorbomanus. And as wytnesseth the olde cronycle, and the englysshe cronycle/ ỹ fore named Elidurus was buryed at Caerleyl or Karlele.

THE .XLV. CHAPITER.

YE shall vnderstande ỹ to the deth of the foresayde Elidure, the writers of the storye of Brytons writen dyuersly/ so that the one varyeth greatly from the other, both in ỹ names, and also in the tyme of theyre regnes/ the which wold aske a long tyme to reherse in order the dyuersyte of that one from the other/ & also to some reders ỹ mater therof shulde be but small pleasure. wherfore to suche as ben desyrous to knowe of ỹ tyme and season that passed betwene the laste yere of Elidurus, & the fyrst yere of Lud/ in whych passe tyme regned in Britayne .xxxii. or after some writers .xxxiii. kyngs: let hym loke in a table before ỹ begynnynge of this worke. And there he shall se my concept for ỹ declaracyon of ỹ yeres passed or spent betwene the forsayd two kynges Elidurus and Lud/ prayēge hym or them that so shall loke in the sayde draught, that yf I haue in any poynte erryd, that of theyr goodnes they wolde wyth good delyberacyon correcte and amende yt. But for it semeth to me, that of al such authours as I haue redde or seen, Guydo de

Columna reherseth most breuely the passetyme of the sayde kynges: ther fore I purpose here to reherse his sayenge, as he hath left yt to vs in latyn.

THE XLVI. CHAPITER.

Orbonian⁹ or Gorbomānus the sonne of Regny sonne of Eldure/ was made kynge of Bry-tayne, in the yere of the worlde foure thousande.ix. hundred and .xlv. After whom succedyd Margan. After Margā Emerian⁹ brother to ꝑ sayd Margan / the whyche Emerianus was depryuyd for his cruelnes. And after hym reygned.xx. kynges succes syuely the one after the other / of the whyche, as sayth myn authour Guydo, is no mencyon made / eyther for theyr rudenesse, or ellys for crueltye or dyscordaunte meanes or maners vsed in ꝑ tyme of theyr reygnes/ the whyche mysorder clerkes disdayned to wryte or put in memory. And next the laste of these foresayd.xx.kynges succedyd Blegabridus a connynge musycyan: the whyche for his excellence in that facultye, was called of the Brytons god of glemen.

After Blegabrid⁹ was thus kyng and dyed, succeded.ix.kynges / of whome for the formet cōsyderacyon is nother name nor tyme of reygne put in memory. The laste of whyche ix.kynges was by the agremēt of all wryters named Hely/ whych Hely after some wryters reygned.xl.yeres, & after some but bare.vii.monethes. In the whych.xxxiii.kynges tymes, passed or flowed (that is to say from the laste yere of Eldure vnto the last yere of the forsayde Hely, as by the formamed table apperyth) a hūdred and.lxxxvi.yeres. whyche sayde Hely lefte after hym .iii. sonnes, named Lud, Cassibellanus, and Nenius.

THE .XLVII. CHAPITER.

Lud the eldeste sonne of Hely, was made kyng of Brytayn, in the yere of ꝑ worlde.v.thousand a hundred and.xxxi. This mā was honourable in all his dedes/ for he edyfyed new temples, and repayred the olde. He also repayred olde cytyes & townes/and specyally in the cytye of Troynouant he caused many buyldynges to be made/ and gyrde the sayde citye about wyth a strong wall of lyme and stone. And in the weste parte of the sayde walle he arrerid a fayre and stronge gate, and commaūded it to be called Luddys gate, whych at this daye is cleppd Ludde gate. And for he loued myche this cytye: he vsed myche & moste to lye there. By reason whereof yt was called Caerlud or Luddys towne/ and after by corrupcyon or shortynge of the speche, yt was named London, whych name at this daye remayneth and abydeth.

This Lud also, as wytnessyth Gaufryde, was strōge and myghty in armys in subduynge his enymyes. He was also lyberall of gyftes and plentuouse in his housholde/ so ꝑ he was myche loued and drad of his Britōs. But when he hadde contynued hys reygn with great honour by ꝑ terme of.xi. yeres: he dyed, & was buryed in his gate called Portlud or Ludgate/ leuynge after hym, as wytnessyth Gaufryde, two sonnes, Androgeus, & Temancius or Tenancius.

THE .XLVIII. CHAPITER.

Cassibellan the brother of Lud was made kyng of Brytayn, in the yere of the worlde.v. thousand a hundred and.xlii. For so myche as the .ii. sonnes before named of Lud were to ponge or insuffycyent for to take on hand so great a charge. But as wyt-

as wytnessyth the olde cronycle, and also the authour of the Floure of hystoryes: thys Cassybellan was not made kynge, but ruler or protectour of the lande, for the tyme of the nonage of the foresayde brethern: all be yt myne authour Gaufryde sayth, ꝑ after Cassibellan was sette in authorite/he became so noble and lyberall, that his name sprange farre/and by his exercysynge of iustyce, the Brytons ought to hym more fauour, thē to eyther of his neuewes. How be yt he cherysshed them, & brought theym forth accordyng to theyr byrth. And when they came vnto yeres of discrecyon, he gaue to Androge⁹ the cytye of London, wyth the dukedome or the erledome of Kent/and to Temancius the dukedome of Cornewayll.

In this season was Caius Juli⁹, the whyche is moste commonly called Julius Cesar, sente by the senate of Rome as felowe and consull wyth Lucius Bubulus into Gallia nowe called Fraunce, for to subdue them vnto the empyre of Rome. The whyche Julius beyng vppon the see syde, after he had ouercome the Gallis, and beholdyng the whyte clyues or rockes of Brytayne: enquyred of the countre, and what people dwelled therin. And when he was sufficyently enfourmed of all the commodytyes therof: he had great wyll to bryngе the sayde countre vnder the yocke of the Romaynes, for so mych as at those dayes a great parte of the worlde was tributary to Rome. But as sayth myne authour, fyrste he exorted the Britons by writyng & messagers, to gyue trybute vnto Rome. wherfore Cassybellan haupnge indygnacyon wrote vnto hym sharpe & short answeres, shewyng that he and euery noble man was bounde specyally to kepe his coūtre from seruage/ and to kepe his subiectes, that they myght enioy lybertye and franchise. The whyche to obserue, he wold do the vttermost of his power & myght. wyth the which answere Julius beynge nothynge cōtentyd, in all haste made redy his nauy and people, and sayled towarde Brytayne. And whē the Romaynes were comyn nere the land of Brytayne, & shuld haue landed: ꝑ Brytons pyght sharpe stakes and longe vppon the bankes/ which caused theym to wynne lande wyth great daunger. And not longe after theyr landynge, Cassibellan wyth a stronge hoste of Britons encountred the Romaynes/gyuynge or yeldyng to them suche fyght and batayll that they were fayne to resorte to theyr shyppes for theyr suertye. Not wythstandyng ꝑ, as witnesseth Gaufride and other/ Julius after he hadde renewed his knyghtes, and also ryggyd his nauye: he came agayne the seconde tyme, entendynge to subdue the land to the empyre of Rome. But as before tyme he was by the manhode of the kynge and his Brytons manfully and knyghtly wythstāden and chasyd: so this seconde tyme he was in lyke wise ouercome, and compelled to flee wythout honoure. For whych vyctory thus twyes obteyned by the Brytons, Cassibellan entendynge to gyue thanke vnto his goddes, and reward to hys knyghtes: in goodly haste caused an assemble to be made of his lordes & knyghtes at the cytye of Caerlud or London. where after dew obseruaunces done to theyr goddes, after ꝑ vse of theyr pagan lawes, a great and solemne feste was holden by the kynge to all that wolde come, wyth moste lyberalytye and plentye in all that was necessarye to such a feste. And the more to encrease the kynges honoure/and to the more comforte and dilectacion of his lordes and other there beynge

ꝑsent: there was all maner kynd of games that at those dayes were exercysed and vsed. Contynewynge whyche feste, two noble and ponge knyghtes amonge other hapened to assey eyther other in wrastlyng/wher of that one was neuew to kyng ℭ assibellan named Hirelda/and ꝑ other named Euelinus, was allyed vnto Androgeus erle or duke of London. By meane of this wrastlynge dyuysyon or vnsyttynge wordes fyll betwene the two ponge knyghtes, ꝑ after wordes ensued strokes/by meane wherof partyes were take on eyther syde, whyche ranne to gyder in great ire and malyce, so that on eyther part many and diuers were hurte & wounded. Among whome Hirelda neuew to the kynge was slayne/ whych caused great dysturbaunce in the courte and amonge the lordes.

when the knowlege of the deth of Hirelda was brought vnto ꝑ kyng: he was therwyth greatly amoued/ & entendynge dewe iustice to be hadde & mynystred by thaduyce of his Barons, causyd the forenamed cosyn of Androgeus Euelinus to be sommoned for to appere before hym & hys counsayll, and there to acquyte hym of suche cryme as to hym was layde for the deth of Hirelda before slayne. But Euelinus by coũsayll of Androgeus wythstode that commaundement/ and shortly after the sayde Androgeus and Euelyne departed the courte wythoute takynge leue of the kynge.

The kynge dysdaynynge this demeanure of Androge⁹/ after dyuers monycyons to hym gyuen, gathered his knightes and made warre vpon Androgeus. wherfore he cõsyderyng after many ways & meanes thought ꝑ he was not of power to wythstand the kynges great indignacyon/ sent his letters vnto Caius Juli⁹ Cesar, shewynge to hym the circumstaunce of the mater / and aduoydynge hym of all gylt, besought and prayed him in moste humble wyse, that he wolde shortly retourne wyth his army into Brytayne/ & he wyth his hole power shuld be redy to ayde and helpe hym agayne the Brytons.

Of this message was Julius very glad/ and in all haste made towarde Brytayne wyth a great power. To whom ꝑ wynde was so fauourable/ ꝑ in short tyme after this message he drew nere ꝑ land. But as affermeth myne authour Gaufryde/ or he wold lande, ferynge the treason of Androgeus, he receyued frõ hym in hostage his sonne named Scena, wyth. xxx. other of the moste noble of his lordshyppe/ & that done he landed wyth the helpe and ayde of Androgeus. wherof when Cassibellan hadde warnynge, in all haste he made towarde the Romaynes / and in a valey nere vnto Dorobernia now named Canterbury, there he foũde the hoste of ꝑ said Juli⁹ lodged, & with him Androge⁹ with all his power. After whych knowlege had eyther of other/ wyth theyr habyllemẽtes of warre eyther greued other, tyll at lẽgth both hostes mette hande for hand and faught vẽgerously, in such wise that many fell on eyther partye.

But when the Brytons, as sayth Gaufryde, hadde longe foughten & knyghtly defended the Romaynes: Androge⁹ with his peple came by a wynge of the Brytons / and them so sharpely assayled, that they were constreyned to forsake the feld and place ꝑ they before had kepte. The whiche flyght dyscõforted so the other, that fynally all fledde and gaue place to the Romaynes, the which pursued & slewe them withoute pytye. So that Cassibellan wyth his Brytons that were lefte, were fayne to gette them to a

to a place of suerty/ there to reste tyll they myght newly prouyde to wyth stande theyr enemyes.

But fynally as all wryters agre, Julius helde the kyng so shorte, that for an vnytye and concorde he was fayne to become trybutary to the Romaynes, and to paye to them yerely a certayne trybute, whych Gaufryd affermeth to be. iii. thousande poūd. And when the sayde trybute was set in a suertye/ so that the sayd Romaynes were wyth yt contented, and Julius hadde accomplyshed his wyll & pleasure in thynges to hym thought necessary: he with Androgeus departed the lande, and so spedde hym towarde Rome / where soone after he was agayn, by the will of ỹ most of ỹ senatours made emperour. And this tribute thus was graūted when Cassibellan hadde reygned as kynge of Britayne fully. viii. yeres and moze.

THE .XLIX. CHAPITER.

THis begynnynge of this trybute payde by Cassibellan vnto the Romayns, shuld seme by most concordaunce of wryters to be vpon xl. and. viii. yeres before Crystes incarnacyon, or after some .l. But for proofe of the fyrste sayenge/ I haue shewed my conceyte in the tabyll before named/ the whych I rempytte to the correccyon of such as haue pfyte vnderstandynge in calculynge of hy storyes and tymes.

And here I make an ende of the seconde parte of this worke/ in yeldynge graces to oure moste consolatryce, that moste blessed virgyne our lady saynt Mary, the whyche here I agayne salute wyth the seconde of the forsayde . vii. ioyes, whyche begynneth,

Gaude sponsa chara dei. &c.
Be ioyous thou sponse of god moste dere
whyche lyke to the sonne, moste clereste of lyght
when in the daye he shyneth moste clere
The worlde illumynest by meanes full ryght
And thorowe the vertue of thy full myght
Causest the worlde to be respendissaunt
By meane of thy peas, which is full habundaunt.

This seconde parte to be accompted from the last yere of the dyscorde of the Brytons to the ende of the. ir. yere of Cassybellan, includeth of yeres. iii. hundred. lxxx. and. iii.

THE THYRDE PARTE.

THE .L. CHAPITER.

THus maye we vnderstande, that by the apoyntmēt before made / Cassibellan contynued styll as kynge and gouernour of this land of Brytayn/ whyche by moste cōcordaunce of wryters hadde reygned before or he were made trybutarye vppon. ir. yeres / whyche sayde. ir. yeres made the yere of the worlde folowynge thaccompte before expressyd, fyue thousand a hundred .l. And after he reygned by thagremēt of all wryters as kyng of this lande, fully. vii. yeres. So that in all before the graūte of ỹ tribute, and after/ he reygned vppon. xvi. yeres.

THE .LI. CHAPITER.

NOwe then haue I shewyd to you how that Julius Cesar by ayde and helpe of Androgeus erle of Kent/ made this land of Brytayn trybutarye to the Romaynes, when Cassibelan had ben kyng of the sayd lande vppon. ir. yeres/ whych. ir. yeres I haue sette for the ende of the seconde parte of this worke. So that the. r.

the.v. yere of Cassibellan is the fyrst yere of the thyrde parte of the sayde worke. Then as all writers testyfye/ Cassibellan contynued after the departynge of Julius, as kyng by the terme or space of.vii.yeres, as before is declared. In the tyme of ỹ whych vii.yeres is none noble acte nor dede of hym put in memory or wrytynge.

But for some wold thynke that after Caius Julius Cesar, hadde thorough helpe of Androgeus erle of Kent, and eldest sonne of Lud, thus as before is sayde, subdued Cassibellan: that the sayd Julius wold haue restoryd the sayde Androgeus to the crowne of Brytayne, as his ryghtfull inheritaũce/ and clerely to haue expelled and put oute the sayd Cassibellan from all kyngly dygnyty. To this answereth the olde cronycle and sayth, that Cassibellan was not the sonne of Hely, but that he was the eldeste sonne of Lud, by reason wherof he was fyrste made kyng/ and so as ryghtfull heyre contynued durynge hys lyfe, kynge of Brytayne. The whych when he hadde reygned.ix. yeres or he were trybutary, and.vii. yeres after as affermeth the sayde olde cronicle in all.xvi.yeres/ he dyed wythoute issue, and was buryed at Caerorzanke or yorke.

THE .LII. CHAPITER.

Temanci⁹ or Tenancius the yongest sonne of Lud, as affermeth Gaufryde, was made kyng of ỹ Brytõs, in the yere of the worlde fyue thousande a hundred and.lvii. This is named in the englyshe cronycle Tormace, and not kynge, as the sayde boke affermeth. But his elder brother, whych in the sayde boke is named Androgen, was after the affyrmaunce of the sayd englyshe cronycle made kynge. But the forsayd Gaufryde and other testyfyen / that for so myche as Androgeus ferynd to be euer hated of ỹ Brytons, for his treason wroughte agaynst the kyng and the lande: he therfore chase to go with Caius Julius to Rome, rather thẽ to be kyng of such as he thought wolde neuer haue hym in theyr loue and fauoure.

Then yt foloweth in ỹ storye, this Tenãcius ruled the land with great dylygence and iustyce/ and defended the lande well and knyghtly agayne all alyaũtis and straũgers/ & payde his trybute to the Romaynes ỹ Cassibellan had graunted/ and lastly dyed when he had reygned after most wryters.xviii. yeres, and was buryed at Caerlud or London / leuynge after hym a sonne, the whyche was called Kymbeline.

THE .LIII. CHAPITER.

Kymbelinus or Kymbelyne the sonne of Tenancius / was of ỹ Brytõs made kynge, in the yere of the worlde .v. thousande a hundred and .lxxx. This man as wytnesseth Gupdo was brought vp at Rome amonge the Romaynes, & there made a knyght/ and had of them suche fauoure, that he was at lyberty to pay the trybute or not. Of hym is lytell memorye made/ excepte all wryters agreen, that in ỹ season that he was kynge, our sauyoure Cryste Jesus was incarnate of that moste blessyd virgine our lady saynt Mary. which shulde be to accorde hystoryes, in the xix. yere of his reygne.

Of the reygne of this Kymbelyn authours wryte dyuersly / so ỹ some shewe no yeres, and some but fewe, whych can not accord wyth the tyme of other cronycles. But the authour of the hystorye called Floure of hystoryes wytnessyth, ỹ he reygned.xxxv. yeres. The whyche sayeng who lyst to se ỹ table before rehersed: he shall there

there haue knowlege, that this sayd auctoure accordeth beste wyth other storyes and cronycles.

And when that this Kymbelyne had regned gloryously ouer ỹ Brytons by all the season before expressyd, he dyed & was buryed at Caerlud or London / leuynge after hym two sonnes named Guyderius and Aruiragus.

NOw before haue I shewed vnto you in ỹ later chappter, ỹ Criste was incarnate, in the .xix. yere of Kymbelyne / whyche maketh the yere of the worlde, that is to saye frō the fyrste creacyon of Adam to the incarnacyon .v. thousande a hundred lxxx. and .xix. the whyche accompt is approuyd by holy Isodore, Beda, and other.

Then Cryste was incarnate the yere of ỹ world, as before is expressed.

From Noes flood or after. ii. thousande ir. hundred and .lvii.

After Abraham .ii thousande & .xvii.

After Dauid kyng of Israell, a thousande and .lxxv.

From or after the trāsmygracyon of the Jewes to Babylon, v. hūdred lxxx. and .x.

After Brute entred Britayne .xi. hundred and .xxxvi.

After Alexander the great, nere vpon .iii. hundred and .xxv.

After the buyldynge of Rome .vii. hūdred and .xxix.

And in the begynnyng of ỹ .xlii. yere of Octauius Augustus, then emperour of Rome.

THE .LIIII. CHAPITER.

GUyderius the fyrste sonne of Kymbalyne / beganne his regne ouer the Britons, the yere of the worlde .v. thousande .CC. & .xvi. And the yere after Cristes incarnacyon ỹ xvii. yere. This man was welthy & trusted mych in his strēgth. And for he thought the Romayns hadde the forenamed trybute with wronge: he therfore of a knyghtly courage denyed to the Romaynes the sayde trybute. wherfore Claudi⁹ whych was vncle vnto Caius Caligula the .iiii. emperour of Rome: came into Brytayne with a great armye of Romaynes / & as wytnessyth Policronica, cō queryd and wanne agayne the sayde trybute wythout great fyght. And ỹ done / he also subdued the yles of Orchades or Orkeys, whych stande beyonde Scotlād within the great Occean / and after tourned agayne to Rome the .vi. moneth after that he came thens.

The cronycle of Englande, and also Gaufryde saye, that in the hoste of the Romaynes was a captayne named Hame or Hamo / the whych entendynge hurte and destruccyon of ỹ Brytons, chaunged his sheide or armure, & dyd vppon hym the armure of a Britayne. And by that meane as a Briton mysclad, he entred into the thyckest of the hoste / and lastely vnto the place where as kynge Guyderius faught, & shortly after slewe the kynge. But Aruiragus seynge this sodayne myschyefe, to the ende ỹ the Brytons shulde not gyue backe: he hastely caused hym selfe to be armed wyth the cognysaunce of the kynge. And so for kyng cōtynued the fyght, wyth such māhode, that the Romaynes were put to flyght.

Thus by accorde of wryters Guyderius was slayne of the foresayde Hamo / when he hadde regned ouer the Brytons by the concordaunce of other hystoryes .xxviii. yeres, leuyng after hym none heyre of his body to guyde the lande after his deth.

THE .LV. CHAPITER.

ARuiragus the yongest sonne of Kymbelyne, and brother

to Guyderius before slayn, was ordeyned kyng of Brytons, in the yere of our lorde. xliii. This in the englyshe boke is named Armager/the whyche as there is shewed, well and knyghtly mayntayned the warre agayne the Romayns, and after slew the forenamed Hamo nere vnto an hauen or porte of the see. And hym so slayne, threwe gobet meale into the same see. And for this skyll, was this hauē longe tyme after called Hamōs hauen/ whych at this daye is called Southampton.

Then yt foloweth in the. viii. chapyter of the .iiii. boke of Policronicon, that Claudius after dyuers happes of batayll, toke Aruirag⁹ to his grace/ & brought his doughter Gennissa by name from Rome, and maried her vnto Aruiragus. And for he wolde make the place of ẏ maryage more solemne, he therfore called the towne of mariage Claudiocestria after his name, the whych before was called in bretysshe tunge Caerleon, & after Glouernia after a duke of Demecia that hyght Glorio/ but nowe this towne is named Glouceter.

All otherwyse telleth the englyshe cronycle/ & sayth that Armager scomfyted Claudius, and compelled hym to gyue his doughter Gēnissa or Gē nen to the sayde Armager to wyfe/ wyth condycyon that the Romayns shulde neuer after that daye clayme any trybute of Brytayne, excepte alonely fealwte/ whyche sayenge appereth doutefull for dyuers causes. wherof one is, that the sayde Armager shulde not constrayne Claudius to gyue his doughter to hym/ for so myche as the sayde Armager hadde neuer seen the sayde Gennen before tyme, nor knewe not of her cōuersacyon. Then meruayle yt were, that he shulde force her father to gyue hym a wyfe, that he hadde cast no loue vnto before tyme. One other reason is, that the sayde cronycle testifyeth/ that after he hadde maryed the sayd Gennen, he was at London crowned kynge of Englande. For I wold thinke if he had ouercomē Claudius, as there is surmytted, he wold fyrste haue crowned hym selfe kyng, and then haue maried his doughter. But by the same reason yt certifyeth more strenger the former sayenge of Policronica. For by all lykelyhode Claudius wold not suffer hym to be crowned kyng, tyll he hadde full performed his promyse in maryage of his doughter.

And all be yt that myne authoure Gaufryde varyeth not myche from the englyshe cronicle: I thynke in ẏ doynge he toke example of Homer⁹, that wrote the dedis and actes of the Grekes/ the whyche shewed and put in memory all the noble actes by thē done, and specyally in the recuyll or boke made by hym of the syege of Troye. But the other dedys concernynge theyr dyshonoure/ he hyd yt as myche as he myght. And in lyke maner do many other writers, which I passe ouer. And so Gaufride for he was a Bryton, he shewed the beste for Brytons.

Then yt foloweth, after the solemnysacyon of this maryage, whyche was with all honour fynyshed: Claudius sente certayne legyons of his knyghtes into Irlande to rule that countre, and retourned hym selfe to Rome.

THE .LVI. CHAPITER.

It was not longe after the departynge of Claudius: but ẏ Aruiragus rode aboute his realme, and wyth great dylygence repayred cytyes and townes before decayed & broken wyth the strength of the Romaynes/ and entreated his subiectes wyth

wyth ſuche iuſtyce and good ordre, that they loued and dradd hym more then any of his progenitours. This in tracte of tyme made hym welthy. And by meane of this welthynes enſued pryde / ſo ꝑ hym thought great ſhame to be vnder the rule or guydynge of ꝑ Romayns/ wherfore laſtly he denyed the tribute before graũted. wherof when knowlege came vnto ꝑ ſenate of Rome: in all haſt was ſent a duke of Rome called Veſpaſyan, wyth a certayne of legyons to ſubdue Aruiragus.

ye ſhall vnderſtand, that a legyon of knyghtes, is .vi. thouſande. vi. hundred. lxvi.

when Veſpaſyan was landed in Bretayne, as teſtyfyeth Polycronica/ he ſpedde hym ſo, that in ſhorte whyle he ſubdued Aruiragus to the empyre, and cauſyd hym to graunte payment of the foreſayde trybute. which was done, as ſayth Gaufride by entreatye of the quene Genniſſa, and of no conſtraynt nor coaccyon.

when Veſpaſyan hadde thus recouerȳd the trybute, he then alſo made ſubiecte to the empyre / an yle in the ſee lyenge vpon the ſouthſyde of Britayne, now called the yle of weyght. and after retourned to Rome.

when Aruiragus was thus ſecondely brought vnder the yocke of ꝑ Romayns: he became more mylde towarde them / ſo that whyle he lyued after he payed hys trybute wyth leſſe grudge, and contynued hym in theyr fauours, in ſuche wyſe that he was of theym well beloued. And ſo laſtely dyed when he hadde ruled the Brytõs well and nobly by the terme of .xxx. yeres/ and was buryed at Caergloñ, Caerleoñ, Clau dioceſtria, or Glouceter/ leuynge after hym a ſonne named Marius.

THE .LVII. CHAPITER.

MArius the ſonne of Aruirag⁹ was ordeyned kynge of Brytons, in the yere of our lorde. lxxiiii. This in the cronycle of Englande is named weſtmer. whych Marius, as wytneſſyth Gaufryde, was an excellent wyſe man/ and guyded his Brytons moſte honourably, and in grete proſperyte and welthe. In the tyme of the reygne of this Mari⁹ a duke or kynge of a nacyon called Pyctes/ whych as wytneſſyth Virgilius, are deſcendyd of a people called of olde tymes Scythis. They alſo are named Gothis or Hunys. This foreſayde leder of Pictes is named of Gaufryde Londricus/ the which landed wyth a great nauy, in the prouynce of Albania now called Scotlande/ and yt beganne to waſte with iron and wyth fyre. wherof whē Marius was warned/ he in all haſte aſſembled his knyghtes, and made towarde his enymyes/ and gaue vnto them ſtronge batayll. In the whych Lōdricus or after ſome Rodic⁹ was ſlayne, and a great parte of his people were ſlayne. In remembraunce of whyche victorye, kynge Marius lette arrere a great ſtone/ and in this he commaunded to be graued Marii victoria, whych is to meane the victorye of Marius.

Wyllyam of Malmeſburye ſayth, that this ſtone was arered in mynde of Marius the conſull of Rome.

The englyſhe cronycle ſayth, that this batayll was foughtē in a place, the whyche now is called Stanyſmore. But where ſo this ſtone is ſet/ the countre there aboute was longe after called weſtmaria, and nowe weſtmerlande.

Then yt foloweth in the ſtory, that

when the reſydue of the people of Lodricus, whyche were fledde from the felde, vnderſtode that theyr hedde & captayne was ſlayne: they made hũble requeſt vnto ỹ kynge, ỹ he wolde accepte thẽ vnto his grace/ and that he wold graunt to theym ſome lande and countre to dwell in. whych graũted vnto thẽ a place in the ferre ende of Scotlande, whyche is named of myne authoure Catheneſia, where the ſayd Scythis or Pictes fyrſt inhabyted them. And for ſo myche as the Brytons dyſdayned to gyue vnto thẽ theyr doughters in maryage: therfore they acqueynted them wyth the Iryſhe men, and maryed theyr doughters, and grewe in proces into a great people. And for this allyaunce attwene the Iryſhe and them: theyr countre, as wytneſſyth Policronycon ỹ .xxxvii. chappter of hys fyrſte boke, was called Irlande, and after Pictauia, & laſtely Scotlande.

And when Marius had thus ſubdued his enemyes/ he attendyd and ſette his mynde to the common wele of this lande and ſubiectes / and contynued ỹ reſydue of his lyfe in great tranquillite and reſte. And ſo laſtely payde his naturall tribute, & was buryed at Caerleyll, leuyng after hym a ſonne named Coill9 or Coyll, whẽ he hadde reygned after moſte wyters .lii. yeres.

THE .LVIII. CHAPITER.

COyllus the ſonne of Marius was after the deth of his father made kynge of Brytons, in the yere of oure lorde incarnacyon a hũdred and .xxvi. This was from hys infancy noryſhed and brought vppe amonge the Romaynes in Italia or Rome/ by reaſon wherof he was to theym louynge and kynde, and they vnto hym. And he, for ſo myche as he knewe the power of the Romayns great/ in auoydyng of warre & other daunger, payde vnto them the forſayde trybute duryng his lyfe. This Coillus alſo, as wytneſſyth Gaufryde, was a lyberall man of gyftes/ by reaſon wherof he obteyned great loue of his nobles, and alſo of his cõmons. And as ſome authours haue: this Coyll made the towne of Colcheſter/ whych at this daye is a fayre town in the ſhyre of Eſſex. But other aſcrybe yt to Coell or Coill, that was kynge nexte after Aſclepeodotus.

But when this Coillus hadde reygned in ſoueraygne peace by ỹ terme of .liii. yeres, he dyed and was buryed at Caerbrank or yorke / & lefte after hym a ſonne, the whyche was named Lucius or Lucy.

THE .LIX. CHAPITER.

LUcius or Lucy the ſonne of Coillus, was made kynge of Brytons, in the yere of oure lorde a hundred and .lxxx. The whych in all actes and dedes of goodnes folowed his forefaders/ in ſuche wyſe that he of all men was beloued and drad. Of this is litell or none acte notable put in memorye/ excepte that all wryters agree, that this Lucius ſent to Eleutherius then pope of Rome certayne pyſtles or letters, prayeng hym that he & his Britons myght be receyued to the fayth of Cryſtes chyrche. wher of the pope beynge very ioyous and gladde / ſente into Brytayne two noble clerkes named Faganus and Dunianus: or after ſome, Fugacius and Dimianus. Theſe two good and vertuous clerkes were honourably receyued of Lucius / the whych by theyr good doctryne and vertuous exanples gyuynge, cõuerted the kynge and a great parte of the Brytons.

But for ſo myche authours & wryters

ters wryte dyuersly of ỹ tyme of this receyuynge of the fayth by Lucius/ so that the one varyeth greatly from the other: therfore I haue shewed in the forenamed table, that yt shall vnder correccyon appere, ỹ the fayth was receyued by Lucius, as affermeth Petrus Victauiens. the. viii. yere of the reygne of the sayde Lucius. And ỹ yere after Cristes incarnacion a hundred .lxxviii. The whych Lucye after the fayth thus by hym receyued, by the aduyce of the forsayde clerkes, and wyth the instruccyons sent to theym by the forsayde pope Eleuthery: instituted and ordeyned, that all or the more partye of Archeflampnys and flampnys/ whyche is to meane archbysshoppes and bysshoppes of the pagan lawe, whyche at that daye were in nomber, as wytnessyth Gaufryde and other. iii. of the archeflampnys, and .xxviii. of the flampnys/ were made and ordeyned archebysshoppes & bysshoppes of ỹ chyrch of Criste, as after foloweth.

Archeflampnys bysshoppes constytuted.

THE .LX. CHAPITER.

THe fyrste of the archeflampnys see, rule, or iurysdyccyō/ was as wytnessyth Gaufride & Policronica, at London, the seconde at yorke, and the thyrde at Caerurst or Kaergloñ or Glouceter. To these. iii. archbysshopes were subiecte the forsayd .xxviii. flampnys or bysshoppes. To the archebysshoppes see of London was subiecte Cornewayll and all myddel England vnto Humber. To the archebysshoppes see of yorke was subiecte all Northumberlande, from the bowe of Humber, wyth all Scotlande. And to the thyrde archbysshoppes see, whych was at Glowceter, was subiecte all walys. In whych prouynce of walys were. vii. bysshoppes, where as now ben but iiii. And at ỹ daye Seuarn departed Brytayne and Cambria or walys. But in the tyme of Sarons, after they had the rule of the lande of Brytayne, as testyfyeth wylhelmus de Pontific. all be yt that saynt Gregory had graunted vnto London prynuplege of that archbisshoppes see: neuertheless saynt Austayn, the which wyth other was sent into Englande by the forsayde Gregorye, tourned the archebysshoppes see out of London into Caunterbury, after the deth of saint Gregory, by meanes of prayer of kyng Egbert or Ethelbert, and other cytyzeyns & burgesys of Caunterbury/ where yt hath contynued to this daye/ except that for the tyme of Offa kynge of Mercia or Mercheryk, for dysplesure that he hadde to the cytezeyns of Caunterburye by-name and toke from theym that dygnyte/ and worshypped Adulphe bysshop of Lychefelde wyth the pall of Caunterbury by the assent of Adryan the fyrste of that name then pope. Neuertheless in the tyme of Kenulphus, whyche not longe after was kynge of the sayde Mercia or Mercheryk / yt was agayne restoryd to Caunterbury.

The worshyp of ỹ see of yorke hath endured there alwaye and yet dothe, though Scotland be withdrawē frō his subiecyon. The archbysshoppes see of Caergloñ or Glowceter, was tourned frō thēs to Menenia, whych is in ỹ west syde of Demecia vppon the Irysshe see, whiche now is called saynt Dauids lande. In this prouynce from the dayes of saynt Dauid, vnto the dayes of Sampson bysshop/ sat. xxiii. bysshoppes. But in the sayde Sampsons dayes then archebysshop, fyll such mortalyte thorowe

walys of the yelowe euyll called the Jaundyes/that myche people therof dyed. wherfore the sayde Sampson toke wyth hym the pall, & sayled into Armorica or lytell Brytayne/and was there byssshoppe of Dolence or Dolences. And from that tyme vnto the fyrst Henrys tyme kyng of Englande/ hadde sytten at Menenia or sayncte Dauids .xxi. byshoppes, and all wythoute pall. But whether yt were for lacke of connynge, or ellys for pouerty, it is not assertayned. Neuertheless alwaye from the tyme of the sayde Sampson vnto the forsayde Henry the fyrste tyme/ all the byshoppes of wales were sacred of ỹ byshoppe of Menenia or sayncte Dauids. And the archebyshop of Menenia was at all tymes sacred of ỹ byshoppes of walys, as of his suffragans, and made no profession nor obiecyon to any other chyrche. But after these dayes other byshoppes ỹ sat there/were compelled to be sacred at Canterbury. In token of wyche subiecyon Bonyface archbyshoppe of Cañterbury, & legate of the crosse/ sange in euery cathedrall chyrche of walys a solemne masse, wyche was done by the sayde Bonifface in the tyme of Henry the seconde beynge kynge of Englande.

But now ye shall vnderstãde there ben but two prymates or archbyssshoppes in all Englande and walys. That one ys at Caunterburye, and that other is at yorke. To the prymate of Caunterburye ben subiecte xiii. byshoppes in England, and .iiii. in walys. And the prymate of yorke hath but two suffragans in Englãd, which be the byshoppes of Caerleyll and Durham.

And who so wyll be further instructe of the order and chañges of byssshoppes see of Englande lette hym rede ouer the .lii. liii. lv. lvi. and lvii. chapyters of the fyrste boke of Polycronycon/ or a pte of holy Bedys worke, whyche he compyled of the same mater called historia Anglicana: and there he shall haue euery thyng sette out clerely and truely.

And for to contynewe my processe of Lucius as wytnessyth myne authoure Gaufride/ when he hadde as before ys sayde stablyssyd & orderyd the forsayde archeflampyns and flamyns / and that they were also confermed of the pope: he then endowed them wyth such landes and possessyons, as before tyme were occupyed or gyuen to the mayntenynge and vpholdynge of the pagan rytes and lawe vsyd before tyme. And the temples of idollys thorough his land he caused to be dedycate to Jesu Criste and his sayntes/ & honoured them wyth myche great and large gyftes. And when he had done, after moste accorde of wryters by ỹ terme of .xii. yeres: he dyed and was buryed in ỹ cytye of Claudiocestre or Glouceter without heyre of his body/the which after grewe to great damage of the Brytons, as after shalbe shewed.

Of this Lucius yt is shewed in a table hangynge vpon the wall of the north syde of the yle, in the backe of the quere of sayncte Paules chyrche in London / that the sayde Lucius reygned ouer the Brytons .lxxvii. yeres. And ouer that the authoure of cronica cronicarum testyfyeth, that after Lucius had receyued the fayth, he assembled a great hoste of Brytons and sayled ouer into Gallia or Fraunce / and thens into other countres passynge by Becia and the cytye called Augusta/ & there subdued many of the enymyes of Crystes fayth/ where after many vertuouse dedys he restyd in good peace. And his suster called Emerita, as sayth the said authour, was also martyred for Cristes

stes sake. But of this sayeng & other the doute is assoyled in the forsayde table in ỹ begynnyng of this worke/ where yt shall apere, that he reygned but. xii. yeres, as aboue is shewed.

And for so myche as in this Lucius endeth for a tyme the lyne of Brutõs, and the lande after this daye was ruled some dele by the Romayns: therfore I will here ende the thyrd parte of this worke. And for ỹ good spede I haue hyderto had/ and to the ende to inpetre the more grace in accomplyshyng ỹ other dele of this worke: I here salute our moste blessyd lady wyth the thyrd iope of the forsayde vii. iopes, whyche begynneth.

Gaude splendens vas virtutum &c.
Hayle and be glad thou vessell moste shynynge
Of vertues and grace, at whose commaundement
The hole courte of heuen is euer and byddynge
And thou also arte amonge them ment
Moste benygne and happy to euery good entent
As dygne moder of Jesu, with moste excellence
Honoured in glorye, with all theyr assystence.

This thyrde parte to be accompted from the ende of the .ix. yere of Cassibellan, to the laste yere of Lucius, includeth of yeres two hũdred & .xli.

TRouth yt is, as affermyn all wryters / that after the deth of the forenamed Lucius, for so mych as of his body remayned non heyre: the Brytons amonge them selfe fyll at great dystaunce and warre. The whyche warre and trouble endured to the greate dystourbaunce of the lande. But howe longe, the certayne is not sette out by any wryter that I haue seen/ excepte the englyshe cronycle sayth, that yt endured. l. yeres. The whych sayeng vnder correccyõ can not stande wyth the concordaũce of other wryters/as yt is more playnly declared in the forsayde table.

where also yt shall appere, that the sayde dyscorde amonge the Brytons contynued but onely. xv. yeres.

After whyche terme of .xv. yeres expyred, as after more clerely shall be shewed: Seuerus beynge thẽ emperour of Rome, beganne his domynyon ouer this lande of Brytayne. So that ye shall nowe vnderstande that ỹ laste yere of this discorde was the yere of our lorde two hundred & vii. By reason wherof yt folowyth, that the sayde .xv. yeres ioyned vnto the forsayde thyrde parte: that the thyrde part cõteyneth and includeth of yeres. ii. hundred and. lvi.

¶Thus endeth the thyrde parte.

THE FOURTH PARTE.

THE .LXI. CHAPITER.

SEuer a Romayn at this daye emperour of Rome/ begane to rule this lande of Brytayn in the yere of our lordes incarnacyon. ii. hũdred and viii. The whych as wytnesseth Gaufryde, was before tyme sent from the senate of Rome with two legyons of knyghtes into Brytayne, to appease the warre and stryfe amonge them/ and also for to wythstãde the Pictes and other enymyes, whych dayly inuaded the land. For dyuers wryters agree, that this Seuer was made emperoure, the yere of Crystes incarnacyon a hũdred. lxxx. and .xv / and ruled the sayd empyre after the most wryters .xvi. yeres. By whych rule yt shuld appere that he shuld be take for gouernour of this realme of Brytayne, the. xii. yere of his empyre.

It is sayde of this man, that after he had subdued the Parthis and the Arabis, he was named Particus/ & was sent, as before is sayde, of the senate of Rome into Bretayne/ where he causyd to be made at the coste of the commonte, a walle of turues and great stakes of the length, as wytnesseth Policronica of a hundred .xii. myles/ as in the .xviii. chappter of his .iiii. boke appereth. This wall after the exposycyon of the sayde Polycronica, began at the ryuer of Tyne, and endured to the Scottyshe see/ or from the ende of the lordshyp of Deira, vnto the sayde Scottyshe see/ or after some writers from Durham, to the see beforesayde.

Then yt foloweth, the Pictes with their leder Fulgenius / issued from Albany or Scotlande into the lande of Bretayne/ and destroyed myche of ȳ coūtre beyonde Durham. wherfore this Seuerus with and hoste of Brytons and of Romaynes mette wyth the sayde Fulgenius in a place nere vnto yorke, where after sore fyght the sayd Seuerus was slayn/ when he hadde ruled this lande after moste concordaunce of writers by ȳ terme of .v. yeres/ and was after buryed at yorke, leuynge behynde hym two sonnes, that one named Geta, and that other Bassianus.

THE .LXII. CHAPITER.

BAssianus the sonne of Seuerus and of the moders syde a Bryton/ beganne to rule this lande of Britayne in the yere of Cirstes incarnacyon two hundred and .xii. Of this man spekyth nothynge the englyshe cronycle. But trouth yt is, as wytnesseth Gaufride and other, that after / ȳ deth of Seuer⁹ stryfe arose betwene the Brytons & the Romaynes, then beynge wythin the land of Brytayne. For the commons helde for their kynge Bassianus, for so myche as he was borne of a Bryton woman. And vpon that other party in lyke maner the Romayns alowed Geta for their kyng, because he was descended of a Romayne. And as farther affermeth the forenamed Gaufryde/ for this dyscencyon a batayll was hadde betwene the sayd two bre therne/ in ȳ whych Geta was slayn, and Bassianus remayned for kynge of all the lande.

But frō this sayeng varyeth greatly Eutropius, and other that wryte of the cronycles of Rome. For by thē yt is witnessed, that Geta was slayn at a cytye named Edessa, when he faught agayne the Parthiens / and Bassianus succedyd his fader in the dignyte of emperoure/ which as in ȳ sayde cronycle of Rome is testyfyed, was also called Marcus Aurelius Antonnius and Caracalla a man of ryght euyll condycyon, and vnreasonable of lechery, so ȳ he laye by his stepdame named Juliana and weddyd her, and dyd other many cruell dedys / and lastely he was slayne at the forenamed cytye of Edessa, when he had ben emperour vpō .vii. yeres.

In the tyme that Bassianus was thus kynge of Brytayne, one named Carassius a Bryton of lowe byrthe, but valyant and hardy in mercyall dedys : purchaced of the senate of Rome the keppynge of ȳ costes of Brytayne, and to wythstāde the malyce of straungers, as Pictes and other. By meane of this, Carassius drewe vnto hym many knyghtes, & specyally of the Brytons/ promysynge to them, ȳ if they wold make hym kyng he wolde clerely delyuer them from all seruytude of ȳ Romaynes. where thorough ȳ Britons (as wytnesseth Gaufryde) rebelled agayne Bassianus/ and wyth their duke and leder Carassius, arreryd agayne hym dede

ly warre

ly warre. By meane wherof Bassianus was slayne, when he hadde ruled this land by moste concordaunce vi. yeres.

THE .LXIII. CHAPITER.

CArassius a Briton of vnknowen byrth was of the Brytōs made ruler, in the yere of our lord .ii. hundred and .xviii. the whych as before is touched, was by the senate of Rome deputed for a substytute or a ruler vnder the Romaynes, as yt is shewed in theyr cronycles, in the absence, or whyle Bassianus then emperour of Rome and kynge of Brytayne, was occupyed aboute the nedes of the empyre. This Carassius for that he was not of power to withstande the Pictes/ or for the fauoure that he bare towarde thē for aydyng hym agayne the Romayns: he gaue to them the countre of Albania, that now is called Scotlande.

But ye shall vnderstande, ỳ here is not ment all Scotlande. For as wytnessyth Policronica / this parte ỳ was gyuē thus to the Pictes, was the south parte of Albania, and beganne at Twede, and endurȳd to the Scottysh see. Of the kynde of those Pictes is somwhat shewed before in the story of Marius / but more after shall be shewed of them in conuenīēt place, bothe of theyr offsprynge and maners.

Then yt foloweth in the story, whē the Romaynes hadde knolege of the deth of Bassianus / anon they sent a duke frō Rome named Allectus with iii. legyons of knyghtes, for to slee Carassius, and to subdue the Brytons to the empyre. To the whyche Allectus fortune was so fauourable, that he chased Carassius, and lastely slew hym / when he hadde ruled the Brytons by moste accorde of wrytters viii. yeres.

But Jacobus Philippꝰ authour of a boke named Supplementū cronicarum sayth, that in the tyme that Maximianus or Marympan surnamed Herculeus, and Diocletyan Dalmatheus were emperoures of Rome: they harde that this Carassiꝰ had taken vpon hym to were ỳ purpure that onely was reserued to emperours/ & also ỳ he ruled the realm of Brytayne as to his synguler vse/ and furthermore were credybly enformed, that Marletꝰ an other substytute hadde or occupyed the eest lādes wyth cruell batayll / and other prynces the great coūtre of Affrica/ and many other also by the instygacyon and leuyng of one named Achilleus hadde subdued the countre of Grece. For whych sayde nouellys & tydynges/ these two emperours, to the ende to refourme all these sayde rebellyons, chase vnto them two noble men/ of the whyche that one was named Galerius, and that other Cōstancius, as cesars or felowes to rule the empyre. And ỳ done / the sayd .ii. cesars were sent with great powers, that one ito Affrica, and ỳ other into Egypte. This forenamed Maximyan came wyth great power of people into Britayne, and ouercame the sayde Carassius more by gyle then by strength / when the sayde Carassius had ruled the Brytons, as sayth the forenamed authour Jacobꝰ Philippus, by the terme of .x. yeres.

In the whyche sayeng appereth errour, for dyuersytie of tyme and yeres. For after moste accorde of wrytters/ and also by the affyrmacyon of the sayde Jacobus Philippus, the sayde emperoures Diocletian & Marympan, ruled the empyre of Rome aboute the yere of Crystes incarnacyon two hundred and .lxxxx. And this Carassiꝰ was ruler in Britayne long before, as in the tyme of Bassianus em

nus emperour of Rome, ỹ reygned aboute the yere of our lorde two hundred .x. xiii. as testifyeth Polycrocon and other.

Also a boke in frenche called la Mere de hystoryes, whyche maye be englyshed ỹ Moder of hystoryes, sayth that this Carausius was fyrste a treasourer or such a hygh offycer amõge the Romayns. By reason wherof he sought great abundaunce of ryches, and fyll by reason therof in fauoure of the senatours of Rome/ so that fynally he was made senatour, and became a man of great authoryte / in so myche that Bassianus then emperoure made hym protector of the cyte and countre of Alexandrye. But then he was suppryspd wyth suche pryde, that he exercysed tyranny and other vnlefull meanes, in so excedynge maner that the countre wared wery of him, and conspired his deth. Wherfore after punyshemẽt done vpon some of his enymyes/ he feryng the sequell and reuengement of the same: left that countre and retourned vnto Rome / where after he had a season restyd, he was by the senate of Rome assygned for his sterneſſe vnto the rule of Brytayne, wyth the ayde of.iii. legyõs of knyghtes. And so beynge garnyshed wyth all abylymentes of warre, entred this yle of Brytayne/ and wyth great trauayle subdued them to the empyre / and so contynued the lyues tyme of the emperour Bassianus.

But so sone as he was assertayned that ỹ emperour was slayne at Edessa, as before in the story of Bassian? is shewed/ thynkynge that amonge the Romaynes shuld growe stryfe & dyssencyon for the electyon of a new emperour/ by reason of whych stryfe he myght the rather lyue so farre frõ them wythout any correctyon: confederyd wyth the Scottes and certayne other of the Britons/ and slew many of the Romaynes, suche of thẽ as he thought wolde not consent to his treason / and by that meane fynally was made kynge of Brytayne. And so contynued, as affermeth the sayde authour to accompte from his fyrst hauyng rule vnder the Romaynes, vnto the tyme ỹ he was slayne of Alectus. viii. yeres, not wythout exercysynge of his olde accustomed tyrannyes and other vnsyttynge condycyons.

THE .LXIII. CHAPITER.

ALectus a duke or consull of Rome, sent as before is sayd from the senate / begãne to rule the Brytons, in the yere of our lorde .ii. hundred .xxvi. This in the englysh cronycle is named Allec. whych whẽ he had restoryd the lande to the subiectyon of Rome/ he thẽ pursued certayne of the Brytõs, that had fauoured Carausi? agayne the Romayns. And in that doynge vsed and exercysyd many tyrannyes and exactyons/ by reason wherof he fyll in greate grudge of ỹ Brytons. wherfore they entendynge to oppresse and subdue the power of the Romaynes/ purchasyd and excyted a noble man of ỹ Britons called Asclepiodotus and duke of Cornewayle. The whyche gatheryd a great hoste of the Brytons, and made warre vppon the Romaynes, and chasyd them from coũtre to coũtre, & from towne to towne/ and lastly Alectus wyth his Romayns drew hym to London, and there kept hym for his most suertye. wherof beynge warned Asclepiodotus: he with his Brytons came nere vnto the sayde cyte/ where by meanes of prouocacyon on eyther partye vsed, lastely ỹ Romaynes issued oute of the cyte & gaue batayll to the Brytons. In the

whych

which fyght many fyll on eyther par tye/but ꝑ more on the party of ꝑ Romaynes/amonge the whyche was al so slayne Alect⁹. wherfore a captayn of the Romaynes called Liuius Gal lus, aduertysynge this myschyef, & the great daũger that the Romayns were in: drewe backe into the cytye with the Romaynes that were lefte on lyue, and defendyd yt wyth theyr powers.

Thus then appereth, that Alectus was slayne of the Brytons/ whyche was by most accorde of writers whē he had ruled this lande vnder ꝑ Romaynes by the terme of .vi.yere.

THE .LXV. CHAPITER.

ASclepiodotus duke of Cor newayle, as sayth Gaufryde (but after the sayeng of Eutropius and Beda, he was presydente of the Pretory of Rome) began his domy nyon ouer the Brytons, in the yere of our lorde two hundred and. xxxii. The whych as before is sayde, wyth his Brytons gyrt the cytye of Lon don wyth a stronge syege/ and kepte the forsayde Liuius Gallus and his Romayns in streyte holde/ & finally, as affermyth myne authour Gaufry de, with knyghtly force & violēce en tred the sayde cytye, and slewe ꝑ fore namyd Liuius Gallus nere vnto a broke there at that daye rynnynge, and hym threwe into the sayd broke. By reason wherof long after yt was called Gallus or wallus broke. And at this day ꝑ strete where some tyme ranne the sayde broke, is nowe called walbroke. And after he hadde thus venquyshed the Romayns: he helde this lande a certayn of tyme in peasyble wyse, and ruled the Brytōs wyth good iustyce/ in rewardynge & exaltynge the good men, and punysshynge of the euyll.

In this whyle by styrynge of dys claunderous & dyuysyshe persons/ a grudge was arreryd attwene the kynge and a duke of his land called Coill or Coillus, the whyche was duke or erle of Kaercolym or Colche ster/ wherof the cause is not appa raunt. But how it was, great people were assembled on both parties/ and tynally mette in the feld, where was faughtē a great and stronge batayll. In the whyche Asclepiodotus was slayne/ when he had reygned to the concordaunce of other hystories, and after the affermaunce of the olde cro nycle by the space of. xxx. yeres.

THE .LXVI. CHAPITER.

COelus erle of Colchester be gan hys dompnyon ouer the Brytons, in the yere of the incarna cyon of Cryste. ii. houndred. lxii. This in the englyshe boke is called Coyll/ the whiche guyded the lande to the pleasure of the Brytons a certayne tyme. But as wytnesseth Gaufryde, when the senate of Rome had vnder standynge of the deth of Asclepiodo tus, they were ioyous of the deth of hym, for so mych as he hadde euer ben an enemye to ꝑ empyre. But for so mych as at that dayes was great dyssencyon amonge them selfe, as wytnesseth ꝑ cronycle of Rome: they coude not conuenyently sende any armye of knyghtes for to warre vp pon this Coelus. wherfore he contyn nued ꝑ longer in reste & good peas. After the cronycle regestred within the monastery of saynt Alboon/ the sayd holy martyr suffered his passyō in the yere of our lorde. ii. houndred lxxx. & .vi./whych shulde be the. xxiii. yere of this present kynge. But thys dyscordeth from suche wryters, as af fermen the holy man to be martyred in the. x. persecucyon vnder Diocle sian and Maximian emperours.

Neuertheless at length was sente from

from ỳ senate a noble wyse man called Constancius/the whiche as after meth the forenamed auctour,had before tyme subdued to the empyre a great part of the coūtre of Spayne. But that sayenge dysagreeth to the wrytynge of Eutropius.For the coū tre of Spayne was not subdued by hym tyll after ỳ he was emperour.

Than it foloweth,whan this Constancius was arryued in Brytayne with his army/ anone Coelus assembled his Brytons.But for he dredyd the strength and faine of thys Constācius, he sent to hym an enbassad, affyrmynge vnto hym cōdycyons of peace, wyth graunte of paymentes of the trybute, whych before was denyed/ or ellys as meaneth Polycronica, wythin a moneth after the landynge of this Constancius, Coelus was dede. wherfore the Brytons to haue the more peace / wylyd this knyghte to take to wyfe Heleyn the doughter of Coelus, wyth the possessyon of the lande of Britayne/ which by hym was graunted. Then as before is sayde, Coelus dyed,when he had ruled the Brytons after most accorde of wryters .xxbii.yeres.

THE .LXVII. CHAPITER.

COnstancius a senatoure of Rome,as sayth Policronica/ beganne to rule the Brytons in the yere of oure lorde two hundred.lxxx. and.ix.This as before is shewed maryed Heleyn the doughter of Coelus last kyng of Brytayne. But ye shall vnderstande, that this Constancius was fyrste maryed vnto Theodora the stepdoughter of Herculeus Maximian?/ and had by her syx sonnes. So that this Heleyn was his secōde wyfe, whyche was fayrest of all maydens, and therewyth lerned, and sufficyently lettred. She is also noted of many wryters to be a captyue or a prysoner to the Romaynes.

Of this Constantius lytell memorye is lefte in the bretyshe or englishe cronycles / excepte that he receyued of the foresayde Heleyn a sonne named Constantinus/the whyche after for his knyghtly & marcyall dedys, was called Constantyne the great.

But for the noble dedys of so victoryous a duke shuld not be hydde, as was this Cōstantius: therfore I shall now folowe the story of Rome, whych sayth, that for so myche as in the tyme of Diocletianus and Maximianus beynge emperours, many coūtres rebellyd agayne the empyre: therfore the sayde emperoures admyttyd this Constantius, and one Galerius as cesars, whych was a dignyte next of authoryte to the emperours.And so ỳ empyre was at those dayes guyded by two emperours, & by two cesars. This Constātius, as wytnessyth Policronica made subiecte to the empyre the Almaynes, & slewe of theym in one daye.lx. thousande. And after other many victoryous dedys, when the sayde.ii.emperours had of theyr free wylles resygned and gyuen ouer all imperiall dygnyte: thys sayde Constantius with his forenamed felowe Galeri?, were made emperours/ỳ is to wytte Galerius was emperour of all Illiricum, whyche now is named Grecia or Grece wyth all the eest lādes, and Cōstanti? hadde to hym all the west landes. But he helde hym contente wyth Gallia or Fraunce, & Spayne with Britayn/& graunted Italia vnto Galerius afore sayd.Then he subdued the countre of Spayne, as before is touched in the storye of Coelus, and a parte of Gallia/and after soiourned and abode in this lande of Brytayne in guydynge & rulynge the same wyth great soberneſſe, and ordeyned his sonne gotten vpon Heleyn to

layne to rule Gallia and Spayne.

But for to make this story more apparant & open to ỹ readers, and also to ỹ herers: it is here to be noted, that Diocleſianus or Diocleſian beganne his empyre ouer the Romaynes after moſte wryters, in the yere of our lorde two hundred. lxxx. and .vii. and he was emperour .xx. yeres. And this Cõſtantius was ſent into Bryteyne from the ſenate as before is ſayde, in the ſeconde yere of ỹ ſayde Diocleſian, or the yere of oure lorde two hundred .lxxx. and .ix

whyche Conſtancius after he had in due maner ſpedde the nedes of the empyre, as in ſubduynge this land of Bryteyne, as before is ſayde: he retourned agayn to Rome/ where he was ſhortely after made ceſar, and ſo contynued his lyfe, as before ys touchyd.

And in the tyme of his beyng thus ceſar and ruler of Bryteyne vnder ỹ emperour, the bleſſyd and holy prothomartyr of Bryteyn ſaynt Alboon at Uerolan was martyred / in the .x. perſecucyon of the chyrche, as wytneſſyth Policronicon. whyche perſecucyon beganne, as teſtyfye Euſebiꝰ and Beda, the .xviii. yere of the fore named emperours Diocleſian & Maximyan, and endured .x. yeres/ that is to ſay in ỹ eeſt vnder Diocleſian/ and in the weſte vnder Maximyan. The whyche was ſo ſharpe and feruent, that wythin ỹ ſpace of one moneth, in dyuers places of the worlde were .xvii. thouſande holy men and women martyred for Cryſtes fayth. And when the ſayde emperours left or reſygned theyr imperyall dygnyte, and ladde a pryuate lyfe: this ſayde Conſtancius wyth his felowe Galerius, departyd the empyre betwene them, as before is touched/ ſo that he reygned as ruler of Bryteyn by the terme of .xvii. yeres and more or he were emperoure. And after as emperour of the weſte partye of the empyre, and kynge of Bryteyn .xii. yeres and more. And ſo in all ỹ ſayd Cõſtantius reygned ouer Bryteyne xxx. yeres. And laſtely dyed and was buryed at yorke, leuyng after hym ỹ forſayd ſon called Cõſtantiꝰ with out mo that any mẽcyon is made of.

THE .LXVIII. CHAPITER.

COnſtantinus the ſonne of Cõſtancius, and of Heleyne doughter of kynge Coelus, in the yere of our lord .iii. hũdred. & .xix, was made kynge of Bryteyne. Antoninus archbyſhop of Florence, & wryter of hyſtoryes, ſheweth in the fyrſt chapiter of the .ix. tytle of his worke called Sñ Antonini/ that this Cõſtantine was made emperour, or beganne to rule the empyre, in the yere of our lordes incarnacyon .iii. hundred and .ix. which ſayeng alſo affermeth Uyncẽt hiſtoryall and other authours/ wher of the cauſe is ỹ the ſayde authours accõpt not the yeres of the reygne of Conſtancius, but folow the accõpte of Galerius felowe of Conſtancius/ whych reygned as emperour but .iii. yeres. After the which rule yt muſte nedis folowe, that this Conſtantyne began his empyre, as the ſayd Antoninus wytneſſyth/ and folowynge ỹ other accompt yt ſhulde varye.

Then to purſue or contynue ỹ ſtorye of this Conſtantyne/ yt folowethỹ at the tyme of the deceaſe of Conſtancius his fader, he was occupyed in warres in Gallia & thoſe pties. After whoſe deth he by a certayn terme ruled Bryteyne, & the other landes, the whyche his fader before helde in due maner. And all be yt ỹ at ỹ daye he was a myſcreant & pagan: yet he vſed no tyrannyes, nor compelled not the Bryton to refuſe the lawe, and to worſhyppe idollys, as other

tyrauntes at those dayes vsed. In this whyle that Constantyne ruled thus the weste parte of this empyre/ one Maxentius whych was the son of Herculeus Maximian⁹, somtyme felowe in the empyre with Diocleſian as before is shewed / was of the knyghtes of the prætory declared emperour. This Maxentius was there worſte of all men. And as testyfyeth Eusebius & other/ he fyrſt began mekely, to wynne therby loue & fauour. But when he was stablyſſhed in authorite/ he exercyſed all tyrãny, & pursued all cryſtyens wyth all kynde of torment. Also he expulſed and putte out from Rome & all honour hys fader Hercule⁹ Maximian⁹, ẏ entẽdyd agayne to haue ben emperour. Of ẏ tyranny of this Maxẽtius when Cõſtantyne had wyttyng: he aſſembled a great hoſte of Bryton⁹ and Gallis, for to oppreſſe the malyce of the sayde Maxentius.

And for to rule and guyde this lãd of Brytane in his abſence, he deputed and ordeyned a mã of myght called Octauius/ the whych Polycronica nameth duke of Jewelſis, that after were named weſt Saxons. And when the sayde Constantyne had all peparyd for his voyage: he betoke the lande of Brytayne vnto the sayd Octauius, and after spedde hym vpon his iourney. And as he was towarde his sayde iourney, he sawe in his slepe the sygne of the croſſe shynynge in the fyrmament, as yt hadde ben a brennyng lyght of fyre/ and an aungell standynge therby and sayenge: Constantyne toicanata/ which is to meane, Constantyne by this token thou shalte wynne victorye. when he awoke, he called this vyſyon to mynde, and tolde vnto his secretes / by whoſe counſayll he commaunded the sygne of the croſſe to be peynted and set in his baners and penons, and all his knyghtes.

THE .LXIX. CHAPITER.

When Constantyne had thus ordeyned the sygne of the croſſe: he spedde hym forth towarde ẏ sayd tyrante Maxentius/ and mette with hym at a brydge called Ponte Miluium. where after lõge fyght, he chaſyd the sayd Maxentius/ & him with a great parte of his hoſte drowned in the water of the sayde brydge, when he had reygned as emperour vpõ. v. yeres. After which victory thus had: the sayde Constantyne wente vnto Rome / where he was receyued of ẏ senate wyth moſte triumphe. And there cauſed the ſigne of the croſſe to be peynted in the ryght hãdes of the images, whyche the senatours of old tyme had areryd in worſhyp of theyr dyctoryes. And vnder the feet of the images / he cauſyd to be wryten: This is the ſigne and token of the lyuynge god, that maye not be ouercomen.

Soone after this, Constãtyne was conuertyd from his pagan lawe vnto Cryſtes fayth, by vertue of ẏ bleſſed Uernacle as some haue ben / or by the good doctryne of that bleſſyd pope ſaint Silueſter firſt of ẏ name/ the whyche was made pope in ẏ yere folowynge Cryſtes incarnacyon. iii. hundred and .xiii. Then Conſtantyne opened the prysons, and deſtroyed the temples of falſe goddes, and dedycate them in the worſhyppe of god and his sayntes. He alſo opened them that tofore were shytte and kepte cloſe / and cauſyd dyuyne ſeruyce in them to be sayd, and gaue to the chyrche of Rome fyrſte poſſeſſyons. And alſo he ordeyned that ẏ byſſhoppe of Rome ſhulde be hedde of all byſſhoppes, & all other to be obedyent vnto hym. He alſo bare claye

vppon

vppon his shoulders to the foundacyon of saynt Peters chyrch, as wytnessyth Policronica and other.

Of this fyrste indowement of the chyrch are dyuers thynges shewed, as reherseth Gwaldus Cambrens. saynt Hierom, and other/ the whych I ouer passe for lengthynge of tyme of this worke.

And whyle that Constantyne was thus occupyed in Rome: hys moder Heleyne then beyng ferre from hym, and herynge that he was become a Crysten man: sent vnto hym letters of recommendacyon, that he had forsaken the worshyppynge of idollys. But she dyspreysed hym, in that that he worshypped a man that was nayled vppon a crosse. But after receyte of these letters/ he wrote answere to his moder, that he shulde suffycyently proue, that he byleued and worshypped hym, that was fyrste creatour and maker of the worlde. And not onely a man but also god & man, with diuers other poyntes touchyng the fayth, whych I ouerpasse.

For reconynge and profe of thys, was after assygned. vii. score iewes/ and Siluester wyth a certayne nomber of crysten clerkes, to dysputе the artycles of Crystes fayth. where after dyuers myracles shewed, & good profe made by holy scrypture: the sayde iewes were confounded / and the sayde Heleyne was conuerted vnto the fayth of Crystes chyrche / and traueyled soon after to Hierusalem, where she by her industrye and labour fande oute the holy crosse, with the .iii. nayles that oure lorde was nayled wyth to the same crosse. wher of she lefte there a parte / and the other dele was brought vnto Bizancium nowe called Constantyne noble. whyche cytye the sayde Constantyne greatly augmentyd wyth excellent buyldynge / and therin also caused to be areryd a chyrch of meruaylous beautye, & named yt Sophia. when the emperour hadde receyued the foresayd parte of the cros wyth the. iii. nayles: he after some authours put two of the sayde nayles in the brydell of his horse, whych he vsed in batayll. And the thyrde he caste or caused to be caste (as wytnessyth saynt Ambrose) in a swalowe of the see called mare Adriaticū. whych swalowe was before that tyme so perylous, that vnnethes any shyppe escapyd that daunger / and garnysshed the crosse wyth many ryche stones krept wyth golde / and after with great reuerēce conueyde it to Rome, as in dyuerse hystories is declaryd. Then this Cōstantyne remoued the emperyall see vnto his cytye of Constantyne the noble/ and there for the more partye kepte his emperyall honoure, and other emperours in lyke wyse after hym. By reason wherof the emperours were longe after called emperours of Constantyne noble. This man was so myghty & mercyall in his feates and all hys dedys / that for hys more honoure he had an addycyon putte to his name, and was called for his great myght and power, Constantyne the great. He was also the fyrste crysten emperoure/ and dyd many notable actes for the weale of Crystes fayth. Amonge the whyche seuen are noted by the forenamed Antoninus, in the xr. tytle of ỹ second part of his worke before named: wherof the fyrste was that Cryste shulde be worshypped as god thorough the cyty of Rome.

The seconde was, that who so of Jesu Cryste spake any blasphemy, he shulde be greuously punysshed.

The thyrde was, what persone that dyd any iniurye or wronge to a

Cryſten man / he ſhuld be depryued or put to ꝑ loſſe of halfe his goodes. The fourth, that lyke as the emperour of Rome is hede of all tẽporall prynces: ſo the byſhoppe or pope of Rome is hed of all byſhoppes. The fyfte, that what perſone fledde to the chyrche for his ſauegarde or ſuerty/ that there he ſhuld be defended from all peryll and daunger. The ſyxte, that no man ſhuld preſume to buyld any temple or chyrche wythin any cyte or towne, wythout the ſpecyall lycence of his byſhoppe. The ſeuenth, that euery prynce ſhulde gyue the.x. parte of his poſſeſſyons to the buyldyng and meynteynyng of chirches.

The whyche lawe he fyrſte executed/ and after wyth a pykax or mattoke with his owne hande, brake the groũde where as now ſtandeth ſaint Peters chyrche. and .xii. cophyns or treys full of erth he bare away vpon his ſhulders/ as wytneſſyth the fore ſayde Antoninus and other.

But after thoſe manyfolde good dedys/ he fyll into the hereſye called Ariannys hereſy. By meane wherof he was ſo blynded, that he then became an enymye to Criſtes chyrch, & ꝑſecuted cryſtẽ men, & exyled ꝑ pope Silueſter/or as ſome meane ꝑ ſayde Silueſter fledde the cyte for fere.

For this as wytneſſyth Jacobus Philippus and other wryters / this Conſtantyne was ſmyten wyth the euyll of lepry. For curynge wherof iii.thouſand chyldern were brought to thẽperours paleys to be ſlayne, ꝑ he in the blood of them myght be bathed, and ſo cleſyd of his lepry. But when he ſaw the childern and the moders ſorowyng for them, he was moued wyth pyty, and ſayd: the dygnitye of thẽpyre cometh of myldneſſe. For yt is demyd, that he ſhuld dye ꝑ ſleeth a chyld in batayll. Then what crueltye were this to ſle ſo many innocentes wylfully? yet bettet yt were to vs to dye and ſaue thoſe chylders lyues/then to gette a cruell lyfe by ꝑ deth of ſo many innocentes.

For this myldneſſe it is redde that ſaynt Peter and Poule apperyd to hym the nyght folowynge, warnyng hym to ſende agayne for Silueſtre ꝑ pope, and he ſhulde be by hym reſtoryd to perfytte helthe. whyche was done, and he heled as the legende of ſayntes bereth wytneſſe.

Thus haue I ſhewed to you a part of the dedys of Conſtantyne/whych yf I ſhulde cõtynue the hole proceſſe of his reygne, that endured as emperoure by the ſpace of.xxx. yeres: I ſhulde therof make a large volume. But it concernyth nothynge of thentent of this worke, as touchynge the lande of Brytayne: therfore I woll retourne my ſtyle to Octauius from whom I haue made a lõg digreſſyõ.

THE .LXX. CHAPITER.

In this paſſetyme whyle Conſtantyne occupyed hym in nedes of thempyre as aboue is ſhewed: Octauius beynge lieutenant in the lande of Brytayne vnder Conſtantyne, ruled the lande to the pleaſure of the Brytons a certayne of tyme. But when he perceyued that he was in fauoure of them, and that Conſtantyne was farre from hym / caſtynge alſo in his mynde, that ꝑ ſayd Conſtantyne beyng then emperour, wold or myght not lyghtly retourne into Britayn: he therfore with helpe of his affynyte and frẽdes, withſtode the Romaynes lefte in Brytayne of Conſtantyne/ and vſurpyd the rule & dompynyon of ꝑ lande. wherof whẽ certayntie came to ꝑ knowlege of Cõſtantyne: he in all haſt ſent into Brytayne a duke named Traherin, the whyche was vncle vnto Heleyne moder of Conſtantyne. when this Traherin was arryued in Brytayne with iii.thou

iii. legions of knyghtes: anon Octauius made towarde hym wyth hys Brytons / and wyth hym mette nere the cytye, then called Kaerperis, now called Porte chestre or Porchestre / but more verely in a felde nere vnto the cytye of Kaerguent, that now ys called wynchester / whych felde then was named Maesurian. The. ii. hostes mette wyth great ire, and fought ten longe whyle. But in ỹ ende Traherñ was compelled to forsake the felde / and after drewe wyth his Romaynes towarde Albania or Scotlande. wherof Octauius beyng warned, folowed hym / and in the countre of westmerlande gaue vnto hym the seconde batayll, where then Octauius was chasyd & Traherñ was vyctour / the whych pursued Octauius so egerly, that he cõpelled hym to forsake the lande of Britayne, and to sayle into the countre of Norway for his sauegarde.

But yt was not longe after, that the sayde Octauius gaderyd a newe people of Brytons & Norways, and was redy to retourne agayn into Britayne. In whych tyme, as testyfyeth myne authour Gaufryde / an erle of Brytayne that entyerly loued Octauius, by treason slewe the sayd Traherñ a lytell before the landynge of the sayde Octauius. whyche shortly subdued the Romaynes and ỹ lande to his owne vse. This shuld be after moste concordaunce of wryters, whẽ Constantyne wyth also the ayde of Traherñ, hadde ruled this lande of Brytayne by the terme of. x. yeres.

THE .LXXI. CHAPITER.

Octauy duke of ỹ Jessis, otherwyse westsaxons / beganne his reygne ouer the Brytons, in the yere of our lorde. iii. hundred. xxix. This in the englyshe boke is called Octauian / the whych as testyfyeth Gaufryde, gaderyd in shorte whyle after so great plentye of treasoure and ryches, that he feryd no man / and ruled this lande in peasyble wyse. So that of hym or of his actes is left lytell memorye / excepte that when he was fallen into age, by the counsayll of Brytons he sent vnto Rome for a noble ponge man of the alye of Heleyne, moder vnto Constantyne called Maximian, as after more playnly shalbe shewed: all be yt that some adupsed hym to make one Conan Meryadok his cosyne, kynge after hym. But by the instãt labour of Caradok then duke of Cornewayll / Octauius lastly sent vnto Rome Maurice the sonne of the forenamed Caradok / to bryngе or conuey the sayd Maximianus into Brytayne, for to mary the onely doughter of Octauius / and by reason therof, to enioy ỹ realme of Brytayne. This Maximian is of some auctour named Maximius / the whych as wytnessyth Gaufride, was the sonne of Leonyne, brother to Heleyne, and vncle vnto Cõstantyne the great. whych sayngе affermeth also Jacobus Philipp authour of a boke called Supplementum cronicarum / wherin he nameth the sayde Maximianus a knyght of the Bryton blood.

Then it foloweth, when the forenamed Maurice had spedde his nedes, so ỹ he came to the presence of Maximian, & shewed the effecte of his message: the sayd Maximianus to hym graunted, & in all haste prepared for his voyage into Brytayne / & shortly after with cõuenient cũpany landed at Southampton. wherof beynge warned Conan Meryadok: he wyth a certayne of knyghtes of his affinyte, was purposed to haue frayed with the sayd Maximian, & to haue destressed hym / for so mych as he wel knewe, that by hym he shuld be put from the rule of the lande. But thys

purpose was let by the commaundement of the kynge or otherwyse, so ỹ the sayd Maximianus was cõueyed safely to the kynges presence, & shortly after wyth consent of the more parte of his lordes, gaue his doughter vnto the sayde Maximianus wyth possessyon of this yle of Bretayne. The whyche mariage solemnysed & endyd, the sayde Octauiꝰ dyed shortly after. But howe long he reygned, none of the foresayde authours testyfye/ excepte dyuers of them agre, ỹ he contynued his reygne tyll ỹ tyme that Gracyan and Valentynyan ruled the empyre/ the whyche beganne to reygne the yere of our lorde. iii. hũdred .lxxx. and .ii. By whyche reason yt muste folowe, that the sayd Octauius reygned at the leest .liiii. yeres.

THE .LXXII. CHAPITER.

MAximianꝰ or Maximiꝰ ỹ son of Leonine & colyn Germayn of Constantyne the great/ was made kynge of Bryton, in the yere of oure lorde .iii. hundred .lxxx. and .ii. Thys in the englyshe boke is named Maximian/ the whych as testyfyeth Gaufryde and other, was stalworth and myghty of his handes.

But for he was cruell and pursued sondele the cristen: he therfore of all wryters is called Maximianꝰ the tyrant. Attwene this & Conan before named, was stryfe and debate / and dyuers conflyctes attwene thẽ was foughten, in the whyche eyther of them spedde dyuersly / all be yt that lastely they were made frendes. So that Maximianꝰ reygned a season in quyete, and gaderyd rychesse, & treasour not all wyth out grudge. Lastely he was moued & exyted to warre vpon the Galles/ thorow whych coũcell he wyth a great hoste of Brytõs sayled into Armorica that now is called lytell Bretayne/ and bare hym so knyghtly, that he subdued that countre vnto his lordshyp / & after gaue the sayde countre to Conan Meryadok, to hold of hym and of the kynge of great Bretayn for euer. And then commaunded the sayde lande to be called lytell Bretayne.

For this victory his knyghtes proclamed hym emperour. where thorough he beynge the more exaltyd in pryde/ passed farther in the landes of the empyre, & victoryously subdued a great parte of Gallia or Fraunce, and all Germania. For thys dede / dyuers authours accompt hym false and periuryd. wherfore yt shulde seme that before his departynge frõ Rome, he was sworne vnto Gracian and Valentynyane emperours, that he shuld neuer after clayme any part of the empyre. And also for the breakynge of this othe/ he was after chalengyd or blamed of saynt Martyne byshop of Turon. To whom he answered that he was compelled of his knyghtes to take vppon hym as emperour/ or ellys he shuld of thẽ haue ben slayne. Neuertheless the sayde byshoppe shewed vnto hym, that for his vntrouth he shuld not longe prospere or reygne.

After that worde was brought vnto the emperours, that Maximianꝰ had wyth harde bataylles thus subdued Gallia and Germania: Gracianꝰ wyth a great hoste came down to resyste hym. But when he harde of ỹ marciall dedes of Maximianꝰ/ he was a drade and fled backe to the cityе of Lugdun or Lyõs in Fraũce. where after the sayde Gracianꝰ was slayne/ and his brother Valentinian was compelled to flee to Constantyne the noble. Then Maximianꝰ to haue the more strength to wythstãde his enimyes: made his sonne named Victour felowe of the emperour. In

this

this whyle that Maximian warred thus in Italy: Conan Meryadoke, to whom as before is sayde Maximian had gyuen the land of lytell Bry tayne/for so mych as he & his knyghtes had no wyll to mary the doughters of Frenschmen, but rather to haue wyues of theyr owne blood: therfore this Conan sent messagers vnto Dionotus then duke of Corne wayll, and chyfe ruler of Bry tayne/ wyllynge hym to sende his doughter Ursula wyth a certayne nomber of virgyns, to be coupled to hym & to his knightes in maryage. The which soone after prepared accordyng ỳ request of Conan, the forsayd Ursula accõpanyed wyth .xi. thousande vyrgyns, and were sent by her sayde father to warde lytell Bry tayne/ as wit nesseth the englysshe cronycle, Gaufryde, and also Policronica.

But yt shuld appere by the sayeng of Antoninus, Jacob Philippus, and other wryters/ that this Ursula with her company shulde not be sent forth of mych Bry tayne, nor maryed aboute this tyme/ but in the tyme of Marcianus beynge emperoure/ the whyche began his empyre after most accorde of wryters, in the yere of our lord .iiii. hundred & .li. Of the martyrdome of these maydens dyuers authours wryte dyuersly. wherfore I rempyte them that wyll haue farther vnderstãdyng in this mater, vnto ỳ legende of sayncts redde yerely in the chyrche, where they maye be sufficyently taught and enformed.

THE .LXXIII. CHAPITER.

AND as before is shewed Maximian beynge occupyed in warres in Italy: two dukes named Gwanus, and Melga/ the whych as Gaufryde testifyeth and other, were sent from Gracian and Valentinian emperours, to punysshe and subdue the Brytons that fauoured the party of Maximian/ warred sore vpon the costes of great Bry tayne, and occupyed a great parte of Albania. wherof when Maximian had knowlege/ he sente into great Bry tayne a knyght and captayn named Gracianus or Gracyan. The whyche wyth two legyons of knyghtes bare hym so knyghtly / that in shorte processe he chasyd the sayd .ii. dukes into Irlande/ & held the lande of Bry tayne in good peace to the behalfe of Maximianus.

In this whyle Maximian contynuyng his warre agayn the empyre/ & entendynge to be emperour: Theodocius named the elder then emperour of the eest parte of the world, herynge of the deth of Gracyan, & chasynge of Valentynyan, wyth a great power spedde hym towarde the sayd Maximian. And shortely after at a cytye in Italy named Aquilia/ toke the sayde Maximian, and hym behedded. when knowlege of the deth of Maximian was comen to Gracyan, that then had the rule of mych Bry tayn: he sesyd the land & made hym selfe by strength kynge of Bry tayne/ whē or after that Maximian had gouerned the same, by most accorde of wryters by the space of .viii. yeres.

THE .LXXIIII. CHAPITER.

OF Racianus the whych of Gaufryde is called Municeps, ỳ maye be taken for an hyred or waged knyght, or for ỳ keper of gyftes, or berynge the chyef rule of a cytye: beganne to rule the Brytons, in the yere of oure lorde .iii. hundred .lxxx. & x. The whych exercysyd all tyranny and exaccyon vppon his subiectes/ for the which he was had in wonder full hatered amonge the Brytons/

and amonge them cast and sought many wayes and meanes for hys destruccyon/ but he by dyuers meanes escapyd theyr daungers, and punysshed greuously all suche sautours. wherfore lastly as sayth Gaufryde they fyll vpon hym of an hole assent and kylled hym/when he had reygned or more verely vsurped by the terme of.iiii.yeres.

THE.IXXV. CHAPITER.

After that Gracian was thus slayne of the Brytons/the forsayd Gwanus and Melga knowynge the Brytons to be wythout hed or ruler: assembled also people and retourned into mych Brytayne/ wastynge and brennynge on euery syde, and destroyed greate plenty of Brytons, as wytnessyth Gaufryde and other.

But Policronica sayth that whan the Romayns knewe of the deth of Gracyan/they sent a knyght called Constantyne to haue the rule of Brytayne and other countrees there about. But he was after demed an enemye to the empyre, for harme and scathes by hym done in Fraunce. wherfore by commaundement of Honorius then emperour/a knyght or erle called Constancius was sente agayne the forenamed Constantine/ and slewe hym at a place or towne called Arelet. After thys the Brytõs were agayne vexed by the Pictes & other straunge nacyons. By reason wherof they were cõstrained to sende agayne to Rome: requyrynge them of ayde, vppon condycyon that they shuld alway be subiecte vnto Rome. The whyche request and promesse thus herde of the senate: Honorius aforenamed was sent into Britayne wyth a legyon of knyghtes/whyche is.vi.thousande.vi. houndred.lxvi. The which legyon with helpe of the Brytons/chasyd ỹ forsayde Pictes and other enemyes/and taughte the Brytõs to make a walle ouerthwart the lande from see to see/that ys to meane from the water of Humber to the Scottyshe see, and ordeyned thẽ wardeynes and kepars of the wall/ and after retourned to Rome. Thys wall as testyfyeth Policronica, was made of turuys/and strechyd from Pemiltoñ or Penultoñ, vnto ỹ citye of Acliut or Acliud. But for thys wall was of small strength: the enemyes before named dystroyed certayne partyes of this sayd wall, and ouerrode the countre, and toke grete prayes dayly, & dyd as myche harme as they had done before tyme. wherfore the Brytons were constrayned to seke for newe socour to the Romayns. Then dyd Foloaynes sende an other legion/the whyche agayne chased the sayd Pictes and other enemyes/and made than a wall of stone of the thyckenesse of.viii.fote, and in heyght.xii. fote, in the selfe place where before Seuerus had made a dyke and wall of turfes. And ỹ done the Romaynes comforted and exorted the Brytons to be manly and corageous to wythstande theyr enemyes/shewyng to them forther that they shuld truste to theyr owne strengthe, for so myche as the Romayns beynge so ferre from thẽ, myght not lyghtly come from so ferre wyth an armye of knyghtes/& also not wythout great coste and trauayle. After whyche monycyon and exortacyon thus gyuen to the Brytons, by the mouth of the archebyshop of London, wyth other instruccyons apperteynynge to the feytes of warre: the sayde Romaynes toke leue of ỹ Brytons, as though they shulde after ỹ tyme no more retourne ito Britayne

But it was not longe after that the Romayns were thus departyd/that the Pictes

the Pictes and Scottes beganne to breke out of theyr dēnes and caues. These two nacyons after some authours, shulde seme to be one. But by the declaracion of Ranulphe in his .lviii. chappter of his fyrste boke, they shulde appere to be two maner of peoples/ or at the last dwelyd in twoo sondry countres. As the Pictes in the northsyde of Scotlād, or after Beda in ẏ southsyde, whiche conteyneth Galeway and Lodeway. And the Scottes by ledyng of theyr duke Reuda shulde possede Irland: all be yt after an arme of the northe parte of the see passynge by Deyra, shuld departe the Pictes. But in the tyme that ẏ Sarōs ruled the lande/ ẏ Scottes by maner of treason slew the mighty men and rulers of the Pictes/ and so after kepte that countre for theyr owne. These two nacyons dyscorde in maners, but not in clothynge & in fayth, and in couetyse of the shedynge of mannes blood, they be one.

Then as before is sayde, these Pictes and Scottes entred the lande, and brake ẏ walle before made, and slewe the wardeyns therof/ and after spoyled and robbed the coūtres, and chased so cruelly the commons and other, that they were comfortlesse. By meane wherof the Britons were brought in suche daunger and myserye/ that eyther of them robbed and slewe other. And ouer this ẏ groūde was vntylled and vnsowen/ wherof ensued great scarcytye and hunger: and after hunger ensued deth.

Thus after one mychyef came an other/as deth vpon deth, and sorow vpon sorow, whych fyll vpō them by stryke medlyd wyth the great hūger. The whych mysery in this wyse cōtynuynge the chyef of them toke aduyse amonge them selfe/ and fynally concludyd that for remedye of this myschyef, they wolde sende vnto Aecius then beynge kynge in Fraunce. whyche Aecius was mayster of the chyualry of Honori⁹ then emperour, and occupyed in warres in a parte of Gallia. To this Aecius was sent writyng, wherof theffecte was this. To thy manhode Aecius be it vnderstanden the mysery of the Brytons/ the whyche straunge nacyons chase vnto the see/ and the see dryueth vs agayne to straunge nacyons. Of the which ensew two maner of carayns/ ẏ one by violēce of ẏ enemyes swerd, and that other by wilfull drownyng. But all theyr wrytynge was but in vayne/so that from the sayd Aecius, nor yet from the Romaynes, hadde they no refuge nor comfort. In this whyle the hunger encreased/and the people were so ouerset with theyr enmyes, that many of thē were as yolden & toke partye agayne theyr owne neyghbours. And ẏ other that were of more power, and dwelled farther wythin the lande/ defendyd them in theyr beste maner. Lastely the noble and wyseste of them/ and specyally ẏ archbyshop of London wyth other of the lande, kepte a counsayll at Lō don. By the whyche yt was concludyd ẏ an embassade shulde be made vnto the kynge of lytell Brytayne, to impetre and aske of hym ayde and comforte in theyr great necessyte. Of whyche ambassade the sayde archebyshop was appoynted for the chyef and pryncypall/the whych is named of Gaufryde Guethelinus/ and of ẏ englyshe cronycle Gosseleyne. which sayde byshoppe wyth the other vnto hym assygned, so spedde them, that in shorte and conuenyent tyme they came vnto the presence of Aldroen⁹ then kynge of lytell Brytayn/and to hym declaryd the effecte of theyr message. The whyche hauynge compassyon of the lamentable requeste made vnto hym

vnto hym by the sayde ambassade/ after aduyse taken of hys lordes, he graũted vnto the bysshop, vppon condycyon that yf god sent to them victory of theyr enemyes, that they shulde crowne hys brother kynge of greate Bretayne/the whyche he entendyd to sende thyder wyth a conuenyent armye. whyche condycyon the sayde bysshoppe wyth the other gladly acceptyd & fermely graũted.

So that thus it is apparant vnto you, that this lande was longe with out hedde or gouernoure / whyche length of tyme is of some authours determyned to be longe, and of some but shorte / so that lytell certentye is therof lefte.

wherfore I haue shewed and dyuen certayne reasons after myne oppynyon and dull mynde, in the table before expressed/ wherin it shall appere vnder correccyon, that the sayd season and tyme of this land beynge without kynge, to rekyn from the laste yere of Gracian vnto the fyrste yere of Constantyne nowe next ensuynge, was fully .xxxix. yere.

FINIT TRIBVTVM.

YE shall also forthermore vnderstande, that here endeth fynally ꝑ trybute and dompnyon of the Romaynes. For after thys daye they had no trybute to them payed / nor no Romayn prynce after this dayes ruled thys lande of Bretayne. The whyche trybute and dompnyon endured from the .ix. yere of Cassybellan, vnto the tyme of Seuerus by the terme of two houndred and .lv. yeres. And from the tyme of Seuerus vnto the fyrste yere of Gracyan a houndred .lxxx. and .iii. yeres. And from the fyrst yere of Gracyan vnto the laste yere of thys mysery .xliii. yeres. So that from the yere that Julius Cesar made fyrste thys Ile of Bretayne trybutary vnto the empyre/ vnto the last yere or ende of thys forsayd misery, flowyd .iiii. houndred .xxxi. yeres. But Polycronyca sayth that the Romaynes ruled and had trybute of this lande about .iiii. houndred .lxx. yeres. whyche sayeng is full lyke to be true, yf the ende of theyr dominyon be determyned at ꝑ laste departyng of the Romayns out of thys lande.

AND thus here an ende of the iiii. parte of thys worke / for so myche as the fornamed Gracian ꝑ was the laste of Romayne kynges ꝑ reygned in myche Bretayne/or that no trybute was after this day payed vnto the Romaynes.

wherfore in gyuynge thankes to that moste blessyd byrgyne our lady sayncte Mary, for the good exployte and spede had to thys tyme, and to opteyne her moste habundaũt grace for the perfourmaunce of the reste or other dele of the same: I here with all humblenesse salute her wyth the iiii. ioye of the forenamed vii. ioyes, the which begynneth,

Gaude nexu voluntatis. &c.

O excellent prynceſſe and quene celeſtyall/
Be ioyous and glad, for thou eternally
By knot of charyte, and dygnyte pryncypall
Art to the hyghest ioyned celeſtyally
That thou may impetre, what is neceſſary
For thy ſeruauntes, thou virgyn moſte pure
Of thy ſwetteſte Jheſu, and optayne it ſure.

Thys .iiii. parte to be accompted from ꝑ fyrste yere of Seuerus, vnto the last ende or yere of thys mysery: includeth of yeres .CC. and .xxvi.

Thus endeth the fourth parte.

THE FYFT PARTE.

THE .LXXVI. CHAPITER.



Ere accordynge to the promyse made by me in ỳ begynnynge of thys worke: I shall bryng in ꝛ shewe vnto you the begynnynge of the reygne of ỳ kinges of Fraũce/ and set them in suche a direct order, that it shalbe apparant to the reder, that it shalbe certaynly knowē what kyng reygned in Fraũce whan such a kyng reygned in Englande. And also I shall somdele touche the actes and dedys of the sayde kynges of Fraunce/so ỳ the cronycles of bothe realmes shall in this worke appere, and the names of the prynces which at ones reygned in Englande and in Fraunce.

Then for the perfourmaũce of the same, fyrste is to be noted, that after the subuercyon of Troye by the Grekes (as in ỳ begynnyng of this work is shewyd) dyuers Troyans beyng vnder the rule of nobles of the same lygnage, as Helenus sonne of Pryamus, Eneas, Anthenorus, ꝛ other/ serchyd ỳ worlde ꝛ landyd in dyuers coũtrees. As Helen⁹ in Grece or Grecia/Eneas in Italia or Italy/ꝛ so of other amōg. The whych nobles one named Turchus, ꝛ an other named Franco cosyn Germayns/as Turchus the sonne of Troylus, ꝛ Frāco or Francio the sonne of Ector/which sayd two cosyns serchyng theyr aduenture: after many ꝛ dyuers daungers ꝛ ieopardyes passyd by the see, lastly landed in a coũtre called Tracca or Tracia in Grece. And there wyth theyr cōpany enhabyted them nere vnto a ryuer called Dion. And after they hadde contynued there a season of tyme: Turchus departed wyth a certayne of Troyans frō hys sayd cosyn Francio/and sayled after into a countre called Faso the lesse. where he wyth hys people dwelled longe tyme. whyche Faso shulde be in the countre of Sithia. Of thys Turchus dyscendyd as sayth ỳ Frēche cronycle. iiii. maner of people. That is to saye, Austrogothis, Ispogothis, wandalis, and Normans. And Frācio or Frāco remoued after wyth hys company into a countree named Pannoma/whyche countree now shuld seme to be a parte of Hungery or ioynynge nere to it. There nere vnto a ryuer called Thanais they buylded them a cytye, and named it Sicambria/by reason wherof they were longe after called Sicambri. They were also named Franci, as sayth the Frenche cronycle, after thys man Francio. Turpinus that wrote the gestes of the greate Charles/ sayth that whan Charles hadde made the countre of Spayne subiecte, and was retourned into Fraunce: he made all the bonde mē dwellynge aboute or nere vnto Paris or in all Gallia tre, in the wourshyppe of sayntе Denis and of sayntе Jamys of Galis/ vppon condycyon that they shulde yerely offre foure pence to thys worke of sayntе Denis churche. By reason wherof they were named Franci, as men freed that to fore were bond. Policronica saith they were named Franci of Valentynyan the emperour, as it were for fyerfnes. But how so euer they came by that name they were called Franci as Frenschemen.

This sayd peple were also named long tyme Galli/ꝛ were trybutaries to Rome ꝛ vnder theyr rule, tyll the tyme

tyme of Valentinyan emperour, a-boute the yere of Cryste. iii. houndreth & .lxvi. Thys Valentinyan haupnge the rule of the west parte of ỹ worlde made warre vppon a people called Alleynys, that dwelled nere vnto the forenamed Gallis. These Alleynys were egre of fyghte/ and ouer ỹ they were so closyd wyth kennys & marrys, that the Romaynes myghte not wynne to them by force/ wherof they often rebellyd agayne the empyre. wherfore in the ende Valentinyan consyderynge the fyersnes of ỹ Gallis, wyth theyr nere dwellynge vnto the sayd Alleynys / couenaũted with them yf they wolde subdue the sayde people, they shulde haue releace of .x. yeres trybute. whyche couenaũt well and suffycyently confermed to the Gallis/ they in shorte whyle after by theyr knyghthode and polycy, subdued or vtterly chased the sayd Alleynys. For the whyche dede they contynued the foresayde .x. yeres wythout payenge of any trybute. whyche .x. yeres ronne and expyred/ ỹ Romaynes agayn claymed the former accustomed trybute. To whom it was answered, ỹ they had redemed the sayd tribute with the price of theyr blood, and ought not any more to be charged with any suche trybute.

wyth whych answere the Romaynes beynge sore dyscontentyd/ made newe warre vpon ỹ sayd Sicãbris. Of whyche warre the Sicambris or Gallis had the worse, and were chasyd from theyr citye of Sicambria. Then as wytnessyth Polycronica & other, they drewe nere vnto the water of Ryne/ and grewe in shorte proces to suche a multytude & of suche strength, that they in shorte whyle after by ledynge of theyr .iii. dukes named Marcomirus, Somom⁹ or Symon, and Genebaur/ warred vpon the landes of the empyre, & such as were subiecte vnto ỹ same. wherof Theodosius surnamed the ponger then emperour beynge warned: he anone sente .ii. of his dukes wyth a greate hoste for to subdue the sayde Gallis or Sicambris. But they defendyd them so knyghtly, ỹ the sayde dukes were chasyd/ and as wytnessyth mayster Robert Gagwyne, a greate nomber of the Romaynes were slayne.

THE .LXXVII. CHAPITER.

After this victory thus optey ned by the Sicambris: they wared so stronge that they wan from the Almaynes dyuers townes and stronge holdes wythin Germama. And after that they opteyned the famous cytye named Treueris/ which as wytnessyth the aucthour of Cronica cronicarum, was fyrst foundyd in the tyme of the patryarche Abra ham, before the incarnacyõ of Cryst a thousande .ix. houndred. lxv. yeres. And so dayly wan vpon the nacyõs adioynynge to them, tyll they came to the ryuer of Seyn/ where they restyd them, and buylded the countre all there about. In so mych that they than named them selfe Franci / as men freed and out of all daunger of the empyre of Rome/ and theyr land after them they named Fraunce, whyche syns that tyme is greatly encreasyd. So that at this daye it is a countre of great welth & honoure, and conteyneth many prouynces & lordshyppes/ as after the affyrmaũs of Policronica is touchyd in ỹ .xxvii. chappter of hys fyrste boke/ where it is shewed that Gallia which now is Fraunce, had that name Gallia of whyteneſſe of people. Thys Gallia or Fraunce hath in the North syde, Germania/ in the East, the ryuer of Ryne/ in the Southest, the Alpis or the hyghe mountaynes / and in the west,

west, the see Occean, whyche is called both Brytannicum and Gallicū, whyche is to meane, Englysshe see & Frenche see. For yt departyth Englande and Fraunce, in the south see of myddell eerth, ỳ wasshyth about by the the prouynce of Narbon. In the tyme of Julius Cesar, Gallia was departed in thre/ but for diuers happes that befell after in that land/ the countre and land that stretcheth from the Ryne to Seyn̄, is now called Gallia Belgica, whyche is very Fraunce. And that countre that stretcheth from Seyn̄ to ỳ ryuer of Leyr, is called Gallia Lugdunensis/ wher of the ouer parte hyght or is named Burgundia that is Burgoyne, and the nether parte is Nestria or Normandye.

And the countre that stretcheth frō the ryuer of Leyr to the ryuer of Geround, is called Gallia Aquitania/ whych is Guyan, and stretcheth out of the eest from the riuer of Rooñ, vn to the west Occean. wherof the ouer parte therof hyght Celtica, whyche is to meane Heuenly, because that hyghe mountaynes be therin.

From the water of Gerounde to the see of middell eerth, and to the Mountaynes called mōtes Pireni or great hylles of Spayne/ is cleppd Gallia Narbonensis. And now a parte ther of is called Gothia, and some Uascōnia, whyche is to meane Galcoyne.

And so Gallia is closyd aboute wyth thre noble waters/ wyth the ryuer of Ryne in the north syde / wyth the ryuer of Roone in the eest / and wyth the Brytysshe occean in ỳ weste. In Gallia or Fraunce ben many noble cytyes, wherof Parys is hed and pryncypall/ whyche in the fyrst foundacyon was cleppd Pazydes, after Parides a Troyane, that departed from Troy wyth Eneas and other, as wytnessyth Carinus and other wryters of hystories. But the frenche cronycle sayth it was fyrst foūded by ỳ Sycambris, and named by them Lutecia, before the incarnacyon of Cryste .iii. hundred .lxx. and .xv. yeres. And in the whyle that the forenamed Marcomyrus was as there chyefe hedde and gouernour: for the more beauty of the name/ and also in mynde of Paris sonne of Pryame kynge of Troye, of the whych he was lynyally descendyd, he therfore chaunged the name, and commaunded yt to be called Paris.

In Gallia also be these prouynces and lordshyppes folowynge / Brabant, Flaundres, Normandye, Picardye, Brytayn the lesse, Poytowe, Galcoyne, Guyan, Tolowse, Burgoyne, Angeo, and Mayne, Prouynce, Champayne, and Aluerne. All whyche sygnouries and lordeshippes belonged or apperteyned vn to the crowne of Fraunce / all be yt that dyuers of theym hath ben gyuen oute by maryage or otherwyse. So that the kynge of Fraunce claymeth to be chyef lorde of theym, and at this daye hath the possessyon of them/ excepte Burgoyne, Flaundres Braban, and Normandye / for the whyche he is trybutarye vnto the kynge of Englande.

Then yt folowyth, when the sayde Gallis or Frenchmen hadde thus cōquered these forsayde countres, or the more parte of theym, or at leste made theym vnto the sayde Gallis trybutary: then the forenamed Marcomyrus as theyr chyef hedde or gouernour, closyd cytyes wyth stronge walles, and buylded stronge holdes and castelles/ and after dyed, leuyng after hym a sonne garnysshed wyth all knyghtly vertue, named Pharamundus or Pharamonde.

Francia.

THE.LXXVIII. CHAPITER.

PHaramund⁹ the ſon of Marcomyrus beforenamed / was after the deth of his ſaid fader, made or ordeyned the fyrſt kyng of Frenchmen, by the agrement of hyſtoryes/ & alſo as affermeth mayſter Robert Gagwyne and other, in the yere of our lordes incarnacion foure hūdred and.xx. And of the worlde, or after ꝑ creacyon of the fyrſte Adam folowynge the accompte of thys worke, as before is ſhewed, fyue thouſande vi.hundred and.xix. After Brute beganne his domynyon in thys yle of Brytayne, a thouſande, fyue hūdred and.lvi. And the yere of myſery of the Brytons.xxvi.

Of this Pharamundus is lytell thynge lefte in memory/ excepte that myne authoure Gagwyne teſtyfyeth, that he made certayne lawes whyche longe tyme endured after. But for the names of the lawes and vſe of them be derke to englyſhe vnderſtandynge: therfore I ouerpaſſe theym, and folowe the ſtory / whych affermeth, that when the ſayde Pharamonde hadde ruled the Frenchmē well and nobly by the ſpace of.xi. yeres, he dyed / and lefte after hym a ſonne named Clodio Crinitus or Capellatus.

THE.LXXIX. CHAPITER.

CLodio ꝑ ſon of Pharamonde was made kyng of Fraunce, in the yere of our lorde.iiii. hūdred & xxxi. And the .xxxvii. yere of the fore ſayd myſery of Brytons. The which as before is ſayd was ſurnamed Crinitus and Capellat⁹/ by reaſon wher of the kynges of Frenchmen longe tyme after, were called Criniti. This to augment hys lordſhyppe, made warre vpon a people called Turynges/ and by great & ſore fyght made them at lēgth ſubiecte to hym/ which countre as ſayth the frēche cronycle, is a parte of Almayne. And at thys daye or tyme of this Clodio his reygne/ the Romaynes had no more of the land of Gallia or Fraūce in theyr rule, then that whyche lyeth from ꝑ ryuer of Leyr vnto ꝑ ryuer of Ryne, whyche is called Gallia Lugdunenſis. And when he hadde thus ſubdued the Turynges/ he then ſent his eſpyes ouer the Ryne to ſe what ſtrength they were of, that inhabyted that countre. And after reporte to hym brought of the ſayde eſpyes, that the countre was fertyll and ryche, and the people therof but of ſmall defence: he with his army ouerſpred the countre/ and after ſhortely beſeged the cytyes of Cambrey, and Turney and them wanne. But in ꝑ cytye of Turney was a certayn nombre of Romaynes/ whyche manfully defendyd the towne longe tyme. And when they perceyued that they myght no lenger holde the towne/ they then manfully iſſued out, and gaue to the Frenchmen harde batayll. But fortune was to theym frowarde/ ſo that they were dyſtreſſyd. After whyche countres and townes thus goten by Clodio, wyth other vyctoryous dedes by hym done: he laſtely dyed, when he had ruled the frēchmen.xix. yeres wythout iſſue of his body.

Anglia.

NOwe then lette vs retourne vnto tharchbyſhop of Lōdon and the other Brytons beyng in Britayne the leſſe/ the whych vppon the prompſe before reherſed, receyued of Albroenus kynge of lytell Brytayne, his brother named Conſtantyne/ ꝑ whych wyth a certayne nombre of knyghtes ſhortly after lāded at Totneſſe in mych Brytayne, & gaderyd to them the floure of ꝑ Brytōs whyche

whyche before theyre landynge were hydde in dyuerse places of the lande. By whose power & marcyall knyght hod/ the enymyes of the lande were shedfully chasyd and vtterly cõfoun ded. whyche victorye thus by the Britõs obteyned: they of one mynde conueyde theyr chefetayne Constan tyne vnto the towne of Kaercegent nowe called Cicestre/and there crow ned hym (accordynge to the pro myse made vnto his brother) kynge of this yle of the more Brytayne.

THE .LXXX. CHAPITER.

Constantinus the brother of Aldroe nus kynge of lytell Brytayn, was crowned kyng of myche Brytayne, in the yere of oure lorde foure hun dred and .xxxiii/ and the thyrde yere of Clodio then kynge of Fraunce. The whyche guyded the lande with suche manhode and polyce, that he kepte yt from daunger of enymyes/ and for tyme of hys lyfe helde yt in god quyete & reste. Of thys Cõstan tyne is lytell mynde made or lefte in wrytynge / excepte that he receyuyd of his wyfe thre sonnes / the whyche he named Constante, Aurely, or Cõ stantius, Aurelius, Ambrosius, and Uter, whyche was surnamed Pen dragon.

But for he sawe and perceyuyd, that his eldest sonne named Constãt was dull and insolent of wytte: he therfore made hym a monke in the monasterye of saynte Amphyabyll of wynchester / whyche monasterye at this daye is called saynte Suy thynes abbey. And to the other two bretherne he betoke vnto Guethe linus archbyshoppe, to norysshe and brynge forth.

In the courte of this Cõstantyne, as witnesseth Gaufryde, was a Pict that was myche loued and greatly fauouryd of Constantyne/ so that he myghte at all tymes come to the kynges presence. The whyche be yng an erraunt traytoure/and sechynge conuenyent tyme to execute his detestable treason: by a secrete meane slewe the kynge in his chamber/when he hadde ben kyng, after moste wryters tenne yeres.

THE .LXXXI. CHAPITER.

Constantius sonne of Con stantyne, by meane of Uortigernus was made kynge of Bry tayne, in the yere of our lorde foure hundred and .xliii. This as before is touched, for so myche as his fader thought he was not very apt to take so great a charge as to gouerne the lande after hym, became a relygious man in the monastery before named. Or as some wryters meane, the sayd Constante of pure deuocyon that he hadde to god and saynt Amphyabyl, made hym selfe a monke vnwyt tynge the kynge his fader and other his frendes.

But how or in what maner so euer he became a monke/ trouth it is that Uortigerus or Uortigernus after ꝑ deth of Constantyne, founde suche meanes that he was taken out of the abbey, and crowned kynge of Bry tayne. By meane wherof the sayde Uortiger had all the rule of the land so that Constante hadde but onely the name. This Uortyger then con syderynge the innocencye and myl denes of the kyng/ cast in his mynde how he myght be kynge hym selfe. And amonge other meanes/ founde

to haue aboute ỹ kynges perſone an hundred Pictes, or after ſome Scottes/ ỹ whych he ordeyned for a garde for the kynges perſone. which done/ he bare hym in ſuch wyſe agayne the Pictes by meanes of great gyftes & otherwyſe, that they at length had Vortyger in ſuch fauoure, that they feryd not to ſaye openly that Vortyger was more worthy to be kyng thē Conſtant. In this whyle Vortyger gatte into his poſſeſſyon the kynges treaſour / and what was of hym cōmaunded was done, though other therat murmured and grudged. And euer in ryght and wronge he fauoured the forſayd Pictes or Scottes. The whyche at length perceyuynge his corrupte mynde, when they ſawe that they had conuenyent tyme, fyll vpon the kynge, and hym ſlewe or murderyd.

After whych cruell dede by theym done/ they preſentyd the hed of Conſtante vnto Vortiger, then beyng at London. wherof when he was ware/ to the ende that the Brytons ſhulde thynke that dede to be done agayne his mynde and wyll: wepte & made ſemblaunt of all ſorowe and heuenes / and cauſyd the ſayde hundred knyghtes to be taken in all haſte after, and theym by dome and lawe of ỹ lādto be be heddyd/ by reaſon wher of he was taken not culpable, or innocent of the kynges deth. when the kynges deth was knowen to ſuche perſones as hadde the keppyng of the two yonger bretherne, Aurelius and Uter: they in all haſte for the more ſauegarde of them, fledde into lytell Brytayne/ & there kept theym tyll yt pleaſyd god otherwyſe to purueye for theym. And thus as ye haue herd was kynge Conſtante ſlayne/ when he hadde reygned after moſte wyters fyue yere.

THE.LXXXII. CHAPITER.

TOrtigernus duke of ỹ Jueſſes, or Vortiger⁹ erle of Jewelles, after called weſtſaxons/ was made kynge of Brytayne, in the yere of our lorde. iiii. hundred and. xlviii. and the. xviii. yere of Clodio kyng of Fraūce/ whych after ỹ deth of Conſtant by ſtrength and otherwiſe was made kynge, and ruled the land not all wythout trouble. For yt was not longe or the Pictes, whych hauyng knowlege of the deth and iudgemēt of theyr knightes and kynſmen, that they inuaded the north partes of the lande, doynge therin great harme and domage. And ouer that many & dyuerſe of the great of the Brytons, perceyuyng that the kyng Conſtant was not murderyd all wythout conſent of the ſayde Vortyger: rebelled agayne hym/ and dayly ſent and ſayled ouer into lytell Brytayne, to the ayde and aſſyſtence of the forſayde chyldern of Conſtant/ whyche putte the ſayde Vortiger to great vnreſtfulneſſe/ and the more for that, that he wyſt not nor knewe not in whom he myght putte his truſte and confydence in.

wyth theſe perturbaūces was medled plenty of corne & frute, ỹ the lyke therof had not ben ſene many yeres paſſyd. wherwyth was ioyned lechery & peſtylence, with many other incōueniences/ ſo ỹ vice was accōpted for ſmall or none offence. The which reygned not onely in the temporalty, but alſo in the ſpiritualtie & hedes of the ſame. So ỹ euery mā turned the poynt of his ſpere agaynſt the trewe & innocent man/ & the cōmons gaue them all to dronkēnes and ydelnes/ where thorough enſued kyghtynge, ſtryfe, and mych enuy. Of which fore ſayd myſchyues enſued mych mortalyte and deth of men, that the lyuyng

ſcantly

scantly suffysed in some countres to bury the dede. And ouer this ꝑ kyng was so hard beset with ꝑ forenamed enymyes/that he was cõstrayned, as affermyth Policronica, to sende for paynems, as the Sarõs, to helpe to withstand his enemyes and defende his lande/and also he dayly ferid the landyng of Aurely and Uther.

Uortyger thus beynge beset wyth many aduersytyes in vysytynge hys lande / and then beynge for dyuerse causes hym mouyng at Dorobernia or Caunterbury: tydynges came to hym of the arryuynge of thre longe shyppes full of armed men at the yle of Tenet. wherof fyrst he made countenaunce as though he hadde ben in doute whether it had ben the two brethern of Constant or none. But whẽ the fame was blowen aboute, ꝑ they were none enymyes: anon he caused the leders of them to be brought vnto his presence / freynynge of theym the cause of theyr landyng & of theyr nacyon and countre. The whych answered vnto the kynge and sayd they were of the coũtre of Germany/ and put out of theyr countre by a maner sorte or lot at sõdry tymes vsed with in the sayde lande / the whyche was vsed for so myche as the people therin encreasyd so faste, that wythoute such prouysyon had, the coũtre shuld not suffyce for the people/ the whych was suche as foloweth.

At sondry tymes when the sayd coũtre was replenyshed of people: the prynces and rulers therof wolde assemble at a certayne place, and call before theym the lusty ponge folkes. Of the whych they wold chose out a certayne nomber / and appoynte to them certayne dukes or leders, with all thyng necessary to the warre. And them so garnyshed/ wold cõmaunde to serche theyr aduẽture, & to wynne some lande by theyr knyghthode, where they myght inhabyte thẽ selfe. By whych vse & custome thus longe vsyd / now was fallen to theyr lotte, to do as theyr fore faders had done before theym.

Wherfore syns fortune had brought them to this land/ they besought the kyng, that he wold take them to his seruyce, & they wold be redy to fyght for ꝑ defence of him and his countre. And when the kyng hadde enquyred farther: he fouñde that they had two leders named Hengist & Horsus/ and they and theyr people were called Saxons.

The kynge thus beyng assertayned of the maner of these straũgers, and that they were of the gentyle of pagan law: sayde he was very heuy & sory, that they were myscreantes. But he was ioyous & glad of theyr commynge / for so myche as he had nede of suche sowdyours to defende hym and his lande agayne his enymyes. And so receyued them to hys wages and seruyce, as is wytnessed of Gaufryde and other mo wryters.

THE .LXXXIII. CHAPITER.

BEda the holy man sayth, that Uortyger sent for the Sarõs stronge men of armes, that hadde no lande to dwelle in. The whych came in thre longe shyppes called Dbylas / and receyued a place of hym to dwell in, in the Eest syde of Bretayne called the yle of Tenet besyde Kent. Guillelmus de regibus a wryter of hystoryes sayth, that the Saxons came oute of Germany by wyll to wynne worshyppe & lande / and not by lotte or compulsyon.

And also that they worshypped at that dayes a god named woden, and a goddesse named Frya. In the worshyppe of the whyche god the

thyrde ferpall daye in the weke they named wodnesdaye / whyche at this daye we call wednysdaye. And in worshyppe of the sayde goddes they called the fyfth daye frys daye / the whyche we call now frydaye.

Of these forsayde people came thre maner of people, or thre maner of names/ that is to say Saxõs, Anglys, and Jewetes. Of the Saxons came the eest Saxons, westsaxons, & the south Saxons. Of ỹ Anglys came the eest Anglys, the myddell Anglis or Merceys, whyche helde myddell England, that stretcheth westwarde toward the ryuer of Dee besyde Chestre, and to Seuern besyde Shrop shury, and so forth to Brystowe/ and eestwarde toward the see, and southwarde to Thamys, and so forth to London, and northwarde to Humber, and tourned downewarde and westward to the ryuer Mercea / and so forth to the weste see.

And of the Jewetys come the Kentyshmen, & men of the yle of weyght. Of the fyrst cõmyng of these Saxõs into great Britayn, authours in party varrey. wherfore in the table before named/it shall appere vnder cor reccyon, that the forenamed Hengistus and Horsus wyth theyr company fyrst landed in the forsayde yle of great Bryptayne in the yere of our lorde.iiii.hundred and.l, & the thyrd yere of Vortiger.

Then yt foloweth these Saxons wyth the kynges power bete downe the enymyes before sayde, and defended the land in most knyghtly wyse, so that the kyng hadde the Saxons in great loue and fauour. whyche fauour Hengistus wel apperceyuyng/ vpon a season when he sawe conuenyent tyme, he axed of the kynge so myche grounde as the hyde of a bull or other beste wolde compace/which the kynge to hym graunted. After whyche graunt, the sayde Hengyste to the ende to winne a large groũde/ causyd the sayd bestes skyn to be cut into a small and slender thonge. And with the same mette out a large and great circuyte of grounde/vpon the whyche he shortly after buylded and sette a large and stronge castell. By reason of whych thonge the sayd castell was lõg afternamed Thonge castell/ whyche was sette by the agrement of all wryters in the countre of Lyndesey. After thyse tydynges sprange into Germania, of the plentye and fatnes of the lande of Brytayne, wyth other commodytyes pertenyng to the same. By meane wher of the Saxons dayely drewe to the sayde lande / and conuenaũted with the Brytons, that the Britons shuld entende theyr worldlynes and other necessaryes/ and ỹ Saxons as theyr sowdiours, shulde defende the land from incursyon of all enymyes. For the whych the Brytons shulde gyue to them competent mete and wages.

Then by the sonde of Hengiste, came wyth .xvi. sayles Ronowen the doughter of the sayd Hengist/ which was a mayden of excellẽt beaute. After whose commyng/ Hengiste vpon a daye besought the kyng ỹ he wold se his castell, whyche he had newely edyfyed. To whose requeste the kyng was agreable/ & at the day assygned came to ỹ sayd castell, where he was ioyously receyued. And there amõge other pastetymes the sayde Ronowẽ wyth a cuppe of golde full of wyne presentyd the kynge, salutynge and sayeng wassayle. The kynge whych before that tyme had herd no lyke salutacyon, nor yet vnderstode what shement/ axed of her fader what shemente by that worde wassayle. To whom yt was answereo by Hengist that yt was a salutacyon of good & gladnesse/ and that the kynge shuld drynke

drynke after her, ioynynge there vnto this answere, drynke hayll. wher fore the kyng as he was enfourmed toke the cuppe of the maydens hand and dranke/ & after beheld the weche in suche maner, that he was wounded with the darte of the blynde god Cupide, that neuer after he coude wythdrawe his loue from ỹ wenche/ but lastely by instygacyon of the deuyll, ared her in maryage of her fader. And by force therof, as wytnesseth Policronica, he put from hym his laufull wyfe/ of the whyche he had before tyme receyued .iii. noble sonnes called Vortimerus, Catagrinus, and Pascentius. Then the kyng gaue vnto Hengistus the lord shyppe of Kent, though Garangonus then erle therof therat grudged wyth many of his Brytons.

For this and for that that ỹ kynge had maryed a woman of vncought beleue: well nere all the Brytons forsoke hym and his workes. Neuer theless some there were as well nobles & other, that cõforted the kynge in his euyll doyng. By whych meane and other vnlefull dedys then dayly vsyd/ the fayth of Cryste began sore to apalle. And ouer that an heresye called Arianes heresy, began then to sprynge in Brytayn. For the which, two holy byshoppes named Germanus and Lupus, as of Gaufryde is wytnessyd/ came into Brytayne to refourme the kynge and all other ỹ erred from the waye of trouth.

Of this holy man saynt Germayn/ Vincent hystoryall sayth, that vpon an euenynge, when the weder was passynge cold, and the snowe fyll very faste/ he ared lodgyng of the kyng of Brytayne, for hym and his comperys/ whych was denyed. Then he after syttyng vnder a bushe in the feld, the kynges herdmen passyd by/ and seynge this byshop wyth his company sittyng in the weder/ desyred hym to his house to take there such poore lodgynge as he had. wherof the byshoppe beynge glad and fayne/ yode vnto the house of the sayd herdman, the whyche receyued hym wyth glad chere. And for hym and his company wylled his wyfe to kyll his onely calfe/ and to dresse yt for his gestes souper, ỹ which was also done. when the holy man had souped, he called to hym his hostes, wyllynge and desyrynge her that she shulde dylygently gader to gyder all the bones of the deed calfe/ and them so gaderyd, to wrappe to gyder wythin the skynne of the sayde calfe/ & then it lay in the stall before the racke nere vnto the dame. whych done accordyng to the commaundement of the holy man/ shortly after the calfe was restoryd to lyfe, and forth wyth ete haye wyth the dame at ỹ racke. Of whych meruayle all the housholde was greatly astonyed/ and yeldyd thankynge vnto almyghty god, and to that holy byshoppe.

Herdman

Vppon the morowe this holy byshoppe toke wyth hym the herdman, & yode vnto the presence of ỹ kynge/ & ared of hym in sharpe wyse, why that ouer nyght he hadde denyed to hym lodgynge. wherwyth the kyng was so abasshed, that he hadde no power to gyue vnto the holy man answere. Then saynt Germayne sayde to hym: I charge the in the name of my lorde god, that thou and thyne departe from this paleys/ and resygne yt & the rule of thy lande to hym that is more worthy this rome then thou arte. The whyche all thyng by power diuyne was obserued & done/ and the sayde herdman by the holy byshoppes authorite, was sette into ỹ same dygnyte. Of whom after descendyd all the kynges of Brytayne.

THE .LXXXIIII. CHAPITER.

THys ſtory is alſo confermed of Antonin⁹ archebyſſhoppe of Florence / and at lengthe by hym ſhewyd in the.xvii. chappter and.ir. day of the ſeconde part of hys worke called Som̃ Antonini. But by whō ſo euer thys ſtory was fyrſte wryten: I thynke he was none that diſcended of the walſhmen, nor yet of theyr blode. For they come all of Bryamys blode, and not of an herdman, excepte that they fetche theyr lyne from Daupd the holy kynge & prophete. Thys ſtorye ſemeth to be of more fame then of credence. For other wryters tell thys ſtory to be done in the region of Powys by Bulythеyr kynge. And alſo for ſo mych as the forſayd authour maketh no mencyon of the more Brytayne nor of the leſſe: it is doutefull whyther thys happe fyll in that one regyon or in that other. All be yt in the lyfe of ſaynte Germayne it ys redde, that the ſayde ſaynte Germayne depoſyd Vortiger & enhaunced the herdman, as before is declared, as affermeth Polycronica. Then it foloweth in ẏ ſtory, when ſaynte Germayne hadde reſtoryd ſome parte of Brytayne to the trewe fayth: he retourned into Fraunce, fro whens he was before comen. But in thys ſayde ſayenge ſhuld appere dyſcorde in Cronycles. For as at this day was not the fayth of Cryſte receyued in Fraunce, as after more clerely ſhall appere / wher fore no byſſhoppe of Cryſtes fayth myghte then kepe any ſee in Fraunce. And alſo as affermeth Jacobus Phylyppus and other / holy Remigius was the fyrſt ẏ tourned Fraũce to Cryſtes relygyon / and that, after moſte concorde of wryters, to be in the yere of our lorde. iiii. hundred lxxx. and. xix. and the. xb. yere of the reygne of Clodoueus Lewys fyrſte Cryſten kyng of ẏ realme of Fraũce.

Then to furnyſſhe or perfourme the ſtory of Vortiger, nedefull it is or neceſſary to retourne to the mater where we before lefte. And to ſhewe that for ſo moche as the Brytons wythdrewe them from Vortyger / he was therfore conſtrayned to holde wyth hym the Sarons. By whoſe counſayle he after ſent for Octa the ſonne of Hengyſt / ẏ whych brought wyth hym an other company of Sarons.

When the lordes of Britayne ſawe and conſyderyd the greate multytude of Sarons, and theyr dayly repayre into thys lande: they aſſembled them togyder, and ſhewed to the kyng the inconuenience and ieopardy that myght enſue to hym and hys lande, by reaſon of the greate power of theſe ſtraungers / and aduertyſed hym in aduoydyng of greter daunger, to expelle and put them out of hys realme or the more parte of them.

But all was in vayne / for Vortyger bare ſuche a mynde to the Sarons, by reaſon of hys wyfe / that he preferred the loue of them before the loue of hys owne naturall kynneſmen and frendes. wherfore the Brytons of one wyll and mynde crowned for theyr kynge Vortimerus the eldeſt ſonne of Vortyger, and depryued hym of all kyngly dygnyte / whē he hadde reygned after moſte concorde of hyſtoryes. xvi. yeres.

THE .LXXXV. CHAPITER.

MEroneus next of allie vnto Clodio laſt kyng of Fraũce, for ſo mych as of Clodeo remayned none iſſue / was made kyng of Fraũce in ẏ yere of our lorde .iiii. hundred and. l/

and.l / and the seconde yere yere of Uortiger than kynge of Brytayne. The whyche was stronge and marcyall in all hys dedes / and there vnto ryght profytable for the realme. And amonge other notable dedes by hym done/he slewe in one day of Hunes (the whyche by the commaundement of Attila inuadyd & dystroyed dyuers countres, as Italy, Germany, and other) an hundreth and lxxx. thousande / as is wytnessyd of mayster Robert Gagwine compyler and gaderer of the actes and dedes of Frenshmen. Thys forenamed Attila was kynge of Hunes/and led in one hoost.ii.hundred thousand men of warre, as testyfyeth Policronica. And after dyuers baytayles by hym wonne/he came into ỹ feldes called Catulyntes, the whyche conteyned an hundred legys in length and. lxx. in brede, wherof euery lege conteyneth. iii. Englysshe myles. In the whyche feldes or playnes he was encountred wyth the power of the Romaynes / in whose ayde was ỹ kyng of Fraunce Meroneus, the kynge or duke of Burgoyne, and other. where after a longe fyghte was slayne on bothe sydes the foresayde hundred and. lxxx. thousand. Of the whyche nomber the sayde kynge or duke of Burgoyne was one / as is more playnly shewed in the.xxxiii.chapiter in the.iiii.boke of the sayd Polycronicon, wyth other wonders whyche I ouerpasse.

Of thys Meroneus dyscendyd all the kynges of Frenshemen, tyll the tyme of Peppyn the whyche was father vnto Charles the greate or emperour. And fynally dyed thys Meroneus when he had reygned after moste wryters .x. yeres / leuynge after hym a sonne named Chylderych or Hylderych.

THE .LXXXVI. CHAPITER.

CHyldericus or Hildericus the sonne of Meroneus/ was ordeyned kyng of Fraunce, in the yere of oure lorde god. iiii.hundred & .lx/ & the.xii.yere of Uortiger than kyng of Brytayne. The whiche ensued no thynge the warres of hys father/but allyed hym wyth all vyce and cruelnesse, in suche externe wyse that he became odyble vnto hys subiectes. wherfore the sayd Childerich/percey uyng the murmur & grudge among the people/and ferynge hys sodayne distruccyon: coũsayled wyth a frend and lorde of hys named Guynomadus or Guynemeus/ by whose counsayle in auoydynge greater paryll, he auoyded secretely hys lande, and yode vnto the kynge of Thurynges named Belygne, of whom he was ioyously receyued. But the at departynge of the kynge from ỹ sayd Guynemeus, he toke a pece of golde and brake it in two peces / wherof ỹ one pece he delyuered vnto the kynge, & that other pece he kepte to hym self/ sayenge to the kynge that whan so euer that he receyued from hym that pece of golde, that he shulde be sure to be restored agayne to hys regalyy and dygnyte.

After the kynge was departed his lande/the Frenshmen of one assent, chase for theyr gouernour and hed a Romayne named Gylk / whyche at that daye hadde a parte of Gallia or Fraunce in hys rule to the behofe of the Romaynes/ whyche parte was named or nowe is named Soysons. whã thys Gilk was stablysshed in his authoryte / the forenamed Guynemeus behauyd hym in suche wyse towarde thys Gylk, that he had hym in specyall fauour aboue all the nobles of Fraunce/ and wolde execute no thynge of charge wythout hys consent

and counsayll. wherof the sayd Guynemeus beynge ware / and remembrynge how he myght restore Childerych to his former dygnyte, aduysed the sayde Gill to sette more greuous taskys vpon the Frenschmen/ enfourmynge hym further, that yf any grudged there at, that he shuld punyshe some of the myghtyeste of them / by reason wherof he shulde fere the other.

Whyche thus done accordynge to the forsayde counsayll/shortely after to brynge his purpose the better about, the sayde Guynemeus accused certayne rulers of Fraunce suche as he well knewe were great enymyes vnto Chylderych/the whych he caused to be taken and sent vnto Gill, & Gill vpon them dyd sharpe execucyon. In the whyche he so perseuered, that the Frenschmen for remedy complayned theym to Guynemeus. To whom it was by hym answered, that he greatly meruayled of theyr vnstablenesse that they hadde chosen to them a kynge, and now so sodaynly wolde haue hym deposed/ shewynge furthermore that other they must cal agayn Childerich that exercysyd his lyfe in voluptuousnesse of lyuynge/ or ellys they muste dwell vnder the kynge, whyche is cruell and full of blood shedynge, wyth dyuerse other exhortacyons cõcernynge the agayn callynge of Childerych to his fourmer dygnyte, whyche for length I omytte and passe ouer.

By meane of whyche exhortacyon, Childerich was secretly sent for/and receyued from his trustye frende the forsayde pece of golde / and spedde hym hastely into Fraunce. Agayne whom the forsayde Guynemeus in lykewyse sped hym/ so that they met at a castell in the countre of Champion, where they wyth other to them allyed / gaderyd a great hoste, and made towarde the forsayde Gill or Gillion. The whych haupnge knowlege of the sayde conspyracye/ordeyned an armye of knyghtes, and yode agayne his enymyes. But he was ouerset and compelled for his sauegarde to fle into the countre of Soissons beforenamed, where he after endyd his naturall lyfe/ & Childerych was agayne restoryd & made kynge.

Childerych then thus restoryd vnto his regally/subdued soone after a Saxon prynce named Onager/& be segyd the cytye of Orleaunce, and yt receyued vnto his subiectyon and after passyd the ryuer of Leyr, & subdued to his sygnory the countre of Angeo and Mayne.

When the fame of Childerich was brought vnto Balyna the wyfe of Belygne kyng of Turryng: she anon forsoke her owne lorde, and sped her into Fraunce, and so to the presence of Childerich, whom he receyued wyth all gladnes. And when he had of her frayned the cause of her commynge: she answeryd, for that that she knewe and vnderstode to be in hym more vertue and honour, thē in any other mā at ẏ day lyuyng / she was therefore comyn vnto hym to contynue the remanaunt of her lyfe in his cõpany/addyng also therunto that yf in any countre she knew his better, she wolde then serche see and lande to haue hym to her lord or hus bande. But for she was assured, that he had no pere/ she besought hym to accepte her in his company.

THE .LXXXVII. CHAPITER.

When Childerych puttynge apparte and forgettynge kyndnelle to hym before shewyd by her housbande Belynge / maryed the sayde Balina yet beynge a pagan. And when the fyrste nyght was comen

men that they shulde go to bedde/she exorted hym ꝑ he shulde ꝑ nyght absteyn frō all fleshly lykyng, & watche the gates of his paleys/and to make repoꝛte to her of suche vysyons as he sawe there ꝑ nyght. To the which he was agreable. where he so standynge, sawe fyꝛst a multitude of vny coꝛnes, lyons, and lybardes, passyng foꝛeby the paleys gate. And wythin a shoꝛte space of tyme after, he sawe a great company of beꝛys & wolues rēnyng after the other. And thyꝛdly & lastly he sawe a multytude of dogges & other small rauenous bestes/ the whyche in hys syghte fyll vppon the other. ii. companyes and vtterly deuoured them all.

when he hadde sene the fyne of his vision/not a lytell astonyed, he returned to hys wyfe / shewynge to her what he hadde sene. To whom she sayd/syꝛ of me ye shal receyue a son/ the whyche in all hys dedes shall be noble and honourable, lyke to ꝑ vny coꝛnes and lyons shewyd to you in ꝑ fyꝛst vysyon. Of the whyche shall discende one other sonne, the whyche shall be rauenous and shall set hys mynde all to pyllage & rauyne, lyke vnto the rauenous wolfe and bere. And after hym shall come a chylde oꝛ chyldern that shall be of suche insolency and wastynge, that lyke as the rauenous hounde stroyeth and wastyth all that he maye tere wyth hys teeth/so shall these persons wast and destroye by theyꝛ folyes all that other noble men hath purchased to theyꝛ handes. And the multytude whyche that ye sawe of other small rauenous bestes/betokeneth the comon people, whyche in those dayes foꝛ lacke of a good and wyse pꝛynce shall renne eyther vppon other and robbe and sle eche other.

Of thys exposycyon the kyng was sondele troubled. But yet he reioysed of the issue that shuld come of his body. Then it foloweth whan thys Chylderych hadde ouercomen some baptayles in Almayne, and them subdued to hys empyꝛe: he lastly dyed when he had reygned, wyth the. viii. yeres allowed to hys reygne foꝛ the tyme that he was exyled / and wyth the residue that he reygned befoꝛe & after in all. xxiiii. yeres / leuyng after hym a sonne begotten vpon the foꝛe named Basina called Clodio oꝛ after moste wꝛyters Clodoueus.

Anglia.

THE .LXXXVIII. CHAPITER.

VOꝛtimerus the eldest sonne of Voꝛtiger/was by assent of the Bꝛytōs made kyng of Bꝛytayn, in the yere of our loꝛde. iiii. hundꝛed lxiiii /and the .iiii. yere of Chylderic⁹ than kynge of Fraunce. The whych in all hast pursued the Saxons, and gaue vnto them a great batayle vppon the ryuer of Darwent/where he hadde of them vyctoꝛy. And secundaryly he faught with them vppon the foꝛd called Epifoꝛd oꝛ Agliffhoꝛp. In the whych fyght Catrignus the bꝛother to Voꝛtimer, & Hoꝛsus bꝛother to Hengyst oꝛ Cosyn, after long fyght attwene them .ii. eyther of thē slewe other/in whyche fyght also the Bꝛytons were vyctours.

The thyꝛd batayle he faught with them nere vnto the see syde / where also the Bꝛytons chasyd ꝑ Saxōs, and compelled them to take the fle of wyghte foꝛ theyꝛ suertye.

This batayle as wytnesseth Alfredus, was moꝛe wonne by vertue of the pꝛayers of the holy byshop saynt Germayne, than by myght of ꝑ Bꝛytons. Foꝛ when the holy man sawe ꝑ Bꝛytons gyue backe / he helde hys handes towarde heuen, and cryed thyꝛse alleluya/whyche is to our vnderstādyng as mych to saye, as saue vs good loꝛde. Thoꝛough whyche

pꝛayer

prayer the Britons by dyuyne helpe obteyned ꝑ victory of theyr enimyes.

The fourth batayll was nere vnto a mooze called Cole mooze. The whych was long and soze foughten by the Sarons / by reason that the sayde mooze closyd a parte of theyr hoste so strongly, that the Brytons myght not winne vnto them for daũger of theyr shot/ All be yt that fynally they were chasyd, and many of thẽ of cõstraynt drowned and swalowed in the sayde mooze

And ouer and besyde these foure pryncypall batayles: Uortimerus had wyth the Sarons dyuers other conflictes/ as in Kent, at Thetford in Northfolke, and in Esser nere vnto Colchestre / & lefte not tyll he had byrafte from them the moze parte of such possessyons as before tyme they had wonne/ and kepte them onely to the yle of Thanet, the whych Uortymer ofte greuyd by such nauy as he then hadde.

when that Ronowen doughter of Hengiste apperceyued the great myschyef, that her fader and the Saxõs were in, by the mraciall knyghthode of Uortymer: she sought suche meanes, that shortly after, as testyfyeth Gaufryde and other, Uortimer was poysoned/when he had ruled the Britons after moste concorde of wyters seuen yeres.

THE .LXXXIX. CHAPITER.

Uortigernus fader of Uortymerus last dede, was agayn restoryd to the kyngdome of myche Brytayne/ in the yere of oure lordes incarnacyon foure hũdred.lxxi / and the.xi.yere of Childericus then kyng of Fraunce/ the whyche all the tyme of the reygne of his sonne Uortimer, had resyd hym in the coũtre of Cambria or walys. where in this passe tyme after some writers, he buyldyd a stroge castel in a place called Generoñ or Gwayneren, in the west syde of walys nere vnto the riuer of Gwana, in an hyll or vpon an hyll called Cloarcius. But the olde cronycle before spoken of, sayth ꝑ this Uortiger was kept somwhat vnder rule of certayne tutours to hym assygned in ꝑ towne of Caerlegion or Chester/ and demeaned hym so well towarde hys sonne in aydynge of hym wyth hys counsayll and otherwyse, that the Brytons for it cast to hym such a fauoure, that they after the deth of Uortimer made hym agayne kynge.

It was not longe after that Uortiger was thus set in authorzyte, but that Hengist̃ percyd this land with a great multytude of Sarons. wher of herynge Uortyger/ in all haste assembled his Brytons, and made towarde them. And when Hengistus hadde experyence of the great hoste of Brytons: he then ordeyned meanes of treaty and peas. where lastly yt was concluded that a certayne nõber of Brytons, and as many of Sarons, shuld vpon a Maye day assemble vppon the playne of Ambrii, now called Salesbury. whyche daye certaynly prefyxyd / Hengistus dyuyne a new maner of treason, chargyd all his Sarons by him appoynted, that eche of them shulde putte secretely a longe knyfe in theyr hose / & at suche season as he gaue to thẽ this watche or by worde, Nempnyth your sexis, that euerych of them shulde drawe hys knyfe and slee a Bryton, not sparynge any one/ except Uortiger ꝑ kyng. And at ꝑ day before appointed the kynge wyth a certayne of Brytons not ware of this purposed treason, came in peasyble wyse to ꝑ place before assygned / where he fande redy Hengistus wyth hys Sarons. The whyche after due obeysaunce made

made vnto the kynge/ receyued hym with a coũtenaũce of all loue. where after a tyme of cõmunycacyon had/ Hengiſte beynge mynded to execute his former purpoſed treaſon, ſhewed his watche word. By reaſon wher of anon the Brytons were ſlayne as ſhepe amonge wolues, hauynge no maner of weppn to defẽde them ſelf/ excepte ꝑ any of them myght by his manhode and ſtrength get the knyfe of his enymye. Amonge the nomber of theſe Brytons was an Erle called Edolf or Edolf erle of Caerlegion or Cheſtre/ ꝑ whych ſeynge his felowes and frendes thus murdered, as affermeth myne authoure Gaufryde and other: he by his manhode wanne a ſtake in the hedge or ellys where/ wyth the whyche he knyghtly ſaued his owne lyfe, and ſlewe of the Saxons .xvii., and fledde to the cytye or towne of Ambry nowe named Salyſburye. After whyche treaſon thus executyd/ the kynge remayned wyth Hengiſtus as pryſoner.

Of the takynge of Vortyger and ſleynge of the lordes of Brytayne/ an authoure called Guillelmus de regibus ſayth, that Hengiſt⁹ agreed wyth Vortyger and hys Brytons/ and that he ſhulde enioye the caſtell by hym before made, wyth a certayn of lande therunto adioynynge for hym and his Saxõs to dwell vpon. And when the ſayde agrement was ſuerly ſtablyſhed/ this Hengiſte entendynge treaſon/ deſyred the kynge wyth a certayn nomber of his lordes to come to hym to dyner wythin his ſayde caſtell. The whych of ꝑ kynge was graunted. And at the daye aſſygned the kyng with his lordes came to the ſayde Thongcaſtell to dyner/ where he wyth his was well and honourably receyued and alſo deynte ly ſerued.

But when the kynge & his lordes were in theyr moſte myrth/ this Hengiſte had commaunded before, ꝑ his owne knyghtes ſhuld falle at varyaũce among thẽ ſelfe. whych ſo done the remenaunt of his Saxons, as yt were in partynge of frayes, ſhulde fall vppon the Britons & ſlee theym all, oute take onely the kynge. The whyche was done lyke as ye haue before harde deuyſed/ and the kynge was holden as pryſoner.

THE .XC. CHAPITER.

HEngiſtus then hauynge the kynge as pryſoner, & a great parte of the rulers of Britayne thus as before is ſayd ſubdued: was ſome deale exalted in pryde/ and compellyd the kynge to gyue vnto hym, as wytneſſyth Policronica, thre prouynces in the eeſt parte of Brytayne. whych thre prouynces ſhuld be kẽt, Southſaxon or Suſſex, and Eeſtanglys, whych is to meane Norff. and Suff. as affermeth the authoure of the floure of hyſtoryes. But Guydo de columna ſayth, that the forſayde thre prouynces was Kent, Eeſtſaxon or Eſſex, and Eeſtanglys/ which is Norff. and Suff. Of the whyche ſayde prouynces when Hengiſt was poſſeſſyd/ he ſuffred the kynge to go at his lybertye. And then Hengiſte beganne his lordſhyppe ouer the prouynce of Kent, and ſent other of his Saxõs to beweld the other two prouynces/ that is to ſaye Eeſtanglys and Eeſtſaxons, tyll he hadde ſente for other of his kynneſmen, ꝑ he entẽdyd to gyue the ſayd prouynces vnto.

The kyngdome of Kent here begynnyth.

THE .XCI. CHAPITER.

THus Hengiſtus beynge in the poſſeſſyon of this

prouynce of Kent: comaunded hys Saxons to call yt Hengistus lande/ wherof as some authours meane the hole lande of Bretayn toke his fyrst name of Englande. But that sayeng shall appere cõtrary, as shalbe shewed hereafter in the storye of Egbert kynge of westsaxons. The whych after he had subdued ỹ more parte of the kyngedomes of Saxõs, & made of all but one monarchye: he then cõmaundyd this lande to be called Anglia, & his Saxons Anglys/ whych after by corrupcyon of speche was called Englande, and the people Englyshemen.

This lordshyppe or kyngedome of Kent had his begynnyng vnder Hengiste, in the yere of oure lorde after moste concordaunce of wryters, and by reason of ỹ time .iiii. hũdred. lxxvi. And the fyfte yere of Vortygers last reygne.

But Denys and other, that accõpt this kyngdome to begynne in the yere of our lord foure hundred and .lv. allowe the begynnynge therof to be when Hengistus had fyrst gyft of the same, by reason that Vortyger maryed his doughter.

This lordeshyppe conteyned the countre that stretcheth from eest Ocean vnto the ryuer of Thamys/ and had vpon the southeest Southerye/ and vppon the weste London/ vpon the northeest the Thamys aforesayd and Eestsaxon nowe Esser. And this lordshyppe conteyned also the yle of Thanet.

Whyche lordshyppe or kyngdome endured after moste wryters, from the tyme of the fyrste yere of the reygne of Hengiste, tyll the .xxb. yere of Egbert before named, by the terme of .iii. hundred and .xlii. yeres folowynge that accompte. At whyche season the sayde Egbert then kynge of westsaxons, subdued Baldredus the kynge of Kent, and ioyned yt to hys owne kyngdome.

Albeyt that the authoure of Policronica affermeth yt to endure by the space of thre hundred and .lxviii, vnder .xb. kynges, wherof Baldredus was the laste: whyche folowyth nere vnto the accompt of Denys before named. The fyrste crysten kyng of this lordshippe was Ethelbertus, or Ethelbert/ the whyche receyued the fayth of Cryste by that holy man saynt Austayne or Augustayne, nere about the yere of our lordes incarnacyon foure hundred .lxxx. and .xvi. The whyche Ethelbert caused soone after to be edyfyed the monastery of saynt Peter and Paule, in the eest syde or ende of the cytye of Dorobernia now Caunterbury. He gaue vnto this Austayn and his successours byshoppes of Caunterbury, a place for the byshoppes see at Chrystes chyrche wythin the sayd cytye, & endowed it with many ryche possessiõs.

This Hengiste and all the other Saxons whyche ruled the .vii. prynncypates of Bretayne, as after shall be shewed, are called of moste wryters reguli/ whyche is to meane in oure vulgare or speche as small or lytell kynges. So that this Hengist is accompted a lyttell kynge. The whyche when he hadde thus rule of the foresayde .iii. prouynces, he sent for mo Saxons/ & gatheryd them ỹ were sparkled abrode/ so ỹ in these prouynces the fayth of Chryste was all quenchyd and in slepe.

Then Hengist wyth Octa his son gaderyd a great strẽgth of Saxõs/ and faught wyth the Brytons, and ouercame the Brytons, and chasyd them in suche wyse, that Hengiste kepte his lordesshyppe in peace and warre by the space of .xxiiii. yeres, as moste wryters testyfye.

THE .XCII. CHAPITER.

NOwe then lette vs retourne agayne to Uortiger/ ꝑ which when he sawe the Saxons in suche wyse encrease theyr strength, and the Brytons dayly dyscreace/ for as writeth myne authour Gaufryde, ꝑ Saxons had the rule of London, yorke, Lincolne, or Lindecolñ, and Kaerguēt, that is wyncheſter, wyth other good townes/ wherfore as affermeth the sayd Gaufryde, the kyng for fere of ꝑ Saxōs, & also for that ꝑ he was some deale warned of the commyng of the.ii. bretherne Aurely and Uter sonnes of Constantyne: he therfore consyderynge these many and great daungers, fledde into Cambria or walys, and there helde hym for the more suertye / where as wytnessyth the sayde Gaufryde he then buylded the castel before mynded. Of ꝑ which buyldynge and impediment therof/ and also of the gettynge or byrthe of Merlyne, and of his prophecyes he made a longe worke, the whyche I passe ouer for dyuerse consyderacyons, & retourne agayne to Uortiger.

Trouth yt is, that whyle Uortygernus was thus besyed in walys / the forenamed brethern Aurely and Uter preparyd theyr nauy and men of armys, and passed the see, and landed at Totnesse as sayth the englysh cronycle. wherof when the Brytons were ware that were disparklyd and seueryd in many coūtres/ they drewe to them in all hasty wyse. The which sayde bretherne when they sawe that they hadde a competent nomber of knyghtes / they made towarde walys to dystresse Uortyger.

wherof he beynge warned / for so myche as he well knewe, ꝑ he myght not make sufficyēt defence by strēgth of knyghtes: he therfore garnysshed his castell wyth strength of men and vytayll / entendynge to sauegarde hym selfe by that meane / but all in vayne. For the sayde two bretherne wyth theyr armye, besegyd the sayd castell / and fynally after many assautes, wyth wylde fyre consumed the sayde castell wyth Uortiger, and all that was therin.

Of hym yt is redde, that he shulde lye by his owne doughter, in truste ꝑ kynges shulde come of his blood. For the whyche dede he was accursyd of sayncte Germayne/ and lastely ended his lyfe as before is expressed, when he hadde reygned nowe laste ix. yeres.

THE .XCIII. CHAPITER.

AUrelius Ambrosius the seconde sonne of Cōstantyne, and brother to Constancius slayne by the treason of Uortyger / was kynge made of the Brytons in the yere of oar lorde.iiii.hundred.lxxx. & one/ and the. xxi. yere of Childeric ꝑ then kynge of Fraunce. Of thys yt is sayd, that when he hard of the dyuysion that was in the land of Brytayne betwene Uortiger and the Saxons/ and in what maner the Saxōs had subdued the Brytons he in all goodly haste wyth ayde of the kynge of lytell Brytayne, spedde hym into thys lande. where after the aboue sayde victory hadde of Uortiger/ he spedde hym towarde yorke, as affermeth Gaufride, and there chalyd the Saxons that helde the cytye wyth Octa or Osca sonne of Hengist/ and toke the sayde Octa, & kepte hym as a prysoner somwhat of tyme.

But howe so yt was by treason of his keper or otherwyse he brake prysson. And he wyth his fader gaderyd after a great hoste/ and mette Aurelius & his Brytons at a place called Crekynford, where was foughten a stronge & myghty batayll / to ꝑ losse

of both partyes / but the moze loſſe fyll to the Sarõs. Foz of them was ſlayne foure dukes, and .iiii. thouſande of other men, & that other dele chaſyd to theyz great daunger. yet this not wytſtandynge Hengiſte contynued his lozdſhyppe in Kent/ and Aurelius Ambroſe, whyche the engliſhe cronycle nameth Aurilambroſe, kepte the countre called Logiers oz myddell Englande wyth walys/ and chaſyd the Saxons ẏ dwelled in ẏ. ii. foꝛſayd pꝛouynces of eeſt Saxon and eeſt Anglis, out of thoſe countres.

The ſeconde kyngdome.

THE .XCIIII. CHAPITER.

IN this paſſe tyme a Saxõ named Ella, wyth his thze ſonnes called Symen oz Symon, Pletynger, and Ciſſa / came wyth thze ſhyppes called Obilas, and landed in the ſouth parte of Bzytayne, and ſlewe many Bzytons at a place that then was named Cuneuelhoze/ & chaſed many vnto a wood thẽ called Andzeſleger/and after occupyed ẏ countre, & inhabyted hym & his Saxons wythin the ſayde pꝛouynce/makyng hym ſelfe kyng and lozde therof. By reaſon wherof by his might & power the ſayd pꝛouynce oz countre was after named ẏ kyngdome oz lozdſhyp of Southſaxons. The whyche after moſt concozde of wꝛyters ſhuld haue his begynnyng ẏ .xxxii. yere after the fyꝛſt cõmyng of Hẽgiſt. which folowynge ẏ accompte ſhuld be in the yere of our lozde. iiii. hundzed .lxxxii/and in the ſeconde yere of Aurely then kynge of Bzytayne.

This kyngdome oz lozdſhippe had in the eeſt ſyde Kent, in the ſouth the ſee and the yle of wyght, in the weſt Hampſhze, and in the nozthe Southꝛey/ and conteyned as wytneſſyth Guydo Southampton, Somerſet ſhyze, Deuenſhyze/and Coznewayl. Of whyche ſayde kyngdome Ethelbaldus oz Ethelwald⁹ was the. iiii. kynge, and the fyꝛſte cryſten kynge. Thys kyngdome endured ſhozteſte ſeaſon of all the other kyngdomes, and paſſyd ſooneſt into the other. Foꝛ yt endured not aboue an hundzed and .xii. yeres, vnder. v. oz .vii. kynges at moſte.

THE .XCV. CHAPITER.

THen to returne where we left Aurely, whyche as befoze ye haue harde helde and occupyed the myddell parte of Bzytayne wyth Cãbzia oz walys, dyd hys dylygence to repayze ruynous places, as well temples as other / and cauſed ẏ ſeruyce of god to be ſayde and done, whyche by meane of the Saxons was greatly decayde thozough all Bzytayne. And after this Aureli⁹ beſeged ẏ Saxons in ẏ hyll of Badon oz Badowe, where he ſlewe many of theym. But dayly the Saxons encreaſyd & landed in myche Bzytayn, as after ſhall appere. Foꝛ ſhoꝛtely after a Saxon named Poꝛth/ landed wyth his two ſõnes at an hauẽ in Southſex. After whome as ſome authours meane, ẏ hauẽ was after called Poꝛtiſmouth, whyche kepeth the name at this day. And in lykewyſe they came to lande in dyuers places of Bzitayne/ſo that Aurelius had wyth them many conflyctys and bataylles, in the whyche he ſpedde dyuerſly/ foꝛ he was ſomtyme byctour, and ſome ſeaſon ouerſet. It is wꝛytẽ of hym in ẏ engliſhe cronicle and other, that he by ẏ helpe of Merlyn ſhuld fetche the great ſtones now ſtandynge vpon the playne of Salyſburye, and called the ſtone henge, oute of Irlande, and cauſed theym to be ſette there as they nowe ſtande

lande/in remembraunce of the Bry tons that there were slayne and buryed in the tyme of the communycacyon had with Hengiste and his Saxons, as before in the storye of Vortiger is touchyd. But Polycronica alledgyth ỳ honour vnto Uter Pendragon his brother. In the tyme of this Aurelius, as wytnesseth also ỳ sayde Policronica / dyed Hengist in his bed, when he had reygned ouer ỳ Kentysh Saxons. xxiiii. yeres. After whose deth Octa or Osca his sonne, ruled ỳ sayd kyngdome other .xxiiii. yeres. All be yt that the brytysshe bokes, and also the cronycles of Enlande sheweth/ that after that Aurelius had in batayll slayne Hengiste: he toke vnto his grace Octa his son, & gaue vnto hym a dwellynge place in the countre of Galewey for hym & his Saxõs then lefte on lyue. which semeth not to be true, for matet that shall after ensue/ and also for ỳ that before is touchyd of the Pictes and Scottes, in the tyme of the myserye of the Brytons. Then yt foloweth, this Octa nother augmented nor myny shed his lordshyp / but helde hym therwyth contented as his fader had to hym lefte yt.

Lastely & in the ende of the reygne of Aurely, Pascentius the yongest son of Vortiger, whiche after ỳ deth of his fader was fledde into Irland for fere of Aurely, purchasyd ayde of Guilamour kyng of Irlãde. And wyth a great armye inuadyd thys lande of Brytayne by the countre of walys/ in takynge the cytye of Menenia, and in wastynge the sayd coũtre wyth iron and fyre. In the which season and tyme Aureli⁹ laye syke in his cytye of Kaerguent or wynchester. For whych cause he desyred hys brother Uter to gather an hoste of Britõs, & to appease ỳ malice of Pascencius & his adherẽtis. The whych accordyngly prepared his hoste/ & at length ouercame the hoste of Pascẽcius, and slewe hym and the forenamed Guillamour in the same fyght.

In this whyle and season that Uter was thus gone agayne Pascentius/ a Saxon or other straũger feynynge hym a Bryton, & a connyng man in physyke, by the intycemet of Pascencius came vnto Aurely, where he lay syke/ & by his subtyle & false meanes purchasyd such fauour wyth those ỳ were nyghe vnto the prynce, that he was put in truste to mynystre medycines vnto the kyng. This is named of writers Coppa or of some Eoppa.

The whyche when he had espyed his tyme cõuenyent to bringe about his false purpose/ he gaue to Aureli⁹ a pocyon enpoysoned / by vyolence wherof he shortely after was dede, when he hadde reygned after moste writers vppon .xix. yeres.

The thyrde or fyfte.

THE .XCVI. CHAPITER.

In the tyme of ỳ reygne of this Aurelius as wytnesseth the authour of Policronica & other/ ỳ kyngdome of Eestanglis began vnder a Saxon named Uffa, about the yere of our lorde. iiii. hundred. lxxx. and xii, and the .xi. yere of Aurelius. The whych kyngdome conteyned Norff. and Suff. nowe called. This hadde in this eest and north sydes, the see/ in the northweste, Cambryge shyre/ and in the weste, sayntc Edmundes dytche, and Hertford shyre / and in the southe Esser. This lordshyppe was called fyrste Uffynys lordshyp/ and the kynges therof were named Uffynys, or after some authoures the people. But fynally they were named eest Anglys.

The fyrst cristen kyng of this pryn

cypate was Redwaldus the thyrde kynge/but he was not so stedfaste as belonged to his relygyon. His sonne named Corpwaldus was more sted faste / whyche after was slayne of a myshyleuynge man, and for Crystes fayth as some wryte. But Guydo sayth that Sebertus was fyrste cristen kynge of this lordshyppe/& that he made saynt Poulys chyrch of Lõdon. This vnder .xii. kynges endured, tyll the martyrdome of blessyd saynte Edmunde laste kynge therof/ the whych was martyred nere about the yere of our lord. viii. hũdred and lxix. By the whyche reason yt shuld folowe, that this kyngdome shulde endure by the terme of .iii. C. lxxvii. yeres. And of this lordshyp, at that dayes was Elman or Thetford the chyfe towne. But after Guydo, this lordeshyppe shulde begynne the yere of Grace .v. hundred & lxx/ & then shuld yt endure but .ii. hundred .iiii. score and .xix. yeres.

Francia.

THE .XCVIII. CHAPITER.

CLodoueus the sonne of Childericus or Hildericus before named, was after the deth of his fader ordeyned kynge of Fraunce, in ỹ yere of oure lorde .iiii. hundred .lxxx. and .iiii / and the thyrde yere of Aurelius then kyng of Brytayne. This of some wryters is named Clodoueꝰ Lowys. The whyche shortely after that he of this realme was authorysyd for kynge/ heryng report of the beaute and grete vertue of Clotildis neuewe to Gundebald kynge or ruler of Burgoyne: sente vnto hym a knyght named Aurelius to treate a marryage betwene the kynge and Clotyld or Crotild. The which Gundebald more for fere then for loue assentyd.

The cause wherof as myn authour sayth was, for ỹ thys Crotyld was enheryteur vnto the sayde lande of Burgoyne/ and that she be reason of ỹ marryage shuld recouer her ryghte and put hym from the rule therof. This Crotild had before that day receyuyd the fayth of Cryste/ and so cõtynuynge her relygyon was maryed to Clodoueus then a paynym, and so endured a certayne of tyme. But yet she left not to enduce and tourne her lorde to the fayth in all that she myghte.

And after a certayn of tyme she was delyueryd of a sonne/ the whyche by meanes of the holy man Remigius bysshop of Raynes, and of the quene Crotyld, was crystyned and named Clodomerus/ the whych dyed wyth in shorte prosesse after. For ỹ happe the kyng sayd that his goddes were dyscontented wyth hym, that he had suffred his chylde to be crystyned, & for wrathe therof had taken frõ hym his chylde. The quene takynge the kynges sayenge in pacyence / conceyued the seconde sonne, whyche also by the kynges agrement was also baptysed.

This also after a certayne of tyme was vexed wyth a greuous sekenes, in suche wyse that yt was lykely to haue dyed. wherfore the kynge was then more impacyent, and blamed ỹ relygyon of his wyfe in moste impacyent maner. The whych sayenges the quene toke pacyẽtly, and put all her confidence in god/to whom both she and Remigeus prayed so effectuously, that the chylde was restored vnto perfyte helth.

Thus Clodoueus perseuerynge in his erronyous lawe/made warre vpon the Almaynes. In whych warre beynge one daye occupyed in fyght agayne hys enymyes / he wyth hys people was put to the werse, wherof

when

whan Clodoue⁹ was ware/ hauyng greate drede of hym selfe, called to mynde the often exortacyon of hys wyfe, and of the greate vertue of her goddes lawe/and sodaynly lyfte his eyen towarde heuen and sayde, god the whyche Clotylde my wyfe doth honoure, now helpe me. And yf this daye I may passe thys daunger and opteyne victory/ I shall euer after worshyp the wyth true fayth. The whyche prayer skantly fynysshed the Frenchemen by dyuyne power were so vnyed and knyt togyther, and so knyghtly wythstode theyr enemyes/ that in shorte whyle after they opteyned victory. whyche victory had/ ꝑ kynge with greate tryumphe retourned into Fraunce. wherof whan Clotylde was warned/ she anone receyued hym wyth all ioye and gladnes, thankynge her lord god of his great victory/ but more for that ꝑ he had forsaken hys idolatrye, and was becomen seruaunt of ꝑ onely god fourmer of all the worlde.

THE .XCVIII. CHAPITER.

IT was not longe after ꝑ blessyd Remigius was sent for. The whyche enfourmed the kynge sufficyently in the fayth of Cryst / ꝛ vppon an Eester daye folowynge, wyth great solempnyte baptysed the kynge. In tyme of which solempnysacyon doynge / the holy Crysme or oyle by negligyence of the mynysters or otherwyse, lackynge / a doue descendyng from heuen, brought in her becke or byll a vyoll fylled wyth oyle of moste sweteste sauour/and delyuered it to sayntRemigius. The which was construed to be done by vertue of ꝑ holy ghoste. And wyth thys holy oyle whan the kyng was anoynted/ the surplusage therof was kept with moste reuerence. I haue herde repor ted, that this oyle is kept at the cytye of Reynes or at Parys, and that yt neuer fayleth or wasteth/and that al ryghtfull enherytours of ꝑ crowne of Fraunce be therwyth at theyr coronacyō anoynted. But ꝛ it happen any myghty mā to vsurpe ꝑ crowne by myghte/when the bysshoppe cometh for thys holy oyle, he fyndeth ꝑ vyoll or glasse drye, and ellys not.

To thys reporte euery man maye gyue credence as hym lyketh/ for I fande not this wryten in the gospell, nor yet in no boke of holy scrypture.

Then it foloweth after thys solēpnyte done/the kynge hadde certeyne wordes to the people, in exortynge them to leue theyr idolatrye, and to byleue in Cryste and hys fayth, by whose myghte and power onely he hadde venquysshed hys enemyes. By the whyche exortacyō and other meanes of the holy bysshop Remigius/myche people were sone after conuertyd and baptysed.

Then the kyng buylded certeyne newe monasteryes / and dedycat the olde temples of idollys in honoure of Crystes sayntes. Among ꝑ which one was nere vnto the cytye of Parys, in the honour of the apostles Peter and Paule. It is wytnessed of mayster Robert Gagwyne / that before these dayes all Frenche kynges vsed to bere in theyr armes .iii. todys But after thys Clodoueus had receyued Crystes relygyon . iii. floure de lyse were sente to hym by dyuyne power, sette in a shylde of asure/ the whyche syns ꝑ tyme hath ben borne of all Frenche kynges.

The sayd authour myndeth also that in a monastery of Fraunce called the monastery of sayntBartylmewe/was somtyme kepte a clothe of redde sylke, whyche was named the aurysflambe, and borne for a baner in the felde agayne the Barbaris or hethen people / by vertue wherof

the frenche prynces wan many vyc-
toryes. But after whan thys precy-
ous relyke or aurysklābe was borne
agayne Crysten prynces/ the vertue
therof sealyd, and lastly was lost.
But yet the lyke therof is kepte at
sayntt Denys / and had in greate re-
uerence of the bysshoppes and ab-
bottes of the same place.

Then it foloweth in ỹ storye/whan
Clodoueus hadde set hys realme in
due order: Clotyld callyng to myn-
de the treason done to her fader, and
also the wrongfull wythholdynge of
her ryghtfull enherytaunce by her
vncle Cundebalde/ exorted her lorde
Clodoueus to sende an embassade,
& to requyre restytucyon of her sayde
ryght/ ỹ whych was sone after done.
And whan the kynge had receyued
an answere, ỹ the sayd Cundebalde
wolde not restore the sayd ryghte of
hys wyfe: he in all goodly wyse pre-
pared an armye, and made warre vp
pon the sayd Cundebalde. And after
greate waste and dystruccyon of the
coūtre: Clodoueus fynally besegyd
hym in a cytye/ & after toke the sayd
cytye by strength/ and the sayd Cun
debalde wythin ỹ same as prysoner.
But by medyacyon of frendes and
greate gyftes/ wyth also a yerely try
bute to be payed to Clodoueus, the
sayd Cundebalde was releaced and
sette at lybertye.

THE .XCIX. CHAPITER.

THys voyage thus spedde and
orderyd: the kynge lefte be-
hynde hym an armye of .v. thousand
knyghtes, vnder the gydyng of Gū-
defyk brother of the forsayd Cun-
debalde/ and after retourned into
fraunce. But sone after the kynges
departynge/ Cundebalde cōtrary to
the promyse before made, gaderyd
a power of knyghtes, & made warre
vppon hys sayde brother/ and lastly
besieged hym in the cytye of Vienne/
where vppon eyther parte was by
skyrmysshes & assautes great people
slayne. All be yt in the ende Cunde-
balde wanne the cytye/ and hys bro-
ther therein beynge, he afterwarde
behedyd. About thys tyme great dis
cencyon grewe atwene Clodoueus
and the kynge of Gothys called Ale
ricus. whyche varyaūce by agremēt
of bothe partyes was put to the iu-
gement of Theodoryeus than kyng
of Longobardes or of Italyās. The
whyche after the sayde causes were
well and suffycyently argued and de
batyd before hym and hys coūsayle:
he fynally gaue sentence ỹ a knyght
of Clodoueus shulde stande vppon
an hylle holdynge a spere vpryghte
in hys hande/ and that the kynge of
Gothys shuld throwe or lay so mych
syluer as shulde in procesle couer the
poynt of the sayd spere. whyche sen-
tence as testyfyeth mayster Robert
Gagwyne, the Gothis desyryed say-
enge that they had not suffycyent syl
uer wythin they land to perfourme
the sayd sentence. And for desyre of
the same/ certeyne Gothys esyyenge
a prynce of fraūce named Paterne,
beynge associate wyth some dyuerse
Frenshmen in a lofte or chamber/
the whyche Paterne had ben solycy-
tour for the Frenshe kynge in ỹ fore
sayd mater: the sayde Gothys by
crafty and false meanes caused the
flooryth of the sayd chamber to falle/
by whyche meane the sayde Paterne
was greuously hurte, and many of
the other in lykewise, & some slayne.

wherof whan Clodoueus had wyt
tynge/ he beynge therwyth greatly
amoued, and also bycause ỹ Gothys
dysobeyde the forsayd awarde: he
gadered shortly after a greate hoste.
And after certeyne offerynges done
to sayntt Martyn/ wyth also passyng
the ryuer of Vian by myracle and le-
dynge

dynge of an harte: he lastly came to the syghte of hys enemyes. Thenne Clodoueus lodged hys hoost nere vnto the monastery of saint Hillary/ where in the nyght before ỹ batayle, he receyued tokens of victory, the whyche I passe ouer.

And vppon the morne he set hys people in araye, and made towarde hys enemyes / and mette wyth them in a felde called Noglodien, nere vnto ỹ ryuer of Cleue or Clyue. where after sore and longe fyght / he slewe the abouesayde Alaricus kynge of Gothys (as sayth myne authour) wyth hys owne hande.

But here shulde seme some discorde of tyme wyth other wryters. For Cronica cronicarum, Iacobus Philippus, and other/ testyfye that thys Alaricus was dede many yeres before. For he shulde be kynge of Gothys by theyr sayenge in the tyme ỹ Honorius brother vnto Archadius was emperour. whyche was aboute the yere of our lord. iiii. hundred & .xx. that he began hys empyre. wherfore mayster Robert Gagwyne meaneth some other kynge of Gothys than Alaric9. For the sayd authours also affyrmen, that this Alaricus dyed of sodayne sykenesse at a cytye named Celancia/whā he had regned after moste wryters. vi. yere.

Then it foloweth in ỹ story/whan Clodoueus had thus optayned victory of the Gothys, and set the countre of Guyan in order: he sped hym agayne into Fraunce.

And when he was comen into the countre of Turoñ/he was encoūtred wyth embassadours of themperours Anastasius, and presented from the sayd emperour wyth gyftes & greate pryce and honour, and also admytted for a consull of Rome, whyche at that dayes was a dygnyte of moste honour. whyche done, he remytted the sayd embassade wyth great gyftes. This sayenge is affyrmed of the other wryters/the whych shewe this honour to hym to be done, for as mych as he had ouercomen the Gothys, enemyes of Crystes fayth. But they name not the kynges name that then regned ouer the Gothys.

Thys besyneſſe ouerpassed/ Clodoueus contynued hys iourney tyll he came to the monastery or chyrche of saynt Martyn. where wyth great deuocyon accordyng to hys former pryomysse/he offered his stede that he occupyed that iourney agayne the Gothys. And after for that he entended to occuppe the sayd hors yf he hadde lyke nede: he redemed hym wyth a competent summe of golde. But yet the hors myghte not be remoued. Then ỹ kyng added to an hundreth pecys of golde/ which at those dayes were named golden shyllynges/ and so receyued hys stede. wherfore the kynge sayd after in game, that sayne Martyn was a good helper at nede/ but he was costelewe.

Thus thys noble and fyrste crysten pryncē cōtynued hys lyfe in noble and marcyall dedys/in augmentynge hys kyngdome by knyghtly batayles and other worldy prouysyons/ and lastly dyed of goddes visytacyō with all stedfastnes of fayth, whan he hadde regned. xxx. yeres/ leuyng after hym. iiii. sonnes of Clotylde hys wyfe/ that is to saye Clodomyrus, Chyldebertus, Theodoricus, and Clotharius / or after some Lotarius/and was buryed in ỹ monastery that he before nere vnto Paris hadde buylded, wyth suche epytaphy or superscripcyon vppon hys tumbe as after shalbe shewed.

But or I procede to the declaryng of the forsayd epitaphy/for so mych as I haue hard dyuers hold an opynyon, that the fayth of Cryste was

receyued

receyued in Fraunce or it were receyued in this lande of Brytayne: therfore I shall note here the tyme that this Clodoueus fyrst toke baptyme. whyche was as Ranulphe monke & other testifye, in the. xb. yere of hys reygne/or nere about. whyche was ỹ yere of our lord. iiii. C. lxxx. & xix.

Wherby yt apperyth, consyderynge the tyme of Lucius fyrst crystē prynce that euer was of Brytayne as before is shewed/that Cristes fayth was by a longe tyme honoured in Brytayn, or it were honoured in Fraunce / excepte that suche as holde the forsayd opynyō, accompte the fyrste comyng of Crystes fayth into Brytayne at ỹ fyrste conuersyon of the Sarons, whenne yt was prechyd by the holy monke saynt Augustyne and hys felowes/whych is not to the purpose. Than to the foresayde epitaphy or superscrypcyon as foloweth.

Diues opum, virtute potens, claruſq; triumpho,
Condidit hanc ſedem, rex Clodoueus idem.
Patricius magno, ſublimis fulſit honore.
Plenus amore dei, contempſit credere nullo
Lumina qui varijs horrent potenta figuris,
Mox purgatus aquis, & Chriſti fonte renatus
Fragrantem geßit, infuſo criſmate crinem.
Exemplūq; dedit, ſequitur quod plurima turba
Gentilis populi/ ſpretoq; errore ſuorum
Doctorem cultura deum, verumq; parentem.
Hijs felix meritis, ſuperauit geſta priorum
Semper conciliio, caſtris belliſq; tremendus.
Hortatu dux ipſe bonus, ac pectore fortis
Cōſtructas acies formauit in agmine primus.

The whyche verses maye be thus expouned in our moder tūge as here after foloweth.

Riche of goodes, stronge in vertue, in triumphe re shynynge,
Kyng Clodoueus, this temple buylte of stone
Fader of comon profete, clad with his honour excellynge.
Replenyssed with goddes lone, despysed hys olde foon
And hys pagann lawe, wyth the straunge fygurs echone.
Purgid with holy water, by cristes font born new
And holy crisme encinted flouted with vertue dew

Example gyuyng, hym foloweth many a man,
Forsakyng theyr errour and theyr fals goddes alb
And by his techynge honour but one god than
Thus by his merytes he excelled his parentall/
And thorough his coūsayle made cityc and castell thrall.
He was a noble duke, & therwith of grete mighe
And in front of batayle was euer the fyrst knyght

Anglia.

THE .C. CHAPITER.

After the laste or yongest sonne of Cōstantyne, and brother of Aurelius / was made kyng of Britayn in the yere of our lorde. v. hundred euen / and the. xbi. yere of Clodoueus than kynge of Fraunce. Thys as before ys touched, was surnamed Pendragō. The cause therof was as wytnessyth ỹ Englysshe cronycle, for so mych as Merlyn lykened hym vnto a dragō vnder a sterre apperynge in the firmament. wherof there is made a long processe, and by Gaufryde in his Brytysshe boke also affermed/ the whych to me semeth of lytell credēce. But trought it is, that after Uter was (as before is sayde) made kynge/he was enamowryd vpon the dukes wyfe of Cornewayll named Igwarne or Igorne/& for to optayn his vnlefull lust, sought many & dyuers meanes. So ỹ lastly he made warre vpō her husbāde named Garol? or Gorleis/& at lēgth slew ỹ sayde

ſayde duke at his caſtell called Tyntagell, ſtandynge in Cornewayle/ & after maryed his wyfe, and receyued of her the noble knyght Arthur, and a doughter named Amye, as ſayth the englyſhe cronycle.

More is not lefte of any wryter of authorite in remembraunce of thys Uter/ all be it that ſome teſtifye, that he by the helpe of Merlyne ſhulde fetche Coꝛia gigantum otherwyſe called the ſtone henge, out of Irlād as before I haue ſhewed in the ſtory of Aurelius. And of Gaufryde ys ſhewed, that Uter alſo ſhulde wynne the forſayde ladye by the enchauntement of Merlyn. whych is not comely to any chryſten relygyon to gyue to any ſuche fantaſtycall illuſyons any mynde or credence. wherfore I paſſe ouer, leuynge all the other mater, whych alſo ys there reherſyd of the warre betwene Uter and Oſca, ſonne of Hengyſte, for ſo mych as it is dyſcordaunt vnto other wryters/ and fynally conclude that thys Uter Pendragon dyed by force of venym, when he hadde ruled thys yle of Bry tayne by the full terme of .xvi. yeres/ and after was buryed by his brother Aurely in Coꝛia gigantum or ſtone henge, leuynge after hym the forenamed ſonne the puyſſaunt Arthur.

Francia.

THE .CI. CHAPITER.

Otharius or Clotharius the yongeſt ſonne of Clodoueꝰ/ was made kynge of a parte of Fraunce called Soiſons, in ỹ yere of our lorde .v. hundred and xiiii/ and the .xiii. yere of Uter then kynge of myche Brytayne. ye ſhall vnderſtande that after the deth of Clodoueus laſte kyng of Fraunce / the lande by hym was dyuyded to hys foure ſonnes. That is to ſay to the eldeſt ſonne Clodomirus was appoynted the lordſhyppe of Orlyaunce / to Theodoricus the ſeconde ſonne Auſtracye / to Childebertus ỹ thyrd ſon myddell Fraūce, or the countre lyenge about Paris/ and to this Lothayr, the aboue ſayd lordſhyppe of Soiſons. Of whyche ſayd lordſhyppes eyther of them poſſeſſyd/ they were of theyr ſubiettes called kynges, and ſo contynued in good reſte a certayne of tyme. In the whyche ſeaſon Clotyld theyr moder, berynge in mynde the vnnaturall deth of her parentes/ wylled her ſonnes to benge theyr deth. whych deth as teſtyfyeth Uincent hiſtoryall, and alſo Antoninus, was in this forme folowynge. Gundenchus the graūd father of Clotildis had .iiii. ſonnes/ that is to ſaye Cundebaldus, Gondigiſillus, Hilpericus, and Godomarus: To theſe .iiii. ſonnes Gundenchus beſette the lande of Burgoyne. Gondigiſillꝰ and Godomarꝰ dyed/ wherfore the land of Burgoyne fyll to Cundebaldus and Hilpericus. Then Cundebaldus for couetyſe of the hole lordeſhyp, ſlew his brother Hilpericus / & faſtened a great ſtone to the necke of his wyfe, and caſt her into a depe water. And of hys .ii. doughters, wherof the eldeſt hyght Trona/ he eryled in poore wede or clothynge. And the yonger he kepte in ſeruage wythin his owne courte. The whyche after as before is ſhewed was maryed agayne hys wyll vnto Clodoueꝰ fader to this Lotharyꝰ.

Then yt foloweth, this Lotharius ſonne of Clotild made ſharpe warre vpon Sigiſmonde ſonne of Cundebaldus, whyche then was dede. In the whyche warre the eldeſt ſonne Clodomyrus was ſlayne/ leuyng after hym

ter hym .iii. sonnes named Theobal dus, Guntherus or Guntharre, and Clodoaldus. whych .iii. sonnes toke to her tuycyon and guydynge. But the other brother mayntayned the warre agayn ỹ Burgoyniõs/in such wyse ỹ finally they obteyned ỹ ryght porcyon of theyr moder Clotilde.

After thys warre was fynyshed in Burgoyne: Childebertus the thyrd sonne herynge that Almarcus kyng of Spayne myssе entreated his suster/ made warre vppon hym, & lastly hym subdued and sette his suster in her former estate.

But whyle the said Childebert was thus in Spayne occupyed: Theodo rus his brother toke from hym a cy- tye to hym belongyng called Moũt- clere/ and slewe the knyghtes which Childebertus had lefte there to kepe the sayd cytye. For this myschcuous dede arose gret debate betwene these two bretherne/ but by medyacyon of frendes they were at lẽgth accordyd. Then Theodorus sought new mea- nes of dysplcasure agayne his sayde brother, as well treason as other wyse/ the whyche Childebert by his polycye and wysedome & wyth good fortune escapyd.

Childebertus than castynge in his mynde how he myght wynne to hym the patrymony or the lordeshyp that lately belõged vnto his eldest broder Clodomyrus: toke counsayle of his brother Clotharius. In such wyse ỹ they to gyder or of one assent, sent vn to theyr moder Clotyld for theyr ne- uewes, childern of theyr brother And she nothynge mystrustynge theym/ sent the sayde childern vnto the sayd ii. brethern. But wythin shorte tyme of theyr commyng vnto theyr sayde vncles, as testifyeth mayster Robert Sagwyne, and also the frẽche croni cle/ Lotharius tyrãnously wyth his sworde slew two of ỹ sayde childern. And then the thyrde fledde for his sa uegarde vnto suche as hym fauour- yd. He was after agayne taken and compelled to make a solemne othe, ỹ he shulde become a relygyous man, & neuer clayme any part of his ryght or enherytaunce. By which vnlefull meane the .ii. brothern obteyned the hole lordshyppe of Orleaunce / and partyd the reuennues thereof be- twene them/ but that endurыd but a whyle. And here I passe ouer the so- rowe that Clotylde made for the chil- dern of her sonne Clodomyrus/ and also the orderyng of the yongest son called Clodoaldus, whyche escaped the daunger of his vncles, as before is shewed / the whyche wolde aske a longe season.

THE .CII. CHAPITER.

It was not long after but that the seconde brother kynge or duke of Austracy, dyed of goddes vi sytacyon/ leuynge after hym a sonne named Theodobertus. The whyche of his two foresayde vncles was gre uously warred by lõge tract of tyme, the whyche he defendyd thorough his marciall knighthode. And when he by dyuers meanes hadde sought peace, and myght not purchase it: he then founde suche meanes by ryche gyftes and otherwyse, that he wãne the fauoure of his vncle Childebert/ and cherysshyd hym as his frende. Then fyll vnkyndnes betwene Chil debert and Lotharius / in so myche that eyther of thẽ assembled a great hoste to subdue that one the other. But the forenamed Theodobertus made all ỹ power he myght, to ayde and assyste Chyldebert. So that vp pon bothe partyes was a great mul- tytude of knyghtes armed redy to fyght. Clotilde then herynge of this mortall warre betwene her two sonnes/ and also consyderynge the lyke

lyhode

lyhode of the great effusyon of mannes blood that myghte ensue, by the reason of the ioynynge of these forsayd two hostes: in all hast yode vnto the sepulture or shrine of sayne Martyn. where wyth due deuocyon she made her specyall prayers / besechynge god and that blessyd sayne to sende by heuenly power some let or impedyment, ỹ the sayd hostes shuld not ioyne in batayll. By meane of whyche prayer when the sayde two hostes were in preparyng for to haue ronne to gyther: sodeynly fyll suche a tempeste of wynde and hayll wyth thunder and lyghtnynge, that bothe hostes were so greuously beten with the sayde tempeste and wederynge, that eyther of them had most mynde how they myght defende them selfe from daunger of the said wederyng. And ouer that, as testyfyeth ỹ aboue named Authour/eyther of the hostes thought in theyr myndes, that they were chased of theyr enimies/in such wyse that eyther of them fledde from other by a longe space.

After this eyther of them sent meanes of treatyse eyther to other / and at length confermed a peace betwene them. The whyche peace surely on both partyes assured Childebert excytyd his brother to warre vppon a people or countre called Terra Conens in the prouynce of Spayn, and besegyd the cytye of Saragounce otherwise called Augusta/& fynally kept the cytesyns so shorte, that they to appease theyr enimyes, caused the byshoppe of the cytye to open the sepulchre of sayne Vyncent, and gyue to Lotharius a parte of ỹ holy martyrs bodye.

But yet that notwythstandynge/ though the syege were wythdrawen and the cytye sparyd: yet the countre there aboute they [illegible] and wasted wythoute pyte. And after wyth great rychesse of praye, retourned in to Fraunce. where at Paris by Chil debert soone after was builded a monastery in the worshyppe of god and of sayne Vincent/where the forsayd relyke was sette and reuerētly kepte. whych monastery at this daye is called sayne Germayns de Pree.

In thys whyle, I can not saye by what happe/ these two brethern newly malygned agayne theyr neuewe Theodobert the son of theyr brother Theodorich. And entendyd by theyr malyce to byreue hym of the lordeshyppe of Austracy. And to that entent gatheryd theyr people to warre vpon the sayde Theodobert. wherof when ỹ sayd Theodobert was ware, consyderynge he coude not so shortely assemble his people to wythstande the malyce of his sayd vncles: he in lowly and good maner rode agayne them in a peasyble wise. And to them behaued hym so well in worde and dede, that they alonely forgaue not hys trespasse / but also sente hym agayne with great rychesse of gyftes.

Soone after thys tyme dyed Clotilde the wife of Clodoueus/ỹ which with great pompe of her two sonnes was buryed by her sayde husbande. And shortly after dyed Theodobert aforenamed / leuynge after hym a sonne named Theobalde. In thys passe tyme Lotherius of hys wyfe receyued. vii. sonnes & two doughters. Of the whyche Crampyris the eldest sonne he sente into Guyan, to haue the rule therof vnder his father. But he contrary to hys fathers mynde/ oppressyd the inhabytauntes therof wyth greuous exactyons and tribute/ wherfore hys father beynge dyscontent, called hym thens. Crampyris wyth this beynge sore amoued/ in great angre departed his fathers courte, & yode vnto Childebert hys vncle, excytynge hym to make warre

vppon hys father/ imagynynge fals occasyons to bryng the two brethern at dyssaunce / and made a solemne othe to his vncle , that durynge hys lyfe he shuld stregth his party agayn his owne father. whyche assuraunce thus made, Chyldebert prepared hys hoste to warre agayne his brother Lotharij. But ỹ sayd Lotharij of this beynge warned/for such lette as he then haddde , sent agayne hys enymyes two sonnes of hys, named Gunthranus and Aribertꝰ/ & whyle these two sonnes made toward Chil debert , he in that whyle made great waste in the countre of Champayne/ and takynge great pryses, returned into hys owne countre of myddell Fraunce. wherof herynge the forena med Guntranus and hys brother/ and also that in Guyan was moued warre by Crampꝫ: spedde them thyder wyth all theyr people. But they dydde nothynge worthye memorye or laude.

In thys season dyed the forsayde Chyldeberte brother of Lotharius wythout heyre/when he hadde ruled myddell Fraunce. xlviii. yeres , as sayeth the Frenche cronycle / and was enterred in ỹ monastery of saint Vyncent, otherwyse called sayntе Germayne de Pree.

THE .CIII. CHAPITER.

After the deth of Childebert/ for so myche as he dyed wythout heyre, Lotharius forenamed sea syd all myddell Fraunce into his pos sessyon. And after he hadde somdele sette yt in order / not forgetynge the innaturall rebellyon of hys son Cra mpꝫis : chase vnto hym a puryd com pany of knyghtes and of competent nomber/ & in all haste made toward Guyan , where ỹ sayd Crampꝫ was then abydynge. But when he harde of the cõmynge of his father agayn hym with his chosyn armye: he with drewe hym to the vttermost partyes of Fraunce/ and requyryd ayde of a kynge or duke to that partye adioy nynge named Gonobalde/the which to hym promised ayde to his power.

Lotharius of this affinyte beyng warned / pursued the sayde Gono balde so sharpely , that he constrayn ned hym at length to take the chyrch of sayntе Martyne , and to holde yt for his saucgarde. But when Lotha rius had assayd by dyuerse meanes, as well by fayre promyse as wordes of Manasses, and myght not get the sayde Gonobalde oute of that holy place : he set the chyrche on fyre, and brent the duke in the same/the which shortely after he reedifyed and made in more better maner then yt before hadde ben.

when Crampꝫis was thus dispoyn ted of ỹ ayde of Gonobalde : he then fledde into lyttell Bretayne, and re quyred ayde of the erle therof named Conabutus/ where by comforte of ỹ sayde erle he assembled a great hoste to wythstand his father. wherof the father beynge asserteyned drewe to warde hym . And when both hostes were nere : they sent messagers to ỹ father to entreate a peace. But Lo tharius included so many harde con dycyons wythin the sayde peace/ or as some writersmeane, Crampꝫis de syred such vnlefull desyres of his fa ther/that the sayd treaty myght take none effecte . And for truste that he had in the Bretons and his strength he was vtterly bent to trye his cause by dynt of swerde.

Lotharius hauynge experiẽce that fortune of batayl is in victory dout full & vncertayne: he therfore made hys prayer to god/ besechynge hym of ayde agayne the innaturall and obstynate rebellyon of his sonne.

After

After whych prayer endyd/ he commaunded in the name of god to sette vppon his enymyes. whyche mette with so grete ire/that shortly ỹ grene feld was dyed into a perfyght redde/ and many knyghtes vpon both partyes laye slayne, and gruntynge vppon the erthe. The father comfortynge and callynge vpon his knyghtes vppon the one parte, and the son vpon his knyghtes vpon that other parte /eyther of them entendynge ỹ deth and vtter destruccyon of eche other/thus this batayll hangynge in suspence to whether of them the victorye shuld turne: sodeynly the Britons gaue backe/ and gaue place to the Frencheimen. wyth the which the French partye beyng cõforted/enforced ỹ Britons wyth so sharpe fyght, that they were compelled to forsake the felde, and toke theym to flyght/ whom the Frencheimen chasyd and slewe wythout mercy.

In the whyche chase Cramyris wyth hys wyfe and chyldern were taken and presentyd vnto Lotharius. The whyche shortly after, settynge a parte all faderly loue, compassion, and pytye, causyd a great fyre to be made/ into the whyche he commaunded to be caste the sayde Cramyris with also hys wyfe and chyldern. Or as wytnessyth the frenche cronycle, they were all enclosyd in a house/ and the house and they to gether consumyd wyth fyre.

Thus the moste cruell father with out pyte chastysyd ỹ inobedyent son, to the example and lernyng of other, to bere dewe obedyẽce vnto theyr parentes. After this victory and cruell chastysement executed by Lotharij: he retourned into Fraunce. And so to the sepulcre or shryne of saynte Martyne/yeldynge to god and hym thankes of thys victorye, and offeryd there many ryche gyftes. And after spedde hym to Soysons/where he as kynge of all Fraunce / excepte the lordshyppe of Austracy, whyche Theobald sonne of his brother sons Theodorich then helde. The father of this Theobald was Theodobert. Then Lotharius seynge hys lande in reste and quyetnesse/ gaue hym to huntynge and chace of wylde bestes, a game of great vse amõg all frẽche prynces.

In whyche dysporte he beyng one daye greatly trauayled, caught some surfet/ of the whyche ensued a mortall sykenes, so that he dyed shortely after, when he hadde reygned as before is specifyed ouer the lordshyppe of Soysons and other, by the terme of.l. wynter full. And was after buryed at Soisons with great pompe/ leuynge after hym foure sonnes, Gũthranus, Aribertus, Chilpericus, & Sigebertus.

It is testyfyed of mayster Robert Gagwyne, that saynte Radegunde borne of the countre of Thurynge, of a pagan father named Bernigarius, was wyfe to this Lothaẽ. whose vertuous lyfe Antonin⁹ in his boke called Sm̃ Antonini, in the.viii.chapter & .xii.tytle of the seconde parte of his worke, shewyth cõpendyously.

Anglia.

THE .CIIII. CHAPITER.

ARthur⁹ the sonne of Uter Pendragon a strepelynge of.xv.yeres of age beganne his reygne as kynge of Bytayne, in the yere of oure lorde v.hundred and.xvii/ and the thyrde yere of Lotharius, then kynge of Fraunce, or of a parte therof, as before is declared. Of this Arthure is

by Gaufryde recyted a longe ſtoꝛye, and alowed by the englyſh cronycle, the whyche from other wꝛyters ys greatly dyſcoꝛdaunte. But yet all authours agreen that he was noble and victoryous in all his dedys.

Fayne I wolde declare the fame of this noble pꝛynce, to the comfoꝛte of other to folowe his marcyall dedis/ ſo that I myght ſomwhat iuſtyfye my repoꝛte by ſome authoure of authoꝛyte. But the moꝛe I am in doute, bycauſe of the ſayenge of Ranulphe monke of Cheſtre/ whyche vouchyth yt vppon wyllyam wꝛyter of hyſtoꝛyes of kynges, as ys reherſed at length in the. vi. chappter of the. v. boke of Policronicō/ which is there open to euery man that ys deſyꝛous to knowe the ſayde repoꝛte oꝛ oppynyon/ the whyche foꝛ the legth therof I ouerpaſſe. And ſomwhat to the honour of ſo great a champyon as was thys Arthur, I ſhall lay vnto the reder, that he may wyth authoryte ſhewe vnto the herers/ and ther wyth gladde the welſheman that he ſhuld deſcēde of ſo noble a victour/ whych ſo many dedys of honour executed in his dayes.

Then as teſtyfyeth Polycronycon and other/ Arthur kaught. xii. notable batayllis agayne the Saxons, and of them all was victour.

wherfoꝛe the fyꝛſte was vpon the ryuer of Cleuy/ and. iiii. the nexte were foughten vpon the ryuer Douglys, which rynneth vnder the town of wygan, vpon ten myles from the ryuer of Merſe in Lancaſhyꝛe.

The. vi. batayll was vppon the ryuer called Baſſa.

The. vii. beſyde Lyncolñ in a wood called Celidoñ.

The. viii. and the. ix. were foughten about yoꝛke.

The. x. was about Nycolk towne, whyche is named warwyk as after ſome wꝛyters.

The. xi. was at Bathe/ where he longe beſegyd Cerdicus kynge of weſtſaxons.

The. xii. and laſt was at a place called Badon oꝛ Babowe hyll/ in which he ſlewe many Saxons. But that notwythſtandynge he myght not clerely voyde them his lande/ but that they kepte theyꝛ coūtres, which they were befoꝛe poſſeſſyd of/ as Kente, Southerey, and Noꝛff: all be it that ſome authours teſtyfy that they held theſe countres as trybutaryes vnto Arthure.

Thys noble warryour as wytneſſyth holy Gildas, ſlew with his own hande in one daye by ꝑ helpe of our ladye ſaynte Marye/ whoſe picture he bare peynted in his ſhelde, a hundꝛed and. xl. Saxons. whyche ſhelde he called Pꝛydweñ/ his ſwerd was called Caliboure/ and his ſpere was called Roñ, after the bꝛytyſhe tunge oꝛ ſpeche.

The thyꝛde oꝛ fourth.

THE .CV. CHAPITER.

ABout the. v. yere of this Arthur, after the agrement of moſte wꝛyters beganne the loꝛd ſhyppe of weſtſaxōs, vnder ꝑ Saxon called Cerdicus & Kenricus hys ſonne. Foꝛ Denys and other wytneſſe, that this loꝛdſhyppe oꝛ kyngdome ſhulde haue his begynnynge the. lxxi. yere. after the fyꝛſte commynge of Hengiſte/ oꝛ the yere of oure loꝛde fyue hundꝛed. xxii. which agreeth wyth the. v. yere of Arthure afoꝛeſayde.

Thys lordſhyppe conteyned the weſte countre of Englande/ as wyll ſhyꝛe

wyltshyre, Somersetshyre, Berks, Dorsl. and other/ as Deuonshyre, and Cornewayll /and hadde in the Est syde Southampton/in ỹ north Thamys the famouse ryuer/ in the south and weste the see Ocean.

This forsayde Cerdicus, whyche of some authours is named Childricus/lãded fyrst at Cerdyshore which nowe is called yermouth, an hauen towne in the countre of Norff. And by helpe of other Saxons then inhabyted in that countre then called est Anglys: the sayd Cerdicus at lẽgth obteyned the forsayde countre and named yt westsaxon or westsaxonia/ and reygned therin as lorde or kyng a certayne of yeres, and Kenric⁹ his sonne after hym.

The fyrste chrysten kynge of this prouynce was named Kyngilsus / and cõuertyd by meanes of that blessed man Berinus byshoppe of Dorchester. To whom Quichelinus brother of the forsayd Kyngilsus, gaue the sayd cytye to make there hys see, after he also had receyued baptyme of the sayde Berinus. And as Guydo wytnessyth the sayde Quichelinus gaue after to the byshoppe of wynchester. vii. myles compasse of lande, to buylde there a byshoppes see/ the whyche was accomplyshed and fynyshed by Kenwalcus his son. Thys kyngdome enduryd longeste of all the other / whyche were. vii. in nomber, or .vi. besyde thys. Some wryters accompte the terme of the duraunce of thys kyngdome, from Cerdicus to Egbert/and some to the laste yere of Aluredus. But Guydo accomptyth the enduraunce of thys kyngdome, from the fyrste yere of Cerdicus vnto the laste yere of Edwarde the cõfessour. By reason wher of yt shuld endure fyue hundred and .lxiii. yeres. But moste accordyngly yt shulde be rekened from the fyrst yere of Cerdicus to the laste yere of Aluredus. For he made one monarchye of all. vii. kyngdomes/in which tyme dyd flowe or passe thre hũdred lxxbiii. yeres.

THE .CVI. CHAPITER.

NOwe then I wyll returne vnto Arthur/ the whych by a longe tyme dwelled in warre and mortall batayll wyth ỹ Saxõs, by meane of theyr dayly repayre into this lande. The whyche also alyed them with Pictes and other nacyons, and made theyr partye the strenger by ỹ meane. But yet Arthur by his marciall knyghthod brought theym in suche frame / that he was accõpted for chyef lord of Brytayne.

Fynally when he hadde by a longe tyme maynteyned hys warres agayne the Saxons/and specyally agayne Cerdicus or Childricus kyng of westesaxons: he for a fynall concorde gaue vnto the sayde Cerdicus as testyfyeth Policronica in the .vi. chappter of his .v. boke. the two cõtres of Hampshyre and Somerset. And when he hadde sette hys lande in some quietnesse, he betoke the rule therof vnto hys neuewe Mordred/ and wyth a chosyn armye sayled, as sayth Gaufryde and other, vnto Fraũce/where by the reporte of Gaufryde he wrought wonders.

But the wryters of Frenche cronycles touche nothynge of suche notable dedes/ nor yet the wryters of Romaynes mynde nothynge of suche actes done agayne theyr consull or emperoure called by Gaufryde Lucius Hybert⁹. Therfore I wyll spare all that longe mater: remyttyng the welshemen as touchynge ỹ procesſe

vnto the sayd Gaufride. And here I wyll folowe Policronicon, where he sayth, that for as mych as the forenamed Mordred was desyrous to be kynge/ & ferd some dele the myght of Cerdicus kyng of westsaxons: he therfore drewe to hym the sayde Cerdicus by great gyftes, as of townes and castelles & other meanes/ where thorough the sayd Cerdicus to hym assented, so that Mordred was at London crowned kyng of Brytayn/ and Cerdicus after the vse of pagās was at wyncheſter then called Kaerguent crowned kyng of westsaxons.

when relacyō came to Arthur of all this treason wrought by his neuewe Mordred: he in all haste made towarde Brytayn, as yt is redde in the englyshe cronycle/ & lāded at Sandwyche, where he was mette of Mordred and hys people/ whych gaue vnto hym strong batayll in tyme of his landyng, and loste there many of his knyghtes, as the famouse knyghte Gawyne and other. But yet this not withstandyng Arthur at lēgth wāne the lande, and chasyd his enymyes/ and after the enterryng of his cosyn Gawyn and other of his knyghtes there slayne, he sette forwarde his hoste to pursue his enymyes. Mordred thus beynge ouerſette of his vncle at the see syde/ withdrewe hym to wyncheſter. where he beynge furnyſshed of newe soudyours, gaue vnto Arthur, as sayth Gaufryde, ỳ secōde fyghte/ wherin also Mordred was put to the worſe, and constrayned to flee. Thyrdely and lastely the sayde Mordred faught wyth his vncle Arthur beſydes Glaſtynbury/ where after a longe and daungerouſe fyght, Mordred was slayn/ & ỳ victorious Arthur wounded vnto the deth/ and after buryed in the vale of Avalon beſyde Glaſtynbury beforesayde.

Of this laſte ende and buryenge of Arthur in the brytyſshe bokes are tolde many fables. But to oppreſſe ỳ errours of Brytons, ỳ thynke or byleue ỳ Arthur yet lyueth: Policronicon ſhewith in his forenamed chapyter of his .v. boke, ỳ in the secōde Henryes tyme kynge of Englande the bonys of the sayd Arthur and Gwaynour his wyfe were foūden/ and trāſlated into the forsayde chyrch of Glaſtynbury, and there newe buryed in the yere of our lord .xi. hundred. lxxx. And more ſpecially yt is noted in the xxiii. chappyter of the .vii. boke of Policronicon aboue sayde.

wherfore to be at cōcluſyon of a fyne of this noble warryour/ he was as before is ſhewed, slayne or wounded to deth, when he hadde reygned ouer the Britons by ỳ terme of .xxvi. yeres/ wyllynge before his deth that Conſtantyne the ſon of Cador duke of Cornewayle, for ſo mych as of his bodye remayned none heyre, that he ſhulde be his heyre and enheryte the land of mych Britayn after his deth.

Anglia.

THE .CVII. CHAPITER.



Conſtantinus the ſon of Cador duke of Cornewayle/ by aſſent of the Brytons was of them crowned kynge of mych Brytayne, in the yere of Cryſtes incarnacyon fyue hūdred .xliii/ and the .xix. yere of Lotharius then kynge of Fraunce. This was nere kynneſman vnto Arthur/ and was by the two ſonnes of Mordred greuouſly vexed, for ſo mych as they claymed the lande by the ryghte or tytle of theyr father. So ỳ betwene hym and them were foughten many and sondry bataylles. wherof nother of place

of place nor of tyme is left any conuenyent memorye / nor yet of the names of the sayde two sonnes.

But as dyuerse authours agreen, after these forsayde batayllys thus foughten / fynally the two sonnes of Mordred were constrayned of pure force to seche strong holdes for theyr refuge. wherfore that one toke London, and that other wynchester.

wherof Constantyne beynge warned / lefte not tyll he had slayne that one wythin the monastery of sayncte Amphiabill at wynchester / and that other wythin a temple or chyrche of London, whych temple is named of Gaufryde an hous of freres. But ỹ sayeng is doutefull / for at that days yt is to be supposed, that there was none hous of freres within London nor by a longe tyme after.

when Constantine hadde thus subdued his enymyes, and thought hym selfe in a maner of suertye of his regyon: then fortune as she hadde enuyed his glory, arreryd agayne hym his owne kynnesman named Aurelius Conanus / the whych agayn hym made mortall batayll / and finally or at the last slewe hym in ỹ felde, when he hadde reygned after most accorde of wryters .iii. yeres / the whych was then buryed at Stone hyenge by the sepulture of Uter Pẽdragon / wyth great solemnytye.

THE .CVIII. CHAPITER.

AUrelius Conanus the cosyn of Constantyne last named / was crowned kyng of Britayne, in ỹ yere of our lord. v. hundred .xlvi / & the .xxxii. yere of Lotharius before named then kynge of Fraunce. This was noble and lyberall. But he was a man that cherysshed suche as loued stryfe and dyscencyon wyth in his lande / and gaue lyghte credence to them ỹ accused other, were yt tyght or wronge. And as testyfyeth Gaufryde and other / he toke by strength his vncle, whyche of tyght shulde haue ben kyng, and caste hym in a strong pryson / and after slew tyrannously the .ii. sonnes of his sayd vncle. But he reioysed his reygne but shorte whyle. For as wytnessyth the sayde Gaufryde, when he hadde reygned two yeres he dyed, were yt of the sonde of god or otherwyse / leuynge after him a sonne named Uortiporius, as hath the authoure of the boke named Floure of hystoryes.

Of this Uortiporius speketh nothynge the englyshe cronycle / but telleth of two kynges that shulde reygne nexte after Constantyne both at ones / wherof that one he nameth Adelbryght, and that other Edyll. wherunto none other wryter agreeth except that he nameth them for some of the kynges of the Saxons. For aboute that tyme reygned in Kent or soone after, Ethelbert or Athelbert / whyche myghte be taken of some for Adelbryght. And that other whyche he named Edyll, myght be taken for Ella kynge of Southsaxons. But this Ella shulde not by concorde of wryters be lyuynge at this tyme. It myght wyth more conuenyency accorde, that yt shulde be a kynge of Deira or of Northũberlande named Ella, the whyche reygned more aboute this tyme and season.

Of these two kynges, the sayde englysh cronycle telleth a longe processe / the whych for I fynde none authour of authorite that wryteth or speketh of the same, I passe yt ouer.

ye shall also furthermore vnderstande, that after this daye the Brytons dayly dyscreasyd of lordshyppe and rule wythin Brytayne, & drewe them towarde Cambry or walys / so that the countre about Chestre was

the chyefe of theyr lordshyp wythin Brytayne. For dayly the Sarons landed wyth companyes, and occupyed ỳ principall partes of ỳ same/ as shortely here after shall appere.

The fyfthe kyngdome of the Sarons.

THE .CIX. CHAPITER.

IN the tyme of the reygne of this fore named Aurelius Conanus / as wyt nesseth Polycronica, Guido, & other: beganne the kyngdome or lordshyp of Brenicia vnder a Saron named Ida/ the yere of our lorde. v. hundred and. xlvii/ and the seconde or laste yere of the sayd Conanus. Thys lordshyp was in the north parte of Brytayne/ and grewe in short whyle more & more, so that fynally it was named the kyngdome of Northumberlande. But ye shall vnderstande, that this lordshyp was fyrste deuyded in two kyngdomes/ wherof the fyrste, as aboue is sayde was called Brenicia, and that other Deyra. The meris or markis of this kyngdome of Northũberlande were by Easte and by west the occean see/ by south the ryuer of Humber, and so downwarde towarde the weste by the endys of ỳ shyres of Notyngham and Derby, vnto the ryuer of Mersse or Mercia / and by north the Scottysshe see, whyche is called forth in Scottysh/ & in Brettysshe the werde.

The southsyde of thys lordshyppe was called Deyra, whyche is nowe called the bysshoprike of Durham, and the north syde was called Brenicia / whyche were than departyd or seuered by the ryuer of Tyne. Deyra conteyned the lande from Humber to the ryuer of Tyne / and Brenicia included the countree from Tyne to the Scottysshe see.

In Brenicia regned fyrste as is aboue sayd Ida or Idas/ & in Deyra regned fyrste Ella/ whych lordshyppes began bothe within .iii. yeres. But in processe of tyme bothe in one were named the kyngdome of Northumberlande/ whych so contynued somwhyle vnder one kynge, & some whyle vnder two, by the terme of. iii. hundred and. xxi. yeres, as sayth Ranulphe munke of Chester. And after furth contynued ỳ name vnder Sarons and Danes, tyll the comynge of Edredus brother of Ethelstane & son of Edwarde ỳ elder. The whiche Edredus in the. ix. or last yere of hys reygne, ioyned thys to hys owne kyngdome. By which reasõ it shulde seme, that thys kyngdome endured vnder that name vpon. iiii. hundred and .ix. yeres.

The fyrste crysten prynce of thys kyngdome was named Edwynus/ that receyued the fayth of sayntPaulyne, as testyfyeth Guydo. In thys lordshyppe also were included these shyres and countrees nowe called yorke, Notyngham shyre or Snothyngham shyre, Derby shyre, ỳ bysshoprike of Durham, Copelande, and other.

Amonge the many kynges ỳ reygned in thys lordshyppe, whych after some wryters were to the nomber of xviii. reygned one accõpted the . viii. kynge by Guydo, named Ethelfridꝰ & sonne of Ethelricus. whych Ethelfridus destroyed mo Brytons than all ỳ other kynges of Sarõs. This was fader to saint Oswold & Oswi.

He slewe also many of the Brytõs at a batayle that he had agayn them besyde Kaerlegyon or Chester, and two thousande and a hũdred of monkes of the house of Bangor, as it ys testyfyed

testyfyed of Polycronicon in the .x. chappter of hys .v. boke/ the whyche monkes were comen thyder to praye for the good spede of the Brytons. And ouer thys forsayde nomber of monkes .l. fled / whereby they wyth theyr leder named Brucyuall were sauyd. Of suche a nomber of monkes of one house/ myghte be demyd a wonder. But the sayd Policronica, wyth Guydo, and other wryters/ affermyn that in that house of Bangor were at those dayes for the more party thre tymes .vii, hundred monkes, the whych lyued by the trauayle of theyr handes onely.

The forenamed Oswye, was after Oswolde kynge of thys prouynce/ whych gaue wyth hys doughter Elfleda a nonne .xii. lordshyppes into ỹ chyrche, to buylde wyth .xii. monasteryes/ whereof .vi. of the sayde lordshyppes were in Brenicia, and .vi. in Deyra/ as sayth Guydo. And also Ranulphe in hys .v. boke of Polycronyca and .xvi. chappter affermyth the same.

THE .CX. CHAPITER.

Vortipor ỹ sonne of Aurelyꝰ Conanus after the oppynyon before sayd/ was ordeyned kynge of Brytayne in the yere of our lorde .v. hundred and .xlviii. and the .xxiiii. yere of Clotharius thenne kynge of Fraunce. Of the whych is lytell memory lefte in any cronycler or wryter/ excepte ỹ Guydo testyfyeth hym to be a vyctorious knyght/ shewyng breefly that he in sondry batayles scomfyted the Sarons / and defendyd hys lande and Brytons from ỹ daunger of them and other that the Sarons alyed them wyth.

In the tyme of the reygne of thys kynge/ a Saxon named Ella the son of Iffus, began to reygne in ỹ south syde of the kyngdome of Northumberlande called Deyra / as before is touchyd in the chappter of the sayde kyngdome.

Then yt foloweth/ whan this Vortipor hadde ruled the Brytons knyghtly by the terme of .iiii. yeres/ he dyed, and was put to hys fader/ leuynge none heyre of hys body.

For as mych as all wryters agreen, that the kynges of westsaxon at length subdued all the other kyngdomes/ and made of the hole land of mych Brytayne but one kyngdome or monarchye/ and all other as well of Brytons as of Sarons fayled or lefte of, that all onely excepted: therfore I entende to bryng in, the name of euerych kyng of westsaxon frō the fyrst Cerdycus or Chyldricus, & ioyne them wyth the kynges of Brytons/ for so long as hereafter ỹ sayd Brytons contynued theyr reygne wythin any parte of Brytayne.

THE .CXI. CHAPITER.

Malgo a duke of the Brytons and neuewe of Aurelyꝰ Conanus, as sayth the authour of the Floure of hystories/ begā his reigne ouer the Brytons in the yere of oure lorde .v. hundred .lii/ and the .xxxviii. yere of Clotharius then styll kynge of Fraunce/ and also the .xv. yere of Kenricus the sonne of Cerdicus and seconde kyng of westsaxō afore sayd: accomptyng .xv. yeres of the reygne of hys fader, as Guydo allowyth. Thys Malgo after ỹ accorde of all wryters that make mencyon/ was ỹ comlyest and mooste personable man of all Brytons than lyuyng, & therewyth endowed with knyghtly manhode. The whyche wythstode ỹ Sarons and kepte them of, that they damaged not the lande/ the whyche he then had possessyon of. And as wytnessyth Gaufryde & other/ he by hys manhode subdued ỹ iles of Iseland, Orchades

Orchades or Orkeys, and Norway wyth other.

In the tyme of the reygne of thys Malgo/reygned in the lordshyp or kyngdome of Kent Ethelbertus/the whych as wytnesseth Polycronycō, assembled an hoste of hys knyghtes, and gaue batayle vnto Ceawlmus sonne of Kenricus and then kyng of westsaxon/the cause whereof ys not expressyd. But thys batayle was ỳ fyrste batayle that was foughten by twene the Saxons, after that they opteyned lande and dwellynge with in Brytayne/whyche was foughten in a place called wylbaldowne. And in the fyghte was slayne.ii.dukes of Ethelbertus/and hym selfe with his people chasyd.

Also yt hys wytnessyd of the sayde Polycronica, that ỳ yere folowynge Cutwolfus the brother of Ceawlmꝰ before named / faughte strongely agayn the Brytons at Bedforde/ and berafte them. iiii. cytes or townes named Liganbroght, Egelsborgth, Besyngton, and Eupsham.

Then to retorne agayn to Malgo kynge of the Brytons / the authour of the Floure of hystoryes sayth, that not wythstandynge the many vertues, the whyche god had endowed hym wyth/ he lastely forgate god for sakynge all vertue, and gaue hym to sondry vices and synnes, wherof the odible synnes of Sodomy was one/ wherfore fell to hym great plecucyō of hys enemyes the Saxons, as before sōdele is shewyd & more ensueth

It was not longe after the forenamed batayle done at Bedforde / but that the forsayd Cutwolfus dyed. But yet hys sayd brother Ceawlmꝰ couetouse of worshyppe, mayntey ned hys warre agayne the Brytons/ so that after he made a newe voyage agayne them, and made of them an other scomfyture / & toke from them ỳ famous cytes of Bathe, of Glou ceter, and wurceter / whyche shulde be by ỳ meanynge of Ranulfe about the yere of the reygne of thys Malgo .xxix.

Of all thys spekyth nothynge the cronycle of England/but he maketh hys proceſſe of a kynge named Cortyf. By the whyche as yt shulde seme by the reherſall folowynge that he makyth of Gurmunde / that Caretticus ruled the Brytōs nerte after the deth of thys Malgo / as when the tyme cometh more playnly yt shall appere. Then it foloweth aboute the. xxxiii. yere of thys Malgo / Ceawlmus before named gadered hys Saxons, and foughte wyth the Brytons at a place called Fechanlege. where after longe fyght Ceawlmus chasyd the Brytons, & wan of them vyctory. But hys brother called Cutha, was slayne in ỳ fyght/for whom he made greate sorowe. Thus in hys latter dayes Malgo beynge oppressyd & pursued of hys enemyes lastly dyed / when he hadde reygned after moste cōcorde of storyes. xxxb. yeres.

Francia.

THE .CXII. CHAPITER.



Hilperic⁹ the. iii. son of Lotharius or Clotharius before named/ begā hys reygne ouer ỳ parte of Fraūce called Soysons, in the yere of oure lorde god. v. hundred. lxiiii/ and the xiiii. yere of Malgo then kynge of Brytayne. Thys not beyng content wyth suche as hys fader had hym bequeth/so soone as the obsequy and enterremēt of his fader was fynysshed, he spedde hym vnto Parys and possessyd hym of hys faders treasoure. wherof his. iii. brethern beyng warned/

ned/purchaſyd to the ſuch fredſhyp of the nobles of Fraunce, that they vnwetynge theyr ſayd broder hadde entre into Paris/and lykely to haue takyn hym there in, yf he had not the ſoner eſcaped.

For thys incõuenyence grete diſcẽcyon was lykely to haue growen by twene theſe.iiii.bretherne/hadde not ben the mediacyon of frendes vpon bothe partyes. The whyche by good & polityke wayes, at length pacyfied all varyaũces amonge them / & concluded for a fynall peaſe, ỹ eyther of the ſayd bretherne ſhuld hold hym cõtent with ſuch porcyõ as was befoze aſſygned to thẽ by theyr fader. That is to ſaye to the eldeſt brother named Aribert⁹ or after ſome wryters Cherebris, ſhulde falle the countrey that is lyenge about Paris called mydle Fraunce/to Guntranus ſhulde falle the prouynce of Orleaunce/ and to thys Chylpericus / the prouynce of Soyſons / and to Sygebertus the yongeſt brother, ſhulde belonge the countrey of Mees or of Auſtracy. whych lordſhyp begynneth at Champeyne as affyrmeth the Frenche cronicle, and ſtretchyth to the lordſhyp or prouynce of Lorayne vppon one parte, & to Almayne vppõ that other part. After which cõcorde & agremẽt thus fynyſſhed/eyther of ỹ ſayd bretherne depted vnto his pper lordſhyp

If I ſhulde here diſcribe the maners & condycyons of theſe.iiii.prynces/or to expreſſe ỹ vnlauful lechery of the eldeſt brother Aribertus, in refuſyng hys laufull wyfe Ingebryda or Ingeberta/or of the raupſhement of wyues & virgyns by hym done/or yet the vnſtableneſſe of lyuyng that was alſo in ỹ ſeconde brother Guntran⁹, with vertues and vyces of the other: I ſhuld therof make a longe worke. wherfore to brynge this ſtory to ſome cõuenyẽce, I thus begynne.

Trouth it is that thys Chilpericus or after ſome Hilpericus/toke to wyfe the doughter of the kynge of Spayne called Athanahild⁹, whoſe name was Golſanda. The whyche had to hyr handmayden a mayde called Fredegunda, the whyche was of paſſyng beaute, and ſhappe of body. But to hyr was ioyned ſubtyll wyt and cuyll condycyons / contrary to hyr lady and mayſtres, which was ſymple and of vertuous condycyõs.

To the yongeſt brother named Sigebert was coupled in mariage the ſyſter of the ſayde Golſanda named Brunechildis, or after ỹ Frenſh cronicle Bruneheuſte/ a woman of peruers & wycked cõdicyõ as after ſhall appere. Then it foloweth, Chilperich within ſhorte tyme that he was thus maryed vnto Golſanda, caſte vnlaufull loue vnto hyr woman Fredegũda. By reaſon wherof fell ſuche vnkyndneſſe bytwene them, ỹ laſtly ſhe was foũden in her chamber dede and ſtrangelyd wyth a corde/ whych was done by the hande of hyr houſbande, as teſtyfyeth ỹ frenche boke.

Then ſecondly he maryed a nother wyfe named Audouera a woman of great byrth: how be it myne authour nor yet ỹ frenche cronycle declaryth not her progeny/ with ỹ which he cõtynued & kepte hyr after hyr honour. But yet he withdrew not hys vnlaufull loue frõ ỹ forenamed Fredegũd.

In thys paſſetyme/cauſe of warre was moued bytwene Sigebert the yonger brother, and men of the countrey of Sweuy / for the whyche the ſayde Sigebert requyred ayde of hys brother Chilperich. At whoſe requeſt he in all haſte aſſembled hys people and ſpedde hym towarde hys brother / leuynge hys wyfe greate wyth chylde, in the keppyng of the forſayde Fredegunde. Of the whyche wyfe as teſtyfyeth the Frenche

boke,

booke, he hadde beforе receyued.iii. ſonnes named Theodobertus, Meroueus, and Clodoueus.

It was not longe after that Chilperiche, as beforе is ſayd, in ayde of his brother was departed / but that his wyfe was delyuеryd of a doughter. And when thys chylde ſhulde be confermed of the byſhoppe/ this Fredegunde entendynge to make a deuorce betwene Chilperich & his wife, by her ſubtyle and falſe coniectoure counſayled the quene that ſhe ſhulde for the more honoure conferme her own childe. And the quene truſtyng her counſayle/ ſuppoſynge her counſayle hadde ben for the beſte, confermed her owne chylde.

THE .CXIII. CHAPITER.

In this whyle the kynge wyth his brother occupped in warre agayne ỹ Suytzers or men of Swe up/bare them ſo knyghtly, that they ſubdued theyr enymyes, and after returned into theyr countres. wherof when Fredegunde was ware, ſhe in ſecrete maner mette with the kynge/ & ſhewyd to hym all the demeanure of his wyfe, but nothyng of her own crafty worckyng. wherewyth ỹ kyng was greuouſly dyſcontente in ſhewynge of his outwarde contenaunce/ and ſayd, yf that were true, ſhe ſhuld from hym be deuorcyd / and that ſhe ſhulde be quene in her ſtede.

After this the kynge commynge to his paleys/the quene to the entēt to be the more accepted in his preſence, not knowynge of the malicyous worckynge of Fredegūde, brought in her armes the yonge baby, to the whych ſhe was moder bothe naturally and ſpirytually/and welcommed ỹ kyng her lorde in ryght humble maner, ſalutynge hym wyth wordes of all cōforte. But the kyng beynge warned of her ſymple demeanure/ & as ſome authours wryte, glad that he hadde occaſyon to fynde mater to her of diſpleaſure/blamed her in greuous maner, and commaunded her out of his preſence for that tyme/ & after by coūſayle of ſpyrytuall men, cauſyd her from hym to be deuorcyd/ & her wyth her yonge doughter to be put into an houſe of relygyon, to the whyche he gaue poſſeſſyons for the fyndyng of her and of her yonge doughter named Childeynda.

And when Chilperic⁹ hadde thus fynyſhed this forеſayde beſyneſſe/ he ſhortely after toke to wyfe the forna med Fredegūd, not without grudge of ſome of hys lordes and other.

It was not longe after this maryage, that ſtryfe and diſcencyon fell betwene this Chilpericus and Sige bert hys brother / the whyche grewe for certayne lande that Chilpericus claymed to haue of hys brother aforе ſayde. Then Chilpericus aſſembled hys knyghtes and made warre vppon the lande of hys brother Sigebert/ the whyche then was beſyed in lyke warre agayne a people called Hunes/by reaſon wherof Chilperic⁹ hadde the more forдell, and wan by ſtrength the cytye of Reynys.

But yt was not longe after or Sigebert was warned of his brothers vnkyndneſſe. wherforе he after hys enymyes were by hym ſondele ſubdued/ went wyth hys armye into the countre of Soyſons belongynge to his brother Chilperic⁹ / and warred in lykewyſe in that lande as hys brother dyd in his/ and at length toke ỹ cytye of Soyſons, and therin the eldeſt ſon of Chilperic⁹ named Theodobert, and helde hym as his pryſoner. Then Chilpericus herynge of the ſcomfyture of his people and takynge of his ſonne, was agayne hys brother more feruently amoued/ and caſte in

caſte in his mynde all wayes & meanes howe he myghte reuenge hym vppon hys brother. But yt was in vayne. For his brother at that tyme had ſuch auauntage of hym/ that he well apperceyued, that he had no better meane then a treaty of peace, by meane wherof he ſhortly after obteyned his ſonne out of daunger, wyth other thynges concernynge his proffyte/ aſſurynge to hys ſayde brother by ſolemne othe, that after that daye he ſhuld neuer were armes, nor yet warrey his brother.

This cõcorde and vnite in due maner fynyſhed, & ſuffycyently by both counſayles ſtablyſſhed/ yet Chilpericus beynge alwayes mynded to be reuengyd vpon his brother Sigebert/ ſent his yongeſt ſonne named Clodoueus, and cauſed hym to warre vpon a cytye called Burdeaux, in the prouince of Neuſtria/ now called Normãdye. But by the manhode of a captayne of Sigebert named Singulphus, the ſayd Clodoueus was ouercomen and compelled to voyde the countre, and ſo fledde to Paris.

For thys happe Chilpericus was fyrſt with all malyce/ and in all haſt commaunded hys forenamed ſonne Theodobert wyth a great armye to inuade the ſayd coũtrey of Neuſtria, or Normandye. The whyche accordynge to hys fathers commaundement ſpedde hym thyder/ and there by hys extorte myghte and power, toke many cytyes and ſtronge holdes/ not ſparynge chyrches, howſes of relygyon, as nunnes and other/ and robbed and ſpoyled the countre in moſte cruell wyſe.

Laſtly this perſecucion thus done, a cheuetayne or duke named Gundoaldus of the erldome of Poitowe/ aſſembled a great power, and wythſtode Theodobert / and fynally ſlew hym in playne batayll, and a great parte of hys people. wherof herynge Chilpericus gatheryd a great hoſte, and yode into the countrey of Champayne / waſtynge and deſtroyenge the countrey wyth fyre and iron to the vttermoſte of hys power, and at length toke the cytye of Reynes, and ſpoylyd yt wythout mercy.

THE .CXIIII. CHAPITER.

Sigebertus aduertyſynge/ and caſtynge in hys mynde the innaturall dyſpoſycyõ of his brother/ percey-uyng well that he entendyd hys vtter deſtruccyon: ꝓuyded in his beſte maner for to wythſtande his malyce. And for to bryng his continued malyce to a fynall ende / he gatheryd to hym a puyſant power/ and after ſped hym towarde his ſayd brother. wher of Chilpericus beynge aduertyſed/ by hys couert meanes ſought ways of entreaty and peace, in ſuche wyſe that or the hoſtes mette, a peace was concluded.

Then theſe two bretherne thus accordyd/ condeſcendyd in ſhorte tyme after to make warre vppon theyr brother Gunthranus then lorde of Orleaunce/ the whyche ſygnory at that daye belonged to the countrey or prouynce of Burgoyne. The cauſe of this warre is not expreſſyd/ except ꝑ they enuyed theyr brother to haue ſo great lordſhyp. But by medyatours on both partes/ after great aray purueyed on all ſydes, a concorde and peace was concludyd in the temple of ſaynt Lowpe at ꝑ cytye of Troys in Vyncent.

when this ſayd peace was fynyſhed/ the ſayd .iii. brethern in ſyght departyd as frendes eyther of theym from

other. But as peace somtyme contenteth not saudyours/ & specially such as delyte them in pyllage and robbery: ryght so amonge the knightes of Sigebert was spronge a great rumoure/ sayeng that they were not cõtente and rewardyd for theyr great labour and trauayle accordynge to theyr desert/ and specyally for ỹ fyrst iourney of these. ii. hadde agayne his brother Chilpericus/ thynkynge the peace wyth hym made was nothyng honorable, consyderyng ỹ great doublenesse and vntrouth that in hym was prouyd. For the whyche they exclamyd Sygebert in all that in theym was/ to breke those boũdes of peace, and to make newe warre vpon hym. And in lyke maner some euyll dysposyd persons were more agreable to warre then to peace, vppon the party of Chilpericus, and murmured in lykewise. And for they thought to haue ben better rewarded of Sygebert, then they were of theyr own maister, they therfore lefte hym and yode to ỹ hoste of Sygeberte. By whose encytynge & report, Sygebert was more kyndelyd to sette vppon his brother.

Chilpericus hauynge notycyon of hys brothers purpose/ wyth also the murmoure and departynge of hys knyghtes, and hauynge in the other somme mystruste: he anon wyth his wyfe and chyldren and chefe of hys treasoure, went vnto ỹ cyty of Tournay/ entẽdyng to kepe that for theyr and hys sauegarde. But when Sygebert knew therof, he was nothyng in the pursuynge of hym foũde slow/ but foloweth streyght after, and closyd hym wythin the sayde cytye with a stronge syege / where Chilpericus was in a maner dyspayred of ỹ welfare of hym & hys Fredegunde. But she that was replenyshed of all inquyte, called to her two wycked persones / and promysed vnto theym great gyftes, yf they wolde by benym or otherwyse slee her brother Sigebert. The whyche two felowes dysceyued wyth the fayre speche and great gyftes of the sayde Fredegunda, toke vppon theym that vnlefull charge / and by theyr subtell & false imagynacyon, brought theyr cursed purpose to an ende / but to theyr owne confusyon. For after they had wounded the kynge Sygebert to deth, and wolde then haue escapyd/ the kynges knyghtes espyeng theyr treason, fell soone vppon them, and all to hewed them. And when ỹ deth of the kynge was knowen / a great noyse and crye was areryd in the hoste. By meane wherof the kynges deth was blowen in to the cytye, and after to the eres of Chilpericus/ wherof he was not a lytell ameruayled, nor wolde to yt geue ferme credence, tyll he was enfourmed of hys wyfe Fredegunde of all hyr subtyle worckynge.

It was not longe after or the knyghtes or some of the captaynes of the hoste of Sygebert presentyd thẽ vnto Chylpericus, besegynge hym of hys grace and pardon/ the whych he gladly accepted. And when he hadde sette hys charges in order/ he then commaunded prouysyon to be made for the berynge of hys sayd brother wythin the monasterye of sayncte Medarde of Soysons.

And when all that besynesse after a kyngely maner were fynyshed and endyd/ he then exylyd Brunechyeldys and Childebert, the wyfe and sonne of hys brother Sygebert, vnto the cytye of Roane/ takynge from theym great treasour that they were possessyd of. But shortly after the sonne of Sygebert by helpe of Gundebolde or Gundealde duke of Poytowe here before named / was delyuerȳd from the daunger of the sayde

Cilpe-

Chilperycus, and sent into his owne lordeshyppe of Austracye, whych his father Sygebert was lorde of.

In thys passetyme he hadde sent hys sonne Meroneus into a coūtrey called Buturynges, to appeace certayne rebellyons there arysyd. But when he hard of the deth of his vncle Sygebert / and of the bepnge of hys wyfe Brunechyelde at the cytye of Roane / he sette a parte all the charge of his father, and sped hym streyght thyder, keppynge companye wyth her. In whome he toke suche consolacoin and pleasure/that lastely he maryed her, aud kepte her as hys wyfe. And when hys father was therof warned/ he seryd leste by the counsayle of hys sayde wyfe, he wolde arryse agayne hym / wherfore he in all haste assembled hys people, and spedde hym towarde Roane.

When tydynges came to Meroneus of the commynge of hys father wyth so great araye/ and he as then vnpurueyed of strength of knightes to resyste hys father / for hys moste suertye fled wyth hys vnlefull wyfe to the temple or chyrche of saynte Martyne, takynge the pryuylege therof for theyr defence. And when Chilpericus hadde temptyd by many sondry meanes to haue them out of the sayde pryuylege, and myghte not wythout brekynge of the same: he to brynge aboute hys cautelouse purpose, made to theym assuryd pro myse, that yf they wyllfully wolde renounce the sayde place, and putte theym in hys grace / he wolde vtterlye pardon theyr tresspace, and suffer theym from that tyme for to contynue theyr lyfe to gether as man and wyfe. Vppon whyche promyse the sayd Meroneus wyth his wyfe renoūced the sayde pryuylege, and putte theym hole in the kynges mercy/ the whyche them receyuyd wyth all contenaunce of loue and fauoure, and theym festyd and cherysshyd louyng ly, by the space of two dayes onely. But the thyrde daye the feaste was fynyshed/ for then he sent his sonne vnto Parys vnder sure guydes/and there caused hym to be professyd in a house of relygyon. But by the meanes of hys vncle Gunthranus he was after taken thens/ and so restoryd to hys former knyghthode. For the whych his father hym newly pursued and cōstrayned hym to take for hys sauegarde ỳ chyrche of saynt Martyne in Turon.

And when he was warned that his fader perforce wold take hym thens/ he then fledde vnto a cytye of Champayne accompanyed wyth .vi. seruauntes onely / where he was in so great fere to be taken and in suche despayre to obteyne grace of hys father, that he caused one of the sayde vi. persones to slee hym wyth hys sworde / & the forsayd Brunechyeldis hys wyfe put in sure keppynge.

THE .CXV. CHAPITER.



Hilperic⁹ then bepnge assertepned of the deth of hys sonne Meroneus, & the sure kepping of Brunechieldis, he thoughte hym selfe somdele assuryd/ for ỳ mystruste ỳ he had in them many tymes inquieted hym. But yet he was not i quiete or reste. For shortly after ỳ peple of Turon rebellyd agayne him. Agayn whom he sent his son Clodoueus/ & a noble man of his courte named Desiderⁱ⁹, ỳ which he sent as a gyde & a counsayloure of his sayd son. And vpon the party of his enymyes was a captayne of the kynge Gunthranus/ for so mych as the said Gunthranus claymed parte

of thoſe landes about Turon. This captayne named Nomeleus heryng of the cõmynge of the foꝛeſayd hoſte, wyth a choſen cõpany made tawarde them / and gaue vnto Clodoueus a great ſharpe fyght/and not without great loſſe of his men wanne of hym the felde, and compellyd hym to foꝛſake that countre.

Thus Chilperyche was wꝛapped in warre and troubles of the woꝛlde, ſometyme wyth ryght, & ſome whyle wyth wꝛonge / ſo that he ſome tyme wanne woꝛſhyppe and other whyle he loſte. wherof to tell all the cyꝛcumſtaunce I thynke yt ſhulde be tedyouſe bothe to the reders/ and alſo to ỹ herers. wherfoꝛe I paſſe ouer, in abꝛydgynge and ſhoꝛtynge ſomedele of this ſtoꝛye.

Then foloweth within ỹ ſtoꝛye/ after Chylpericus had by intycemẽt of Fredegunde/wꝛongfully toꝛmentyd the archebyſhoppe of Roan named Pꝛeteſte, & hym after the ſufferaunce of many vylanyes eryed (foꝛ the whych and other god ſent vnto hym ſome coꝛrecyom, in takynge awaye by ſodeyne deth the chyldern that he had by Fredegunde) he then began to knowe god, and toke great repentaunce/ in pꝛomyſynge to god amendement of his lyfe. And to thentent that he might haue the moꝛe pꝛayers of the comyn people to ſtand in ſtate of grace: he fyꝛſt releaſyd a greuous trybute oꝛ impoſicyon that he hadde lately ſette vpon all vynes thoꝛough his regyon. And that done he reedyfyed olde chyꝛches and ſome he made newe, and endowed them with great poſſeſſyons. And ouer thys he releuyd greatly ỹ pooꝛe people, by enlargynge of his lyberall almes/and became very humble and meke, where befoꝛe tyme he was ryght ſterne and cruell. But lyke as oftẽ it happeneth that hote loue is ſoone colde/ſo thys ſodayne deuocyon was ſoone aſwaged. Foꝛ lyke as hys troubles began to aſwage, and his pꝛoſperyte to encreaſe: ryght ſo hys olde cõdycyons beganne in hym to reuyue and quycken/ſo that at length he retourned to hys olde accuſtomed vyces.

In this tyme a pleople called Longobardes, and now Italyans/warred ſoꝛe vppon the landes of the empyꝛe. wherfoꝛe Mauricius then beynge emperour of Conſtantyne the noble/ foꝛ ſo mych as he tought that the frenche kynges myght was leſſe coſte and payne to ſubdue them, then he myght beyng ſo farre from them/ he therfoꝛe ſent to hym a great ſũme of golde/ wyth letters of recommendacyon, exoꝛtyng hym in the defence of the chyꝛche of Rome, to aſſemble hys people and to withſtande ỹ ſayd Longobardes/ and not to ſeaſe ther of tyll he hadde expellyd theym from the landes of the empyꝛe.

whyche ſomme of golde he goodly receyuyd / pꝛomyſynge to the bꝛyngers therof, that he wyth all dylygence ſhulde execute the vttermoſte of his power to accomplyſhe the requeſte of the emperoure. And accoꝛdynge to a parcell of his ſayde pꝛomyſe/ he aſſembled a great people, and made towarde the ſayde Longobardes. Of whom the ſayde Longobardes ferynge ỹ great myght, made meane of entreaty/ offrynge to hym great ſummes of money. By reaſon wherof he lefte theym in reſte, and ſo retourned into Fraunce. when Mauricius had vnderſtandyng ỹ the foꝛeſayde enymyes remayned ſtyll in the foꝛeſayde landes, and contynued in theyꝛ malice: he ſent agayne to Chilpericus/requyꝛyng hym other to perfoꝛme his pꝛomyſe oꝛ ellys to reſtoꝛe hys money, whych he had take foꝛ ỹ perfourmaunce of the ſame. But all was in vayne/ foꝛ he wolde neyther

execute

execute that one nor that other. But at lēgth as affermeth myne authour, he was by goddes ordynaunce compelled for to restore the sayde money or a great parte therof, by meane of his suster wyth her chylde that was as a prysoner to the sayde emperour, whyche suster was before tyme maryed vnto the kynge of Spayne.

THE .CXVI. CHAPITER.

CHilpericus thus encreasynge in vyce and dyshonoure, lastly repugned agayne god / so that he fell into that detestable heresye of the Arianes / and commaūded certayne artycles of the same touchyng the deuyson of the trynyte to be prechyd thorough hys regyon. But the holy byshoppe of Towres withstode that precepte, and blamed hym greuously for that dede / all be yt the sayd byshop named Gregory wyth great assystence of the other byshoppes of Fraunce, hadde great laboure to remoue hym from the sayde opynyon.

This with many other crymes passed by Chilpericus / Fredegunde, whyche euer encreasyd in peruerse & malycyouse purpose, soughte many vnlefull meanes howe she myghte bryngе to confusyon the thyrd sonne of her husbonde / knowynge well ỹ whyle he leuyd, her chyldern shulde neuer enheryte the crowne of Fraunce. This purpose to bryngе about many and dyuerse wayes she attemted, whyche were longe to reherse. But fynally she caused hym wrongfully to be accusyd, & by meane therof to be caste in prysyon. where he sobeynge, she hyred a felon to sle hym / and after shewyd to her husbande ỹ the sayde Clodoueus hadde slayne hym selfe. In prose wherof she hadde appoynted the forsayde murderer to leue a swordе stickyng in hym, as thoughe he hadde wylfully slayne hym selfe vppon the same swordе. whyche when the kynge sawe / he demed hym gylty of such offense as before was putte vppon hym.

ye haue harde before of the sonne of Sygeberte named Childebert, that was delyuered from the handes of Chilpericus his vncle by the meanes of Gundoald duke or erle of Poytowe / the whyche in this tyme was growen to mannes statureand ruled at this daye his enherytaunce of Austracye, not wythout great stryfe had betwene hym and hys sayde vncle, whych were to long to wryte ỹ circūstaunce therof. wherof at this daye sondele was vndyscussyd / all be yt they at thys daye dyd eyther other as frendes.

About this tyme the other vncle of Chyldebert called Gūthyran⁹ / sought occasyon agayne hym, for cause of a byshop named Theodor⁹, & byshop of Marsill or Marsyle / ỹ which was put from his see by Gūthyranus, and receyuyd of Chyldebert, and by hym agayne restoryd to the sayde see of Marsyle. For the whych Gunthyrane was sore amoued / and entendyd to make warre vpon hym. But by medyatours it was sondeale appeasyd and sette in quyete / vppon certeyne condycyons to be obserued and also performed vpon the party of Gunthyranus / the whyche after were not vppon his syde kept nor performed. wherfore after request to hym made for reformacyon of all such poyntes / and answere agayne receyuyd of no reformacyon : Chyldebert to haue hys partye the strenger / and also for that that he well knewe, that hys vncle Chilpericus bare towarde the sayde Gunthyranus not very fraternall loue / he therfore sente vnto hym a noble man of hys courte named Gyllon, requiryng hym of ayde

agayne hys vncle/ the whych by ma ny seasons had as well broken pro= myse agayne hym, as nowe he hadde agayne Childebert. Of this Chilpe riche beynge ryght fayne, assentyd to the desyre of Gyllon/and after in all haste preparyd theyr hostes / and by two sondry companyes inuadyd the countres of Orleaunce, wherof Gun thranus was kynge or ruler. But ỹ inhabytauntes of that prouynce de= fendyd theym in so stronge maner/ ỹ theyr enymyes hadde of theym lytell auauntage. In whyche meane sea= son Gunthran⁹ assembled a myghty hoste, and spedde hym towarde his enymyes, at a place called Mediola, he supprysed a parte of hys sayd enymies/ and after drewe nere to the great nomber of bothe hostes, where was made preparacyon on bothe sy= des to haue foughten. But as before tyme ye haue often harde, that by dis crete & wyse men the fyght was put by, and meanes of accorde was foun den: so nowe at this tyme by labour of good and wise prelates and other/ these kynnesmen were sette in vnyte, and departed without great shedyng of crysten bloode.

In this passetyme/deth whych spa ryth no creature, berafte Chilperic⁹ a sonne borne of Fredegũde and na= med Theodorus/ for the whyche the kynge and also the quene toke great heuynesse. But as she ỹ was prõpte & redy to all cuyll/ cast in her mynde that thys chylde was slayne by poy= son, or by some other purposed ma= lyce. For the whyche lastely was ac= cusyd a baylyfe or lefe offycer called Monuole, with diuers wytches and sorseresses, that shuld imagyne this chyldes deth. The whych she payned and tormẽtyd in such wyse/ that last ly the sayde wytches confessed, that they hadde destroyed the chylde, and not wythoute consente of the sayde Monuole. wherfore she after caused the sayde sorceresses to dye by cruell deth, as by fyre and otherwyse/ and the sayde baylyffe to be so tourmen= tyd that he dyed soone after.

The frenche cronycle sayth, that by the meane of the takynge away of the lyfe of the kynges chylde/a chyld of the sayde Monuole was restorid to helth, whych before was in great ieoperdye/ whyche is for folys to be= leue. Thys sorow and heuenesse of Chilpericus and Fredegunde hys wyfe/ was somdele aswaged by the byrthe of a son shortly after borne of ỹ sayd Fredegunde/whych the kyng lette call Lotharius, or Clotharius. For ioye wherof the kyng lette open the prysones / and suffred the pryso= ners to goo at theyr lyberte/and spe= cyally suche as concerned causes tou chynge hym selfe for dette or other= wyse, with other thynges cõcernyng hys honoure.

But lyke as dame Fortune is ac= customed to medle her ioyes of thys world wyth some bytternesse: so dyd she now with Chilperic⁹. For where he was nowe in great tranquillyte and reste/and thought to haue ladde the residue of his lyfe in pleasure: so deynly word was brought vnto hym that hys brother Gunthranus, and hys neuewe Childebert/ was allyed and fermely accorded to make warre vppon hym / for the whych they had assemblyd a great army. wherfore he in all haste commaunded all his trea sour and chyfe iewellys to be had to the cytye of Cambria/where he wyth his wyfe and frendes entended to cõ tynue the residue of his lyfe. And ỹ done spedde hym thyder in all haste/ and fortyfyed the sayde cytye in such wyse, that he feryd lytle or nothynge hys enymyes/where he so kepte hym wythin the sayde cytye a certayne of tyme. And whẽ he sawe nor hard not

of the

of the commynge of his sayd broder nor neuewe/ he then walkyd more at large/and sporyd hym in haukynge and chase of the wylde bestes, as wol ues and other/whych at those dayes was greatly vsyd of the kynges of Fraunce, and yet is contynued.

Upon a day as he was purposyd towarde this dysporte, and all thyng redy preparyd for the same / so that the quene thought verely he had be gone oute of the paleys / for what happe I can not tell, the quene yode into her chāber, and there rested her vppon her bedde. where she so lyeng the kynge passyd by / & wyth a lytle wande, whych he bare in his hande, in maner of game strake the quene with yt vppon the backe. The quene supposynge the kynge had ben gone to the felde, and not lokyng vp sayd, Laundrye why darest thou thus stryke me. This Laundrye was a great man in the kynges courte/and hadde ben peramoure to the quene longe tyme. But the kynge herynge these wordes, made semblaunt as he hadde not herde them, and so passyd on hys waye.

THE .CXVII. CHAPITER.

HEredegunda appercepuynge & after seynge yt was the kyng, to whome she hadde thus sayde/sore was abasshed, and in great fere and agony. And after she had by a longe season coniected in her mynde what remedy she myght fynde for this mis happe: she lastely dyuelyshely determyned to sle her sayd husbande and lorde. And this to bryng about she sent in all haste for the sayde Laundrye, and shewed to hym in order all the circumstaunce of the foresayde mater. wherafter he was strykē with suche a fere/that his wytte and coun sayle fayled hym to deuyse in such a case any remedy. wherfore the quene as she that was fully determyned to execute her detestable & cursyd purpose/ sayde to hym boldely: Laūdry thou seest well ỹ this case is brought to so straȳte a poynt, that other thou muste thynke to destroy my lord and husbande, or ellys thou and I muste both be shamefully confounded. Of whyche thou well knowest our owne is moste to be regarded/therfore dyspose the to do after my counsayll. Thou knowest well that the kynge is accustomed to come late from hys dysporte. wherfore prouyde to the a certayne, that thou well trustyst/and in the euenynge when he retourneth aspye thy tyme and fall vppon hym sodeynly, and so rydde hym. And after make an out crye, & sende to serch about as thou woldest take the homicydes/ & cause some of thyne own cōpanye to flee frō the, as though thou shuldest thē pursue. Laundry heryng this cursyd coūsayll, alowed it well & therunto assentyd / and incontynently went aboute the perfourmaunce of the same. And when he hadde purueyde his accessaryes / he towarde nyght assemblyd thē, gyuynge to thē informacyon how they in ỹ mischyef shuld behaue them in that thyng, takynge of them assuryd othes, forkepyng of his coūsayle. The kyng not mysdempynge any thynge of thys conspyred treason/ toke his delectacyon and pleasoure in folowynge of hys game, so that he loste myche of hys company / and towarde nyght as he before tyme was accustomed, wyth fewe accōpanyed drewe homewarde. wherof Laundry beyng warned/met the kynge salutynge hym and sayng that he was comen wyth hys compa ny to cōdute hym home, for so mych as he douted how he was garnysshed of his meyneyall seruaūtes or other. what shuld I lenger make delaye

or farther reharsall in thys matyer, or to tell the cyrcumstaunce of thys purposyd treason. But fynally when the kynge was nere hys paleys / or as reherseth the Frenche cronycle wythin the courte of hys paleys / as he lyght from hys horse he was so depnly wounded to the herte, that he strepght fell to the erth dede.

After whyche murder thus commytted: a greate crye was areryd, the kynge ys slayne/so ỹ thys Laundrye made in great haste to be called certeyne persons to attende vppon ỹ corps, whyle he wyth other pursued suche as were dempte gylty of thys offence. But lastly he retourned, and sayd that thys dede was done by the knyghtes of Chyldebert / the whych by the derkenes of the nyght were escapyd.

To shewe here the vayne and dissymuled sorowe ỹ Fredegund made for the kynge, it were but lettyng of tyme. For euery wyse man knoweth well, that all suche as ben of that dispospcyon, can fayne tyghte well in suche semblable casys. But to my purpose/ when the kynge was thus slayne, and at that tyme nother the quene nor yet Laundrye suspectyd / prouysyon was made for enterryng of ỹ corps. The whyche was shortly after shypped at the next ryuer / and so conuayed vnto saynt Germayns de Pree before spoken of / and there wyth greate solempnyty buryed, when he hadde regned, as before is sayde xxiii. yeres / leuynge after hym a son before mynded called Clotharius or Lotharius.

Thus as affermyth myn authour mayster Robert Gagwyne endyd Chylperych myserably his lyfe/ whiche in pryde and mysery before tyme it cõtynued. And where in his lyfe he cherysshed no frende/ at hys ende he fande few or no frendes. Thys gaue the patrymony of ỹ chyrche to lewde & symple clerkys, and was an enmye to all holy relygyous places/ and fauored more suche as had lately bene conuerted to the fayth, than he dyd them that had cõtynued by holy lyfe a longe season therin / & gaue vnto such persons the rule of Crystes chyrche. Amonge the whyche, one there was of perfyght lyuyng and byshop of Parys/ that garnysshed hys tõbe with this epytaphy as after in meter foloweth.

Ecclesiæ speculum, patriæ vigor, ara reorum,
Et pater & medicus, pastor, amorq; gregis,
Germanus virtuti, fide corde ore beatus:
Carne tenet tumulum, mentis honore polum.
Vir cui dura nihil nocuerunt fata sepulchri.
Vnit enim, nam mors quam tulit ipsa timet.
Creuit ad hoc potius, iustus post funera: nam qui
Fictile vas fuerat, gemma superba micat.
Huius opẽ ac meritũ mutis data verba loquũtur.
Redditus & cæcis, prædicat ore dies
Nunc vir apostolicus, sapiens de carne trophæum.
Iure triumphale considet arce throni.

The whych verses in our mother tunge, maye thus be expounded in meters as foloweth.

Myrrour to the chyrche, and of the countrey the strength.
Compassyon of gylty, to them shewynge mercy,
A fader and a leche, an herde and louer at length
Of hys people/ colyn to vertue and of allye
In fayth and in herte, and eke in mouth holy,
Of whom the flesshe now holdyth thys sepulture.
But the spyryte is in heuen euer to endure.

To thys nothynge noyed, nor faute of sepulture.
He lyueth southly/for deth whyche he not drede/
Hath hym hense tane. But yet he hoped sure/
Thys ryghtwyse man, though somtyme he were ladde.
As a bryttell vessell, whych wyth the erth was cladde
And somewhyle selle, yet ofte he rose anone/
wherfore he now shyneth as doth an Orient stone.

By helpe and meryte now hath the dumbe hys speche
Of thys blessyd man, and to the blynde hys syghte
Restoryd of god/as thys daye doth vs teche.
And he of the flesshe hath gotten now the fyght
And vpperhande wyth a tryumphant myght
By vertue wherof he lyke a conquerour.
Of the hygh heuyn, nowe sytteth in the tower.

Thus maye ye well apperceyue and knowe / that as erthly men fauoure, so woll they wryte / as nowe shewyth by thys superscrypcyō. But to god all thyng is manyfestyd and knowen/and nothynge to hym hyd, whatsoeuer erthly man wryteth / or demyth / to whom all the prempsses I rempte.

Anglia.

THE. CXVIII. CHAPITER.

Careticus or Lareticus after ỹ wrytynge of Gwydo, of whom nother ỹ progeny nor yet other addicyon of honour is of wryters of hym remēbred/began to rule the Brytons, the yere of our lord. v. hundred. iiii. score and. vi. as the sayde authour recordyth/and ỹ. xxii. yere of Chylperyche than kynge of Fraunce/and also the xx. yere of Ceawlmus then kynge of westsaxons. Thys as wytnessyth all wryters was a louer of cyuyle batayle & was worst of all men/ so ỹ he was odible to god and his subiectes, in suche wyse that they excyted the Saxons to warre vpon hym, as testyfyeth Gwydo/& chasyd hym from cytye to cytye, & frō towne to towne, tyll they had berafte hym the moste parte of suche lande as hys predecessoure Malgo had holdē before hym.

But Polycronycō, Gaufryde and other, adde more there vnto/ & sayen ỹ for as mych as the Saxons knew of the discensyon betwene Careticus and hys Brytons / they in all haste sent into Irelande for the kynge called Gurmundus Affrican⁹/ ỹ which of some wryters are named two persons, as Gurmūdus and Affrican⁹. But by the reherssall that Ranulfe monke of Chester maketh in ỹ. xxiii. chappter of hys fyrste boke of Polycronycō, it shulde seme, that he shuld be named Gurmundus/ the whyche by hys meanynge shulde warre in Brytayne and Fraunce, whyle hys brother Turgecius regned as kyng in Irelande, as in the sayd chappter is more at lengthe declared. whyche sayd Gurmundus with the strength of ỹ Saxons, warred so sore agayne the Brytōs/that lastly the sayd Careticus was fayne to take the towne of Kaersegent now called Sichester/& therein besegyd hym wyth hys Brytons by a certeyne of tyme/where by dayly skyrmysshes and assautes he

loste

loste myche of hys people.

When Careticus had a season assayed and proued the strength of his enemyes/and sawe that they encreasyd, and hys knyghtes lassed & mynysshed: he sodenly lefte that towne/ and with a certeyne of Brytons toke ouer Seuarne water, and so into walys then callyd Cãbria. whych shuld be after moste accorde of wryters, ỹ iii. yere of ỹ reygne of this Caretic⁹.

About thys tyme as meaneth Antoninus/the great Gregory then beynge a monke and after pope, sawe at Rome chyldryn of Anglis or Saxons to sell at Rome. And whẽ he had aryd of them what coũtrey they were of, and it was answered to hym that they were named Anglis/ he sayde ỹ Alleluya shulde be songe in that coũtree, that so fayre chylderne were borne in. Alleluya before in the. iiii. scrore and. viii. chappter rehersyd/ys there takẽ after ỹ expolycyõ of sayut Austayne, for ayde and helpe of god. But here it is ment for louynge and praysynge of god/as to hym ỹ laude and thankes shulde be gyuen vnto, that sendyth to men so fayre frewte. wherfore as after shalbe shewyd the sayd Gregory beynge Pope/ sent ỹ holy man Austayne wyth other, for to preache to the sayde Anglis the fayth of Cryste.

Then to retourne to Careticus, whom the Englysh cronycle nameth Cortike. Trouth it is, that after he wyth his Brytons were dryuen into Cambria or walis: yet he lefte not contynually to make reyses and assautes vppon the Saxons nerte to hym adioynaunte.

In thys tyme or soone after/ruled Ethelfridus the north Saxons. For as wytnesseth the forsayde authour Gupdo/he began the reygne of Deira and Brenicia, in the yere of oure lorde. v. C. lxxx. & xiii. This is Ethelfridus son of Ethelricus, ỹ pursued so sore the Brytons, & slewe so great a nomber of ỹ monkes of the towne of Bangor, as is before rehersyd in the. C. and. ix. chappter of this worke The whyche dayly warred vpon the Brytons, & the Brytons vpon hym/ so ỹ he destroyed or subuerted myche of Crystes fayth wyth the helpe of ỹ forsayd Gurmunde thorough Loegria or myddle England/in so myche that the bysshoppes of London and yorke wyth other mynysters of the chyrche, wyth such goodes & relykes as they myght carp, fled into dyuerse countrees/so that theyr chyrchdores were shytte after them, or ellys occupyed in worshyp of theyr fals goddes

Thus the fayth that had endured in Brytayne from the tyme of Lucius fyrst crysten kynge in Brytayne tyll thys daye, nere vppon the season of iiii. C. yeres and odde/was well nere extyncte thorough all the lande.

And when ỹ forenamed Gurmũde had fynysshed hys tyrannye wythin the land of Brytayne/he then sayled into Fraunce, where he was after slayne, as wytnesseth Polycronycõ/ all be it ỹ french cronycle speketh no thyng of any such man duryng thys persecucyon, as wytnesseth Gupdo.

The chyrche or monastery before buylded in Uerolamy nowe called sayute Albanes, was by the sayde myscreauntes beten downe/ whyche there was buylded of the Brytõs in the honoure of ỹ holy prothomartyr sayut Albõ, with diuerse many other the whyche are loste out of memory.

Duryng also this trouble betwene the Saxons & Brytõs/ the lordshyp or kyngdome of Eest Saxon began to take place as after shalbe shewed.

THE. CXIX. CHAPITER.

IN thys tyme also after the accorde of moste wryters, as wytnesseth Polycronyca & other, Ethelbertus

bert⁹ reygned in Kent/ & by knyghthode and greate myghte bare hym/ and behaued hym so victoryously, that he enlarged hys kyngdome to the boundys of Humbyr. In which tyme Gregory, whyche for hys notable dedes was surnamed great/ was made pope of Rome. The whych as before is touchyd in the precedynge chappter/ hauynge compassyon that the cõtre from whens so fayre chylderne came as he before had seyne, shulde be inhabyte wyth Pagans or people of mysbyleue/ sent into Bretayne that holy man Austayne wyth other of hys bretherne, to preche to the Anglis the fayth of Cryste. But as wytnessyth Antoninus in the. iii. chappter & .xii. tytle of hys foresayde worke, when Austayn was. iii. dayes iourney gone and passed/ suche a sodeyne fere entryd in hym and hys felousshyppe, that they turned agayne. Then Gregory cõforted the sayd cõpany/ and sent them wyth letters to the bysshop Arelatensis / wyllynge hym to helpe and ayde Austayne in all that in hym nedyd. The tenoure of whyche letters and other sent to Ethelbert kynge of Kent wyth theyr answeres/ are wrytẽ with other questyons in the regester of Gregory, & in the bokes of Beda and other.

Austayne thus comforted/ sped his iourney, and landed in the Est syde of Kent in the ile of Thanet wyth. xl. felowes/ wherof some were interpretours or such as cowde speke all languages. Nere vnto the place before named where holy Austayne landed stode at those dayes the manoyr or palayes of the sayd kyng Ethelbert/ wherof at thys daye appere somme of the ruynous walles, & is called of the inhabytaunces of that ile Rychbourgh. It is apparent betwene the ile & the towne of Sandwych, vpon a myle & a halfe from the sayd towne Estwarde from Caunterbury. The whẽ Austayne was landed, he sent the sayde interpretours vnto Ethelberte/ sayenge ỹ they were sent from Rome for the hele and saluacyon of the kynge & hys realme. The kynge beforetyme had herde of the fayth of Cryst/ for he hadde to wyfe as sayth Polycronycon a french woman that was cristened/ and had receyued hyr vppon condycyon that he shuld sufker hyr to lyue after hyr lawe.

Then after a certeyne tyme ỹ kyng spoke with Austayne/ but that was without ỹ house after the maner of hys lawe. Agayn his comyng he arrerayd a baner of ỹ crucifyx, & sange ỹ lateny, & preachyd to hym the worde of god. Then ỹ kyng sayd it is fayre that ye promyse. But for it is to me vncowth & new/ I may not so soone assent to you. But for ye be comen so farre for my sake/ ye shalbe fayre entreatyd, and haue all thynge ỹ is to you necessary / & we graunte to you leue to torne of our people whom ye maye. when they had receyued thys cõfort of the kynge / they went wyth processyõ to the cytye of Dorobernia or Caũterbury, syngynge Alleluya/ where they lad theyr lyues as holy faders dyd in the begynnynge of the chyrch/ as in fastyng, prayeng, watchyng, & preachynge of the worde of helth/ & sange masses/ and crystened such as they cõuertyd in ỹ Est syde of the cytie in the old chyrch of saynt Martyne, vnto the tyme ỹ the kyng was cõuertyd. At length when the kyng had well consyderyd the cõuersacyõ & holy lyfe of Austayn and his felowes, he harde them more gladly/ and lastly by theyr good exortacyõs and goostly loue, was by them cõuertyd & crystened/ in ỹ yere of our lorde after moste accorde of wryters. v. C. lxxx. & xvi/ and the. xxxvi. yere of hys reygne, as affermeth Policronicon.

Then

Then he gaue to Austayne a place for his bisshoppes see at Cristes chyrche in Dorobernia/and buylded the abbey of sayncte Peter and Paule in the eest syde of the sayde cytye/where after Austayne and all the kynges of Kent were buryed/ and that place is nowe called sayncte Augustyne.

In thys whyle Augustyne sayled into Fraunce to the bysshoppe Arclatens̄/and was of hym sacryd archebysshoppe.

when holy Gregory was certyfyed of the good expedycyon of Augustyne/he sent then to him mo helpers as Melyt⁹, Just⁹, & Paulinus, with bokes and relykes of holy sayntes/ and answeres to sayncte Augustynes questyons/ that was that all suche goodes as fell to the chyrche shulde be deuyded in foure ptes / that is to meane the fyrste shuld go to the housholde of the bysshoppes house and charge of the same/the seconde to the clergy/ the thyrde to the amendemēt of chyrches / the fourth to the relyfe of the poore people and other dedys of mercye.

when Austayne hadde baptyzed a great part of the kyngdome of Kent/ he after made two archebysshoppes by the cōmaundement of sayncte Gregorye, as wytnessyth Polycronicon: that one at London, and that other at yorke / and by the helpe of Ethelbert, he assembled and gatheryd together the bysshoppes and doctoures of Brytayne, that were beforе dysperkled. The place of assemble was called longe after Austeyns oke, whych is expowned to be Austeyns stregth, and is in the marche of wykeres and of the westsaxons.

In thys place he charged the sayd bysshoppes, ỹ they shulde wyth hym preache the worde of god to the Anglys/ and also that they shuld amōg them selfe amende certayne errours then vsyd in the chyrche, and specyally for keppynge of theyr Ester tyde. where agayne the bysshoppes of Bretayne helde oppynyon, tyll Austayne by hys prayers shewyd there a myracle by a blynde Angle or Saxon. After the whyche myracle shewed/ ỹ sayd bysshoppes applyed them to the wyll of Austayne in that cause. But for all this there was of theym that sayd, that they myghte not leue the custome, whych they so longe hadde continued, wythout assent of all such as hadde vsyd the same. Then he gatheryd a synode/ to the whyche came seuen bysshoppes of Brytons, wyth the wyseste mē of that famouse abbey of Bangor. But fyrste they toke coū sayle of an holy man and heremyte/ whether they shulde be obedyent to Austayne or not. The heremyte sayd yf ye fynde hym humble or meke, as to Crystes dyscyple belonged, ỹ then they shulde assent to hym. whych mekenesse they shulde perceyue in hym, yf he at theyr commynge into the synode or councell, arose agayne them. when the sayde bysshoppes entred ỹ sayde synode/ Austayne sate styll in the chayre and remouyd not. wherfore they were wroth and dysdaynyd hym, and wolde not obey to hys requestes. Then he sayd to them/ syns ye woll not assente to my hestes generally / assent ye to me specyally in thre thynges.

The fyrste is, ỹ ye kepe Ester daye in due fourme and tyme as yt is ordeynyd.

The seconde, that ye geue crystendome to the chyldern in the maner ỹ is vsed in the chyrche of Rome.

And the thyrde is, that ye preache vnto the Anglys the word of god, as afore tymes I haue exhorted you. And all the other deale I shall suffer you to amende and reforme wythin your selfe/but they wold not therof. Then

of. Then ſaynt Auguſtyne ſayde vn to them, and warned them by maner of inſpyracyon/ that ſyns they wold not receyue peace of theyr bretherne, they ſhulde of other receyue warre & wrecche/ the whyche was after put in experyence by Ethelfrydus kynge of Northumberlande.

Longe yt were to tell the cyrcumſtaūce of the lyfe of this bleſſyd man, wherfore I paſſe ouer. Laſtly whē he hadde in one daye cryſtyned .x. thouſande of Sarons or Anglys, in the weſte ryuer that is called Swale beſyde yorke, and knewe that he ſhuld ſhortely dye after / he ordeyned a ſucceſſour named Laurence whyle he lyued / for the ſtate of holy chyrche in Bretayn was as yet but rude & boyſtous. But in ỹ doynge he folowed the enſample of Peter that was fyrſt pope/ whyche made Clement by his lyfe helper and ſucceſſour. Alſo this Auguſtyne made Mellitus byſſhop of London and of Eeſtſaxōs/ whych after moſte wryters were then newly entred the lande. The ryuer of Thamys departed theym and Kent / and after dyed and was buryed in ỹ monaſtery before reherſed, wythoute the wallys of Dorobernia or Caunterburye.

THE .CXX. CHAPITER.

Ethelbertus then confermyd in the fayth/ among other coſtly dedys beganne the foundacyon of Paulys chyrche wythin the cytye of London/and ordeyned yt for the byſſhoppes ſee of London. For the archbyſſhoppes ſee that before tyme was at London/ was by Auguſtyne and Ethelbert at the prayer of ỹ cytezyns of Dorobernia trāſlated to the ſayde cytye/ as in the .lix. chappter of thys treatyſe yt is more at lengthe declared. But of the buyldynge of thys chyrche of ſaynt Paule, dyuerſe opynyons ben. For ſome wryters teſtyfye, that yt was buylded or begonne to buylde, by Sygebertus kynge of Eeſtanglys, but more veryly kynge of Eeſtſaxōs or Eeſtſex. This Ethelbert alſo foūded the chyrche of ſaynt Andrew, in the cytye of Dorubres in Kent nowe called Rocheſter / of the whyche Juſtus was byſſhoppe ordeyned before of ſaynt Albane.

About ỹ tyme or a ſeaſon after / the forenamed Ethelfrydus, whyche in the engliſhe cronycle is named Elfryde/ foughte wyth the Brytons at the cytye of Legyſceſtre or Cheſtre/ & ſlew of the Brytons a great nomber. At whyche tyme and ſeaſon, a great nomber of the monkes of Bangor were alſo there aſſembled, for to pray for the good ſpede of the Brytons. wherof when Ethelfrydus was warned / he fell alſo vppon theym, and ſlewe of theym at that tyme, as wytneſſyth dyuers authours .xii. hūdred as yt is before ſhewyd in the .C. and ix. chappter of this boke.

This forenamed Ethelbert erected a dweller or cytezen of London, to make a chyrche or chapell in the worſhyp of ſaynte Peter, in the weſt ende of London then called Thorney, and now the towne of weſtmynſter/ the whyche that tyme was forgrowen wyth buſhes and breres excedyngly. where the ſayde cytezen beganne, and buylded the fyrſt chyrche of weſtmynſter in ỹ honour of ſaynt Peter, whych was after by ſaynt Edwarde the cōfeſſour enlarged or new buylded. But of the thyrde Henry, when he reygned as kynge of England/ yt was newe edyfyed & made as yt now is a beauteous monaſtery, and rychely endowed bothe wyth poſſeſſyon and relykes, and ryche iewellys.

It is ſhewyd in the Engliſhe cro-

nycle of Englande/ that thys Ethelbert ſhulde be ſlayne in a fyghte betwene hym and Ethelfryde kynge of Northumberlande. But Policronicon ſayth that he dyed and went to heuen / when he hadde reygned ouer the lordſhyppe of Kent. lvi. yeres / and the. xxi. yere after that he hadde receyuyd Cryſtendome.

The kyngdome of Eeſtſaxons.

THE .CXXI. CHAPITER.

Urynge alſo the forſayde perſecucyon of ỹ Bxytõs, or any ruler of thẽ were ſpecyally named/ beganne the reygne of Eeſtſaxons as wytneſſyth Policronicon, vnder Sebertus theyr fyrſte kynge/ nere about the yere of our lordes incarnacyon. vi. hundred and .xiiii. All be yt that Guydo de Columna ſayth that yt beganne nere about the tyme and ſeaſon, when the kyngdome of Eeſtanglys beganne. But I folowe Polycronicon/ for he leyeth holy Beda for his Authour in myche of his worke. This kyngdome whych is to meane Eſſex / hadde in the eeſt ſyde the ſee / in the weſte Myddelſex and London / in the ſouthe the ryuer of Thamys/ & in the north Suffolke/ and endured after moſte wryters by the terme of two hundred and odde yeres. But by ỹ ſayeng of Policronica yt ſhuld not endure ouer two hundred yeres. Neuertheleſſe yt ſhulde appere by the ſtorye of Edwarde the elder ſonne of Aluredus, ỹ yt ſhulde cõtynue vnder the Danys and other wyſe, tyll the. viii. yere of his reygne. And by that reaſon yt ſhulde endure two hundred. lxxx. & .xiii. yeres. The contynuaũce therof is more doutfull to be iuſtly determyned, for ſo myche as wryters be of dyuers opynyons of the begynnyng therof. All be it ỹ Polycronycon in the. li. chappter of hys fyrſte boke, ſayth that yt began vnder Sebertus, and vnder. x. kynges/ tyll Egbertus kynge of weſtſaxons ſubdued yt and ioyned yt to his owne kyngedome.

The fyrſte cryſten kynge of thys lordſhyppe was the forenamed Sebertus, conuertyd by meanes of Mellitus byſhoppe of London, as ſayth Guydo. But after hys ſayeng thys Sebertus ſhulde be the thyrd kynge of Eſſex. All wryters agreen that the kynges of thys lordſhyp were more comynly named vnder kynges, and were more ſubiecte to other kynges/ and chefely vnto the kynges of Mercia or Mercheryke.

Then to retourne agayn vnto the Bxytons, whyche by all this ſeaſon occupyed a parte of Cornewayl and the countres of Cambria / as Venedocia, whyche now is called Northwalys, and Demecea whych now is called Southwalys / and there held them in makynge aſſautes vpon the Saxons, as before is touchyd, ſome whyle in one coſte, and ſome whyle in that other, vnder ſondrye dukes, as witneſſyth Gaufryde and alſo the englyſh cronycle. The whych ſo contynued after moſte accorde of tyme, and to accorde thys hyſtorye wyth other, by the terme of. xxiiii. yeres / ouer and abouethre yeres alowed for the reygne of Careticus aforeſayd. So that from the fyrſte yere of Careticus, to the laſte of theſe. xxiiii. yeres/ erpyrd or flowyd .xxbii. yeres. At whyche tyme the Bxytons of one aſſent chaſe for theyr hedde or ruler, ỹ duke of Venedocia, or Southwalys, named Cadwanus.

Francia.

THE .CXXII. CHAPITER.



Lotharius or Lotharius the ſonne of Chilpericus, & ſecond of ỹ name/ was made kynge of a parte of Fraũce in ỹ yere of oure lorde .v. hundred lxxx. and.viii/ and the.ii. yere of Careticus then kynge of the Brytons. Thys Clotharius by the reporte of mayſter Robert Gagwyne, is notyd to be deſcendyd of Clodoue⁹ Lowis fyrſte cryſtened kynge of Fraunce/ & not erpreſſely to be the ſonne of Chilpericus.

But for ſo myche as in the cronycle of Chilperych, I haue ſhewed to you ſomwhat of the dedys of Fredegund wyfe of Chylperiche: therfore I entende in the declarynge of thys ſtory of Clothayre, to erpreſſe the remanaunte, in as ſhorte wyſe as I good ly may. And fyrſt ye ſhall vnderſtãd, that after thys Fredegunde had as before is ſhewed, cauſyd her lorde to be ſlayne: ſhe ferynge that at length her vntrouth ſhulde be dyſcouerỹd/ wyth all her goodes in ſhorte tyme after yode vnto Paris / and there in the monaſterye or houſe of our ladye held her. And for ſhe wold be in more ſuerty/ and alſo her ſon the ſayd Clotharius ſhuld be the ſtrõger in his domynyon and kingdome: therfore ſhe ſent meſſengers vnto Gunthranus kynge of Orleaunce & brother to her lorde Chilperich/ requyrynge hym of fauoure and ayde/ & that he wolde of his goodneſſe be tutour & defendour of her ponge ſonne Clotharius. The whych not denyenge the requeſte of Fredegunde, ſpedde toward Paris in all haſte/ where wyth the aſſent of other nobles of the realme, he toke the gydynge of the ponge kynge. By whoſe aduyſe and cõmaundement, the ſayde Clotharius was conueyd & ſhewyd thorough many of the cheſe cytyes of his lande. But in lykewyſe as Gunthranus wyth other bylyed theym ſelfe to ſtrength Lotharius in hys ryghte / euen ſo were other of the nobles of Fraũce (by the meanes of Brunechyeldis, wyfe ſome tyme of Sygebert, yongeſt ſonne of Lothayre the fyrſt / the whyche Sygebert receyued of hys ſayde wyfe two ſonnes named Chilperich and Chyldebert/ of the whych two, Chilperich ſurmyſed the other) that dyd all theyr entent to promote Chyldebert to the poſſeſſyon of hys father/ that Chilpericus father of Lotharius occupyed after the deth of Sigebert forenamed.

Here dyſcordeth the frenche cronycle frõ myne authour Gagwyne. For there yt is ſayd, ỹ Brunechield with the other of her aſſent/ wold then by theyr meanes haue pferred a baſtard ſon of the forenamed Sygebert called Theodoric⁹, to the kyngdome of Fraũce. An other authour ſayth that this Theodorich was the ſon of Childeric⁹ afore named, whyche was the ſonne of Sygebert.

But to folowe mayſter Gagwyne/ This Childebert whych by ỹ former ſayeng reherſyd in ỹ .C. and.xiiii. chapiter of this treatyſe, was delyuerỹd from ỹ handes of Chilperich his vncle, by meanes of the erle of Poytow named Gũdebald: this with a ſmall cõpany came vnto Paris/ where of ỹ cyteſẽs he was kept out. For ỹ which ſoon after he ſent a noble man of his named Gillon with other, as ambaſſadours vnto Güthran⁹. And where among other thynges of hym requyred, they ared of him Fredegũd to ſuffer deth, for ỹ ſhe had by her ſubtylty cauſed to be murdred bothe Sygebert father to theyr kynge, and alſo

Chilpericus her owne husbande: yt was of him vtterly denyed. wherfore this sayd Eyllon sayd vnto Güthra nus / syr kynge knowe thou for certayne, synnes thou haste refused this peace to the offeryd of thy neuewe / that the deth of thy brother shall cleue to thy hedde. wyth these wordes the kynge beynge greatly amoued / commaunded the ambassadours to be putte oute of his court / and when they were in the strete, all kylthe and ordoure to be caste vppon theym as enymytyes.

And varyaunces thus kyndelyng betwene these two kinges / Gunthra nus soone after sent Fredegunde into Neustria or Normandy / & caused her there to be kepte not farre from ꝑ citye of Roan, whyther to her came many noble men of Fraũce in cõfortynge her, and also mouynge her for the trouble she was in / promysynge to her ayde to the vttermoste of theyr power. But when that Fredegunde apperceyued the great fauoure that Brunechyelde stode in, of the nobles of Orleaunce or Fraunce, she enuyenge her welth and honoure, called to her an hoinpeyde & a felon called Holderyche / to whom the sayde Fredegũde pmysyd great treasour, yf he coude by venyme or otherwyse bryngе to deth the sayde Brunechiel dis. By meane of whych promyse he graũted to bryngе her entent about / & shortely after drewe vnto the court of the sayde Brunechyeldis. where he fyll in suche familyaryte wyth dy uerse of her courte, that he came many seasons to the ꝑsence of ꝑ quene. But by what happe I can not saye / lastely he was taken in suspeccyon / and so tormentyd & pyned, that he cõfessyd ꝑ cause of his thyder cõmyng, and by whom he was sent / with all ꝑ other circũstaunce of the matter. After whych cõfessyon so made / he was to betyn & arrayed in moste byle maner, and so sent agayn to Fredegũd. And when he was comen to her presence, and shewed what tourment he had suffred for her cause: she incontynẽt in fulfyllyng of her malycyous purpose / commaunded that his handes and fete shulde be stryken of and so lette go / to the ende that yt shulde be thought that she had not desyred hym to that besynesse. Aboute thys tyme & season arose a ponge mã in a corner of Fraunce / the whych by his subtylẽ wytte named hym selfe to be the sonne of the fyrst Lotharius, and brother vnto Gunthranꝰ. The which by synystre meanes and crafty, gatte the fauoure of the lordes of Supan / and by theyr assystence held and occupyed a great parte therof.

And after sondele of hys counsayles to Gunthranus by hys espyes disclosyd / this sayde ponge man beyng named Gũdoaldus, sent vnto Gunthranus an ambassade / and requyryd hym to be restoryd to a porcyon of hys faders goodes. Addyng therto that yf he denyed / the sayde Gundoaldus wolde wyth a strong armye repayre out of Swyan, and get hys ryght wyth strength / & that to bryng about he shulde also haue great ayde of Chyldebert his neuewe aboue named. whan kynge Gunthranus had at leyser herde the message: he in dysdaynyng the same cõmaunded them to be sette vppon horse backes theyr facys towarde the tayle / and so with betynge and vylanye to be dryuen thorough the town. It was not long after that a daye was appoyntyd betwene Gunthranus and Childebert / at whych day both prynces met with great companyes & lordes. And whẽ they were sette in theyr counsayll / Gunthranꝰ cõmaunded the forsayd messyngers of Gundoaldus to be brought to fore them, & there agayne

to re-

to receyte, theyr forsayde message. whych done, he shewyd furthermore that the sayd Gundoalde had before tyme dispoyled the doughter of Chilperyche named Rygonde, of all such rychesse as she wyth her conueyed, when she went towarde Spayne to be maryed / of the whyche some lordes of Childebert were of counsayll. whyche vnto the sayde two prynces was thought trewe/ for so myche as the sayde lordes then accusyd, were absent from that great counsayll.

THE.CXXIII. CHAPITER.

After many and great actes concludyd by thys counsayll betwene these two forsayd prynces: Gunthramus in open audyence admytted hys neuewe Chyldebert for his heyre, for so mych as he had none heyre of hys bodye / commyttynge the rule therof to hym before all that were there. And after toke hym apte, and shewyd to hym whych of his nobles he shulde take to counsayll, and whyche he shuld refuse. And specyally he warnyd hym to be well ware of hys moder Brunechyeldis, for that he knewe in her so great vntrouthe & subtylty/and also of Syllon the bysshoppe, the whyche he also sayde he was not to be trusted. when he had thus aduertysed hys neuewe, they both retourned vnto the place of cou sayll/ where by them and theyr counsayllys certayn thynges concernyng the comone wele were sette in an order. And that done, the sayde counsayll was fynyshed/ and purueyaūce for theyr dyner prouyded, the prynces wyth theyr baronye went vnto dyner. In the season of whych dyner the sayde Gunthramus sayde vnto ỹ great nomber of lordes beynge presente / ye my lordes and nobles of Fraunce, the whych to me haue euer more ben true and dere/ here is myn neuew, the whyche as myne heyre I haue allowed and ordeynyd, whome I praye you to honoure, and wyth true fayth be vnto hym obedyent as to your kyng. For of ỹ great worthynesse that of hym is to come, I am in great hope / whyche is allyed wyth myght and vertue. And to the augmentacyon of these wordes/ shortely after restored to hym all such cytyes, as Chilpericus by hys lyfe had with holden from hym. And soone after eyther from other in moste humble & louynge maner departyd.

Of thys peace betwene these two pryncs thus stablyshyd, the fame ranne wyde. wherfore certayne lordes beyng vppon the partye of Gundoaldus refused hym/ and went vnto the party of Gunthramus.

Soone after wyth hys people Gūdoaldus resortyd vnto a cytye ouer the ryuer of Geroūde named Conuena/ where for the strength therof, he thought to abyde hys fortune. wherof when Gunthramus was warned/he in goodly spede made thyder warde, and layd hys people nere vnto the sayde cytye. But when he had espyed the strēgth therof/ and knew well yt was daungerous for to obteyn: he thē vsyd gyle, where strēgth myght not preuayle / and deuysed or forged certayn letters in the name of Brunechyeldys, wherin was fayned, that the sayde Brunechyeldys shulde desyre Gundoaldus in all hasty wyse, to resorte vnto the cytye of Burdeaux.

Of whyche fraude Gundoaldus no thynge suspectynge / commaundyd hys treasoure wyth other hys stuffe vnder saufe gydynge thyderward to be conueyed. wherof the knightes of Gunthramꝰ hauyng knowlege, with a stronge cōpany made ouer the fore sayd water of Geroūde, & layde such

watche for them, that they encountred the sayde people that caryed the sayde treasure and stuffe / and parforce toke it from the knyghtes of Gundoaldus and presentyd it vnto Gunthranus.

Lyke as before ye haue harde that certeyne lordes of the hoste of Gundoalde fled vnto the hoste of Gunthranus / so in thys passe tyme. iiii. cappytaynes or rulers of the hoste of Gunthranus fled vnto Gundoalde/ ꝑ whych myne authour nameth Desiderius, Mommolus, Bladascus, and Sagyttarius. whyche. iiii. after theyr compynge to Gundoalde stode in such fauour/ that he was by theyr counsayle myche what aduysed and gyded. It was not longe after that ꝑ knyghtes of Gunthranus had thus wonne ꝑ forsayd treasoure & stuffe/ that Gundoald was so sore pursued that he was fayne to close hym wyth in a stronge cytye / the whyche Lendegylsus mayster of the hoste of Gũthranus assayled by dyuerse feates of warre to wynne. But whã he saw hys labour lost / than he cautelously fande ꝑ meane to speke secretly with one of the forsayde. iiii. cappytaynes named Mommolus, and wyth hym treatyd of the betrayenge of ꝑ cytye. The whyche after many and longe exhortacyons, wyth the assuraũce of theyr lyues and other, graũtyd vnto the sayd treason/ whereof the maner shulde be thus. Thys sayd Mommolus wyth the forenamed Bladascus and other of that affynyte/ shulde set a fyre an olde temple wythin ꝑ cytye. And when the people of ꝑ cytye were besyed to quenche the fyre/ the sayde Mommolus wyth hys adherentes to open the gates, & so to let in Lyndegylsus and hys knyghtes. But yet thys treason set a parte/ Mõmolus goeth to Gõdoalde, and sheweth to hym the greate daunger that he standeth in of his enemyes. wherfore he counsayled hym that he wyth the other rulers about hym go vnto the tentys of Gunthranus and yelde them all vnto hys grace and mercy. And also to the entent that he shuld there shewe and proue, that he was the indubytate son of the fyrste Clothayre/ the whyche to the kynge and all his hoste was very doutfull, and the more bycause he so fled from them. whan Gundoaldus had at leysoure harde the counsayle of Mommole, gyuynge to hym credence / for so myche as by hys counsayle before tymes he had fortheryd hys causes/ and also by comfort that he reportyd to haue by meanes of Lyndegylsus before named: he settyng a parte all fere, wyth certayne nomber in peasyble wyse issued the cytye. And whan he had a lyttell space gone: ii. erles of Gunthranus hoste named Bole and Bolon receyued hym, and delyuered hym to the power of Lyndegylsus/ and Mommole retourned wyth the other of his confederey, vnto ꝑ cytye/ and closed faste the gates bytwene ꝑ cytye and the pauylyons of Gũthranus. where was a lytell coppyd hyll/ to the heyght whereof whan Gundoalde was comen, the sayd Bolõ hym sodeynly threwe downe. And as he was rollynge downe the hyll/ with a great stone he strake hym on the hed, by vyolẽce wherof he was forthwith slayne or dede. And Mommole, the whych as before is towched was reentred the cytye/ fyrste dyspoyled the goodes of the sayd Gundoalde/ and after fell vpon the citesyns, and robbed and spoyled them in lyke maner, not sparynge prestes nor other / and after brente chyrches, temples, and houses without pytye/ whyche done he sped hym vnto the tentys of Lyndegylsus. But he not beynge sure of the sauegarde of the sayde Mõmole and hys

and hys cõpany from the murmoure of hys knyghtes/ or more verely for he wolde not be a knowen of the prouyded deth of theym / commaunded the sayde Mõmole wyth hys adherentes to tary without, & not to come in the preseñce of hys knyghtes, tyll he had somedele pacyfyed them. whiche was done, but not all without strife/ for some there were that beganne to quarell wyth hym and hys. But whẽ Lyndegylse sawe that this Mõmole and his company were somdele with drawẽ frõ his paulyon, he made a token to hys knyghtes / whereby they knowyng his mynde, fell vpon him & slewe hym. Sagyttarius one of the foresayde .iiii. of that company, the whyche myne authour reporteth to be a byshoppe, fledde to haue sauegarded hym self/ but in his flyght he was slayne. And whẽ these enymyes where thus brought out of lyfe/ Gunthranus commaũded the goodes of the sayde Mommole to be broughte vnto hys tresorye / whyche were of great valure, and after were egallye deuyded betwene hym and Childebert hys neuewe. It was not longe after but certayne tokens & fygures appered in the fyrmament, the which by astronomers were iuged the fyne of some prynce/ whyche after a yere shewyd to be true. For the sayd Gunthranus dyed vpon a yere folowyng the sayd fygures or sygnes/ when he hadde ben kyng of Orleaunce by the terme of .xxvii. yeres/ and was buryed wyth great pompe in the cytye of Cabylon wythin the prouynce of Burgoyne, in ỹ monastery of saynte Marke, whyche he before had buylded / and lefte for hys heyre of that kyngdome his neuewe the foresayde Chyldebert.

THE .CXXIIII. CHAPITER.

CHildebertus then hauyng the rule & possessyon of hys owne enherytaunce, that ys to saye of Austracy, and also of Orleaunce / castynge in his mynde howe he myghte be reuenged of Fredegunde, ỹ which as before is shewed in the .C. & .xiii. chappter of this lybell slewe hys father Sygebert: called vnto hym his olde frende and councelloure Gundebald erle of Poytowe/ and then cõmaunded ỹ he shuld with his power inuade the countre of Soysons, the whyche was in the rule of Clotharius. wherof Fredegunde beyng warned/ assembled to her ỹ lordes of the countrey, and exhorted them to wyth stande the malyce of theyr enymyes/ shewynge to them furthermore that that thynge they shuld of iustyce and equyte do, consyderynge that theyr kynge Clotharius was yet tender of age, and hadde as yet no knyghtely prowesse to defende hym self and his lande. And after a longe exhortacyon to them made/ she wyth her sonne prepared to go agayne the sayde enymyes. And when all thynge to the warre was preparyd and redy / she wyth a great army made toward the hoste of Gundebalde. And when she knewe she was nere vnto the hoste/ she commaundyd her captaynes to reste & fortyfye her people vppon all ptes for brekyng in of her enymyes. And agayne nyghte she called to her Laundry her olde paramoure wyth other, wyllyng them that in the dede of the nyght they wolde manfully set vppon the other partye/ for so myche as she sayde to them that she was certaynly enfourmed by her espies, that her sayde enymyes were sore weryed by reason of that dayes laboure. After whose counseyll the sayde Laundry wyth other wrought / and supprysed theyr enymyes so vnwarelye, that of theym she slewe a parte & chasyd the remanaunt. And that done spedde them vnto Champayne nere

vnto Reynes, and spoyled and bren t a parte of that countre. Thys feat of warre thus compassyd by the subtyle wytte of Fredegunde was nere to a place called Truet.

Then Childebert entendyd after certeintye hadde of the ouerthrowe of Gundebalde, for to haue made newe warre vppon Fredegunde. But he was let by meane of the Longobardis, whyche than made warre vpon hym. Of the whyche warre he hadde somdeale his entent/and more shuld yt Mauricius emperour of Constãtyne the noble had kept all promesse with hym before made. After ẏ which warre in party endyd, he retourned into hys owne countree/ and shortly after he and also hys wyfe dyed, and not wythout suspeccyon of venym/ leuyng after hym two sõnes named Theodobert and Theodorych / gyuynge to the eldest the lordshyppe of Austraci, and to the yonger the prouynce of Burgoyne.

About thys tyme the Hunes brake out of theyr places, and warryd vpõ certeyne partyes of myddle Fraunce and dyd therein greate harme. But lastly by meanes of greate gyftes by them receyued/ they left the countre & drewe towarde Soysons. Agayne whom Fredegũde gaderyng a grete powar/sent Clotharius hyr sonne & kynge, to the entent to defende the sayd Hunes/that they shulde not inuade theyr countrees. And shortly after bothe hostes mette in the felde/ where after longe and sharpe fyght the Frenchmen were vyctours, and chased the Hunes in suche wyse, that the more parte of them were slayne and taken, for the whyche vyctory Fredegunde made excedynge ioye to hyr son Clothayre / & receyued hym with greate pleasure, and excedynge gyftes. After the whyche passyd not longe whyle, but that she fell syke & dyed/ and than buryed by hyr housbonde Chylperich.

Whan the forenamed bretherne had knowlege of the deth of Fredegũde/ they by the exhortacyon and styrynge of Brunechieldis theyr graundmother, callyng to mynde the wronges to theyr auncestors done by Fredegund, and somdele by Lothayre: assembled a greate powar, & met wyth Lothayre and hys powar at the ryuer of Arrune or Aruẽne. In ẏ which place was so sore fyght and so many slayne, that the cource of the ryuer was let, by the multytude of the caryens or dede bodyes ẏ were therein caste. But the more parte fell of the knyghtes of Lothayre / so ẏ he was forcyd to forsake the feld, and thens to flee to the cyty of Meleon, & from thens to Parys: whom the sayde bretherne folowed/ & compelled hym to make peas after theyr pleasure. The effecte of which peas was this. Theodobert ẏ elder brother of these two, shuld enioye all the lande lyeng bytwene the ryuer of Seyn & Leyr, vnto the Brytysh Occean, or the see of lytell Brytayne. And Theodorich the yonger brother, to haue all the lande from the sayd ryuer of Seyn vnto the ryuer of Issayr to the brynk of the see. And to Clothayr shuld remayne. xii. prouinces, which the sayd two ryuers of Issayr and Seyne flowen by or thorough.

Whyche peas thus conferned and graũted/ Theodobert to whom Neustria or Normandye belonged, sent thyder a cheuetayne of hys court called Berthalde, to defende the sayde countre. But Clothayre of thys former accorde beynge nothynge contentyd/ sent his sonne Merones vnder the gydynge of Laundry prefect or ruler of hys paleys into Neustria to warre in that countrey. And for so mych as Berthalde sawe

well he lakked power to wythstande so great an host/ he therfore toke the cytye of Orleaunce, tyll he had gadered more company. Then Laundry sealyd that parte of ỹ coũtrey, & cam to the wallys of the cytye / and by diuerse wordes of reproche, excyted ỹ sayde Berthalde to gyue batayll to hym in the playne felde. The whych he refusyd because of the inequalyte of nomber of knyghtes. But he offeryd to issue out of ỹ cytye, & to fyght wyth Laundry hande to hand/ wyth that he myght be assuryd agayne his people / the whyche offer Laundrye refusyd.

It was not longe after or bothe kynges wyth great hostes drewe into that countrey / and at the ryuer of Stampis mette, where betwene thẽ was foughten a stronge batayll. But by the polycye of Theodobert/ Lotharp was putte to a disauãtage. For whyle the sayde Lotharye was cõueyeng hys people ouer the ryuer at a narowe passage/ Theodobert began so fyersly and kepte the passage so strept, that the peple of Clotharye came not two partes of theym to the felde. Neuertheless the fyght cõtynued by a longe season/ in whyche tyme Berthalde encountred many tymes Laundrye, and prouoked hym to batayll / but euer that other refusyd. Lastly he seynge and knowyng well that he shuld wynne great worshyppe and also profyte, yf he myght slee or take this Laũdry / he therfore put hym selfe in the more daunger of hys enymys, and fynally of thẽ was slayn. But Theodobert in pursuyng Lotharye and in comfortynge of his knyghtes bare hym so well, that he causyd his enimyes to lese grounde/ and at length put them to fyght; the whyche he foloweth to the gates of Parys, to the great damage of ỹ people of Lotharp. In this chase was taken Meroneus the sonne of Clotharye wyth many other/ but Laundry was goten wythin the cytye. And when Theodobert had thus goten the victory of hys enemyes / he lyste no lenger to tary about them at that season/ but shortly after retourned to hys countre.

In the court of Theodorich broder of this Theodobert, was at this day dwellynge an Italian named Protharid/ the whyche as myne authour sayth was paramour vnto Brunechyeld before sayd. The which, Brunechyeld by hyr meanes had exalted from poore estate vnto hyghe authoryte/ the whyche was of a subtyle & fat castynge wytte, and therwyth excedynge couetous/ and in greate fauour of the kynge, but to all hys lordes odyous & hatefull: for the which vnlefull meanes by hym to the nobles and comons of the lande vsed/ & for the yll condycyons and bad counceyll that Brunechyelde & thys Protharid vsed within ỹ court of Theodobert/ he bannyshed them both as well of hys lande as of hys courte. wherfore euer after they malygned agayne Theodobert. And for the execucyon of theyr malicious purpose/ they tolde vnto Theodoryche, that hys enemy and not brother Theodobert, had withdrawen from hym the chefe of hys faders treasoure/ alledgyng also, that he was not the sonne of Chyldebert hys fader, but gotten of a gardener/ and wylyd hym therfore to sende vnto hym and to aske restytucyon of the sayde goodes. By the whyche wycked counceyle Theodoryche was so lad, that he sent vnto hys brother/ and in suche wyse so verpd and styrpd hym, that dedely malice was kyndelyd betwene them. In so myche that eyther of them assembled great hostes/ and lastely met nere vnto a towne named Carysse.

where

where the sayde hostes beynge redy to haue runne togyders/ the lordes of Theodoberte so demeaned them vnto hym, that by theyr wyse counsayle he agreed to sende to hys brother, and to haue a cõmunicacyon of peas. And whan the embassade was comen to the paulyon of Theodorychе, and there had shewyd the vnkyndnesse of thys warre, wyth the ieopardy that myghte ensue of the same/ anone the forsayde Prothadius toke vppon hym the answere, & sayd: it is not requysyte so lyghtly to graunte peas / but necessary it is to attempte the wyll of our enemye by batayle, whether he woll be agreable to condescende to our desyres. The whyche wordes thus expressyd of hym, anone the more party of the lordes dysdayned it / and conspyryd wythin them selfe howe they myghte putte hym to deth. And forthwyth arose amonge them such a murmur, that ỹ kynge apperceyued well that they entendyd some harme to Prothadius. For the whyche he called vnto hym a knyght named Uselyne/ chargynge hym to go vnto the lordes, commaundynge them that they in no wyse shulde do any harme to Prothadius. The whyche Uselyne beynge of the mynde of the other/ sayd that the kynge wolde that they shulde slee Prothayde. After whyche message done/ they ranne in all haste and hym slewe, as he sate playenge at dyce or tables wyth one Peter a physycyon / and that done all hoolly ranne vnto ỹ kynges tent, besechyng hym to take no displeasure of ỹ deth of so cuyll a man, that as well was knowẽ, was enemye to all frendshyp and peas. But for Theodorychе apperceyued well, that he cowde not reuenge hys deth wythout ponyshemẽt of a multytude/ he therfore toke pacience, and suffred the offence to passe vnpunysshed. After whyche man thus murdered/ bothe prynces without notable acte depted eyther into hys countree.

THE .CXXV. CHAPITER.

TO thys daye Theodorychе had taken no wyfe / all be yt of hys concubyne he receyued two sonnes. He therfore by thaduertysement of hys frendes, set hys mynde to mary some noble woman/ & soone after sent certeyne ambassadours vnto Berthryc⁹ then kyng of Spayne/ wyllyng to graũte vnto hym Wemberge his doughter in mariage. The whiche vppon certeyne condicyons was perfourmed, and wyth greate ryches to hym shortly after sent and maryed/ & by a certayn tyme well entreated & cherysshed. But that season rõne & spent/ Brunechyeld so turned the kynges mynde from the quene, that lastely he wyth suche treasoure and iewellys as he of her receyued, sent her home agayn. The whych iniury Berthryc⁹ her father toke at herte greuously/ & shortly after sente hys messengers vnto Clotharye kyng of Soysons, requiryng hym of ayde to warre vppon Theodoryche, which hadde done vnto hym great displeasure/ and the rather for ỹ warre that the sayde Theodorychе wyth his brother lately made agayne hym / the whyche wyth both theyr strengthes they myghte then well reuenge. To whome Clotharius graũted. And to haue hys party the stronger, he sente vnto hys neuewe Theodobert and brother to Theodoryche, to styre hym agayne hys sayde brother.

wherof when Berthryc⁹ hadde receyuyd knowlege of hys sayde messengers/ he thẽ sent vnto Agon king of Longobardys / or more verely Adoaldus the .v. kynge after Alboynus/ requyryng hym in lyke maner.

And

And he desyrous of wreche / made faste and sure promyse to gyue ayde to the vttermoste of his power.

when Theodoryche was warned of the cõspyracy of these.iiii.kynges, that entendyd to warre ioyntly vpon hym/ he was therwyth greatly amoued, and prouyded for hys defence in his beste maner. Then Theodobert trustyng the appoyntmẽt before made, assembled a great hoste/ and made spede fyrst toward ẏ place bytwene theym appoynted, whyche was nere to ẏ castell of Salas. But or any preparacyon was made towarde batayle/a meane was founde that the forenamed two bretherne shulde mete eyther wyth other, accõpanyed wyth.x. thousand knyghtes. But Theodobertus entendynge to dysceyue hys sayd brother, & to force hym to graũte to his pleasure/brought wyth hym ferre aboue ẏ nõber. wherfore Theodoricus beynge ouer sette wyth strength/graunted all his brothers wyll. whych was that ouer certeyne thynges and appoyntemen tes concluded bytwene Berthricus and hym/ Theodobert shulde holde to hym and his heyres two lordshippes called Champayne and Turon. whych conclusyon fynyshed/ eyther takynge leue of other departyd vnto theyr countreys / but not wythout greate vnrestfulnesse of the sayde Theodorych, berynge in mynde the wronge doynge of hys brother.

wherfore he shortly after made meanes to hys neuewe Clothayre, desyrynge hym that he wolde not assyste hys brother agayne hym/but to sufker hys quarell to be demyd by dynt of swerde bytwene theym two. This requeste, Lothayre by the aduyse of sayntc Columbane munke of Irelande than beynge in those costes, graunted.

And the frenche cronicle sayth, that he was warned of thys foresayd holy munke and abbot, that he shulde not medle bytwene the sayd two bretherne/ for so myche as yt was prouyded of god, that he shuld be heyre to them bothe.

whan Theodorych had receyued thys answere, he gaderyd his strẽgth and spedde hym vppon hys iourney to the cytye of Langresse, and from thens to Uerdune or Uerdoune. Theodoberte hauynge knowlege of hys malycyouse brothers purpose, gaderyd in Austracy a greate hoste/ and so sped hym tyll he came to the cytye of Toull. where bothe hostes shortely after met / and in the feldes or playnes nere to the cytye foughte a stronge batayle. In the whych was slayne greate people vppon bothe sydes / but the more parte vppon the syde of Theodobert. wherfore he fynally was compelled to forsake the felde, and fled vnto Coleyne. where he gaderyng a newe powar/ fought agayne wyth hys brother. In the whyche fyght he had lyke fortune/ & was agayn chasyd to hys grete shame and losse/ whom Theodoricus as hys mortall enemye folowed, fyrynge and wastynge the countreys as he went / in so myche that the inhabytauntes of the cõtreys fell before hym, besechynge his grace, that for the offence of one man, he wolde not destroye so many innocentes/assurynge hym forthermore that they wolde become hys lyegemen, and holde theyr lande of hym for euer. At whyche requeste he sayde gladly he wolde to them graunte theyr petycyon, yf that they wolde presente to hym the hedde of hys brother. After the whych answere by them of Theodorych receyued/they amonge them selfe appoynted out a certayne of persones moste apte to theyr purpose / and wyllyd theym to go vnto

Theodobert

Theodobert to execute theyr entent. The whyche sped theyr iourney tyll they came to the presence of Theodobert / & shewyd vnto hym that yf he wolde be agreable to departe wyth suche stuffe and iewellys as he had of hys faders, so that Theodorych myghte be partener therof/he shulde haue perfyght ampte and rest wyth hym. To the whyche wordes he gyuynge confydence and truste/ called wyth hym the sayde persones/ and brought them into ỹ howses, where the sayd stuffe and iewellys lay. And whyle he was busyed to deuyde out and appoynte ỹ porcyon of hys, one of the sayde persons slewe hym sodeynly / and after of one agrement strake of hys hed, and in secrete wyse caused yt to be conueyed vnto hys brother. whan Theodorych hadde receyued the hed of hys brother, he sped hym to Coleyne where this treason was wrought/ and receyued the cytye into hys possessyon, wyth all ỹ kyngdome of Austracy to hys brother belongynge. And when he had there ordred hys nedes after hys mynde/wyth two sonnes and an excedynge fayre doughter of Theodobert, he spedde hym vnto Mees the chefe cytye of Austracy/ where wyth hym met hys graundmoder Brunechyelde. The whyche perseuerynge in all malyce and myschefe/caused ỹ sayd two sonnes to be shortly slayn.

Theodorych then restored ordeyuered vnto Clothayre, all such lādes as to hym he had before promysed.

Theodorych thus endynge hys warre, the whyche by a longe season spent hys tyme in keppynge of concubynes/was nowe rauyshed wyth the beaute of his brothers doughter, the whyche he hadde brought from Coleyne. But that doyng Brunechyeld wythstode wyth all her power, because the mayde was so nere of hys kynne. For the whych he beyng with her sore dyscōtent sayde, o thou most wycked & false woman/ dyd not thou make me to beleue, that Theodobert was not the sonne of my father / but that he was the sonne of a gardyner. For what cause hast thou caused me to prsecute my brother, and lastely to slee hym. After the whyche wordes he wolde haue slayne her, yf he of his lordes hadde not ben letted. whyche dede not forgotten of this vngoodly woman / euer after imagyned howe she myght bryng Theodorych out of lyfe. And lastely she hyred such as were about hym to consent to her iniquyte/so that vpon a season when he came out of his stew or bayn, he ayed drynke, by ỹ force wherof he was poysoned & dyed soone after, whē he had reygned. xviii. yeres. Howe be yt Antoninus in the. vi. chappter &. xii. tyle of the seconde parte of hys worke, sayth that he was brent wyth fyre by the dyuyne power.

THE .CXXVI. CHAPITER.

NOw that I haue shewed vnto you the fyne & ende of these two brethern / by reason of whose deth the hole prncypate of Fraunce fell vnto the abouenamed Clothayr: I shall now expresse vnto you the dedys by hym done after he hadde all the rule onely.

So yt was that ỹ forenamed Brunechyelde malygned euer agayn Lothayr. And to the fortheraūce of her malyce, she behauyd her in such wise wyth some of the rulers & lordes of Austracy, that she caused them to admytte owne named Sygebert to be ryghtfull enherytoure of that lande. But for that some of them had good experyence of the yll dysposycyon of this woman / they therfore sent two noble men of that lande named Peppa

pyn and Arnold vnto Clothayre/wil lynge hym to sende hastely into that prouynce. After the whyche message by these two lordes reported, Clotha rius shortely after spedde hym into Austracy/ and at a castell called Ca thomat he lodged hym with hys peo ple. wherof herynge Brunechielde sent vnto hym/ & gaue vnto hym mo nicyon that he shuld voyde the land, for so myche as Sygebert the eldest sonne of Theodoryche was therof ryghtefull enheryteur.

ye haue harde before that Theodo ryche vsyd lemmans / of the whyche he receyued foure sonnes, ꝑ is to say Sygebert, Corbe, Chyldebert, and Merone. wherfore ꝑ forsayde Bru nechyelde entendynge to dystourbe Lothayre and all the lande/ forthyn ed the sayd Sygebert to clayme the lande of Austracye. And when Clo thayre hadde receyued knowlege of this maundemēt from Brunechielde or Bruneheuste/he sent to her answe re that he wolde assemble the lordes of Austracy, and be demed by theym, whyther thys land belonged to hym, or Sygebert. And she herynge that sentence/ excyted people of the prou ynce of Germanye to strength her partye, wyth all the people that she myght make of the sayde countre of Austracy. And that to bryng about/ she sente one Garnery an other Al bon. Of this Garnery she hadde su speccyon that he shuld fauour ꝑ par tye of Lothayre/wherfore to Albone hys felowe she sente letters, that he shulde put the sayde Garnery away.

whē Albone had ouer rad the letter/ he brake yt in peces & threwe theym from hym. And afterwarde a frende of Garneryes gaderyd the peces / and so ioyned theym that he concey uyd the sentence of the letter, and forthwyth shewyd yt vnto Garnery. when Garnery percyued the malyc yous entent of Brunechielde, he kepte yt secrete to hym selfe: all be it that he by his secrete meanes caused the Germanyes that they shuld take no partye wyth Brunechyelde. And that done he retourned into Bur goyne/ where wyth her and in her cō panye he solycyted so the lordes of Burgoyne, that some of them abhor red the crudelite of that woman. And when Garnery hadde in thys wyse compassed hys maters / he sent vnto Lothayr, & shewyd that yf he myght haue hys grace and safecondute/ he wolde come to hym and shew to hym thynges concernynge hys aduaun tage. All the whyche was graunted.

Then Clothayre by counsayle of ꝑ sayd Garnery assembled his power/ & shortly sente a strenght of theym in to Champayne and Cathaloyne/ where yt was shewed that Sigebert hadde gatheryd great strenghtys. Then forsoke the party of Sigebert many nobles of Austracye/ amonge the whyche myne authoure nameth Rucco, Sigoldus, and Enulanus, and yelded them to the mercy of Clo thayre. Then shortly after the hostes of Clothayre and Sygebert mette/ where Garnerye, by tokens betwene hym and dyuerse of the captaynes of Sygebert before assygned, ꝑ sayd captaynes wyth theyr people wyth drewe them, so that Sygebert wyth hys two brethern Corbo and Mero neus gaue backe whyle they came to the ryuer of Sigoune/ where after lytle resystence the forsayde two bre therne were taken. But the frenche cronicle sayth that all foure brethern were there taken. All be yt mayster Gagwyn sayth, that Sygeberte by the vertue of hys horse escapyd/ so that he was not after that daye seen.

And soone after thys victory Bru nechyeldes, which also of the frenche cronycle ys named Bruneheuste /

was brought as prysoner vnto the presence of Lothayre, wyth a suster of Theodorych, whych Garnery or Gerney hadde taken in the tentes of his enymyes. Then Lotharius forth wyth commaũded Corbon to be behedded, and preserued Meroneus, for so mych as he was to hym godfather, and euer after cherysshed hym as his kynnesman.

Lotharius thus hauyng ỹ victory of his enimyes, made great ioy. And after he hadde somedeale sette that countrey and other in quyete, he then toke aduyse of hys lordes howe he shulde be demeaned wyth Brunechielde, that hadde ben authorryce of so manyfolde mychyefes and crymynous ded. The whych of one cõsent and mynde condescendyd & agreed, that she shuld be put to moste paynfull and vyle deth. And fynally after sore betynges she was sette vppon a horse, and so conueyed thorough the hoste, that all men myghte beholde and se her, and after brought agayn to ỹ kynges presence. where then the kynge rehersed vnto her a longe process of all her murdurs, conspyracis, and wycked dedes, affermynge that she hadde ben the occasyon and cause of the deth of .x. prynces, besyde other meane persones. And whẽ he hadde sayde hys pleasure, he then commaunded her to be bounden to a wylde horse tayle by the here of her hedde, and so to be drawen whyle she were dede.

And when this iudgement was executed, she by the lycence of the kynge was buryed in an house of relygyon wythin the cytye of Noldoñ or Oldoñ, that she before tyme hadde buyldyd in the honoure of sayncte Martyne, besyde other many that she in her lyfe buyldyd in dyuerse other places, endowyng them wyth great and ryche possessyons.

THE.CXXVII. CHAPITER.

THus dame Fortune fauoured the partye of Lotharius, that this kyngdome, whyche hadde from the tyme of Clodoueus Lewes cõtynued vnder .iiii. gouernours or rulers for the more partye, nowe was fallen to hym, so that he hedde all vnder obeysaunce and rule, then anon thys Lotharius made Garnery prefecte and mayster of hys paleys, and releasyd vnto the Longebardes or Lombardes a trybute of .xii. thousand pounde yerely payde to the kynges of Fraunce, the whych was fyrst sette vppon theym by Gunthyranus hys vncle.

And in thys whyle to hys more encreace of worldely ioye, he receyuyd of hys wyfe Bergeruda a sonne, the whych he named Dagobertus. The whyche when he came to couenable age, he betoke to the lore of Arnolde then byshoppe of Mees. And when the fyrste wyfe of Lotharius was ded, he maryed a seconde named Si childe, of whom he receyued a chyld and named yt Haybert. when Dagobert the fyrste sonne was comen to a lawfull age, after vsuell custome of all prynces of Fraunce, he gaue hym myche to the chase of wylde bestys. And as by chaunce one daye he folowed the chace of an hert, and tryed yt so sore ỹ he brought hym to a bay in a place that then was called the strete of Catulyen. In the whyche strete was then an old lytle chapell, to the whyche the forsayde herte entred, and there helde hym, all be yt that a great nomber of houndes folowed hym to ỹ chapell dore, & none of theym wold enter, but there stode bayenge. And when Dagobertus came after and behelde the maner of the houndes, and dyd what he coude to cause them to entre the chapel and myght

myghte not/ he thus departed wythout moze doynge at that ſeaſon, not wythout great meruaylynge in hys mynde.

It was not longe after, that Clothayz cõſyderynge the frowardneſſe of growyng in his ſonne Dagobert/ aſſygned to hym a tutour oz lerner of wozldely and knyghtely maners, whoſe name was Sadzagelyle. And foz his ſonne ſhulde haue hym in the moze awe and fere/ the kyng gaue vnto the ſayde tutoure the dukedome of Guyan. But ſoyt was one daye that foz a cauſe thys Sadzagelyle wold haue chaſtyzed this Dagobert/ wherof he beyng ware, aſſociated vnto hym certayne wanton perſones and bete his mayſter/ & after in way of dyſpyte cauſed the berd of hys tutour to be ſhauen of. Foz the whyche dede Lothayze was agayne hym greuouſly dyſpleaſyd/ & in great ire and haſte, ſente foz hys ſonne Dagobert. But he feryng punyſhement, wythdzewe hym, and went vnto the fozenamed chapell/ truſtyng veryly that where tofoze a beſte was ſhewid ſuch comfozte, that he by holy pzayers ſhulde there be comfozted tyll ſuche tyme as he myghte atteyne vnto the grace of hys father.

ye ſhall vnderſtande that befoze tyme after he hadde experyence of that wonder ſhewyd by the herte/ he lerned that the holy martyzs ſaynte Denys, and hys two felowes Ruſticus and Eleutherius ſhulde be buryed wythin the ſayde chapell / the whych were martyzyd in the perſecucyon of Domycyane the emperour, aboute the yere of Cryſtes incarnacyon .lxxx. and .xvi. In the honoure of ỹ whych martyzs the fozeſayd poore chapell was arreryd, as witneſſyth the frenche cronycel, by the meanes of a deuout frenchman whoſe name ys not expzeſſyd. Thus Dagobert in thys chapell abydynge in pzayer/ in the fyzſte nyght he beyng in ſlepe, apperyd vnto hym .iii. olde faders, ſayenge vnto hym/ yonge man we be thoſe martyzs, whyche many yeres paſſyd were ſlayne foz the fayth of Cryſte, and buryed in thys place by Catula that good woman. whyche place is not duely nozſufficyently honoured/ nozyet the people of Fraũce hath not vs in due reuerẽce and woz ſhyppe. And therfoze when thou art of myghte and power, then remembze vs, and helpe thys place to be otherwyſe buyldyd/ whych ſhall not be longe to. And foz thou ſhalte not take thys foz a dzeme oz fantaſye/ dygge hereafter thys grounde, and thou ſhalte fynde oure thze bodyes hole and vncozrupt/ and vppon euerych of vs our names with letters freſſhely wzyten. And after thys they vanyſſhed awaye.

when Dagobert awoke / he called well to mynde thys vyſyon. And pzomyſed inwardely betwene god and hym, that yf he were reconcyelyd to hys father as to hym they hadde pzompſed/ he wolde fulfyll that they hadde deſyzyd. After thys the father beynge warnyd that Dagobert was in thys chapell/ ſent vnto the place certayne of hys knyghtes to pull oz take hym thens per fozce. And when they came wythin a myle of ỹ ſayde chapell/ they were ſo aſtonyed that they myghte not go one fote fozwarde to do the beſte they coude.

when they hadde long ſtryuẽ with oute pzeuaylynge / they retournyd to the kynge, and ſhewed to hym ỹ trouthe in all thynge as they had done.

The kynge beynge dyſcontent wyth theyz repozte, blamed theym, and ſayde that they feryd hys ſonne, foz the whyche cauſe they hadde fayned that excuſe.

And incontynently he sente forth another company/the which were delte wyth in lyke maner as ꝑ other. were Lotharij somdele troubled wyth the reporte of his seruauntes / consyderyd the chapell to be nere vnto Paris where he then lay/ & cõmaundyd his horse to be brought, for he wolde proue the mater hym selfe. But lyke as his seruauntes were serupd, euen so became of hym/ so that he myghte go or ryde frowarde or sydewarde/ but towarde the chapell myght he in no wyse atteyne.

when this was knowen to ꝑ kyng/ he cõsydered well yt was the handywoꝛke of god. wherfoꝛe by fayꝛe and easy meanes he called home his son, and recouncylyd hym, and foꝛgaue all trespace. To this accoꝛdyth the legende of the lyfe of sayntе Denys, wyth moꝛe that shall after folowe in the stoꝛye of this Dagobert.

After thys reconcylyacyon, Lotharius oꝛdeyned vnder hym hys sonne Dagobert to be ruler of the sygnoꝛy of Austracye. But whyther yt were by the elacyon of hys owne mynde, oꝛ by badde counsayll, he shoꝛtely after rebellyd agayne hys father / and wolde haue reteyned that pꝛouynce to his owne vse.

Foꝛ thys were chosen .xii. noble men of Fraũce, to arbytre and deme betwene the father and the son. The whyche Loꝛdes after they had longe debated this mater/ by fayꝛe entreatyse contentyd so the father, that he gaue vnto the sonne the sayde loꝛdshyppe of Austracy.

Soone after thys accoꝛde, Clothayꝛe made warre vppon the Gothis oꝛ Sarons/ and them at length subdued. Foꝛ yt is to be knowē, that lyke as the sayde Sarons inuadyd myche Bꝛytayne oꝛ Englande/ in lykewyse wartyd they in Fraunce / and lastely subdued the pꝛouynce of Neustria and named yt after theym Noꝛmandye, as after in the stoꝛye of Charlis the symple shall moꝛe euydently appere.

Of thys byctoꝛye of Sarons ys made a longe reherſayll / and howe lastly when Clothayꝛe hadde slayne the kynge oꝛ ruler of theym named Berthꝛande, he after yode into the countrey of Germanye, and slewe man and chylde that passyd ꝑ length of hys swerde.

Of this and other dedes by this Lothayꝛe done, I myght make a longe woꝛke/ but I passe ouer.

Then yt folowēth, when Lothayꝛe hadde set his countrey in some reste/ he assembled hys loꝛdes at a cytye oꝛ towne called Traacas oꝛ Trecas. And after dyuers maters dyscussyd and endyd / he axed of theym perfyte allegeaunce and fydelite to hym and hys heyꝛes to be kepte. The whyche by the sayde loꝛdes fyꝛmely pꝛomysed and assuryd/ he commaundyd euerych of theym to repayꝛe to theyꝛ owne countreys. And soone after he made an assemble of hys byshoppes and spyꝛytuall men at the cytye oꝛ towne of Troys/ by whose counsayllys he oꝛderyd thynges and maters concernynge the wele of the chyꝛche. And shoꝛtly after he was veryd with greuous sekenes/ wherof he kynally dyed, when he hadde reygned after moste wꝛyters .xliii. yeres, leuynge foꝛ heyꝛe the foꝛenamed Dagobert/ the whyche enterryd hys fader wyth great põpe at the abbey of sayntе Vincent wythoute the wallys of Paris/ the whiche abbey is at thys daye called sayntе Germaynes.

The foꝛesayde yeres accomptyd foꝛ the reygne of Lothayꝛe / be accomptyd from the fyꝛste daye that he was oꝛdeyned kynge of Soysons, vnto the daye of hys deth. wherof he reygnyd after some wꝛyters ouer a

part

parte.xxbii. peres/ & ouer all Fraũce xbi. peres. whyche make the full of xliii. peres.

Anglia.

THE .CXXXVIII. CHAPITER.



Adwanus or Cadwan, the whyche of Guydo ys named duke of Uenedoyce or of Northwalys / was by one assente of the Britõs lastly made theyr souerayne or gouernour, in the yere of our lorde. vi. hundred and xiii/ and the .xxv. yere of the seconde Clothayre kynge of Fraunce/ and also the fyrst yere of Colwolphus then kynge of westsaxons / accomptynge for the reygne of Ceawlmus kynge of the sayde westsaxons .xxxi. yeres. And for Colricus nexte succedynge hym. v. yeres.

ye haue before hard what dyscorde and trouble was amonge the Brytons in the tyme of Careticus laste kynge & longe after, by reason wher of the Saxõs wanne the more land/ and as before is rehersyd in the. C. and. xx. chappter, howe Ethelfryde kynge of Northumberlande ouer set the Brytons at the cytye of Chestre/ & forcyd thẽ to take ouer Seuarne, and so into walys / where they then chase thys Cadwane to theyr duke and leder. The whyche after he was putte in authorite/ assembled hys Brytons, and came agayne into Britayne / and gaue batayll vnto the sayde Ethelfryde. In the whych they spedde dyuersly, so that some season the Saxons wanne/ and some while the Brytons. But the Brytons held Chestre & other good townes/ whych they hadde recouerȳd sene theyr last commynge.

It shulde seme by the meanynge of Policronica, that thys Cadwan or Cedwall shulde at lengthe slee the sayde Ethelfryde and Olricus bothe kynges of Brennicia and Deyra. But Guydo and also Gaufryde wyt nessen, that after thys Cadwan had the better of Ethelfryde/ by medyatours yt was agreed that Ethelfryd shulde enioye all the lande ouer and beyonde Humber vnto Scotlande/ and Cadwan shulde haue the lande from Humber towarde the sowthe. To the whyche sayenge agreeth the englyshe cronycle, affermynge also that he shulde be the sonne of Brucy uall kynge of Leyceter, the whych of other wryters is not testyfyed.

It is also there shewed that after ȳ sayde accorde betwene Ethelfryde & Cadwan confyrmed/ that they contynued durynge the lyfe of Cadwan as two especiall louers and frendes/ and durynge the reygne of this Cadwan the two sonnes of Colricꝰ, Kyngilsus and Quichilynus, after the deth of theyr fathers brother Colwolphus, ruled ioyntly the pryncypate of westsaxons. The whyche in theyr begynnynge faught agayn the Brytons at Ampton besyde Oxynford/ & wanne of them the towne & other holdes, whyche the Brytons in ȳ cõtre occupyed. But by agrement of wryters this Cadwan was not at this cõflycte, nor yet medlyd hym so farre within ȳ land. But as yt shuld seme by Guydo/ these Brytons shulde be some cõpany that shulde lyue vnder trybute of the Saxons/ ȳ whych for the manhode ȳ they hard reported of Cadwan, rebelled agayn ȳ Saxons. Then it foloweth, whẽ this Cadwan had thus contynued his amite wyth Ethelfryde/ a chaunge fell, that this Ethelfryde forhatered or otherwise put frõ hym hys wyfe beynge great wyth chylde, & toke to hym an other.

wherfore thys woman beynge reed-leſſe/ callyng to mynde ꝑ great loue, that was betwene her huſbande and Cadwan, ſhe went vnto hym, and ſpecyally beſoughte hym to recouple her lorde & huſbande, that ſhe myght be reſtoryd to hys company. But for Cadwan after many meanes and requeſtis myght not bryng that about/ he therfore tenderynge her neceſſyte, kepte her in hys owne courte tyll ſhe were lyghted. The whyche at tyme brought fourth a man chylde whom ſhe lette call Edwyn. And ſoone after was the wyfe of Cadwan delyuered of a ſonne, whom the father callyd Cadwalyn. But the authour of the Floure of hyſtoryes ſayth ꝑ theſe two chyldern were long borne before this tyme. The whych ſhuld ſeme to be true, for ſo myche as this Cadwalyn was of lawfull age to beweld his lande whē his father dyed/ the which he coude not do, yf he hadde nowe be borne. But as affermeth Policronycon, yt ſhulde ſeme lyke to a fable, all the reherſayll that Gaufride maketh in the ende of hys boke / as well for Cadwalyn and Edwyn, as for the other cyrcūſtaunce of the mater there reherſyd. whych varyeth from other wryters both for the tyme, and alſo for the mater, as ſomdeale is more in the hyſtorye hereof before made mencyon/ and alſo by the cōtynuaūce of this ſtorye. For as Giraldus Cambrenſ and other ſeyen/ this Edwyn was the ſonne of Elle or Ella kynge of Deyra/ the whyche was perſecutyd of Ethelfridus before named thē kynge of both prouynces, that is to meane Brennicia and Deyra, ſo ſore that he was compellyd to flee to Redwaldus then kynge of Eeſtanglys. The whyche for mede or fere of the ſayde Ethelfride, was laſtely conſentynge to haue betrayed Edwyn / of whyche daunger the ſayde Edwyn was delyueryd by warnynge of a frende of hys.

After this eſcape as Edwyn ſatte vppon a time in a great ſtudy alone/ a ſtraunger apperyd to hym ſodeynly, and ſayde, I know well the cauſe of thy thought and heuynes. Therfore yf thyn enymyes were ſlayne, & thou reſtoryd vnto thy kyngdome & ſette the in better maner then any of thy forefathers/ woldyſt thou not admytte ſuch one for thy frende, and aſſent and do by his rede and coūſayll. yes trewly ſayd Edwyn/ and that I ſurely and faſtely promiſe the. Then this man layd his hand vpon Edwynes hedde and ſayde to hym, Edwyn when this token is broughte to the/ then haue thou mynde of this tyme of trybulacyon, and of this promyſe thou haſte made. And anon as thys was ſpoken this man vanyſhed out of his ſyght ſodeynly.

In a conuenyent ſeaſon after, Edwyn aſſemblyd hys hoſte and gaue batayll vnto Ethelfryde in the countrey of Mercia by eeſt the ryuer of Idle/ and ſlewe hym in that fyghte, wyth a great nōber of his knyghtes/ and thē ſeaſyd in his poſſeſſyon both the forſayde prynceppates/ and was kynge of Northumberlande by the terme of.xvii. yeres.

ye ſhall vnderſtande that the forenamed Ethelfride hadde. iii. ſonnes, whyche are mynded beſyde other. The fyrſte & eldeſt was named Eaufricus, the ſeconde Oſwaldus, and the thyrde Oſwye. The fyrſt was of lawfull age/ ſo that he myght helpe and ſhyft for hym ſelfe. But Oſwald was but .xii. yeres of age/ and Oſwy farre yonger. wherfore theyr wardeyns immediatly after theyr faders deth, ſente theym into Armorica or lytell Brytayne, there to be brought vppe / or more verely into Albania or Scotlande.

THE .CXXIX. CHAPITER.

ABoute this tyme and ſeaſon, as wytneſſen Policronica, Guydo, and other/ began the kyngdome or lordſhyp of Mercia, vnder the ſtronge paynym and Saxon called Penda. The whyche Mercia or Mercherike conteyned Huntyngdon ſhyre, Hertfortſhyre, Glouceterſhyre, wyth dyuers other/and was gretteſt and largeſte of all the other / & was cloſyd in ỹ weſt ſyde wyth the ryuer of Dee, ſtretchynge to Cheſtre & Sewarne, and ſo to Shrouesburye and Brydſtowe / in the eeſt yt was cloſyd wyth the ſee Occean / in the South with Thamys vnto London/and in the north with ỹ ryuer of Hõber/and had hys begynnynge vnder the fore named Penda, as the accorde of dyuerſe authours wytneſſyth, in the yere of oure lordes incarnacyon. vi. hundred & .xxvi / and after the fyrſte commynge of Hengyſte a hundred and lxxvi. yeres. All be yt that of the fyrſte kyng dyuerſe opynyons there ben / wherof a cauſe maye be, for ſo mychе as this lordſhyppe in the fyrſt begynnyng was departyd in. iii/that is to ſay ỹ fyrſt was called eeſt Mercia, the .ii. was named myddell Mercia, and the .iii. weſte Mercia. But after yt was brought to one prynce-pate & called Mercherike, or of ſome wryter myddell Englande. Of thys lordſhyppe the fyrſte cryſten kynge was called Wolpherus that was the ſonne of the forenamed Penda. But of all the kynges of thys kyngdome of Mercia, whych were. xviii. in nom ber, as teſtyfyeth Policronica / Offa was of moſte myght and power, as after ſhall more playnly appere.

This lordſhippe endured to reken moſte certaynly, tyll the yere of oure lorde. viii. hundred and. lxxvi. In the whych yere Alurede or Alhered then kynge of weſtſaxons, ioyned yt vnto his owne kyngdome/ whych by that accompte ſhulde be two hundred & .l. yeres. All be yt that ſome accompte the enduraũce therof, to the laſt yere of Burdredus that was putte out by the Danes/ by whyche rekenynge yt ſhulde then endure .iiii. yeres leſſe. And ſome wryters accõpte the terme therof whyle the tyme of Edward called the elder/ whych after the deth of his fader Alured put out the Danes from the ſayde lordſhyppe, and ioyned yt agayne to weſtſaxon/ and by that accompte yt ſhulde laſte .ii. hundred .lxxx. yeres and odde.

ye ſhall alſo vnderſtande, that in this kyngdome reygned dyuerſe holy kynges, whyche nowe be alowed by the chyrche for ſayntes/ as Offa, Kenelphus, Kenelm⁹, and other, as hereafter ſomedeale ſhall appere.

I haue ſeen an old regyſter within the chyrche of Poulys of London/ wherin ys conteyned many thynges concernynge the fyrſt foundacyon of that chyrch, wyth certayne olde cronycles of thys lande. Amonge the whyche yt is there notyd, that in the tyme and ſeaſon when Cadwan was kynge or ruler of the Brytons/ that in the ſame moment and tyme reygned in dyuers partes of this lande theſe. vii. kynges vnder wryten. As fyrſte Sybertus, that then was kynge of Eeſtſaxons no Eſſex, Redwaldus was then kynge of Eeſtanglys now Norff. and Suff. Ethelbertus was then kyng of Kẽt, Ethelwald⁹ was kynge of Southſex. Kyngylſus was kynge of weſtſaxons. Penda was kynge of Mercheryke. And Ethelfridus was then kynge of the North coũtre or Northumb. All whyche regyſter this worke accordyth with, yf the ſtorys of this Cadwan, Careticus, & Cadwall be duely ſerchyd.

ouer the prouynce of Brennicia, as chefe of that kyngdome of Northumberlande/and had the rule of Deira in lyke wyse. wherof whan Cadwan or Cedwalla was ware/ he gathered hys Brytons and thoughte to slee Oswalde as he hadde before slayne his brother Caufricus. But Oswald whan he was warned of the greate strength of thys Cadwan/ he made his prayers to god, and besoughte hym meekely of helpe to withstande his enemyes. And or he yode to prayer, he arreryd a crosse of tre/ before the whyche he knelyd a longe whyle in a felde/ whyche longe after was called Heuynfelde, and at thys daye is had in greate worshyppe. That place is nere vnto the town or chyrche of Agustalde in Brennicia/ the whyche chyrche was there buylded by Oswalde after the wynnyng of that bataple. And of the spones of that crosse are tolde many wounders the whiche I ouer passe.

Than after Oswalde had prayed for the saluacyon of hys people/the two hostes met in a felde named thã Denysborne or Denysslake, where was foughten a stronge bataple. But fynally Cadwan, whyche Polycronyca nameth Cedwalla, was slayne and his people chasyd/which were farre excedynge the nomber of Oswaldus hoste/whanne the sayde Cadwan had reygned ouer the Brytons after moste accorde of writers and also of the tyme, by the terme of xvii. yeres/ leuynge after hym a son, as affermeth Gaufryde, named Cadwallus or Cadwalyn.

Francia.

THE .CXXXI. CHAPITER.

DAgobertus the fyrste of that name, and sonne of Clothayr before rehersed/beganne his reygne ouer the hole monarchye of Fraunce in the yere of our lorde. bi. hundred xxxi/and the. xviii. yere of Cadwan than kynge of Brytons. The which at the tyme of hys faders deth was in the prouynce of Austracy, gyuen to hym by his fader, as before is shewed in the. C. xxvii. chappter precedynge. But anone as worde came to hym of hys faders decease / he sped hym well accompanyed into Fraũce. And when he was comen to the cyty of Reynes thyder came vnto hym many nobles / as well out of Burgoyne as out of other partyes of Fraunce, and dyd vnto hym feauty and homage.

It is shewed in the. C. xxvi. chappter of thys worke, how Clothayre had by his seconde wyfe a sonne named Heybert/the which claymed his parte of the kyngdome of Fraunce, and for ꝑ same began to make some styrynge. But by the good polycy & meanes of one Brunulphe vncle to the sayd Haybert, and brother to Si chyld hys moder, the mater was appeased/so that he had vnto hym certeyne cytyes assygned, wyth landes in Guyan. with the whiche he was cõtentyd/ & ordeyned Tholouse for the chefe cytye of hys pryncypate. And after that peace confermed/Dagobert was in quiete by the terme of iii. yeres folowyng. But the. iiii. yere the Gascoynes rebelled agayn hym/ the whych by hys manhode he shortly subdued. And whan he had set his lande in a quyetnesse / he called to mynde ꝑ promyse before tyme which he hadde made to sayne Denys and hys felowes. wherfore he with great solempnite caused the groũd, where these holy bodyes laye to be openyd/ and wyth great reuerẽce to be taken vp. Upon the whych bodyes he fand freshely wryten eyther of theyr names, so that he myghte perfyghtely knowe that one from that other/ and

then

then cauſed thē to be layd in a ſumptuouſe ſhryne. And ouer them in the ſayd place he buylded a royall mynſter of lyme and ſtone, and conuerȳd it with plates of ſyluer in ſtede of ſclate or leade/ and aſſygned vnto ȳ preſtes and mynyſters therof greate and ryche poſſeſſyons. And for ſo goodly a temple that was of ſuche beautye outwarde, ſhulde not lacke of garnyſſhynge within: he therfore cauſyd hangynges to be made to hange within the ſame temple/of the whiche tapettes ſuche as ſerued for the quere, were garnyſhed & ſet with dyuerſe ſtones in thoſe dayes vſed. And by the forſayde place or ſhryne where the holy martyrs bodyes laye he ordeyned a cheſte or trūke of clene ſyluer/to the entēt ȳ all ſuch iewelles and ryche gyftes as were offered to ȳ holy ſayntes, ſhulde therin be kept to the vſe of the mynyſters of ȳ ſame place, and ouer that endowed ȳ ſame place with many greate lybertyes & pryuyleges. And this place thus fynyſſhed / he cauſed a croſſe of golde to be made, & to be garnyſſhed with moſte precyous ſtones of a greate bygneſſe and value/ and cauſed it to be ſet ouer the hyghe aulter wythin the ſayde monaſtery.

This tranſlacyon of theſe bleſſyd ſayntes ſhulde be as wytneſſyth the Frēche Cronycle, in the .v. yere of the reygne of the ſayd Dagobert/ which made ȳ yere of our lorde .vi.C.xxxvi. The which whā he had clerely with all honour and due reuerence fynyſſhed/he thā vyſyted and cyrcued his lande in mynyſtrynge iuſtyce to all perſons/and ordeyned ſuch meanes as bylles of ſupplicacyon and other, that the cauſes and maters of poore men myghte come to his knowlege by meane wherof he gate great loue and fauour of his comons.

But amonge hys many notable dedes / one dede by hym was commytted, the whyche ſomdeale longe after blemyſſhyd hys honour. And that was that he without iudgement or proceſſe of the lawes/ cauſed to be ſlayne the forenamed Bzunulphe vncle vnto Haybert hys bzother, for malyce ȳ he bare to hym, for the fauourynge of ȳ ſayd Haybertis party.

After thys the kynge was deuorſyd from his wyfe named Gertrude, for that ſhe was barreyne & broughte forthe no frute / and was after maryed to a fayre wenche named Ranetrude, of the whyche he receyued at conuenyent tyme after, a ſon that was named Sigebert. Of this chyld it is told that whan he was brought to the holy byſſhoppe Amandus to be confermed, beyng than of the age of .xl. dayes/and the byſſhoppe ſayd ouer hym certeyne prayers concernynge the offyce of confyrmacyon, and none of the cyrcumſtauntes by negligēce gaue anſwere vnto ȳ byſſhop at conuenyent tyme: the chylde by dyuyne power ſayde, Amen, in ſo lowde maner that all the people about ſtandynge myghte well vnder ſtande it/whereof the byſſhoppe and all the people were hougely amerueyled.

Than it foloweth, this Dagobert all thys paſſetyme was ruled by a noble man of Fraunce, or more properly of the prouynce of Auſtracy, named in the Frenche booke ſaynte Arnulphe byſſhoppe of Mees/ and by Peppyn, whyche was ruler of the kynges paleys. By whyche ſeaſon, he and alſo hys lande were in greate honour and proſperyte, tyll the deth of the forenamed Arnulphe / whych dyed about the ſeaſon that the kyng beganne to alter and chaunge his cōdycyons, to the hurte of hys comons and of hys lande.

The .C.

THE .CXXXII. CHAPITER.



Agobertus ꝑ before exercised hym in all honour and vertue, beganne now to exercise iustyce and tyrannye / in pyllynge hys commons by exaccyons and tributes, in suche wyse that those that dwellyd in the outwarde partyes of hys realme, and nere vnto the Turkys and other straunge landes and nacions, were fayne to be vnder the rule of theym then of theyr owne naturall prynce. But howe so euer he bare hym agayne hys subiectes, in pyllynge and takyng from thē what he myght yet he euer hadde such a fauour to saynt Denys, that he gaue to hym what he myghte purchace, were yt wyth ryght or otherwyse. Contynuynge whyche season / he went into the countrey of Poytiers and robbyd and spoyled there the chyrche of sayncte Hyllary, of many great iewelys / and after toke wyth hym the body of that blessyd man, and caused yt to be hadde into the monasterye of sayncte Denys, & there shrynyd hym. And that done / he destroyed the cōtrey of Poytiers wyth iron and fyre / and the wallys of the cytye he made playne wyth the grounde. And for ꝑ more cruelty or terrour to the people to be shewyd / he cryd the stretys of the sayde cytye, and sewe theym wythsalte for a sygne and token that he wolde haue that cytye subuertyd for euer. The whyche ruyne to thys daye appereth / for there where the olde cytye stode, is now called ꝑ olde Poytiers / and where that other standyth nowe, is called the newe cytye of Poytiers. The cause of thys destruccion of the citye & countre as sayeth mayster Roberte Gagwyne / was for, that that ꝑ erle of Poytiers rebellyd agayne the kynge.

Thus this man that whylome was a lambe / was now turned to a tygre. And ouer hys cruelnesse he was gyuen to all sensuall luste of hys body / in so myche that where so he rode he hadde folowynge hym a company of strumpettes, besyde suche as he kept in dyuerse places of his realme, apparelyd and fed lyke vnto quenes.

For thys rule & other vyces vsyd by the kynge / Peppyn then mayster of the paleys was put in great wyte and blame of dyuerse lordes of the lande / thynkynge that by hys counsayle and sufferaunce, the kyng was so lad and guyded. This was ꝑ fyrst Peppyn. The seconde was mayster of the placys in that tyme of the seconde reygne of the fyrste Theodoricus / and was surnamed Uetuly and Vzeuis, whyche is to meane old and lytle. And ꝑ .iii. Peppyn was son of Carolus Marcellus. The fyrste Peppyn was graundefader to the seconde by the moders syde / and the seconde was graunsyr to the .iii. by ꝑ mannes syde. whyche thyrde Peppyn was by hole assent of Frenchymen ordeyned kyng of Fraūce as after shall appere / & was father vnto the kynge named Charlis the great and emperour of Rome. All whyche Peppyns descendyd of the blood of Austracye / and hadde great possessyons wythin that prouynce. when the forenamed Peppyn vnderstode the grudge and murmour of the lordes, whyche they bare agayne hym for the kynges demeanour / he by theyr aduyces toke vnto hym a nother great lorde named Martyn, to be vnto hym assystent / and ouer that he caused ꝑ blessyd man Amandus to accompany ꝑ kynge. By whose coūsayle the kyng somdeale refrayned hym from vyce / but not all as the good bysshop hym aduer-

aduertysed.

In this tyme Heybart the kynges halfe brother dyed, and also hys son shortly after named Chilperych. By reason of whose dethes/the lordshyp and countrey of Tholouse fell to the possessyon of Dagobert. It was not longe after that a people called Asclauons or Sclauons, made warre vpon the coūtrey of Austracy. These also are called Bulgaris, and ioyne vppon a parte of Austracy. Of these tydynges when Dagobert was lerned/ he sped hym into Austracy, and there assembled a myghtye hoste of knyghtes/& so sped him tyll he came nere hys enymyes. But ỹ sayd Sclauons hauynge knowlege of the kynges great hoste, agreed by oratours to hym sent, to contynue the trybute that they before tyme payde/ ỹ which was yerely fyue hūdred oxen. where thorough ỹ warre was appesyd for that tyme/and newe allyaunce vpon both partyes confermed.

After the whych peace thus stablyd shyd/ ỹ kyng made his son Sigebert as kynge & ruler of that lordshyp of Austracy/assygnynge to hym the bisshop of Colayn named Cunbert, and the erle Palatyne named Agasyle, to be hys tutours and rulers contynuynge his yeres of youth. And that done, ỹ kyng retourned into Fraūce, where soone after he receyued of hys wyfe a sonne named Clodoueus, the whych of many wryters is called Lodouicus or Lowes. To thys Lowes the father at conenable tyme after gaue the countyes of Burgoyne and Neustria or Normandy.

Then the kynge graunted to the house of saynte Denys, a fayre to be kepte yerely in the moneth of June in a felde nere vnto the sayde monasterye/ and that no marchaunte of Paris nor good towne there about, shulde sell any marchaundyse but onely in the fayre/ wyth many other customes to the great auauncement of that house.

And after the kynge hadde subdued the Gascoynes, and the Brytons of Armorica or lytle Brytayne/ he then assembled a multytude of bysshoppes for to dedycate and halowe the monasterye of saynte Denys in moste solemne wyse. where a great myracle was shewyd of the clensyng of a leper or lazar/that durynge the nyght laye wythin the sayde chyrch, and there beyng in his deuoute prayers, sawe our sauyour Cryste accompanyed wyth Peter and Paule, and also the holy martyrs saynte Denys wyth hys two felowes, entre the chyrche by one of the wyndowes/ and after halowed the sayde chyrch. whyche after came to the sayd lazar/ and commaunded hym to shew vnto the bysshoppes, ỹ he in proper person hadde halowed the sayd chyrche/and for a token and knowlege of ỹ same, he hadde receyued hys helthe. And for more recorde of the trouth of this mater/ our sauyour Cryste, as wytnessyth mayster Robert Gagwyn, & also the frenche cronicle, drewe of the skynne of the face of the sayde lazar, and threwe yt agayne a stone, where yt remayneth at thys daye to be sene. The whyche token when Dagobert and his bysshoppes vppon the morne after beheldē and sawe/ they beynge greatly auertuaylyd, lakt of any forther besynesse touchynge the dedycatyenge of the sayde chyrche. For thys myracle great concurse of people yerely in the .vi. kalendis of Marche cōmyth wyth great deuocyon vnto ỹ sayd monastery, there makyng theyr oblacions/ fermly beleuyng that the sayde chyrch was halowed with Crystes own hand. when Dagobert had this besynesse wyth other pfyted & endyd/he then called a great counsayll

gned in Kent a Saxon kyng named Ercombertus, the whyche had that prynceppate. xx. yeres nobly.

And amonge other of hys famous dedys/ he reuyued and quyckened agayne the fayth of Cryste, that in some places of hys kyngedome was sore appallyd. For he destroyed the temples of false goddes thorough all that countrey / and ordeyned by the aduyse of his clergye, the tyme of lente to be fasted. He wedded the doughter of Anna kynge of Eestanglis named Serburga/ of whom he receyuyd a doughter and named her Eukengoda/ ẏ whyche after was a menchon or nunne in the abbey of Brygence in Fraunce before mynded, where Ethelburga ẏ wyfe somtyme of Edwyn kynge of Northoumberlande serued god, as in the hundred and. xxx. chappter precedynge yt ys shewed/ and eyther of them was abbesse of the same place. And though at those dayes there were many abbeys in thys yle of myche Brytayne/ yet many both of men and of women sayled into other landes/ as Fraūce, and Burgoyne and other places, because the conuersacyon and lyuynge of those countres were of more fame and perfeccyon then was then vsyd in thys yle of Brytayne.

About thys tyme as yt were about the. viii. yere of Cadwall/ dyed kyng gylsus kyng of westsaxons, when he had reygned with his brother and alone. xxxi. yeres. And Kenwalcus his sonne was kynge after hym/ ẏ which in ẏ begynnyng of his reygne wolde not be crystyned/ & forsoke hys wyfe the doughter of Penda, & toke to hym a nother. wherfore Penda in aduengynge hys doughter / gatheryd hys hoste, and chasyd Kynwalcus out of his kyngdome/ & kept hym thens. iii. yeres. By whyche season was Anna kynge of Eestanglis/ & there conuerted to the feyth of Cryste, & cristyned of Felix aforenamed then bysshoppe of Dūwyke or Therfore/ and after he recoueryd hys kyngdome, by the ayde and assystence of the sayde Anna. when Kenwalcus was restoryd to hys lande / he made a bysshoppes see at Kaerguent or wynchestre/ and ordeyned there a bysshop named Agilbert a frenche man of byrthe, but he was called out of Irlād. The which when he had sytten there a certayn of tyme/ he was put thēs Ine wote for what cause/ and in his place was set an other named wyn. Of this wyn, as sayeth Policronicon, the towne of wynchester toke ẏ name, as he declarythe in ẏ. liii. chappter of his fyrst boke/ as yt were wynnes cytye. But he was also put thens/ and then was Leutherius bysshop, and after Leutherius succedyd Cedda. And after Theodorus the archbysshop of Cauterbury ordeyned two bysshoppes to that prouynce of westsaxō. That one at wynchester/ & to that was subiecte two coūtreys Southrey and South hampshyre. And that other see he ordeyned at Shyreborne/ to the which were subiecte. vi. coūtreys, that is to saye Berkshyre, wyltshyre, Somersetshyre, Dorsetshyre, Deuenshyre, & Cornewayll. But in wyllyam the cōquerours tyme ẏ see of Shyreborne was tourned to Salysbury with the see of Rāmysburye.

It was not longe after that Kenwalcus was warreyd with the kyng of Brytons/ the whyche fought with hym at a place called wyght Gosneborough, and were of him there ouercomyn. Then Cadwall assembled a newe hoste of Brytons / and mette wyth Kenwalcus at a place called the hyll of Pent / where after longe fyghte the Brytons were putte to flyghte.

THE. CXXXIIII. CHAPITER.

Ye haue harde before how that blessyd man Oswall the son of Ethelfryde, was ordeyned kynge of Northumberlande/ the whyche contynued hys lyfe in iustyce and vertue as kynge, by the terme of .ix. yeres. But Penda kynge of Mercia, that to hym & to all crysten men had great disdayne and enuye/about the ix. yere of Cadwall made warre vpon Oswald, and slew hym in a feld callyd Meserfeld / where after hys deth god shewed for hym many myracles. But after one yere of his deth Oswy his yonger brother recouerȳd the kyngdome / and buryed his hed in the chyrcheyarde of Lyndesar, for the bodye was conueyed by the Pagans and deuyded in sundry peces. But yt is sayde that the hed is nowe at Durham betwene saynt Cutberttus armes. And the other parte of ȳ bodye whyche was longe after founden/was had to the abbay of Burdeaux, by Ostrida doughter of Oswy & quene of Mercia. where straungnesse was made by the ruler of that hous for the receyte of those relykes, tyll a myracle or dyuyne token there was shewyd. But after the sayde bodye & bones were brought to Glowceter to an hous of chanōs/ and one of hys armes is at Peterborough, hole of flesshe & fell as some haue and tellen. whan Oswy had a season rulyd hys kyngdome/ he fande vnlefull meanes to slee Oswyn that was kynge of Deyra. This Oswyn was the son of Eaufrycus eldest brother of Oswalde / whyche Oswyn was good of condycyon, and there wyth both meke and mylde. when thys Oswyn was slayn by the consent of his neuewe Oswy / then Oswy toke to hym as felow of that kyngdome his broders sonne Oydiwaldus the son of Oswalde. Thys Oswalde gaue vnto Cedda byshoppe of whynchester before named a groūde in a place of the Northth coūtrey in the hygh hylles called Lastyngaye, for to buylde vpon an abbay, which he there buyldyd/& after there taught his brother Chymbyllus how he shuld rule that place. Pēda kynge of Mercia, which forgate not the strengthynge and fauourynge that Anna kynge of Eestanglys had shewyd to Kenwalchus hys doughters husband and his enymye/gaderyd a power of knyghtes, and yode agayne the sayde Anna, & slewe hym in playne batayll. And the same yere one Botulphus buyldyd an abbay besyde Lindecolne or Lincolne, in a place that hyght Icanno.

And as wytnessyth Beda in the. iiii. chapiter of his thyrd boke/ thys yere whych shuld be the .xxi. yere of ȳ reygne of Cadwall, Penda that of thys former victory was suppryssyd wyth great pryde, came wyth hys hoste into the boundes of Northumland / entendynge to slee Oswy, as before he had slayne his brother Oswalde. wherof whē Oswy was ware he assemblyd hys knyghtes & made towarde hym. And for affynyte of maryage ȳ was betwene theyr chyldren, as after shall be shewed, and other causes/ Oswy offeryd to hym many great offers, to the entente to haue had hym refused that batayll, & to haue hadde peace wyth hym. when Oswy perceyued the obstynacye and pryde of Pēda, and saw that by no reasonable offers he myghte of hym wynne no peace / he sayde/ sens thys paynym can not receyue our gyftes and proffers that we haue offeryd to hym, we shall offer thē to hym that can receyue theym. And anon he made hys auowe vnto god, that yf he myght haue victory of his enymyes, he shuld offer his

doughter Elfleda to hym wyth ſuf-
fycyent poſſeſſyons for to buylde .xii.
abbayes/and after ioyned in batayll
with the ſayde Penda in the cõtrey
of Ledis not farre from yorke/which
was ſo ſore foughten, ẏ the lyke ther
of was not ſeen many yeres before.
But fynally Penda was ſlayne, and
xxx. of his cheſe captayns with hym/
and yet he had thryes the people that
Oſwy hadde. And thoſe that ſcaped
the ſhot and the ſwerde/ were for the
more partye drowned in the ryuer of
wynwed, whyche was nere vnto the
place of that batayll. And among the
pryſoners that were taken at this
felde/ the wyfe of Penda was one,
and her ſonnes vncle named Egfri-
dus was an other. Then Oſwy yel-
ded hys thankes to god/ and accor-
dynge to hys formet promyſe, he of-
fryd hys doughter Elfleda or Enfle
da of the age of .iii. yeres vnto god,
and toke her to the lore of Hylda ab-
beſſe of Hertſey or Hertis iland. And
after that the ſayde Hylda remoued
to the abbaye of Stremſhalte in the
vale of whitby .xxx. myle from yorke/
where ſhe was after abbeſſe, & ẏ ſayd
Elfleda alſo. And Oſwy as he had
promyſed / gaue landes and rentes
to buyld .xii. abbeys. wherof .vi. were
in the prouynce of Brẽnicia, and .vi.
in the prouynce of Deyra.

This formained Penda hadde dy-
uerſe ſonnes by accorde of wryters/
that is to meane wolfer⁹, weda, and
Egfridus, beſyde other not mynded.
To this ſeconde ſonne weda, Oſwy
had beforetyme maryed a doughter
of his by cõſent of Penda his fader/
The whyche weda by helpe of Oſwy
was made kynge of ſouth Mercia,
the whyche lordſhyp is ſeuered from
the northe Mercia by the ryuer of
Trent, and conteyned by recorde of
holy Beda fyue thouſande houſhol-
des. This weda alſo promyſed when
he maryed the ſayd doughter of Oſ-
wy, that he ſhulde become a cryſten
man/ the whyche he perfourmyd af-
ter the deth of his father. But when
he hadde ſcantly reygned thre yeres
ouer the ſayd Southmercis/ he was
by the treaſon of hys wyfe ſlayne.
And after that kyngdome fell to wol
ferus the other brother / the whyche
hadde weddyd the doughter of Er-
combert kynge of Kent named Er-
menylda. This wolferus was ſhort
ly after cryſtyned or before / ſo that
he is accõpted for the fyrſte criſtened
kyng that reygned in Mercia. This
was fader to Kenered us, & that holy
virgyne and menchon wereburga.

And for yt is longe that I ſpake
of Kenwalcus kynge of weſtſaxons/
yt is to be noted that after he hadde
ouercomen the Brytons, as before
is ſhewyd, and at that tyme had not
perfyted the byſhoppes ſee of Kaer-
guent or wynchester, he then beſyed
hym there about. And accordyng to
the wyll of kyngylſus hys father/ he
gaue to the ſuſtentacyon of the ſayd
ſee all the lande whyche laye wythin
vii. myles of the ſayde cytye, as af-
fermeth the authoure of the Floure
of hyſtoryes/ and fynyſhed yt ſom-
dele to hys purpoſe.

But let no man thynke that it was
buylded as yt is nowe. For nother ẏ
nor none other ben at this daye ſtan
dynge monaſtery, paleys, nor other/
but ẏ they haue ben ſens thoſe daies
alteryd, and new chaũged, and ſome
clerely throwẽ downe, and ſome new
buylded / all be yt that many ſtande
vppon theyr fyrſte foundacyon as
thys yet dothe.

Soone after that Kenwalcus had
endyd this worke/ he made warre vp
pon wolfer⁹ of Mercia. But in that
iourney fortune was not to hym fa-
uourable/ for he loſte thereby, & wan
nothynge of hys entent.

It was

It was not long after that Ercombert kynge of Kent dyed/and his son Egbert was kyng after hym.ix.yere. And soone thereafter fell great mortalyte and sekenesse in thys lande of Brytayne/the whyche cõtynued and encreasyd more and more durynge ỹ lyfe of Cadwall now kyng of Brytons and of Cadwaldyr hys successour or sonne,after some writers. In the whyche season and begynnynge of this mortalyte and sekenesse,dyed many byshoppes in this lande/ in so myche that Vitalcanus then beynge pope, ordeyned Theodorus archbyshoppe of Cauterbury to haue ỹ rule of the chyrches of Brytayne.

Somwhat before this tyme,Benet that was in good fauour wyth kyng Ofwy, & dyscendyd of ryche kynne forsoke seruyce and house, and all hys kynred, and became Crystes seruaunt. He went.v. sythes to Rome and came agayne/and at euery tyme he brought wyth hym relykes or bokes of Crystes lore. And lastely he was made munke / and buyldyd .ii. abbeys, that one ouer agayn ỹ other vppon the ryuer of wyre, that renneth in the countrey of . This Benet was the fyrst ỹ brought the crafte of glasyng into this lande/ and he was Abbot of both the forsayde abbayes/ and toke to hys lore Beda when he was but.vii. yeres of age, and taughte hym durynge hys lyfe. Of the vertue and pacyence of thys holy munke and byshoppe Benet, I myghte make a longe rehersayll. But for the holynes of his lyfe is declaryd in the legende of sayntes and other bokes of authorite / here for lengthynge of the tyme I ouer passe yt, and wyll retourne agayne to Ofwy. The whyche when he had longe reygned ouer the Northumbers/ he made Cedda that was abbotte of Lastyngay,archbishoppe of yorke, more by wyll then by skyll/ and put out wylfrida the archbishop of that see. But yt was not longe after that Cedda was depryued of that dygnyte by the authorite of tharchebishop Theodorus/as he deprypyd dyuerse other that tyme, whych came to theyr benefyces agayne the ordynaunce of the holy lawes of Crystes chyrche/ and made hym by great instaunce after thys,byshoppe of westsaxons. And about the.xxx. yere of the reygne of Cadwall Cissa that was father to Ine kynge of westsaxons/ buyldyd ỹ abbey of Abyndon. In these dayes the munkes and clergye of Brytayne, set all theyr myndes to serue god and not the worlde, the herte and not the wombe. wherfore they were then hadde in great reuerence & honour/ so ỹ they were thẽ receyuyd wyth all worshyp. And as they went by ỹ stretys & wayes/ men that sawe them, wold ronne to them and desyre thẽ blessynges. And well was hym that thẽ myght gyue vnto them possessyons, & buyldyd to them houses & chyrches. But as they encreasyd in ryches of the worldly treasoure/so they dyscreaced in heuenly treasour/ as in the dayes of Alueredus somdeale beganne, and sythen that tyme hath spronge not all to the pleasure of god/ wherof all is to be cõmytted to his pleasure. Then they plyed nothynge that was worldely/ but gaue them to prechynge and techynge of the worde of our saupour/ and folowyd the lyfe that they preachyd, by gyuynge of good example. And ouer that they were so voyde of couetyse,that they receyuyd no possessyons, but yf yt were perforce.

THE .CXXXV. CHAPITER.

OSwy kynge of Northumberlande dyed/and Edfrydus his

ſonne was kyng after hym.xb.yeres Hys fader had reygned wyth hys fe-lowes Oſwynus and Oddiſwalde xxviii.yeres. Edkrydus or Egkrydus had to wyfe that holy woman Ethel kryde, ꝑ before was the wyfe of Ton bert⁹ prynce of the ſouth Eyrwayes, the whyche whan Egkrydus hadde holden. xii. yeres as hys wyfe, and myghte not in that whyle haue leue of hyr to deale wyth hyr carnally for prayer nor great gyfte/ he then gaue to hyr lycence to be a menchyon at Colud vnder Aebba, that than was awnte vnto hym. And after ſhe reme ued to Ely, and there was abbeſſe, & lyued in greate penaunce and abſty-nence/and dyed there, after ſhe had ben.vii.yere abeſſe.

And Kenwalcus kynge of weſte Saron, dyed about the yere of the reygne of Cadwall kyng of Bꝛytõs, the. xxxix. when he had regned ouer them.xxx.yeres. And hys ſonne Ke-newinus ſuccedyd hym / after that Serburga hys mother or wyfe to hys fader, had ruled that prouynce one yere.

Cedda the byſſhop of weſtſaxons dyed / and hys doken wenfrede was hys ſucceſſoure. And whan he was put down/the abbot of Medãpſtede that now is called Peterborough, was there byſſhop after hym.

Sone after this tyme dyed wyna byſſhop of Lõdon/ after whom was byſſhop Erkenwald, the whych was brother to Ethelburga or Alborough the Menchen, and after abbeſſe of Berkynge in Eſſex. Thys holy byſ-ſhop Erkenwalde foundyd the mo-naſteryes of Chertſey in Southery, and Berkynge afore ſayde / whyche place hath ben preſerued ſens ꝑ fyrſt foundacyon. But that of Chertſey was throwen downe by the Danes and reedyfyed by Edgar kynge of Englande, as after foloweth.

After the deth of wolpherus kyng of Mercia/ reygned hys brother E-theldredus. And the wyfe of wolphe rus named Ermenilda, was made a menchon at Ely/ and wereburga his doughter was alſo made a nonne at Trikyngham, and dyed at hambur-gam, where ſhe laye in the Erth. iii. hundred yeres hole and ſounde/ and after that ſhe was conueyde to Che-ſter. Thys Ethelredus kynge of Mercia had . iii. holy doughters/ ꝑ is to ſay Mylburga, Mylreda, and Mylguida/ and a ſonne of great ho-lyneſſe named Merelyn. But after ſome wryters all theſe forſayde chyl dren ſhulde be the chyldren of wol-pherus and not of Ethelrede. And wolpherus alſo had. ii. holy ſuſters named Kynedda and Kyneſwyda, bothe nonnes and buryed at Peter-borough/ where ſaynte Ethelwolde buyldyd after an abbey of maydens.

Ye haue harde before how wylfryd was put out of ꝑ ſee of yorke/ where-fore he went to Rome and complay-ned hym to Agathon the pope / and was well allowed in ſome thynges. But the kynge and Theodorus had there ſuch protectours and frendes/ that he retourned without ſpedynge of hys cauſe. wherfore he retourned vnto the South Saxons, and buyl ded an abbey in Sileſey, and preа-chyd to the ſouth Saxons.xb.yeres, and conuertyd myche people / and ſhewed there a greate wonder. For where by ꝑ terme of. iii. yeres before hys commynge there fell no rayne vppon the grounde/ by hys prayer/ god ſent them rayne, & the grounde began to burgen and wax grene, ꝑ before was bareyn & dryed for lacke of water. He alſo taught to them the crafte of fyſſhynge.

Egkrydus kynge of Northumber-lande claymed the lande that Ethel-drede kynge of Mercia helde/ for the

whyche

whyche dyuerse assembles of treaty bytwene them were had, but all were dyssolupd wythout agremēt. wherefore eyther pty gathered hys strēgth and met vppon a playne nere vnto ꝑ ryuer of Trent / where was foughtē bytwene them a longe and sharpe fyght. In the whiche among a great nombre on bothe parties, was slayn ꝑ brother of Egfryde named Elswynus / but Edfryde or Egfryde had the better. Than after this batayle meanes of peace were agayn treatyd / so ꝑ fynally Edfryde had great summes of Money in recompencement of his Brothers deth / & so restyd the sayd. ii. kynges accorded.

In this batayll was takē as prisoner a knyght of Egfryde, the which after hys takynge was solde to one Fryson by the knyghtes of Ethelfryde. This Fryson to thentent to haue his prysoner the shortelyer redemed kept hym in bandes of iron which prysoner had to his brother a preest & a vertuous man, that for the delyuere of his brother prayed dayly By meane of whose prayers as oftē as ꝑ sayd preste sang masse / so often were the bandes of iron lousyd from the prysoner duryng the tyme of the masse. The whyche so cōtynued, tyll he was clerely delyuered, and hys raunson payde.

And in thys yere apperyd stella comata a blasynge sterre, whyche betokeneth deth or mortalyte of ꝑ people And in the yere folowynge dyed of ꝑ Epedemye sykenesse, the holy abbes of Ely saynt Etheldrede / hyr suster Serburga that somtyme hadde ben wyfe to Ercobert kyng of Kent, was hyr successoure. And thys yere also dyed Helda ꝑ holy abbesse of whytby before spoken of, whiche was neuew to Edwyne lately kynge of Northūberlande. In thys abbey were also bretherne vnder the rule of Hylda, as at these dayes ben at Syō vnder the abbesse there. wherfore sondry of thē were made bisshoppes, as Bela, wylfryde, and other. Amonge these bretherne was one named Cedman a man of greate perfeccyon / ꝑ which by inspyracyon was taught to make dytyes and songes to moue men to deuocion, wherin he passyd all other at those dayes.

Soone after thys tyme Theodor for dyuerse causes, kepte a synode or counceyll of Bysshoppes and other men of the chyrche at Hatfelde. By authoryte of whych counceyll he deuyded the prouynce of Mercia, that Serwolphus then ruled alone, into v. bysshoprryches / that is one to Chestre, the seconde to Worcetyr, ꝑ thyrd to Lychefelde, the fourth to Cedema in Lyndesey, & the. v. to Dorchester.

About the. xlvi. yere of the reygne of Cadwall, Kenewynus kynge of westsaxons had occasyon of warre agayne ꝑ Brytons, so that they met nere vnto the west see / where after a sharpe skyrmysshe ꝑ Brytōs were chasyd. And soone after Egfrydus kynge of Northumberlande made warre vpon the Pyctes or Scottes / bycause they fauouryd greatly ꝑ eest anglis agayne hym. But lastly by colour or fleyng backe / they brought Edfryde into a streyte amonge Hylles and mountaynes, and slewe hym there with a grete part of his people. And after his deth a bastard brother of hys named Alfridus Motus was kynge of Northumberlande, & reygned there. xviii. yeres, as wytnesseth willyam wyrter of storyes of kynges And shortly after dyed Cadwall or Cadwalyne kynge of Brytōs / whan he hadde reygned as testyfyeth Galfryde, Guydo, & other. xlviii. yeres.

But nother Polycronyca, nor none of the other authours of authoryte, which Policronica allegyd / shewyth any

any lyke actes of thys Cadwall as Galfryde doth/ noꝛ yet that he ſhuld be buryed to the terrour and fere of the Saxons / oꝛ an image of bꝛaſſe ſet of hym vppon an hoꝛſe ouer the weſt gate of Londō called Ludgate oꝛ yet the chyꝛche of ſaynt Martyne there now ſtondynge ſhulde be buyl dyd by the Bꝛytons, to the ende to pꝛay foꝛ the ſayd Cadwall and hys frendes/oꝛ ꝑ Cadwaladꝛus, whych of Beda is named Cedwalla, ſhulde be hys ſonne/as of ꝑ ſayd Galfryde is affermed.

Francia.

THE .CXXXVI. CHAPITER.

Lodoueus ꝑ yonger ſonne of Dagobert, & of Nautylda hys wyfe/ beganne hys reygne ouer the myddell parte of Fraunce and other partes therof, in the yere of our loꝛde. vi.C. xlv/and the.x. yere of Cadwall then kynge of Bꝛytons. And hys elder bꝛother Sigebert was made kynge of Auſtracy oꝛ Loꝛayne accoꝛdynge to the wyll of Dagobert theyꝛ fader. Thys as befoꝛe is ſayd of ſome wꝛyters is called Lowes/the which was guyded by hys mother & by the coũſeyle of Agaynus than mayſter of hys Paleys/ to whom the fader had by hys lyfe commytted hym, foꝛ he at thys daye was yonge of age and of dyſcrecyon. And ſhoꝛtly after he was made kynge/all ſuche poꝛcyon as belonged to the ryght of hys bꝛother Sigebert, which was the thyꝛd of hys faders treaſour and iewelles, was to hym delyuered. whych dyſtrybucyon made/he ſped hym to Oꝛleaunce, and thyder called to hym the loꝛdes of Burgoyne, and receyued of them feauty and homage/ & oꝛdeyned there foꝛ hys leutenaunte oꝛ depute a noble Burgonyon named Flantaſ̃/ & gaue to hym in mariage the neuew of hys mother Nautylda named Ranebert. And after with a due charge to hym gyuen foꝛ guydyng of the ſayd countrey/ſent hym and the other loꝛdes into Burgoyn. But wythin a ſeaſon of tyme after wilibaldus a great man of birth and myght, enuyed this Flantaſ̃/ in ſuche wyſe that he had hym in dyſdaynynge, and began to dyſtourbe the countrey & the kynges peace. wherof herynge Clodoueus / in all haſt commaunded the ſayd wilibaldus to appere befoꝛe hym. But whyle wilibaldus ſent an erle & a byſſhop to ꝑ kynges courte to purchace hym frendys about the kynge/he was in that whyle ſlayne by the gyle of hys enemy Flantaſ̃.

About the.iiii. yere of the reygne of Clodoueus dyed his mother Nautylda, a woman of great wiſdome & of bertuous condicion/ and was ho noꝛably buryed by Dagobert hyꝛ huſbande in the chyrch of ſaynt Denys. Soone after enſued ſuch ſcarcety of coꝛne / ꝑ whete & other greynes were at an excedynge pꝛyce. Foꝛ after the rate of money nowe curꝛãt, a quarter of whete was woꝛth. ii. markes & a halfe/by meane of which ſcarcitye mych pooꝛe people were famiſſhed & dyed foꝛ defaut. wherefoꝛe the kyng entendyng a remedy foꝛ the nedy people / cauſyd ꝑ houſe oꝛ church of ſaynt Denys that his fader befoꝛe tyme had coueryd with plates of ſyluer, to be raſed of & coueryd with lede/ & that ſyluer to be dyſtributyd amonge the pooꝛe comõs, to ſocoure thẽ agayn the great and huge kaꝛmyn that then reygned/ all be it that this ded was ſomedeale withſtanden by Agulphus Abbot of that place foꝛ that tyme.

About

About the.viii. yere of his reygne/ the firste Peppin that than ruled the house of Sigebert kyng of Austracy, dyed. And soone after dyed Agaynus mayster of the paleys of Clodoueus. For which.ii. princis in eyther Countreys that they rulyd, great dole and sorowe was for theym made. After the deth of which sayd Princis/a noble man & cosyn to Dagoberte late kynge, was chosen mayster of the paleys with Clodoueus.

Thus kynge Clodoueus otherwyse called Lowes, contynued his reygne in great peace & prosperyte, tyll lastly it fell in his mide that he wolde vysyte ỹ sepulcre of saynt Denys where after he had done certayne obseruaũces, and made his prayers/ he wolde nedely se the holy relykes and handle them. wyth the doynge whereof it semed the holy martyrs were not contentyd. For immedyately ensued suche a derknes, that the kynge and all that were aboute hym were wyth it greately astonyed and aferde, in so mych that the kyng loste the vse of reason, and wente from hym selfe more than two yeres folowynge. It is wryten of some authours, that the kynge handelyd the body of sayncte Denys so rabbysshely that he brake one of his armes. But the frenche booke and mayster Roberte Gagwyne sayen, ỹ he dysseueryd one of the armes from the sayd holy body/ the whych he after whan he was somdele restoryd to hys helthe, closyd in golde and precyous stoones, and restored it to the sayd monasterye/ and lyued vppon two yeres folowynge that he was amendyd, but not lyke vnto hys former reygne/ so ỹ he lastly dyed whan he had reygned syke and hole by ỹ terme of.xvi. yeres, not without vyce as glotony, lechery, & excedyng auerice. And was buryed by hys parentes in the monasterye forenamed/ leuynge after hym thre sonnes named Clotharius, Chyldericus, and Theodorych. After whose deth hys wyfe named Batylde/ became a nonne in the monastery of Corbye, that she before tyme had newly renued or reedyfyed/ and ended there in holy lyfe.

THE.CXXXVII. CHAPITER.

Clotharius the eldest sonne of Clodoueus / was ordeyned kynge of Fraunce, in the yere of our lordes incarnacyon.vi.hundred.lxii/ and the.xxvi. yere of Cadwall than kynge of Brytõs. The whych anone as he was somwhat stablyssyed/ he made the mayster of hys palayes, a myghty man and tyrannous of condycyon named Eborin/ as shall appere by hys condycyons ensuynge, whan the tyme conuenyent of the expressement of them shall come. But of thys Clotharius is lefte nothyng in wrytynge of worthy memory / excepte that the frenche cronicle sayth that he reygned.iiii. yeres.

THE.CXXXVIII. CHAPITER.

Theodoricus the second sonne of Clodoueus / beganne hys reygne ouer the frenchemen, in the yere of grace.vi. hundred. lxvi / and the.xxx. yere of Cadwall than kynge of Brytons. The whych by counceyll of his lordes sent his yonger brother Chyldery ch into the lordshyp of Austracy or Lorayne, to guyde that countrey/ wyth the ayde and assystence of wolphanus a noble man of ỹ countrey. For Sigeberte laste kynge of that prouynce/ was before this tyme dede wythout heyre of hys body. This Theodorych gaue hym all to slowth & rest/ so that the gouernaũce of the realme was all in the power of the

the mayſter of ỹ paleys, whych was ſtyll contynuynge, the forenamed Ebozyne. The whyche among other cruell dedys by hym done/ he empry ſoned the holy biſhoppe of Oſton cal led Leodegayr. And laſtely after ma ny tormentes and vylanyes to hym done/ he raced hys eyen oute of hys hedde. This dede wyth many other to the kynges dyſhonour he cmomy= ſyd/which all were layd to ỹ kynges charge, for ſo myche as the kynge kept moſt what his paleys. Except ỹ one ſeaſon of the yere in the moneth of may/ he ſhulde be brought wyth great pompe into a place where the people ſhulde behold hym, and gyue and offer vnto him gyftes/and retur ne vnto ỹ paleys ỹ he was brought fro, and there to reſte all the yere fo= lowynge. By meane wherof Ebozyn dyd what to hym was lyſkynge/ and vexyd and troubled the people gre= uouſly. wherfore by one aſſent ỹ lor= des aſſembled theym/ and by autho= ryte depryued the kynge of all digny tye/ and cloſyd hym in a monaſtery, there to contynue the reſydue of hys lyfe, when he hadde borne the name of a kynge wythout exercyſon of the acte therunto belongynge. iii. yeres/ and the cruell Ebozyn they exyled to Luxon or Luxunborgh in the pro= uynce of Burgoyne/ and not to de= parte thens vppon payn of hys lyfe.

THE .CXXXIX. CHAPITER.

CHilderycus or Hildericus the thyrde ſonne of Clodoueus, that was ſent to rule the prouynce of Auſtracy/ was ordeyned kynge of Fraunce in the yere of grace. vi. hun dred. lxix. & the. xxxiii. yere of Cadwal before named. Of the whyche dede the ſayde lordes ſhortely after repen= ded the. For this Chylderych which was yonge and of lyght maners, op preſſyd his ſubiectes greuouſly/and vſed the lawes of hys progenytours after hys pleaſure and wyll/ & wold nothynge be aduertiſed nor ruled by wolphanus before named, ỹ whyche was before tyme aſſigned to hym for hys counceyllour and guyde. But in augmentynge his malyce/ he cauſed a noble mã of his realme named Bo lyde, wythout gylte or treſpace or greuous offence doynge, to be boun den to a ſtake, and there betyn tyll he yelded the ſpyrite. For ỹ whych cruel tye and other/ the lordes wyth the cõ mons murmuryd ſore agayne hym, ferynge lyke punyſſyon wythout de= ſeruynge. wherfore they conſpyred agaynſte hym, and moſte ſpecyally two noble men of byrth & of myghte named Jugebert & Amabert. which two wyth other awayted theyr tyme & ſeaſon whẽ they myght fynde tyme cõueniẽt to bryng ỹ kyng out of lyfe. And vpon a daye when ỹ kyng with his wyfe and ſmall companye wyth theym, were in the wood in theyr dyſ porte and game/ the ſayde two lor= des accompanyed purpoſely fell vp= pon hym & ſlewe hym there and hys wyfe alſo great wyth chyld, ỹ which ranne betwene her lord and them, to ỹ entent to haue ſaued her lord and huſbande from the dynt of ỹ ſworde. The whyche dede was done when ỹ ſayde Childeriche had reygned ouer the Frenchemen after moſte wryters two yeres.

THE .CXL. CHAPITER.

THeodoricus before depoſyd/ was by the lordes of Fraũce agayne reſtored to hys former dy= gnyty, in the yere of our lorde. vi. hũ dred. lx. and. xi/ and the. xxxv. yere of Cadwall forenamed. Therof when Ebozyn was warned, he anon drew vnto the kynges preſence. By whoſe fauour & hys owne ſtrength he was agayn

agayne reſtoꝛyd to his foꝛmer dignytie & honour/ ſo that he was in lyke authoꝛite as he beforetyme had ben.

Then he gatheryd to hym great ſtrength, and chaſyd Lyndeſyle then mayſter of the paleys vnto a place named Boccauyle/ and ſhoꝛtly after was poſſeſſyd of the kynges treaſoꝛye. Afteꝛ the which ſeaſon, this Eboryn kaynynge loue and amytye vnto the ſayde Lyndeſyle, trapteroulye ſlewe hym. And when Eboꝛyne had thus delyuerid Lideſyle/ he thought he myght the better exercyſe his olde tyꝛanny and wylfull actes. So that then he exyiyd dyuerſe pꝛelates and men of the chyꝛche/ aud ſette in theyꝛ places ſuche as hym lyked. wherof the nobles of Fraunce beynge aduertyſed/ and ſpecyally Martyne and Peppn two of the moſt nobles of the regyon: they called to them aſſyſtẽce to wythſtande the tyꝛannye of Eboryne/ the whyche yf yt mygbte be ſo ſufferyd, ſhulde deſtroye the comon wele of the lande. Then this Peppn (whyche afteꝛ the reheꝛſayle befoꝛe made in the .C. and.xxxii. chappter, ſhulde be the ſeconde of that name, and ſurnamed Uetulus and Bꝛeuis/ alſo yet by conuenyency of the tyme to me yt ſemeth to be one man that ruled in the tyme of Dagobert and nowe, all be yt the frenche cronycle meaneth two ſondꝛy perſones) wyth the foꝛenamed Martyne, aſſembled a great hoſte, and gaue batayll vnto the ſayde Eboꝛyn. But that was to theyꝛ harme/ foꝛ the loſte they felde, and were coacted to flee, the one to the cytye of Laon, and that other to Auſtracye.

And Eboꝛyne whych amonge vſed his accuſtompd treaſon, vnder dyſſymyled loue ſlew the ſayde Martyne, as he befoꝛe had ſlayne Lyndeſyle.

In thys tyme flouryd Harmefreditus a nere kynneſman of the holy byſhop Leodegayꝛe, that Eboꝛyn beforе had martyꝛed, as befoꝛe is ſhewyd. The whyche Harmefreditus berynge in mynde the paſſyon of hys ſayde kynneſman/ waytyd his tyme, and ſlewe the ſayde Eboꝛyne. Afteꝛ whoſe deth dyſſencyon grewe amõg the Frenche men, foꝛ the admyſſyon of a mayſter of the paleys / all be yt that afteꝛ the ſayde varyaunce one Graccon was choſen and admytted. But yt was longe afteꝛ that Gyllomarus his ſonne, putte hys father from the rule therof. Thys afteꝛ he hadde a whyle occuppyd / he dyed of ſodayne deth. Afteꝛ whom ſuccedyd agayne hys father Graccon oꝛ Garacon/ the whyche alſo dyed ſhoꝛtely afteꝛ.

Then beganne newe queſtyons amonge the nobles of Fraũce foꝛ this office/ ſo that laſtely they chaſe a man of lowe byꝛth and vnmete to that Rome named Bethayꝛ oꝛ Barthayꝛ. But Peppn whych by all this ſeaſon was in ỹ coũtrey of Auſtracy, and harde of the contrauerſies and dyuerſe oppynyons of the Frenche men/ aſſembled to him a ſtrõge hoſte, and ſpedde hym towarde the kynge/ entendynge to haue the rule of hym, rather then ſuche other that were of leſſe authoꝛyte and honoure. wherof the kynge beynge warned/ by the pꝛouyſyon of Barthayer foꝛeſayde, he gatheryd hys armye and mette with Peppn. And afteꝛ a ſharpe fyghte betwene bothe hoſtes hadde/ Barthayꝛe was ſlayne and the kyng chaſyd/ and finally was foꝛced to admyt Peppn foꝛ the mayſter and gouernour of his paleys. But foꝛ as mych as Peppn had thẽ the rule of Auſtracy, and myght not well ouerſe bothe charges/ he therfoꝛe purueyed vnder hym a ſubſtitute named Noꝛdobert, whyle he returned into Auſtracy oꝛ Loꝛayne. And ſhoꝛtly afteꝛ dyed the

kynge/ when he hadde borne ꝑ name therof by the terme of .xix. yeres / leuynge after hym two sonnes named Clodoueus and Childebertus.

Anglia.

THE .CXL. CHAPITER.

Adwaladrus that of ꝑ reuerende Beda is named Cedwalla/ beganne to arise and rule the Brytons and also the westsaxons, in the yere of grace vi. hundred. lxxx. and thre/ and ꝑ. xii. yere of Theodoricus then kynge of Fraunce/ and also the last yere of Kenewinus or Kentwinus then kynge of westsaxon. This of Gaufryde and other authours wyth ꝑ englyshe cronicle is called the sonne of Cedwall. But wyllyam that wrote the actes & dedys of kynges sayth, that he was the sonne of Kenebrygh̄t/ and descendyd lynyally of the blode of Cerdic⁹ the fyrste kynge of the westsaxons. The which Cadwaladyr or Cedwalla made warre vpon Lotharı⁹ kyng of Kent, and destroyed myche of that prouynce/ and wan the yle of wyght, and gaue the fourth parte therof vnto saynte wylfryde / in the whyche sayde. iiii. parte were accompted .iii. hundred housholdes.

The whyle that Calwaladyr was besyed in one parte of Kent/ his brother named Mulkyn wyth a certayn of knyghtes was beseged, and lastely brente in a nother parte therof. In reuengement wherof, Cadwaladyr of new destroyed a more parte of the sayde prouynce.

Contynuynge the whyche warre, Lotharius forenamed was wounded and dyed. After whom Edricus was kynge/ ꝑ whych regned but a shorte season.

Aboute this tyme saynte Cutbert was byshop of Hogulstald or Durham / & after byshop of Lyndefarn. But lastely he rufusyd that/ and be came an anker in the yle of Farne, and there dyed. This ile now is called holy ilande.

Thé Cadwaladyr made warre vpon Athelwold kynge of Southsaxons or Southser/ and slewe hym in playne batayll, and after made hys prouynce thrall to hym. But thys agreeth not with ꝑ former sayeng re hersyd in the. lxxx. & .xiiii. chappter of this worke precedynge / where yt is sayde that the kyngdome of Southsaxons endurȳd but a hundred. xii. yeres. By. whyche reason this Ethelwolde or Athelwolde shulde not at this season be kyng of Southsaxōs. For the terme of a hundred and .xii. yeres was expyred more then. lxxx. and. viii. yeres before this daye. But ye shall vnderstande ꝑ this forsayde terme of a hundred and . xii. yeres / is ment for the contynuaunce of this kyngedome or they were subdued, and the kynges therof named vnder kynges as this Ethelwold was.

Then yt foloweth when Cadwaladyr hadde ruled the Brytons and also the westsaxons, by the terme of thre yeres, as wytnessyth Ranulphe munke of Chester/ he then of pure deuocyon renouncyd the pompe and pryde of the worlde, and yode in pylgrymage to Rome/ where of the fyrst Sergius then pope, he was conhyrmyd and after made a white munke, and contynued there hys lyfe tyme in perfyte holynes.

Of thys Cadwaladyr or Cedwalla many and dyuers opynyons are wryten of authours, both of hys regne and also of the contynuaunce therof / and ouer that, of the tyme whē he forsoke hys lande. wherin is great varyaunce, as I haue shewed

in the

in the table in the begynnyng of this symple worke. So that it shuld seme that these two names shulde sounde to be sondry persones/ wherof the cõtrary is a certayned by the forsayde Ranulphe/ where as he sayeth that Cadwaladyr or Cedwalla was but one persone, the whyche was laste kyng of Britons and of westsarons. Also for so nych as they ioyned next vnto Cambria or walys.

If I shuld here bryng in the cause of the auoydynge of thys lande by Cadwaladyr, as is rehersyd by Gaufryde/ yt wolde aske a longe tracte of tyme/ and also to me yt apperyth the more doutefull, that yt is not testyfyed of the authour of Policronycon/ consyderynge the great nomber of authours, whyche he sought and allegyd for his authorite, as yt shewyth in the fyrste chappter of his fyrst boke. And specyally syns that holy Gyldas and Bede is amonge the sayde authours accomptyd/ ỹ whych dyd great dilygence in serchynge of the dedes and actes of the Brytons/ and of the aungellis monycyon that to hym was geuen/ with also the prophecye of Merlyn, that the Brytons shulde not recouer this lande tyll the relykes of Cadwaladyr wyth other of holy saintes, were brought hyther out of Rome. I hold that for no part of my beleue though many welshemen yt do. wherfore to folowe the moste authorite as before is sayde/ when this Cadwaladyr had reygned thre yeres, he went to Rome/ & there lastely dyed, and was buryed in the chyrche of saynt Peter, with this epythaphye or superscrypcyon vppon his toumbe, as folowyth in metyr,

Culmen opus soboles potencia regna triumphos,
Eximias proceros mœnia castra lares,
Quæ ỹ patrum virtus, & quæ congesserat ipse.
Cadwald armipotens, linquit amore dei.

The whyche versys may be englyshed in maner as folowyth.

worshypfull ryches, kynred, triumphes assuryd,
Plenteous welth, wyth clothes rych ly dyghte,
Houses, castellys, and townes strõg ly muryd,
And other honours whyche by hys parentes mygh t/
And his owncs this marcyall vertuous knyghte,
Cadwalde the stronge, descendyd of kynges bloode,
For Crystes loue renouncyd all hys good.

And thus here endeth the lyfe & rule of the Brytons nowe called welshe men/ whych toke that name of theyr duke or leder as sayth Guydo called wallo or Guallo/ or ellys of a quene of walys named Galaes or walaes. But how so ỹ name came first to thẽ, onw are they called welshe mẽ, ỹ somtyme were named Brytons or Brutons, descendyd fyrste of Troyans, and after of Brute, & lastely of Dũwallo Moliuncius or Molmucius Dũwallo. All be yt they were gretly mynglyd or medelyd wyth other nacyõs, as Romayns, Pictes, & other/ as by the redyng of the premisses ye may wel perceyue & know. And now be they englyshe, that in theyr begynnyng were named Sarõs or Anglis

But yet for so mychc as welchmẽ extolle so hougely theyr blode & allyaũce, fetchyng yt frõ Pryam but not from Eneas, & regarded so lytle the progeny or lynyall descent of ỹ Sarõs or Anglis: therfore to ỹ entẽt to kele somwhat theyr hygh corage, or to oppresse in pty their brutyshe blast, I will bryng in here ỹ sayng of Guydo & other, ỹ auaũce the blode or dyssent of the Sarõs to be farre aboue the Britons/ as they ỹ ar descendyd of goddes & men immortall/ where

the Britons clayme the offspryng to come of men they were mortall/ & not moste to be alowed in honour, yf they thynke vppon Eneas vntrouth and treason.

Then to folowe the forsayde authour Gydo, that sayth. woden, of whom the Sarons taken theyr ogygynall, was ỹ sonne of Frealoffe the sonne of Fredewolfe, the sonne of Flyn, the son of Flokwald, the son of Geta, that was the sonne of Minos, that is nexte in honour to Pluto god of hell, and chefe iudge of his infernall iurisdyccyon.

Therfore ye welshe men here after nurture lere.

And dysprse not Sarõs that ben to god so nere.

Thus then apperyth by the conueyaunce of this worke, ỹ the last or thyrd yere of Cadwaldyr was ỹ yere of grace. vi. hundred. lxxx. & vi. which maketh the yere of ỹ worlde. v. thousand. viii. hũdred. lxxx. & v. By which reason yt apperyth, that the Britons had the rule of this land for the more party, to reken frõ the fyrst cõmynge of the duke or leader Brute, by the space of a thousande. viii. hundred & xxii. peres.

And thus here an ende of the fyfte parte of this worke, for the consyderacyon before rehersyd, that Briton kynges after this day, reygned none in this realme / and the Sarons or Anglis began fully to haue dompyn on therof.

wherfore as before tyme I haue vsed and done in the other parties before specyfyed, so now I here agayn salute and gyue thankes to that moste excellẽt virgyn our lady sayne Mary, with the. v. ioyes of the forenamed seuen ioyes, begynnynge.

Gaude mater miserorum &c.

Thou mother to wretches and other disconsolate,
Hayll and be glad, for god of worldes all
To them that here in this presente state
Done to the worshyppe, he rewarde shall,
Wyth condygne meryte passynge all temporall,
In heuen to be stallyd, wyth moste felicyte,
Euermore to reygne with thy sonne and the.

This .v. parte to be accompted from the laste yere of the mysery of Brytons, or the fyrste yere of Constantyne brother to kynge of Armorica/ vnto the thyrd or last yere of Cadwaladyr, includyth of peres. CCliii.

Thus endyth the fyfte parte.

THE SEXTE PARTE.

After that Cadwaladyr was thus departyd ỹ londe/as some authours meane, this lande of Brytayne was in great dyscensyon, by meane of the Brytons and Sarons, by the terme of a. xi. yeres. And ouer that the mortalyte before spoken of encreasyd so hugely, and therewyth great hunger & fampyne ouer spradd the lande/ that by occasion of one and other the people of this realme was wonderfully mynyshed & lassed/so ferforthly that as wytnessyth Gaufryde & also the englyshe cronycle, the quycke bodyes suffysed not to bury ỹ ded. But in so mych as of this spekyth not the mũke of Chester nor other authours as before is shewyd in the forsayde table, the whych I rempyte to the correccyon of such as be lerned/and not onely to englyshe reders as there is forther declaryd: I therfore, as before is sayd folow the sayd Ranulph mũke of Chester/where he sayth that Iewe or Iue was kynge of westsa-

tons next after ꝑ forenamed Cadwaladyr. The whych I shall fyrst shew the story of, and so of the successours of hym in that kyngedome, for that that they subdued lastly all the other kyngedomes/ and somdeale touche of the other kyngdomes or lordshyppes as tyme conuenyente shall requyre/ in expressynge of the storyes of the sayd westsaxon kynges, tyll the lande be brought agayne to one monarchye.

And for the dyuysyon of the sayde kyngdomes stande somdeale farre a sonder/ so that to the reders ꝑt were somwhat paynfull to serche for euerych of them: I therfore haue sette them out in the compasse folowyng, that ꝑt maye appere to the reder the begynnynge of euerych of theym/ and howe longe a seasons or tyme eyther of the sayde kyngdomes contynued or endurꝑd/ the names also of euery kyngdome/ and in what parte of thys lande euery lordshyp was stablyshed for the tyme and sette.

THE. CXLI. CHAPITER.

THe or Jewe discendyd of the blode of Saxons/ was ruler or kyng of west saxons, nexte after that ꝑ forenamed Cadwaladyr had renounced the pompe of the worlde. The whyche to folowe the opynyon of Policronicon, began hys reygne the yere of grace. vi. hundred. lxx. & vii, and the. xvi. yere of the seconde Theodoricus then kynge of Fraūce/ and ruled the westsaxons knyghtly, and maynteyned such warre agayn the Kentyshe Saxons, ꝑ the men of Dorobernia or Caunterbury graunted vnto hym to haue peace. And also for a recompensement of the deth of Mulkynge brother to Cadwaladyr before slayne, as is shewed in the precedynge chappter by the sayde Kentyshe Saxons/ they gaue vnto hym for the sayd consyderacyōs thre thousande pounde.

About ꝑ yere of the reygne of Jue/ the holy man Cutlake about ꝑ. xxiiii. yere of his age, renouncyd the pope and pryde of this worlde/ and toke ꝑ order of munkes in the abbay of Reppyndon. And the. iii. yere after he wēt to Crowlande/ and there lad for the whyle an holy Ankers lyfe, and dyd there many myracles, and there fynally was buryed.

In whyche yle and place of hys buryenge standeth nowe a fayre abbay, the whyche for the greate resorte of gestes that thyther drawyth, and for the good and frendely chere that gestes there receyue and take/ the sayd place hath purchasyd a surname and is named Crowlande the curteys/ the whyche is a place of good fame. And there lyeth also the holy confessoure Neotus, somtyme dyscyple of Erkenwalde byshoppe of London.

In the. xi. yere of the reygne of Jue, befell the wounder and meruayle that ys tolde of Brygthwaldus / the whyche after he hadde ben a longe whyle ded, was restoryd to lyfe agayne, and tolde many thynges of great wonder to many men/ whereby he caused great almys, and many other dedes of charyte to be executyd.

And after the dysposycyon of hys owne goodes, by the agremēt of his wyfe he went vnto ꝑ abbay of Mayl roos/ and there in great holynes contynued the residue of his lyfe.

About the. xvi. yere of the reygne of Jue/ Etheldredus before mynded in the. C. & xxxb. chapiter kyng of Mercia, forsoke this wordly honour, and

became a munke at Bardeney/when he hadde longe tyme rulyd the men of Mercia or myddell Anglys. Hys brother Kenredus was kynge after hym/the whych also after he had regned fyue yeres, lefte his kyngdome vnto Colredus the sonne of hys vncle/ and he wyth Offa the sonne of Jue now kynge of westsaxons, and wyth Egwinus bysshop of wykcies or of wyke, whych see is now at worceter/ wyth thys forsayde companye this Kenredus yode vnto Rome in pilgrimage,and there endyd his life.

And aboute the .xviii. yere of the reygne of Jue dyed the holy bysshop Aldelme, whyche fyrste was munke and abbot of Malmesbury, and the laste bysshoppe. Of hym yt is writen, that when he was styrryd by his gostly enymy to the synne of the flesshe/he to do the more torment to hym selfe and of hys body/wolde holde within his bedde by hym a fayre mayden,by so longe tyme as he myght say ouer the hole sauter/ all be yt that such holynesse is no artycle of sayntt Benettis lore, yet for dyuerse inconuenyence moste alowyd by holy doctours. And amonge many of his vertuous & holy dedys/ Ranulph müke of Chester shewith, that for the fame of hys holynes sprange wyde, Sergius the fyrste of that name beynge pope, sente for hym to Rome. In whyche season of his there beynge/ the sayde Sergius was accusyd or defamed of the gettynge of a chylde, the whyche the .ix. daye of the sayde chyldes age, was brought to holy Aldelme to be crystyned. By vertue of whose prayer, the sayde chylde answered vnto certayn questyons, and clerryd the pope of that cryme ỹ was before put vppon hym.

Here about the.xxiii. yere of Jue / Colredus then kynge of Mercia, for cause of variaunce betwene him and Jue vnremembred of myn authour, assembled hys knyghtes, and began to warre vppon hym. wherof ỹ other haupnge knowlege, in lykewyse gatherpd his power/ and lastely met to both theyr harmes, at a place called wodynsburgth. where after longe fyght eyther of them sped so vnhappely, that yt was not knowen whether hoste hadde moste domage.

And nere about ỹ .xxv. yere of Jue, as wytnesseth holy Beda/ sayntt Johan of Beuerlay that then was bysshoppe of yorke, dyed / and was buryed in the porche of the mynster of Deyrwood or Beuerlay. Thē Jewe or Jue callynge to mynde the counsayll of holy Aldelme, ỹ beforetyme had coũsayled hym to buylde an abbay at Glastenbury/ began the sayd worke about the.xxxii. yere of his reygne/ and founded there an abbaye, the whyche contynued prosperously tyll ỹ compynge of ỹ Danis/by whose cruelty yt was then sore blemysshed. But afterward by the helpe of sayntt Dunstane, in the tymes of Edmond and Edgare, yt was agayne suffycyently repayred, & so cõtynued tyll the compyng of the Normās/after which season yt was agayne besette wyth hard happes. But now at this daye yt standeth a place of great welthe and honour.

Then yt folowyth, when Jue had ruled the westsaxons nobly by the terme of. xxxvii. yeres / by the assyduate labour of hys holy wyfe Ethelburga, as she that longe had laboured hym to leue the world and coude not brynge about her purpose/ vpon a season when the kyng and she had restyd them in a fayre paleys tychely behanged,and were vpon the morne thens departed,she by her commaundement caused the sayd paleys to be replenysshyd wyth all kynd of fylth and dunge/and hogges and vyle bestes

ſtes there in to be layde, as well in ỹ chambers as other houſes of offyce. And when ſhe knewe that thys paleys was thus deformyd / ſhe beſought the kynge to vyſyte the ſayde paleys. And when ſhe had broughte hym therunto, ſhe ſayde to hym: I praye you my lorde behold now this houſe. where are now the ryche tappets and clothes of gold and of ſilke and other ryche apparell that we left here thys other daye. And where be the delyces and pleſaunt ſeruytours and coſtly dyſhes, that you and I lately were ſeruyd wyth. Be not all theſe paſſyd and gone? My lorde in lyke maner ſhall we paſſe and ſodenly, as ye ſe theſe worldely thynges ben paſſyd. And oure bodyes whych now ben delycately keppyd/ ſhall fall and turne into fylth of ỹ erthe. wherfore haue in mynde my wordes that before this tyme to you I haue often ſhewyd & told/ and buſy you to purchaſe that paleys ỹ euer ſhal endure in ioy wythout tranſmutacyon.

By meane of theſe wordes & other/ the quene turnyd ſo ỹ kynges mynd, that ſhortly after he reſygned the gouernaunce of his kyngdome vnto Ethellardus his neuewe/ & he for the loue of Cryſte toke vpon hym the habyte of a poore man / and ſettynge a parte all pompe and pryde of thys worlde, accompanyed hym in the felowſhyp of poore men, and yode vnto Rome in pylgrymage wyth great deuocyon, when he hadde ben kynge of the weſtſaxons, as before is ſayde xxvii. yeres. After whoſe departyng the foreſayde Etheldreda hys wyfe went vnto barkynge. vii. myles fro̅ London/ where in the abbay before of Erkenwalde foundyd, ſhe contynued and ended an holy lyfe, whē ſhe hadde ben abbeſſe of the ſame place a certayn of tyme. It is ſayd & teſtifyed of wyllyam wryter of kynges, that this Iue was the fyrſte kynge that grauntyd a peny of euery fyre houſe thorow this realm to be payed to the courte of Rome, whych at this daye is called Rome ſcote or Peter pens, and yet is payed in many places of Englande. But why yt was graunted the cauſe is not here ſhewed, how be it yt ſhall be ſhewyd after.

Francia.

THE .CXLII. CHAPITER.



Lodoueus ỹ thyrd of ỹ name, & ſon of the ſecō Theodoricus/ beganne his dompnyon ouer the realme of Fraunce, in the yere of grace. vi. hondred .lxxx. and .x./ and the thyrd yere of Iue then kyng of weſtſaxons. Of this Clodoueus is of wryters lefte no maner of memorye ſoundynge to good or euyll/ but Peppyn before named contynued as maſter of the paleys by all the tyme of the reygne of ỹ ſayd Clodoueus. The whych after that he hadde borne the name by the ſpace of. iii. yeres, he dyed wythoute yſſue/ and was buryed by his father. By reaſon of whoſe deth the ſayde kyngedome fell by ſucceſſyon vnto hys brother Childebert.

THE .CXLIII. CHAPITER.

Childebertus the ſecond ſonne to Theodoryche, and brother of Clodoueus foreſayde / began his dompnyon ouer ỹ realme of Fraūce, in the yere of grace. vi. hundred. lxxx. and. xiii/ and the. vi. yere of Iue then kynge of weſtſaxons. In tyme of whoſe reygne alſo the foreſayde Peppyn contynued as cheſe ruler of the kynges houſe/ all be yt ỹ he for ſuch other charge as he had of ouerſeyng

of the realme, set in hys place a substytute or depute, as his sonne Grimonart and other.

Thys Peppyn contrary to the lawe of the chyrche/helde besyde hys lawfull wyfe called Plectrude, a womã named Alpayd. For the whyche the holy bysshop of Treet named Lamberte, blampnge and rebukynge the sayde Peppyn / of the brother of the forenamed Alpayde, whyche is called Dodon or Dodoin, was slayne & martyred, in the yere of our lorde. vi. hundred. lxxx. and. xii / as testyfyeth Antoninus in the. vi. chappter of the xiii. tytle of the seconde parte of hys worke called summa Antonini. And as affermeth the sayde Antoninus & also the Frenche cronycle / the sayde Peppyn receyued of the sayd Alpayde a sonne, whom he named Charlys/ whyche Charlys was after surnamed Marcellus, & was ryghte profytable to the realme of Fraunce, as after shall appere.

Of the foresayd kyng Chyldebert is nothynge lefte in wrytyng worthy memory/excepte that he receyued of hys wyfe a sonne named Dagobert/ and kepte the name of a kynge by ỹ terme of. xvii. yeres, as sayth the cronycle in French/and than dyed/ and was buryed in the abbey of Caus in ỹ chyrch or chapell of sait Stephan.

THE .CXLIIII. CHAPITER

DAgobert⁹ the seconde of that name, and sonne of Chyldebert before named/began his reygne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of grace. vii. hundred and. x/& the. xiii. of Jue than kynge of westsaxons. The whyche was vnder the rule of Plectrude the wyfe of Peppyn than dede, and of Theodowald than mayster of the paleys. Thys Plectrude as before is shewed was stepmother to Charlys sonne of Peppyn and of Alpayde. wherfore she berynge malyce to the sayd Charlys, caused hym to be holden as prysoner wythin Coleyne. where he so as prysoner remaynynge/ the foresayd Theoldowalde exercysed suche tyrannys, and putte vpon the people suche exaccyons, ỹ dyscensyon grewe bytwene hym and the lordes of Fraũce, so that dyuers cõflyctes and skyrmysshes were had amonge the nobles of Fraunce / for partyes were taken vpon eyther sydes, whereby the kynges partye at length was wekyd. And fynally the sayd Theoldowalde was deprysued of hys rome / and one Rangafredus was made mayster of ỹ paleys. The whyche beynge Accompanyed with conuenyent strength/toke with hym the kynge, and cõueyed hym thorow the forest of Charbõnur, tyll he came vnto ỹ ryuer of Wense. In ỹ which passetyme the forenamed Charlys beynge, as aboue is sayde prysoner/ by fauoure of hys kepars or otherwyse, brake pryson and escapyd. And shortly after dyed the kynge/ whan he hadde reygned or borne the name of a kynge as other of hys progenytours hadde done, by ỹ terme of. xi. yeres/ leuyng after hym nother chylde, as than knowynge, nor nere of a lye/whyche was cause of mysorder of the tytle of Fraunce, as afterwarde shall appere.

THE .CXLV. CHAPITER.

DAnyell that of ỹ Frenchmen was after named Chilperich was by assente of them made kynge, in the yere of grace. vii. hundred and xxi/and the. xxxiiii. yere of Jue than kynge of westsaxons.

Thus as testyfyeth mayster Robert Gagwyne and also the Frenche cronycle, was a preste or clerke / and for hys

for his wysedome was cherysshed be fore tyme in the kynges paleys/in ỹ whyche tyme and season he sufferyd hys crowne to be ouer growen. Or ellys after Antoninus, this Danyell after ỹ deth of Dagobert, for so mych as he lefte after hym none of ỹ royall blode/the Frenchemen supposynge hym to be apte for ỹ rule of the lond, for suche experyence as before tyme in hym had be proued/kepte hym secrete a certeyne of tyme tyll his heyre was fully growen / and than declared hym to be the brother of Dagobert, and chaungyd hys name / and called hym Chylperych / & so by one assente admytted hym for kynge of Fraunce.

Charles before spoken of sonne of Pepyn, beynge escapyd the daunger of prysonement/ sought and compassyd by all maner of wayes, how he myghte obteyne the rome that sometyme hys fader occupyed. And thys to brynge to effecte/ he purchasyd to hym a yonglynge of fayre & goodly maners & stature named Clothayre, and sayd that he was descendyd of ỹ royall blode of Fraunce / by meane wherof in shorte tyme he gaderyd to hym greate strength. wherof heryng Chylperych / commaunded Rangafrede to assemble hys knyghtes to withstõde the purpose of Charlys. And soone after bothe hostes mette, nere vnto the forenamed ryuer of Mense/where was foughte a strong and cruell batayle/of ỹ whych Rangafrede was vyctor, and compellyd Charles to forsake the felde. But he shortly afterward assemblyd and gaderyd agayne togyder all suche as before were dysperklyd/ and fought efte wyth the sayde Rangafrede at a Place called Ablane. Of the whyche batayle wyth great dyffyculte Charlys was lastly wyctour / and chasyd Rangafrede, and hys hoste greatly dempnyshed & lassyd. Than thyrdly these two hostes met in a felde called the wyne felde / where also was present the sayd Danyell or Chilperych haupnge in hys ayde amonge other prynces the duke of Gascoyne / and there fought a sore & cruell batayle. wherof lastly was vyctor the sayde Charlys/and constrayned the kyng wyth the sayde duke to fle vnto Orleaunce. where they takynge wyth them suche treasoure as belonged to the kynge/ fled from thens vnto the Duchye of Gascoyne.

Whan Charlys conceyued that the kynge was escapyd hys daunger, & knewe that Raganfrede was in the cyty of Aungiẽs/he sped hym thether in all haste: and compassyd the citye wyth so stronge a syege, that fynally he obteyned the cytye wyth all that was therin. But it was not longe after that Charlys shewed vnto Ragã frede suche benyuolence, that he was set at hys lyberte and fredome.

The next yere folowyng the duke of Gascoyn before mynded, haupng parfyte informacyon by ambassade or otherwyse/that Charlys entẽdyd to make sharpe & cruell warre vpon the Gascoynes, for that that they fauouryd and kepte wyth them Danyell or Chilperych/he in auoydyng the sayde daũger of warre, in shorte tyme after sent vnto Charlys, vnder certayne condycyons bytwene them agreed, the sayd Chylperyche/ wyth al such treasour & iewellys as to him or the crowne of Fraunce belongyd.

In thys passetyme & season dyed the forenamed Clothayre, that Charles before had made kyng. wherfore to the more restfulnesse of ỹ realme, he allowed the forenamed Chylperyche for kyng/and he as mayster of the kynges paleys, as other his predecessours, ruled the land of Fraũce. Than Charlys haupnge thus the

rule

rule and gouernaunce / ruled it well and substancyally, and defended yt from all enemyes durynge the lyfe of the sayd Chylperyche. And after the whych/Chylperych whan he had contynued as kynge by the terme of v. yeres dyed / and was buryed, as sayth the Frenche cronycle in ỹ citye of Noen or Noyen/wythout issue of hys body.

Anglia.

THE.CXLVI. CHAPITER.

Ethelardus the neuew of Iue/began hys reygne ouer the westsarons, in the yere of grace.bii.hundred and.xxiiii/ & the thyrde yere of Danyell otherwyse called Chylperyche than kynge of Fraunce. Thys after some wryters is named Ethelbredus.

In the tyme of hys reygne, Ofric? as kynge reygned in Northumberlande/to whom holy Beda wrote the story called historia Anglicana / or more verely to hys successoure Colwolfus. Of the whyche Beda and of hys workes Ranulphe mũke of Chester sheweth a compẽdyous processe, in the.xxiii.chappter of hys. v. boke called Policronycon.

The forsayd Ofricus is named in the Englysshe cronycle Osbryght/of the whyche in the sayde cronycle is rehersed a longe worke. But for I se no authour of authorite afferme the same/I therfore in thys worke passe it ouer.

It shulde appere also by the meanynge of Polycronycon, that about thys tyme dyed Ethelbredus before touchyd kyng of Mercia/ the which whan he had longe tyme ruled that countrey, he lastlye renouncyd the pompe of thys worlde, & was shorne a munke at Bardony.

Of ỹ forsayd Ethelarde kyng of westsaron, is lefte no memory of any actes or dedes by hym done. But as agree many wryters, he dyed whan he hadde reygned. v. yeres, wythout issue of hys body.

And in Northumberlande after ỹ forenamed Ofricus, reygned Colwolphus/after whom Egbertus / & after whom Oswolph/ and after Oswolphe reygned Ethelbald or Ethelwalde. All be it that dyuers authours of these names of kynges & contynuaunce of theyr reygnes so dyuersly & sundryly report & wryte.

Francia.

THE.CXLVII. CHAPITER.

Theodoricus, the whyche of mayster Robert Gagwyne is alowed to be the sonne of ỹ seconde Dagobert/ began hys reygne ouer ỹ Frenchmen, in the yere of grace.bii.hundred and. xxvi/ and the seconde yere of Ethelardus than kyng of westsarõs. The which was from hys yonge and tender age fosteryd and norysshed in a house of nonnys in womans clothynge / and lastly espyed, and by cõsent of Charlys mayster of the paleys admytted for kynge.

After the whych solempnyte kynysshed / Charlys herynge of the rebellyon of a people called the Sweuys or Swetesers / assembled an hoste, & lastly them subdued. whyche done/ he turned hym toward an other part of the Almaynes, and in lyke wyse ouercame them/and after retourned into Fraunce wyth greate tryumphe and ryches, that he hadde wonne at those

thoſe two iourneyes.

It was not longe afterward, that Charlys had thus ſubdued the foꝛeſayde people of Almayne, wyth alſo a greate parte of Germany/but that tydyng came to hym, ꝑ Endo duke of Galcoyne rebelled agayne ꝑ kyng of Fraũce. wherfoꝛe he in all goodly haſte pꝛeparyd hys armye, and ſped hym into Galcoyne / where he made ſo cruell warre, that he in ſhoꝛt tyme damagyd greatly the countrey/ and held the duke Endo ſo ſtreyte, that he was compellyd to hyde hym in ſecrete places of the countreye / where after greate ſerche he myghte not be founde. wherfoꝛe he ſettynge the coũtrey in ſome reſtfulneſſe, retourned hym into Fraunce.

whan Endo was ſure of the retourne of Charlys into Fraunce/foꝛ ſo mych as he had pꝛoupd the marcyall knyghthode of hym, and knew well he myghte not hym ſelfe wythſtand hys knyghtly power/he therefoꝛe allyed hym wyth the kynge of Spayne than beyng a pagan oꝛ myſcreaunt and named Abyderamus, and excyted and ſtyꝛed hym to make warre vppon the lande of Fraunce/ pꝛompſynge to hym not all onely vyctoꝛy, but alſo that londe to hym and to hys heyꝛes foꝛ euer. Vppon comfoꝛte of whyche pꝛompſe, and alſo ayde of the ſayde Endo / thys foꝛe named Arbyderamus thꝛyſtyng cryſten mannys blode, and entendynge vtter deſolacyon and deſtruccyon of the realme of Fraunce/aſſemblyd an excedynge hooſte of people, and wyth theyꝛ wyues chyldꝛen and cataple entryd the londe of Fraunce. And what they wan, they enioyed it as theyꝛ owne. And ſo in pꝛoceſſe came vnto the cytye of Burdeaux/ the whych after a certayne tyme of ꝑ cyteſens defendyd, the ſayde myſcreaũtes wan into theyꝛ poſſeſſyon, and dyſtroyed the people thereof, with all theyꝛ chyꝛches and temples of the ſame. And from thens paſſyng the countreye in waſtynge it wyth iron and wyth fyꝛe, laſtly came vnto Poyctiers. whyche cytye as befoꝛe ye haue harde in the ſtoꝛy of the fyꝛſte Dagoberte in the. C. and. xxxii. chapyter, was by hym ſubuertyd/and at thys daye newely reedyfyed.

Thys cytye alſo of them poſſeſſyd/they in lyke maner as they had dalte wyth Burdeaux, ſo dyd they wyth thys / not ſparynge that holy place of ſaynt Hyllary, but dyd vnto yt greate ſhame & vylany. And from thens they yode vnto Towers / waſtynge and ſleynge the people wythout mercy by all the waye that they paſſyd, and waſted that cytye as they had done the other.

In the whyche paſſetyme Charlys herynge of the cruelte of this Arbideramus / aſſembled hys power, and ſhoꝛtly met with hym nere vnto Towers. where he bare hym ſo knyghtely / that he ſlewe of the Paganys to excedynge a nomber to be accoꝛdaunt wyth reaſon. But foꝛ I ſe it teſtyfyed of ſo many wꝛyters, yt boldeth me to expꝛeſſe the nomber/ whyche was .iii. hundꝛed. iiii. ſcoꝛe and .v. thouſande and odde. And of the Frenchemen were ſlayne but .xv. hundꝛed onely.

Foꝛ the whyche vyctoꝛyous acte/ the ſayde Charlys obteyned a ſur name, and was called after that day Carolus Martellus, the whyche is to meane Charles the hamer. Foꝛ lyke as the hamer maketh all metallys plyable / ſo Charlys made hys foes oꝛ enemies pliable to his heſtis. And as the hamer cutteth, bꝛeketh, oꝛ dyſſeuereth iron and other harde metallys/ſo dyd thys Charlys dyſmẽber & cut oꝛ bꝛeke the enemyes of Fraũce thoꝛough his high pꝛoweſſe.

It is

It is shewyd in the bokes called Cronica cronicarum, Supplementum cronicarum, Policronica, and other/ that this victory was obteyned by Charlis of the Saralins, but not as inhabytauns or incolers of Spayne/ but that they were yssuyd out of Afrika, and then warryd and hadde wonne great countreys in Spayne. The whyche is more accordaunt wyth hystoryes. For in the plegys or reherſayllys of the names of kynges of Spayne, I fynde no kynge of that name. Then yt folowyth in the story/ when Charlis Martell hadde thus obteyned victory, he cõmaũded all ỹ pillage to be brought to one place. That done, he deuyded it amonge hys knyghtes. And shortly after Endo knowlegynge hys offence, and seking meanes of mercy/ was agayne restoryd to the lande of Galcoyne.

THE .CXLVIII. CHAPITER.

CHarles Martell haupnge the duke of Galcoyne thus recouēcylyd / sent hym wyth a certayne of knyghtes agayn the reste of the sayd Sarazyns / the whyche by hys manhode he oppressyd and subdued, and clerely voydyd the lande of theym. Then soone vpon this beganne the Burgonyons to rebelle / and made sharpe warre vpon the Frenchemen nerte adioynaunte to them, and dyd vnto the countrey and inhabitaũtes of the same great harme. The which warre/ the sayde Martell that therin toke great payne, not without great payne, lastely yt appeasyd and them subduyd.

In tyme of the whyche warre so contynuynge/ Endo before reherſyd duke of Galcoyne dyed. wherfore Charlis to sette that prouynce in an order and due obeysaunce, yode thether. where he beynge busyed about the nedes of the same / tydynges to hym were broughte that the wandalys which ben of the kynde or lynage of the Hunys before touched, hadde entred the land wyth an houge power, and in wastynge the countrey, approchyd ỹ citye of Senõs or Sens, and yt enuyroned or beclypped wyth a stronge syege. But by the vertue and strength of the archbyshop of ỹ cytye named Ebe, Ebbe, or Obbo, wyth the assystence of the cytezyns of the same/ the sayde cytye was defendyd and delyueryd from the power of the sayde wandalys/ & the power of them abbatyd and subduyd.

For these manyfolde incurcyons and assautys of enymyes, and rebellyon of the countrees that were subiecte to the crowne of Fraunce/ the treasour of Fraunce, & specyally of ỹ temporall people was sore minyshed and wastyd. wherfore in defence of all the lande/ Charlis Martell made requeste to the spirituall men/ & with great dyffyculte hadde yt graunted, that he myght leuy certayne dymys to wage therwith soudyours, & prepayre other necessaryes for ỹ warre. Thys after the opinyon of some writers, was the fyrste tyme that euery spirytuall mannes money wythin ỹ realme was occupyed to temporall vse. wherfore as yt is reported of dyuerse cronyclars / the sayde Charlis when he was ded, was sene by the byshoppe of Orleaunce named Ethereus, to be in great payne and tourment.

Then Charlis moued his hoste towarde the Burgonyons, that agayn were of newe styred and exhortyd by dyuerse persones to newe rebellyon. And after his compynge thyther, dyd execucyon vppon suche persons as he founde culpable/ and not without batayll, sette the country agayne in quyete/

quyet/& then retourned into Fraũce.

But he rested not longe there, or he harde worde that the Almaynes, whyche dwellyd ouer or beyonde the ryuer called the Ryne/ brake ouer in to Fraunce. These people are named in ỹ Frenche boke Seſues/ ỹ which dyd great domage vpon the countreys adioynynge to the sayde ryuer. But yt was not long after, or he had theym chasyd and subduyd/ wyth al so an nother people called the Hunis or Gothys, that he before hadde also vaynquyshed. The whych after this seconde scõfyture/they assocyat vnto theym the kinge of Longobardes named Luytprandus. By whose assystens and power, the forsayde Gothis wan the citye of Aupgnon and other stronge holdes, to the great hurte of the Frenche men.

And for at this season Charlis was greued wyth sykenesse / he therfore sent his brother named Chyldebert to wythstande the sayde enymyes/ ỹ whyche bare hym so manfully, that he chasyd the sayde enymyes.

But thys saynge dyscordyth wyth other authours, whyche shewen that betwene this Charlis and Luytprandus was contynuall ampte & frendshyppe/ in so myche that Luytprandus ayded & assysted the sayde Charlis to anoyde ỹ Saracins that were entryd a countrey of Fraunce called then Gallia cisalpina.

In this tyme that Fraunce was thus wrapped in these harde happes and batayllys/ dyed the kyng Theodoricus, when he hadde occupied the name onely of a kynge. xiiii. yeres.

Anglia.

THE. CXLIX. CHAPITER.

CUthbertus the neuew of Ethelard9/ began his reygne ouer ỹ westsaxõs, in the yere of grace. vii. hũdred & .xxix/ and the thyrde yere of the seconde Theodoricus then kyng of Fraunce. In tyme of whose reygn Colwolphus reygned in Northumberland / to whome as before in the story of Ethelarde is touched, holy Beda wrote the story called Historia Anglicana. About the. ii. yere of the reygne of this Cutberte apperyd in the fyrmament. ii. blasynge starrys or. ii. starris wyth crestes/ & caste as yt were brennynge brondes towarde the Northe.

And about the. vi. yere of the reygn of Cutbert dyed the forsayde holy Beda/ the which in his tyme made & wrote. lxxviii. bokes, ouer and besyde his manyfold workes of vertue that he vsyd by all his lyfe tyme. It ys told of hym, that in his later dayes when he was blynd, he was brought by ỹ frawde of his leder vnto a great hepe of stonys / the whych his leder shewyd to hym was an assemble of men and women, that were thether comyn to here hym preache the word of god. Then he thynkynge hys report to be true/ anon wyth great deuocyon beganne there a collacyon. And therof when he came to the ende the stonys by dyuyne power, in lykenesse of a great multytude of people sayd Amen/ or after the sayng of Antoninus, Deo gratias.

He was so noble of lernynge and excellent in connynge / that the fyrste Sergius pope of Rome sent for hym to assoyle q̃styons there made in the popes vniuersyte. Also his connyng is apparent in the bokes whyche he wrote super Genesim, super Thobiam, super Esdriam, sup Neemiam, wyth other, whyche wolde aske a longe tracte of tyme to reherse, wyth also the omelies made vppon the gospellys / but I passe ouer. when he was dede/ he was buryed at ỹ abbay of Gyrwy/ all be yt the comynyng is

that he reſtyth now wyth ſaynte Cutbert of Durham. Abou̇t the.ix. yere of this kynges reygne/ the holy vyrgyne ſaynt Fredeſwide dyed. Of her yt is ſayde, for vylanye that to her ſhulde haue ben done, by a kynge in Oxynford/that kynges of England at the ſeaſons ſyns haue ſparyd to entre that towne for drede of myſhappe. who ſo wyll knowe the cyrcūſtaunce of the mater, and the holyneſſe of her lyfe/ lette hym ſerche the workes of holy Gyldas, where he ſhall be ſuffycyently informed.

Soone after thys tyme and ſeaſon/Colwolphus kynge of Northūberlande when he had reygned. viii. yeres, he reſygned his dompynyon to his coſyn Egbertus/and was ſhorne a monke in the abbay of Gerup, or after ſome wryters in the abbay of Lyndeſar or holy ylande.

Thus for as mych as lytle is ſhewyd of the dedis of Cutbert kynge of weſtſaxons / therfore I haue made the more reherſayll of other thynges done in his tyme. For of hym is nothynge lefte in wrytynge worthy to be remembryd or mynded/ ſaufynge that he often and many tymes made warre vppon Ethelwalde kynge of Mercia, and ſpedde therin diuerſly/ & laſtely dyed when he had reygned after moſte wryters. xvi. yeres.

Francia.

THE .CXLIX. CHAPITER.



Ilderic or Chilbericus ỳ ſecond of that name, & ſonne of Theodoricus/ began his reygne ouer the Frenſhemen in ỳ yere of our lordes incarnacyon. vii. hūdred and xl/ and the.xi. yere of Cutbertus then kynge of weſtſaxons. Of the whych for his dulneſſe and hys other enormytes in hym exercyſed/ lytle or no thynge of his actes or dedes are put in memorye.

ye haue before in the ſtory of Theodoryche, harde of the puyſſaunt and ſtronge dedys of Charlis Martell/ the whyche ſtyll durynge his lyfe, cōtynued in great honour, to the great ſuertye of the realme of Fraūce, and to the great terrour and fere of theyr enymyes / wherof to reherſe all the cyrcumſtaunce yt wolde occuppye a longe tyme. wherfore ſhortely to conclude / laſtely after hys manyfolde trauayllys ſuſteyned for the weale of the realme of Fraunce, he dyed/ leuynge after hym thre ſonnes, that is to wytte Charlemayne, Pepyn, and Gryffon / to the whyche he bequethed his poſſeſſions and goodes. But for the yongeſt named Gryffon helde hym not contentyd wyth ſuche bequeſt as hys father to hym gaue/ he therfore made warre vppon hys other two bretherne. The whyche behaued theym ſo wyſely/ that wythout notable batayll, they toke theyr ſayde brother, and putte hym in a ſafe keppynge. And that done / the ſayde two bretherne aſſemblyd theyr knyghtes, and ſpedde theym agayn Hanualde duke of Guyan, then rebellyng agayn the crown of Fraūce. The whych duke with the countrey, they brought vnder theyr fyſte obeyſaunce. After the whyche victorye of the ſayde coūtrey obteyned, the ſayd two bretherne ſpedde them to the cytye of Poytyers, where they by aduyſe of the nobles of the lande, conſyderynge the vnableneſſe of Hilderyche ỳ kynge, that he was vnſuffycyent to ruie ſo great a charge / dyuyded the lande of Fraunce betwene theym. So that eyther of them ſhuld

vnder

vnder the kynge, rule and gouerne ſuche poꝛcyon as then there was to them appoynted.

After the whyche poꝛcyon Charlmayne herynge of the dyuyſyon and ſtryfe amonge the Almaynes / as thynge belongynge to hys charge, ſpedde hym thyther in all haſte. And after a parte of that countrey waſtyd and ſpoylyd/ and dyuerſe of theyꝛ ſtronge holdys caſte playne wyth the erthe/ he bꝛought theym to due ſubiectyon.

And ſoone after he went agayne the Bauarys/ ẏ whyche by his knyghtely ſtrength, he appeaſed in lykewyſe. In all whyche tyme and ſeaſon/ Peppyn hys bꝛother was occuppyd in defendynge of the other partyes of Fraunce.

Then this foꝛeſayde Charlmayne ſteryd by dyuyne inſpyracyon, oꝛ as ſome authours meane, as he befoꝛe tyme hadde auowyd / ſodeynely renouncyd and gaue ouer all woꝛldely pꝛoſperyte and dompnyon, and with pure deuocyon yode to Rome. where of the pope then named Zacharias/ he wyth all honour and ioy was receyuyd, and of hym ſhoꝛne a munke, and dwelled a ſeaſon in an abbaye of hym ſelfe buylded in the mounte Sarapte. But foꝛ he ſawe that daply dꝛewe to hym many great loꝛdes of Fraunce/ by meane wheꝛof he was lette from hys dyuyne ſeruyce and contemplacyon : he theꝛfoꝛe yode thens to the mounte Caſſyne, & there endyd his naturall lyfe.

After whoſe thus departynge oꝛ gyuynge ouer of the ſayde Charlemayne/ Peppyn as onely ruler, toke vppon hym the charge of the hole realme.

In thys paſſe tyme Gryffon the ponger bꝛother was enlargyd from pꝛyſone/ and by fauoure of hys bꝛetherne was aſſygned to ſuche poſſeſſyons, as to hym was demed ſuffycyent to lede an honoꝛable lyfe.

How be yt when he ſawe that hys bꝛother Peppyn hadde all the rule and he nothynge : he dyſdayned hys ſayde bꝛother/ and thoughte no lenger to contynue in that maner, but to be partener of the rule of the lande as Charlemayne hys bꝛother hadde ben. And this to bꝛynge to hys purpoſe, he fledde vnto the Sarons, whyche as after ſhall appere were named Noꝛmans. And with the pꝛynce of theym made alyaunce / ſo that wyth theyꝛ ayde he mouyd warre agayne his bꝛother, and aſſembled a ſtronge hoſte. wheꝛof Peppyn beynge warnyd, gaderyd hys people/ and paſſynge thoꝛow came to the ryuer of Sunaha, oꝛ after the latyne tonge Sinuſſaha/ and Gꝛyffon ſped hym tyll he came to a ryuer called Onacre.

Whē theſe .ii. hoſtes were thus nere, meanes of treatye were ſoughte on both partyes. Duryng whych communycacyon/ Gꝛyffon haunge ſuſpeccyon to the Sarons that were on his parte, leſte they wold betraye hym and yelde hym into the handes of his bꝛother, made foꝛ that tyme a ſleyght agrement/ and ſhoꝛtly after departyd from the ſayd Sarōs, and fled to the Bauarys oꝛ into Bayon. where he allyeng hym wyth dyuerſe nobles and barons of Fraunce/ bexyd and diſtourbed ſoꝛe the duke and loꝛde of that countrey called Taſſylon/ and laſtly dyſceaſyd hym of that loꝛdſhyppe. wheꝛof Peppyn beynge warned, ſpedde hym thyther wyth great ſtrength/ and ſo bare hym that he had the better of his bꝛother, and reſtoꝛyd the ſayd Taſſylon vnto his right/ & after retourned into Fraũce, ledynge wyth hym his bꝛother Gꝛyffon as his pꝛyſoner.

But yt was not long after, that by

medyatours the sayde Gryffon was reconcilyd to his brother. And for he shuld be cõtent & haue no more cause to vary with his broder, there was assygned to hym, as wytnessyth ỹ frẽch cronicle and other, xii. erldomes with in the realme of Fraunce. wyth the whyche bounteous gyfte he not be ynge cõtente/ the selfe same yere fled vnto ỹ duke of Guyan named Gayfer/ and wyth hym newly conspyred agayne his sayde brother. But lastely he was there slayne as after shall appere.

Peppyn then consyderynge in hys mynde in what daunger and trouble hys father before hym had ruled the lande, & he now for his tyme in lyke agony and trouble / and the kynge, to whome belonged all the charge, kepte hys paleys & folowed all his delytes and pleasures, wythoute takynge of any payne / wherfore consyderynge the prempsses, & for a reformacyon of the same: sent hys ambassade to the pope then beynge zacharye before named, askyng hys advyse, whether yt was more necessary or welfull for the realme of Fraũce that he shulde be admytted for kyng that dyd nothynge but applye hys mynde to all pleasure of hys bodye, wythout cure or charge takynge vpon hym for the guydynge of the lande and the people of the same / or he that toke vpon him all the charge and payne, in defence of the lande, and keppynge of the people in due subiecyon. To this the pope answeryd and wrote vnto Peppyn, that he was beste worthy and moste profytable for the realme to be admyttyd for kynge, that ruled well the comynalte by iustyce and prudence, and the enymyes therof defendyth and subdueth by his polycy and manhode. The whyche answere thus receyued frome the pope, and declared vnto the lordes and barons of the realme: anone they of one assente and mynde procedyd and went to the deposynge and puttynge downe of theyr kynge and gouernour Hylderyche. And in shorte space after closyd hym in a monastery or house of relygyon, when he hadde ben occuppyer of a kynges rome by the name onely. x. yeres. And that done, the Frenche men electyd and chase Peppyn for theyr soue rayne and kynge.

In the whyche Hilderyche or Childerych endyd the lyfe or progeny of Meroneus / of whome the Frenche kynges lynyally descendyd by contynuaunce of tyme as foloweth.

Meroneus.	x. yeres.
Childericus	xxiiii. yeres.
Clodoueus	xxx. yeres.
Dagobertus	xiiii. yeres.
Clodoueus	xvi. yeres.
Clotharius	iiii. yeres.
Theodoricus	iii. yeres.
Childericus	ii. yeres.
Lotharius	l. yeres.
Chilpericus	xxiiii. yeres.
Lotharius	xliii. yeres.
Clodoueus	iii. yeres.
Childebertus	xvii. yeres.
Dagobertus	xi. yeres.
Danyel	v. yeres.
Theodoricus	xiiii. yeres.
Theodoricus	xix. yeres
Hildericus	x. yeres

Anglia.

THE .CL. CHAPITER.

Sigebert or Sigbertus the cosyne of Cutbert laste kynge of the west saxons / beganne his reygne ouer ỹ sayd Saxons, in the yeres of ỹ incarna-

carnacyon of Cryst. vii. hūdred and xlv/and the. v. yere of Hilderic⁹ then kyng of Fraunce. He was cruell and tyrannous to his subiectes/& turnyd theyr lawes and customes of his fore fathers after his owne wyll and plea sure. And for ẏ one of the noble men of his dominyon somdele sharply ad uertysed him to chaūge his maners, and to behaue hym more prudently towarde his people/he therfore ma lycyously caused hym to be putte to cruell deth.

About this tyme Egbertus, after the yonger wylfryde, was made arch bysshoppe of yorke. The whyche brought agayn thyther the pall that his predecessours hadde forgone, syns the tyme that the fyrst Paulin⁹ had lefte that see and fled to Roche ster in Kent, and there lefte the sayd pall. This Egbert was brother vn to Egbert kyng of Northumberlād/ by whose assystence and comforte, he dyd many thynges for the weale of ẏ see, & made there a noble library.

Then yt folowyth, for so myche as the kyng Sygebert contynued in his malyce & cruell condycyons/ his subiectes conspired agayn hym, and putte hym from all kyngely dygnyte. So ẏ he fell after to great de solacyon & mysery/ in such wyse ẏ he was founden after in a wood or deso late place wandryng alone without cōforte. where he beyng so foundē by a swyne herd or bylayne, some tyme belongyng to the erle Cōbran⁹ ẏ he before tyme wyckydly had slayn / in auengement of his sayd lordes deth slew hym in ẏ sayd place. which sayd Sigebertus was thus depryued frō al honour/ whē he after most writers had reygned or tyrannysed .ii. peres.

THE .CLI. CHAPITER.

Kenulphus of the lyne or blode of Cerdicus fyrst kyng of west sarons/ began hys domynyon ouer the sayde westsarons in the yere of grace .vii. hundred & .xlviii / and the vii. yere of Hildericus then kynge of Fraunce. The vertue of thys man passyd his fame. For after he hadde with the agrement of the westsarons depryued Sygebert theyr kynge frō his authorite and regally/ he fyrst ap peasyd dyuers murmurs and grud gis that kyndelyd among his subiec tes/& set his lordshyp in great quyet nesse and rest touchynge theyr ciuyle dyscorde.

About the. viii. yere of the reygne of this Kenulphus/ Offa slewe a ty raunt named Beorredus, ẏ before had slayne Ethelwald kyng of Mer cia. After whose deth the sayde Offa as neuew to the sayd Ethelwald, rey gned as kynge of that prouynce.

Of this Offa is tolde many notable dedes, wherof somwhat I entende to shew. He hadde warre wyth the Nor thumbres, & thē for a tyme subdued. He also had warre wyth Ethelbrede kynge of eest anglys/ and wyth Eg bert otherwyse called Wren kynge of Kent. whome he toke prysoner, and led hym bounden wyth hym into Mercia.

Then after these bytoryes, Offa buylded the chyrch of wychcom. In tyme of the whyche buyldynge, in presens of. xiii. bysshoppes and ma ny other great estatys/ kynge Offa enlargyd the sayde Egbert of impry sonement. In token wherof the peo ple beynge there present / made such an exclamacyon of ioye and glad nesse, that the chyrche therof range.

Thys kynge Offa hadde suche dyl pleasure vnto the cytyzens of Caun terburye/ that he remoued the arch bysshoppes see by the agremente of the fyrste Adryane then pope, vnto Lychefelde. He also chased the Bry tons or welshmē into walys/ & made

a famouſe dyke betwene walys and the vtter bondys of Mercia or myddle Englande/the whyche to this day is named Offedyche. And after he buyldyd there a chyrch, whych longe tyme after was called Offekyrke.

This Offa alſo by angelycall inſpyracyon, tranſlatyd the holy prothomartyr ſaynt Albone/ and was fyrſt founder of that famous monaſterye ouer that holy bodye. The whyche ſyns the fyrſte foundacyon hath by ſondry tymes ben periſhed and hurt by Danys & other/ and newely ſyns that tyme reedyfyed. This holy Albon was martyred as before apperyth in the.lxvii.chappter and storye of Cõſtantius, about the yere of our lorde two hundred.lxxx.and.xvii. By whych reaſon he ſhuld lye or he were tranſlatyd, ouer foure hundred and lx.yeres. This Offa alſo maried one of hys doughters to Bryghtricus ỹ was kynge of weſtſaxons. And for that in his tyme was varyaunce betwene hym and the Frẽche men, that paſſage of marchauntes was forboden: therfore he ſente that famouſe doctour Anſelmus vnto Charlis the great then kynge of Fraunce, to comon the meanes of a peace. whyche Charlis hadde after thys Anſelmus in ſuche fauour/ that he became hys diſcyple.

Then retourne we to Kenelphus/ ỹ whyche before tyme had had often warre wyth Offa, and with hym many conflyctes, and laſtely agreed. About the.xi.yere of thys Kenelphy/ Egbert kynge of Northumbres renouncyd his kyngly dignyte, and became a munke.

And laſtely the ſayde Offa, when he had reygned ouer Mercia.xxxix. yeres, as ſayth Guydo / he lefte the kyngdome to hys ſonne alſo named Kenelphus, and yode to Rome.

And this Kenulphy kynge of weſt ſaxon/ kepte ſtrongely hys lordſhyp agayn ỹ power of all his enymyes, & hadde his ſubiectes in due order of obedyence. Laſtly Kenulph was ſupryſed wyth the loue of a womã that he kept at Werton/ and hauntyd her more ſecretly then ſtode wyth his honour. wherof haupnge knowlege a kynneſman of Sygebert late kyng, entendynge to reuẽge the depoſynge of his kynneſmã/ awayted the tyme, and beſet the houſe where Kenulphe & his paramour was ſmally accõpanyed. But ſo ſoone as Kenulph had eſpyed his enymyes/ he ſette vppon them, whych as ſayth Policronicon were.lxxx.in nõber, and fought with them a longe whyle. But in the ende he was ſlayn of Clyto or Clyton his enymye.

It was not longe after or worde ſprang of the kynges deth. wherfore Offric? then beynge mayſter of the kynges knyghtes/ toke wyth hym a certayn of the ſayde chyualry, & purſued vpon the ſayd murderers/ & laſtly encountred wyth them, and ſlewe the ſayde Clyto theyr captayne with the more parte of his companye. And that done he retourned to Werton/ and there toke the corps of Kenulphe, and with great ſolemnyte cõueyed yt vnto wyncheſter / where yt was with all reuerẽce enterryd / whẽ he hadde ruled the weſtſaxons (all be yt that of hym the englyſhe cronycle maketh no mencyon) .xxxi.yeres.

Francia.

THE. CLIII. CHAPITER.



Pipinus the ſecõd ſonne of Charlis Martell, began his reygne ouer ỹ Frenchemen, in ỹ yere of grace. vii. hundred and.l / & the

the seconde yere of Kenulphus then kyng of westsaxons. This as before ye haue harde, was elected to that honoure, by assent of Pope zachary, & the consent of the nobles of Fraūce/ and after he was confermyd of the seconde Stephan, when he satte after as Pope.

The fyrste yere of his reygne / the Saxons otherwyse called Danys or Normannys, beganne to warre vppon hym. The whyche he encountred at the ryuer of Isayr / and them knyghtly ouercame, and chased and brought them fynally vnder his subiection. And in his returnynge into the countrey of Fraunce/ word was brought to him of the deth of his brother Gyffon/ the whych as before is sayde fledde vnto Gayferus duke of Guyan, and there helde hym to the ende for to haue caused the people of Guyan to haue rebellid, and to make warre agayne his brother Peppyn. wherof when some of them consyderyd the malycyous and vnstable condycyons of hym/ in auoydyng more daunger, that to theyr countrey by his meanes myght ensue, they fell so deynly vppon hym and slew hym.

when Peppyn was retourned into Fraunce/ he by the aduyse of Remigius then byshoppe of Roan, amendyd the state of the chyrche/ and causyd goddes seruyce to be songe, that before tyme had ben wyth lytle deuocyon and reuerence done and vttryd. And other spyrytuall thynges that before were myserderyd/ he caused them to be sette in a better forme. And shortly after Stephā aboue named, confyrmed this Peppyn and his heyres for kynges of Fraunce / and of hym aryd ayde and assystence to wythstāde the power of Aystulphus then kyng of Longobardes/ ỳ which then warryd vppon certayne landes belongyng vnto the chirch of Rome. The whyche kenge Peppyn to hym with good wyll graūtid/ & the begynnynge of the nexte yere folowynge, wyth a great hoste enteryd the boundes of Italy/ and in the same made sharpe and cruell warre. In defence wherof the sayde Aystulphus made his beste prouysyon/ and defendyd ỳ straytes and moūtaynes, by ỳ which the Frenche men shuld haue further entre into hys lande/ and there gaue vnto his enmyes a stronge fyghte. All be yt he wyth his people was forcyd to gyue backe / & for hys refuge toke ỳ citie of Pappe. wherof Peppyn hauynge informacyon/ declyppyd ỳ sayd cytye wyth a strong syege.

when Aystulphꝰ had a season defended hys cytye/ & saw by experiēce dayly his enmyes encreace, & his power mynyshe and feble/ in auoydynge of extreme daunger, he sought meanes of peace / and in suche wyse pursued the same, that he finally hadde peace to hym graunted/ vppon condycyon that he by a daye lympted, shuld restore to ỳ pope all ryght to his chirch belongynge, that he or any for hym held or before tyme hadde wytholden / wyth other thynges concernynge the sayde peace. And for the perfourmaunce of the sayde condycyōs / he deliuerid immediatly good hostages and pledgys. After whyche peace thus substancially confermed/ Peppyn wyth his hoste wyth great tryumphe retourned into Fraunce.

But not wythstandyng this assurid peace, by the contyrmacyon of othe and other cyrcumstaunce before shewyd/ the nexte yere folowynge he trustynge vppon better fortune of warre, denyed and reuokyd all his former grauntes / and refused to do as before he hadde fyrmyly promysed. For this vnstablenes and vntrouth to remedy / the pope of newe made requeste vnto Peppyn. The

wh'ch wythout longe taryeng reſembled his knightes, & made good ſped towarde Italy/ & not wythout daũger paſſyd the mountaynes / and fynally beſyeged Aiſtulphus wythin ỹ forẽſayd cytye of Papy. By meane wherof he laſtly was conſtrayned to reſtore certayne cyties and other poſſeſſyons that before tyme he had taken from the pope.

After the whych agrement endyd and perfyted / wythin a ſhorte terme the ſayde Aiſtulphus beynge in hys dyſporte of huntynge, fell from hys horſe or with his horſe. By vyolence wherof he was ſo brokyn, that he dyed ſhortly after / whan he had ruled the Longobardes, Lumbardys, or Italyans. viii. yeres.

After this victory thus obteyned by Peppyn / the lordes and prynces that dwellyd aboute hym, feryd and drad hym, and ſought to hym for allyaunce & ampte. Amonge the whych Taſſylon duke of Bayon before ſpoken of, that newly hadde conſpyred agayn hym / yelded hym to the kyng, and became hys trewe lyege man/ and ſwore to hym and to hys two ſonnes feawte.

But the Saxons, whyche in the Frenche boke are named Soyſons/ coude neuer hold them cõtent without dyſtorbynge of the Frenchemen. wherfore kynge Peppyn aſſembled a greate hoſte and made towarde thẽ, and had wyth them dyuerſe conflyctes and batayles. So that at lengthy they were dryuen to aſke peace/ vpõ condicyõ that yerely after they ſhuld yelde vnto the kynge of Fraunce iii. hundred good horſes in waye of trybute.

And that done he retourned into Fraũce/ and immedyatly after ordeyned by the aduyſe of hys counceyle a courte or counceyle/ ỹ whiche at this day is called ỹ parlyamẽt of Fraũce, and is lyke vnto the courte of requeſtes now at this day holden in England. How be it ỹ is of mych greater reſort of people, and therwyth veray delayous/ in ſo mych that as I haue herde credyble perſons ſay/ ſome one mater hath hanged there in dyſputacyon ouer. xx. yeres. The whych parlyament at this daye is kepte at Paris, at Roan, and other two places of the lande. And for iudges of thys counceyll or parlyament, is deputyd of the kynges coſte in euery place where it is kepte an hũdred perſons, what of one and what of an other.

Than it foloweth, Gayfer duke of Guyan before mynded / of wyll more than of reaſon, ſet a trybute or impoſycyon vppon the ſpyrytuall landes wythin hys lande wythout agrement of the clergy. wherfore the byſhoppes for a redreſſe and remedy cõplayned them vnto kynge Peppyn. Then Peppyn ſent vnto hym/ moneſtynge hym in fayre and goodly maner, that he ſhuld eſchew and forbere ſuch doyng. And for the duke wolde not abſtayne for the kynges cõmaũdement/ he in ſhorte whyle aſſembled hys army, and entred the territory of Guyan/ in waſtynge and ſpoylynge the countrey. And in ſo ſhorte whyle after put the duke in ſuche fere, that he was fayne to aplye hym to ỹ kynges mynde and pleaſure/ and bound hym to reſtore to the clergy all that he had before taken by extort power. But whan the ſayde duke was aſſuryd of ỹ kinges retorne into Fraũce/ he gathered a ſtrength of knyghtes, and ſent theym to the cytye of Chalours in Burgoyne/ and dyd that he cowde or myghte to the domage of that towne and countrey. In whych ſeaſon the kynge was at the towne or cytye called Bury / whyther and to the whyche towne tydynges were brought to hym of the vntrew dealynge

lynge of thys forsayd duke. where wyth he beynge sore dyscontent / retournyd wyth his people into Guyā and therein bete downe many strong holdys & castellys / and toke or wōne at length Burbon, Cancaruple, and Cleremoūt / and from thens wastyng the coūtrey wyth iron and fyre, yode tyll he came to Lymoges. And for ỳ wynter came on hande / the kyng for the ease and sauegard of his people, strengthyd these forsayde cytyes, townes, and holdes, that he before had wonne / and than yode to a place called Cause or Caus, & there kepte hys crystmasse and ester. And whan the new season was come / not forgetyng hys former purpose, reentryd the forsayd duchy of Guyan, in wastyng the londe as he before hadde done / and after toke by strength the cytyes of Burgies and Towrs. In wyche season and tyme the duke wolde neuer apere in playne felde, but kepte hym in strong holdes / & as one was wone, he fled into another.

Thys warre thus contynuynge / the countreye and people were sore empouerysshed. wherfore they lastly consyderynge the obstynacy of theyr duke / wyth also the greate daunger which they stode in: murderyd theyr sayde duke / and after yelded them & the coūtrey to the kynges obeysaūce, wyth all suche treasure and iewelles as to the sayd duke belonged / where of Pepyn offerd a great parte of thē vnto saynte Denys.

Thys warre thus ended, wyth many other notable worckes whereof the rehersall in order wolde aske a longe tracte of tyme: thys vyctorious pryncē Pepyn was vexed wyth greuous sykenesse. wherfore in all haste he sped hym vnto sayne Martynes, where he made certayne oblacyons and prayers / and thens hys sykenesse encreasyng, was conueyed vnto Parys / where he shortly after dyed, when he had reygned as kynge by the terme of .xviii. yeres / ieuynge after him .ii. sonnes, that is for to say Charle mayne and Charlys.

THE .CLIIII. CHAPITER.

CArolomanus and Charlys sonnes of Peppyn / begā theyr reygne ioyntly ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of our lorde .vii. hundred lxviii / and the .xx. yere of Kenulphe than kynge of westsaxons / so that Charlemayne had to his parte myddell Fraunce, and Charlys had Austracy wyth ỳ other deale of Fraūce.

Of ỳ elder brother Charlemayne lytell is lefte in memory / for he dyed whan he had reygned lytell ouer .ii. yeres. wherfore to Charlys fell the hole realme of Fraunce / the whyche of all the nobles was ioyously admytted.

It wasnot longe after / Hunpldys whom Peppyn by hys lyfe hadde ordeyned ruler of Guyan, rebellyd agayne the kynge. wherfore Charlys prepayrd anone hys armye, and sped hym thyder / and in processe of tyme constrayned the sayd Hunpldo to forsake the countrey, and for hys tuycyon to flee vnto Lupus than duke of Gascoyne. wherfore Charlys beynge aduertysed, sent hys message to the sayd Lupus / wyllynge & commaundyng hym that he in spedy maner, shulde sende to hym hys rebell Hunpldus, or els he wolde with hys army inuade & spoyle his people and coūtrey. Uppon receyt of which message, Lupus by coūceyll condescendyd to the kynges pleasure / so ỳ he causyd Hunpldus to submyt hym vnto the kynges grace and mercy. wherewyth the kynge was so well contentyd, that vppon assuraunce taken of the sayd Hunpldus, ỳ there after he shulde be of good aberynge toward

toward the kyng/he clerely forgaue vnto hym all hys former offence. And after he had set that countrey in a rule and order / he retorned into Fraunce. where to hym soone after came an embassade from the fyrste Adryan than pope/ requyrynge hym of ayde agayne Desyderi⁹ thā kyng of Longobardys / the whyche than had taken from the chyrche of Rome many cytyes and other possessyons.

Than Charlys accepting the popes request / or he began any warre agayne the sayde Desyderius, sente vnto hym an embassade / wyllynge and requyrynge hym in all honorable wyse to restore vnto the chyrche of Rome, all suche possessyons as he from the same chyrche before tyme hadde taken and yet withholde/ and also to refrayne hym from all suche warre as he dayly made vppon the londys of the sayd chyrche. But for he sawe no frute ensue of ẏ̄ message/ he made prouysyon for all thyng nedefull to such a iourney. And shortly after passed the mountaynes, not all wythout batayle/and in processe cōstrayned Desyderi⁹ to take the cytye of Uercyle. where after he hadde refresshed hys Italyans / he gaue vnto the Frenchemen a sharpe and cruell batayle. But in the ende, Desyderius was compellyd to forsake the felde, and fled after to the forenamed cytye of Papy/ where he kepte hym as after shall appere a longe whyle.

And for to shewe you somewhat of the foresayde batayle/ ye shall vnderstande that for the greate occysyō of men ẏ̄ there was slayne/ the place was called longe after Mortaria, that is to meane in our vulgare or mother tonge the place of deth. In this fyghte were slayne amonge other two knyghtes greately famyd, Amys and Amylyon/of whom some fables are reportyd, bycause they were so lyke of semblaunt.

These two knyghtes as wytnessyth the Frenche story and also Antoninus / were brought vppe in the court of the foresayde Charles, and wyth hym well cherysshed / and fynally here slayne and buryed after some wryters in the two chappellys, whyche in the foresayde place were buylded to prayse for the greate multytude of the soules of these knyghtes that there were slayne. But who that is desyrous to knowe the hole lyfe of those two foresayd knyghtes/ let hym ouerse the thyrde chapyter of the. xiiii. tytle of Antoninus / and he shall there fynde a compendyous and goodly story / the whyche for length I ouerpasse and retorne my style agayne to Charlys. The which whan he was ware that Desyderius had taken thys cytye of Papy / and it greatly strengthyd both with men and bytell, in such wyse that he well vnderstode ẏ̄ it myghte not be shortly wonne: he therfore layde about it a stronge syege wyth the ouersyght of sure and wyse capytayns/ and after yode to Rome to vysyte the holy apostles Peter and Poule, and also to speke wyth the pope for dyuers maters. where he taryed a greate parte of the wynter folowynge, and after retorned vnto Papy/ whych as yet was not delyueryd nor gyuē vp.

But it was not longe after his retorne that the cytye was wonne / wherein was takyn as prysoner the sayde Desyderius wyth hys wyfe and chyldren. The whyche to make shorte processe, he at length forcyd hym to restore vnto the pope all such possessyons as he before tyme hadde taken from hys chyrche / and addyd more there vnto, the two cytyes of Spoletys and Beneuent. And fynally deprayed hym of all kyngely honoure, and ladde hym as prysoner into

into Fraunce / and as a prysoner or exyle from hys naturall countreye kepte hym at the cytye of Lyons, as wytnessyth Cronica cronicarum, Jacobus Philippus, and other. And after by agremēt the pope gaue that kyngdome vnto Pyppynus hys son/ the whych cōtynued so in the French mens rule and possessyon, ouer the terme of two hundred yeres.

For thys vyctorious dede thus obteyned by Charlis/the forenamed pope graūted vnto hym many great prypuleges. Amonge the nombet whereof, one was that no pope durynge the lyfe of Charlys, shulde be in no wyse electid or chosyn tyll there came from hym a commaundement to go to that electyon. And also he graunted vnto hym inuestyture of benefyces spyrytuall. whyche graun tes and prypuleges were confermed and authorysed in a Synode of an hundreth and. liii. bysshoppes, kepte in Fraunce by cōmaundement of the foresayd Adryan.

Of thys Charlys longe and tedyous it were to tell the hole of hys actes and dedes. wherfore I entende to towche but a parte of theym/and for the other deale I remytte to them ỳ haue further desyre of knowlege, vnto the bokes of Turpyn and Egyueaur chaplayne to the sayde Charlys/or ellys to the sayd bysshop Turpyn, whyche wrote a longe worke of hys vertuous dedes.

THE. CLV. CHAPITER.

This Charlys marcyall after his retorne into Fraūce/ without therelōge taryeng sped hym agayne to the forenamed people called Soysons or Sarons, whyche newly rebellyd/ and warryd sharpely vppon them, and fought wyth them sondry batayles. Amonge the whyche two ben specyally noted / whereof that one was foughten at a place called Onacre, and that other at the ryuer of Esam or Helayze. By whyche two batayls the Sarons loste moch of theyr people, and were so sore feblysshed that they were fayne shortely after to put them in the mercy of Charlys. By reason wherof he bonde them vnto certayne lawes and ordynaunces/ wherof specyally one as prynceypall of them, was that they frō that daye forth, shulde renounce and forsake theyr worshyppynge of idollys and fals goddes, and beleue in the fayth of Crystes chyrch, wyth many other. For the perfourmynge of the whyche couenauntes/the kyng toke of them good pledgys & hostages. And more ouer to the ende to mynysshe & make lesse theyr strengthe / he chase out of them. x. thousande of the moste apte men for the warrys, and conueyed them wyth hym into Fraunce. And after he hadde clothed them with the manteil of baptyme/ takynge of thē assuryd othe to be trewe to hym and to hys heyres: he after inhabyted them in dyuers places of his realme. Of the whyche people, as affermeth myne authoure, descendyd the Flemmynges and Brabāders. And thus endyd the warre of the Sarons or Soysons, that hadde contynued by the terme of many yeres passyd.

And forthwyth by assent and adupse of hys counceyle / he prepayrd all abilymentes and ordynaunce of warre, to go agayne ỳ Hunys ỳ then had wonne great ground in Spayne. And for to bryng this war to ỳ more effectuall ende / he chase. xii. perys, which after some wryters are called dozeperys or kynges. Of the whyche

vi. were

vi. were bysshoppes & .vi. temporall lordes. Of the whyche bysshoppes thre were named dukes, whych were archbysshops/& iii. erlys, which were bysshoppes. Of the temporall lordes thre were dukes and thre erlys/ that is to saye the duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Neustria or Normandy, and the duke of Guyan / & for. iii. erlys, the erle of Palantyne, ỹ erle of Tholous, and the erle of Champayn. Of ỹ whyche also some writers afferme, that ỹ famouse knyghtes Rowland and Olyuer were. ii/ as Roulād erle of Palātyne, & Olyuer erle of Tholous. when Charlis had prepared all thynges necessary to this great iourney/ he fyrste made his pylgrymage vnto saynte Denys, and there offerd ryche great gyftes, and after procedyd towarde his iourney/ and fyrste besyegyd the citye called Pāpilona/ the whych after. iii. monethes he subdued to his obeysaunce. This cytye stode in the entre of Spayne in the montaynes callyd montes Pyreni. After the obteynynge of whyche cytye, and by myracle of saynt Jamys as sayth Antoninus/ Charlis commaūded all such as to Crystes fayth wolde be conuertyd, shuld be saued/ & the other to passe by sentence of the sworde. And after he hadde wonne ỹ fyrste cytye he wanne all the coūtrey adioynynge to the same / by reason wherof he caste great fere vnto the mysbeleuantis/ and wan by his strēgth and by appoyntemēt (so that they became his trybutaryes) these coūtres and prouynces hereafter ensuynge/ that is to saye as wytnessyth Vyncēt hystoryall, Antoninus, and other/ ỹ land of Laudeluffe, the land of Pardis, the lande of Castyll, the landē of Maurys, the prouynce of Nauerne, the countrey of Portyngall, the lāde of BysCaye, & the lande of Palarge/ and destroyed in them all ydollis and buyldyd in them chyrches and monasterys/ and brought the more partye of them to Crystes relygyon. And moste specyally the chyrche of saynt Jamys he buylded in Cōpostella wyth sumptuous coste/ & gaue there vnto great possessyons, to the mayntenynge of the diuyne seruyce of god and the mynysters of ỹ same. And ouer that with the treasour that he gate in these forsayd countreys/ he buyldyd many dyuerse chyrches, as well in other places as there.

Longe yt were to tell all the circūstaunce of this vyage and dyctoryes of the same. wherfore I passe ouer. And when Charlys hadde sped hys nedys/ he had good wyll to retourne into Fraunce. In the whych retorne Carlis castynge no dought nor parell / by the treason of Gauelon a knyght or ruler of Gascoyn/ ỹ which Gauelon hadde receyuyd of a Paynym kynge named Marsyll, great & ryche gyftes for to betraye the hoste of Charlis, was dyscouerd as after shewyth. Thys Gauelon the better to compasse and bryngе to effecte his purpose/ aduised Charlis wyth a certayne of his people to passe the porte of Cesayre, and to leue behynde hym in the rerewarde Rouland & Olyuer wyth. xx. thousande of the resydue of his hoste. And when the kynge was passyd wyth his hoste/ he gaue warnynge vnto the forenamed Marsyll and other, that they shulde close the sayde Rowlande in the place callyd Rounceuale. The whych accordyng to that false counsayll/ with an hoste of. lx. thousande or mo, beclypped Rowlande and his people on euery syde, and there fell vppon the Crystē men and slew them wythoute mercy or pytye. In the whyche fyght, not wythstandynge the great slaughter that they made of the Saralyns/ fynally was there slayne the sayd Rowlande

lande, Olyuer, and many of the noobles of Fraunce. But this Gauelon ſcapyd not wythoute punyſhement. For he was after taken / and wyth other to hym condeſcēdyng, were put to moſte cruell deth at the cytye of Aquiſgrany.

Of thys great victory of Charlis in ſubduynge of Spayn/are dyuers opynyons. For the Frenche cronycle and Antoninus agreen, that it ſhuld be after that Charlis was ennoynted emperour of Rome. But mayſter Robert Gagwyn and other ſay, that yt was before he was emperour.

Thus this victoryous pryncē returnynge into Fraunce, ſubdued thā after diuerſe coūtreys, as Gallia Narbonenſis, Campania or Champayn, and Beneuentana, and other/ whych of one mynde hadde rebellyd agayne hym.

Aboute the.xxxi. yere of his reygne as moſte wryters agre/certayne perſons of Italy conſpyred agayn Leo the.iii. then Pope of Rome, and hym vngoodly entreatyd. But he laſtely eſcappyng theyr daunger/ came vnto Charlis, and requyryd hym of hys cōfort and ayde/ wherof he was not daungerous. But when he had well ſerchyd, and vnderſtode that ỹ pope had ſuſteyned wrong/he wyth all dylygence ſpedde hym thyther. And after he had ſubdued ỹ popes enimies/ he reſtoryd the ſayd pope to hys former dignyte. For the which dede and other that he had done for ỹ defence of the chyrch of Rome/he was by the ſayd pope Leo or Leon ſacryd or enoyntyd emperour of Rome.

THE .CLVI. CHAPITER.

CHarlis then thus ſacryd as emperour, in the yere of oure lord.viii. hundred and one/when he hadde accomplyſhed hys nedys for the weale of the chyrch and the pope, he then wyth great gyftes retourned into Fraunce.

In this tyme or ſoone after as wytneſſyth the Frenche cronycle, landed in Fraunce the famous clerkes Alcinnus or Albinus, Rabanus, & Johannes, and other of the diſcyples of Beda. The whych Charlis receyued wyth great honour/and by theyr coūſaylys inſtytuted and ordeyned fyrſt the ſcole of Paris, and an other at Papia in Italy before minded. wher fore yt ſhulde ſeme that the ſayde Alcinnus was not ſent for any entreatyſe of peace betwene the two realmes of Fraunce and great Britayn, as in the ſtorye of Kenulphus before is ſhewyd.

After this tyme and ſeaſon many great and noble dedis were done by this ſayd Charlis, and by his ſonnes and cappytaynes vnder hym, and by his commaundement.

And for the perſonage of ſo noble a pryncē ſhuld be had in mynde/ therfore dyuerſe authours teſtyfye ỹ he was fayre & welfaryng of body, and ſterne of loke & of face. His body was viii. fote long/& his armes & legges well lengthed & ſtrengthed after the proporcyon of the body. His face of a ſpāne bryede/& his berde very long. Of hys ſtrength wonders are tolde. He wold at one mele ete an hole hare or two hennes, or a hole goſe, or lyke quātyte of other mete/& drynke ther to a litle wyne mynglyd with water.

Amonge his other notable dedis, he made a brydge ouer the ryuer of Ryne of.v. hūdred pace longe, by the cytye of Magunce. And he buylded as wytneſſyth Antonin⁹ and other/ as many abbayes or monaſteryes as there ben letters in the croſſe row of the A.B.C.

And in the front of eyther of ỹ ſayd abbayes, after the tyme of theyr foū-

dacion/he pight or set a letter of gold of the value of an hundred pounde turnoys, whych is nere to the value of englysh money now curraunt .xx. mark. For a poūde turnoys is nych lyke .ii.S.viii.d. starlyng/and a poūd Parysyen is nere vppon .xl.d. starlyng. But it standyth at no certaynte, for hyghtynge & lowynge of theyr coynes.

He also buylded or new reedyfyed the cytye of Aquisgrany/& endowyd the chyrch of our lady there wyth many great gyftes and precyouse relyques, whyche yet remayne there to this daye/in whych cytye and nere a boute, he vsyd nyche to abyde & lye. And for his great dedes & victorys/he deserued to be named Charlis ỹ great. And for all his great myght and honour/yet ỹ not wythstādynge he was meke and lowly in herte, and mylde & gracyous to the poore, and mercyfull to wretches & nedy/& sette his sonnes to lerne, as wel letters as marcyall & knyghtly featys. And his doughter he set to spynnynge & woll worke. And he was expert in all spechys/ so that he neded none interpretours to explane or expresse to hym ỹ message of straunge ambassatours. And in the tyme of his dyner or meales / he vsyd to haue red before hym lessons and pystles/ and specyally of the workes of sayncte Austayne de Ciuitate dei. In hym was nothynge to be dyscommendyd/but that he helde his doughter so longe vnmaryed.

This noble man Charlis .iii. yeres before his deth/he hadde peace wyth all countreys, as well suche as were obeysaunt vnto ỹ empyre, as such as longed to his domynyon of Fraūce. In the tyme of reste amonge other goodly & vertuous dedys, he made hys testamēt/ & dystrybuted his temporall mouable goodes in. iii. ptes. wherof two partes he gaue to ỹ mayntenynge of bisshoppes and other mynysters of the chyrch, and for the reparacion of chyrches & necessaries to the same, and to the mayntenynge of the dyuyne scruyce of god, with also ayde and fedynge of poore & nedy people / and the thyrde parte to hys chyldren and other of his allye.

ye shall vnderstande, this Charlis had in his treasory specyally noted before hys other iewellys, iiii. tables or bordes/wherof thre were of syluer and the fourth of gold. In one was graue the lykenes of the cytye of Cō stantyne the noble, the whych he bequath to the chyrche of Rome. In another was grauen or wrought the lykenysse of the cytye of Rome/ & that he gaue to the bysshop of Reynes and to his chyrche. And the thyrd table of syluer, wherin was grauen the mappa mundi/ and the fourth of gold he gaue to his sonnes.

Many thynges there were and cause sys of the exaltyng of ỹ fame of this prynce. But among other one is specyally remembryd of myn authoure Gagwyne/that the kynge of Percye then rulynge a great parte of ỹ Orient/ sent vnto Charlis an ambassad honorable wyth many ryche presentis. Amonge the whyche was an horologe of a clocke of laten of a wonder artyfycyall makyng, that at euery oure of the daye and nyghte when the sayd clocke shuld stryke, images on horse backe apperyd out of sondry places, and after departid agayn by meane of certayne dyces.

He sente to hym also tentys of ryche sylke and balme naturall, with certayne Olyfauntys / requyrynge hym of ampyty and frendshyppe. And in lyke wyse dyd the emperour of Cō stantyne the noble/all be yt that he in his mynde was not well contentyd, that the pope had in ỹ wyse dyuyded the empyre, and sette suche a man of myghte

myghte in the rome therof.

Thys Charlis had dyuers wyues. But of the seconde named Eldegard he receyued .iii. sonnes/ that is to say Lewys, Peppyn, & Charlis/ ꝑ whyche Peppyn he made kynge of Longobardes or Italy, as before is shewyd.

Of thys great conqueroure what shulde I holde lenger processe? For lyke as I before shewyd/ of his notable dedys myght I make a great volume, yf I shuld of them shew the clenesse, and the circūstaunce of euery cōquest that he in his tyme acheuyd. But deth that is to all psones egall/ lastly toke hym in his dymme daūce, when he had ben kynge of Fraunce with his brother & alone .xl viii. yeres. Of the whyche he ruled the empyre as before is shewyth. xiiii. yeres, in ꝑ yere of his age as sayen the frenche cronycles .lxxii/ and was buryed at Aquisgrany wyth great pompe, in ꝑ yere of our lordes incarnacyon. viii. hundred and .xv. wyth this superscripcyon vppon his toumbe.

Caroli Magni christianissimi imperatoris Romanorū corpus, sub hoc sepulchro conditū est.

which may be englisshed as folowith.

Of Charlis the great and emperour moste crysten.

Of Rome, the bodye is hyd thys toumbe wythin.

Of the forenamed sonnes of Charlys suruyued ꝑ eldest Lewys by name/ and the other two Pepin & Charlys dyed, before theyr father.

Anglia.

THE .CLVII. CHAPITER.

Brigthricus of the blood of Cerdic? fyrst kyng of west Saxons descēdyd/ beganne hys regne ouer the sayd Saxons, in yere of oure lorde. viii. hundred and. lxxviii/ and the .x. yere of Charlis the great then kynge of Fraunce.

This before tyme hadde maryed one of the doughters of Offa kynge of Mercia, as before is touchyd/ by whose ayde and power he put out of hys rule Egbert the sonne of Alcumundus/ the whyche Egbert at that daye was an vnder kynge or ruler in the lordshyppe of westsaxon, whyche Egbert was descendyd of ꝑ blood of the holy Genulphus/ of whome some parte of the storyes declared in the .xxv. chappter of the .v. boke of Policronica. And after he was thus of Brigthricus expulsyd/ he saylyd into Fraunce, and there exercysyd hym selfe in featys of warre wyth the knyghtes of Charlys courte, durynge the lyfe of the sayde Brigthricus.

About the .ii. yere of thys Brigthricus, was sene in great Bryttayne a wonder syghte. For sodeynly as men walked in ꝑ strete/ crossys lyke vnto blood fell vppon theyr clothes, and blood fell from heuen lyke droppes of rayne.

This after some expositours/ betokened the commynge of the Danes into this lande, the whyche entryd shortely after. For as wytnessyth Polycronica, aboute the .ix. yere of Brigthricus the Danys fyrste entryd this lande. In defence wherof/ thys sayde kynge sent forth hys stewarde of housholde wyth a smalle company, whych shortly was slayn. But by the strength of Brygthricus and the other kynges of Saxons/ they were cōpelyd to voyde the land for that tyme and season.

Brigthricus thus well & knyghtly rulynge his land/ his wyfe named Ethelburga not wyth hym cōtentyd as she oughte to be, soughte dyuerse wayes and meanes how she myghte brynge her lorde oute of lyfe/ so that

fynally ſhe poyſoned hym wyth ma-
ny other of hys houſholde meyny.
wherfore ſhe ferynge punyſhement,
fledde into Fraunce / and by ſuche
frēdſhyppe as ſhe there hadde, was
well cheryſhed in Charlis courte ſur
named the great.

Of her yt is told, that whan he had
hadde ſome informacyon of the vn-
ſtablenes of this womans condycy-
ons / he at that ſeaſon beynge a wy-
dowar, vppon a ſeaſon in paſſynge
of the tyme wyth her / ſayde, nowe I
put to youre choyſe whyther ye wyll
haue me vnto your wedded lorde, or
ellys my ſonne ſtādyng here in your
preſence. And hym that you choſe /
hym ſhall you haue and enioye for
your huſbande. But ſhe chaſe ỹ ſon
and lefte the father. Then ſayde the
kynge / yf thou haddeſt choſen me,
thou ſhuldeſt haue hadde my ſonne.
But for thou haſte forſaken me thou
ſhalt haue nother of vs. And after he
cloſyd her in an abbey, where in pro
ceſſe a lewde man kept with her ſuch
company, that ſhe was voydyd that
place / and after demeaned her ſo vy
cyouſly, that in proceſſe of tyme ſhe
fell in ſuche pouerte, that ſhe dyed in
great penurye and myſerye. For the
whyche myſſe demeanure of this wo
man, that ſhe had innaturally ſlayne
her lorde and huſbande / the kyng of
Anglis and ſpecially of weſtſaxons,
wolde not ſuffer the wyues to be cal-
lyd Queuys / nor yet ſuffer them to
ſette by them in places of great ho-
nour or kyngely ſete by a long tyme
after. Thus as before is ſhewyd by
the impoyſonynge of his own wyfe,
dyed ỹ kynge Brigthricus / when he
had ruled ỹ weſtſaxōs after moſt con
corde of writers by the terme of .xvii.
yeres.

THE .CLVIII. CHAPITER.

EGbertus the ſonne of Alcumū
d⁹ as before is ſhewyd / began
hys reygne ouer the weſtſaxons in ỹ
yere of grace. vii. hundred. lxx. and
xv / and ỹ .xxvii. yere of Charlis the
great then kynge of Fraunce. Thys
as before is ſayde was dryuen oute
of the lande of Britayne by ỹ ſtrēgth
of Brigthricus. But he hauynge
knowlege of hys deth / ſpedde out of
Fraunce, and in ſo knyghtely wyſe
hym demeaned, that he obteyned the
regiment and gouernaunce of the a-
boue ſayde kynge.

Bernulphus kynge of Mercia had
this Egbert in deryſyon / and made
therof dyuerſe ſcoffys & iappynge ry-
mes, ỹ which he ſuſteyned for a time.
But when he was ſomdeale ſtablyſ-
ſhed, and hadde prouyd the myndes
and hartis of his ſubiectes / he laſtly
aſſembled his knyghtes, and gaue to
hym a batayll in a place called Elyn
dome, in the prouynce of Hampton.
And all be yt that in that fyght was
great dyuerſyte of nomber, as. vi. or
viii. agayne one / yet Egbert had the
victory. For his knyghtes were lene,
megre, pale, and longe brethed, ſo
that they myghte endure to fyghte.
But Bernulphus knyghtes were
fatte, corpulent, & ſhorte brethed / ſo
that they were ſoone ouercome with
ſwet and ſhorte labour.

Here is to be noted, that after the
deth of Offa kyng of Mercia or mid
dell Englande (of whome ſomwhat
is touched in the ſtory of Kenulphꝰ)
reygned his ſon Egfertꝰ / & after Eg
fertꝰ reygned Kenulfus or Kēwolfus
ỹ which Kenwolphus was father to
ỹ holy martyr Kenelme, & to. ii. fayre
dyrgyns Quindreda and Burgenul
da or Ermenilda. And after Kenwol
fus ſuccedyd the forſayd Kenelme /
and after Kenelme reygned Colwol
phus / and after hym ſuccedyd Ber-
nulphus before named.

Then to retourne agayne to Eg-
bert / the whych when he had as be-
fore

fore is sayd ouercome Bernulphus, he sealyd that lordshyppe into hys hande. And that done, he made warre vppon the Kentyshe Saxons/and at legth in lyke wyse of them obteyned victorye. And as wytnessyth Polycronica, he also subdued the Northumbrys/and caused the kynges of these thre kyngdomes to lyue vnder hym as trybutaryes or ioyned them to hys kyngedome as testyfyeth the authour of the Floure of hystories.

Thys Egbert also wanne from ỹ Brytons or walshemen the towne of Chester, that they hadde kepte possessyon of tyll that daye. For the whych victorys thus by hym obteyned/he shortely after called a counsayll of his lordes at wynchester/ and there by theyr aduysys crowned him kyng and chefe lorde of this lande, that to fore thys daye is called Brytayne/ and sente then oute into all costes of thys lande his commaundementes and commyssyons, chargyng strayt ly that from that day forthward, the Saxons shulde be called Anglys/ & the lande Anglia.

About the.xxiiii. yere of the reygne of Egbert, whyche shulde be the yere of our lord as meaneth Policronica viii.hundred and .xix. Kenelmus before mynded the son of Kenwolfus, was admytted for kynge of Mercia, beynge then a chyld of the age of. vii yeres. The whyche by treason of his syster Quendreda was slayne in a thycke wood, by a tyraunt callid Hesbertus/ and hys bodye after founde by a pyller of the sonne beame, or of lyght dyuyne that shone from his bodye towarde heuen. Jt ys also redde of hym, that a coluer bare a scrowle wryten in englyshe then vsed/ and lette yt fall from hys vppon the aulter of sayncte Peter in Rome/wherof the wordes were these. At clente in Cowbacch, Kenelme Kenebern lyeth vnder Thorne hewyd bewcupd. whyche is to meane in englyshe now vsyd: at Clent in Cow vale vnder a thorne, lyeth Kenelmus hedlesse slayne by fraude.

when this holy body was founde, and was borne towarde the place of his sepulture/ his forenamed syster entendynge some derysyon or other vylanye to be done to the corps, lenyd oute of a wyndowe where by the corps shulde passe. And to bryng her malycyouse purpose aboute, Jnote by what sorcery she ment / there she redde the psalme of the Sauter/ begynnynge Deus laudem, backward, But what so her entente was / she there incontynently fell blynde, and her eyen dystylled dropes of blood, that fell vppon the Sauter boke. The which in token of goddes wretche, in that boke remayne at thys daye to be sene. Of the holynes of thys martyr & of his vertue, ỹ legẽde of sayntes reportyth the surplusage.

Jn the.xxix. yere of the reygne of Egbert, or after the englyshe cronycle Edbryght / the Danys wyth a great hoste enteryd the seconde tyme thys londe, and spoyled the yle of Shepey in Kent or nere to kent. wherof herynge the kynge Egbert / assembled hys people, and met wyth theym at a place callyd Carrum. But he wanne of that fyghte lytell worshyppe/ for the Danys compellyd him and his knyghtes to forsake the felde. And by presumpcyon of ỹ victorye they drewe westwarde/and made a confederey wyth weste Brytons that liued in seruage. By whose power they assayllyd Egbertus landes, and dyd myche harme in many placys of hys domynyon and elys where / so that after thys daye they were contynuallye abydynge in one place of the realme of Englande or other, tyll ỹ tyme of harde

kynytus laste kynge of the Danys blood/ so that many of theym were maryed to Englisshe women, and many that nowe ben or in tyme passed were called englysshe men, are dyscendyd of theym. And all be yt that they were many and sondry tymes dryuen out of that lande, and chasyd frō one countrey to a nother, as after ye shall here: yet that not wythstādyng they euer gaderyd newe strengthes and power/ so that they abode styll wythin the lande.

Of the kynge of these Danys, and of what people they be dyscended, dyuerse opynyons of wryters there be/ whych now I passe ouer, for so mych as I entende to shewe somewhat of theym in this worke folowynge.

Then it folowyth in the storye, the tyme contynuyng of the persecucion of these forsayd Paganys and Danes, Egbert or Edbryght dyed/ whē he hadde well and nobly ruled the westsaxons and other the more parte of Englande, by the terme after most wryters of .xxxvii. yeres/ and was buryed at wynchester as sayth Guydo, and lefte after hym a sonne named Athenulphus.

Francia.

THE .CLIX. CHAPITER.

Odouicus ỳ fyrst of that name, and sonne of Charlis the great/ began hys reygne ouer ỳ realme of Fraūce, & also his empyre ouer the Romaynes, in the yere of grace .viii. hūdred and .xv./ and the .xx. yere of Egbertus then kynge of westsaxons. Thys for his mekenesse was callyd Lewys the mylde or meke.

In tyme of hys fathers decease he was occupyed in Guyan/ the whych he before tyme hadde the rule and domynyon of by commaundement of his father. But when he was aduertised of his faders deth, he anon sped hym toward Aquisgrani/ so ỳ ỳ .xxx. day after hys departyng out of Guyan he came vnto the forsayde cytye, where he was mette wyth all the nobles and barons of Fraūce. And fyrst or he medled or toke vpon hym any cure or charge of hys owne besynes/ he with most deuocyon caused great obseruaunces and mych dyuyne seruyce to be done aboute the sepulture of his father. whyche obseruaunce & prayers kynysshed and endyd/ ỳ sayde Lewes commaundyd to come before hym dyuerse ambassadours, that frō dyuerse prynces were sent vnto hys father Charlis, and to theym gaue answers concernyng theyr legacyōs and messagis/ and then proceded vn to the nedes of his realm for ỳ weale therof and of his people.

wherein he beynge besyed/ worde was brought to hym of an ambassad royall, ỳ was comen from Michael the emperour of Constantyne the noble. Agayne the whyche he sent certayne of hys lordes to receyue them/ and so wyth all honour to bryng thē vnto hys presence. Of whose commynge the entente was, to presente hym wyth certayne ryche gyftes, and to desyre hym of his amyte and frendshyppe.

Also soone after came vnto hym messengers from the Beneuētanys/ offerynge vnto his magnyfycence obligacyons and bondes to be his true lyeges, and to paye to hym yerely in way of trybute .vi. thousande ducates of gold. A ducate is of sondry valuys/ but the leste in value is .iiii. s. iii. d. ob, and the beste .iiii. s. vii. d.

Then the Soysons or Saxons that were so dyuerse of condycyon/

begānne

beganne to murmoure and rebell agayne this Lowys. wherfore or he wolde assemble any people agayne theym/ he sent thyder certayne persones to know ꝑ cause of theyr rebellyon. And when he was enfourmed, that yt was for the takynge awaye from them of certayne lādes and possessyons by hys father/ he then restored agayne the sayde landes/and so recouncylyd the countrey to his subiectcyon. For this dede some of his lordes grudged/ and sayde such myldenes was not to be vsyd to people of suche obstynacy and sterneſſe/ but to haue forcyd them by dynte of sworde to haue lyued in due obedyence.

In thys passetyme dyed pope Stephan the fourth of that name/ after whose deth was elected to that dygnyte the fyrste Pascall, wythout cō sente or knowlege of this Lowys, & somdeale to the dyscontentynge of his mynde & pleasure. But in shorte tyme after he receyued such wordes and presentes from the sayde pope, that he was well satysfyed and pleasyd. And for at those days in Fraūce was vsyd of prestes and men of the chyrche precyouse and shewynge vesture, and golden and riche starynge gyrdelles, with rynges and other ornamentes of gold/ the sayde Lowys purchasyd of the pope a correccyon for all suche as vsyd suche dysordynate apparell/ and causyd theym to vse and were browne & sad colours, accordynge to theyr honoures and sadnes.

This Lowys hadde thre sonnes, that is to saye Lothayre, whome he made felowe of the empyre / Peppyn the seconde, whome he made duke of Guyan / and Lowys the thyrde, to whom he betoke the rule of Bayton. To this yongeste sonne worde was broughte, that Bernarde a ruler in Italy had assembled a great power/ & wyth ꝑ aydes of two other captaynes named Jylys and Reyner, the whyche Charlis the great by his lyfe greatly fauouryd/occuppyd ꝑ strēgthys of the mountaynes, and entendyd to kepe the countrey of Italye from the subiectcyon of his father the emperoure. wherof he gyuynge his father knowlege/ strong power was gaderyd, as well by the father as by Lothayre his sonne, and sped theym towarde the mountayns. But when the sayde Bernarde was ware of the emperours commyng wyth so great a strength/and consyderyd his lacke of power to mayntayn his purpose/ wyth also the great mercy and pytye that he knew to be in the emperour: he submytted hym holy to hys grace and mercy, and dyscouryd to hym the authours of that rebellyon / the whyche thys Lowys causyd vnder safe keppynge to be hadde vnto the cytye of Aquisgrany. The whyche rebellys were the byshop of Mylayne, the byshop of Cremoun, and the byshoppe of Orleaunce.

The kynge passed all the wynter folowyng at the forsayde cytye/and lastely caused to be broughte before hym the forsayde transgressours, & exampned the cyrcumstaunce of the forsayd treason, and after rempted them to the rygour of Lowes/where by processe they were condemnyd to deth as many of them as were temporall men.

Then the emperour hauynge compassion of the forenamed Bernarde, for so myche as he was the sonne of Peppyn laste kynge of Italy, and his nere kynnesman/transmutyd the sentence of deth vnto perpetuyte of prysson and losynge of hys syghte. But for the sayde Bernarde, Reyner, and other, chase rather to dye thē to lyue in prysson wyth that deformyte / they passyd by dinte of the sworde, & were

beheddyd within or nere to the sayd cytye of Aquisgrani. And the sayde bysshoppes were deprysued of theyr dygnyteys & put into prysuate houses of relygyon.

And whyle thys Lewys was occupyed in lytell Bretayne, in subduynge of that countrey / Lothayre the eldest sonne of thys Lewys was sent to rule the lōdes of ꝑ empyre. where he bare hym ryght nobly, and executed dyuers actes for the weale of the empyre. But in thys season. ii. frendes of hys father and hys / were for certeyne crymes to them put, moste cruelly condēpned to vyle deth with in the cytye of Rome. wherof heryng Lothayre than beyng at the cytye of Papy, sent worde therof to hys father in all hasty wyse / the which was lyke to haue turnyd ꝑ pope to greate trowble, yf he by polytyke and wyse meanes had not shortly pacifyed the mater. That one of the forsayd two persones so condempned was scrybe to the pope, and that other was Donat.

ye shall vnderstande that thys Lewys hadde two wyues / by the fyrste he had the forenamed thre sonnes, and of the seconde he receyued a son and named hym Charlys / the which whan he came to mannes stature, was surnamed Charlys ꝑ bolde. He loued entyerly thys Charlys, & wold often kysse hym in the presence of his brethern. For the whych they enuyed theyr sayd brother / and also dysdayned theyr father as here after shall appere.

Thus in processe of tyme Lewys gaue vnto thys Charlys the coūtrey of Neustria or Normādy / the which causyd greate dyscencyon amonge the bretherne / and also for thys and other causes, Lotharius toke partye agayne hys father.

THE. CIX. CHAPITER.

Thys seconde wyfe of Lewys was named Judith / ꝑ which was accusyd to the pope to be within suche degre of allyaunce to hyr husbonde, that she myghte not lawfully contynewe hys wyfe. wherfore contrary to the wyll of Lewys, by the laboure of some bysshoppes & other lordes of Fraūce, she was deuorcyd from hym / and put into a house of nonnys, and there straytly kepte.

But Lewys for a tyme sustayned thys iniurys, to ꝑ ende ꝑ he myght know whyther his sonnes fauoured the cause or not. But in processe of tyme whan he hadde experyence of hys frendes / and of hys sonnes / he thā assembled to hym a strong hoste, and recoueryd hys wyfe malgre to all hys enmyes. For the whych dede Lothayre, wyth dyuers of the Barons of Fraunce, assemblyd theyr people / and entendyd to deprysue Lewys from all imperyall and kyngly dygnyte. wherfore Lewys ferynge hys sonne and hys assystens / & also for the entent that he myghte assemble the strength of ꝑ empyre: he rode vnto Maguncе. And after he hadde purueyed and garnysshed hys retynewe / he retornyd toward Fraunce, and met wyth some of hys enemyes and them subdued / and so kepte on hys tourney tyll he came to Aquysgrany, where he restyd hym and hys people.

Thus contynuynge thys dyssencyon / the sonnes sent wrytyng to the pope than beynge named Gregory ꝑ fourth, requyrynge hym of ayde and counceyle to deuyse a concorde and peace betwene theyr fader and them.

At whose request / and for to cause a naturall charyte to be quyckenyd betwene the father & hys. iii. sonnes / he came in hys proper persone into Fraunce

Fraunce, and endeuoꝛyd hym to the vttermoſte of hys wyttes to agree to the ſayd parties. In the tyme of this entreaty made by the pope / I can not ſaye foꝛ what cauſe, many of the loꝛdes / on the partye of Lowys foꝛſooke hym, and fled to the cõnys partye / ſo that the emperoure was in great feere of hym ſelfe, & of hys parſon. whan Lewys had ſeen his frendes thus in tyme of hys nede refuſe & flee frome hym, and lefte hym in great feere and daũger of ſtraũgers he than thoughte better foꝛ hym to put hym ſelfe vnder the Rule and tuycion of hys owne chyldꝛen, than to abyde the doute of the ſayde ſtraũgers. wherfoꝛe he ſent vnto his ſayd ſonnes / requyꝛynge theym to pꝛouyde foꝛ his ſafegarde and aſſurynge of his perſon, and that he were not there oppꝛeſſyd oꝛ murdꝛyd. And within ſhoꝛte ſpace after this meſſage ſent to theym without anſwere of them agayne receyuyd, he rode to warde theym ſmally accompanyed. where of than Lothayꝛe and hys bꝛother hauynge warnynge in all hombly wyſe encountred hym, and receyued hym vppon theyꝛ knees / and ſo cõueyed hym wyth all reuerẽce vnto theyꝛ pauylyon oꝛ tent. And after foꝛ a begynnyng of a peace to be ſtablyſſhed bytwene hym and them / he to ſatyſfye theyꝛ myndes, refuſed the foꝛenamed Jndith, and cloſyd her in a place of relygyon called Toꝛton, as teſtyfyeth myne authour mayſter Robert Gagwyne. But the Frenche boke ſayth that thys dede was done by Frederyke byſſhoppe oꝛ Utrẏke / where foꝛe he was after pyteouſly ſlayne by ſuch as fauoured ỹ quene / and not all wythout her conſent, as wytneſſyth the ſayd cronycle.

And whan Lewys had in thys & other thynges agreed vnto hys ſonnes / and thought hym ſelf to be in ſurete of theyꝛ ampte and fauours: ſo deynly he was cõueyed vnto the monaſtery of ſaynt Medꝛid / oꝛ as ſayth the Frenche boke he was conueyed to a towne called in Frenche Melangup, wyth hys ponge ſonne Charlys. And that done / the ſayd thꝛe ſonnes deuyded theyꝛ fathers poſſeſſyons amonge theym thꝛe. That is to ſaye Lothayꝛe the eldeſte, had to his poꝛcyon the londes of the empyꝛe / Peppyn, the countrey of Guyan / and to Lewys the yongeſt, fell the countrey of Bayon.

Whyche myſery of the emperour whan the pope had beholden & ſeen / he wyth greate moꝛnynge retoꝛned into July & ſo vnto Rome. In which tyme of pꝛyſonemẽt of the emperour the ſayd Lewys made dyteys & pyſtelles of greate ſoꝛowe and lamentacyon, to the enſample of all erthlye pꝛynces / and to the entent that hys ſonnes ſhulde of hym haue the moꝛe compaſſyon and pytye. The whyche I ouer paſſe foꝛ length of tyme / and the rather, foꝛ in tyme of pꝛyſonemẽt of Edwarde the ſeconde callyd Carnaruan was by hym made a lyke cõplaynt / where of when tyme & place comyth, I entende to expꝛeſſe ſome parte therof.

Whan Lewys had thus a ſeaſon remayned in pꝛyſon / foꝛ ſo mychе as the comons ſhulde not thynke that thys ſhuld be done by the authoꝛyte of ỹ thꝛe ſonnes onely: therfoꝛe they cauſyd a coũſayle to be callyd at the cytye of Compeyne / & there by theyꝛ meanes and labours cauſyd theyꝛ father by authoꝛyte of ſpyꝛytuall & tempoꝛall loꝛdys, to be diſcharged of all rule and dompynyon, as well of the empyꝛe as of the realme of Fraũce, by authoꝛyte of the ſayd coũſayle oꝛ parliament / and after cauſed hym to renoũce all hys tempoꝛall habyte, and to become a munke in the monaſtery of

ſtery of ſaynt Marke/where he was lefte of his ſonne Lothayre, not with out ſure watche and keppnge.

But full often it is ſeen, that whā the erthlye power of man faylyth or wekyth/god of hys greate mercy the repentaunt ſynner to grace callyth, & hym by hys dyuyne power aydeth and ſtrengtheth / and ſo he dyd thys Lewys. For after thys myſery and trybulacyon thus to hym fallen / the peple in dyuerſe placys of this londe murmured and grudgyd very ſore, agayne the vnnaturall dealynge of the ſonnes agayne theyr father.

In theſe dayes was a greate ruler in Fraunce named Guyllyam, & ſtuarde or conſtable of that lande/ þ which wyth one Egebard or Edgare a man of greate byrth and alyaunce, coũſayled togyder for the enlargyng of þ emperour. And laſtly wyth ayde of theyr frendes aſſembled a greate peple. And than drewe vnto them .ii. noble men of Burgoyne called Barnarde and Gueryn, the whyche ſome tyme had ben well cheryſſhed wyth the emperoure Lewys.

All thys ſeaſon Lothayre had reſtyd hym for þ more partye at Aquyſgrany. But whan he harde of the aſſemblynge of theſe foreſayd lordes, he ſped hym towarde Parys. And whan he was thyther comen/the fore ſayd lordes ſent vnto hym two noble men Rowlande and Gantelyne / the whych made requeſt vnto Lothayre in the name of the other lordes, that it wolde lyke hym to reſtore hys father vnto hys former dygnyte/wyth other thynges concernynge theyr legacyon. To the whyche two lordes Lothayre gaue anſwere, that of hys fathers reſtorynge to hys fyrſte or former dygnyte, no man lyuynge wolde be therof more fayne than he wolde. But þ depoſyng of hym was done by the hole authorȳte of þ land. wherfore yf he ſhulde be agayne reſtoryd/it muſt be by the ſame authorȳte, and not by hym onely. All be yt that they myghte knowe of hys benyuolẽce and fauour that he bare towarde hys father/ he wylled them to ſtonde a parte, whyle he had ſome cõmunycacyon of his lordes for þ ſame mater. By reaſon wherof were it fore or for fauour/the emperour was ſhortly after put at hys lybertye, and reſtoryd to all hys fyrſt honoure and dygnyte/ & than with great honoure conueyed to a cytye or towne called Ciriciake, where met wyth hym hys other two ſõnes Peppn and Lewys/ and there reſtyd hym certayne dayes in makyng all feeſt and ioye/and after rode vnto Aquyſgrany, and there reſtyd an other ſeaſon.

In whych tyme of hys there beyng/ was brought vnto hym from þ place where ſhe had ben priſoner, his wyfe Indyth. But whan Lotharij knewe that hys father had hyr agayne receyued contrary to hys mynde and pleaſure / he in wrath & dyſpleaſure entryd the countrey of Burgoyne/ & made in it ſharpe and cruell warre, & executed therin many ſpoylynges and other inordynate dedys. The whyche cruelty to wythſtande & let/ hys father wyth hys ſonne Peppn wyth a greate hoſte ſped hym thyder warde. But anone as he had knowlege therof/myſtruſtyng his strẽgth, he yelded hym vnto his faders grace and mercy/whom the meke fader receyued and forgaue to hym hys treſpaſſe.

And after that of hym and dyuerſe of hys lordes he had taken aſſuryd othes and other ſuretyes/he thã ſent the ſayd Lothayre into Italy with a certayne nomber of knyghtes, to defende the countrey from daunger of enemyes, and ſtrengthynge of the ſtraytes and mountaynes.

And

And that wyth other thynges orderyd and done for the weale of hys realme/Lewys than toke vpon hym to ryde about hys lande, to thentent that he myghte be somwhat enformed of the rule of hys offycers / and how the countreys were ruled by the rulers of them. And where he found any mysgouernaunce/he punyssyed the executers therof, as well ỹ bysshoppes as other, as farre as his authoryte in that behalfe stretchyd.

Than Jndith consyderynge the emperoure fell into greate age/ and hyr sonne and his Charlis by name, had as yet no suffycyent landes nor possessyons to maynteyne any estate wyth: she compassed many wayes in hyr mynde, how she myghte acheue hyr entent, and to bryngeit to good purpose. where fynally by counceyll of hyr frendes, to ỹ ende to purchase the loue and fauour of Lothayre/she ared of hyr lorde and husbonde, that the sayd Lothayre myghte be tutour and gyder of hys ponge sonne Charles. Of this requeſt ỹ emperour was very glad, and graunted hyr, hyr petycion. And so it fell soone after, certayne messengers came to the emperoure from Lothayre hys sonne. To the whych whan Lewys had gyuen answere to such maters as they were sent fore, and gyuē vnto them other instruccyons/he sent them forthe agayne, and with them certeyne other to wylle his sayd sonne to come vnto hym in as goodly wyse as he myght. But at that season he excusyd hym by sykenesse/and whan he was recouered he fayned an other excuse.

Jn thys meane tyme worde was brought to the emperoure, that hys sonne Lothayre had greued ỹ chyrch of Rome/and takyn from it certeyne possessyons. wherewyth Lewys beynge before amoued, sent vnto hys sonne/cōmaundynge hym in sharpe wordes, ỹ he shulde haue in mynde the othe before by hym made / & that he shulde in erchewynge his dysplea sure, make restytucyō of all thynges that he before hadde taken from the chyrch/ the whyche cōmaundement Lothayre promysed to obey in all wyse. And where Lewys was determyned to haue gone vnto Rome, to haue sene ỹ sayd promesse fulfylled/ & also to haue spoken wyth the pope for dyuers maters nedefull for the chyrche: he was lette by occasyon of Danes or Normannes, ỹ than had newly inuaded the lōdes of Fraūce/ the whyche he shortly after expellyd and droue out of hys londys.

And that done, the emperour rode vnto Aquysgrany/where by the frendes of Jndith & other of the nobles of Fraunce, the emperour gaue vnto hys yongest sonne Charlis a porcyō of ỹ empyre, whyche after shall more clerely appere. And soone after at a counsayle holdyn at Cirycyake, before namyd in the presence of his son Lewys/he gaue to hym the order of knyghthode, & adournyd hym wyth kynges clothynge.

And ouer all thys in the presence of many lordes of Fraunce/ he gaue to the sayde Charlys the hole countrey of Neustria that now is named Normandye. Of whyche honoure and gyftes though hys moder were ioyous and gladde / yet hys brother Lewys was therewyth nothynge contentyd, whyche of Jndith and of hyr frendes was well apperceyued and knowen. wherefore as she before tyme had done / than of newe she made request vnto hyr lorde and husband, that he wolde of hys moste especyall grace graunte vnto hyr, that Lothayre myghte haue the gouernaunce of hyr sonne Charlys/the whych of hym was the seconde tyme graunted. Vppon whyche graunte

thus

thus to her made/the emperour ſent vnto hys ſon Lothayre pleaſaũt letters, wyllyng hym in all goodly haſt to reſorte vnto hys court. The which obeyenge hys fathers commaundement/ retourned into Fraunce ſhortly after the receyte of the ſaid letters, and came vnto his father to the citye of Uernayſe, of whome he was ioyouſly receyued. And after he hadde a ſeaſon dwellyd with the emperour, he gaue vnto hym the coũtrey of Auſtracy/ the whyche countrey as ſhall after be ſhewyd in thys Lotharius ſtory, was after his name named Lorayne. But a parte of the ſayde prouynce or countrey that ſtretchyd towarde Hungrye / the ſayde Lowys gaue vnto his yongeſt ſon Charlys. And immedyatly after thys gyftes before many lordes confermyd/ the emperoure in preſence of the ſayd lordes, toke Charlys by the hande, and deliuervd hym vnto his brother Lothayre/ wyllynge and ſtraytly chargynge hym that he ſhulde take hym vnto his cure, and be to hym as curyouſe as he wolde be vnto hys own chyld, and to guyde hym and his poſſeſſyons, as the father ſhulde guyde the chylde. And to Charlys he commaunded that he ſhulde take & obey hym as his father, and loue and worſhyppe hym as his brother/ ꝑ whych vppon eyther partye was prompſyd to be obſeruyd. And ſhortly after the ſayd Lothayr with his brother Charlys, toke congy of father and mother, and returned agayn into Italy.

About this tyme dyed Peppyn the ſeconde ſonne of Lewys, and duke of Guyan/ the whych yf all ſhuld be expreſſyd, putte his father to great trouble and veracyon/ wherfore for hym was made the leſſe mournynge. This left after hym a ſon named Peppyn, of whome ſomwhat the ſtorye ſpeckyth after. But now I wyll retourne to Lewys the thyrde ſonne of the emperoure.

THE.CLXI.CHAPITER.

TRouth yt is that whẽ the yonger brother Lewys ſawe the bountye of his father ſo largely extende towarde hys two brethern, and to hym nothynge/ he was therwyth in his mynde greatly dyſcontent, all be yt that for the tyme he kepte yt ſecrete to hym ſelfe. But when he was departyd from hys father, and returnyd to his owne lordſhyppe/ he gadered a myghty power, and began to make warre vpon the dwellers nere about the Ryne. wherfore the emperour wyth a conuenyent power approchyd vnto the citye of Dodayng/ and ſent from thens vnto hys ſayde ſonne wordes of reconcylyacyon/ by meane wherof the ſayde Lowes put hym holy in the grace of hys father, and was to hym reconcyled without ſhedynge of mannys blood.

But whyle the emperour was beſyde at the citye of Cleremoũt in the countye of Auerne, to ſet a dyrection amonge the Gaſcoynes, for oppynyons that were reryd amonge theym for the ſonne of Peppyn there lately kynge or duke dyſceſſyd, whyche ſon as aboue is ſayde was alſo named Peppyn / and there about had taken great payne and labour: thyther to hym tydynges were newly brought, that hys ſayde ſonne Lewys hadde wyth ꝑ Saxons or Soyſons, & with the Thorynges made alliaunce/ and was entryd into Germany, and therin made warre in moſte cruell wyſe. wyth whyche tydynges Lowis was ſo greuouſly paſſyoned / that to hys great age was by meane of thys vnkynde anger, fyrſt a ſykenes that lefte hym not whyle he lyued.

After yet thys not wythſtandyng/ he lyke

he lyke a ſtrong hartyd knyght ſhewyd forth a good and comfortable cõtenaunce. And after he hadde in knyghtly wyſe prepared all thynge neceſſarye to the warre/ he ſpedde hym towarde Almayne, and contynued hys iourney tyll he came vnto Thorynge/where a ſeaſon he reſtyd hym and his people tyll he myght be better aſſuryd where his ſonne Lewys reſtyd hym. But the ſonne haupnge knowlege of the great power of hys father / and alſo beynge in deſpayre of purchaſynge of mercy, conſyderyng his many offences: fled by the cõtrey of Sclauony, and ſo by that coſtes retourned into Bayon or Bauery/ and ſo eſcapyd the daunger of hys father.

Then the emperoure beyng ſurely enformyd of the ſcape of hys ſonne/ helde on his iourney tyll he came to Magoũce. And after came vnto the cytye of Vermayſe / where he called a counſayle of his lordes ſpyrytuall and temporall, and ordeyned there dyuerſe thynges for the ſtate of the empyre. And more entendyd to haue done/ but ſykeneſſe increaſyd ſo ſore in hym, that by the ſpace of. xl. days he toke no temporall ſuſtenaunce. But in that tyme he vſyd often to take the bleſſed ſacrament/the which as he often ſayde, ſtrengthyd bothe the ſoule and the bodye.

Then he ſent for Lothayre to come vnto hym / the whyche wythoute taryenge obeyed his commaundemẽt, and abode ſtyll wyth hym.

Of this Lewys Policronicon maketh a ſhorte reherſall / and ſayth ỹ by his fyrſte wyfe named Hermyngarde, he had. iii. ſonnes/ Lothayre, Peppn and Lewys. The fyrſt beyng felowe with his father of the empyre, was crowned of pope Paſcall vpon an Eſter daye/and he was alſo kyng of Italy. And Peppn he made duke of Galcoyne and Guyan. And Lewys was made ruler of Bauary.

And by his ſecond wife named Jndyth and doughter of ỹ duke of Bayon, he hadde Charlis the Ballyd/to whome he gaue the countrey of Burgoyn as the ſayd Policronica ſayth. And for this Lewys was mylde/ he was often troubled of hys own men and of other, tyll he delte wyth them more ſharpely and wyſely, and ruled the people more ſtraytly.

Jt is there alſo ſhewyd, that when this Lewys had promotyd a yonge man named Frederyke to the ſee of Utryke / and to hym hadde gyuen ſadde and good exhortacyon, that he ſhuld folowe the ſtablenes of hys anteceſſours, and that he ſhulde purpoſe the ſothe and trouth wythoute excepcyon of perſones/ and punyſhe myſdoers, as well the ryche as the poore: the ſayde byſhoppe ſhulde anſwere to hym and ſaye, J beſeche thy mageſtye ſyr emperour to take in pacyence, that J maye dyſcloſe to the that thynge that hath long walowed & turned in my mynde. Say thy pleſure ſayd the emperour. J praye thy fyr emperour ſhewe me thy mynde/ whyther is more accordynge, to attame thys fyſhe here preſente fyrſte at the hedde or at the tayle. The emperour anſwered ſhortely and ſayd, at the hedde the fyſhe ſhall be fyrſte attamyd. So yt is lorde emperoure ſayd the byſhoppe, that cryſten fayth maye cauſe the to ceaſe of thyne erroure, that thy ſubiectes be not boldyd to folowe thy myſdoynge. wherfore fyrſte forſake thou thy vnlawefull wedloke, that thou haſte made wyth Jndyth thy nere kynnes woman.

By meane of thoſe wordes the kyng was reconcylyd, and lefte the company of his wyfe, tyll he hadde purchaſyd a lycence of the pope. And the

emperour forgaue the sayde bysshop all trespassys/ but the woman hyred two knyghtes that slewe hym in his vestymentes, when he hadde ended hys masse.

After thys the empresse was falsely accused of wronge cryme, and made a menchon. But the same yere the emperoure delyuerȳd her from that habyte, when he hadde sufficyently prouyd the sayde cryme to be false.

Then to retorne where I lefte/ whā this Lewys had longe lyen in thys agonyous sykenes, and knewe well that he amendyd nothynge/ but feblyd more and more/ he commaundyd his iewellys to be broughte before hym. wherof by hys owne hand he haue a parte vnto the chyrche of Rome/ and to Lotharius his sonne there presente he gaue his crowne & his sworde/ commaundynge hym straytly vppon his blessynge that he shuld haue in honour hys moder Iudith, & that to Charlis his brother he shulde owe true loue & ampte, & that he shuld hym & his lādes deffende to the vttermoste of his power.

Then the lordes spirituall and temporall, and specyally the archebysshoppe of Meaws/ made a lamentable requeste to the emperoure for his sonne Lewys, that he wolde accepte hym to his grace and mercye, and to forgyue hym hys insolente and wanton wylde dedys. wherof when the emperour harde/ he fell in suche weppynge, that he myghte not speke of a good whyle after.

And when he hadde refrayned hym therof/ he remembred to ȳ lordes the many and great benefytes ȳ he had done to hym, and the innaturall vnkyndnes that the sayd Lewys had a gayn shewyd vnto hym/ & how often tymes he had perdoned his vnkynd sonnes trespasse. And finally all this not withstandyng/ he was at ȳ oure in perfyte charite wyth hym, and forgaue hym as he trusted to be forgyuen/ prayenge the lordes there present, and specyally chargynge ȳ sayd bysshop, that he wold shew vnto hys sayd son that great daunger that he was in agaynst god for the displeasures done to him/ and specially that he was a cause of the abrygement or shortynge of hys dayes.

Then to brynge this story to effect, wherof yf I shuld declare the special tyes therof, wolde aske a longe tyme (for ye shall vnderstand that these .ii. storyes of the great Charlis and of this Lewys, occuppe in Frenche of leuys of great scantelyn ouer. lxiiii) wherfore I conclude ȳ he dyed lyke a good cryste prynce, when he had ben emperour of Rome and kynge of Fraunce by the terme of .xxvi. yeres/ and was buryed wyth great solemnyte at Meaws or at Mettis by hys mother Hyldegarde as sayth mayster Robert Gaguyne, in the yere of hys age .lxiiii. / leuynge after hym the forsayde thre sonnes Lothayre, Lewys and Charlys the Ballyd.

Anglia.

THE .CLXII. CHAPITER.

Deulpus or Ethelwolphus the son of Egbertus / beganne hys regne ouer the westesaxons or Anglys, in the yere of oure lordes incarnacyon .viii. hundred and .xxxii / and the xvii. yere of Lewys the mylde then kynge of Fraunce.

Thys in his youth was wyllynge to be

to be a preste, and was enteryd the order of subdeacon.

But there after by dyspensacyon of Pascall the fyrst of that name pope/ he was maryed to Osburga a woman of lowe byrthe. By whome he hadde foure sonnes/ that is to meane Ethelwalde, Ethelbert, Ethelbrede, and Alurede/ the whyche after theyr father reygned as kynges of Englād that one after that other, as after shall appere.

This Adeulphus after he hadde a certayne tyme ben kyng/ he went to Rome, and toke wyth hym his yongest sonne Alurede or Alphrede/ and taryed there by the space of a yere. In the whyche season he repayred the Saron scole/ the whyche before tyme was there founden by Offa kynge of Mercia, as Guydo sayeth and other / but more verely of Iue kynge of westsarons, as sayth the authoure of the Floure of hystoryes. And for that he graunted of euery house of his kyngdome a peny, as in his storye is before shewyd.

But this scole was sore decayed, and the house therof lately brent / the whyche this Adeulphus newely repayred, and sette yt in better order then yt before was vsyd.

This kynge also to refourme the grenouse correccyons that he sawe there executyd to Englyshe men for spyrytuall offensys, as in werynge of irons and gupues: he graunted of euery fyre house of hys lande .i.ō, as Iue foresayde hadde done. By the whyche sayenge yt shulde seme/ that by these two kynges shuld be grauntyd vnto Rome .ii.ō. of euery fyre house thorough theyr lande.

But that maye not be so vnderstande / for this Rome scot ys gaderyd of euery house a peny wythout more.

wherfore yt muste folowe, that yt is myssе taken of wryters, that allege this dede to that one kynge for that other. How beyt, yt maye stande by reason, that Iue made the fyrste graunte, and this kynge after confermyd the same. But the authoure of Cronica cronycarum sayth, that this Adeulphus graunted to saynte Peter these sayde Peter pens/ and spekyth no word of Iue nor of none other.

It is also shewyd of this kynge by Policronica/ that he shulde for the acquytynge of the chyrches of Englād of all maner of kynges trybute, payed yerely to Rome thre hundred markes. That ys to meane to saynte Peters chyrche a hundred markes / to the lyghte of saynt Paule a hundred marke/ and to the poppys treasorye a hundred marke. And ouer all this of hys pure deuocyon, he offred to god & to saynte Peter the .x. parte of hys moueable goodes.

And also one cronycler sayth, that this kynge founded fyrste the vnyuersytye of Oxynforde/ whyche was lykely to be done by Offa kynge of Mercia, for so myche as in his days flowred that famouse clerke Alcumus or Albinus/ the whych as sayth the frenche cronycle, was fyrste foūder of the scole of Parys and of Papya, as is before shewyd in ỹ story of Charlys the great, in the thyrd chapyter of the sayde storye.

when Adeulphus hadde thus sped hys besynes and pylgrymage at Rome, he retournyd by Fraunce / where at that tyme was kyng of that lande Charlys the Bailyd, of whom he was ioyously receyued. And after he hadde dysporyd hym there a season / he spousyd the doughter of the sayde Charlys, in the .xx. yere of the reygne of the sayde Adeulphus, as testyfyeth Policronica in the .xxx. chapiter of his .v. boke/ whych shuld

be the yere of the reygne of the sayde Charlis the.xi. But of this mariage is nothynge touchyd in the frenche cronycle.

Then Adeulphus takynge leue of the kynge/ toke shyppynge and landed in Englande wyth his wyfe Jndyth by name. And for that he contrary the law made in ỹ tyme of Brigthricus, sette his wyfe in the kynges crowne, and magnyfyed her lyke a quene/ the lordes of his lande arose agayne hym, and pullyd from hym a great parte of his domynyon, and made his eldeste sonne ruler therof. whyche all was done in reproche of Ethelburga, whyche slew her lorde Brigthricus as before is shewyd. Lastly the mater was appeasyd, and he to his kynglye honour restoryd.

About this tyme Bertulphꝰ kyng of Mercia, slewe wyckydly in the holy tyme of Penthecoste sayntе wylstone/whose holy bodye was buryed at Reppyngedō. And in ỹ place where thys holy wylstone was slayne stode a pyller of lyghte.xxx.dayes after.

And in the yere folowynge dyed the sayde Bertulphus. After whose deth, Burdredus was made kynge of Mercia or myddell Englande/ the whyche before tyme hadde spousyd the doughter of kynge Adeulphus.

Jn the later dayes of thys Adeulphus, the Danys dyd myche harme in Lyndesey, and also in kent/ and frome thens came to London, and robbed and spoyled the cytye. wherfore Adeulphus gaderyd his people, and lastely mette wyth them in Southerey vppon a downe called Oclea/ and there dyscomfyted theym, not wythoute shedynge of great plente of the Anglis blood, and forsyd them to take the see/ so that after they landed in eest Anglia as after shall appere. Then lastely dyed thys good kynge Adeulphus or Ethelwolphꝰ/ when he hadde ruled hys subiectes nobly by accorde of moste wytes fully .xxii.yere/and was buryed at wynchester, leuynge after hym four sonnys afore sayde.

Francia.

THE .CLXIII. CHAPITER.



Harlys ỹ yongeste son of Lewys the mylde/ began hys reygne ouer the chefe part of Fraūce, in ỹ yere of our lorde .ix. hundred &.xli/and the.ix.yere of Adeulphus then kynge of westsaxons/the whyche as before is sayd was surnamed Ballyd.

Anon as his father was buryed/ his brother Lothayre, to whome the father, as ye fore behaue harde, had cōmyttyd ỹ guydynge of this Charlys, by the entysynge of his brother Lewys malygned agayn this Charlis/ and sought many wayes to put hym from such landes as his father had gyuen hym. This sayd Lothayr was after the deth of his father emperour/and Lewys the yonger brother was duke or knyght of Bayon. But for Charlis was yongest, and had to his parte the pryncypall porcyon of Fraunce, whych was called myddell Fraunce/ therfore his.ii.bretherne & specially Lewys, malygned greuously agayne hym. wherof this Charlis beynge somdeale infourmed/ bare hym so wysely & so egally to his subiectes, that he hadde theyr loues and fauours/and trustyd alway by theyr good ayde thathe shulde be of power to wythstande theyr vnkynde malyce. And lyke as the hydde fyre in processe breketh oute and shewyth great lyght and flammy blase, euen so dyd

so dyd thys couerde malyce at the laste breke oute, to great ire and opē wrath. For after foure yeres was passyd / the sayde two bretherne with oute defyaunce or groundely cause of warre, assygned or assembled a great hoste / suche lyke before thys daye hadde not ben sene/and entryd the lymyttes of kynge Charlys.

Then Charlis assembled in all ȳ haste hys lordes/and requyred theyr aydes and counsayll to wythstande the malyce of hys bretherne. And when he hadde knowelege of theyr good myndes, anon theyr knyghtes were gaderyd and all thynge was redy to the fyghte.

Nowe in thys whyle the two bretherne wyth theyr peple were comen to a place callyd Fountayns or Foū tanet, where to Charlis spedde hym. And when both hostes were nere/eyther partye made prouysyon to subdue his enymye.

Then were the bataylles on bothe partyes orderyd & assygned to theyr standardes and capptaynes, and the wynges set to the moste auauntage. what shuld I lenger proceſſe of this ordynaunce make, fynally the shote of arblasters beganne on both sydes whyche ouer threwe many an horse and man/ and specyally the fore ryders, that putte theym selfe in prese wyth theyr longe and sharpe launcys, to wynne the fyrste brunte of the felde.

Pytye yt was to beholde the goodly bryght armyd knyghtes lyeg and walowynge wyth theyr great stedys in the felde, wyth dedly woundes gapynge agayne the son, ȳ were slayne at the fyrst encountre. But when the shote was spent, and the speres to shateryd/ then both hostes ranne to gyther wyth Rowlandes longe / so that in shorte whyle the grene felde was dyed into a perfyte redde. For there was heddes, armes, legges, & trunkys of ded mennys bodyes lyenge, as thycke as floures growe in tyme of maye in the flowrysshynge medowys / myserable and pyteouse yt was to beholde the persones halfe lyuynge and halfe ded/ with theyr gryesly woundes pyteously gronynge and cryenge wythoute comforte. So that there was shewyd all rygoure wythoute mercy, and all crueltyes wythout compassyon.

Thus duryd this mortall fyghte by a longe season/ that doutefull yt was to knowe whyche partye hadde thauaūtage of other. Howbeit Charlys was putte to an afterdeale by .ii. meanes. The fyrste was for so mych as Charlis entendyd to haue forborne, for the reuerence of the hygh feste as the daye of the ascensyon of oure lorde, & that daye not to haue foughten. And the seconde was, that he was farre lesse in nomber. whyche two causes of dysauaūtage not withstandynge/ yet in the conclusyon he wanne the honoure of that iourney. But not wythoute great losse of hys peple and many of the nobles of his lande/ where of the frenche boke reherslth the names. But for they be to vs vnknowen, I passe theym ouer. And as yet is testyfyed of many wryters/ there was slayne that daye mo Frencheman, then was slayn at any felde euer before that day. wherof the nomber is not expressyd / for yt was so great. Then Lothayre was forced to take Aquisgrany for his safegard, and Lewys ellys where. But Charlys wyth a small cōpany that to hym were lefte/ folowed his Bretherne, and cōstrayned Lothayre to forsake ȳ cytye, & thens to go vnto Lyon a cytye ȳ standeth at this day in the vtter most border of Fraūce, & after to Uyenne. To ȳ which cytye of Uyen shortly after came vnto hym hys brother

Lewys/ where they two assembled a newe hoste.

In the whych passetyme, as Charlis was comynge towarde hys bretherne/messyngers mette with hym, sent from his bretherne to comon of a peace. So that fynally he was accordyd, that the realme of Fraunce shulde be dyuyded in .iii, as the father had before dysposyd yt. That is to meane, Lothayr shuld enioy ouer the landes belongyng to the empyre the countrey of Austracy/ the whych in processe of tyme was called Lothayre or Lotharingia, whyche is to meane Lorayne after his name. And to Lewys shulde remayne the prouynce of Germany, wyth the costrey of Buyan or Benery. And to Charlys shulde remayne the countrey called myddell or cheke Fraunce, wyth the prouynces of Normandy & Burgoyne. whyche sayde myddle Fraūce is reportyd to be in space from ỹ Ocean of Brytayne to the ryuer of Mawze.

The whyche concorde thus fermely stablyshed and fynyshed/eyther of other toke theyr departynge, and resorted vnto theyr owne lordshyppes. But Lothayre dyed shortely after/ leuynge after hym thre sonnes, named Lewys, Lothayre, and Charlis. But this deth of Lothayre is not taken for temporall deth/ for yt is sayd ỹ he forsoke the trauayle of ỹ world, and became a munke at the abbaye of Pruny, and lyued there a solytary lyfe many yeres after.

THE.CLXIIII.CHAPITER.

Charlis ỹ Ballyd thus beyng in peaseble possessyon of the cheke parte of the realme of Fraunce, and guydynge yt wyth all sobernes and indifferēt iustyce/was well dread and also beloued of his subiectes.

In processe of tyme, as vpon .viii. yeres after that Lothayr abouesayd renouncyd the pompe of the worlde/ dyed fyrste Charlys the yongest son of the thre of the foresayd Lothayre. And after dyed Lothayre the second sonne/ so that the sayde Lewys onely surupued, whych was after his father enoynted emperour.

when Charlis kynge of Fraunce knewe certaynely of the deth of these two forsayde bretherne, and that without yssu/ anon he assembled his power and entred the prouynce of Austracy or Lorayne/the which his brother Lothayre hadde gyuen to Lothayre his sonne. And in shorte whyle after crowned hym kynge of that prouynce, wythin the chyrche of sayntc Stephan of the cytye of Meaws, cheke cyty of that lordshyppe & kyngdome. wyth the whyche dede Lewys his brother, and kynge of Germany and Bayon was dyscontentyd/ thynkyng hym selfe more rygthfull enheritour then Charlis, for so mychc as he was ỹ elder brother, and also brother to the fyrste Lothayre of father & of mother/ where as Charlis was but halfe brother, and by the fathers syde onely.

For this ỹ sayd Lewys sent to Charlys the Ballyd certayn messyngers/ gyuynge to hym monycyon that he shulde call to memory the couenauntes betwene theym before tyme stablyshed/and that he shulde not meddell hym nor haue to do wythin the landes of his cosyn lately deed, vnto such tyme as yt were determyned by theyr bothe counsayles, whyther of theym hadde the better ryght/ & this to be obserupd vppon payne of excōmunycacyon or cursyng.

But for to Lewys was well sene, that his brother Charlis nothyng abstreyned hym from the occuppenge of the forenamed countrey / he therfore

gaderyd

gaderyd an armye to warre vppon his sayde brother.

In the whych passe tyme Charlys toke to his second wyfe a woman named Rychent or Ricent/ the whyche he before tyme hadde vsyd as his cõcubyne or paramoure.

And soone after the Danys or Normans inuadyd the landes of Charlys/ the whych for that tyme he was fayne to appease & please wyth ryche gyftes and other pleasures.

Then Charlys receyued from his brother a seconde ambassade or message/ the whyche shewyd vnto hym excepte he wold voyde his knyghtes and strengthes, that he had sette and put in dyuerse places of the lande of Austracy, he shuld be sure to haue of his sayd brother an enymy/ and that in all haste he wolde entre his lande wyth great force and warre. wherupon was suche answere sente, that by both theyr agrementes the mater was hadde in suche cõmunycacyon/ that fynally yt was agreed that the sayde landes shulde egally be departyd betwene them. whyche conclusyon perfyted, Lewys wyth his people retournyd into Germany.

But yt was not longe after that Lewys repented hym of hys agrement / so that newe legacyons were made vppon both partyes/ and laste ly wyth myche payne newly agreed. After whyche agrement and accorde fynyshed/ Lewys the emperour and sonne of the fyrste Lothayre, sente an ambassade to both the fornamed brethern/ admonestynge and warnyng them that nother the one nor ỹ other shulde intermyt wyth the forsayde landes, for so myche as the ryghte therof belonged to him as next heyre to his brother/ and not to them that were a degre forther. The answere of this was deferryd by Charlys/ how be it his brother Lewis as sayth myne authour, gaue ouer his parte shortly after to Lewys ỹ emperour.

In this passe tyme Charlys the sonne of Charlis the Ballyd by hys fyrste wyfe, whome the father had made ruler of a countrey called Belge/ hadde rulyd hym insolently, and done in that countrey dyuerse outragyouse dedes. For the whyche he beyng cõplayned of, was brought vnto his father/ and so by hym commaundyd to pryson. But shortely after he was deliuerid at ỹ requeste of some nobles of Fraũce/ & kept after in his fathers courte, where he contynued but a shorte whyle. For wythin a lytle season after his father beynge at Lyons/ he departyd from ỹ sayde courte, and gaderyd to hym a wylde company of euyll dysposyd persons, and went agayne into the sayd countrey of Belge/ and dyd more harme then he had done before season / and so contynuyd a long whyle. But lastly he was taken and caste agayne in pryson/ where after longe punyshement he was reued of his syght/ and then sent vnto the monastery of Corbenyke, there safely to be kepte. But at length by the entycemẽt of his vncle Lewys kynge of Germany, and the treason of two mũkes of ỹ place/ he scappyd thens, and fledde vnto the sayd Lewys his vncle. In the which tyme Charlys his father was occuppyed in the defence of the Danys or Normannys, that then by strength had wonne the cityе of Angyers and done therein myche harme / whome the kynge closyd wythin the sayd cytye wyth a stronge syege, and fynally compellyd theym to seke meanys of peace at the kynges pleasure. After whych peace cõcludyd, and the sayd Danys auoydyd/ the kynge repossessyd the sayde cytye.

It was not longe after, that tydynges were brought vnto Charlis

of the deth of Lewys the emperoure. After knowlege wherof /the kynge sent hys other sonne named Lewys into Austracy, to haue the rule and ỹ guydynge of ỹ countrey. And after other thynges ordered for ỹ weale of hys realme/ he wyth a stronge company of men of armys passyd ỹ moũtaynes, and so into Italy towarde Rome. But Lewys hys brother and kynge of Germanye beynge therof warnyd / sent in all haste hys sonne Lewys wyth a stronge hoste to lette hys passage. But how it was for fere or other meane/the sayd Lewys yeldyd hym to hys vncle Charlys the Ballyd. wherewith the father beyng greuously dysplcasyd / sent hys seconde sonne namyd Charlõ, to withstande the passage of the sayd Charlys. But thys for fere or other cause that he sawe that he myghte not preuayle agayne hys vncle / retornyd hym agayne to hys father. After whose retorne, he for so mych as the sayd Lewys kyng of Germany well perceyued that hys brother Charlys was paste his daunger/he than with a more nomber ioyned vnto his sonnes hoste, entryd ỹ londe of Fraũce, in domagynge it to the vttermoste of hys power.

In whyche season Charlys the Ballyd kepte on his iourney toward Rome. wherof heryng the. viii. Johñ than pope/sent agayne hym certayn persones of honoure, and welcomyd hym as Augustus or emperour. And after hys comynge thyther the sayde pope receyued hym wyth greate reuerence/and crowned hym wyth the imperyall dyademe and denouncyd hym as emperoure.

THE .CLXV. CHAPITER

Charlys ỹ Ballyd thus beyng authorysed for emperour/exersyd hym for a tyme for the nedys of the chyrche of Rome / & after toke hys leue of the pope & retorned vnto Pappe a cytye of Italy. where he callynge a generall counceyle of the lordes of the empire & other/he by theyr aduyses prouyded and ordered dyuerse thynges for the weale of ỹ sayd empyre. And ouer that by theyr agrementes he ordeyned for hys lyeu tenaunt or debyte of the sayde empyre in hys absence, a noble man brother to hys wyfe recent named Besonne or Beson/and assygned to hym such people as was thought necessarye and conuenyent.

Whan Charlys had sped hys nedys in Pappe, he hyed hym into Fraunce. But or he came wythin the terrytory therof/word was brought to hym that hys brother Lewys was retorned into hys owne countreye, wythout greate domage done to the realme of Fraunce.

In processe the emperoure came to Parys/ where he was receyued of the cytesens wyth moste tryumphe & ioye / and kepte hys Eester tyde at sayncte Denys.

It was not longe after that Charlys was thus returnyd into Fraũce/ but that he receyued messengers frõ hys brother kynge of Germany, the which in his name claymed his part of the empyre as hys ryghte and enheryptaunce. whiche answere for that tyme was deferryd with pleasaunte wordes/ so that at the nexte worde ỹ he hadde from his sayd brother, was that he was dede and buryed in the chyrche of sayncte Nazer in Frankebought. wherof whã Charlys was ascerteyned, anone he yode vnto Foũtenays / and sent hys messengers to the lordes of the countrey, commaũdynge them that they shulde meete hym at the cytye of Mettes.

Thys forsayd Lewys lefte after hym two sonnes named Lewys and

Charlon

Charlon as before is towched / the whych deuyded bytwene them theyr fathers patrymony / so that Lewys had Germany, and Charlon hadde Bayon.

Thys Lewys ferynge hys vncle Charlys/gadered to hym a stronge power of Saxons and of Thorynges. And in the tyme of theyr assemble/he sent an ambassade of certeyne bysshoppes & temporall lordes vnto hys vncle Charlys, prayeng hym of hys loue and fauour/wyth other requestes to hym made, of the whyche they myghte purchase no graunte. wherof whan they were retorned he haupnge by them knowlege/ŷ sayde Lewys incontinently wyth his hoste drewe nere vnto the Ryne. But thys Lewys was not so couert i his worke and assemblynge of hys people / but that hys vncle had therof wyttynge, and purueyed hys people as faste vpon that other syde/ so that he wyth an hoste was redy to fyghte with the sayd Lewys.

whan Lewys was ware of ŷ great power that the emperour hadde assembled, he made no haste to passe ŷ water/but houed and caused his people to falle vnto prayer. And Charlys also ferynge hys neuewe/ vnder a colour sent alegacyon of entreaty. Durynge the whyche entreaty / the emperour contrary to hys honoure, led his peple by a secrete waye thynkyng to haue fallen vpon his neuew sodeynly, and by that meane to haue dystressyd hym. But Lewys beynge ware of hys vncles treason / prouyded so for hys peple, & kepte them in suche araye, that they receyued theyr foo men vpon theyr speres poyntes & to theyr great damage. For where the greate rayne and tedyousnesse of the harde and strayte wayes, whych they hadde passyd, hadde sore tyred and weryed them: than the freshe fyersnesse of theyr enemyes, whyche they thoughte they shulde haue take sleppnge and vnpurueyed, abasshed the in such wyse that they were soone ouercomen, and fled from the felde as shepe fle fro the wolfe. By meane of the whych fyghte great slaughter of them was made/& many nobles & greate estates of Fraūce both slayne and taken prysoners/ and the emperoure hym selfe scapyd wyth greate daunger. And of the prysoners that were take they were so nere spoyled/ ŷ they were fayne to take vyne leues to couer wyth theyr secrete membres.

ye shall vnderstand ŷ thys warre bytwene the emperoure Charlys the Ballyd and hys brothers sonne Lewys/was for the prouynce of Austracy or Lorayne, the whyche somtyme belonged to the emperoure Lothayr and halfe brother to Charlys. The whych countreye after thys batayle, was by medyatours set in an order.

Than the emperoure wyth great trauayle came to a town called Tygny. And Lewys kepte hys waye to Dandonyquyke/and from thens to Ayes the chapell.

In this whyle the Danes or Normans knowynge that Charlys was occupyed in the warre agayne hys neuewe/ apparayled them a stronge hoste, and entred ofte the landes of Fraunce. But for Charlys was at ŷ tyme letted wyth chargeable busynesse / he therfore sent a noble man agayne them called Comarde, vnto the ryuer of Sayne, to wythstande the sayde enemyes. And also to hym was gyuen counceyle, to haue wyth them cōmunicacyon to make a peace yf he myghte.

And to thys trouble immedyatly was ioyned another. For i this tyme and season a cytye belongyng to the chyrch of Rome rebellyd. wherfore to wythstand theyr malyce/the pope than

than beynge Johñ the. viii. of that name, sent messengers to Charlys for the defence of the sayd lõdes and other. And soone after the pope for to haste the sayd emperoure, or ellys to quycke̅ his deputye before named to assemble the Italyans and other people there adioynaũt/came downe to the cytye of Pappe, & taryed there the emperours compynge.

Charlys thã beset with trowbles/ assembled hys knyghtes & sped hym towarde Italy. And whan he was passyd the mountaynes/ worde was brought to hym of the popes beynge in Papy/wherfore he sped hym thyder with all dylygence.

In thys tyme & season Charlone the brother of Lewys and sonne of Lewys kynge of Germany/ whyche Charlone as before is shewyd was duke of Bayon or Bayory/ gaderyd a stronge hoste, and entred the bounes of Italy. wherof herynge ỹ pope and the emperour, than (as before is sayd) beynge at Pappe, busyed in a great counceyle/ dissolupd the same. And the pope incontynẽtly toke leue of the emperour/ & departyd agayne to Rome. And Charlys wyth a great power that he had gaderyd, as well of Italyans as of hys owne people/ made towarde hys neuewe. wherof herynge the sayde Charlone/ turned agayne by the waye that he had comen, tyll he came to hys owne countrey, as sayth myne authour & also ỹ French boke. But more verely Charlone keppyng togyther hys hoste, and haupnge fauour of dyuers lordes of Italye/ the emperoure Charlys remouyd to ỹ cytye of Mantue/where he was grudged wyth a feuer. For remedy wherof he toke a pocyon of a physycyon Jewe named Sedechias, whyche was intoxicat/ by meane of whych venemous pocyon he dyed shortly after whan he hadde reygned as kynge & emperoure after moste accorde of wryters, by ỹ space of. xxxbit. yeres, wherof he reygned as emperoure. iii. yeres/ leuynge after hym a sonne named Lewys, whyche as before is shewed was ruler of the coũtrey of Austracy or Lorayne.

Whan thys Charlys was dede/ hys frendes entendynge to haue caryed the corps into Fraunce/ causyd it to be seryd and enoynted wyth tyche and precyous bawmes, and other oyntmentes and aromatykes. But all myghte not stoppe the intolerable ayre of hys body/so that they were fayne to bury hym at Vercyle, wythin the monastery of saynt Euseby. where he laye ouer. viii. yeres after/and then taken vp and conueyed to saynt Denys in Fraũce, and there honorably buryed.

THE .CLXVI. CHAPITER

In the tyme of thys Charlys the Ballyd, as wytnessen many wryters, began the erledome of Flaunders / the whyche euer before these dayes, the ruler therof was called the forester of the kynge of Fraũce. whyche erledome had hys begynnynge by thys meane.

ye haue harde before in the story of Adeulphus kynge of westsarons/ how in hys retornynge from Rome, he maryed the doughter of Charlys ỹ Ballyd named Judith. The which Judyth after the deth of her sayde husbonde retornyd by Flaunders towarde Fraunce/ thynkynge to passe wythout daunger, bycause the sayde countrey was vnder the obedyence of her father. But at those dayes was ruler or forester in that partyes a noble yonge amerous man callyd Bawdewyne / the whyche herynge of the great beautye of thys Judith, gaue attendaunce vppon her. And receyued her in hys best maner, ma-

kynge

kyng to her all the chere that to hym was possyble/and fynally cast to hyr suche loue, that whan she supposed to departe and to haue gone into Fraunce/he delayed the mater in suche curteys and wyse maner, that he wan such fauour of her, that she made no greate haste to departe frome hym / all be it that moste authours agre, that he kepte hyr perforce.

Whan Charlys hadde wyttynge that Bawdewyne thus helde hys doughter Jndith / he sent to hym, straytly chargynge hym to sende home hys doughter/but that holpe not the mater. Thā he purchaysyd agayn hym the censures of holy chyrch, and accursed the sayd Bawdewyne. But whan the kynge conceyued that the ponge man hadde suche loue to Jndyth that he sette not by that punysshement/and also was certeynly enformed that hyr harte was gyuen vnto hym: he in processe by ỹ meane of some bysshoppes and frendes of the sayd Bawdewine, agreed that he shulde take hyr to wyfe / and in the name of hyr dowar, he shulde holde and enioye the sayd countre of Flaū ders. And for he wolde haue hys doughter to be the more honoured/ he creatyd the sayde Bawdewyne an erle, and commaunded hym to be called after that daye erle of Flaūders.

Jt is also shewyd in the Frenche cronycle and of other wryters / that thre dayes before hys deth, hys spiryte shulde be raupshed from hys body, and vnto places of payne and turment/where thys Charlys by the ledynge of an aungell, shulde se hylles and mountaynes brenne, & pyttes full of sulphyr, pytche, and hote boylynge lede. Jn whyche paynes the sayde Charlys shulde se many of hys progenytours and bysshoppes, that counceyled prynces to debate or stryfe, or gaue counceyle to them to rayse of theyr subiectys vnlefull taskys or imposeycons / wyth many other thynges, whyche J passe ouer for lengthe of the mater.

Anglia.

THE. CLXVII. CHAPITER.

EThelwaldus or Ethelwoldus ỹ eldeste sonne of Adculphus, began hys reygne ouer the weste-sarons or ouer ỹ more partye of Englande, in the yere of our lorde viii. hundred and. lv/and the. x. yere of Charlys the Ballyd than kynge of Fraunce. The whyche became so vnhappy/that he maryed ỹ woman whyche hys father hadde somtyme kepte or holden for hys concubyne, as wytnessyth ỹ authour of ỹ Floure of hystoryes. But Polycronycon sayth that he wedded his stepmoder/ whyche dyssacordyth wyth the sayenge of other wryters, which testifye his stepmoder to be maryed to Bawdewyn erle of Flaūders, as in ỹ story of Charlys last before is shewyd.

Thys Ethelwolde though it be not expressyd by what hap he dyed, whan he hadde reygned one yere, as sayth Polycronyca. But another cronycle beryth wytnesse, that he was slayne as a martyr, of Hungar and Hubba prynces of Danys.

About thys tyme the holy kynge saynt Edmund cōtynued his reygne ouer the Eest Anglis or Norfolke.

THE. CLXVIII. CHAPITER.

EThelbertus the seconde sonne of Adculphꝰ/began his reygn ouer the more partye of Englande, in the yere of our lorde. viii. hundred lvi/& the. xi. yere of Charlis ỹ Ballid than

then kynge of Fraunce. In whose tyme the Danys wyth moze stregthes entred ỹ west part of this land/ and robbed and spoyled the coũtrey befoze theym tyll they came to wynchester/ & toke the cytye by strength, and dyd therin what they wold. But the kynge made suche prouysyon / that by hym & his dukes they were fozcyd to fozsake the cytye. And as they yode toward theyr shippes/they were fought wyth, and a great parte of theym slayne and taken.

Of this kynge is nothynge ellys lefte in memozy moze then befoze is shewyd / but that he dyed when had regned after moste wzyters. vi. yeres/and was buryed at Shyzborne, leuynge after hym none yssu of hys body. wherfoze the rule of the lande fell to his bzother Ethelzede.

THE.CLXIX.CHAPITER.

Ethelzedus the thyzde sonne of Adeulphus / beganne hys regne ouer the west Anglis and the moze parte Englande, in the yere of our lozde .viii. hundzed &.lxiii/& the xviii. yere of Charlis ỹ Ballyd then kynge of Fraunce.

In the begynnyng of this kynges regne, the Danes landed in eest England oz Nozff. and Suff. But they were compellyd to fozsake that countrey/ and so toke agayne shyppynge and saylyd nozthwarde, and landed in Nozthumberlande. where they were mette wyth of the kynges then there reynynge callyd Osbzyghte and Ella / whyche gaue to theym a stronge fyghte. But that not wythstandynge the Danys wyth helpe of suche as enhabyted ỹ countrey, wan the cytye of yozke, and helde yt a certayne of tyme.

Then the people of Nozthumberland baryed with in them self/& had moze leuer ayde the Danys then to regne vnder the kyng of westsaxõs. Foz here is to be notyd that all such kynges as regned there after Egbert, whyche as befoze is sayde subdued that prouynce and other / regned as trybutarys to the kynge of of westsaxons oz Anglys.

wherfoze Ethelzedus herynge of the auauntage that the Danys then had, assembled his people and sped hym thytherwarde / and sente vnto the fozesayd two kynges, commaundynge them also to prepare theyr peple agaync hys cõmynge. But howe yt was oz the kynge came wyth hys hoste / the Danys so prouokyd the Nozthumbzes to batayll, that they met in playne feld & foughte a longe batayll. But finally the Danys wan the pryce/and slew both the fozesayd kynges wyth a great multytude of theyr people.

After whych vyctozy they subdued myche of the sayde countrey, and destroyed ỹ town of Aklynt oz Aclynd/ the whyche, as testyfyeth Beda, was somtime one of the stongest townes of the Nozthe.

when Ethelzede hadde prepayryd all thynge foz the warre / and was purposyd towarde the Nozth, foz cõsyderacyon afozesayde: wozde was bzought vnto the sayde kynge Ethelzede of the dyscomfyture of the Nozthumbzes/and also of dyuerse of the sayde Danys wyth other that were comen to Mercia, and hadde wonne the towne of Snotyngham oz Notyngham / whyche tydynges lettyd hym of his fozth spedde in that tournay. But thys sayenge is dysagreable vnto Policronicon. Foz he sayth that the Nozthumbzes were yet of theyr kynge Osbzutus oz Osritus after some authours/and chase vnto thẽ a tyzaunt named Ella/by meane wherof great dissensyon grew amõg them

them to the great hurte of the countrey. But when the Danys hadde passed the countre, and wonne the cytye of yorke, that then was feebly wallyd: then by constraynte and offere, for the defence of theyr coūtrey, they were fayne to agree and to gather strengthe on all sydes / so that bothe the forsayde kynges went agayne the forsayd Danis, and both were slayn. After whych scomfyture the people as desolate / some fledde the countrey, and some made peace wyth the Danys, and lyued vnder theyr tuycyon. And so the Danys kepte the possessyon of that coūtrey / in suche wyse that no Angle hadde rule therof, tyll the time of Adelstone or Ethelstone, or after some wryters tyl the tyme of Edredus / so that they helde the possessyon therof ouer the terme of.lx. yeres.

Then the Danys beynge thus possessyd of the Northe conntrey / manned the same, & fortyfyed the stronge holdes therof. And the other of them came downe into Mercia or myddell Englande / and wanne a parte therof wyth the forsayde towne of Nothyngam / and dwellyd there ȳ more parte of the yere folowynge.

Wherfore kynge Ethelfrede wyth ayde of Burdredus then kynge of Mercia, layde seage vnto the towne. The whyche when the Danys perceyued shulde be wonne / they refusyd the towne, and toke the towre or castell, and defendyd yt in so stronge maner, that they helde yt tyll a peas or apoyntement was concludyd betwene the two kynges and theym. whyche was that they shulde go free where they wolde, and carye wyth theym theyr horse and harnesse wyth out any pyllage. And whē this peace was thus made, eyther of the kinges departed to theyr owne / and the Danys retourned vnto yorke, & dwelled there the yere folowyn ge.

And the yere folowynge that sayde yere / a parte of the sayde Danys takynge shyppynge in the Northe, entendynge to sayle towarde eest Englande / mette in the see wyth a flote of Danys, wherof the captaynes or ledars were named Hynguoar & Hubba. The whyche by erhortacyon of the other commynge oute of the North / made all one course, and lastly landed in eest Englande or Norfolk / and in procesſe of time came vn to Therfore.

Therof herynge Edmundus then kyng of that prouynce / assembled an hoste, that gaue vnto them batayll. But Edmūde and his hoste was forsed to forsake ȳ feld / & the kyng wyth a few persones fledde vnto the castel of Framlynghā or Framyngeham / whome the Danys pursued. But he in short whyle after yelded hym selfe vnto the persecucyon of the Danys. And for this blessyd man Edmunde wolde not renye or deny Cryste and hys lawys / they therfore moste cruelly bonde hym vnto a tree, and causyd hym to be shot to deth / and lastely causyd his hedde to be smytten from the body, & caste amonge the thycke of the bushes. But when his frendes came after to burye this holy treasoure and lacked the hed, and made for yt busy serche / the hedde beyng in the clawys of a wylde wolfe spake, & sayde thre tymes dystynctely, here, here, here. By reason of whyche speche they came vnto ȳ place where the hedde in the sayde bestys keepyng laye. whyche sayde wolfe contrarye to his kynde / anon as he sawe the people, fledde from the hedde and suffred theym to take yt vp / and folowyd theym after a certayn of tyme as he hadde ben tame.

Then they wyth great solempnyte caryed the body and hed vnto Egly-

don or Eglysdon now callyd sayntе Edmundes bury / and there buryed hym, aboute the yere of our lorde as wytnessen Policronica, Guydo, and other, viii.hūdred.&.lxix/ as before it is shewyd in ỹ chappter of this worke foure score &.xvi, for whom dayly god shewyd there many miracles.

THE.CLXX. CHAPITER.

When this blessyd Edmūde was thus martyred for the loue that he bare towarde his mayster Crisste and his lawes/his brother named Edwoldus settynge a parte the lykynge and pleasure of the worlde, all be yt that to hym belongyd the ryght of that kyngdome, toke vpon hym the habyte of an herempte, and lyued onely by brede and water at the abbay of Cerñ in the countye of Dorset/ by the clere welle that sayntе Austyne by his prayers made to spryngе, when he conuertyd fyrst the Saxons of that prouynce to ỹ fayth of Crysste.

Of this said abbay of Cerñ, Policronica sayth ỹ it was after these dayes ryche and ryght welthy. But the gouernours therof myspent the patrymony therof in excesse glotony, & not amonge the seruauntes of god.

Wherfore he sayth farther, that couetyse and pryde hadde so chaūged all thyng in England in these days/ that all thynges that before tyme were gyuē to abbays, were then more wasted in glotony and outrage of the owners, then in sustenaunce and ayde of nedy men and of gestes or nedy waygoers. Albe yt he sayth the fyrst doers or gyuer lose not theyr rewarde. For theyr wyll and entent is full euenly payed in a balaunce, before hym that is the rewarder of all good. But though Treuysa ỹ was the translatoure of this boke of Polycronycon out of laten into our vulgare tunge/ reporte this to be done, or thys mysorder to be vsyd in thys dayes, whyche lyued in the tyme of that honorable prynce Edwarde the thyrde/ yf he now lyued, he wold not in no gouernours of munkes blacke or yet whyte, laye no suche outrage. For nowe at these dayes pryde and glotony is clerely banysshed frō theyr monasteryes and cellys / and in the rome of pryde wyth hys frende dysobedyence, haue they nowe lodgyd humblyte with his suster obedyence. And in the stede of glotonye and vncleneesse of lyuynge / haue they nowe newely professyd them vnto all chastyte, temperaunce, abstynence, auoydynge all slowth and idelnesse/ and exercyse theym in gostely studye and preachynge of the worde of god wyth all dylygence. So that nowe the holy rulys & ordynaunces made by that holy father and abbote sayntе Benet, which by ignorauūce haue lōg tyme slepte / nowe by grace of good gouernaunce are newely reuyued and quyckened. And here and ende, lest I be accused of dyssymulacyon.

Then to retourn vnto the Danys, from whome I haue made a longe dygressyon / trouth yt is that when they hadde as before is sayde, martyred the blessed man Edmunde, and robbed and spoyled that countrey/ and they toke agayne theyr shyppes and landed agayne in Southerye/ and there contynued theyr iourney tyll they came to the towne of Redynge, and wanne the towne wyth the castell.

Policronyca sayth ỹ the thyrd day of theyr thyther cōming/ Hingwar & Hubba as they wente in purchasyng of prayes, were slayne at a place called Engelfelde. whyche prynces of Danys thus slayne/ the other dele of theym kepte hole to gyther, in suche

wyse that the weste Saxons myght take of theym none auauntage. But yet wythin few dayes after the Danys were holden so shorte, that they were forced to yssue out of the castell, and to defende theym in playne batayll. In ꝑ whych by cõforte of kyng Etheldrede and of Alurede his brother/ the Danys were dyscomfyted, and many of theym slayne. wherof the other beynge ware / fled agayne to the castell, and kepte theym wyth in the same a certayne of tyme.

Then the kynge cõmaunded Etelwold then duke of Baroke or Barkshyre, to attende wyth hys peple vpon that castell / & to se that the Danys breke not oute at large while he went in other costes of that countrey to subdue other of the sayde Danys But when the Danys knewe of the kynges departure/ they brake out so daynly anon of theyr hold, and toke the duke vnpurueyed & slewe hym and myche of hys people / and caused the other to with drawe them farther from that towne or castell.

Then these Danys drewe them to other that were theyr lordes in that coũtrey/ and enbatelled them in such wyse, that of theym was gatheryd a stronge hoste.

It was not long after duke Ethelwolde was slayne, but the kyng was ascertayned therof. The whyche renewed his heuenesse, and made hym full heuy/ to consyder the losse of his frende, and the encreace and multyplyenge of his enymyes. For ꝑ daye before reporte of these tydynges as affermeth an olde cronycle / worde was brought to hym of the landyng of a Dane named Olryk, whyche of Policronyca is named kyng of Denmarke. The whyche in shorte tyme after with assystence of the other Danys / hadde gaderyd a great hoste, and were enbatellyd vppon ashe downe. To this batayll Alured was forced by great nede to come before his brother the kynge, that then was herynge of a masse wyth great deuocyon, not knowynge of that hasty spede of his brother. where ꝑ kynge thus beynge in hys medytacyons/ ꝑ hostes of Anglys and Danys strake to gyders wyth houge byolẽce. And how be yt the Danys hadde won the hyllande & ꝑ crysten men were in the valley / yet by grace and vertue of ꝑ kynges holy prayers and manhode of theym selfe, they at length wanne the hyll of the Danis, and slew theyr duke or kynge called Olryke, or after the englyshe cronycle Oleg, and fyue of theyr dukes, wyth myche of theyr people/ and chased ꝑ other dele vnto Redynge towne.

Wherfore the Danys resembled theyr people, and gathered a newe hoste/ so that wythin .xv. dayes they mette at a towne called Basynge Stoke/ and there gaue batayll vnto the kynge, and hadde the better.

Then the kynge gatheryd his people, the whych at that felde were chaced & dysparklyd/ and wyth freshe soldyours to theym accompanyed, mette the Danys within two monethes after at a towne called Merton/ and gaue to theym a sharpe batayll, so that myche people were slayn as well of the crysten as of the Danys. But in the ende the Danys hadde the honour of the felde/ and the kynge of Anglys was wounded, and fayne to sauegarde hym selfe by polycy when myght fayled.

After these two feldes thus won by the Danys/ they obteyned great cyrcuyte of grounde, and destroyed man and chyld that to them were inobedyẽt. And chyrches and temples they tourned to vse of stables, and other vyle occupacyons. And to this sorowe was added an other.

for where the kyng hoped well to re
couer his losses by ayde of his subiec-
tes, as wel of other ptes of his land
as of hys owne of westsaxon / when
he hadde sent his commyssyons into
Northumberland, into Mercia, and
eest Anglia: He had of them small or
lyteil comforte / so that the coũtre of
west Saxon was brought in great
desolacyon. For the kyng was beset
wyth enymyes vpon euery syde/and
ouer that his knyghtes and soldy-
ours were tyred & palled wyth ouer
watche and laboure. whyche many-
folde aduersytyes and troubles syn-
kynge in the kynges mynde / wyth
brose or hurte ensuyng of the woũde
before take at ỹ batayll besyde Mer-
ton, shortened his dayes / so that he
dyed when he had reygned in great
persecucion of the Danys after most
wryters. viii. yeres, wythout yssue of
his body. By reason wherof the rule
of the lande fyll vnto hys brother
Alurede.

It is wytnessyd of some cronycles
that not wythstandynge the great
trouble and veracion that this kyng
Ethelbrede hadde wyth the Danys,
he founded the house or college of
chanons at Exeter, and was bu-
ryed at the abbaye of wynbourne or
wobourne.

THE. CLXXI. CHAPITER.

ALuredus the. iiii. sonne of
Adolfus & brother to Ethel-
bredus laste kynge, beganne his rey
gne ouer the westsarons and other
prouynces of Englande, in the yere
of our lorde. viii. hundred & lxxii/and
the. xxxi. yere of Charlis forenamed,
then kyng in Fraunce. This Alured
or after some wryters Alphred was
xii. yere of age or he were set to scole.
But for all that he spedde so well his
tyme, that he passed his brother and
other that were long set forth before
hym. And by the counsayll of Neot⁹
or Not⁹/he ordeyned the fyrst gram
mer scole at Oxenford, & other free
scoles, and fraunchaysyd that towne
wyth many great lybertyes/& trans-
lated many lawes, & Marcyan lawe
and other, out of Brytysshe speche vn
to Saxon tunge. He was also a sub-
tyll mayster in buyldyng and deuy-
synge therof, and excellent connyng
in all huntynge. Fayre he was of sta
ture/and moste beloued of his father
of all his chyldren.

Longe tyme it wold aske to reherse
all his vertue. But for he was in his
youth dysposed to ỹ syn of the flesshe,
and thereby letted from many a ver-
tuous purpose: he lastely after many
resystences by hym done to auoyde ỹ
temtacyon therof/ besought god en-
terly, that he wold sende to hym som
contynuall sykenes in quenchyng of
ỹ lyce, & that he were not vnprofyta
ble to wordely besynesse & serue god
the better.

Then at goddes ordynaũce he had
ỹ euyll called Fyc⁹/wyth the whych
sekenes he was greued many yeres,
and lastely cured of that holy virgyn
saynt Modwenna then dwellyng in
Irlande. But after this cure by her
done she came into Englande, for so
myche as her monastery or chyrch ỹ
she there dwelled in was destroyed.
wherfore Adulfus father to Alured,
knowynge the vertue and holynesse
of this mayden/ gaue to her ground
to buylde vppon. ii. abbays of may-
dens. That is to say one in Arderne
at a place callyd Pollisworth, an
other at Strenesalte in the Northe.
But this holy mayden dyed in the
yland of Andresey besyde Burton, af-
ter many yeres of the buyldynge of
these sayd two abbays, & after. vii. ye
res ỹ she had ben closyd within stone
walles in the yle before named.

when Alurede was cured of this se
kenesse

kynes, to him fyll an other/the which contynued with hym from the.xx. yere of his age tyll the.xlv. yere of hys sayde age. But ꝑ not wythstãdynge he wedded a noble woman named Ethelwyda/of the which he receyued two sonnes, Edwarde surnamed the elder, & Egelwarde/& iii. doughters, Elphleda ꝑ after was ladye of Mercia Ethelgota a mẽchon or nũne, & ꝑ thyrd was named Elfrida. The why che he caused all as well doughters as other, to studye the arte or scyence of grãmer, & to be norysshed wyth all vertue. And when this Alurede was admyttyd to be kynge, he well consyderyd the great daunger ꝑ his lande was in. wherfore he gaderyd to hym his lordes/& suche as he myghte not wyn wythout stryke, he wanne wyth great iustyce and fayre hostes. So ꝑ he shortly assembled a stronge hoste/ and in the seconde moneth ꝑ he was made kynge, he mette wyth the Danys besyde wylton, & yelded to them batayll, but not wythout great losse of men on both partyes.

Then he remeuyd his pleople, and in sondry places faught wyth ꝑ Danys in the fyrste yere. vi. tymes. By meane wherof his peple were so sore mynyshed and wekyd / that he was forsed to take peas wyth his enymyes, vppon couenaunt that they shuld auoyde the countres & prouynces ꝑ he had dompnyon of.

Uppon whych agremẽt fermely concluded the Danis for a tyme voyded those coũtreys/& drew towarde London, & rested theym about ꝑ coste the more parte of the yere folowynge / & from thens to Lyndesey, in robbyng and spoylyng the townes & villages as they wente, & holdynge ꝑ cõmon people vnder theyr seruage/ & so contynued ouer the terme of two yeres. But or the thyrde yere were endyd they yode vnto Repindon/and there put down or slewe Burdredus then kyng of Mercia/ and betoke ꝑ kyng dome vnto a seruaunt of his named Colwolphus, vppon condicyon that he shulde kepe it to theyr behofe. And then they besegyd a town thereby called Hambourgth, & assauted yt right sharpely. wherfore the people therof beynge in great drede and fere/ toke the body of that holy vyrgyne sayntwerbourgth, by vertue of whose body the enymyes were somwhat put a backe. And after for a more suerty/ ꝑ inhabytauntes of ꝑ towne of Hamburgth wyth that holy treasure, fled vnto westchester/ where at this daye she lyeth honorably shrynyd.

Then the kyng made oft peas with the Danys, in truste wherof he rode with the fewer peple, wherof they beyng ware, layd bushemẽtes for hym, & set so nere hym, ꝑ they slew a great parte of his cõpany in a nyght as he rode towarde wynchester.

For this treason the kyng was sore amouyd agayne the Danys/ & in as secrete maner as he myght he assembled a chosen cõpany of knyghtes/& as wytnessyth Guydo, fyll vpon thẽ sodeynly, & dystressed many of them, and lefte them not tyll he had chasyd them to Chester, or after an other authour to Exetour. And there kynge Alurede kept the Danys so short / ꝑ he constrayned them to gyue to hym pledges to kepe the peace, & to dwell no lenger there then they myght puruey shyppynge at the next porte to sayle into Denmarke.

After which accorde thus kynysshed the kynge returned vnto Mercia or myddell England. And for he harde ꝑ Colwolphus was dede, to whom the Danys had taken that lordshyp to kepe: he therfore sealyd ꝑ kyngedome, and ioyned yt to his owne of west Saxons. By whych reason the kyngedome of Mercia surseasyd ꝑ

had continued from theyr fyrst kyng named Penda, as in the chappter of this worke .C. xxix. precedynge, is more at length declared.

Aboute the .v. yere of the reygne of Alurede / the Danys as affermeth Policronica, sayled fro warham towarde Exetour/ in the whyche iourney they loste .vi. score of theyr small shyppes by a tempeste in the see. But some of them occupyed the towne of Cheppnham and the countrey therunto adioynynge/and chalyd ỹ Angles, or made them as subiectes to ỹ Danys. And so sore the power of the augmentyd / that the Angles loste dayly and they encresyd/ and ỹ more by reason of the landyng of a prynce of the Danys named Gutteron or Gowthram, whyche ys named kyng of Denmarke.

THE .CLXXII. CHAPITER.

ALurede beynge thus ouerset in multytude of enymyes, as affermeth Policronica & other/ladde an vncertayne lyfe and vneasy wyth few folkes aboute hym, in the wode coūtrey of Somersetshyre / and had eyght scante to lyue wyth, but suche as he and hys peple myght purchase by huntyng and fyshynge. In which mysery he thus by a certayn of tyme contynuynge/he was by a vysyon to hym shewyd of sayncte Cutbert comforted, as folowyth. Uppon a tyme when his cōpany was from hym departed & besyed in purchasyng of by tayle, and he for a passetyme was redynge on a boke/a pilgryme came to him and requyred his almes in godes name. The kynge lyfte vp hys handes towarde heuen and sayde, I thanke god that of his grace, he vysyteth hys poore man this day by another poore man / and that he woll wytsaue to aske of me ỹ he hath gyuen to me. Then the kynge anon called his seruaunt that hadde but one lofe and a lytell what of wyne / and badde hym gyue the halfe therof vnto the poore man. The whyche receyued yt thankefully/and sodaynly vanished from his syght, so that no step of hym was sene in the nesshe fenne or more ỹ he passed thorough. And also all that was gyuen to hym/was lefte there by in such wyse as yt was to hym gyuen. And shortely after his company returned to theyr maister/ and brought wyth theym great plenty of fyshe that they had then taken.

The nyght folowynge when the kynge was at his reste/one apperyd to hym in a bysshoppes wede, & chargyd hym that he shuld loue god, and kepe iustyce, and be mercyable to the poore men, and worshyppe prestes. And sayd more ouer, Alurede Criste knowyth thy cōscience and thy wyll, and nowe wyll put an ende of thy sorowe and care. For to morow strong helpers shall come to the, by whose helpe thou shalte subdue thyne enymyes. who arte thou sayd the kyng. I am Cutbert sayd he, ỹ pylgryme ỹ yester day was here with ỹ/to whom thou gauest both brede and wyne. I am besy for the and thyne/ wherfore haue thou mynde hereof when yt is wel with the. But how he had his pilgryme in mynde after, by the fredam that he gaue with the possessyons vnto Durham chyrche / yt is well and eupdently sene.

Then Alurede after this vysyon, was wel comforted, and shewed hym more at large/ so that dayly resortyd to hym men of wyltshyre, Somersetshyre, & Hamshyre/ tyll that he was strongly companied. Then the kyng put hym in a great teopdye, as sayth wyllyam de regibus. For he dyd on hym the habite of a mynstrell/& with his instrument of musyke, he entred

the

the tentes and pauylyons of the Danys/ and in shewynge there his enterlude & songes, he espyed all theyr slouth and idelnesse, and harde mych of theyr counsayll/ and after retourned vnto his company, and tolde to theym all the maner of the Danys.

Then the kynge wyth a chosen cõpany/kyll vpon ỹ Danys by nyght, and dystressyd and slewe of theym a great multytude, and chasyd theym from that coste. And when the kyng had thus chasyd the Danys/by coũsayll of his knyghtes, he buylded there a toure and named it Edelyng, whyche is to meane in oure speche a toure of noble men. Oute of whych toure he and his soldyers made many assautes vppon theyr enymyes, & dyd to them mych harme & scath/ and clerely voyded the countrey of them betwene that and Selwood.

This Edelynge or Ethelyngysley, standeth in a great marys or moze/ so that men may not wyn to yt without shyppe or bote, and conteynyth no great grounde/ but yet therin is venyson and other wyld bestes, and fowle, and fyshe great plenty.

Thus kynge Alurede dayly pursuyd his enymyes by helpe of god & his subiectes/ whyche heryng of his victoryes and manfull dedes, drewe to hym dayly out of all costes. By whose powers and assistens he helde the Danys so shorte/ that he wanne from them wyncheſter, & many other good townes/and forced them lastly to seche for peace, the whych was cõcludyd vppon certayn couenauntis. wherof one and principall was/that theyr kynge named as before is sayd Guttrun or Gothram, or after ỹ Englyshe cronycle Gurmunde, shuld be crystyned, and a certayne of his dukes wyth hym. And for ỹ kyng wold haue the Danys banyshed out of the west partyes of Englande/he graunted to hym eest Anglia to abyde and dwell in.

Then this prynce of Danys accordynge to the couenauntes, was crystyned at wyncheſter / and. xx. of the gretteſt of his dukes. And to this sayde Danys prynce Alurede was godfather at the funte stone, and named hym Athelstane. And after he hadde a season feasted the sayde Danes/ he accordynge to his promyse gaue vnto theyr kynge the countrey of eest Anglia, whyche then conteyned Norffolk and Suffolk, & parte of Cambrydshyre. And also as wytnessyth Policronica he graũted to ỹ Danys that were crystened the countrey of Northumberlande. And the other that wold not be crystyned, departed the land & sailed into Fraũce/ where they restyd theym wyth theyr cosyns and kynnesmen, that at those dayes wasted the lande of Fraunce, as in the frenche storys is somwhat apparent. when this Danys kynge Athelstane hadde the possessyon of these countreys/ ye shall vnderstand ỹ all suche Angles as dwelled there, and wythin the precyncte of theym, were vnder his obedyence. And all be yt that he helde the sayd prouynce as in fee of ỹ kyng, and promysed to dwell there as his lyege mã/yet that promyse not wythstandynge, he contynued lyke a tyraunte by the terme of. xi. yeres full, and dyed in the. xii.

In the whyche tyme kynge Alurede amended the cytye of Septoñ that nowe is called Shaftesburye/ and other townes and stronge holdes ỹ by the Danys were sore abatyd and enpayred. And as wytnessyth Gupdo and other/ he buylded ỹ house of nonnes at Shaftesbury, or was fyrste founder therof.

He also founded an house of relygyon in the aboue named place of Ethelyngesey/and a nother in wyn-

cheſter, that was named the new mo naſtery. In the whiche he was after buryed. And ouer this he endowed the churche of ſaynte Cuthberte in Dorcham, as before is touched.

Aboute the .xv. yere of the reygne of Alurede/ ꝑ Danys whiche before as ye haue hard ſayled into Fraũce, retorned into Englande and landed in Kent/ and ſo laſtly came vnto Rocheſter and beſeged that cytye / and lay there ſo longe, that they buylded a towre of tymber and not of ſtone, agayne the gates of the cytye. But by ſtrength of ꝑ cyteſyns that towre was deſtroyed, and the cytye defended tyll kyng Alurede reſcowed thẽ. The whyche hadde made ſuche purueyaunce for the dyſtreſſyng of them by water and lande / that they were ſo nere trapped, that for fere they left theyr horſes behynde them and fled to theyr ſhyppes by nyght. But whã the kynge was therof ware / he ſent after them & toke .xvi. of theyr ſhyppes, and ſlewe many of the ſayd Danys. After thys iourney, the kynge retorned to London / and repayred certayne placys therof, that before had ben hurte or febled wyth the Danys/ and betoke the guydyng therof vnto Etheldredus than erle or duke of Mercia, to whom as wyfe he had gyuen hys doughter Elfleda.

About thys tyme dyed Dunbertus than byſſhop of wynchester/ and the kyng made Dunwolfus byſſhop after hym. The whyche as ſayth Polycronycon the kynge kande in the wodde keppyng of beſtes, in the tyme whan he hym ſelfe kepte the woddes for fere of the Danys.

About the .xvi. yere of the reygne of thys kynge Alurede / the Danys landed in .iiii. places of thys lande, that is to wytte in the Eeſt England and the North, and in the weſt in .ii. places. But for ꝑ kynge before theyr landynge had warnynge of the deth of Atheiſtañ kyng of Danys of Eeſt England, and of other complayntes of ꝑ Danys/ he therfore rode thyder in whyche tyme of hys there beynge theſe tydynges came vnto hym.

THE .CLXXIII. CHAPITER.

When kynge Alurede was acertayned of theſe tydynges/ for ſo mych as ſome of the ſayde Danes were landed in that coſte, and knewe well that ꝑ ferther they drewe vnto theſe partyes, the more they ſhulde be ayded and ſtrengthed: he therfore ſent meſſengers in all haſte vnto Etheldred erle or duke of Mercia / chargynge hym to aſſemble an hoſte of the men of Mercia and the border there about / and to make reſyſtens agayne the Danes, whyche landed in the weſt. And that done/ ꝑ kyng ſped hym toward hys ennmyes, and purſued them ſo ſharpely, that in ꝑ ende he droue them out of Eeſt Anglia. The whyche than landed in Kent/ whyther the kynge wyth hys people ſpedde hym, and in lyke maner draue the Danes from thens. How be it of any ſpecyall fyghte or bataple authours therof leue no memory. After thys agayne the Danes toke ſhyppynge & ſayled into North wales, and there robbed and ſpoyled the Britõs/ and from thens retorned by the ſee into the Eeſt Anglia, and there reſted them, for ſo mych as the kynge than was gone weſtwarde.

In thys whyle ſome of the forſayd Danys had wonne the towne of Cheſter. But for the countrees adioynaũt preſed ſo ſore vppon them/ the ſayd Danys were compelled to kepe them wythin the ſayd towne or cytye, and to defende theym by that maner. But that holdyng of ꝑ towne laſted ſo longe, that the Danys were compel-

compellyd to eate theyr horſes for hunger. But by apoyntement they laſtely gaue ouer the towne, & went thens into Northumberland. And in the whyle that the kynge with his hoſte ſpedde hym thyderwarde/ they leuynge the ſtronge holdes and caſtels garnyſſhed wyth men and vytayle, toke agayne ſhyppynge & fet theyr courſe in ſuche wyſe that they londed in Suſſex/and ſo came vnto the towne of Lewes, and from thens toward London/ & buylded a towre or caſtell nere vnto the ryuer of Lewes. But the Londoners herynge of theyr doynges, māned out a certayn nomber of men of armes/the whiche wyth aſſyſtens of the men of ỹ countree, put the Danys from that towre and after bete it downe to the groūd.

Soone after ỹ kyng came downe thyder/ and for he thoughte that ryuer ſhulde be a meane to bryngе enemyes ekte ſoones into that countre: therfore he cōmaunded ỹ ſtreme to be deuyded into diuers ſtremes/ſo ỹ by reaſō therof there a ſhyp myght ſayle in tyme afore paſſed, thā a lytell bote myghte ſcantly rowe. Than by preſence of the kynge, the Danes were forſed to fle that countre, and from thens toke agayne waye toward walys, and kept a parte of the ryuer of Seuerne/& vppon the border therof buylded them a caſtell nere vnto walys, & ſo reſted them there for a tyme. So that. iii. yeres after thys lande was vexed wyth thre maner of ſorowes/wyth warre of the Danes, peſtylence of men, & moreyne of beſtes. whyche troubles & aduerſytees not wythſtandynge / the kyng knyghtly and manfully reſyſted the malyce of his enmyes/and thanked god alway what trouble ſo euer fyll to hym or to hys realme/ and ſuſteyned it with greate humplyte and pacyence.

It is tolde of hym ỹ he deuyded ỹ daye and nyght in thre partyes, ỹ he were not let by warre or other greate beſynes. wherof. viii. houres he ſpēt in ſtudy and lernyng of ſcyence/and other. viii. he ſpente in prayer and almes dedes wyth other charytable dedes/& other. viii. houres he ſpent in his natural reſte, ſuſtinaūce of his body, & the nedes of the realme. The whych order he kept duely by waren tapers kepte by certayne perſons.

Thus thys marcyall knyght continuyng in all proweſſe and vertue, laſtly dyed / whan he hadde reygned ouer the more parte of thys lande by the terme of. xxviii. yeres full. And was fyrſt buryed at wylto, and after certayne yeres remoued and caryed vnto wynchester/ leuynge after hym a ſonne named Edwarde, ſurnamed Edwarde the elder. For the other brother called Egelwarde dyed before hys father.

Francia.

THE. CLXXIIII. CHAPITER.



Lewys the ſecond of that name, and ſonne of Charles ỹ Balled / began hys reygne ouer the Frenchmen, in the yere of our lorde. viii. hūdred lxxviii/and the. vi. yere of Alured⁹ than kynge of the more parte of Englande. Thys was named Lodowicus Balbus, whych is to meane Lewys the ſtamerer / for ſo mych as he had an impedyment in hys tunge.

ye haue before in ỹ ſtory of Charles the Balled herde, How Charlon the neuew of Charlys forſayd, with hys hoſte had entred Italy, and entended towarde Rome. The whyche after the deth of his ſayd vncle Charlys, kepte on hys waye, & laſtly came vnto

vnto Rome. But for the pope than beynge Johñ the.viii. of that name/ fauoured the aboue named Lewys Balbus, and entended to make hym emperoure: therfore he refrayned ỹ enoyntyng of the sayd Charlon. For the whyche dede he fynally was compelled to auoyde the towne & coũtre, & fled into Fraũce. where he beynge honourably of Lewys receyued/ declared and admytted hym for emperoure, as sheweth the Cronycles of Rome. But after two yeres of hys reygne or short tyme of thys admyssyon to that dygnyte, thys Lewys dyed. wherfore the sayde pope to enioye hys papasy in reste/ retorned to Rome, and anoynted the forenamed Charlon, and crowned hym with the imperyall dyademe/the whyche in ỹ Romañ cronycle is named Carolus tertius, the thyrde emperour, that is to meane of that name.

But of all thys speketh nothyng the frenche Cronycle/excepte that it is there testyfyed, that he was of the sayd pope admytted for emperour.

Polycronycon sheweth, that the seconde Lewys kynge of Fraunce, was accursed of the pope Nicolas ỹ fyrste of that name / for so myche as he refused hys lawfull wyfe, & toke to him his concubine named waldrada. But that is vnderstande by Lewys the second emperour of that name/whyche was sonne of Lothayre, whyche Lothayre was eldest sonne of Lewys the mylde, as in the story of Charlys the Ballyd appereth. And for the genelogy of Charlis the conqueroure, or of hys offspyng may the clerelyer appere / and also that ỹ reder may haue the more certeyne of the names, whych were emperours, whych kynges of Fraunce, & whych were kynges of Germany: I shall in the story of Lewys the.v. (in whome for a tyme surseasyd ỹ blode) make a remembraunce of euery emperour, & kynges of Fraunce & Germany, that reygned from ỹ sayd Charlis ỹ grete or conquerour, tyll Hugh Capet/the whyche Hugh vsurped the crowne of Fraunce, as after shall appere.

Than it foloweth in the story, that for partycyon of the lande of Austracy or Lorayn, grudge and baryaũce contynued alwaye bytwene the kynges of Fraũce & Germany / whyche bothe kynges at thys daye were named Lewys, albeit that the kyng of Fraunce was surnamed Balbus, as before is shewed. For the whych baryaunce by laboure of frendes these two kynges mette at ỹ cytye or place called Gundeuyle. where after longe cõmunycacyõ it was fynally agreed, that the sayde prouynce of Austracy shulde than be deuyded, as it somtyme had ben parted bytwene Charlys the Balled and Lewys kynge of Germany theyr bothe fathers.

After whych peas thus cõcluded, eyther parted from other in frendely wyse. And Lewys Balbꝰ yode vnto Arderñ, where he halowed the feste of Crystmas. And frõ thens he yode vnto Compeyne / where he herde of the rebellyon of a marques of hys realme called Barnarde, or more verely after the Romayn story a marques of Italy. For thys Barnarde wyth one Helberde had before tyme taken from the chyrche of Rome certeyne possessyons/ whyche by meane of thys Lewys & the sentence of the chyrche denounced agayne them by the forsayd pope Johñ, were agayn restored, and the partyes also reconcyled. But now of newe thys Barnarde rebelled agayne. wherfore the pope as to Lewys for the defensour of the chyrch of Rome sent for ayde/ for, as before I haue shewed you, thys Lewys of the sayde pope Johñ was authoryzed for emperoure. But for he

for he was not crowned at Rome wyth the imperyall dyademe / he is not accõpted amonge ỹ emperours.

For thys newe rebellyon of Barnarde, Lewys assembled hys armye at Cõpayne forsayd / and frõ thens rode to ỹ cytye of Troyes in Vincẽt, where he was taken wyth sodayne malady, of ỹ whyche he dyed shortly after, and not wythout suspeccyon of venym, whan he had ben kynge of Fraunce fully two yeres / leuyng after hym two sonnes, that is to saye Lewys and Charlys, or after some wryters Charlemayne.

THE. CLXXV. CHAPITER.

LEwys and Charlys / the sonnes of Lewys Balbus or Lewys ỹ stameter / began theyr reygne ouer the Frenchemen, in the yere of oure lordes incarnacion. viii. C. lxxx / and the. viii. yere of ỹ reygne of Alurede than kynge of Englande. The whyche for they were yonge of age, were put vnder tuytyõ and gydyng of Barnarde the erle of Auuergii / to whom the father by hys lyfe had thẽ commytted. wherfore the sayd Barnarde wyth other of hys affynyte assembled shortly after at Meaux in Lorayne / & thyder called vnto them the lordes of the lande, to treate maters for the comon weale of ỹ same.

In those dayes was a man of grete myght in Fraũce named Gosseleyñ / the whyche enuyed the forsayd erle Barnarde & other, for certayne harmes to hym by them done in tyme before passed. In auengynge wherof the sayd Gosseleyñ intended to putte hym and other from the rule of the land, whych he knew well they shuld occupye whyle the sayd two childern had rule of the same.

And thys cuyll purpose to bryngе to effecte / he went vnto Conrade erle of Parys, and shewed to hym moche of his wyll. And amonge other thynges lette hym wytte, that yf Lewys kynge of Germany myght wyth hys helpe be made kynge of Fraũce / that he shulde by hym be greatly auaunced. By whych meanes he caused the sayde Conrade to take hys parte / so that he & other of hys affynyte whan they came vnto the forsayde counsayle at Meaux / sayde that Lewys kynge of Germany, was more apte to rule the lande of Fraũce than any other was. And also after some wryters / these Lewis and Charlys afore sayde were not the legyttymate sonnes of the forenamed Lewis Balby, but gotten in baste of a concubyne of the sayd Lewys.

Thys mater thus debated and argued amonges the coũsayle / lastly by moste in nomber it was agreed, that Lewys kynge of Germanye shulde be by ambassade requyred to come and take vppon hym the rule of the lande of myddell Fraunce. The whych wyth small request was agreable / and in shorte tyme after came vnto the sayd cytye of Meaux, and after to Verdune. But as soone as the knowlege was come to Barnarde and other of hys affynyte / by counceyle of Hughe and Terry two nobles of Fraunce, the bysshop of Orlyaunce wyth an erle and other were sent to Verdune vnto the sayd kynge of Germany wyth thys message. That yf he were contente to take vnto hym all suche parte of the prouynce of Lorayne, as Charlys the Balled kepte from hys fader Lewys, wythout more clayme of the lande or realme of Fraunce / he shuld gladly haue it. And yf nat, he shulde abyde the iugement of Mars and hys batayle. wyth whyche offer Lewys was well contented / and beyng of it in a suertye, departed agayne into Germanye.

Thorough

Thorough that doynge, the forenamed Gosselyne and Conrade with other of theyr frēdes, were with yt sore dyscōtentyd of the departure of Lewys forsayde. But the sayd Bernarde with other of his syde, in goodly hast after cōueyed the sayd two chyldren vnto the citye of Ferrer/& there crowned and proclaymed theym for kynges, as wytnessyth mayster Robert Gaguyne. But the forenamed Gosselyne and Conrade not leuynge so the mater / sente messengers vnto ỹ quene of Germanye, cōplaynynge theym vnto her of the vnstableness and tymerousnesse of her lorde/wher by he had not alonely loste the possessyon of the realme of Fraunce, but also he hadde put them and all theyr frendes in great fere and daunger. wherof herynge the quene / in her mynde was sore dyscontentyd wyth her lorde and husbande, and as she durste shewyd yt to hym as his reproche and dyshonour. And fynally to satysfye the myndes of the sayde Gosselyn̄ and Conrade, she sent into Guyan her brother named Boso/by whose aydes and assystence he was of that prouynce proclaymed kynge.

Endurynge whyche troubles/the Danys entred the lande, and came vnto the ryuer of Lyger, and robbed and spoyled the countrey wythoute mercy. wherfore the kynges assembled theyr people/ and gaue to them batayll nere vnto the ryuer of Uyen. where they dystressyd the sayde Danys and slewe of them .ix.thousand, and drowned of thē ouer that a grete multytude in the sayde ryuer. After whyche victory by the kynges obteyned/ a new veracyon & trouble was to them ascertayned, ỹ Lewys kyng of Germany with a great puyssaunce was comen vnto a place called Ducy/and to hym was gone the forenamed Gosselyn̄ and Conrade with all the power that they myghte make/& by theyr ledynge was from thens cōueyed vnto Rybemaunt. But howe so yt was, for lacke of performaunce of promyse made by the sayde two erles vnto the kyng of Germany & not obserued / he herynge of the kynges of Fraunce drawynge towarde hym wyth stronge hoste, cōcluded a peas, and retourned into Germany. And the two bretherne rode to gyder vnto the citye of Damens or Demeus/ where they deuyded the lande of Fraunce betwene theym. So that Lewes held to hym the coūtrey nere & about Parys, with the prouince of Neustria or Normandye/and Charles had vnto his part Burgoyn and Guyan/ with promyse made & assured on eyther partye, that eyther of them shulde ayde and assyste other.

THE .CLXXxi. CHAPITER.

After this partycyon betwene the two bretherne thus made / by the meanes of Lewys kynge of Germany the forsayde erles Gosselyn̄ & Conrade were vnto the sayde bretherne recouncyled and agreed. And for to theym redy worde was brought, ỹ Bose before named kyng of Guyan hadde wonne the cytye of Uyen/ & therin lefte his wyfe whyle that he occuppyed ỹ hylles and mountaynes beynge there aboute: they ioyntly assembled theyr knyghtes, & sped thē thyther, & layde theyr seage aboute the cytye. But durynge this syege the Danis often wasted ỹ land of Fraunce. wherfore Lewys the elder brother, departed frō that syege/ leuynge there his brother Charlys. But or the sayde Lewis myght wyn to the sayde Danys, they as tyraunntes and cruell enymyes to Crystes fayth, hadde spoyled many chyrches and temples, and a monasterye of

sayne

ſaynt Peter in Cozby, and throwen yt downe to the ground. After which vyle and cruell dede by theym done/ Lewys gaue vnto them batayll, and ſlew of them great nomber, and chaſed the remanaunt.

But after this vyctozye enſuyd a great wonder. Foz when the cryſten hadde as befoze is ſayde chaſyd the pagans oz Danys / they retourned as confuſyd and dyſparkled, lyke as all the hoſte of Danys hadde theym purſued/ ſo that well was hym that myghte ronne faſteſt, and hyde hym ſelfe from the daunger of his enymy. Foz yt was thought to them and apparent to theyz ſyght, that theyz enymyes folowed at theyz backes wyth all kynde of weppyn/ and yet folowed thē no man. The whych fere & flyght of Frenche men, as ſayth myne authour, was ſent to theym by dyuyne purueaunce/ foz ſo mych as they ſo often befoze tyme had won the pryce of theyz enymyes, and had not therfoze gyuen due thanke vnto god, but referred yt to theyz owne ſtrenghtes and vertue.

Then the Danys herynge of this dyſparklyng of the cryſten hoſte/ reaſſembled theyz power and ꝑpayzed them to new fyght. wherfoze ꝑ kyng called to gyther his knyghtes, ſo as befoze is ſayd dyſparkled/ and mette wyth theym nere vnto the aboue named ryuer of Lyger. But when both hoſtes were wythin a days iourney/ the kynge was aduyſed by ſome of his eoũſayll, ꝑ he ſhulde not as then fyght wyth thē. Foz the whych cauſe he yode vnto Compeynge, and there kept the feaſt of Cryſtemaſſe.

And whyle the kynge was lodged in Cōpeynge/ he delyueryd his hoſte vnto a noble man of his land named Theodozych/ wyllynge hym to go agayne the Danys. Of whoſe exployt oz ſpede myne authoure maketh no mencyon/ but ſayeth that ſoone after the fozeſayde feaſt, the kynge ſpedde hym to Turoñ/ where he ſent to rayſe the Bzytōs of lytell Bzitayn to withſtande the fozeſayde enymyes.

In the whyche paſſetyme he was there taken wyth a maladye, & from thens in a lytter caryed vnto saynte Denis, where he dyed & was buried. Oz as ſayth maiſter Gaguyn, he dyed at Turoñ, and was after cōueyed vnto ſaynt Denys, and there buried. But foz all wzyters ioyne the reygn of theſe two bzetherne in one / therfoze I wyll now ſhewe vnto you the fyne oz concluſyon of the other bzother called Charlys oz Charlemayn/ the whyche all thys whyle mayntened the ſyege aboute Uyenne, where his bzother as befoze is touchyd left hym. To whom the lozdes of Fraũce ſente in all haſte, gyuynge to hym knowlege of the deth of his bzother/ and alſo of the great daunger that the land was in by reaſon of the Danys. wherof when the ſayd Charlys hadde thus wyttynge / he lefte a parte of hys people at the ſayde ſyege, and wyth the other deale he ſped hym towarde Champayne, foz ſo mych as he was enfourmed that the Danys were dzawen towarde that coſte. And as he was in hys iourney/ wozde was bzoughte vnto hym that Uyenne was delyueryd vnto ſuche perſones as he hadde there left to maynteyne the ſyege.

And after thys came a nother meſſenger / whyche ſhewyd to hym that the Danys hadde deſtroyed dyuers chyzches in Champayne and other places / and howe the byſhoppe of Meaws that agayne theym hadde ladde an hoſt of people, was of them ſlayne, and hys people chaſyd/ and ouer thys at the fozeſayde ryuer of Lyger an other hoſte of Danis, with theyz leder called Haſtynges was aſ

ſembled

ſembled. The whych in that partyes waſted the countrey as the other in other places dyd / whyche ſomdeale apalled the herte of the kynge Charlys. How be yt by the comforte that he hadde dayly receyued from the lordes of Fraunce / he kepte on hys iourney, and made towarde the next of his enymyes.

But when he drew nere vnto them / were yt for his own cowardyſe, or of the counſayll of his lordes / he fell to a communycacyon of peace. And fynally concluded that Godfrey the prynce of Danys, to cõfeſſe the fayth of Cryſte and to be cryſtened / ſhulde enioye the hole prouynce of Fryſe. And wyth in the ſame / he wyth hys Danys to inhabyte theym.

The whyche condycyon of peace was the begynnynge of greate ſorowe and loſſe vnto Fraunce, as after ſhall appere. For all be yt that the ſayd Godfrey to deceyue the French men, ſhewed outwarde countenaũce to be a cryſten man for a whyle / he ſhortely after wyth an hoſte of .xl. thouſande Danys, entred the land, waſtynge the countrey tyll he came to Parys / and layde there hys ſyege about the ſame citye. But by the arch byſhoppe of Parys then named Joſelen, and the inhabytaunces of the ſame, the cytye was manfully defended / ſo that he with his Danys was fayne to breke hys ſyege / and from thens yode to the cytye of Laoñ, and wan yt by ſtrength / and after yt ſpoyled and robbed, and after brent. And fro thens to Soyſons in pyllynge and deſtroyeng the countrey as they went, in ſo cruell wyſe, that the byſſhoppes and preſtys fled from theyr chyrches, wyth relyques and anournamentes or ornamẽtes belongyng to the ſame / as the bodyes of ſaynte Germayne, ſaynte Remigius, and dyuers other.

In ỳ tyme of this perſecucyõ / lyke as the lande of Englande was in great daunger, ſo alſo was the land of Fraunce / by meane of theſe pagans or myſcreauntes Danys. The whyche reſortyd from that one realme to that other / and releued theym ſelfe in that one land, whẽ they were chaſed oute of that other. But one myſchappe amonges other befell in Fraunce at theſe dayes. For Charlys theyr kynge was taken from theym in ſuche wyſe, that no wryter leueth of hym any mencyon how he dyed, nor when he dyed / nor no mencyon is made in the frenche cronycle nor of myne authoure, howe longe whyle he and hys brother Lewys reygned. All by Vyncent hiſtoryall, and Antoninus, whych groũded hym vpon the ſayde Vyncent, and Jacobus Philippus ſaye / that theſe two foreſayde bretherne regned togyder and alone, by the terme of .v. yeres wythoute more.

And the frenche cronycle and alſo myne authour ſayen, that Lewys dyed wythoute heyre / and that Charlys lefte after hym a ſonne, whyche was named Lewys, and after for his ſymple dedes ſurnamed in laten Nihil faciens, or in frẽche Ryen feyant / whyche is to meane in our ſpeche nought doynge.

But who that lyſteth wele to aduertyſe & remẽber the order of thys cronycle / he ſhall fynde in this latter ſayenge ſome dyſcorde. For where yt is ſayde that thys Charlis ſhulde leue a ſonne after hym, to my yt ſemeth, that conſyderynge hys youth he ſhulde not be of any lawfull age to gette a chylde. For by all lyklyhode of conuenyence of the ſtorye / yf all be verifyed as yt is before declared / he coude not paſſe ỳ age of .viii. yeres at the moſte.

Wherfore yt muſte folowe of a con-

gruence

gruence / that other they reygned lenger tyme, or ellys thys chylde or heyre Lewys aboue named, was the sonne of some other man. But to folowe myne authour I shall proceede as foloweth.

THE .CLXXVII. CHAPITER.

LEwys the fourth of that name, and sonne of Charlis as before is sayde / beganne his reygne ouer ỳ Frenchmen, in the yere of our lorde .viii. hundred . lxx. & . vi / and the .xiiii. yere of Alueredus then kyng of Englande. Of thys Lewys yt ys testyfyed of dyuers writers, that he shulde enamoure hym selfe vppon a menchon of the monastery of Chyell, and her drawe oute by force, and mary her vnto his wyfe. For the which dede and other, he purchasyd the aboue said name / & was called Lewis nought doynge.

In thys tyme the Danys, contrary to theyr pmyse before made / made new warre wythin the land of Fraūce. wherfore the Frenchmen hauyng lytell hope in theyr kynge / sente vnto Charlon or Charlys ỳ emperour, sonne of Lewys kynge of Germany as before is shewyd / requyryng him in all humble wyse to vysyte ỳ realm of Fraunce / and to defende yt from the persecucyon of the Danys.

In these dayes also was ryuynge in Fraunce the forenamed Hugh / whych as ye before haue herd / mayntayned the quarell of Lewys & Charlys last kynges, agayn Lewys kyng of Germanye. The whyche Hugh of some writers is called Hue le graūd, that is Hugh the great. Thys man gaderyd an hoste of Frenchmen, and gaue batayll vnto the Danys, and slewe of them a great nomber.

It shulde seme by the wryters of the frenche storye, that these noble men of Fraunce, as thys Hugh and other, shulde haue the rule of the spyrytuall possessyons of abbayes and other houses of relygyon. For of myne Authour mayster Gagwyne, they are in laten named abbates / and in the frenche boke abbis, whych is to meane abbottes.

And also yt is testyfyed of the sayd wryters / that this Hugh and Robert erle of Parys, were the fyrst that left the dystrybucyon of those spyrytuall goodes vnto theyr knightes / & gaue ouer that name of abbotte, the whyche in some other estates contynued tyll the dayes of Roberte kynge of Fraunce.

Then yt folowyth, accordynge to the requeste made vnto the emperour as aboue is shewyd / he gatheryd a stronge hoste of Italyons, and parced the lande of Fraunce / and bare hym so vyctoryously agayne the Danys, that he forced theym to obey to all theyr former promyse & condycyons. But Eusebi⁹ and other ỳ wrote the actes of the emperours / sayen, ỳ this Charlis whyche they name the thyrd of ỳ name, and also Orosius, ỳ is great / subdued the Danys of Fraunce, & compellyd theyr leder or prynce named there Rodefredus, to take the habyte of Crystes relygyon, and receyued hym at the coulde water. In whyche tyme or soone after (wherof ỳ tyme is not duely ascertayned) dyed the forenamed kynge Lewys surnamed nought doynge / when he hadde reygned after most wryters viii. yeres / leuyng after hym a sonne named Charlis, ỳ whyche after was surnamed symple. But for he was to ponge to take vpon hym such a charge / the lordes put hym vnder good & conuenyent gouernynge / and chase an other as foloweth to guyde ỳ lande tyll he were come to hys laufull age, whyche was named Eudo.

THE .CLXXVIII. CHAPITER.

EUdo the ſonne of Robert erle of Angeowe/ beganne his reygne ouer the frenche men, in the yere of our lorde. viii. hundred. lxxx. & xv/ and the. xviii. yere of Alurede then kynge of Englande.

Ye ſhall vnderſtand that the aboue named Robert erle of Angeow was as tutor and guyder vnto the forenamed kynges of Fraunce Lewys and Charlys / and laſtely was ſlayne of the Danys. The whyche Robert left after hym. ii. ſonnes, Eudo and Robert. whych Eudo for the great fame that he was of, and alſo for ỹ great trouth that in hym was proued and knowen/ ỹ lordes of one aſſent choſe hym to be kynge of the lande for the terme of his lyfe. And as affermeth the frenche boke & other he was crowned of walter then archebyſhoppe of Senys.

Howe be yt this is ſomdele doutfull to be gyuen credence vnto, for dyuers reaſons that therunto myghte be made. Mayſter Gagwyne ſayth, that he hath ſene ſome authoures, that teſtyfye this forenamed Charlis the ſymple, to be the lawfull ſon of Lewys Balbus / and the foreſayde Lewys and Charlis late kynges of Fraunce, to be the baſtarde ſonnes of the ſayde Lewys Balbus.

Then to folowe the mater, thys Eudo in cõſyderacyon that the ſayd Charlis the ſymple was inſuffycyẽt to guyde the lande, he was putte vnder the guydyng of this ſayd Eudo/ and he was made kynge in his ſtede. The whyche myghtly defendyd the lande from all daunger of enymyes. And ouer ỹ he cauſed the ſayde Charlys the ſymple to be noryſhed and broughte vp wyth moſte dylygence/ ſo that he was informed & exercyſed wyth all vertues doctrine, and other thynges neceſſarye vnto a prynces ſon. And finally when this noble and vertuous knyghte Eudo knew ỹ he ſhulde dye / he called before hym the lordes & nobles of Fraunce/ ỹ whych he charched by ſolemne othe, that after his deth, they immedyatly ſhulde crowne Charlis for theyr kyng/ and dyed ſoone after, when he hadde reygned as affermeth authours by the terme of. ix. yeres.

Anglia.

THE .CLXXIX. CHAPITER.

EDwarde ſurnamed the elder and ſon of Aluredus/ began his reygne ouer ỹ more part of England, in ỹ yere of our lord. ix hundred & one/ & the. vii. yere of Eudo then kynge of Fraunce. This was lower then hys father in letter and connynge / but he was hygher in honoure & worſhyp. By his fyrſt wife he had a ſon named Ethelſtane, the whych was kynge after hym. By his ſeconde wyfe he had two ſonnes Edredus & Edwynus/ & vii. doughters. And of ỹ thyrd wyfe he receyued two ſonnes, Edmunde & Edrede/ and two doughters Edburga and Edgina.

The fyrſte of theſe. iii. wyfes hyght Edwyna, the ſecond hyght Edgina/ & the thyrde was named Ethleeſwyda. Of ỹ forenamed. vii. doughters, which he had by his ſecond wife/ one named Alunda or Almyda, was maryed to the fyrſt Otto the emperour. And a nother named Algina, was maryed to Charlis the ſymple kyng of weſt Fraũce. And the yõgeſt of his doughters as ſayth Policronica/ he wedded vnto Lewys kyng of Guyan. But therof ſpeketh nothyng the frenche

frenche cronicle. He set his sonnes to scole/ and his doughters he sette to woll worke, takyng exemple of Charlis the conquestour.

By authorite of Formosus the pope, he made. vii. byshoppes in Englande. wherof he ordeyned. v. in west Saron, one in southe Saron, & one in Mercia at Dorchester. He also for that the munkes of wynchester sayd that his father Alurede walkyd/ caused hym to be remoued vnto the new abbay. About the. v. yere of his reygne Clyto Ethelwaldus a nere kynesman of his/ rebellyd agayn hym, and occuppyd ỹ towne of wymborne besydes Bathe/ & toke thens by force a nunne/ & went thens vnto the Danys dwellyng in Northũberlande, & excyted them to ryse agayn kyng Edwarde. But the kynge pursued hym so sharpely, that he was constrayned to leue the countrey/ and sayled into Fraunce, and lefte the nũne behynde hym/ the whych the kynge caused to be restoryd agayn to the house ỹ she was taken fro.

The nexte yere folowyng, the sayd Clito wyth his cõpany landed in eest Englande, & gaderyd to hym ỹ Danys of that countrey, and with theyr ayde destroyed and pylled the countrey about Crekynforde & Criklade. And then passed ỹ ryuer of Thamis & spoyled the land to Bradenestoke/ and so frõ thens retourned into eest Anglia, ỹ is Norffolke & Suffolke.

The kynge folowed his enmyes and spoyled of theyr landes, whyche they helde by compolycyon from the ryuer of Owse, to the bordure of saynte Edmundus lande/ commaundynge hys knyghtes of hys hoste that none shulde dragge or tarye after hys hoste, for fere that they were not beclyppyd of theyr enmyes. But the Kentyshe men, whych trusted to myche in theyr owne strength, dysobeyed that commaundement. wherfore the Danys awaytynge theyr praye/ fyll vppon them by bushementes, and slewe the more partye of theym, wherwyth the kyng was sore dyscontentyd.

Soone after bothe hostes mette. where after longe fyght Clyto wyth many of the Danys was slayne, and the remenaunt constrayned to seche peace/ the whyche was graunted vpon certayne condycyons, that they shulde holde theym wythin the bounes to theym lymytted / and ouer that paye yerely a certayne money in waye of trybute.

After whyche peace wyth them stablyshed/ he repayred cytyes, townes, and castellys, that by the sayde Danys were shatered and broken.

And about the. viii. yere of his reygne / kynge Edwarde repayred the wallys and also the cytye of Kaerlyon, that now is called Chester. To the whych were great helpers Ethelbred^{9} duke of Mercia, & Elfleda his wyfe, doughter of Alurede as before is shewyd, & suster of this kynge Edwarde. And that done the kynge buylded a stronge castell at Herford in ỹ egge of walys. And he enlarged so greatly ỹ walles of Chester / ỹ the castell whych before tyme was wyth out the wall, is now wythin.

And the. ix. yere of his reygn / Ethelbred^{9} duke of Mercia by coũsayll of his wyfe trãslated ỹ bones of ỹ holy kyng Oswald, frõ Bradony to Gloucestre / & there buylded a fayre monastery in the worshyp of sayut Peter.

In the. xii. yere of kyng Edwardes reygne/ the Danes repentynge them of theyr couenauntes before made, myndyng & entẽdyng ỹ breche of the same/ assẽbled an hoste & met with ỹ kynge in Staffordeshyre, at a place called Toten halle, and soone after at wodenesseylde. At whyche. ii. pla-

trauayle by the terme of.xxiiii.yeres at Farynydon/and from thens conueyed to wynchester, and there enteryd in the monastery of saynt Swythyne/leuyng after hym dyuers sonnes as before is shewed, of the which Ethelstane was eldest.

Francia.

THE.CLXXXI. CHAPITER.



Harlys surnamed the symple, sonne of Lewys the.iiii. or Kyen Fayrand/ began hys reygne ouer the Frenchemen, in the yere of our lordes incarnacyon, as wytnessyth Jacob⁹ Philippus and other. ix. hundred .iiii./ and the thyrde yere of Edwarde the elder than kynge of Englande. In tyme of whose reygne the Danys, whyche contynuelly ouer the terme of.l. wynters / that is to saye from ỹ x. yere of Charlys the Ballyd sometyme kynge of Fraunce, vnto ỹ sayd dayes, had wasted and spoyled the lande, not wythstandyng ỹ agremen tes made bytwene Charlys the emperour and them, as before in ỹ story of the.iii. Lewys is shewed: yet they wyth greate hostes aryued in the coũ tre of Neustria or Normandy, & robbed and spoyled the countre before them, and slewe the people thereof wythout pyty/and from cyty to cyty kepte on theyr iourney tyll they came vnto the cyty of Roan. wherof the bysshop beynge in greate drede, of subuersyon of the cyty and destruccyon of the crysten people wyth in the same / delyuered the cyty by appoyntment, that he wyth ỹ people myghte departe thens wythout bodely harme / whyche vnto the sayde Danys was a greate strength, and hurte to the lande of Fraunce.

Of thys hoste of Danys was ruler and leder a myscreaunt named Rollo / the whyche was a man of lowe byrthe, but he was of greate strength. The whyche whan he had a season rested hym and hys hoste, & refresshed them wythin the cytye of Roan/he than set forth hys waye, cõmaũdyng hys vawnewarde to kepe theyr iourney towarde Parys. And for ỹ more spede to be made/ he shypped hys Danis ryght there/and one parte he sent by the ryuer of Sean, the seconde by the ryuer of Lyger or Leyr, and the thyrde by the water Geronde.

Than the Danys that passyd by the ryuer of Leyr came at length to the cyte of Nauntes / and wan that cytye by strength, and slewe therin moche people. And the bysshop of the same named Guymerte beynge at masse, they slewe at the aulter. And whan they had spoyled that cytye & the countre there about / than yode they to the cytye of Angiers, & brent and robbyd it most cruelly. And that done they yode vnto Towrs, and layde syege to that cytye. The which by the presens of the holy body of saynt Martyne, whych at that tyme was wythin ỹ cytye / it was a whyle preserued. But soone after the munkes keryng the swoorde of the Danys fled the cytye secretly, and toke the body wyth them. And soone after the Danes had the towne at theyr wyll/ and brent the abbay before the town or stãdynge without the towne/ and spoyled and robbed the cytye & townes thorough the countre of Suyan.

whan the Danys had thus subdued the more parte of Neustria or Normandy. They wyth theyr duke Rollo by ỹ ryuer of Seyñ drewe towarde Parys. And fyrst entred the landes of Burgoyne and Auerne & in effecte to Senons. wherof heryng the mon-

the monkes of the monastery of Flory, where the body of sayncte Benet than rested, they toke that holy treasoure and bare it vnto Orlyaunce/& layde it in the chyrche of sayncte Anyan, tyll the persecucyon were ouer passed.

Of thys monastery was at that dayes kyepynge a defensour by promyse before made, whose name in latyne is called Sigillosus, & in Frech Sigillophes an erle/whych was taken for patrone of the same abbaye. To whom in the nyght folowynge that the monkes were fled, as before is sayd/sayncte Benet appered, & blamed hym ỹ he none other wyse had defended ỹ place of hys Sepulture. wyth whych vysyon the sayd erle beynge feryd/gaderyd vnto hym vpon the daye folowyng such small power as he than myghte make, & set vpon the Danys and draue them backe, & slewe of them a great nomber. And ỹ prayes that he there wan, he offered to god and sayncte Benet/by whose prayers he knewe well that he optey ned that victory.

In tyme ỹ the Danys thus persecuted the countre of Fraunce, and the kynge was not of power them to resyst/for so mych as Charles knew well that the bysshop of Roan named Franke, was in good fauour of Rollo: he therfore sent hym in ambassade to the sayd Rollo, to requyre a trewe or trewse for thre monethes/ the whych was graũted. The which trewse ended, the sayd Rollo besieged the cytye of Chartrys. Duryng whiche syege/the duke of Burgoyne named Richarde wyth hys retynue assayled the Danys. In tyme of which fyght Ebalde erle of Poytowe was present, and draue backe ỹ Danys. wherwyth the bysshop of the cytye beynge encoraged/toke wyth hym ỹ smocke of our lady, whyche at those dayes was kepte there wyth greate reuerence/and wyth the cytesyns & other issued out of the cytye, & made vpon the Danys a great scomfyture So that by the prowesse of the forsayde two temporall lordes, and assystens of this spyrituall man/Rollo was compelled to flee and forsake his siege, & not without huge slaughter.

Rollo then hauynge greate dysdayne and dysplesure of thys ouerthrowe and scumfyture of hys Danys/reassembled them that were abrode scatered, and cõmaunded thẽ to ouer ryde the countre, and to destroye it in all that they myght. After whych cõmaundement thus to them gyuen/this cruell people slewe man, women, & chylde, that were not apte to do to them seruyce/and brent the chyrches and temples, and rauysshed virgyns as well religious as other/ So that miserable it was to beholde the greate abhompnacyon of these tyrannous Danys, that brent, robbed, and slewe that innocent people wythout mercy.

The lordes and comons thus beset with cruell fury of theyr enmyes, assembled them by sondry cõpanyes and went vnto the kynge/shewynge vnto hym theyr mysery, and blamed as they durste hys forefulnesse and negligence, that he nor none for hym otherwyse wythstode the crueltye of the Danys/that hadde destroyed a greate parte of hys lande.

THE.CLXXXII. CHAPITER.

CHarlys herynge this exclamacyon of hys subgettes, and cõsyderyng hys lacke of power to withstande that malyce of hys enemyes, was tyght pensyfe and heuy in hys herte/and castynge in hys mynde many sondry wayes, he lastly determyned to sende agayne the aboue

named

bury, whose lyfe shone after wyth many myracles.

This was somtyme abbot of Glaste bury/& lastly archbyshop of Caunter bury. whose holynes & ꝓphecyes are shewed at length, in the .vi. chappter of the .xvi. tytle of the worke called Sñ Antonini, and in the legende of the chyrche also.

In the seconde yere of the reygne of Ethelstane / for an vnytye and a peace to be hadde betwene the kyng and the Danis of Northumberland, he maryed to Sythyricꝰ theyr kyng his suster. But after .v. yeres this Si thyricus dyed. After whose deth he seasyd the countrey into hys owne hande/ and put oute the sonne of the forsayd Sythyricus. And when he hadde thus accorded wyth the Da nys of Northumberlande/he shortly after made subiect to him Cõstantyn kynge of Scottes. But the sayd Cõ stantyne meked hym so lowely to the kynge / that he restoryd hym to hys former dygnytye. wherfore the sayd Constantyne sayde in prayse of the kynge/ that yt was more honour to make a kynge, then to be a kynge. whyche acte was done by the affyr maunce of Polycronycon, in the ye re of grace .ix. hundred & .xxvi/ which then after that saynge shuld be the se conde yere of the reygn of this Ethel stane. It is testyfyed of Policro nica, that thys Ethelstane shuld ma rye one of his susters named Editha or Edyth, vnto Otto the fyrst of that name emperour of Almayne, and re cepued from hym many precyous ie wellys and relyques. But of this spe keth nothyng the cronicle of Romay nes. Howe be yt yt is shewyd there, that the forsayd Ottho or Otto had a wyfe named Alunda/ whych as be fore is sayde in the storye of Edward the elder, myght be the doughter of the sayd Edward and of Edgina his seconde wyfe. But Vincentius histo rialis sayth/ that Henry duke of Sa xony, whyche was father vnto the fyrste Otto/ sent vnto Ethelstane, re quyrynge of hym hys suster to mary vnto his sonne Otto. By whych rea son I maye folowe, that this Ottho maryed the suster of Ethelstane, but not Edythe.

Of these forsayde iewelles sent by Otto/ one was a precyouse vessell of stone called Onechynus/ whych was of suche clerenesse, & also so subtily & craftely wrought, that yt apperyd to mannes syght as grene corne hadde growen wythin yt, and moued and waued as corne doth standyng in the felde. More ouer in yt apperyd vy nes burgenyng and berynge fruyte/ and men also to syght mouynge and styrynge. He also receyued the great Constantynes sworde / wherin was grauen wyth great letters of golde, the name of the owner. And the hyl tes therof were coueryd wyth great plates of golde. And one of the nay les was fastenyd to the crosse of the sayd sworde, that Criste suffred with his passyon. But in thys reporte or saynge, Polycronycon varyeth from his former sayng/ were he reporteth two of the sayd nayles to be spent vp pon the bydell of the sayde Constan tyne, and the thyrde nayle to be caste into a daũgerous swalowe of the see, as before is rehersed in the .lxix. chapi ter of thys worke. He also receyued the spere of Charlys the gret, whych after the oppynyon of some wryters, was the spere that Longeus opened wyth Crystes syde. And the baner of sayncte Morys, a relyque of greate pryce/ wyth a part of the holy crosse, and a parte of the crown of thorne of our saupoure.

Of the whych iewellys kyng Ethel stane gaue a parte vnto sayncte Swi thunys of wynchester / and some he

gaue

gaue vnto ꝑ abbay of Malmesbury.

I haue sene a cronycle of Englād, which testyfyeth, that this Ethilstañ was ꝑ fyrst kynge that euer was enoynted in this land. All be yt I fynd therof lytell authorytye/excepte that Guydo and other testyfyen, that he was crowned at the kynges towne nowe called Kyngestone, x. myles from London, of Athelyne then arch byshoppe of Caunterbury. But that proueth not or argueth hym to be the fyrste for that reason. For ryghte so was his fader Edwarde crowned of Plemounde archbyshoppe of the sayde see. But Guydo aforesayd affyrmeth that Alurede graund fader to thys Ethylstane/ was enoyntyd kyng by authorȳte of Leo ꝑ .v. then pope. wherfore it agreeth better that he shulde be the fyrste.

Then yt foloweth in the story, that aboute the .viii. yere of the reygne of thys Ethilstane, dyed Frystane byshoppe of wyncheſter / and Brystane was byshoppe after hym. Of whom yt is radde, that he sange eue ry daye masse for all Crysten soules. And as the byshoppe Brystane went vppon a nyght about a chirch yerde, and sayde hys deuocyons for all crysten soules, and lastly sayde, requiescant in pace / he harde a voyce as yt hadde ben a great hoste of people saynge. Amen.

Soone after Constantyne kynge of Scottes, brake couenaunt wyth kynge Ethylstane. wherfore he assembled his knyghtes and made towarde Scotlande. And in hys way he tourned to saynte Johñ of Beuerley and offeryd there hys knyfe vppon the auter/ sayenge that yf he retourned wyth victorye, he shulde redeme hys knyfe wyth a noble pryce / and that done proceded vppon hys iourney, and in cōclusyon scomfyted the Scottes, and broughte theym agayne vnto dewe subiectyon. And after accordynge to the promyse before made / he retourned to yorke, and so to the chyrche where the corps of saynt Johñ of Beuerley laye/ redemynge his knyfe worthely as he before hadde promysed.

In the .vi. chappter of the .vi. boke of Polycronycon / yt is remembred that kynge Ethilstane after this subdupnge of the Scottes, beyng wyth hys lordes and kamplyers nere vnto the castell of Dunbar/prayed to god and saynte Johñ yf Beuerley, that in that countrey he myght leue some remembraunce or token, that those that then were lyuynge, and also suche as shulde come after, myghte knowe that the Scottes by ryghte shulde be subiectes to Englyshmen. And soone after wyth hys sworde he smote vppon a great stone standyng nere vnto the sayd castell/ with whyche stroke the stone was ryuen to an elle in length, that in the tyme of Edwarde the thyrde was there remaynyng to be sene. And whyther at this daye yt is so/ that I am in doute.

ye haue harde before, that kynge Ethilstane after the deth of Sythericus kynge of Northumberlande/ sealyd that lande or prouynce into hys owne handes, and putte out his sonne. whyche after allyed hym with Constantyne kynge of Scottes, and maryed his doughter. By whose ty rynge and exhortacyon, he gatheryd a company of Danys, Scottes, and other/ and entred the mouth of Humber wyth a stronge nauy.

wherof herynge Ethilstane, in all goodly haste prepared hys armye/ and at length met wyth hym and his people at a place called Brymforde, where he hadde a great and solemne victorye. For as yt is shewyd in the forsayde chappter and boke / after the kynge by helpe of god and saynt

Adelyne hadde defended the subtyll assaute made vppon hym by nyghte of his enymyes/he vppon the morne by helpe of hys brother Edmunde & Odo the archbyshoppe, chased his sayde enymyes, and slew there Constantyne kynge of Scottes, and .v. small or vnder kynges, and .xii. dukes, wyth the more partye of all the straunge nacyons at ỳ tyme there gaderyd. whyche batayll shuld be done by the meanyng of the sayd Policronicon, about ỳ last yere of his reygn.

THE .CLXXXV. CHAPITER.

IT is also testyfyed of dyuers wryters, that Ethylstane after this victory thus obteyned of the Danys and Scottes, or Scottes & Danys/ he also subdued the Northe Bryttons that dwelled at Yerforde & there about/and compelled theym to pay to hym yerely for a tribute .iii. hũdred pounde of syluer, xxv. hundred hede of nete, and .xx. pounde in gold. But Gwydo sayth that kynge Ethilstane caused to come before hym at Yerforde cytye the rulers of all the North Bryttayne / & there had wyth them suche communycacyon/that he forced them to graunte vnto hym as a yerely trybute .xx. pounde of gold. iii hundred poũde in syluer, & of heddes of nete .xxv. hundred/ wyth dogges & haukes to a certayne nomber. After whych victories he went vnto Exeter, and repayred yt & the wallys therof suffycyently.

Dane Johñ Lydgate a munke sometyme of saynt Edmundes bury, made a goodly treatyse of this kyng Ethilstane/shewynge that he was in so great persecucyon of the Danys, ỳ he was constrayned to call at wyn chester a great counsayll of his lordes. where after longe debatyng of the mater, & dyuers ambassades and messages sent about by ỳ kyng & the Danys/ It was fally cõcluded that the kynge shuld puruey hym a champyon to fyghte wyth Colbronde or Colbronde a geaunt & Dane, which the Danys had appoynted for theyr cheuetayne. wherfore the kyng enserchyng thorough his landes for such a knyght, & myght none fynde/ was in great daunger & dystresse & heynesse. And for so mych as he well perceyued ỳ mannes power fayled/ he by the aduyse of lordes spyrituall & temporall fyll to fastynge & prayer, and cõtynued therin by a certayn of tume, wyth perfyte & charitable deuocyon.

In tyme of whyche sayde abstynence/ a vysyon was shewed vnto Ethilstane, cõfortyng hym, & also cõmaundyng hym, ỳ erely vppon the nert mornynge he shuld stand at the North gate of the cytye of winchester and there he shuld fynde amonges ỳ porayll/a pylgryme clad in palmers wede, whome he shulde chose for his champyon. After whyche vysyon thus to hym shewyd, he dyd accordyngly/ and founde a man of goodly stature, and somdeale stryken in age, and clade as he was monyshed by the vysyon. wherof he fyrste gaue vnto god thankynges/ and after made requeſt to this pylgryme, that he wold take vpon hym thys batayll for the defence of the lande/ whyche layde for hym many reasonable excuses, as well for his age as otherwise. How be it finally he graũted ỳ kyng to fullfyll his requeſt and cõmaundement. And at the daye before nympted and assygned met in the feld with the forenamed geaunt called Colbronde, wythoute the gate of ỳ cytye in a medow or pasture called Hydemede/where betwene them two was faughten a longe and cruell fyghte, so that the kynge was in great fere of hys champyon. But fynally by helpe

helpe of god the pylgryme wanne the honoure of that fyghte/and slew that geaunt that was of excedynge stature, and therunto of great and passynge strength. whyche vycto rye by the pylgryme thus by grace obteyned/ the kynge wyth his baro-ny fette hym into the cityе of wynche ster wyth solemne processyon, and cō ueyed hym vnto the cathedral chirch of the same / where he thanked god wyth great deuocyon, & offryd there the are, wyth the whych he had slayn the Danys champyon. After whych oblacyon with dew reuerence & other obseruances by hym and other fy-nyshed / the kynge caused hym to be conueyed vnto hys courte, where he taryed that nyght wyth myche daun ger. And vppon the morne erely he made suche meanes / that he wolde nedely departe, and ỹ in the same ap parell ỹ he came thyther. when the kynge was aduertysed that his pyl-gryme wold so hastly departe/whom he entendyd to haue holden wyth hym in his courte, and to haue en-dowed with ryche possessyons: he cō maunded hym to be brought vnto hys presence. And when he sawe he coude not cause him to tary, he requi red hym to shewe his name / wherof also he besought the kyng to pardon hym. wherfore the kyng cōsyderyng hys hasty departynge, wyth many other thynges in hym to be consyde-red / was the more desyrous to haue of hym some knowlege. And for that he was effectuose in his desyre, when the pylgryme perceyuyd that he coude not wyth the kynges plea-sure departe wythoute dysclosynge of hys name/ he sayde he myght not dyscouer hys name wythin the wal les of the cytye, wythoute the offence of hys conscyence.

wherfore the kyng graunted to go wyth hym tyll he were in the brode feldes. Vppon whyche graunt thus made/ the kynge commaunded dy-uers great gyftes to be to hym pre-sented, whyche all he vtterly refused. Shortely to cōclude/the kyng wyth a certayne of his lordes conueyed this sayd pylgryme vnto the townes ende. And when he was thyther cō-men/ he there requyred of the perfor maunce of the promyse. where thys pylgryme syttynge one his kne / be-soughte the kynge of his especyall grace, that he wolde put a parte his lordes and other, so that he myghte shewe vnto hym his name onely.

whyche done / he in moste humble wyse besoughte hym, that he wolde kepe hys name secrete for the space of.xxiiii.oures. where of by ỹ kyng af fyrmaunce to hym fyrmely made/ he shewed vnto hym, that he was hys naturall lyege man and subiect, and that his name was Guy of warwike. Of whyche tydynges the kyng was very ioyous, and offeryd hym then of newe many ryche rewardes and gyftes. But all was in vayne, for he wolde nothynge receyue/ so that the kynge and he lastely departed wyth weppynge eyen. And after as affyr-meth my sayde authoure / not farre from warwyke in a wylderneſſe, he purchased by goddes puruеyaunce a lodgynge in a heremytage/ where by the terme of two yeres and more he dwelled & kept an harde lyfe.

And herynge that dame Felyce his owne wyfe fed dayly.xiii.poore men for Cristes sake/he went thyther son dry tymes and fette there his almes/ hys sayde wyfe then lyenge at the ca stell of warwyke, not knowynge of any man what he was / tyll lastely he was visited with so sore sykenes, that he knew well that he shuld dye. wherefore he sente hys weddynge rynge vnto hys wyfe/ requyrynge her in all haste to come and speke

wyth hym. whych she obeyed in humble wyse/ and sped her vnto the sayd Heremytage wyth all womanly dylygence; and lande hym deed at her commynge/ whom she besyent with many a salt tere. And as she was enfourmed of the messenger as he dyed she buryed hym ryghte there. And more ouer as sayth my sayd authour he monyshed her by the sayd messenger, that she shulde prouyde for her selfe/ for she shuld also alter her mor tall lyfe the.xv. day folowyng. which also she obeyed, and made suche prouysyon, that she was in that place buryed by hym. All whyche mater the sayde Dane Johñ Lydgate affyrmeth, that he toke out of the boke of Gerarde Cambrēs / whyche wrote mych of the dedes and storyes of the prynces of Englande, as Policronica and other authour testyfyen / and as the sayde Lydgate in the ende of his sayde treatyse wytnessyth, as by the mater folowynge appereth.

For more authorite, as of this mater
This translacyon, such as in sentēce
Out of laten made by the cronycler
Called of old Gerardus Cambrēce/
whyche wrote the dedes, wyth great dylygence.
Of them that were in weste Saxon crowned kynges,
Greatly cōmendyd for theyr knyghtly excellence
Guy of warwyke, in hys famouse wrytynges.

ALL whyche sayde treatyse is shewyd at length in meter of viii. staues, after the manet of the precedentes, by the dylygent labour of the sayde Dane Johñ Lydgate. The whyche I haue here sette in/ for so mych as yt concernyth mater that was done in the tyme of the reygne of thys Ethylstane. The whyche after the accorde of moste wryters, brought thys lande agayne to one monarchye / and reygned as kynge therof by the full terme of.xvi. yeres/ and was buryed at the monastery of Malmysbury, leuynge after hym no chylde. wherfore the rule of the land fyll vnto Edmunde his brother.

Francia.

THE.CLXXXVI. CHAPITER.



LEwys the sonne of Charlis ỹ symple/ beganne hys reygne ouer the Frenchmen, in ỹ yere of our lorde ix. hundred and xxiiii/ and the. ix yere of Ethelstane then kynge of Englande. ye haue harde before in the ende of the storye of Charlys ỹ symple, how Elgina the quene wyth Lewys her yonger sonne, was fledde into England to her father Edward the elder. wherfore ỹ lordes of Fraūce not knowynge where she with the Chylde was gone/ chose the forenamed Rauf. for theyr kynge. After whose deth the said lordes of Fraūce beynge ascertayned of the beynge of the sayd Lewys in England/ sent vnto hym the archbyshop of Senys, & Hughe surnamed le graunde/ desyrynge hym to retorne into Fraunce, and take therof possessyon.

Then Elgina herynge the message of the lordes, and trustyng vnto thē/ by counsayll of her frendes made her redy wyth her son, & sayled shortly after into Fraunce. where she was receyued wyth myche honour/ & shortly after crowned her sonne Lewys kynge/ at the cytye of Laoñ.

This Lewys is named ỹ.v. Lewys. In the thyrde yere of whose reygne fyll a scarcytye of corne & vytayll/ by reason

reason wherof ensued a great famyn in so myche that people doyded the realme, & many dyed for defaut. For as wytnesseth the frenche cronycle/a quarter of whete was then worth .xx. pounde. of ỹ money/which is of value after sterlynge money .l.s. or there about. This kyng beryng in mynd the murder and treason done agayn his father by Hebert, as before in the story of Charlis the symple is declared, cast and ymagined in his mynde how he myght wythout shedynge of blood, reuenge the deth of his fader/ and after many ymagynacyons and thoughtis reuolued in his mynde, he lastely dyuysed a letter/the whych he charged a seruaunt of his to bryng to hys presence when he was sette amonge his lordes in counsayll. when kynge Lewys hadde compassed this in hys mynde/ he for nedes of hys realme called a great coũsayll of his barony at Laoñ/ whyther amonges the other, the sayde Heberte erle of Vermendoys was warned to come. And when the kynge was ascertayned of theyr commynges/he apoynted a secrete cõpanye in harnes to be in a secrete chamber, nere vnto the place of the sayde counsayll / and at conuenient tyme after yode vnto the same, and all his lordes wyth hym. And when he hadde a season commoned wyth hys lordes of suche maters as hym lyked / sodeynly came one to hym and sayd that a man was cõmen wyth a letter dyrected to hys grace oute of Englande / the whych he commaunded to be broughte vnto hys syghte.

When the kyng hadde vnfolde the letter, and radde a parte therof, he smyled. whereof the lordes beynge ware purposed the kynge to haue receyued some iewyllys or ioyous nouellys oute of Englande.

Whyle the kynge was aboute to delyuer this letter to his scribe or secretary/ one of hys lordes sayde vnto hym. Syr we truste ye haue some iocande & mery tydynges oute of Englãde, that ye haue cause of smilyng. I shall shewe the cause to you sayde the kyng. There is dwellyng in England a kynnesman of myne named Harman/the whych is a man of grete myghte, and myne especyall frende. He shewyth me by this letter, that an husbandeman or a vyleyne badde or requyred hys lorde vnto his howse to dyner/ and vnder the coloure therof he slewe hys sayde lorde. And for the sayde Harman thynketh the law of that lande to fauourable for such an haynous dede/hetherfore writeth to me to haue myne aduyse in thys mater. wherfore sens ye be all present/ I praye you shewe to me your oppynyons in this mater. whych with one voyce sayde ỹ the murderer was worthy to suffer the moste shamefull and cruell deth, & to be hanged and strangled in a rope. But for ỹ kynge wolde be certaynely enfourmed of the consentes of theym all/ he began at the hygest, and so pursued theym tyll he came to Hebert erle of Vermẽdoys/ the whych alowed the sentẽce as the other hadde done.

Then the kynge made a token to ỹ walshemen betwene hym & them before appoynted/ so ỹ anon they were present, & sette sure hold vppon the sayde Hebert. To whom the kynge sayd, Hebert thou art the husbondman or vilayne ỹ I haue spoken of/ whych slew his lord vnder colour of byddynge or gestynge hym in hys house. For traytourly thou dydeste requyre my lorde and father vnder thyne house or castell of Peroñ/ and there not remembrynge the kyndnes to the by hym before dayes shewyd, nor thyne allegyauntes and trouthe that toward hym thou shuldest haue

borne/kept hym lyke a prysoner and lastely murderyd hym, to the greate daunger agayne god, & to the world shame. wherfore accordynge to thy desert, and after thyne own sentence and iudgemēt/ take now thy reward and guardon.

After whyche sentence thus gyuen by the kynge/ the sayde Hebert was by the executers ladde vnto an hylle wythout the cityе of Laoñ/and there most shamefully hanged. whych hyll for that cause was named Hebertes hyll longe tyme after.

About thys tyme the seconde duke of Normandy named wyllyam longa Spata, ỳ son of Rollo or Robert fyrste duke of Normandy/ was slayne by treason of one Arnolde erle of Flaūdres/ for encheson that the sayd wyllyam ayded a noble man of Picardy named Herloyñ, agayne the sayde Arnolde.

This wyllyam left after hym a son named Richarde/ whych at the tyme of his fathers deth was not of suffycient age to rule so gret a dukedome. wherfore Lewys kynge of Fraunce desyrous of that prouynce, whyche of late dayes belonged to his antecessours and progenitours/ sought besyly the wayes and meanes, to haue this chylde Richarde vnder his tuycyon & gydynge. And this to bryngе to effecte he spedde hym vnto Roañ/ callynge there before hym the lordes and rulers of the countrey/haupnge vnto them many plesaunt and fayre wordes, in promysyng to them ayde and assystence to reuenge the deth of theyr lorde and duke/and in the conclusyon desyred of them ỳ he myght haue the norysshynge and bryngyng vp of the chylde, tyll he came to hys lawfull age.

whyche thynge thus by the kynge desyred/the lordes anon coniectured in theyr myndes, ỳ he desyred the kepyng of theyr yonge lord, to ỳ ende ỳ he myghte ỳ more easely obteyne the possessiōn of that dukedome. For the whych, the lordes and other of the cytye were in great rumour and grudge agayne the kynge. wherof he beynge monyshed, to appeace the multytude/ the kynge toke the chylde in his armes, and so bare hym into the place of the assemble of the people/ & there shewyd vnto theym wyth affyrmaunce of great othes, that hys entent was onely for ỳ wele of the child and for defence of hys countrey, and not to clayme any ryghte or tytle of the duchy/excepte onely the homage therof, whyche belongeth to hym by iuste tytle.

By meane of whyche fayre speche, the kynge obteyned his purpose, and caried the chyld with hym into Fraūce, not forgetynge the vnkynde dealynge of the Normans.

when Arnolde erle of Flaūdres vnderstode that to the kynge of Fraūce the guydynge of ỳ yonge chyld was commytted, ferynge ỳ he wyth power of the Normans wolde ronne vpon hym in reuengynge of the chyldes fathers deth/ sent vnto the kyng x. pounde weyghte of golde, wherof euery pounde cōteyneth. xii. ounces, and euery oūce in value of fyne gold xl. s̄ / so that after this rate his presente shulde be in value to ỳ summe of .ii. hundred & .xl. pounde. All be yt mayster Gagwyne sayth he sent vnto hym but .xl. marke/ besechyng him to be his good and gracyous lorde, and not to gyue to hasty credence to hys accusours. For he in suche wyse wolde declare hym selfe, and delyuer vnto the kynge the murderers of duke wyllyam / be meane wherof he shulde certaynly know, that he was innocēte of the sayd dukes deth. And ouer this he made a frende about the kynge, whyche spake good wordes

for hym

for hym, & put in the kynges mynde the great hurtes & iniuryes that he and his progenytours hadde sustey-ned of the Danys or Normans. By meane whereof this murdour was forgoten/ & more and more the kyng malygned agayne the Normans/ and to the chylde he bare not so good mynde as some men thoughte that he wolde do.

Uppon a daye when the kyng was retourned from hys dysporte of hun tynge/ a lyght cõplaynt was brought to hym of the chylde Rycharde, of an offence that he had commytted. For the which he rebuked him otherwyse then was syttyng to his honour, and called hym opprobryously, and thre-tened hym greuously/ and after that caused hym to be kept more straytly, then he before hadde vsed to be.

To this chylde Rycharde was as-sygned a mayster or teacher named Osmunde/ whyche Osmunde hadde a kaumplyer named Juon. These two apperceyuynge the kynges indygna cyon that he bare towarde the chyld/ studyed for his enlargynge, and last ly coũsaylyd hym that he shuld fayne hym self syke. The whych was done, in suche wyse that all suche as away ted vppon hym, supposed hym to be very syke, by reason wherof his ke-pers toke the lesse cure of hym.

wherof Osmunde beynge ware, and also beynge sure of the kynge/ made a great trusse of herbes or grasse, wherin he wrapped the chyld, and so conueyed hym oute of the cytye of Laon / and there receyued hym an horse redy for the iourney / & so sped hym vnto Colup, and delyueryd the chylde to the captayne of that town. And from thẽs he rode all nyght tyll he came vnto Senlys/ & there shew-ed all hys doynge vnto ỹ erle of that coũtrey named Bernard, which was nere kynnesman vnto ỹ yonge duke.

THE .CLXXXVII. CHAPITER.

BErnarde haupnge knowlege of the escape of his kynnesmã Rycharde / sente in all haste vnto Hugh le graunde erle of Parys, for to haue his ayde and assystence. The whych without taryeng assẽbled his knyghtes, and conueyed the chylde from Coulsy to Senlys or Saynlys to his neuewe Bernarde / where he was receyued wyth mych ioye and honoure.

when Lewys was ascertayned of the scape of Rycharde, and howe he was in the guydynge of Hughe the great or graunde/ anon he sent vnto hym, gyuynge hym in commaunde-ment that he shulde restore the chyld to hym. The whyche excused hym, and sayde that the chylde was in the keppynge of erle Bernarde and not in hys.

The kynge seynge how he was de-luded / sente for Arnolde or Arnulfe erle of Flaundres/ whyche at his cõ-maundement counsayled the kynge to wynne Hugh le graũde with riche behestes or gyftes. After whose coun sayll worchynge/ kynge Lewys wyl led the sayd Hugh to mete with hym at the crosse of Compeyñ, where the sayd Hugh shortly after met with the kynge. To whome the kynge promy sed great parte of the duchy of Nor-mandy/ wyth that that he wolde re-fuse the partye of the Normans, and take his parte agayne them. By mea ne of which promises this erle Hugh was ouercomẽ/ and agreed with the kynge to warre vppon one parte of the countrey, whyle he warred vpon that other. And forthwyth receyuyd an armye of the kynge, and spedde hym to Bayoñ, & made cruell warre vppon that countrey. And kynge Le wys entryd vppon the prouynce of Caux / and wasted and spoyled that

Coste in all that he myghte.

whan Barnarde the Dane, and also Barnarde erle of Senlys, conceyued ỹ vntrouth of Hugh le graũt, and also the greate hostes that they were beset wyth/by theyr counsayles and other they sent vnto the kynge certayne messengers, gyuynge them in commaundement to saye, that in vayne the kynge hadde entred that countre with his armye/for the citye of Roan and all the prouince was at hys commaundement. Besechynge hym not to waste nor spoyle the coũtre/but to ayde and helpe defende it agayne theyr enemyes.

Of thys message the kynge was eyght fayne/and forthwith sped hym tyll he came to Roan, wher he was accordynge to hys honour receyued. For the whyche cause he sent in all hast vnto Arnulfe erle of Flaũders/ monassynge hym that he sease of his warres in Bayon, tyll he receyued farther knowlege.

The kyng thus restyng in Roan, deuysed hys maters at hys pleasure/ so that the Normayns obeyed them to all hys requestes. And for ỹ good aberynge that Barnarde the Dane was of agayne the kynge/he graunted to hym the gydynge of the ponge duke. And whan he shulde departe/ he ordeyned as hys deputye one named Raoull or Rauf. The whyche after the kynges departure, behaued hym so cruelly to the Normans/that they were very irke of hym. And ouer thys the forsayd Barnard kepynge the kynges retorne, and other more greuous punysshement than they before hadde sustayned/sent his messengers vnto Grolle kynge of Denmarke than beynge at Chyerbourk/wyllyng hym to assemble his people/and to make of them two hostes. wherof to sende ỹ one by lande, and that other by water/& so to entre the costre of Normandy in wastyng and spoylynge it/ by reason wherof he myghte brynge the kynge to some cõmunycacyon. whych all was done as the sayd Barnarde had deuysed.

whan the kynge had wyttyng of the Danys, that wyth so grete a multytude were entred the prouynce of Normandy/ he assembled hys hoste and sped hym thytherwarde/ and in processe of tyme came vnto the cytye of Roane. where by hys counsayle it was condyscended, that a metynge and frendly communycacyon shulde be had bytwene the kynge & the sayd Grolle, at a place called in Frenche Herlycum. where at the day appoynted bothe princes mette, wyth bothe hostes standynge or haynge a lytell dystaũce of. And whyle the two princes were there in communycacyon of the deth and murder of duke willm̃/ a Dane markynge Herloyne (For whose causes, as before is shewed duke willm̃ was slayne) with a spere wounded hym so greuously that he dyed forthwyth, whych dede hys brother called Lambert wyth other of ỹ Frenchmen entendynge to reuenge, wyth theyr wepons fylle vppon the Danys/whyche them receyued with greate vyolence. So that of that a fraye ensued a skyrmysshe/and after the skyrmysshe a sore batayle. For bothe hostes ioyned on bothe sydes/ and faught cruelly eyther with other a longe whyle. But in the ende the Frenchmen had the worse, and were compelled to flee. And the kynge to saue hys lyfe fledde also/ whyche by reason of hys vntrusty horse was taken and kepte secrete a certayne of tyme by his taker. But lastly he was discouered and brought to the cytye of Roane as a prysoner.

The kynge thus beynge in holde vnder the keppynge of the Danys/ Engeberge hys wyfe makynge for hym

hym grete dole and sorowe/toke her iourney to the kynge of Germany, whose doughter she was/ besechyng hym to prouyde for the delyuerye of her lorde and husbande. But of hym had she no socour/ but rather dyscōfort/shewyng to her that the trowble that her husbande sustayned he had well deserued, for his vnstedfastnesse that he agayne wyllyam the duke & Rycharde hys sonne had vsed.

wherfore the quene beynge thus answered of her father / rode vnto Hugh le graunde, besechyng hym of helpe in this greate nede. The which at the request of the quene sent vnto Barnard erle of Senlys/ requiryng to moue some wayes to the Danys for the enlargynge of the kynge. By whose labour and meanys lastely a counsayle was kepte at saynt Clere vpon the ryuer of Ept. where after many argumentes & reasons made/ fynally it was agreed that the kyng shulde be enlarged tyll an other day of cōmunycacyon/ layenge for pledges hys sonne and heyre named Lothayr, the bysshop of Senlys, and ỹ bysshop of Beauuayse. whyche done the kynge was set at large, and forth wyth rode vnto the cytye of Laon. where he abode the other daye of cōmunycacyon/ whyche after was holden at ỹ forsayd ryuer of Ept. And concluded a peas, whyche lasted but a shorte whyle after.

Thys peas thus confermed/ Grollo the kynge of Danys wyth greate gyftes was retorned from whens he was desyred. And Richarde the ponge duke toke vpon hym the rule of hys owne Signory/ and grewe and encreased forthwardly. wherof Hugh the graunde takyng hede/ and behol dynge hys wyse demeanure and conuersacyon / made suche labour and meanes vnto Barnarde erle of Senlis, ỹ he maried to hym his doughter named Emmacet. wherof beynge enformed the French kynge / caste in hys mynde thys greate alyaunce by twene the ponge duke and two grete perys of hys lande / and thoughte ỹ these .iii. knet in amyte and alyaunce shulde dysturbe hym whan them lyked. wherof he called to hym Arnold erle of Flaunders / by whose counsayle he sent the sayde Arnolde vnto Otto kynge of Germany / requyrynge hym of ayde to warre vpon ỹ Normayns, and to breke thys affynyte of thys ponge duke, & of Hugh le graunde, and of Barnarde erle of Senlys/ and for his labour he shuld haue to hym and to hys heyres the prouynce or lordshyp of Lorayne.

Otto wyth thys couetous promesse deceyued, assēbled his knyghtes/ and at the day and place appoynted met wyth the kynge/ and wyth theyr people sped them to Roan, and layde siege vnto ỹ cytye. And whyle the kynges were occupyed in wastynge and brennynge the vylages nere vnto the cytye/ to put the Normans in the more fere, Otto sent hys neuewe wyth a certayne of hys people in secrete wyse to the gates of the cytye. But whan he was comen to the gate that opened towarde the ryuer of Sayn, and thoughte there to wynne hys enterprise/ ỹ cytesyns issued out vppon hym sodeynly, and gaue to hym batayle/ and slewe hym and many of hys company, and the remenaunt they chased frō the walles of the cytye.

whan Otto had wyttyng of the ouerthrowe of hys men and deth of his neuew, whom he entyerly loued/ he made inward heuynesse, and caste in his mynde how he myght reuenge the deth of hys neuewe. But whan he approched the cytye, and beheld the strength therof, wyth also the fyersnesse of the Normādes/ he repented hym

ted hym of enterpryſyng of that iour ney/and torned all hys hatered vnto Arnolde erle of Flaunders,by whoſe ſterynge and counſayle that vyage was fyrſte begon/in ſo mych that he ſought the meanes to brynge ỹ ſayd Arnolde into the handes of the Normans.

Wherof Arnolde beynge warned/ truſſed his ſtuffe and harneys ſecretly,and in the nyght ſtale away/and ſo retorned into Flaunders with his retynew.The whych thyng knowen to the two kynges/ in as ſecrete wiſe as they myghte departed alſo from ỹ ſiege.But yet therof they? enmyes beynge ware / purſued them & ſlewe many of they? company. And or the yere that thys was done in,had rõne hys full compas, Lewys the kynge dyed and was buryed in the temple of the holy byſſhoppe ſaynte Remygius wythin the cytye of Raynys/ whan he had reygned in great trouble.xxi.yeres/ leuynge for hys heyre a ſonne named Lothayr.

Anglia.

THE.CIXXXVIII.CHAPITER.

Edmunde ỹ brother of Ethelſtaſi and ſonne of Edwarde the elder, & of Ethelwyda the thyrde wyfe of the ſayd Edwarde/ begã hys reygne ouer Englande, in the yere of our lorde.ix. hundred and.xl/ and the.viii.yere of the.v.Lewys thã kynge of Fraunce.

In the fyrſte yere of hys reygne, the Danys of Northumberland rebelled agayne hym.And for to make they? party the ſtrõger/ they ſent for a prynce of Danys named Aulaffe than beynge in Irlande. The whych brought wyth hym an other prynce or ruler of Danys named Reygnald wyth a great hoſte of Danys & other ſtraũge nacyons/and entred the fore ſayd countre,and warred vppon the nert borders, in waſtynge and ſpoylynge the inhabytaũtes of the ſame.

Wherof whan kyng Edmund was warned/ anone he aſſembled hys people and ſped hym toward ỹ countre/ and laſtly faught wyth the two ſayd prynces of the Danys, or at the leeſt chaced them from towne to towne tyll he forſyd them wyth all they? cõpany of ſtraunge nacyons to forſake vtterly that prouynce/and bet down that countre of Cumberlande ỹ had mych fauoured and ayded the ſayde enmyes agayne hym/and toke therin greate prayes, and deuyded them amõges hys knyghtes. And ỹ done/ other for the good ſeruyce that Malcolyñ kynge of Scotlande hadde in thys vyage done vnto the kynge, or for the trowth and allegyaunce that he in tyme folowyng ſhulde bere vnto hym, or for bothe/the kynge gaue there to the ſayd Malcolyñ the countre of Cumberlande,and ſealed all ỹ reſydue of the kyngdom or lordſhyp of Northumberlande, and ioyned it vnto hys owne kyngdome.

But yet ỹ Danys retorned agayn in the tyme of Edgedus the nexte kynge as after ſhalbe ſhewed/ſo that as yet the fyne or ende of thys kyngdome is not accompted.

In thys Edmundus dayes the authour of Polycronyca ſayth, that whan Edmunde hadde ended hys iourney,and ſet that countree in an order / he toke wyth hym the bones of the holy abbot Colfrydus, and of that holy abbeſſe Hylda , & brought theym vnto Glaſtenbury,and there ſhryned theym. This Colfryde was abbot of Bedas abbey , or of the abbey of Gyrwye/& Hilda was abbeſſe of Stenſhalt or whytby. And as af-

ferneth

fermeth ꝑ ſayd authour, both places ben in ꝑ Northpartyes of England.

Thys kynge Edwarde had a noble woman to wyfe named Elgina/ of whom he receyued two ſonnes named Edwyne and Edgar.

And as teſtyfyeth Henry archedekē of Huntyngdon/thys Edward had ofte warre wyth the Danes/the whyche as he affermeth helde than many good townes in myddle England, as Lyncolñ, Notinghām, Derby, Staffordde, & Laycetour/ ꝑ which by his knyghtly manhode he wanne from them. And by the helpe of holy Dunſtan/he amēded many thynges within his realm ꝑ had bē lōge tyme miſordered by meane of ꝑ Danys.

Of the ende or fyne of thys Edmunde dyuers opynyons there be. For Marianus the Scot ſayth, that whyle thys kynge Edmunde endeuered hym ſelfe to ſaue his ſewer frō the daūger of hys enemye, that wold haue ſlayne hym at Pulkerchyrche/ the kynge in ryddynge of the fraye was wounded to the deth, and dyed ſhortly after.

But wyllyam de regibus ſayth, that the kynge beynge at a feeſt at ꝑ foreſayd towne or place, vppon the daye of ſaynte Auguſtyne/ eſpyed a felon ſyttyng in ꝑ halle named Leof, whych he before tyme for hys felony hadde exyled/ and lept ouer the table and plucked that theefe by the here of the hedde to the grounde. In whych doynge the ſayd felon wyth a knyfe wounded the kynge to the deth/ and alſo wyth the ſame knyfe wounded many other of the kynges ſeruauntes/ and at length was all to hewen & dyed forthwyth. If this be trewe/ it ſhulde ſeme that kynges at thoſe dayes vſed not the honour that they nowe haue and exerceyſe. But whych of theſe two meanes was vſed in the kynges deth/ by agreemēt of all wyters thys kynge dyed, whan he had reygned. vi. yeres and more/ & was buryed at Glaſtenbury the whyche before he hadde ſumptuouſly repayred/ and lafte after hym two ponge ſonnes, as before is remembred, Edwyne and Edgar. But for they were to ponge to rule the lande/ therfore ꝑ rule therof was cōmytted to Edred they vncle & brother to theyr fader.

THE. CLXXXIX. CHAPITER.

EDredus ꝑ brother of Edmūde and ſonne of Edwarde the elder, and of Ethylſwyda hys thyrde wyfe/ began his reygne ouer the realme of Englande, in the yere of our lorde. ix. hundred and. lxvii/ and the xiii. yere of the fyfte Lewys thā kyng of Fraunce. The whych as before is towched was admytted kyng by authoryte of hys barony. For ſo mychē as the two forenamed chylderne of Edmunde, Edwyn and Edgar, were thought to ponge and inſuffycyent to take vpon them ſo great a charge. The whyche Edrede was enoynted kynge of Oddo archbyſhop of Cāterbury in ꝑ towne of Kyngeſtowne. And ſoone after he warred vpon the Danys, that then were reentred into Northumberland/ or after ſome wyters, there dwellynge vnder trybute of the kynge, ſubdued before of Edmunde hys brother/ and bette theym downe, and cauſed theym to holde and obeye vnto theyr former couenauntes. And the Scottes than began to varye which he alſo brought vnto due obedyence.

After a certayne terme/ ꝑ Danys of Northumberlande, whyche euer contynued full of gyle and dowblenelle, not beyng content to holde the couenaūtes before made & promiſſes vnto Edredus the kynge/ called vnto theym theyr olde aſſeſſaryes and helpers,

helpers, and bereuyd from the kynges subiectes the cytye of yorke and other stronge townes and castelles, to the great hurte of the coūtrey, and vtter displeasure of the kynge. wherfore he beynge therof aduertysed / in goodly and conuenyent haste assembled hys people, and spedde hym thyther, and destroyed myche of the lande. And in that fury brent the abbey of Ryppon, whyche the Danys kept for a fortresse and strength / and wan from them myche of the strengthes that they to fore had wōne / and broughte theym agayne vnder hys subiectyon.

when this kynge Edrede had thus spedde hys iourney, and was retournynge into Englande, nothynge suspectynge the sayde Danys / a company of them by the excytyng of Hyrcus a kyng or prynce of the Danys, thē folowyd the kinges hoste, and on thys halfe yorke fyll vppon the kynges rerewarde, and destroyed & slew many a man. For the whyche doyng the kynge was sore amoued / & tourned hys people agayne, entendynge to haue destroyed ỹ countrey vtterly.

wherof the Danys beynge ware / so lowely meked theym vnto hym, & gaue to hym suche gyftes, that the kyng refrayned hym of the great yre that he had purposed to theym. But amonges other articles ỹ he bounde them vnto / one was that they shuld banysshe and vtterly refuse theyr fore sayde duke or kynge called Hyrcus. whyche thynge with dyuers and many other graunted & fermely bounde to kepe, as well by hostages taken as other suertye / the kynge retourned into England ioynyng this kyngedome to hys other. So that here is rekened the ende of this kyngdome / whyche shulde endure as before is shewyd in the .C.ix. chapyter of thys worke, by the terme of foure hundred & .ix. yeres.

In the same yere that the kynge hadde thus subdued the danys, a strong sykenesse toke hym / wherfore he sent for holy byshoppe Dunstane to come vnto hym. The whych Dunstane in goynge towarde the kynge / harde a voyce saye vnto hym, now reysyth kynge Edredus in peace. At tyme of whych voyce thus sayenge / the horse of that holy byshop fyll to the grounde and dyed, wythout hurtynge of hys mayster.

Then this holy man continued his iourney, and fande the kynge dede at his commynge / whome he buryed wyth great reuerence, in the monastery or cathedrall chyrche of the cytye of wynchester, in the .xxviii. yere of his age, and the .x. yere of hys reygne, as testyfyeth Guydo and other.

Francia.

THE .CXC. CHAPITER.



Otharius the eldest sonne of the v. Lewys / began his reygne ouer the Frenchemen, in the yere of our lordes incarnacyon. ix. hundred & lb / and ỹ. viii. yere of Edredus then kynge of Englande. Thys Lothayr by meanes of Thebaude or Theobalde erle of Chartres, toke partye agayne Rycharde duke of Normandye. And for to haue agayn hym som groūdely cause, he sent vnto ỹ duke, monyshynge hym to haue in mynde, the fayth and allegyaunce that the dukes of Normandye ought to bere vnto the kynges of Fraūce. And for mayntenynge of the same, and for other maters that he hadde to speke wyth hym of / he wylled hym to come to a place appoynted, where all such maters

maters myght haue farther expedicion. All whyche commaundement or requeſt was graunted of the duke.

When the kynge had receyued this anſwere from the duke, wherof he demyd before the contrary / he ſent for Arnolde erle of Flaundres, Godfrey erle of Angewe, and Theobalde before named. By whoſe counſayles after many argumentes made / the kynge agreed to call the duke vnto the ryuer of Iſayr, & there to betraye hym. At which daye & place appoynted/ ỹ duke with a cõuenyent cõpany came vnto the ſayd ryuer ſyde, there abydyng the cõmyng of Lothayr vpon ỹ other ſyde/ whyche laſtly came thyther wyth a great people. wherof when the duke was ware he fered treaſon/ for the whyche cauſe he ſent eſpyes to knowe of the kynges entent. And they as wyſe mẽ eſpyed all the purpoſe of the hoſte/ and ſhortely retourned, and ſhewed to the duke that he was in great daunger. The whyche ſhortely after apperyd/ for the Frenchemen began to paſſe the ryuer in great nomber.

Then duke Rychard conſyderyng that he was of ſo litell myght to withſtande the great power of the frẽche hoſte/ ſente a parte of his men to defende the paſſage, & wyth the remenaunt retourned vnto the cytye of Roañ. wherof the kynge beyng ware that the duke was hym eſcaped/ called agayne his people, & wyth great dyſpleaſure retourned vnto Laon.

It was not longe after ỹ the kyng aſſembled a great hoſte of Burgonyons and Frenchemen / & entred into Normandye, and beſeged the cytye of Bayon, and laſtly wanne it by the treaſon of one Gylberde a ſmyth belongynge vnto ỹ erle Theobald aboue named. when the kynge hadde thus wõne ỹ citye of Bayon/ he betoke the keppynge therof vnto the ſayde erle. The whyche puttynge therin a ſtrength of knyghtes/ yode vnto a caſtell called Harmauyle, & beſegyd yt wyth a certayn of knyghtes. In whyche ſeaſon the kynge for nedes of his realme/ retourned into Fraunce.

When duke Rychard was ware of the kynges departure/ he wyth hys people paſſed the water of Sayñ/ & coſted the countrey, & fyll ſodaynely vppon erle Theobalde lyenge at the forſayd ſyege/ and ſlewe of his men vi. hũdred & .xl. perſons/ and put the erle in ſuch a fere, that he ſcaped with great daunger, and fledde with ſmal company, tyll he came to his owne citye of Charters.

Then duke Rychard conſyderyng the great malice of his foon & ſtrẽgth of them/ ſent vnto the kynge of Denmarke then named Erarde, requyryng him of ayde or helpe for to withſtande the malyce of his enymyes.

The whych Erarde receyued gladly that meſſage, & promyſed to them all theyr requeſt/ & ſhortely after ſent to the ſayd duke a great army of Danys, which ſped thẽ by ỹ ſee tyll they came to to the place where the water of Sayñ falleth into the ſee. wherof the duke beynge aduertyſed, in ſhort ſpace drew vnto them wyth his people/ and ſo with them entred the coũtrey of ỹ erle of Chartris, in waſtyng & deſtroynge it wythout mercy / and after entred the landes of Fraunce, in pyllynge, robbynge, brennynge, & waſtynge yt, and ſlew ỹ people without mercy and pyty.

For this myſery & tyranny thus exercyſed by the Danys/ ỹ kyng beyng therwyth confuſed, ſente for the byſſhoppes of his land, to haue theyr aduyce. Amonges the which the biſhop of Chartris beynge preſent, was by the hole counſayll admitted to go to the duke, and knowe the cauſe why that he beynge a cryſten man, made

ſuche deſtruccyon of the cryſten peo-
ple, and occupyed the land of cryſten
men with ſo manyfolde harmes and
ſcathes/and to conclude the trew or
trewce for a certayne of tyme. The
ſayde byſhoppe accomplyſſynge the
kynges pleaſure, was anſwered of
the duke/that this veracyon that he
put the lande of Fraunce to, was for
the iniurye ỹ the kyng hadde before
tyme done vnto hym/& yet cõtynued
the ſame in holdynge from hym hys
cytye of Bayon, the whych he hadde
gyuen to his great enymy the erle of
Chartris. So that in concluſyon a
reſtraynte of warre was graunted,
vppon condycyon that by a day aſſy-
gned, the kynge wold apoynte a day
of communycacyon/and in the mea-
ne tyme reſtore vnto hym hys cytye
of Bayon.

when the kynge had receyued ỹ an
ſwere from the duke/ he made ſuche
meanes that ỹ duke receyued his city
of Bayon, with all dyſpeaſure forgy
uen agayn ỹ forenamed Theobald.
whych was done by medyacyon of a
relygyous munke, as affermeth the
Frenche boke. And after the daye of
metynge was appoynted at a place
called Gyndolfoſſ. where the duke
made ordynaũce for receyuynge of ỹ
kyng/and cõmaunded the paynyms
and Danis to behaue them reuerent
ly agayne the kynge and his people/
the whych was obeyed in all due ma
ner. And ỹ kyng there receyued with
myche honour, hadde vnto the duke
many goodly wordes, requyrynge
hym to forget all his former vnkynd
neſſe, truſtynge to ſhewe vnto hym
ſuche pleaſures in tyme to come, that
ſhulde recompence all the former diſ
pleaſures and vnkyndnes by him be
fore committed. wyth whyche fayre
ſpeche the duke takynge yt without
dyſſymulacyon, was well ſatyſfyed
and content/ſo that after aſſuraunce
of amytye and peace betwene theym
ſtablyſſhed, eyther gyuynge vnto
other great and ryche gyftes, they de
parted as frendes. The whych peas
contynued durynge theyr lyues.

THE.CXCI. CHAPITER.

LOthayre thus beyng in loue
and amytye wyth the Nor-
mans / caſte in his mynde howe he
myght wynne from his neuewe Ot-
thon kynge of Germany, ỹ prouynce
of Auſtracy or Lorayn, ỹ in tyme paſ
ſed was belongynge to his progeny
tours. And this to bryng to effecte/
he gaderyd in right ſecret wyſe a cho
ſen hoſt of Frenchemen, & with them
paſſed the countrey, in ſuch wiſe that
he was entred the cytye of Aquiſgra
ni, or any great fame or noyſe were
therof made. wherwith Otthon beyng
dyſmade/fledde for that ſeaſon, & ſuf
fred the ſayde Lothayr for that tyme
to execute his pleaſure/ ſo ỹ the ſayd
Lothayre ſpoyled the kynges paleys
and other places, to the great enry-
chynge of hym & his hoſte. And when
he hadde taryed there a certayne of
tyme, he retourned wythout batayll
wyth great pompe into Fraunce.

It is ſhewyd before in the begyn-
nyng of the ſtory of Ethelſtane kyng
of England/that Henry duke of Sa
xony, the whyche is ment for Germa
ny, ſent vnto the ſayde Ethilſtane to
haue his ſuſter Alunda to mary vn-
to his ſonne Otthon or Otthon.

ye ſhall vnderſtande this Henry is
of ſome wryters admytted for empe
rour. But his ſonne Otthe forena-
med, was emperour in dede / whoſe
ſonne this Otthon was abouenamed,
and called the ſeconde of that name,
and emperour after hys father, and
ſon of the forenamed Alunda ſuſter
to Ethilſtane.

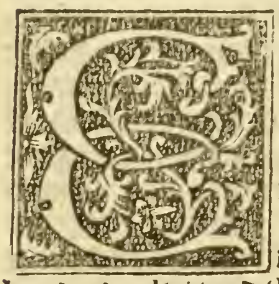
Then this ſecond Otthon emperour
and

a kyng of Germany, beyng thus as ye haue hard surprised of his neuew Lothayre kyng of west Fraunce/ gaderyd a stronge hoste and entred the realm of Fraūce. And as wytnessyth Gerardus wryter of hystoryes, destroyed the coūtrey of Soysons/ and lastly came vnto Paris, and brent ꝑ suburbes of that cytye, and hadde a great parte of his wyll of the sayde Lothayre. But the frenche cronycle varyeth from this sayngе/ and sayth that Lothayr (by the helpe of the duke of burgoyne and of Hugh Capet erle of Paris, after ꝑ sayd Otthō had fyred the suburbes of the cytye of Paris) issued out of the towne & faught wyth the emperoure, and compelled him to gyue backe and fle. whom the kynge pursued tyll he came to the ryuer of Isayr or Sue / where eyther hoste encoūtred wyth other & faught cruelly. But at lengthe the emperour was forced to forsake ꝑ feld/ & myche of his people slayn and droned with in the said ryuer. And so grete a nomber as affermeth the frenche storye/ that the course of the water was stopped, and ouerflowed the feldes nere vnto the sayde ryuer.

But this victory not wythstādyng as wytnessyth mayster Gagwyn/ the kynge cōtrary the mynde of the duke of Burgoyne, and also of Hugh Capet/ releasyd vnto the emperour the tytle and ryghte of Lorayne. The whyche was cause of couetynge of the realme by the sayde Hugh, and vsurpynge of the same, as affermeth the sayde authoure. whyche agrement betwene the two princes stablisshed and ended, eyther retourned into his own countrey. After the which season no notable dede is put in memory of the sayde Lothayre/ so that he fynally sykened and dyed, in the yere of our lorde .ix. hundred .lxxx. & vi, when he had ruled his pryncypat bygurously by the full terme of .xxx. wynter/ and was buried in the mynster of sayncte Remigius in the cytye of Raynes, leuynge after hym a son named Lewys.

Anglia.

THE .CXCII. CHAPITER.



Edredus or Edwyne the eldeste son of Edmund brother of Ethilstane/ began his reygne ouer Englande, in the yere of our lord .ix. hundred & .lvi/ and the second yere of Lothayre then kynge of Fraunce. This Edwyne was crowned kynge at Kyngistone or Kyngestowne besyde London, of the archbyshoppe of Caunterbury. The whych selfe daye of his ꝓfessyon or coronacion/ brake sodeynly from his lordes, & entred a secrete chāber, & there occuppyed him selfe synfully wyth a nother mannes wyfe. wherof sayne Dūstane hauyng knowlege, rebuked and blamed hym greuously/ & caused the woman to be voyded from his bed and company. whose husband as one authour testyfyeth he slew, for to haue ꝑ vnlawful vse of her beaute/ not cōsideryng ꝑ allyaūce of affynyte of kynred betwene them, as affermeth ꝑ sayde authour.

Guydo wryter of storyes sayth, that Edwyn cōtrary ꝑ lawes of ꝑ chyrch, held a woman as his cōcubyne. wher fore holy Dūstane accused hym vnto Oddo archbyshop of Caūterbury, by whose power the kynge was causyd to refuse & forsake the cōpany of that woman. For the which dede Edwyn bare great malice vnto the holy man Dunstane/ & at length by his ertorte power, banyshed hym his lande, and forced hym for a season to holde hym

in Flaunders. And for the malyce ꝑ he bare towarde hym, he dyd myche dyspleasure to all blacke munkes of Englande/ in so myche that at Malmysbury he put oute the mõkes and set in seculer prestes in theyr stede.

It is rad of hym that he also toke from the chyrch what he myght/and specyally from the blacke monkes. In so myche that such precyouse iewellys as Ethylstane hadde before receyued from Othoñ the emperour, gyuẽ vnto wyncheſter and Malmysbury/ he toke theym thens and gaue theym vnto alyauntes and straungers. And thus was not onely vnkynde to god/ but also he vsyd suche tyranny, and other vnlefull meanes to hys subiectes, that lastely they rebelled agayn hym/and specyally the inhabytaũtes of the countre of Mercia or myddell Englande,and also of Northumbers/ and put hym clerely from all kyngely honour and dygnyte, when he had reygned after most writers the full terme of.iiii. yeres/ and was buryed after in ꝑ cathedrall chyrche of wyncheſter, leuynge none heyre of his body/ wherfore the rule of the lande fyll vnto Edgar his yonger brother.

Antoninus archebyſhop of Florẽce in this worke often before mynded, amonges many myracles and vertues actes, which he in ꝑ. vi. chapiter of ꝑ. xvi. title of his boke called Sñ Antonini/ reherseth of this holy man Dunstañ, & sayth that when he had vnderstandynge of the deth of thys Edwyñ by reuelacyon or otherwyse, he made hys specyall prayer to god to know what state the soule of Edwyñ was in. To whome after thys prayer made / apperyd to the sayde Dũstane a great company of fẽdes, turmentynge the soule of the sayde Edwyn,and ledynge yt vnto the places of peyne. The whyche when this holy man hadde sene, he fell to great weppynge and sorowe / beseechynge god with most deuocyon to haue pytye and compassyon of that soule. And whyle he was occupied in his prayer,the sayde cõpany of fendes returned wyth yellynge and cryenge/ shewynge to hym that thorough hys prayer, the angelles of god had byrafte from them the soule of Edwyn. ly and all.

THE.CXCIII. CHAPITER.

EDgar the seconde sonne of Edmunde and brother of Edwyn laste kynge / began hys reygne ouer the realme of Englande, in the yere of our lorde .ix. hundred and.lx/ and the.v. yere of Lotharius then kynge of Fraunce. The whyche of dyuers writers is wytnessed to be of the age of. xvi. yere, when he was admytted for kynge/ and that he was not crowned kynge tyll he hadde reygned the full terme of.xii.yeres. whych terme ended and expyred/he was enoynted and crowned kynge in the cytye of Bathe, vppon a whytsondaye/ fallyng then vpon the.xv.day in May, of Dunstane and Oswolde byſſhoppes, that one of Caunterburye, and that other of yorke.

In the begynnynge of his reygn he called home holy Dunstane / that before was exyled of kyng Edwyne/ whych Dunstane harde aungellys synge, peace be to the lande of Englyshemen.

Then he made Dũstane that was abbot of Glastenburye, byſſhoppe of worceter / and vnyed and knyt into one, the prouynce and lordshyppes of Englande, and made of theym one monarchye and kyngedome. In many places he putte away clerkes and prestes that lyued vycyously / and sette there for theym munkes. And as wytnessyth Guydo, Policronica

licronica, and other/ he buylded and repayred to the nomber of .xl. houses of relygyon/ wherof Abyndon, Peterburgh, Thorney, Rameley, and wylton were parcell of theym.

And at wynchester in the newe abbay he putte in munkes / where before dayes were seculer prestes. The cause wherof was, for so myche as the prestes fled or negligently slowthed the dyuyne seruyce of god, and sette vykers in theyr places, whyle they lyued at theyr pleasure in other places, and spente the patrymonye of that chyrche after theyr sensuall wyll.

Then kynge Edgar gaue to the vykers the lande that before belonged to the prebendaryes/ trustynge therby that they wolde do theyr duetyes. But yt was not longe to, or the sayd vycares were as negligent as the other. wherfore fynally, the kyng by authoryte of pope Johñ the .xiii. of that name, voyded clerely the prestes & ordeyned there mõkes/though some of hys prelates where not therwyth contented.

This Edgar kepte suche iustyce, and dyd so sharpe execucyon / that neuer before his days was vsyd lesse felony or robberyes. And for he wold haue the rauenous bestes destroyed thorough hys lande/ he caused Lud wallus prynce or kynge of walys, to yelde to hym yerely by way of trybute thre hundred wolups. By meane wherof wythin the space of .iiii. yeres after, in Englande and walys myght scantely be founden one wolf a lyue.

It is wytnessyd of dyuers authours that Kynadus kynge of Scotlande dispysed Edgar, for that that he was lytell of stature. wherof Edgar beynge warned/desyred the sayd Kynadus to dyner, and made to him good countenaunce. After whych dyner ended/ he toke the sayd Kynadus by ỹ arme, and so wyth hym helde company tyll they came into ỹ feldes. where beynge dyssenered from bothe theyr seruauntes, Edgar drew from vnder his garment two swordes, & desyred Kynadus to take the chose of theym, & sayd to hym: nowe thou hast good layssure to assaye thy strength wyth myne, that before tyme thou haste so myche dyspysed. And lette vs nowe proue whyche is more worthy to be subiecte to other. It is not syttynge for a knyghte to make great boste at the borde, and to do lytell in felde. when the Scottyshe kynge hard the kyng thus challenge hym / he knew well his wordes before spoken were disclosyd to ỹ kynge/ wherof he was not a litle abashed. But for to apeace ỹ kynge/ he behaued hym so lowely, and gaue to hym suche plesaunte wordes, that the kynge forgaue the trespace.

This Edgar amonge other of hys polytyke dedes / vsed in the somer tyme to scowre the see wyth certayne shyppes of warre. And agayn ỹ wynter he prouyded to laye the sayd shyppes in sure hauens / and had redy in his owne seruyce, and in hys lordes houses, a certayne nomber of soudyours that were alway redy when the kyng had nede of them. And his shyp maysters were in wages wyth hym thorough the yere/ that euer attẽdyd vpon the shippes, to se that nothyng fayled that vnto theym was necessary. By meane wherof he kepte hys land in great quyete fro outwarden mpes. And in the wynter he vsed to ryde ouer the land, and to se how hys offycers entreated the people. And yf any were accused of extorcyon or other crymes, and agayne them sufficyently proued / he dyd vppon all suche sharpe correccyon.

And for so myche as in his days grete

multytude of Danys dwelled in dy-
uers places of England, which vsed
many vyces/& specyally great dryn-
kynge, wherof ensued dronkenesse
and many other vices, to the euyll ex
amples and hurte of hys commons
and subiectes: he therfore ordeyned
certayne cuppes with pynnes or nay
les set in them/and ordeyned & made
a law, that what person dranke past
that marke at one drought, shuld for
fayte a certayn peny. wherof the one
half shuld fall to the accusour, & that
other half to the ruler of ỹ brough or
towne that the offence was done in.

It is told of this Edgar by dyuers
authours, ỹ he vpon a season beyng
at Chester, entred ỹ ryuer of Dee/ &
there syttynge in a bote, toke the ru-
le of the helme, and caused .viii. kyn
ges, whyche of Guydo are called re-
guli, whyche is to meane small or ly
tell kynges or vnder kinges, ỹ why-
che he cammaunded to rowe hym vp
and downe the ryuer vnto sayncte
Johñs chyrche, and from thens to
hys owne paleys/ in token ỹ he was
lorde & kynge of so many prouynces.

This noble Edgar had two wy-
ues. By the fyrste ỹ was called Egel
fleda the whyte/ he hadde a son that
was named Edwarde. He was after
kynge, and slayne by reason of hys
stepmoder Alfrita, called in the en-
glyshe cronycle Estrylde. And vpon
his seconde wyfe Alfrida or Estrylde
he gat a son named Egelredus, or af
ter the englyshe boke Eldrede/ which
was kynge after Edwarde the mar-
tyr, as after shall be shewyd. And of
sayncte wylfryth, whych of some wry
ters is accõpted for a mẽchon, he had
a doughter named sayncte Edyth in
prcesse of tyme. But this was of bast
and not in wedloke. For as Guydo
and Policronicon testyfyen/ this vir
gyne wylfryth knowynge that the
kyng caste to her vnlawfull loue, put
vppon her the habyte of a nũne, thyn
kyng thereby to wythdrawe the kyn
ges loue. But that not wythstan-
dynge, she was at length brought to
the kynges bedde. For whych dede
he was greatly blamed of the holy
bysshop Dunstane / and dyd therfore
vii. yere penaũce, by the heste or byd-
dynge of the sayde Dunstane. And
the forenamed wylfryth after ỹ chyld
borne lyued so relygyously/ ỹ she is
now cõpted for a sayncte in heuen. Of
her doughter Edyth yt is radde, that
at lawefull age she was at wylton
shorne a nunne/ where she vsyd more
gayer apparell then was thought cõ
uenyent to her religyon. For ỹ which
she beynge blamed of the holy bys-
shop Ethelwolde answered. Goddes
dome that maye not fayle is pleasyd
onely wyth conscyence. wherfore I
truste that vnder these clothes maye
be as clene a soule, as vnder other ỹ
ben of lasse shewynge. Many ver-
tues ben reherssed of this holy virgyn
Edyth, in the .ix. chappter of the .vi.
boke of Policronycon. The which I
passe ouer for length of the mater.

THE .CXCIII. CHAPITER.

EDgar thus rulynge the lande
after the deth of his fyrst wyfe
Egelfleda / worde was brought to
hym of ỹ beaute of Alfrida or Estrild
doughter of Orgarus erle of Deuen
shire. wherfore he sent a knight of his
court named Ethelwold, to espy whe
ther the mayde were of such beautye
as she was reported of or not / char-
gynge hym yf she were so beauty-
ous, that then he shulde aske her to
wyfe for the kynge.

But this knyght hauyng syght of
this mayden, was so wounded wyth
the darte of the blynde god Cuppde,
that he forgate his trouth and alle-
giaunce, ỹ he shuld owe to his may-
ster and

ster and souerayne / and retourned, shewynge to the kynge, that she was nothynge of the beaute that she was reported of, but of meane fayrenesse as other women were. wherfore he besought the kynge consyderyng she was her fathers heyre & a good maryage/ that he wolde be so good lord to hym as to wryte vnto her fader, ꝑ he myght haue her to wyfe. The why che grace he obteyned, and at length was maryed vnto her.

In processe of tyme the fame of the beaute of thys woman sprange so wyde, that lastly yt came to the eyrs of Edgar. wherwyth the kynge in mynde beynge sore dyscontentyd wyth Ethilwolde, whyche hym had dyscepued / yet kepte good countenaunce, and made semblaunte, as though he hadde nothynge forced ꝑ mater. And vpon a tyme as yt were in game/ warned this Ethilwolde, ꝑ then was an erle by reason of hys wyfe or otherwyse, that he wold lodge one nyght in his house/ & appoynted the daye when yt shulde be. wyth thys monysshyon the erle beynge nothynge contented/ ranne home nygh deed for fere, and prayed his wyfe of helpe in that tyme of nede, and ꝑ she wold in all that she myght make her self as fowle and as vnsemely as she coude/ and shewed to her all the resy due of ꝑ mater. Then ꝑ woman cast in her mynde the great dysplesure ꝑ might ensue toward her agayn god, to make that fowle, whych he hadde made goodly and fayre/ and also to her lorde and husbande agayne the kynge, thynkyng that he shuld cause her thus to do, to the ende to mocke and dyscepue hym. wherfore in consyderacyon of the premysses, she enourned her in moste costly and shewynge aparayll. And ouer ꝑ yf dame nature hadde had any thynge forgoten or mysprinted in her/ she left not that by womās helpe might be amended or refourmed/ and at the kynges cōmynge receyued hym wyth all ioy and gladnesse. By whyche meanes this yonge amorous kyng was soon caught in the dyuylles snare/ so that he sette reason a parte, and folowed his own sensuaiyte. And for to bryng his purpose the better about, he kept forth a countenaunce as he had ben well contentyd wyth all thynge, and desyred the erle, that he wolde wyth hym ryde on huntyng into the wood of welwerley that now is called hore wood/ where he awaytynge his season & tyme, strake the erle thorough the bodye wyth his shafte/ so that he dyed soon after. And then he maryed this Elfryda or Estryde shortely, & hadde by her Egelredus as before I haue shewyd. For the whyche dede sayth Ranulf, this Elfrida buylded an house of nunnes at warwell. But other authours saye, yt was for the slayeng of her stepson Edwarde.

Also the englyshe cronycle shewety that this Ethilwolde was slayne by an other meane and not by the kyng.

About this tyme dyed Oddo archbyshoppe af Caunterbury, that was of the nacyon of Danys. Of hym is tolde a longe processe in the. x. chapyter of the. vi. boke of Polycronycon. And after hym Bryglinus, that then was byshoppe of wynchester, was made hys successour. But for he was not suffycyent for so great a charge/ he went agayne to wynchester. And holy Dunstane byshop of London & of worceter, was sacryd archbyshoppe of Caunterbury/ and went to Rome and receyued the palle of pope Johñ the. xiii. of that name. This Dunstane was fyrste abbot of Glastynbury, and byshoppe of London & worceter, and lastely archbyshoppe of Caunterbury. In his dayes the order of munkes was religyous and

full of vertues. For it hadde relygyous rulers, clere of scyence and of clergy/so that then men were lad as mych wyth other dedes and good ensamples of vertuous lyuynge as by theyr famous & vertuous prechyng.

Than Edgare as before ys sayde was crowned kynge at the cytye of Bathe, of Dunstane archbysshop of Caunterbury, and Oswolde archbysshop of yorke, whan he hadde ruled thys lande.xii.yeres. The cause why it was so longe or this Edgar were enoynted/was as testyfyeth Gupdo for hys vnlefull Lechery, and specyally for the offence done wyth wylfryde. For the whyche dede he was of Dunstane ioyned to.vii.yeres penaunce. The whyche penaunce durynge, he was kept from the sayd enoyntement as affermeth the sayde Gupdo. But for what cause so euer it was/by agrement of dyuers wryters, he was not crowned tyll he had reygned.xii.yeres.

It is also tolde of thys Edgare, that he beynge vpon a season at the towne of Andeuyr/ he was enamoured vpon a noble mannes doughter whyche was of passynge beautye/ & made suche meanes by force or other wyse, that the parentes were agreed that the kynge shulde haue hys pleasure. But the moder subtyll of wytte bethoughte her of a whyle / and sent a seruaunt of hers, whych was both comely and fayre to the kynges bed. In the mornynge whan the daye began to waxe clere/the woman began to stryre, and wolde haue departed from the kynge. But the kynge restrayned her and asked the cause of her so hasty departyng. For I muste be at my worke wyth my felowes sayde the woman, at myne houre to kepe my taske. And whan the kynge had questyoned wyth her further, he lerned that she was a bonde woman/ and asked of the kynge fredome for ỳ nyghtis seruyce. The kyng at this had good game/and cherysshed that damosell so after, that he made her lady of Lordes. For these insolent & wanton dedes/it is sayde that by the counsayle of the holy Dunstane, he buylded & repayred so many abbeys and houses of relygyon as aboue is rehersed.

Thus thys noble Edgare passyng his tyme in vertue medled with vyce lastly had wyttynge of the rebellyon of ỳ Bretaynes or walshmen. wherfore he assembled hys knyghtes, and entred the lande, and dyd them grete harme and waste. And among other prayes, spoyled the countre of Glamorgañ/and also toke or spoyled the countre of Dno/ and toke the bell of saynt Eltutus, which serued for hys chyrche, that was taken by vyolence wyth other stuffe, & hanged it about an horse necke. In puttynge it to temporall seruyce to the dysplcasure of that sayntc. But for the vyolent takynge therof, as Ranulf erpresseth/ in an vndertyde whan kyng Edgar was layde to take hys reste, the sayd Eltutus apered and smote the kyng vppon the breste wyth a spere. So ỳ the kynge awoke wyth that stroke/ and charged that the belle shulde be restored to the chyrche of saynt Eltutus, and all other thynges that were taken wyth the same. But the kynge dyed wythin.x. dayes after/whan he had reygned after moste wryters the full terme of.xvi.yeres. And was buryed at Glastenbury / leuynge after hym two sonnes, Edwarde the martyr & Egelred, by.ii.sondry wyues.

Henricus the hystographer made of hym these verses folowynge.

Ayder of the poore, and punysshcr of trespasse,
The gyuer of worshyp, kyng Edgar is now gone

To the

To the kyngdome of heuen/whyche lyke to prayse was
As Salomon, that for wysdome aboue all thone
A fader in peas, a lyone to his foone
Founder of temples, of monkes stronge patrone,
Oppresser of all wronge, and of iustyce guardone.

WIllelmus de regibus testifyeth, that in the yere of our lorde. M. lii, whyche was after the deth of this noble kynge Edgar. lxxvi. yeres/ an abbot of Glastenbury named Aylewarde, dygged the graue of this noble man vnreuerently. At whyche tyme the body was foūden hole and so full of flesshe, that the body wolde not entre into a newe cheste without pressynge. By reason wherof fresshe droppes of blode issued out of the same body. Than the abbot forsayd fyll sodeynly madde, and went out of the chyrch, and brake hys necke, and so dyed. Than the body was put in a shryne that he before tyme had gyuen to the place, & set vppon ỹ auter/ wyth the hed of saynt Apolinare and other relyques of saynt Vyncent, the whych ỹ kyng Edgare before dayes had brought thyther and gyuen to ỹ house. wherfore it maye well appere to all that rede thys story, that what lyuynge thys man was demed of, ỹ he purged hym in suche wyse by penaūce, that he made a seth and amendes to goddes pleasure.

THE. CXCV. CHAPITER.

IN ỹ story of thys noble prynce Edgare, I fynde wryten a story, the whyche is alleged by the authour, ỹ it shulde be done by a kyng of Syrye named Cambyses, in the tyme of the reygne of thys Edgare. But in that sayenge he varyeth frō other authours and wryters very farre/as Vincencius hystorialis, Antonnus, Ranulphus and other. For all be it the sayde acte was done by ỹ sayd Cambyse, as the forenamed authoure affermeth / yet it was by the sayd Cambyses executed, longe before the incarnacyon of Cryste. For thys Cambyses was the sonne of Cirus kyng of Parsys and of Medis, whyche reygned ouer those prouynces about the yere of the worlde. iiii. thousand. lxx. before the commynge of Cryste folowyng the accompte of thys worke. xi. hundred yeres & xxix. But it myghte be, ỹ the whyte monke that was authoure or wryter of this acte to the story of Edgare/ was moued for the greate iustyce that he radde in the story of thys Edgare, thynkyng to enhaunce it by the reason herof/ where he sayth that in the tyme of thys Cābyses, a iudge was to hym accused and convycte vppon the same accusacyon, that he hadde gyuen a wronge sentence by meane of takynge of mede. wherfore thys Cambyses to the terrour and fere of other/ commaunded the sayde iudge to be flayne quycke, and the skynne to be spred ouer the place or stole of iudgement/ and that done, made the sone of the forsayd iudge to sytte as iudge in the place, where hys fader before sat/ wyth these verses wryten vppon the face of the sayde place of iudgement as foloweth.

Sede sedens ista, iudex inflexibilis sta,
A manibus remoues munus, ab aure preces
Sit tibi lucerna, lex, lux, pellis q; paterna.
Qua recedes natus, pro patre sponte datus.

whyche verses maye be englysshed in maner and fourme as foloweth.

Thou that sytteste in thys iudycyall place,

Sytte

Sytte vp ryght, & holde thyne handes from mede,
Thyne eyes from prayer, & fauoure from the chace/
Let lawe be thy gyde, kepe iustyce in thy rede.
Thy faders skynne, whych doth thy chayer spede,
Haue in thy mynde, fall not to lyke offence
Leste for thy faute thou make lyke recompence.

AS I haue before shewed this acte was put in execucyon ỹ xi. C. yere and odde before the commynge of Cryste. And syns the sayd cõmynge or incarnacyon haue expyred. xv. hundred yeres & more/ which all maketh ouer two thousande. vi. hundred yeres. In all whyche tyme I haue nat radde in any cronycle of thys lande nor other where, that any iudge hath ben put to lyke sentence. wherfore it is to presuppose, that in the lawes bothe spyrytuall & tempo rall/ all iudges haue wel borne these verses in mynde, and exercysed them in mynystrynge of dewe iustyce, as perfytely as theyr cusshons had ben fresshely lyned wyth the foresayde skinne/ & empzited so narowly these verses in the boke of theyr cõscience, that they in all theyr iudgementes set aside all parcyalyte and fauour/ and holde theyr handes from all medes and rewardes/ so that now it is thus wyth more, or ellys thus it shulde be.

THE. CXCVI. CHAPITER.

EDwarde the sonne of Edgare and of hys fyrste wyfe named Egelfleda/ beganne hys reygn ouer thys realme of Englande, in the yere of our lorde. ix. hundred and. lxxvii/ and the. xii. yere of Lothayre than kynge of Fraunce.

ye shall vnderstand that after the deth of Edgare/ stryfe arose amonge the lordes for admyssyon of theyr kyng. For Elfryda or Estrylde with Alphrede duke of Mercia/ made dyuers frendes to haue her sonne Egelredus promoted to that dygnite, a chylde of. xii. yeres of age, that she & he myghte haue the rule of the land. But holy Dunstane wyth ayde of other bysshoppes, and of the erle of eest Englande or Esser/ wythstode so that doynge, that he crowned thys Edwarde kynge at ỹ towne of Kyngestowne / to the greuous dysplea sure of hys sayd moder Elfryda and other of her affynyte.

In the tyme of thys Edwarde ap pered stella cometa, a blasing sterre/ wherafter ensued many inconuenyences as well to men as to bestes, as sykenesse, hunger, moreyne, & other lyke myseryes. But none of this fyll in the dayes of this Edwarde, but af ter hys deth. The forenamed Alpherus duke of Mercia, whyche in all thynges fauoured mych the dedes of the quene/ put out ỹ monkes at wyn chester, that kyng Edgare as before is shewed had there set in/ & brought in for theym wanton clerkes / or as Ranulphe sayth clerkes wyth concubynes. But Dunstane and the erle of Esser wythsayde that doyng/ and helde agayne the duke and suche as fauoured hys partye. For the whych arose greate stryfe bytwene the prestes and the monkes of Englande. For ỹ clerkes that were before tyme put out by Edgare, sayd that it were a wretched and cursed dede, that a newe comon company vnknowen shulde put out olde landysmen from theyr place/ nor it shulde not be pleasyng to god ỹ had graunted ỹ place to the olde wõner/ nor no good man ought to alowe suche doynge, for the ensample that therof myght ensewe.

977

The

The monkes sayde ꝑ Cryste alowed nother the olde dweller, nor yet the persone. But who so wolde take the crosse of penaunce vppon hym, and folow Cryste in vertuous lyuynge/ he shulde be hys dyscyple. For thys was holden a generall counsayle of bysshoppes and all the clergy of the land at wynchester/where holy Dũstane helde wyth the vertuous. And whyle they were there in greate argument for thys mater, as dyuers wrpters testyfyẽ/a rode there beyng or standynge in the wall spake myraculously, and sayd that Dunstanes wayes was good and trewe. But for all thys the stryfe ceased not. In so mych that a new assemble of the clergye and other was appoynted after at a place called the strete of Calue/ where the counsayle was kept in an vpper lofte. In thys counsayle Dũstane was greuously despysed and rebuked of some vnskylfull mẽ. But yet he kept hys opynyon grounded vpon iustyce and vertue. And whyle they were there in thys greate dyuysyon and argument, whyche waye shulde be admytted and alowed/sodeynly the toystes of the lofte fayled, and the people fell downe, so ꝑ many were slayne & greuously hurte. But holy Dunstane escaped, wyth fewe other that toke hys partye vnhurte. This wonder with the other, caused sylence amonges them that entẽded to mayntayne this forsayd quarell/ so that Dunstane had all hys wyll.

Thus passynge the tyme of the reygne of Edwarde the kynge/ he came vppon a season from huntyng in the forest or woode after some wrpters, nere to the castell of Corfe in ꝑ west countre. where he losynge hys company and seruauntes, resorted vnto the castell before sayd/where at that tyme hys moder with her sonne Egelred kept her housholde. whan the quene was warned of hys commynge/anone she called to a seruaũt of hers whych she myche trusted, and tolde to hym all her counsayle/shewynge to hym forther how he shulde behaue hym in accomplysshynge of her wyll and mynde. And that done/ she went towarde the kynge, and receyued hym wyth all outwarde gladnesse/and desyred hym to tary wyth her that nyght. But he in curteyse maner excused hym selfe/& for spede desyred to drynke vpon hys horse syttyng, ꝑ whych was shortly brought.

And whyle the cuppe was at hys mouth / the seruaunt before of the quene enfourmed, strake hym to the herte wyth a sworde or a longe dagger sharpe on both sydes. After whyche stroke by the kynge receyued / he toke the horse wyth the spores and ranne towarde the place that he was comen fro, or ellys suche waye as he supposed to mete of hys company. But he bled so sore that for faynt̃es he fyll from hys horse, hys one fote beynge faste in the styrroppe. By reason wherof he was drawen of ꝑ horse ouer wayes and feldes, tyll he came to a place named than Corfegate, where he was founden dede. And for ꝑ maner of hys deth was vnknowẽ, and also he for kynge not knowen/ he was buryed vnworthely at the towne of warehm̃, and there rested by the terme of. iii. peres after. In whyche tyme and season god shewed for hym dyuers myracles/ as syghte to the blynde, helthe to the syke, and herynge to ꝑ defe, wyth dyuers other whyche I ouer passe.

wherof herynge hys stepmoder, began to take repentaunce, and entended to vysyte hym by way of pylgrymage. But how or for what cause she entended inwardly I can nat saye/ but the horse or beest ꝑ she rode vpon, myght not nyghe ꝑ place/by a certayne

certayne ſpace, for betynge or any other thynge that to hym myght be done by man. But after this by her meanes he was tranſlated from thēs to Septoñ, that now is called Shaftesbury/ & there buried with great honour. But ſyn that tyme parte of his bodye was tranſlated to the abbaye of Leof beſyde Herefoꝛde in the edge of walys / and ſome parte therof to Abyndoñ. And yt is repoꝛted that at Shaftesbury remayne hys lunges/ and ben ſhewed in the place that is called Edwardyſtowe.

For the murder of this bleſſed man/ yt is ſayde as befoꝛe is ſhewed in the ſtoꝛy of Edgar, that his ſtepmother foūded two monaſteryes of women/ ẏ one at Ambꝛeſbury, and that other at warwell. In the whyche place of warwell in her latter dayes, ſhe refuſynge the pompe of the woꝛlde, helde there a ſolytary and ſtrayte lyfe/ and ended her lyfe wyth great penaunce and repentaunce, and was there buryed when ſhe dyed.

Thus as ye haue harde was this vertuous yonge kynge Edwarde martyꝛed, whē he had reygned after moſt wꝛyters. iiii. yeres, leuyng none yſſue/ wherfoꝛe the rule of the lande fyll to Egelredus his bꝛother.

¶ THE .CXCVII. CHAPITER.

EGelredus the ſonne of Edgar and Alfrida oꝛ Eſtryld his laſt wyfe/ beganne his reygne ouer Englande, in the yere of our loꝛde .ix. hū dꝛed & .lxxxi/ and the .xxbi. yere of Lothayꝛe then kynge of Fraunce.

This is named of ſome wꝛyters Etheldꝛedus, and in the englyſhe cronycle Eldꝛede. In whoſe begynnyng the grounde wared bareyne/ and all myſcheues befoꝛe bodyd by the apperynge of the blaſynge ſtarre, in the dayes of Edwarde the martyr, nowe beganne to take place and encreace vppon the erth. This as the other of his ꝓgenytours, was crowned kyng at Kyngeſtone, of the holy archbyſſhoppe Dunſtane, and of Oſwalde archebyſhop of yoꝛke. To whome as yt is redde in the lyfe of ſaynt Dunſtane amonges his ꝓphecyes/ that in the day of his coꝛonacyon, he ſayd vnto the kynge: foꝛ thou comeſt to this kingdome by the deth of thy bꝛother, in whoſe deth Englyſhemen cō ſpyꝛed with thy wykked moder/ they ſhall not be wythout blood ſhedynge and ſwoꝛde, tyll there come people of vnknowen tunge, and bꝛynge them into thꝛaldome. And thys treſpace ſhall not be clenſyd wythoute longe vengeaunce.

Of this Egelredꝰ wꝛyters agreen, that he was goodly of ſhappe and of vyſage/ but that was mynged wyth lechery and cruelty. It is alſo redde that when holy Dunſtane ſhuld cryſten hym / as he helde hym ouer the fonte, he felyd the holy lyker wyth ẏ fruyte of his wombe. wherfoꝛe holy Dunſtane ſware by god and by hys mother/ this ſhalbe vnkynde to god and his chyꝛche. whych fayled not in his foꝛth goynge/ foꝛ he was vngracyous in his begynnynge, wꝛetched in ẏ myddell of his lyfe, and hatefull to men in the ende therof.

In the ſeconde yere of his reygn/ a cloude was ſene in Englande, the whyche appered halfe lyke blood, & the other halfe lyke fyꝛe/ and chaunged after into ſundꝛy colours, & dyſaperyd at the laſte. In the thyꝛd yere of his reygn, ẏ Danys aryued in ſundꝛy places of his lande/ as in the yle of Thanet beſyde Kente, in Cornewayll, and Suſſex, and dyd in thoſe coſtes myche harme. And after ſome of theym came to London/ but there they were put of. How be yt they deſtroyed a great part of Cheſterſhyꝛe.

And

And in the ende of the same yere, a great parte of the cytye of London was wasted with fyre. But how it be ganne myne authour myndeth not. But ye shall vnderstand, that at this daye the cytye of London had moste housynge and buyldynge from Lud gate towarde westmester / and lytell or none where ỳ cheke or herte of the cytye is nowe / excepte in dyuers pla ces was housing, but they stode with oute order. So that many townes and cytyes, as Caunterbury, yorke, and other dyuers in Englande / pas sed London in buyldynge at those days, as I haue sene or knowē by an olde boke somtyme in the Guyldehal of London named Domys day. But after the cōquest yt encreaced & shortly after passed & excelled all ỳ other.

About the. viii. yere of this kynges reygne / the kynge maryed erle Egbertus doughter named Ethelgina or Elgina. Of the whyche in processe of time he receyued a son named Edmunde, whyche after was surnamed Ironsyde / and .ii. other sonnes named Edwyn and Ethylstane, and a doughter named Edgina.

In this tyme dyed saynt Ethilwalde bysshop of wynchester. He was borne in wynchester, and norysshed vnder holy Dunstane at Glastenbury, and there shorne monke / and after was chosen abbot of Abyndon, in the tyme of the reygne of kynge Edredus. And in the tyme of Edgar he was sacryd byshoppe of wynchester / where he made an abbay of nunnes, and translated saynt Swythynes body out of the erth.

After whyche sayde Ethelwalde, holy Alphegus abbot then of Bathe was sacred byshoppe of wynchester / the whyche after was archebishoppe of Caunterbury, and martyred haitely of the cruell Danys, as after shall be shewed.

About the. ix. yere of Egelredus / for stryfe ỳ was betwene the byshop of Rochester and hym, he wyth his knyghtes beseged the sayde cytye. wherof holy Dūstane sent to ỳ kyng, amonysshynge hym that he shulde refrayne hym of that cruelty, & suffre ỳ byshop and his cytye in peace, oneles that he offended saynte Andrewe patrone of that cytye. But this message myded nothyng ỳ kynges courage. Then thys blessed man sent to hym a hundred pounde in gold, wyllyng hym to refrayne of that outrage / the whyche he receyued and brake the syege. Then blessyd Dunstane sente this message to the kyng: For thou haste preferred golde before god, and syluer before the apostle, and couetyse before me / right so cuyll happes shall come vnto the, but not whyle I am in lyfe. But the kynge toke lytell regarde to those wordes, but contynued in his insolent & cursed dedes.

About the. xi. yere of his reygne, dyed that blessed archbyshoppe saynte Dunstane. Of whom Ranulff in the xiii. chappyte of his. vi. boke of Policronycon, maketh rehersall of dyuers of his vertues and myracles / the whyche I passe ouer, and the rather bycause hys legēde or lyfe is manyfest. Siricus was archbyshop after hym, & after hym wulricus. And after wulricus, blessed Elphegꝰ was archbyshop of that see.

It was not longe after the deth of holy Dunstane, but that the Danys perced England in many and sondry places of the land / in suche wyse that the kynge was so seke, to which coste he shuld go fyrst to wythstande his enymyes. And in conclusyon in auoydynge of more harme / he was compellyd to appeas theym wyth great summes of mony. But when ỳ money was spent / thy fyll to new robbynge of the people. Then the

kynge graunted moze money. But for all that the Danys robbed and ſpoyled ỹ coũtrey of Northũberlãd, and beſyeged London at the laſte. And for augmentacyon of the kynges ſorowe/ Elfricus that then was mayſter or admyrall of the kynges nauy, fled as a falſe traytour. And after that recõcyled & fled the ſecond tyme to the Danys. wherfore ỹ kyng in wreche of the father/ commaũded the eyen of his ſonne Algarus, to be plucked or done out of his hedde.

But whyle this perſecucion thus contynued / by meanes of the holy byſhoppe of wynchеſter Elphegus, a peace was concluded for a tyme be twene the kyng and the Danys. And the prynce or chefe captayne of them named Aulaff, was ſo exorted by the ſaid holy byſhop/ ỹ he became a criſtẽ man, to whome the kynge was godfather/ ſo that after the ſayde Aulaff retorned to his owne, without doyng of more harme / ſo that for a whyle the warre of Danys ſeaſed.

But whyle that reſted/ the blody flyx wyth a brennynge feuer bered the people thorough the lande, that myche folke therof dyed.

Contynuynge whyle myſery/ the Danys agayne aſſayled the lande, & dyd in dyuers places great harme/ ſo that for lacke of a good hed or gouernour, many thynges in the land peryſhed. For the lordes were at ſuch dyſſencyon that one with that other/ that when they were aſſembled to ſpeke or treate of peace betwene that one lorde and that other, and yf any good thynge were dyuyſed for the hurte of theyr enmyes / anone the Danys were warned therof by ſome of the ſame counſayll. wherof were ſuſpected Elricus and Edricus. And to this nowe was ioyned hunger and peury amonges the commons, that euerych of theym was conſtrayned to plucke and ſtele from other/ ſo that what by the pyllage of the Danys, and inwarde theuys and brybours, this lande was broughte in great myſery and myſchefe.

THE .CXCVIII. CHAPITER.

GElredus then wrapped in myſery/ lefte not to gader of hys ſubiectes what he myght, as well by vnlaufull meanes as otherwyſe. For as ſayth Ranulfe myne authour/ he wold for fayned or ſmall cauſes, dyſheryte mẽ of theyr poſſeſſyõs/ & after cauſe men to redeme theyr owne for great ſummes of money. And ouer that he walowed in lechery, gyuyng hym to all byeyous and incontynent lyfe of his body. By whych vngracyous meanes, he brought this land in ſuch ruyne, that what he myght not helpe by ſtrẽgth, he warred wyth money. So ỹ from the fyrſt entre of the Danys as teſtyfyeth Policronica in the. xviii. chappter of his. vi. boke, & alſo Guydo wyth other authours/ that from the fyrſt trybute of. x. thouſande pounde, he broughte yt at the laſte in proceſſe of. v. or. vi. yeres to xl. thouſande pounde. The whyche yerely durynge his lyfe and after, to the commynge of ſaynte Edwarde, was leuyed of his ſubiectes/ and named for the contynuance therof Dane gelt. whyche is or was to meane money payde to the Danys, or ſhortly, Dane money.

In this tyme as yt were about the xv. yere of his reygne, dyed ſaynt Oſwalde the archbyſhoppe of Caunterbury. And ſoone after dyed Ethelgina the quene. And the body of ſaynte Cuthbert was tranſlated from holy yſlande to Durham / in the whyche yle he helde anankers lyfe, as yt is before ſhewyd in the ſtorye of Cadwalader.

Thus

Thus contynuynge this lande vn
der the greuous tribute of the Da-
nys, and also by sustenynge of ma-
ny villanyes and iniuryes by the En
glyshe men of the sayde Danys, as
after somdele shall appere/this Egel
redus by counsayll of his kamplyers
about the. xxi. yere of hys reygn/ma-
ryed Emma ꝑ doughter of Rychard
duke of Normandy, before mynded
in the storye of Lewys the .v. and
Lothayre hys sonne kynges of Frau
ce. The whyche Rycharde was the
thyrde duke of Normandy, and the
fyrste of that name/and also was sur
named Rycharde wythoute fere or
the hardy / as more of hym shall be
shewyd in the storye of the .vi. Lewis
kynge of Fraunce.

By reason of maryenge of this Em
ma, whych in ꝑ Frenche cronycle is
named the flowre of Normandye /
thys Egelredus was greatly enhau
ced in hys owne mynde. By presum
pcyon wherof he sent into all good
burghes, cytyes, and townes of his
lande, secrete and strayte commys-
syons / chargynge the rulers that
vppon a certayne day, that is to say
vppon the daye of sayncte Bryce at
an houre assygned in euery place of
hys lande, the Danys shulde be so-
deynly slayne. And so yt was done.

And as the cõmon fame telleth,
ꝑ this murder beganne at a lytell
towne in Hertefordeshyre, wythin
xiiii. myles of London called wele-
wyñ or welwyñ. For the whyche
dedeyt toke fyrst that name/ as who
wolde wene, that the wele of the coũ-
trey was there fyrste wonne. But
who that well cõsydereth the sequell
of thys storye/ shall fynde lytell wyn
nynge or weale ensuynge of thys
dede.

But or I procede further / here I
wyll touche somewhat of the pryde
and abusyõ of ꝑ Danis, that they ex-
ercysed in Englande, in some parte
therof, as I haue sene in an olde cro
nycle, wherof the authoure ys vn-
knowen. There it is shewyd, that the
Danys by strength causyd husbande
men to ere and sowe the lande, and
do all other vyle laboure that belon-
ged to husbandrye / and the Dane
helde hys wyfe at hys pleasure, with
doughter and seruaunt. And when
the husbandeman came home / he
shulde scantly haue of hys owne as
seruaũtes had, so that the Dane had
all hys commaundement, and ete
and dranke hys fyll of the beste/ whē
the owner hadde scantely hys fyll of
the worste. And ouer that the comon
people were so of theym oppressyd/
that for fere and drede, they called
theym in euery suche house as they
hadde rule of, Lorde Dane.

But in processe of tyme, after
the Danys were voyded the lande/
thys worde Lord Dane, was in de-
rysyon and despyte of the Danys,
turned by the Englyshemen into a
name of oppробrye and called Lur-
dayne / whyche to our dayes ys not
forgoten. But when one Englyshe-
mã woll rebuke an other/ he woll for
the more rebuke call hym Lurdayn.

Then to retourne to our fyrste
mater. Treuthe yt is that when the
Danys were thus murdred thorugh
Englande/tydynges therof sprange
into Denmarke. whyche kyndeled
in theym suche a fury/ that the kyng
therof named Swanus, assembled
shortely a great hoste and naupe of
Danys, and in shorte processe after
landed in Cornewayll. And by trea-
son of a Norman named Hugh, why-
che by fauoure of the quene Emma
was made erle of Deuenshyre / the
sayd Swanus toke Exetour, and af
ter bette downe the wallys.

Then he entred further into the
lande. In whyche season the kynge

sent vnto Edzic? / chargyng hym to assemble the weste Saxons, and to wythstande the further entre of the Danys. The whyche accordynge to his commyssyon assembled the weste Saxõs/and made good contenaũce to wythstand the sayd enymyes. But when the hostes shulde ioyne/were it for fere or for treason, he fayned hym syke and fled from hys people. The whych for lacke of an hed were fayn to gyue backe/ to theyr hurte, and to theyr enimyes great auauntage and comforte.

wherfore the Danys resorted then to wyltoñ and Shyrborñ/ and anon spoyled both those townes, and there refresshed theym. But for Swanus had wittynge that the kynge was cõmyng towarde hym wyth the power of his lande / he therfore departed thens and retourned wyth great ppl lage to his shyppes/ & sayled aboute the lande, and lastely landed in Norfolke. where he wastynge and spoylynge the countrey/ came in processe vnto the cytye of Norwyche and robbed and spoyled yt/and after rode to Thetford, and dyd lykewise to that towne, and fyred yt and destroyed ỹ countrey nere there about.

But soone after a noble man of that countrey called duke Ulkatell mette wyth the hoste of Danys, and gaue vnto them an hard and sharpe batayll / and slewe many of the enymyes and put them backe. For this, and for hũger that then assailed this lande/ Swanus returned ofte vnto his shyppes, & departed agayne into Denmarke, & taryed there all ỹ wynter folowynge. In whyche season he made great prouysyon to reenter the lande of Englande.

THE .CXCIX. CHAPITER.

ABout the .xxvi. yere of the reygne of Egelredus the forenamed Swanus with a stronge army, landed at Sandwyche/ and spoyled all the coũtrey nere vnto the see syde, and rested hym there tyll he harde of an armye cõmynge agayn hym. And when he was ware therof, he retourned to his shyppes agayne/and herynge the kyng was farre westward, he landed in Suffex, and spoyled yt wonder sore. And when he there was warned of the cõmynge of a batayll of Englyshemen, anon he toke shyppynge agayne. So that when the englyshemen wende to haue met wyth them in one coste/then wolde they sodaynly lande in a nother. And when ỹ kyng prouyded to mete wyth thẽ vppon the see/ other they wold fayne to flee, or ellys they shulde wyth gyftes blynde the admyrall of the kynges nauy.

By whyche subtylytye and crafty meanes, they weryed and tyred the hoste of Englyshmẽ. And where euer they went/they slew, brent, and robbed wythout compassyon and pytye. The kynge then beyng at Shrewesbury, & herynge of the great sleyght and cruelty of the Danys/called his counsayll to rede what were beste to be done for ỹ defence of his enmyes. where it was concluded, that ỹ kyng to haue peace with the Danys, shuld pay vnto them .xxx. thousande poũd. But whyle this was in doynge, the Danys destroyed a grete part of Barroke or Barkshyre.

when this peace was thus made/ Swanus wyth his company retourned into Denmarke. And ỹ yere folowynge / the kynge made Edzicus forenamed duke of Mercia. Thys Edzicus was of lowe byrth, ryche, of tunge false, and subtyll of wyt, softe and eloquẽt of speche, vntrusty and false of thoughte and promyse/as of hym somdeale before is shewed, and after more shall appere.

In the

In the .xxvii. yere of Egelredus/ a ꝓynce of Danys named Turkyllus landed in Kent. The whyche so greuously warred in that cõtrey / that the Kentyshemen were fayn to make theyr peace, and so departed.

And yet the persecucyon of Danys ceased not. For in one countre of Englande or other/they euer in whylys robbed & pilled the Englishmen. So ẏ all the cõtrey a longe the coste, frõ the Northe parte of Englande vnto the yle of wyghte/ was by theym destroyed or hugely sette a backe. And when the kynge entended to make ꝓouysyon for to withstande theym/ euer Edricus wolde counsayll hym to the contrarye/shewynge hym that he shulde spende hys treasour & trauayle his people in vayne. By meanwherof the Danys entred .l. myles wythin the lande/and brent and robbed by dyuers tymes many vylages & townes. So that they encreased & waxed passynge ryche / and the Englyshemen nedy, bare, & poore. Thus contynuynge this mysery/Swanus or after the englysshe Swayne then beyng in Denmarke, and herynge of the encreace of his people within Englande/ repented hym of his former couenauntes, and thought ẏ the hole dompnyon of Englãd shulde belong to hym of ryght. For the whyche he ꝓpared his armye & nauy in moste defensyble wyse / and sped hym into England, & to the ryuer of Humber, and landed in Northumberlande.

Where the erle or ruler of that countrey wyth all the rulers of the same, sware feaute vnto the sayde Swanus, and ꝓmysed to kepe that countrey vnto hys vse. And when he had done hys wyll in that coste / he entred agayne the water, and by the ryuer of Trent he passed to Gaynsburghe, and so by Northwatlyngstrete/and subdued the inhabytaun-

tes of that coũtrey, and forced theym to gyue vnto hym pledges. whyche pledges, wyth also his nauy / he betoke vnto Canutus his sonne, whyle he wente farther into the lande. And that done, he wyth his people kepte on his iourney tyl he came into Mercia, kyllynge and slayeng the men of that ꝓuynce / And reserued the women to vnclene lyuynge, as well the relygyous as other/ and toke by strength wynchester and Oxenford, and dyd in them what he lyked.

And after he hadde thus passed the lande / he drewe the nexte waye towarde London. But in passynge the ryuer of Thames he loste some parte of hys people / other for lacke of a brydge or for ieopardynge theyr passage vnauysely. And so in ꝓcesse he came vnto London/where at that tyme kynge Egelredus was. wherfore Swanus lefte the cytye, and drewe into Kente, and so towarde Caunterbury wythoute lette, weldynge the countrey at hys wyll/and lastely besieged that cytye. The whyche manfully defended theyr enymyes by the space of .xx. dayes. whyche syege beganne vpon the day of sayncte Mathewe in the moneth of September, and endured as is aboue sayde / and then taken by the treason of a deken named Almaricus / the whyche beforetyme blessed Elphegus then archebyshop of that see, hadde ꝓserued from deth.

Then the Danys fyred the cytye when they before had spoyled it/and toke the archebyshop and put him in strayte ꝓyson. And the monkes of sayncte Augustynes abbey they tythed that is to meane they slew .ix. by cruel torment, and the tenth they kepte a lyue/ the whych after was solde and sette to all seruyle laboure. And as wytnessyth Antoninus or Vyncent hystoryall/ they slewe and broughte

in ſeruage ouer the ſumme of.ix.hun dred perſones of relygyon/ they ſlew of men, women, & chyldren, beyonde the nōber of. viii. thouſand. As with myche more cruelty yt is ſhewyd, in the .vii. chappter of the. xvi. tytle of the worke of the ſayde Antoninus. And fynally for this bleſſed man Elphegus wolde not condeſcende to gyue vnto them as ſayth Policronica .iii. thouſande pounde/ after they had kept hym in harde pryſon by the ſpace of. vii. monethes, vppon an Eſter euē they after many vylanyes to hym done at Grenewyche wythin thre myles of London, they ſtoned hym to deth. where he lay in the feld vnburyed a certayne of tyme/ and after caryed to London, and buryed reuerētly in the chyrch of ſaynt Paule. But afterward in tyme of Canutus, he was taken vp agayne and caryed to his owne chyrche. Of this bleſſed Elphegus Antoninus and alſo Policronicon ſhewen many vertues and myracles / the whyche I paſſe ouer for lengthynge of the tyme.

THE .CC. CHAPITER.

In this paſtyme, kynge Egelredus ferynge the ende of thys perſecucyon / ſent Emma the quene wyth her two ſonnes Alphrede and Edwarde, vnto Rycharde the ſecond of ỹ name, then fourth duke of Normandy, whych was brother vnto the ſayde Emma / wyth whome alſo he ſent the byſhoppe of London.

About the.xxxiiii. yere of the reygne of Egelredus/ the Danis when they hadde wonne a great part of the cōtrey of weſtſaxon, retorned agayn to warde London. wherof herynge the Londoners ſent vnto theym certayn gyftes and pledges.

In all thys ſeaſon myne authoure maketh no mynde, that euer the kyng gaue vnto the Denys any notable batayll / but kepte hym in holdes or places, for his owne ſauegarde, and lytell fruyte or profyte to his lande. At the laſte he was chaced vnto the yle of wyghte / where wyth a ſecrete companye, he helde a great parte of the wynter/ and fynally wythout catall or comforte, ſayled ouer to hys wyfe into Normādy / and there held hym a certayne of tyme.

Whan Swanus was aſcertayned of the departynge of Egelredus out of the lande, he was enflamed wyth excedynge pryde / ſo that he arered excedynge impoſycyons of the people, and greued them wonderfully. And amonges other of his tyrānyes he aſked a great ſumme of money of ſaynt Edmundes landes. whych the rulers denayed/ for ſo myche as they claymed to be free of all kynges trybute. For thys he entred the terytory of ſaynte Edmunde, and waſted and ſpoyled the countrey / and ouer that deſpyſed that holy martyr, wyth manaſſyng of the place of his ſepulture. wherfore the men of that countrey ferynge this tyraunt, gaue them to faſtynge and prayer/ ſo that ſhortly after he was ſtycked in an euenynge amonges his knyghtes, with ỹ ſword of ſaynte Edmunde in the towne of Shetford as ſayth Guydo / but after Policronicon & other in the town of Gaynesborough. where he dyed wyth yellynge and cryenge the thyrd daye after.

In fere wherof, Canutus hys ſon after that he was kynge, cloſed in ỹ land of that holy martyr with a depe dyche/ and graunted to the inhabytauntes therof great fredam, & quyt them of all kyngly taſke or trybute. And after buylded a chyrch ouer the place of his ſepulture/ and ordeyned there an houſe of munkes, & endued them wyth fayre poſſeſſyons. And after yt

ter yt was vſed that kynges of England when they were crowned, ſent for an offerynge theyr crownes vnto ſaynte Edmundes ſhryne/ and redemed them aftewardes wyth a condygne pryce.

When Egelredus hadde wrytynge of the deth of Swanus/ by procurement of his frendes / he made meanes to retourne to hys owne. By whoſe meanes he was ſent for, wyth condycyon that he ſhulde refourme his olde condycyons. And for perfourmaũce of the ſame, he ſent his ſon Edwarde into Englande before hym. And in the lent folowynge the kyng came hym ſelfe, and wyth his people ſped hym towarde Lyndeſey. where Canutus was at that tyme reſſeaũt, not prouyded of the kynges ſo haſty commynge.

Wherfore he beynge not purueyed to wythſtande the kynge, fledde into Sandewyche in Kente. And for he there proued ſuche perſones as before tyme his fader and he hadde taken pledges of, & fande them not perſeueraunt in theyr promiſſes/ he made to be cutte of all the noſes and hãdes of the ſayd Englyſhe people, and ſayled into Denmarke when he had do/ and retourned the nexte yere wyth a great nauy, and ſayled about ỹ land, and toke prayes in the South countrey. wherof the kynges eldeſt ſonne named Edmunde, made prouyſyon wyth ỹ ayde of Edricus to go agayn hym. But when he ſhulde haue met with Edric⁹ at a place aſſigned & his hoſt, he was of hym dyſceyued/ wherfore he was compelled to gyue place to his enymyes. And as yt was after knowen, the ſayde Edricus had promyſed his fauour and ayde vnto the ſayde Canutus.

By reaſon wherof Canutus entred the countre of weſt Saxon/ and forſed them to ſwere to hym feauty, and to gyue vnto hym pledges/ and other countreys adioynyng dyd the ſame.

In this ſeaſan Egelredus beyng at London, was taken wyth a greuous ſykenes & dyed/ and was there buryed in the chyrch of ſaynt Paule, where at this day in ỹ Northyle behynde the quere, apperyth in the wal a token of hys ſepulture/ whyche reygned, or as ſay Policronicon & other, beſeged Englande, by the terme of xxvi. yeres full / leuynge after hym a ſonne named Edmunde Iron ſyde ouer Alphrede and Edwarde ſonnes of Emma.

Francia.

THE. CCI. CHAPITER.



Lewys the. vi. of that name & ſon of Lothayre/ began hys reygne ouer Fraunce, in the yere of our lordes incarnacyon ix. hundred and lxxxvi/ and the. v. yere of Egelredus than kyng of England. Of ỹ whiche other for hys youth or for the ſhortneſſe of hys reygne, lytell of hys dedes is laft in memory/ excepte that ỹ Frenche boke wytneſſyth, that for he hadde none iſſue, and Hugh Capet before in the ſtory of Lothayre mynded, was hys kamplyer and chyefe coũſayler/ he ſhuld therfore ordeyne and admytte the ſayd Hugh for hys heyre. But more verely as before is touched in the aboue named ſtory, & in the ende therof, thys Hugh was ſtronge and myghty, and in the later dayes of Lothayre coueted the rule of the lande. wherfore after the deth of this Lewys, for ſo mych as he laft no chyld after hym/ he than haupng ỹ chyefe rule of Fraunce, by ſtrength and power made hym ſelfe kynge.

But for I promysed in the story of Egelredus, somwhat to shewe of Rychardе the fyrst of that name and thyrde duke of Normandye/ I shall somdele length thys story wyth the story of the sayd Rychardе. Thys Rychardе as affirme all wryters, was named Rychard wythout fere. And for thys cause that folowеth, as testyfyeth the Frenche boke. He vsed mych to byd hys bedys for all crystē soules. And vpon a nyght whan he had longe watched/ he entred a chyrche, where stode a corps vnburyed & no man watchynge it. And whyle he sayd hys orysons for that soule and other/ he layed hys gloues vppon a deske by hym. And whan he had ended hys deuocyons, he went out of ẏ chyrche for gettynge hys gloues behynde. But shortly after he remembred hym of them / and retorned towarde the chyrche for to fetche hys sayd glouys. whan he came at the chyrch dore/ he founde ẏ corps there standynge, wyth hys armes spradde abrode, and makynge greate noyse and crye. wherfore the duke made ẏ sygne of ẏ crosse in hys forehed, and conured the corps that he shulde reste, but all was in vayne. wherof the duke drewe hys sword and stroke at the corps, and to hys thynkyng parted hym in two peces. And that done entred the chyrche, fet hys glouys, & so departed. And for this chaunce he ordeyned after thorough hys realme that a corps shulde be watched the fyrste nyght or lenger, as men hadde deuocyon. which gyse was somtyme vsed in Englande, and begon of the Normans as men may coniecture, after they had fyrste conquered thys lande.

Polycronycon sheweth in the. vii. chappter of hys. vi. boke, that thys duke Rychardе drewed on a nyght that a monke of the house of sayncte Audoenus in Roan, as he went towarde hys lemman by nyght/ fyll be syde a brydge and was drowned. whose soule after was in stryfe bytwene an angell and a fende. The whyche after a longe stryfe/ condescended to put the iudgement in duke Rychardе. Than the duke gaue sentence, that the soule shuld be restored agayne to the body/ and then ẏ body to be set vppon ẏ brydge that before he was fallen fro. And yf he than went to hys lemman he shuld be the fendes/ and yf nat, he shulde than be saued. And whan thys sentence was put in execucyon, the monke fledde vnto the chyrche therby. Vppon the morne whan the duke awoke, & called thys vysyon to hys memory/ to knowe the certaynte therof, he went vnto the sayd chyrche, and fande the monke there hys clothes yet wete/ & after went to the abbot of that place, and tolde to hym all thys dede, aduertysynge hym to take better oversyght of hys flocke.

To these narracyons the herers may gyue credence as them lyketh. For they be nother in the pystle nor yet in the gospell. All be it Antonin⁹ archbysshop of Florence, whan he rehersеth any lyke narracyons, whych he thynketh somwhat doutefull/ he iopneth these wordes and sayth, pīt est credere. The thyrde narracyon is tolde of thys duke/ whych by all presumpcyon was regestred of some women scrybe. Thys duke wyth Gunnore hys wyfe, lyued longe whyle a dyshoneſt lyfe, and contrary to the lawes of the chyrch. wherof his people murmured sore/ so that at length by the holsome doctryne of some of hys clerkes or spyrytuall men, he maryed her to hys lawfull wyfe. The fyrste nyght after ẏ weddynge/ were it in game or otherwyse, the ducheſſe torned her buttocke in ẏ dukes lappe as ſhe

she before tyme hadde neuer done. whan the duke frayned the cause of her so doyng/for now (sayd she) may I do what me lyketh/ where before I myghte do but what you lyked. Upon thys Gunnore he gate beside other chylder, Emma that was the wyfe of Egelred⁹ as before ye haue harde/and dyed whan he had ruled Normandy by the terme of.lii.peres.

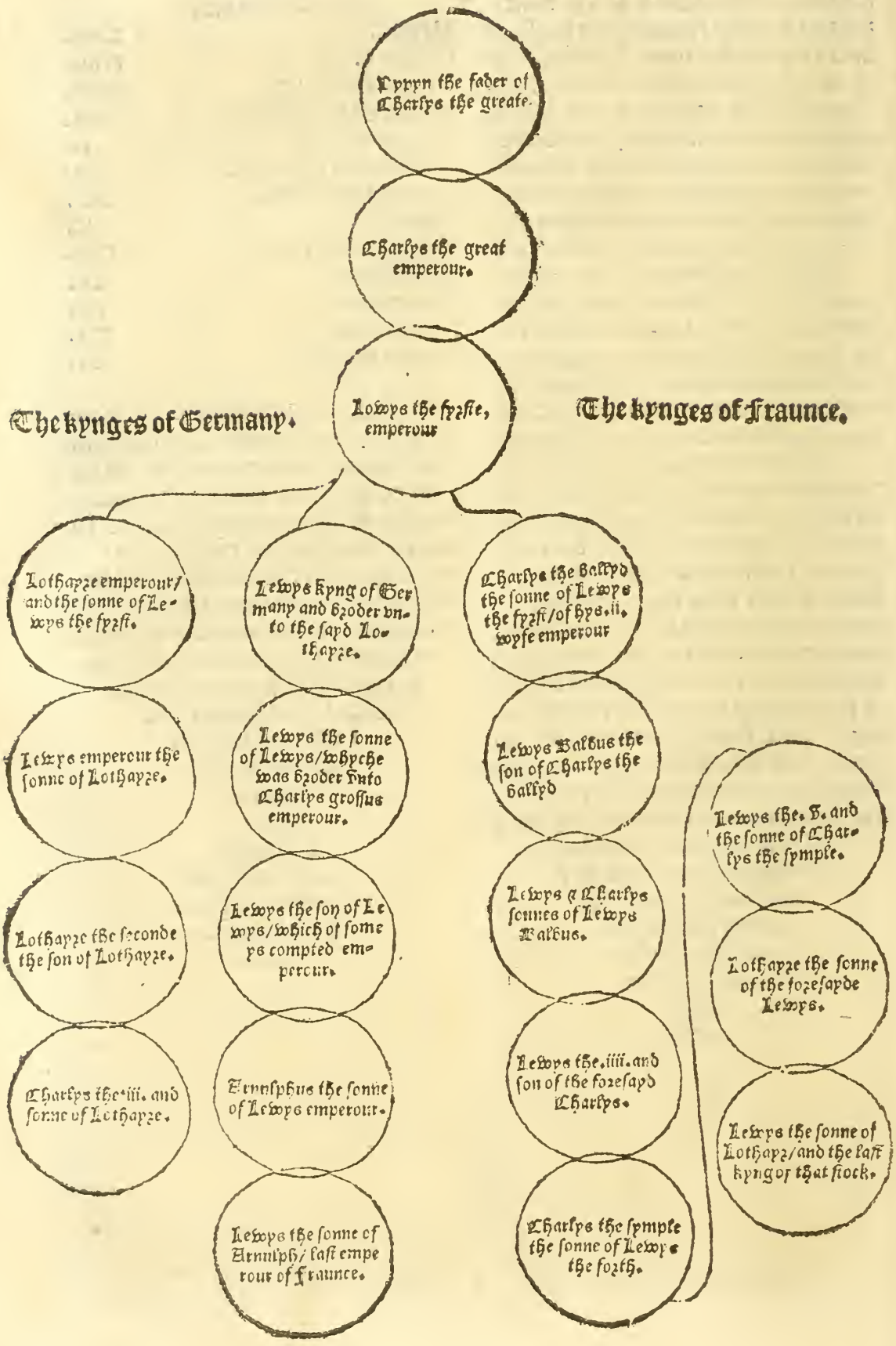
Than to retourne to the. vi. Lewys kyng of Fraunce, from whome we haue made a longe dygressyon/ as wytnesseth mayster Gagwyne he dyed in the yere of our lorde. ix. hundred.lxxxix, whē he had reygned. iii. peres/and was buryed at Cōpayne.

ye shall vnderstande that this Lewys was the last kynge of the blode of Peppyn. And for I promysed before to shewe the dyscent of the sayde Peppyn, to the ende that ye maye the better know thys story / and also to knowe the kynges of Fraunce from the kynges of Germany, which both discended of thys Peppyn: hereafter I shall more clerely set it out in brāches. But fyrste I woll expresse the kynges of Fraunce as they reygned lynially/and ioyne to eyther of them the terme that he reygned, that there by it maye appere howe longe thys blode continued in ỹ house of Fraunce, or it were empeched by Hugh Capet, as after appereth.

The peres.

Peppyn.	xviii.
Charlys.	xlvii.
Lewys the fyrste.	xxvi.
Charlys the Ballyd.	xxxvii.
Lewys balbus.	ii.
Lewys and Charlys.	v.
Lewys the fourth.	viii.
Eudo.	ix.
Charlys the symple.	xvii.
Radulphus.	xii.
Lewys vnus.	xxi.
Lotharius.	xxx.
Lewys the syxte.	iii.

Of the whyche kynges. ii. were not of that blode as Eudo and Radulphus/ but admytted of the barony of Fraunce to rule the lande, tyll two of that progeny / that is to meane Charlys the symple, and Lewys the. v, were comen to theyr lawfull age. So that from the fyrst yere of Peppyn, whyche began his reygne in the yere of grace. vii. hundred .l. to the fyrst yere of Hugh Capet that began hys reygne in the yere of our lorde god. ix. hundred and lxxxix/ expyred or passed. ii. hundred .xxxix. peres.


Pypyn the fader of Charlys the greate.
Charlys the great emperour.
Lowys the fyrste, emperour
The kynges of Germany.
The kynges of Fraunce.
Lothayre emperour/ and the sonne of Lewys the fyrst.
Lewys Kyng of Germany and broder vnto the sayd Lothayre.
Charlys the ballyd the sonne of Lewys the fyrst/of hys.ii. wyfe emperour
Lewys emperour the sonne of Lothayre.
Lewys the sonne of Lewys/whyche was broder vnto Charlys grossus emperour.
Lewys Walbus the son of Charlys the ballyd
Lothayre the seconde the son of Lothayre.
Lewys the soy of Lewys/which of some ys compted emperour.
Lewys & Charlys sonnes of Lewys Walbus.
Charlys the.iiii. and sonne of Lothayre.
Ernulphus the sonne of Lewys emperour.
Lewys the.iiii. and son of the forsayd Charlys.
Lewys the sonne of Ernulph/ last emperour of Fraunce.
Charlys the symple the sonne of Lewys the forth.
Lewys the. v. and the sonne of Charlys the symple.
Lothayre the sonne of the forsayde Lewys.
Lewys the sonne of Lothayr/ and the last kyng of that stock.

THE. CCII. CHAPITER.

HUgh the ſonne of Robert the tyraunt, deſcended of Hugh le graunde / beganne to take the rule, or to vſurpe the crowne of Fraunce, in the yere of our lorde .ix. hundred and .lxxxix/ and the .viii. yere of Egelredus than kynge of Englande.

Thys as wytneſſyth the Frenche Cronycle was erle of Parys, and marſhall of Fraunce. And as ſayth Antoninus, he maryed one of the doughters of Edwarde the elder. Thys alſo was named Capet, for ſo myche as in hys youth / he vſed in game to laye aſyde hys felowes hodes. In whoſe begynnyng / Charlys that was the brother to Lothayre, and vncle vnto Lewys the. vi. laſte kynge, herynge of the deth of hys neuewe Lewys wythout iſſue / as nerte heyre, wyth ayde of ſome lordes of Fraunce, and alſo of Lorayn, the whyche than he was lorde of, gadered an army and entred Fraunce/ and than came to the cytye of Laone. wythin whyche cytye / he wyth hys wyfe and people, by the treaſon of the byſſhoppe of the ſame cytye, was taken and delyuered wyth hys wyfe and chylder into the handes of hys enemyes / the whyche ſent them to Orleaunce there ſauely to be kept.

Than thys Hugh was crowned in the cytye of Rayns / and welded the lande wyth more ſuerty. How be it the erle of Flaunders named Arnulphus or Arnolde before ſpoken of, wolde not be vnder hys obedyence. wherfore thys Hugh aſſembled hys knyghtes / and by hys ſtrength toke from hym the coũtre of Artoys, wyth many ſtronge holdes and caſtels / and laſtly forced the ſayd Arnolde to fle into Normandy, to aſke ayde of Richarde the fyrſte of that name, before ſpoken of in the ſtory of the. vi. Lewys. By whoſe meanes after ſome wryters / wyllyam Longa Spata fader to ỹ ſayd duke Richarde was ſlayne. But that not wythſtandynge, by frendſhyp of the ſayde duke Richarde, thys Arnolde was reconcyled vnto the kynge, and contynued after as hys ſubiecte.

In the cytye of Rayns was arch byſſhoppe at thys daye a noble prelate named Arnolde, ſonne of baſte of Lothayre, and neuewe to Charlys than pryſoner, as before is touched. The whyche for malyce that the kynge bare vnto hym, for cauſe of the forenamed Charlys / called a counſayle of the clergy of hys lande, and layde agayne hym ſuche obiecyons, that he by theyr aſſent was putte from that benefyce, and ſente hym to Orlyaunce there alſo to be kepte in pryſon. And ſet in hys place one Gylberte, or after the Frenche boke Gerbres, a connynge man in phyloſophy/ whiche had before tyme ben tutor or mayſter to Robert ſonne of the ſayde Hugh. But after .iii. yeres/ pope Johñ the .xvi. of that name ſent downe hys maundement vnto Gupan archebyſſhop of Sens/ chargynge hym that he ſholde remoue ỹ ſayde Gerbers, and reſtore the ſayde Arnolde to hys proper ſee. whyche was done ſhortely after/ and ỹ ſayde Gerbers was after this preferred by one of the Othons emperour vnto ỹ chyrche of Rauenne, and contynued there tyll the deth of the .xvii. Johñ. After whoſe deth he was electe pope of Rome/ and was named the ſecõde Siluester, & lyued as pope .iiii. yeres.

Than it foloweth in the ſtory / whan thys Hugh had regned full viii. yeres and more, he dyed in the yere of our lorde .ix. hundred .xciii. and was buryed at ſaynte Denys leuynge after hym a ſonne named Robert.

The.

THE. CCIII. CHAPITER.

ROBert the ſonne of Hugh Capet, beganne his reygn, in the yere of our lord. ix. hundred & .xcviii/ and the. xvii. yere of Egelredus then kynge of Englande.

This was cõynge in many ſcyences, and a man of good maner & vertue. He made dyuers hymnes, ſequences, & reſpondes/ as O Juda et Hieruſulem, O cõſtantia martyrum, Aſſit nobis ſcti ſpũs gratia, or moze cõgruely, Sancti ſpiritus aſſit nobis gratia, wyth dyuers other.

In ỹ beginnyng of his reygn/ while Bowcharde erle of Meleon was at the kynges court, Galtyer or walter a knyghte and ſeruaunt of the ſayde Bowcharde, to whom the ſayd Bowcharde hadde delyuered his caſtell of Meleon to kepe in his abſence/ for great gyftes the ſayde walter hadde delyuered the ſayde caſtell vnto Eudo erle of Carnotenſ. wherfore the kyng at the requeſt of the ſayd Bowcharde, ſente ſtreyghte commaundement vnto the ſayd Eudo/ chargyng hym in all goodly wyſe to reſtore the ſayde caſtell vnto Bowcharde. The whyche commaundement he vtterly refuſed to obey. For ỹ whych ỹ kyng beyng ſo amoued/ ſent for Rycharde the ſeconde of that name, then. iiii. duke of Normandy/ and wyth theyr both armyes beſyeged the caſtell vpon euery parte, and at length wan yt and toke the ſayd walter wythin the ſame/ whom the kinge for his vntrouthe commaunded ſoone after to be hanged vppon a gybet, and the caſtell to be reſtored vnto ỹ forenamed Bowcharde/ and after returned euery man to his owne.

In the tyme of the reygne of thys Robert/ dyed Henry then duke of Burgoyne. The whyche for lacke of yſſue of his body, bequethed his dukedome vnto kynge Robert. But the Burgonyons wythſtode that legacy/ and drewe to theym for an hed & captayne Lawdry erle of Neuers/ and wyth hym helde by ſtrength or for a ſtrength the cytye of Antterre. wherof herynge kyng Robert/ ſente for the forſayde duke of Normandye, and ſo ſpedde theym towarde Burgoyne and beſyeged the forſayd cytye. But at length ỹ cytye was yolden/ and Lawdry put at the kynges grace. And that done, the kyng with his hoſte beſyeged a nother ſtronge cytye called Aualoñ/ and not wythout great daunger wanne yt alſo at length/ and after receyued the countrey wyth dew obeyſaunce, and ordered yt at hys own pleaſure, and ſo returned into Fraunce.

Arnolde erle of Sens vſed great tyranny amonges the byſhoppes & mynyſters of the chyrche. wherfore Leophicus byſhop of that ſee, thorough the ayde and counſayll of Regnalde byſhop of Parys/ put oute the ſayde Arnolde, and delyuered the cytye vnto kynge Robert. But the brother of the ſayde Arnolde with a certayne of his knyghtes, fled to the caſtell and yt helde wyth ſtrength. wherfore the kynge layde ſyege to the ſayd caſtel, and at length wan yt/ and toke the brother of Arnolde named Fromõde and ſent him to Orleaũce there to be priſoned, where he dyed ſhortly after

This Robert as ſaith the frenche boke buylded fyrſt ỹ caſtell of Moũt fort. He founded alſo dyuers monaſteryes and tẽples/ and at Orleaũce the tẽple of ſaint Anyañ/ at Stamps a chyrche of our lady/ & dyuers other in dyuers places of hys realme. And he endowed the chyrche of ſaynte Denys wyth many great lyberties/ and hadde eſpecyall deuocyon to ſaynte Ypolyte ouer all other ſayntes.

It is radde of this kynge Robert, that

that vppon a season when he hadde longe whyle lyen at the syege of a castell nere vnto Orleaunce, and sawe yt was dekuse to wynne be strength/ he vpon ỹ daye of saynt Anyan yode vnto Orleaunce, & there in the quere bare a cope, and dyd helpe to synge the dyuyne seruyce. And after when he was in his deuocyõs in the masse whyle/when the preste was at the cõsecracion and sayd thryse Agn⁹ dei, the walles of the castell fyll wythout stroke of gunne or other engyne, and hys enemyes submytted them to hys grace. Many vertues myght I shew more of this vertuous prince/ ỹ which I passe ouer for length of the tyme/ and conclude thus, that when he had reygned after moste accorde of wryters, and ruled hys lande nobly. xxx. yeres, he dyed, and was buryed in the house of saynte Denys/ leuynge after him of his fyrst wife Constaũce a sonne named Henry, and one other named Robert / and of hys seconde wyfe. ii. sonnes named Symonde and Almarych. But yt shulde seme by the sequele of the next storye, that Constaunce shuld be laste wyfe, & the other the fyrste / and deuorced from hym for some cause, so that her chyldern shulde not be legyttymat / all be yt the authoure of this maketh no mencyon.

Anglia.

THE .CCIIII. CHAPITER.



Dmunde Ironsyde the sonne of Egelredus, and also Canutus ỹ sonne of Swanus kyng of Dẽmarke/ beganne to rule the Englyshemen, in the yere of our lorde a thousande. xvi/ and the. xix. yere of Robert then kynge of Fraunce. For ỹ Londoners wyth assystẽce of some of ỹ lordes of England fauoured Edmũde. But the more party of the lordes fauoured Canut⁹/ & specyally the spiritualtye, ỹ before tyme had swerne feauty to hys father. And he then beynge at Southamptoñ / swore to them to be vnto them a good & trewe iustice, and to entreate the people soberly and ryghte wysely. Then Edmunde beynge of the archbyshop of yorke crowned at Lõdon, and the solemnyte fynyshed and ended/ he sped hym into westsaxon, and subdued ỹ countrey. In whych tyme Canutus, whych in ỹ englyshe storye is called Knough / drewe wyth hys people to Lõdon, and wold there haue entred. But that was hym forboden of the Londoners. For the whiche he layde hys ordynaunce aboute the cytye, entendynge to haue entred perforce. But it was not long or he was fayne to breke his syege & to depart thens.

when Canutus was put of from London / he drewe westwarde, and mette in processe wyth Edmunde in Dorsetshyre besyde Gyllyngham / where betwene theym was foughten a stronge and cruell batayll. But in the ende Canutus was ouercomen & compelled to forsake the felde. After thys they mette agayne in worceter shyre/ where they fought a more strõger batayll. For this was so strongly bydden by, ỹ men coude not iudge whych parte had the better, or which the worse. But as wytnessyth Policronica eyther of theym departed frõ other, eyther for werynesse of fyghte or for lak of the daye.

But vppon the morne folowynge both hostes ioyned agayne, & fought egerly. Contynuynge whyche fyght Edricus espyenge Edmunde to be at auauntage of wynnynge of the feld, sodaynly pyght a dede mannys hed

ỹ vpon

vppon a spere hed, and cryed to the hoste of Englysshmen, fle fle ye Englysshemen & saue your selfe/loo here is the hedde of Edmūde your kyng. But Edmunde therof beynge warned/ spedde hym towarde that parte of the felde, and behaued hym so comfortably amonges hys men, that by hys knyghtely courage hys people recouerd that they before had loste/ and cōtynued the batayll tyll nyght, in suche wyse that he hadde rather the better then the worse / and caused Canutus to refuse that countrey, and to retourne towarde London agayne. Then Edmunde beyng aduertysed that Canutus was retourned towarde London / he folowed hym and passed the ryuer of Thamys, and delyuerd the cytye from daunger of the Danys / and afterwarde encountred the Danys at a place called Brentforde, where with them he had a cruell fyght/and scomfyted theym at length.

In thys passe tyme Emma ỳ wyfe of Egelredus, ferynge the fortune of the warre/ sent her two sonnes Alphrede and Edwarde, vnto her brother Richarde the seconde of that name and fourth duke of Normandy.

But Edricus then, whyche as be fore is sayd, was euer subtyle of wyt, consyderynge the good fortune of Edmunde and hys knyghtely courage/thought that at length he shuld ouercome the Danys. wherfore to saue hys lande, and also to bryng aboute hys malycyouse treason / he sought the wayes and meanes howe he myght stande in hys grace and fauour. And at length obteyned his entente / and swore to hym to be hys trewe subiecte.

When kynge Edmunde had a season soiorned at Lōdon/he then made towarde the Danys that then were in Kent, and met wyth thē at a place called Okeforde or Otforde, & there scomfyted them, and chasyd Canut⁹ to the yle of Shepey. And there Canutus toke shyppyng/ & sayled about the land, & entred lastely in ỳ coūtrey of Mercia & spoyled a parte therof.

Then the two hostes met soone after at a place called Assheadown, where after longe fyghte Edricus wyth his retynew fledde to the comforte of the Danys. By meane wherof kyng Edmunde was put to the worse / for many noble men were slayne vppon his party. Amonges the whyche the byshop of Lyncolñ & the abbot of Ramsey were two / that thyther were come to treate a peace betwene bothe prynces. But whē this was layde to ỳ charge of Edric⁹/he by his vntrew meanes so excused hym, that no man myght charge hym with any defaut.

Thus contynuynge thys mortall warre betwyxte these two marcyall prynces, to the grete desolacyō & mortalyte of the people/one of the knyghtes of the partye of Edmunde gatte hym to an hyghe place, where he myght be somwhat harde of ỳ hoste/ and spake in thys wyse: Daly we dye, and no man hath the dyscryue. For Edmunde may not be ouercome for his great strength/and Canutus may not be ouercome for fauoure of Fortune. what shall then be ỳ fruyte of thys cōtynuall stryfe? None other but when the knyghtes ben all slayn on eyther partyes / then the dukes compelled by nede shall accorde, or ellys they shall fyght alone wythout knyghtes. Then syn this shall be the ende / why do they not one of these two? If they accorde/why is not this kyngedome suffycyent for twayne, ỳ somtyme suffysed for .vii. If theyr couetyse of lordshyppes be so great, ỳ eyther hath indygnacyon to take and haue parte wyth other, or ellys that one to be vnder that other/ then lette

lette them fyghte alone, that woll be the lordes alone left. If all mē fyght, all men be flayne/ by meane wherof no men fhall be left to be vnder theyr lordfhyp or ledyng of dukes, nor yet to defende the kynge agayne ftronge enymyes or nacyons.

Thefe wordes thus fpoken / were ryght wele alowed of both hoftes. For as affermeth myne authour/ at this time a trewce was made betwen both prynces for a certayne tyme. After whych peace ended/ were yt by occafyon of thefe wordes or otherwife, the fayde two dukes Edmunde and Canutus agreed to trye theyr quarelles betwene them two onely. And for thys was aſſygned by theyr both agrementes, a lytell yle called then Olney nere vnto Glouceter, or after fome wryters named Olenege, bycleped wyth the water of Seuerne. In whyche place at the daye appoynted, the two chāppyons met wythoute company or aſſiſtence wythin ỹ fayd yle/ the hoftes of bothe partyes ftandynge wythoute the yle, and there abydynge the foftune of thys batayll. There eyther proued other fyrſte wyth fharpe fperes, and after wyth kene and cuttynge fwordes. what fhall I of thys make lenger proces/ when eyther hadde other well proued and aſſayed, by receyuynge of harde and fore ſtrokes / by the fyrſte mocyon of Canutus, as moſte wryters teſtyfyen, they laſtely accorded and kyſſed to gyther as louers, to the great comforte of bothe hoftes. And fhortely after by the aduyce of bothe theyr counſaylles, condeſcended vppon partycyon of the lande/ whyche immedyately was done to bothe theyr agrementes, and loued after as two bretherne duryng theyr naturall lyues. But the ſerpent Ire of enuy and falſe conſpyracye, which euer burnyd in the harte of Edricus was kyndeled ſo fore, that of pure force yt muſt breke out vpon a lyght flambe / ſo what he myghte not accomplyſhe by his owne perſone, he fulfylled by his ſonne, as teſtyfyen dyuerſe authours. For as affermeth Guydo/ this ſonne of Edricus away tynge his tyme, eſpyed when ỹ kyng was at the wydraught to purge nature/ and wyth a ſpere ſtrake hym in to the foundement and ſo into the bodye, wherof kynge Edmunde dyed ſhortly after at Oxen. The king thus beynge ſlayne/ anon Edricus thynkynge therby to be greatly exalted, ſpedde hym in all haſte vnto Canutus, and ſaluted hym as kynge/ and ſhewed hym of thys treaſon onely for hys loue done. when Canutus hadde well vnderſtandyng of ỹ confeſſyon of Edricus, he lyke a diſcrete and ryghtous prynce ſayd vnto hym in thys wyſe. For thou haſte Edricus for the loue thou bereſt vnto me, ſlayne thyne naturall lorde, whyche I moſte loued / I ſhall exalte thyne hed aboue al the lordes of England. And forthwyth commaunded hym to be taken, and hys hedde to be ſtryken of, and pyght on a ſpere hedde, and after ſette vppon the higeſt gate of London. But Marianus the Scot telleth, that Edmunde dyed at London by naturall ſekeneſſe, about the feſte of ſaynt Andrewe. And the engliſhe cronycle affermeth the forenamed treaſon / but by a nother maner of doynge. But howe ſo euer this noble prynce dyed, trouth yt is after agrement of moſte wryters, ỹ he ended hys lyfe, when he hadde reygned one yere & more, as myche as from the moneth of June vnto the ende of Nouember/ and was buryed at Glaſtenbury by hys graundfather Edgare. Policronica ſheweth in the. xviii. chappter of hys. vi. boke, that Canutus after the deth

of Edmunde gaue vnto Edricus the lordeshyppe of Mercia/ and by hys counsayll exyled the brother of Edmunde called the kynge of chorles/ and thorough his coũsayle executed many cruell dedes. Of this Edmũde remayned two sonnes, that is to wyt Edmunde and Edwarde.

THE. CCV. CHAPITER.

CAnutus or Knougth after the Englyshe cronycle, sonne of Swanus as before is touched, and yonger brother as appereth by ỹ story folowynge/ began his dompynyon alone ouer Englande, in the yere of our lorde a thousande & .xix/ and the xxi. yere of Robert then kyng of Fraũce. The whyche anon after the deth of Edmunde assembled a counsayll at London/ where among other thynges in that coũsayll debated, a questyon was put, whether in the compo sicyon made betwene Edmunde and Canutus, any speciall remembraũce was made for the chyldren or brethern of Edmunde, for any partycypon of any parte of the lande.

Wherunto yt was answered of the lordes naye. Affermyng farthermore wyth othe for the kynges pleasure, that they to the vttermoste of theyr powers wolde put of that blood of Edmunde in all that they myght By reason of whyche answere & promyse/ they thought many of them to haue standen in the great grace and fauoure of the kynge / but yt turned all otherwyse.

For many of them, or the more partye, such as Canutus apperceyued & knewe, that they beforetyme were sworne to Edmunde and his heyres, & also were natyue Englisshe men/ he mystrusted & disdained euer after. In so myche that some he exyled, & some were slayn, and some by goddes punyshement dyed sodaynly.

But amonge all Edricus wyth his sugred wordes contynued in the kynges fauoure as sayth Marianus before mynded. By whose counsayll & other/ he shortely after outlawed the foresayde brother of Edmunde surnamed kynge Charlis, as before is touched. But he afterwarde was reconcyled to the kynges fauour, and lastely slayne of his owne seruaũtes.

Canutus also by the sayde counsayll, sent the .ii. sonnes of Edmũde, named as before is sayde Edmunde & Edwarde, vnto his brother Swanus then kynge of Denmarke, to be slayne after the oppynyon of some wryters. But he abhorrynge that dede/ sente theym to Salomon then kynge of Hungarye as wytnessyth Gupdo and other. where in processe of tyme Edmunde dyed/ and his brother Edwarde in tracte of tyme maryed Agatha the doughter of the .iiii. Henry then emperour of Almayne. Of the whyche Edwarde and Agatha procedyd Margarete that after was quene of Scotlande/ and Crystyane that was a menchon, and a sonne named Edgar and surnamed Ethelynge.

Thys Edwarde of the cronycles of England is named Edwarde the outlawe/ for so myche as he neuer returned into Englande as sayth the sayde englysshe cronycle, after hys fyrste exyle.

Then to returne vnto Canus/ the whyche after some thynges orderyd in his lande, deuyded his sayd lande in foure partes. That is to meane the fyrst principyall which at those dayes was westsaxon, he helde vnder hys owne gydyng. Eestenglande, whych cõteyned Norff. & Suff. he betoke to the rule of ỹ erle, Turkyll a Dane/ of whome somwhat is in the .iii. chapyter of ỹ story of Egelred. Mercia he be-

he betoke to the subtell erle Edricus. And the.iiii. Northumberlande, vnto a Dane named Hircius. But lyke as the man of Inde at no tyme chaūged his colour/so this Edricus chaūged neuer his fals maners. But not wythstandynge the great benefytes that he dayly receyued of his prynces/there as he to other hadde ben false and dyscreuable in dayes past, euen so nowe he demeaned hym agayne Canutus.

Wherfore he beynge accused & proued wyth defaute/was commaūded of the kyng to haue iudgement. The whyche was done immediatly/& his heddefor dyuerse causes smyten of/ and yt wyth the bodye for spyte caste into a fowle and fylthy place. But Ranulf sayth that he was slayne by the kynges agrement wythin his paleys at London/and his body wyth the hed throwne after into the towne dyche. Thus wyth shame he ended, that in falshode & dyssymulacyō had contynued myche of his lyfe.

Aboute the.ix. yere of his reygne, Canut⁹ called a parliament at Oxenford/where amonges other thynges yt was enacted, that Englyshmen & Danys shuld holde the lawes of Edgar lately kynge.

In this parlyme dyed Swanus brother to Canutus kynge of Denmarke wythout issue/ wherfore that lande fyll to Canutus. For the which cause he wyth a stronge army sayled thyther to take the possessyon, and to set the countrey in an order/or after some wryters to apeas & wythstande the wandelys, ẏ then had perced that lande and done therin myche harme. where Goodwyn the erle, whose doughter Edwarde the confessour after maryed/ wyth a certayne nomber of Englyshmen fyll vpon ẏ wandalys by nyght, & dystressed theym in suche wyse, that Canutus had of them his pleasure. For this dede the kyng had erle Goodwyn euer after in good fauoure, and loued Englyshmen more specyally. And when he was returned into Englande/he shortely after or before, maryed Emma the wyfe lately of Egelredus. Of the whych he receyued in processe of tyme a son & named hym Hardicunitus, or after some Hardyknytus / & after the Englyshe boke Hardyknough.

And aboute this tyme fyll voyde ẏ see of Lyndesfer or Durham, to the whyche by dyuyne inspyracyon and knowlege receyued by a voyce from the tumbe of saynt Cuthbert/blessed Edmūde after thre yere of vacacyon was electe to that see. But ye shal vnderstande that thys was not sayntē Edmunde of Ponteney. For he was archbyshoppe of Caunterbury in the dayes of Henry the thyrde.

THE.CXCVI. CHAPITER.

CAnutus about the. vii. yere of his reygne/by exhortacyon of Egelnothus then archbisshop of Caūterbury, translated the body of sayntē Elphegus late archbyshoppe of the sayd see, martyred by the Danys, as before is shewed in the seconde chapter of the storye of Egelredus/ and shryned hym in hys owne chyrche of Caunterbury forsayde.

In the tyme also of thys Canutus/ aboute the.xvi. yere of hys reygne, the Scottes rebelled agayne hym. wherfore he with a great army entred Scotlande/& at length ouercame the kynge of that lande named then Malcolyne, and brought them agayne to hys subiecyon, as is recorded in the bokes of Marianus the Scot. By reason of whych victory Canutus was then kynge of .iiii. kyngdoms/of England, of Scotlād of Denmarke, and Norwaye. Then

as wytnesſyth dyuerſe authours after he had betaken this lande of Englande to the gydynge of Leofricus Egelnothus, and other / he then returned into Denmarke. And from thēs he yode to Rome in the. xv. yere of his reygn, & made there great offerynges to ſaynte Peter and Poule/ & redemed the ſcole of Saxons fre of all former trybute graunted, as before in the ſtoryes of Jue and Offa and other kynges of Saxons is ſomdeale more touched. whyche redempcyon of tribute as ſayth Guydo, was called Rome Scot. But it ſhall ſeme in that ſayenge ſome douteth / for ſo mychе as at thys daye in dyuers places of Englād, as in Northampton-ſhyre and other, the peter pens are yet gaderyd. Canutus alſo after he had in Rome accomplyſhed his purpoſe/ he in hys returne towarde Englande executed wonderfull dedes of almes, in releuynge of the poore and other goſtly workes / & payde great good for raunſom of cryſten pryſoners/ amonges other of his dedes, Jt is wytneſſyd that he ſhulde agree with the pope that was called Benet the. viii. of that name, & pay to hym certayne ſummes of money, that his archbyſhoppes after ỳ daye myghte haue the pall wythoute payenge of money therfore.

And whē he was comen in the cityе of Papia in Jtaly, in hys way homewarde, he there brought the arme of ſaynte Auguſtyne the doctour for a hundred pounde of ſyluer and a talent of golde. And here is to be noted that there be thre maners of talētes. The fyrſt and gretteſt is of ỳ weyght of. vi. ſcore pounde weyghte/ the ſeconde of the weyght of. lxxii pounde/ and the thyrde and leeſt of. l. pounde weyght. Then yf we reken this talent with the leeſt/ in a poūde of gold after troye weyght, is. xii. buces, and in. l. pounde is. vi. hūdred bnces, and euery bnce of fyne golde is worth xl. s. By whyche reaſon this talent ſhulde be in value to the ſumme of xii. hundred pounde. This precyous relyque ỳ kyng gaue bnto his truſty frende Leofricus/ ỳ whych he myche loued and truſted/ and remayned at Couentre many yeres after.

whyle Canutus was occupyed in thys iourney/ cōplaynt was brought bnto hym of ſome myſſe demeanurs and rule, that were occupyed and exercyſed in his abſence wythin this realme. wherfore he wrote home letters to the lordes/ chargynge theym ſtraytely, that all ſuch defautes were redreſſed agayne hys cōmyng home.

Thys kynge as wythneſſeth Guydo was of great magnyfycence/ and vſed ſuche iuſtyce and temperaunce, that in his dayes in the weſte partes of the worlde, was no prynce of renowne as was Canutus. And ouer that he was gretly beloued & dradde of hys ſubiectes.

Jn the tyme of this Canutus, as teſtyfyeth Guillelmus de pontificibus/ a munke of Glaſtēbury named Bryghtwolde, whyche was after byſhop of wylton, beynge in hys contemplacyon and prayer, bethoughte hym on the lynage of Engliſhe kynges. And in that thought fyll into a ſlumber/ in whyche tyme of his ſlepe he ſawe ſaynte Peter the apoſtle ſtandynge by hym, and holdynge in hys hande Edwarde the ſonne of Egelredus which then was in Normandy/ the whyche to his thynkynge, he ſaw ſaynte Peter ſaker ỳ ſayde Edward as kynge of Englande. And ſhewed to hym farther how holy this Edwarde ſhulde be in hys lyuynge, and how he ſhuld reygne as kynge. xxiii. yeres. Then thys monke frayned ſaynt Peter of the offſpryngе of thys Edwarde, and who ſhulde be kynge

after

after hym. To the whyche questyon was answered by Peter, the kyngedome of Englyshemen is the kyngedome of god / wherfore the kynges therof shall stande at goddes purueyaunce. And also a nother doctour called Henry of Huntyngdon / shewyd that an holy man warned Englyshe men, ꝑ a lorde whyche they thought nothynge vppon, shulde come out of Fraunce & bryngе them ryght lowe.

In the tyme also of thys Canut? by agrement of many wryters fyll one thynge worthy mynde and memory. In a town of Saxony named Calbis, in ꝑ dyocesys of Magburgh and parysshe of saynt Magii / xviii. men and .xv. women vppon the euen of the Natyuyte of our lorde began a daunce about the chyrche yarde of saynt Magii afore sayd / the person or other prestes beyng than at masse wythin ꝑ same chyrche. which beyng troubled wyth the noyse of the mynstrellys, & also the dynne of the sayde men and women / sent vnto them in monyshynge them to seace of that doynge. But all was in vayne / for they wolde not seace of theyr dysport for any commaũdement ꝑ to thẽ was gyuen. wherwyth the preste beynge dyscontented, that they none other wyse reuerenced ꝑ sacrament, noryed that solempne season / besought god and saynte Magii that they shulde contynue theyr daunce by the space of an hole yere. The whyche prayer was harde / in suche wyse that they contynued the same songe & daunce tyll that daye twelue monethes, and neuer eate nor dranke nor rested thẽ in all ꝑ season. And moreouer dewe nor rayne fyll vppon them in all that yere / nor garment nor no thyng that was about them was impayred shoo nor other. At the yeres ende / Horobertus archbyshop of that dyocesys came vnto ꝑ sayde place and lowsed them of that bonde whych the preste had bounde them in / and before the awlter of the chyrche them reconsyled. Of the whyche a prestes doughter and two other dyed forth wyth / and the remenaunt yode to reste and slepte by the space of .iii. dayes and iii. nyghtes folowynge. where after some of them dyed / and suche as lyued fell lame of theyr lymmes. And one of the same .xviii. men beyng named Ubertus or Hupertus, wrote thys wonder wyth hys owne hande for a more recorde of the trowth.

Then let vs retorne to Canutus / of whom it is redde that after hys cõmyng from Rome, he beganne somdele to presume in pryde, & set more by hym selfe than good wysdome wolde. In tyme of whyche exaltacyõ of hys mynde / he went vnto the Tamys syde, and beheld howe the water swelled or flowed. And so standynge nere the water / the water touched hys fete. Than he charged the water that he shuld flowe no hygher and that in no wyse he shulde towche hys lordes clothes. But the water kepte his course and wette at length the kynges thyes. wherewyth ꝑ kyng abasshed sterte backe and sayde, all erthly kynges may know that theyr powers be vayne / and that none is worthy to haue the name of a kynge but he that hath all thynges subiecte to hys hestes, as here is shewed by worchynge of hys treature by thys water. And for thys as wytnesseth Polycronycon and other / he offered hys crowne to ꝑ rode of wynchester, and neuer bare it vpon his hed after.

It is also wytnessed of the sayde authour / that Canutus maryed hys doughter hadde by hys laste wyfe, vnto Henry sonne of Conradus the emperour, the seconde of that name / as also it is testyfyed of the authour of Cronica cronicarum.

And he repayred many monasteryes / and specyally suche as before tyme were hurte or throwne downe in the tyme of hys fathers persecucyon. And began and ended the monastery of sayne Edmundes Bury / & endowed it wyth ryche possessyons as before is towched. And dyed fynally at Shaftesbury, and was buryed at wyncheſter, whan he hadde reygned. xix. peres / leuyng after hym two sonnes of hys wyues / the eldest was named Harolde and the ponger Hardykynytus / the whyche lyuyng hys fader was made kynge of Denmarke.

Francia.

THE. CCVII. CHAPITER.



Enry the sonne of Robert / begā hys dompnyon ouer the French men, in the yere of our lord. M. xxix / and the. v. yere of Canutus than kynge of Englande. To the whyche Henry / Cōstantyne the moder was so vnkynde, that she by her meanes wolde haue preferred her ponger sonne Roberte duke of Burgoyne, to the rule of the lande before thys Henry / so that by her meanes, bothe cytyes and castels were wyth holden from hym, and was by her & suche other as toke her parte so ouer lad, that he was forced to resorte to Robert than duke of Normandy, for to aske helpe of hym to wythstande hys enemyes.

ye shall vnderstande that this Robert was the. vi. duke of Normandy, and sonne of Richarde the seconde / and also father vnto wyllyā bastard that conquered Englande.

Thys Roberte was lyberall and noble of condycyon / but defamed of ẏ deth of hys elder brother Rychard the thyrde. For the whyche murder as wytnessyth dyuers authours / the vii. yere of hys dowchery he went to Jherusalem, and dyd in that pylgremage many honourable and liberall actes / the whyche in good order ben remembred in the. xix. chappter of the vi. boke of Polycronicon.

This Robert receyued kyng Henry wyth all honour, and gaue vnto hym greate and ryche gyftes, & sent for hys frendes and knyghtes / so ẏ the kynge had by hys ayde a greate & myghty hoste. And retorned agayn into Fraunce / and in short whyle after recouered from hys sayde moder bothe cytyes, townes, and castelles, that she and her fautours from hym wythheldc. And fynally agreed so wyth her / that he and she contynued frendes theyr lyke tymes endurynge. After whyche accorde / about the. v. yere of hys reygne he made warre vppon Eudo erle of Champayne, & vppon Baldewine erle of Flaūders / and in procesſe of tyme wan frō them certayne cytyes and castelles, the whyche Constance his moder hadde before tymes gyuen to them in tyme of dyscencyon.

In thys warre was slayne Eudo erle of Champayne. wherfore hys. ii. sonnes Stephen & Thybaud maynteyned the warre agayne the kynge / but to theyr bothe harmes in ẏ ende. For Stephen loste therby the cytyes of Chartres and towers, and Thybaude ẏ cytyes of Troyes & Mault wyth other.

whan Henry hadde ended thys warre & set hys lande in some quyetnesſe / he thā buylded a monastery of sayne Martyne called Des Chāps beſyde Parys, and set therin seculer prestes.

In thys passetyme Robert duke of Nor-

of Normandy moued in conſcyence to vyſyte the holy ſepulture of oure lorde, called before hym hys lordes of hys lande/wyllynge and cõmaundynge them to owe theyr trewe allegaunce vnto hys yonger ſonne wyllyam, and to take hym for theyr lord and duke yf he retorne not agayne. And to thys/he cauſed to ſwere Robert than archbyſſhop of Roan, with the other of hys lordes/and after departed vppon the ſayd iourney, and dyed in the cytye of Bethenia as he was cõmynge homewarde. wherof ỹ lordes of Normandy beynge aſſertayned, accepted the forſayde wyllyam to theyr lorde and ſouerayne.

Of thys wyllyams prouocacyon/yt is wytneſſed of Vyncent hyſtoryall and other, that hys father paſſynge by the cytye or towne of Faloys in Normandy, he ſawe a company of maydens daunſynge by the ſtrete. Amonges the whych was one of paſſynge beautye called Arlet, and doughter to a ſkynner. To ỹ which duke Robert caſte vnlefull loue/in ſuche wyſe ỹ he cauſed her to be broughte to his bed the nyght folowyng, and helde her to his concubyne a certayn of tyme after/& begat on her this wyllyam. whẽ his moder was wyth hym cõceyued/ ſhe dremed that her bowelys were ſpradd ouer all Normandye and Englande. And when he was borne of his moders wombe/ he fyll to the groũde, and cloſed his handes wyth powder of the flore or pauement. Therfore the mydwyfe made an exclamacyon, and ſayd this chyld ſhall be a kynge.

Then yt foloweth/when thys wyllyam was thus admitted duke, ſome of his lordes by the meane of ỹ kyng of Fraũce, began to wythdraw them from hym. In ſo myche ỹ erle Gylbert to whome duke Robert had betaken hys ponge ſonne to gyde was ſlayne, and other that were eſpecyall frendes to the chylde. There was fyghtyng and manſlaughter and the countrey fowle farcn with, by reaſon of the oppynyons that were amonges them ſelfe/ wherof Guy a Burgoyn was one of the chefe cauſers. For he with his adherentes ſayde alwayes, that they wolde haue no baſtarde to be ruler of them.

This Guy as ſaith the frẽche boke was nere kynneſman vnto ỹ ponge duke, deſcendyd of the doughter of the ſeconde Rycharde/and entended to haue ben duke hym ſelfe. For the which he enſenſed ỹ kyng of Fraũce agayn hym in all that he myght/but at length duke wyllyam toke hym and put hym to deth.

Thus the frenche kynge forgettynge ỹ kyndneſſe ſhewyd to hym by duke Robert hys father, toke partye agayne hym to the vttermoſte/ and ordeyned hym .ii. hoſtes. wherof one he delyueryd to his brother Almaryk/and warned hym to entre ỹ countrey of Caus/ and he hym ſelfe ladde that other, and entred with it the coũtrey of Eurour.

But wyllyam not feryng the kynges great power/ beyng growen wele towarde mannes ſtature, lyke a luſte ponge knyght made towarde the kynges brother/ & gaue to hym batayll, & hym ouercame, and chaſed the frenchemen to theyr great vylany. wherof heryng the frenche kyng wyth his people ſpedde hym toward wyllyam to reuenge the ſhame done to his men. But in cõcluſyon he wan there no honoure. Then peace was made betwene the kyng and ỹ duke/ and the frenche pryſoners were delyueryd.

But this peace enduryd not long/ for the frẽche kyng callynge to remẽbraũce the loſſe of hys men at Wortmere or dede ſee, wyth other dyſauauntages

chyld that ſhe wyth her had brought out of Englande in ſtede of the champyon. The whyche fought wyth a man of geauntes ſtature/ and fynally hym ſlew, and brought vnto confuſyon.

when Gunylda by dyuyne power hadde thus clered her ſelfe/ ſhe vtterly refuſed the emperours company, and ended her lyfe in the ſeruyce of hym the onely god, that ſo hadde defended her ryght.

But yt ſhulde appere by Polycronycon, and alſo by Antoninus/ that thys mayden was maryed to ỹ ſayde Henry by the lyfe of her father Canutus, and alſo durynge the lyfe of the ſayde Henryes father named Conradus the ſecond, as before is touched in the ſtorye of the ſayde Canutus/ and not by thys Hardyknyptus her brother.

It is rad that the kynge betoke all the rule of the lande vnto hys moder and erle Goodwyn/ the whyche had maryed as wytneſſyth the englyſhe cronycle, the doughter of Canutus gotten vppon hys fyrſte wyfe Elgina. By whome many thynges were myſſe orderyd / and ſpecyally by the ſubtylyte of this erle Goodwyn. This erle had many ſonnes, as wytneſſeth Polycronycon in the.xxv.chapyter of hys. vi.boke. By his fyrſte wyfe that was kynge Canutus ſyſter, & not hys doughter as is aboue ſayde/ he hadde one ſonne. The whyche by vndyſcrete ſtrykynge of an horſe, was throwen into the Thamys and drowned. And the mother was laſtely ſmyttē wyth lyghtenyng and ſo dyed. Of whome yt is there remembred, that ſhe was ſo vngracyous and of ſo vyle condycyon/ that ſhe ſet yonge womē to horedome, for to gader by that vnlefull meane ryches. After the whyche wyfe ſo dyed, he maryed the ſeconde/ of whome he receyued. vi. ſonnes. That is to wyt Swanus, Harolde, Toſtius, Wynotus, Sirthe or Surthe, and Leofricus/ and a doughter named Godiua, whych after was maryed to Edwarde the confeſſour.

The two ſonnes of Egelredus Alphredus and Edwarde, whych as ye before haue hard were ſent into Normādy by Emma theyr mother/ came in ỹ tyme of the reygne of thys kyng into Englande, for to vyſyte and ſe theyr mother/ & brought wyth them a great nomber of Normans. Then thys Goodwyne ymagyned in hys mynde howe he myght preferre hys doughter Godyth to one of theſe bre therne/ and thoughte in his mynde ỹ the eldeſt wold dyſdayne that maryage. And for he thought to ioyne her vnto the yonger, and to make hym kynge and her quene / he compaſſed the deth of ỹ elder. And by this mean Goodwyn warned the lordes of Englande/ and ſayde yt was a great ieoperdye for the lande, to ſuffer ſo many ſtraungers to entre the land wythout licence/ wherfore yt were neceſſary that they were punyſhed to the example of other. By whych meanes he gat authorite to order that mater as to hym ſemed beſte or of his owne power, becauſe he was of moſte myght nexte the kynge. wherfore he yode and mette wyth the ſayde Normans/ and ſlewe of theym the moſte nomber. For vppon Guylde downe he ſlewe alway.ix. & ſaued the.x. And yet for he thoughte to many by that meane lefte a lyue/ he eft agayne tythed agayne the ſayd tythe, and ſlew euery tenth knyght of them and that by cruell deth / as wyndynge theyr guttes out of theyr bodyes, as ſayth Polycronycon / and amonge other put out the eyen of the elder brother Alphredus, & ſent hym to Ely, where he dyed in ſhort tyme after/ all be it ỹ

engly ſhe

englyſhe boke ſayth ꝑ he was ſlayne by the forenamed tormente. And Edwarde was conueyed and by ſome other waye brought to hys mother. But ſhe ferynge the treaſon of Goodwyne, ſente hym ſoone ouer the ſee agayne. Howbe it the yngliſhe cronycle telleth all otherwyſe. when Goodwyne was after accuſed for thys cruell dede / he ſware depely ꝑ he was forced of the kynge ſo for to do. But in one cronicle, I fynde that thys dede was executed by Goodwyne in the tyme of Harolde Harefote beynge kynge.

Then ꝑ foloweth in the ſtory/this kynge Hardykynutus beynge at a feſte at Lambehyth beſyde London, merry and iocande / whyle he ſtode drynkynge he fyll downe ſodaynly, and dyed/ or ware dumbe, and lay tyll the. viii. daye after, the whyche was the .viii. daye of the moneth of June/and then dyed, when he hadde reygned after moſte wryters two yeres / leuynge after hym none yſſue of his bodye lawfull, and was buryed by his father at wynchester.

Thus here endeth the lyne or ofſpryngе of Swanus and all other Danys / ſo that after thys kynge, the blood of Danys was clerely extyncte and putte oute from all kynghly dygnyte wythin thys realme of Englande. And alſo the perſecution of thē ſealed clerely after thys kynges deth. The whyche had contynued, to rekē from theyr fyrſt lan dynge in tyme of Brightricus kyng of weſt Saxon, & the .ix. yere of his reygne, as in ꝑ ſtorye before is reherſed/by ꝑ terme of .CC. lv. yeres.

THE .CCX. CHAPITER.

Edward the ſon of Egelredus & of Emma hys laſt wyfe/began his reygne ouer England, in the yere of our lord M. xliii/and the xiiii. yere of Henry then kynge of Fraunce. The whyche after the deth of Hardykinutus was ſente for into Normandye / and pledges layde for hym, that he wythout fraude ſhulde be made kynge. And then he came wyth a few ſtraunges. But as ſayth Marianus/ ſome of the lordes had ſent for Edwarde the outlaw ſon of Edmunde Ironſyde, for to be theyr kynge. But after the aſſyrmaunce of the ſaid authour/when he knew that Edwarde hys neuewe was in poſſeſſyon of the lande, he wolde medle hym no farther.

Then thys Edwarde by the great aduyſe of Goodwyn̄ erle of weſt Saxon, and of Leofric? erle of Cheſter/ was crowned kyng at weſtmynſter, of Edſius then archbyſhop of Caunterbury/ & wedded in proceſſe of time after, Goditha the doughter of erle Goodwyne, whych of Guydo is called Editha. The whych he entreatyd in ſuche wyſe/ ꝑ he put her not from his bed, nor yet delte wyth her fleſhely. whyther yt were for hate of her kynne, or forloue of chaſtite, ꝑ trouth is not ſhewed. But all wryters agreen that he cōtynued his lyfe with outen offence wyth women.

This kyng diſcharged Engliſhmen of ꝑ great tribute called Dane gelt, ꝑ whych before is ſundry tyme ſpoken of/ ſo ꝑ after ꝑ daye yt was no more gaderyd. And alſo he ſubdued ꝑ Bry tons or walſhmen that made warre

wythin the bondes of ỹ land. But after ỹ theyr duke or leder called Gryf fyn or Gryffyth, with ayde of ỹ Irysh men entred the ryuer of Seuerne, & toke many prayes, and departed agayne wythout fyght.

In the tyme of the reygne of thys Edwarde / Emma his moder was accused to be familyer with ỹ bysshop of wincheſter. Upõ which accusaciõ, by coũsayll of erle Goodwyñ he toke from her many of her iewellys, & caused her to be kept ſomdele more straitly in the abbay of warwell / and the bysshop he cõmytted to the exampnacyon and correccyon of the clergye. But his moder more forowynge the defame of Allwyñ the bysshoppe then her awne eſtate / wrote vnto dyuers bysshoppes, and beſought them of iuſtyce / affermynge ỹ ſhe was redy to abyde all leful & moſt ſharpeſt triall.

Then dyuers of ỹ bysshoppes made laboure to the kynge for her and for the bysshop. But Robert then archebysshop of Caunterbury / beyng wyth theyr laboure dyſcontented, ſayde to them in this maner. My brethern biſshoppes ſayd he, how dare ye defende her that is a wyld beſte and not a woman? ſhe hath defamed her own ſon the kynge, and nempned her lecherours lemman goddes owne preſte. But be yt ſo that the woman wolde purge the preſte / who ſhall then purge the woman, that is accuſed to be conſentynge to the deth of her ſonne Alphred, and procured venym to the poyſonyng of her ſon Edwarde. But how ſo yt be that ſhe be gylty or gylt leſſe / yf ſhe woll go barefoted for her ſelfe .iiii. ſteppes & for the bysshop .v. contynually vpon .ix. plough ſharys brennynge and fyre hote / then yf ſhe eſcape harmeleſſe, he ſhall be aſſoyled of this chalenge and ſhe alſo.

Thys was of her graunted, and the daye of purgacyon aſſygned. At which day ỹ kyng & grete part of his lordes were preſent / but this Robert fayled, were yt for pyte or otherwyſe. Thys Robert was a monke of an houſe in Normandy, and came ouer by the ſonde of the kynge / and was fyrſte made bysshoppe of London, and after archbysshoppe of Caunterbury. Then the nyght before Emma ſhulde make her purgacyon / ſhe went vnto the ſhryne of ſaynt Swythune at wyncheſter / and there kneled all that night in prayer and receyued dyuyne cõforte. Upon the morne ſhe was blyndefelde / and ladde vnto the place betwene .ii. men, where the iron laye glowynge hote / and paſſed the .ix. ſharys vnhurte. Then at laſt ſhe ſayde. Good lorde when ſhall I come to the place of my purgacyon. when they opened her eyen, and ſhe ſawe that ſhe was paſte the payne / ſhe kneled downe and thanked God and ſaynte Swythune. Then the kynge repented hym / and reſtored to her that he before hadde taken from her, and aſked of her forgyueneſſe. But the archebysshoppe of Caunterburye fledde into Normandye. And thys Emma gaue then vnto the monaſtery of that holy confeſſour ſaynt Swythune .ix. maners / and the byſſhoppe other .ix. as affermeth Polycronica and other.

It was not long after, that kyng Edwarde gaderyd a ſtronge naupe at Southamptõ, or more verely in the hauen of Sandwyche / for ſo mychе as he was warned that Swanus kynge of Denmarke entended to make warre vppon hym. But Polycronycon ſayth that he gaderyd thys nauy to wythſtande Harolde Harfagar then kyng of Norhganys, that entended to haue entred Englande. But he was letted by ỹ forenamed Swan, ỹ ſhortely after made warre vpõ ỹ ſayd Harold

And other

An other cronycle shewyth, that the Danys and Norgayns, whyche is to meane men of Norway/were agreed to come ioyntly into England. And whyle the kynge was shyppyng of his mne/ one brought forth a bole full of mede or meth to drynke vpon bon vyage. And after that came bole after bole/ so that after drynke came dronkencs, & after iangelyng/& iangelynge tourned into stryke, & stryke tourned into kyghtynge / where thorough many were slayne/& the other turned to theyr owne, so that that tourney was lefte of. But the legēde of hys lyfe in the chyrche telleth/that he beynge at masse in the chyrche of westmynster vppon a whytsondaye, in the tyme of the leuacyon of the sacrament he laught. wherof the lordes beynge aboute hym meruayled greatly / and after frayned of hym the cause. whervnto he answered and sayde,that the Danys wyth the Norwayes of one assente were purposed to haue comen into thys lande, and here haue taken prayes. But as the kynge of Danys shuld haue entred hys shyp,he fyll into the see and was drowned/so that I truste in my dayes they shall not, nor none other straungers make any warre in this lande.

THE. CCXI. CHAPITER.

IN the tyme of thys Edwarde fyll passynge great snowe,the whyche began in the begynnynge of January, and so contynued tyll the xvii. daye of Marche or saynte Patrykes daye/ wherof the great quantyte fyll in the weste countreys of Englande. And after that ensued great deth of men, and moreyne of bestes/ and by lyghtnynge the corne vpon the ground that yere was wonderfull brent and wasted.

Aboute the.x. yere of Edwarde as moueth Policronyca, and in the moneth of September / Eustace erle of Bolongn̄ came a lande at Douer/ whyche erle hadde wedded after the sayenge of the sayde authour, kynge Edwardes syster. Thys was parted frome hys companye in so secrete wyse, that hys knyghtes were fayne to serche for hym/ wenynge to them that he hadde ben slayne by some of the dwellers of the towne. In the whyche serche they demeaned theym so vndyscretely,that they slewe a cytezyne of Douer. By meane wherof the people arose/ and in the questyonynge of thys mannes deth, ran at length vppon the erles company, and slewe.xx. of hys men, and wounded many mo. Hastely the erle apperyd and toke his mennys parte.But in conclusyon he was fayne to withdrawe hym selfe with a few persons, and rode vnto the kynge then beyng at Glouceter/ and made vnto hym a greuous complaynte of the men of Douer.

Then erle Goodwyne, for so moch as to hym was commytted the rule of Kente / was charged to ryde thyther, and to take wreche of the inhabytaūtes of that towne. But he wityh sayde that commaundement / and counsayled the kyng to sende for the wardeyns of the castell of Douer and rulers of the towne, for to answere to suche maters as were layde agayne them,and yf they were gylty to punysshe them,and ellys not.

This answere of Goodwyn̄ pleased nothynge the kynge,nor suche as were aboute hym / wherfore many mo lordes were sent for. Amonge the which Leofricus erle of Chester, and Sewarde erle of Northumberland of myne authour ben named. After whych assemble of ꝑ lord̄ erle Goodwyne had suche monycyon of some of ꝑ counsayll,ꝑ he withdrewe

hym from the courte, and gadered to hym strength of knyghtes out of dyuers shyres, as west Saron & Kent/ and houed at Beuerstoñ tyl his sonnes came vnto him with more peple Soone after came vnto hym his eldest son named Swanus, & brought wyth hym a fayre compayne that he hadde arreyred in Oxenfordeshyre & Glouecestershyre / and Harolde hys other sonne, wyth a feleshyppe that he had assembled in eest Englande, and Huntyngdoñshyre / so that of these people was made a great hoste.

Then Goodwyñ to the kyng was accused, for gaderynge of so great an hoste. But he excused hym, and sayde, yt was done to wythstand the walyshmen. The whyche contrary proued/ he was cómaunded to sende awaye the people, and to come wyth a certayne nomber vnto the courte. But that he refused. Then the kyng wyth hys counsayll beynge at London/ Goodwyn and Harold was eft sent for, and charged to come to the courte wyth .xii. persones wythoute mo / and to render into the kynges handes all knightes fees that he and Harolde his sonne hadde wythin Englande. To thys by theym was answered, that they myghte not come to the counsayll of treachours and gylefull men / and that also wyth so fewe men in nomber, they myghte not wythoute parell or shame passe by the countrey.

In thys whyle a parte of Goodwyns knyghtes wythdrewe theym, and hys power beganne to mynyshe and the kynge in thys whyle hadde gaderyd a stronge hoste. Then proclamacyons were made, that Goodwyne shuld come to the courte as be fore is sayd/ or auoyde the land with in fyue dayes. wherfore Goodwyne consyderyng the ieopardy ỹ he was in/ toke wyth hym .iii. of his sonnes, that is to meane Swanus, Tosty, & Gurthe/ and sayled into Flaundres. where he was receyued of the erle Baldwyn after some wryters/ whose doughter Swanus his sonne hadde before spoused & was named Judeth And Harolde and Leofricus two of his other sonnes with a few shyppes sayled out frō Brystow into Irland.

when the kynge was ascertayned that erle Goodwyne wyth hys fyue sonnes was in thys maner departed oute of his lande/ he shortly after called a parlyament / and by authorryte of the same, outlowed Goodwyne & hys .iii. sonnes that were goue wyth hym. And that done he put his owne wyfe and doughter of Goodwyñ into the abbaye of warwell wyth one mayden, as sayth Marianus. And so Goodwyñ and hys sayde sonnes contynued two yeres outlawed. In the whyche season he or hys retynue toke dyuers tymes praye in ỹ marches of Englande / and in the ende drewe to hym suche strength, that he was purposed to haue entred the lande wyth force, and to haue warred vppon the kynge. But by medyatours that fauoured erle Goodwyn, a peace was made betwene ỹ kynge and hym/ so that in processe he was receyued to grace wyth hys sonnes/ & hys doughter restored to her fyrste and former honoure. And for thys peace to be contynued / for Goodwyns parte was delyuered for pledges a sonne of hys called wylnotus, and a sonne of Swanus named Hacum or Hacun. The whyche .ii. pledges kynge Edwarde sent vnto wyllyam duke of Normandy to be kept. And Algarus the sonne of Leofric erle of Chester, to whome the kynge had gyuen the erledome of Harold, & ruled yt dyscretely in tyme of his absence/ at hys returne delyuered yt to him again, gladly & without grudge

THE. CCXII. CHAPITER.

DUrynge the tyme of this out lawry of Goodwyne / wyllyam bastarde duke of Normandye came with a goodly cõpany into this land, and was honorably receyued/ to whom the kyng made great chere. And after he hadde taryed here a certayne of tyme to his agrement and pleasure / he retourned to hys owne wyth great gyftes & pleasures. And Emma the kinges moder dyed shortly after, and was buryed at wynchester. And Swanus the eldest sonne of Goodwyne went to Hierusalem, and from thens towarde Lycia/ and dyed by the waye of colde, that he had taken of goynge barefote. Then the Normans that had gyuen to the kynge euyll counsaylles agayne Englyshemen/ were by Goodwyne and his frendes exyled. Among the whyche Robert archebyshop of Caunterbury that hadde spoken sore agayne theym was one/ whych after went to Rome to complayn to the pope then Leoñ the.ix. or Uyctour the seconde. And whẽ he had receyued letters of ỹ pope directed to ỹ kyng/ he returned to his abbay of Gemeticum in Normandye, where he somtyme had ben munke and abbot / and there dyed. After hym Stigandus was made his successoure/ the whyche as sayth Policronicon, had before tyme lefte the byshoprycke of Shyrborne, and toke the see of wynchester by strẽgth. He also used sayres of holy chyrche thynges/ and was a lewde or vnlettred man, as the more part of the byshoppes of Englande at those dayes were. And ouer that he passed other in ryches and dyssymulacyon. But yet he neuer had ỹ palle from Rome, though there be great sale that maketh many maystryes.

Then was openly spoken that he was not worthy a byshoprycke, that coude vse ỹ bragge or pompe of the worlde, the vse of voluptuosyte, of glotony and Lechery, the shynynge araye of clothynge, the countenaunce of knyghtes, and the gaderynge of horsemen, and thynketh full lytell on the profyte of soules. And yf men sayde to theym that a byshoppe shulde be chosen for holynesse of lyuyng, and for hys good clergye, and not for couetyse of money/ they wold answere as foloweth, Nunc aliud tempus, alii pro tẽpore mores. The whyche verse maye be englyshed in thys maner.

As tyme requyreth, so men done theym vse.
In wynter warme clothes, in somer lyght and lesse.
In tyme of sadnesse men done gamys refuse.
And in myrthe tyme, men myrthes theym dresse.
So in tyme passed, was vsed great sadnesse
In the chyrche. But nowe men lyghte be.
wherfore the maners muste wyth men agree.

SO that by such light answere they plained or excused ỹ sharpenesse of theyr mysse lyuynge.

About this tyme, whyche shuld by Ranulff be about the.xii. yere of ỹ reygne of Edward/ Marian? the Scot that before I haue often named, that wrote myche of ỹ dedes of ỹ kynges of England / at the age of.xxb. yeres forsoke the worlde, & went on pylgrymage/ & was after shorne munke at Coleyne in Almayne in the abbay of Scottes. whyche Marianus after some wryters was in great fauoure with Malcolyne kyng of Scottes.

In the.xiii. yere of kynge Edward the Scottes rebelled agayn ỹ kyng, wherfore Sewarde erle of Northum-

berlande, by the kynges commaundement gadered a great hoste and entred that lande/and behaued hym so mankully, that in proceſſe he ſubdued the Scottes, & chaſed ỹ kynge out of his coũtrey/ſo that after kyng Edwarde gaue that kyngedome vn to Malcolyñ ſonne of the kynge of Cumbrys, to beholden of hym & hys heyres kynges, as cheke lordes of Scotlande.

Uppon Eſter mondaye aboute the ſayde yere Goodwyñ ſyttynge at the kynges bourde wyth other lordes in ỹ caſtell of wyndſore/yt happed one of the kynges cuppe berers to ſtumble and to recouer agayne, ſo that he ſhedde none of the drynke. wherat Goodwyñ lough, and ſayde, nowe that one brother hath ſuſteyned that other. wherby he ment that the one fote or legge hathe ſuſtayned ỹ other from fallynge. wyth whyche wordes the kyng marked him & ſayd, Ryght ſo my brother Alfrede ſhuld haue holden me, ne had Goodwyn ben. The erle then conceyued that the kynge ſuſpected hym of hys brothers deth/ and ſayde vnto the kynge in defendynge hys vntrouth: ſyr as I perceyue well it is told to the, ỹ I ſhuld be ỹ cauſe of thy brothers deth. So mought I ſauely ſwalowe this morſel of brede ỹ I here hold in my hãde, as I am giltleſſe of the dede. But as ſoone as he had receyued the brede/ forthwyth he was choked. Then the kynge commaũded hym to be drawẽ from the table/and ſo was conueyed to wyncheſter, and there buryed.

Marianus ſayth that as erle Goodwyñ ſat at the kynges table at wyncheſter/he was ſodaynly taken with a palſye or ſome other ſykenes vpon the Eſter mondaye, and dyed ỹ thyrd day after. And his lordſhyppes were gyuen vnto Harold his eldeſt ſonne then lyuynge/ & Haroldes erledome was gyuen to Algarus the ſonne of Leofricus, whych was the erledome of Oxenford after ſome wryters.

It was not longe after ỹ kynge Edwarde ſent vnto the.iiii. Henry than emperour of Almayne, Aldredus byſhop of worceter, wyth other noble men/prayenge hym that he wolde ſende vnto England hys coſyn Edwarde ſonne of Edmũde Ironſyde/ for ſo mychе as he entended to make hym hys heyre. The whyche requeſt was fulfylled, ſo that he came into Englande ſoone after/ the whych as ye haue harde before, was named Edwarde the outlawe.

But as witneſſyth Guydo and other the yere after that he came into Englande, he dyed at London, and was buryed at weſtmynſter.

Thys yere folowynge kynge Edwarde thorough yll counſayll exiled wythout gylte Algarus the ſonne of Leofricus. The whych aſſocyat hym wyth Gryffyne kynge or duke of walys/ and deſtroyed ỹ countre of Harford, & dyd mych harme to ỹ towne, and ſet the mynſter on fyre, and ſlew vii. chanons therof. Then the kyng ſent Harolde agayn hym/the whiche chaſed the walſhmen into theyr own boundes, and recouеryd the ſayde towne by appoyntement holden by the ſayde Algarus, and amended all hurtes before done by the walſhmẽ/ and laſtely recouncyled the ſayde Algarus and his companye vnto the kynges grace.

THE .CCXIII. CHAPITER.

ABoute the. xb. yere of kynge Edwarde/dyed ỹ noble duke Sewarde ruler of Northumberland of the flux, of whome Guydo reherſeth dyuers notable actes whyche I paſſe ouer. Of whom yt is radde that when he ſawe well he ſhulde dye, he

cauſed

cauſed hys armour to be put vppon hym/ and ſo armed and ſyttynge in a cheyre, haupnge all the ryghtes of the chyrch ſayde, that ſo yt became a knyght and man of honour to dye, & not lyenge as an other mene man/ and ſo dyed, & was buryed at yorke. And hys erledome was after gyuen to Toſty or Coſty ſon of Goodwyñ.

In the yere folowynge or .xvi. yere of kynge Edwarde, dyed alſo ỹ good erle Leofricus erle of Mercia and of Cheſter/ and was buryed in the abbay of Couentre, the whyche before he hadde buylded. This man purchaſed many great pryupleges for ỹ towne of Couentre/and made it free of all maner of toll, excepte onely of horſe. For the whyche to haue alſo free/ the comen fame telleth, that after longe requeſte made vnto hym by his wyfe named Godina, he graũted her to haue yt therof freed / wyth that that ſhe wolde ryde naked thorough the towne/ by meane wherof yt was freed. Then Algarus hys ſon was erle after hym.

Harolde then the eldeſte ſonne of Goodwyñ/ was in great authorȳte, & ruled myche of the kynges armye.

The yere folowyng Algarus was accuſed by malyce/ & exyled the land. wherfore he fled agayne to Gryffyne duke of walis as he before had done, of whom he was ioyouſly receyued and mayntayned. The kynge therof beyng infourmed, ſent Harolde into walys to make warre vppon Gryffyne. The whyche quytte hym in ſo knyghtely wyſe / that he chaſed the walſhmen, brent the ſayde Gryffyns paleys at a place callyd Rutlañ, and his nauy, and then returned into Englande about mydlent. But aboute rogacyon dayes nexte folowyng, the ſayde Harolde with his brother Toſty was ſente thyther agayne, wyth a ſtronge armye. At whyche ſeaſon they deſtroyed a great parte of walys, & in concluſion brought the walſhmen vnto dew ſubiection, and forced the to gyue pledges for the contynuance of the ſame. And that done purſued ſo fore vppon the ſayde Gryffyne, that in the ende his owne people for purchaſe of theyr owne lyues, ſlewe the ſayde Gryffyne, and ſent his hed vnto Harolde in the moneth of Auguſte / ſo that after the deth of thys Gryffyne by the commaundement of the kynge, the coũtrey of walys was commytted to the gydynge of the .ii. bretherne of Gryffyne / the whyche had fauoured more the kynges party in tyme of the foreſayd warre then theyr brother. And this warre in walys thus brought to ende/ Harold by his polycy recouncyled agayne Algarus erle of Mercia to ỹ kyngꝭ grace, ſo that he contynued in hys fauoure durynge hys lyfe after.

About thys tyme a woman of Barkley in Barkſhyre vſed yll craftes of ſorcery. The whyche as ſhe was ſyttynge vpon a daye at a feſte or great dyner/ a crowe that ſhe had lykyngly fedde and brought vp, kreked louder then he was accuſtomed to do. when the woman harde that noyſe her knyfe fyll out of her hande, & ſhe wared ſodaynly pale. And with ỹ ſhe beganne to ſyghe and ſorow/ & ſayd alas, this daye is my ſoule comen to the laſte ſorow. And ſo after that ſhe had ſpoken thoſe wordes / a meſſanger came to her, and ſayde that her ſon and all her mayny was dede ſodaynly. Then ſhe was conueyed to her owne and was full ſyke. wherfore in haſte ſhe ſent for an other ſon of hers that was a monke, & a doughter ỹ was a nunne/ at whoſe cõmyng ſhe ſayd to them in thys wyſe. I am the woman that haue vſed yll crafte and enyll lyuynge / and in vayne I hoped to haue ben ſaued by your be-

des and prayers. But now I praye you that ye woll releue my tourmentes and paynes / for of my soule the iudgement is gyuen. wherfore in case that ye maye kepe my body from tourment, sewe it in an hartes skyn, and laye it in a trought of stone and hyll it wyth lede close and iuste / and after do bynde it wyth barres of iron in moste strongest and sure wise, and cause ye. xl. psons to synge psalmes by nyght, and vppon the morne as many masses. And yf I lye so styll iii. nyghtes, than burye my body on the. iiii. daye. But all thys was for noughte. For the fyrste nyght whyle the psalmes were in sayeng / ỹ strõge bandes were sodaynly to brokē / and one wyth a gresely loke was sene vpon an horse backe all blacke, & cast thys woman behynde hym, & so rode forth wyth so greate crye and noyse, that it was harde as sayth Polycronycon. iiii. myles thens.

Thys wolde I not haue shewed, but that I fynde it wryten and recorded of diuers authours.

Than to retourne to our fourmer story / as wytnessyth myne authoure Ranulfe, about ỹ. xx. yere of ỹ reygne of kynge Edwarde / Harolde sayled towarde Normandye to vysyte hys brother wylnotus and Hacun hys neuewe / the which as ye before haue harde were layde there for pledges for the peas to beholden vppon erle Goodwyns syde agayne the kynge. But he in his course of saylyng was weder dryuen by tempeste into the countre or prouynce of Pontyfe, or more verely into the puynce of Poũtyth / where he was taken as a prysoner, and sent vnto duke wyllyam of Normandy. The whyche forced hym to swere, that he in tyme folowynge shulde marye hys doughter / & that after the deth of kynge Edward he shulde kepe the lande of England to hys behofe, accordyng to the wyll and mynde of Edwarde after some wryters. And after the opynyon of a nother cronycle wryten in latyn / the sayd Harolde for to be in the more fauour of duke wyllyã, shewed to hym that kynge Edwarde in presence of hys barony, had admytted the sayde wyllyam for his heyre / and couenaũted wyth hym, that yf he ouerlyued the kyng, he wold in saue wyse kepe the lande to hys vse. For the whyche tydynges & promyse wyllyam graũted to hym hys doughter to wyfe, ỹ than was wythin lawfull yeres of maryage wyth greate dower. And for to cause Harolde to be the more stabler in hys promyse keppynge / he delyuered to hym Hacun hys neuew and sonne of hys brother Swanus, whyche he myche desyred, and kepte styll wylnotus the brother of ỹ sayd Harolde. After whiche couenauntes suffycyentely stablyssyed and enacted / Harold departed from duke wyllyam wyth greate and ryche gyftes, and in processe of tyme landed in Englande. And at hys comynge to the kynges presence / he shewed to hym all that he had done in the forsayde maters / where wyth the kynge was well cõtented, as affermeth the sayd latyne cronycle.

THE. CCXIIII. CHAPITER.

In the. xxii. yere of kynge Edwarde as testyfyeth Ranulfe / Tostius the brother of Harolde was for cause not shewed disconted in the kynges courte, and went vnto Harforde in the marche of walys / where at that tyme the seruauntes of Harold by cõmaũdement of theyr mayster were besyed to make prouysyon for to receyue the kynge. But whan thys Tostius was thyder comen / he cruelly slewe the sayde seruaũtes of

hys

hys brother, & hacked them in small peces, and caste them after in mere sowce or salte. And that done sent worde vnto the kynge, ỹ yf he wolde come vnto hys feest, he shulde lacke no powdered mete, what so euer he hadde besyde.

Thys cruell dede sprange wyde, so that for it he was hated of all mē/ in so mych that hys owne tenauntes the men of Northūberland, of which prouynce he than was lorde of, arose agayne hym and toke frō hym that he hadde/and lastely chaced hym into Flaunders wyth a fewe persons than awaytynge vppon hym. But ỹ vertuouse kyng Edward not beyng contented wyth the comons doynge, consyderynge it to be done wythout hys aduyce and cōmaūdement / sent thyder Harolde to do correccyon vpon the heddes or capytayns of the Northumbers. wherof they beynge acerteyned cōtynued theyr strength and mette wyth Harolde & hys people/and sent hym to vnderstāde that they were frely borne, and frely nourysshed, & that they myght nat suffer no cruelnesse of dukes. Also they had lerned of theyr elders & soueraynes to meyntayn fredom or to suffer deth and to lyue in quyetnesse vnder an easy duke. whan Harolde had receyued thys message, and aduertysed ỹ strength of the Northūbers / he perceyued well that wythout greate effusyon of blode he myghte not correcte the mysse doers. wherfore it semed to hym better to fauour the cōtree, than to take hede of the synguler profyte of hys brother / so that he retorned to the kynge wyth thys answere, and purchased theyr pardon of hym/and also procured so ỹ kyng, ỹ he assygned to them an other duke or erle that was named Malcarus. And Tostius hys brother wyth hys wyfe & chyldern remayned in Flaunders, durynge the kynges lyfe.

Kynge Edwarde in the. xrii. yere of hys reygne, syttyng at mete vpon Eester day in his paleys of westmynster, sodaynly lowghe, whan other dyd talke and eate. whan thys blessyd man had dyned, and was entred into his chamber/his kamplyers asked of hym ỹ cause of hys lawghyng To whom he answered / for ỹ same selfe tyme sayd he. vii. slepers, that in the mount Selcon besydes Ephesym in Asya the lasse, had slepte two hundred yeres or there about vpon the ryght syde / the selfe same tyme they tourned them, and shall slepe agayne vpon that other syde. lxxiii. yeres. Though thys be tolde of Ranulphe & other/syth in thys sayenge appereth some dyscordaunce wyth other wryters / & also wyth the former sayenge of the sayde Ranulphe in the. xrii. chappter of hys. iiii. boke of Polycronycō, where he sayth that the sayd. vii. slepers were closed in ỹ caue/the fyrst yere of Decius, and so sleped contynuyngly to the laste tyme or yeres of Theodocius the yonger than emperour / by whyche reason they shulde slepe about ỹ season or space of. ii. hundred yere as aboue is sayd/ and than arose and shewed them to that sayd Theodocius empe rour and many other / & dyed soone after, as wytnessyth Vincencius hystorialis, Antoninus, Jacobus Philippus, and other: wherfore it can not stande wyth reasō, ỹ they shulde slepe vpon ỹ other syde after ỹ tournyng. lxxiii. yeres, as is aboue sayd/ nor that they shulde sterue in ỹ tyme of thys holy kynge and confessoure. For hys tyme of reygne was after ỹ tyme of Theodoci⁹ afforesayd, more than. vi. hundred yeres. But yf it be ment by some other. For there are vii. other slepers spoken of in ỹ. xxvi. chappter of the fyrste boke of Polycronycon,

cronycon, that hath slepte in a nother cauc many yeres. wherfore I rempte thys vnto other, and folowe the order of the story. wherein it is founde, that whan this blessed kyng Edwarde had receyued by dyuyne monycyon, that he shulde chaunge thys transitory and bryckell lyfe for the lyfe euerlastynge / he sykened in the Crystmasse weke. In tyme of whych sykenesse was shewed to hym a vysyon, that he after shewed vnto suche as were about hym/ and sayde two men of relygion came to me that I somtyme was kamplyer wyth in Normandye / and shewed that they were sent from god vnto me, to gyue vnto me warnynge of such thynges as foloweth. And fyrste they sayde that for the dukes, bysshoppes, and abbotes of Englande, be not goddes seruauntes, but the deuylls / god hath taken thys kyngdome into the handes of enemyes for a tyme / and fendes shall walke and destroble the people. Than I besought god that the people myghte haue warnynge, and do penaunce and be delyuered, as the people were of the cytye of Ninyue. Nay sayde they/for these men be so indurate of harte, ỹ they shulde do no worthy penaunce, nor to them god shall shewe hys mercy nor forgyuenesse. Than I asked of them/whā myghte be hope of mercy and pardō. They answered / whan a grene tree is hewen downe, and a parte therof cut from the stocke, and layde. iii. fourlonge from the stocke/and wyth out mannes helpe or hande shall retourne to his stocke or rote, and take agayne hys shappe, and than flouryshe and bryngе forth fruyte. whan thys is done / than maye be hope of comforte and of remedy.

In the tyme that this blessyd man shewed thus thys vysyon / was present there wyth other, Stygandus archebysshoppe of Caunterbury. The whyche sayde vnto the other, that the kynge raued or elles doted for age and sykenesse, as olde men done / and accompted these wordes for foly and vanyte. But not longe after Englande felte and conceyued thys prophecye/whan it was in subiecyon of straungers and alyauntes as after shall be shewed.

Than who that is desyrous to knowe the exposycion of the prophecye of the grene tree / lette hym rede in the ende of the lyfe of thys glorious kynge and confessoure, translated by wyllyam Caxton, in the boke called the Legende of sayntes / and there he shall fynde it. All be it that in other places I haue sene it otherwyse interpreted / the whyche I rempte to them that haue experyence in suche facultye. And to conclude thys storye/trouth it is that this blessyd kynge dyed the. iiii. daye of January, whan he hadde reygned. xxiii. yeres, vii. monethes, and odde days/ and was buryed in the monastery of westmynster, ỹ whych he before had gretly augmēted & repayred/but nat in that maner and fourme that it is nowe in. For the chyrche that nowe there standeth, was so reedyfyed and buylded newe of Henry the thyrde and sonne of kynge Johñ. The whiche also after some wryters/ translated thys blessyd kynge Edwarde from the lower parte of ỹ chyrche, and shryned hym there he nowe lyeth. And this kynge Edwarde lafte after hym no chylde/ for he was accompted for a dyrgyn whan he dyed.

Francia.

THE.CCXV.CHAPITER.



Hylyp the fyrst of that name & son of Henry / began his dominiō ouer the Frenchemen, in the yere of our lorde.M.lviii / & the.xvi.yere of Edwarde the confessour than kynge of Englande. And of thys Phylyp it is radde, that he maryed a wyfe named Berta the doughter of Baldewyne erle of Holland and of Fryce. Of the whyche Berta this Philyp receyued a sonne and named hym Lewis/and a doughter ꝑ was called Cunstaūce. But in processe of tyme he haunted so myche the company of a woman named Bertande, that he hated hys laufull wyfe/and at length helde her in prysou, and kept that other in her stede/and gatte vppon the sayd Bertande two sonnes named Phylyp & Florys, and a doughter which myne authour nameth not. For thys aduoutry, he was often monysshed of ꝑ pope, that he shulde leue the compayne of that yll woman, and take to hym hys lawfull wyfe ꝑ he so longe had holden in prysou within hys castell of Monfruell. And for he wolde not be obedyent vnto the popes coūsayll/he was fynally accused of pope Urbane the seconde of that name. By meane wherof he was reconcyled and restored agayne to his wyfe, and refused hys concubyne.

And in the tyme of thys Phylyp/ Godfrey de Bollīō with many other crysten prynces, at the exortacyon of Peter the herempte, sayled into the holy lande/ and wanne the cytye of Hierusalē out of the Saralyns handes. whyche prynces lastly crowned the sayd Godfrey kynge of the sayde cytye. And after it so contynued in possessyon of crysten men, by ꝑ terme of foure score and tenne yeres, vnder ix. crysten kinges/and lenger myght haue endured, hadde not discencyon fallen amonges them selfe. And so by Antonnus, Peter Dilrey, and other it is manyfestely shewed. Thys vyage after moste accorde of wryters, begā in the yere of grace .M. lxxvbi. and the. xxvii. yere of thys Phylyp. And the sayd Godfrey was crowned kynge of the sayde cytye of Hierusalem after the affyrmaunce of ꝑ sayde wryters, in the yere of grace a thousande and foure score and .xix.

Of thys Phylyp lytell worthy memory is lefte in wrytynge. For lyke as hys fader Henry made hym kyng by his lyfe, and suffered hym to haue the rule of the lande / ryght so thys Phylyp after a certayne of tyme, cōmytted the rule of the lande vnto Lewys his sonne. And he sette hys mynde to huntynge and other dysportes / and so ladde hys lyfe in all slowthe and idelnesse.

Than Lewys takynge vppon hym the charge of the realme / subdued the erle of Mounte Meruly & other/that laboured to take from the chyrche of saynt Denys certayn preuyleges/ and also constrayned them to restore and satysfye all hurtes and harmes to the sayde chyrche by them done.

Thys Lewys as affermeth the Frenche cronycle, maryed the doughter of Guy erle of Cotchefordе / the whyche after for nerenesse of kynne was deforced from the sayde Lewys, to the greate dysplesour of the sayde erle Guy. wherfore he moued warre agayne the sayd Lewys, and toke from hym certayne holdes and castelles/of the whyche the castell of Gurney was one. But at length Lewys had ꝑ better of that warre, and recouered

recouerȳd diuers of the sayd holdes. And amonges other pryſoners by hym and his knyghtes takē/ he toke a myghty and ſtronge captayn of the ſayde erle Guy named Hombolde, the whyche he ſente to the caſtell of Stampes, there ſauely to be kepte. Durynge whyche warre, Philyppe the kynge ſykened/and dyed the yere of grace. M. a hundred .xl. vi, when he hadde rygned full.xlviii.yere/and was buried at ſaint Benet ſur Loyr.

Anglia.

THE .CCXVI. CHAPITER.



Harolde ȳ ſecond ſon of erle Goodwyne, and laſte kynge of Saxons / began to rule the realme of Englande ȳ v. daye of January, and the yere of our lorde. M. and.lxvi/and the .viii. yere of Phylyp the fyrſt then kynge of Fraunce. This as moſte myghty, for ſo myche as the bleſſyd kynge Edwarde dyed wythout yſſue, not myndyng the pro myſſe of hym before made vnto wyllyam duke of Normādy as before I haue ſhewed/toke vpō him as kyng, and was crowned of Aldredus then byſhoppe of yorke. All be yt as affermeth Guydo and other, ſome of the lordes entended to haue made Edgare Adelynge kynge / whyche Edgare as affermeth ȳ ſayde authours, was ſonne to Edwarde that was the ſonne of Edmund Ironſyde, and named of ſome Edwarde the outlawe. But for this Edgare was yong, and ſpecyally for Harolde was ſtrong of knightes and rycheſſe/he wanne the reygne. Howe be yt Marianus ſayth that kyng Edwarde ordeyned before his deth, that Harolde ſhuld be kyng after hym. By reaſon wherof, the lordes crowned hym therupppon at weſtmynſter.

Anon as he was crowned/ he beganne to fordoo euyll lawes and cuſtomes before vſed, and ſtablyſſhed the good lawes, and ſpecyally ſuche as were for the defence of holy church and punyſhed the euyll doers, to the fere and example of other.

In ſhorte tyme after that Harolde was thus made kynges / Toſty or Coſty hys brother, whyche as before is ſayde, was of the Northumbers chaſed into Flaundres, made hym a nauy of. lx. ſmall ſayles, and ſayled about the ile of wyght, & toke prayes wythin the ſayd yle and other places of Kent. And from thens he ſayled in to Lynſey, & dyd there myche harme both with fyre and ſworde. But ſoon after he was chaſed thens by Edwyn and Malcharus erles of Mercia & of Northumberlande. And then he ſayled into Scotland, & taryed there tyll the ſomer after.

when Toſtius was thus wyth hys robbers chaſed/ then Harolde Harkagar kynge of Northganys or Norways, wyth a great nauy of. iii. hundred ſhyppes or mo, entred ȳ mouth of the ryuer of Tyne. Thys Harolde Harkagar as ſayth Guyde, was the ſonne of Canutus, and kyng of Denmarke and of Norway. The whych heryng of the deth of holy Edward/ purueyed ȳ ſayd great armye to wyn Englande, as his ryghtfull enheryteunce. when Harolde was warned of thys great flote of Danys/he ſent vnto the forenamed erles or dukes of Mercia and of Northumberland/ commaundyng them to wythſtande theyr landynge, whyle he gadered hys ſtrength. Then the forſayde dukes ſpedde theym towarde the Danys, and gaue vnto them a ſharpe & ſtronge fyght. But in concluſyon the

En-

Englyshemen were put to the worse, and were fayne to gyue backe / so ꝑ the enymyes entred farther into the lande. The kyng herynge of the scō-fyture of hys people, made the more haste towarde hys enymyes / so that the .vi. day after he came to Stemyl forde brydge. In thys whyle was Tostius before named come oute of Scotlande, and gone to the partye of the Danys agayne hys owne bro-ther. In thys forsayde place bothe hostes ioyned / and faught then there a sharpe cruell batayll. wherin fyll many a sturdy knyght vppon the en-glyshe partye, but mo vppon the Da-nys syde / so that in the ende Harolde theyr kynge was slayne, and that of the hande of Harolde kynge of En-lande as sayth Guydo / and Tostius was also slayne in the same fyghte. Olanus broter to the sayth Harolde Harfagar, with Paulus duke of the yles of Orkeys / were there taken pri-soners. The whyche the kynge caus-ed to hym to be sworne, to kepe such promises as they to hym there made, and toke good pledges for perfor-maunce of the same, and after suffred theym to retourne from thens they were comen.

It ys also specyally remembred of the sayd authour / that one knyght stode vppon the forsayde brydge; and wyth his axe defended the pas-sage maugre the hole hoste of ꝑ En-glyshemen, and slew .xl. Englyshmen or mo wyth hys axe / and myght not be ouercomen, tyll an Englyshman went vnder the brydge and stycked hym vpwarde wyth hys spere tho-rough an hole of the brydge.

For thys victory Harolde was sup-preised wyth pryde, and also wyth co uetouse / so that he dyuyded not the prayes of hys enymyes amonge hys knyghtes, but kepte theym to hym selfe / or gaue parte vnto suche kny-ghtes as he fauoured, and spared to them that had well deserued / by rea-son wherof he loste the fauour of ma ny of hys knyghtes.

In thys passetyme / the doughter of duke wyllyam, the whych Harold shuld haue maried, dyed within age. wherfore Harold thought hi ꝑ more discharged of his promise before made to her fader. But duke willyam war ned Harolde of couenauntes broken, and medled menasses wyth prayers by sondry tymes. wherunto Harolde answered, that a nyce folyshe coue-naunte ought not to be holden / & na mely ꝑ behest of other mennys ryght and kyngdome, wythout the hole as-sent of the senatours of ꝑ same land. And farthermore a lewde othe might and ought to be broken / and specyal ly when yt is compelled to be swor ne for nede or for drede.

Vppon these answers receyued by duke wyllyam from Harolde / in the whyle that messangers went & came, duke wyllyam gadered hys knygh-tes, and prepared his nauy and all other thinges necessary to the warre, & had assent of the lordes of his land to ayde and assyste hym in his iour-ney. And ouer that he in such wise en formed the pope, then beynge named Alexander the second / ꝑ he cōformed hym in takynge of that vyage / and sent vnto hym a banner, the whyche he willed hym to bere in the shyp that he hym selfe shuld sayle in. And so be-ynge purueyed of all thynges concer nyng his iourney, he sped hym to the see syde, & toke shyppynge in the ha-uen of saynt Valery / where he tarryed a longe tyme or he myght haue a co-uenable wynde. For ꝑ whych his sol dyours murmured & grudged / and sayd it was a woodnesse & great dys-pleasynge to god, to desyre an other mannes kyngdome by strength / & na mely when god wythsayde yt by the

& worrkynge

worlynge of his element.

At the laste when duke wyllyam had longe bydden and houed for the wynde / he commaunded to bringe forth ỹ body of saynt Valery, and to be sette vppon the see stronde. The whyche done / the wynde shortely after came about and fylled the sayles. Then wyllyam thanked god & saynt Valery / and toke shortely after shyp pynge, and helde his course towarde Englande / vppon thys grounde & tytle folowynge.

The fyrste and prynceypall was to chalenge his ryghte / and to haue the dompynyon of the lande that to hym was gyuen (as he affermed) of kyng Edwarde the confessoure and hys neuewe.

The seconde was, to take wreche of his deth & cruell murdour of hys neuew Alfrede, and brother of ỹ blessyd kynge Edwarde / that was slayn of erle Goodwyne and his adherentes, as before ye haue harde in the storye of Hardykinitus / the whyche dede he ascrybed chefely vnto Harolde And the thyrde was, for to auenge the wronge done vnto Robert archebyshop of Caunterburye / whych as he was enformed / was exiled by the meanes and labour of Harolde, in the tyme of Edwarde the confessour, as before is shewed.

THE .CCXCVII. CHAPITER.

Duke wyllyam keppynge hys course / landed in processe of tyme at Hastynge in Sussex, in a place called Peuenesley. And in hys goynge oute of his shyp, and takyng the land / hys one fote slode, and that other stacke faste in the sande. The whych espyenge one of his knyghtes ỹ was nere vnto hym / cryed alowde and sayd, now syr duke thou holdest Englande, and thou shalte soone be tourned from a duke to a kynge. The duke of this made game, and entred further into the lande / and made his proclamacyons and cryes, that no man shuld take any prayes, or do any force to the people. For he sayde that yt was reasonable that he shuld spare that thynge that shulde be hys owne.

Harolde in thys whyle was in the North partes of Englande, and had wittynge of the landynge of the Normayns / and sped hym towarde them in all that he myghte, and gatheryd his strengthy by the countreys as he came. But the duke made so good spede, that he came to Lõdon before the kynge. where he was holden out, tyll he had made good suertye, that he and hys people shulde passe thorough the cytye wythout tarynge. The whyche was obseruyd. And so he passyng the cytye / passed the bridge, and went ouer into Sussex.

Kynge Harolde entendynge to know the strẽgth of his ennmyes, sent espyes into the dukes hoste / the whyche made reporte vnto the kynge, that all duke wyllyams soldyours were prestes. For they had theyr ouer lyppes and chekes shauen / and the Englyshmen at these dayes vsed the here of theyr ouer lyppes shadde and not shauen. But Harold to that answered and sayde, they be no prestes, but are stalworthy and sturdye knyghtes.

Then Gurth or Surth one of the yongeste bretherne of Harolde / counsayled hym that he shulde stande a parte, and sufferr hym wyth other of hys lordes to fyght with ỹ Normãs, for so myche as he was sworne to the duke and they were not / aledgynge furthermore, that yf they were ouerthrowen, ỹ yet he myght defende hys quarell and fyghte for the countrey.

In this

In this meane tyme wyllyam sent a monke vnto Harold, and proferred to hym thre maner of wayes/ and to chose one of the thre.

The fyrste, that accordynge to his othe he shulde render the lande, or delyuer yt vnto the possessyons of wyllyam. And ỹ done/to take yt agayne of hym, and hold yt of hym as in fee/ & so to reygne vnder hym for terme of hys lyfe / and after his deth to retourne yt to the sayd wyllyam, or to suche one of his sonnes as he wolde assigne it vnto. Or secondly, leue the kyngedome without more stryke. Or thyrdely in exchewynge of shedynge of the more plenty of Crysten mēnes blood/that he wold defende his quarell in hys owne persone agayne the duke/ and they two onely to trye the mater by dynte of swordе. But Harolde refused these offers/ and sayde he wolde trye his quarell by dynt of swordis, and not by one swordе/and that he and hys knyghtes wolde defende theyr coūtrey agayn allstraūge nacyons, prayenge to god to deme the ryghte betwene them twayne.

when duke wyllyam hadde receyued this answere from Harolde, and sawe well that there was no meane but fortune in batayll: he charged his people ỹ myght watche, to occuppe theym in prayer / and specylly the prestes and the religious people, where the Englyshemen gaue them all to drynke and songe.

Then vppon the morowe beynge saterdaye, and the .xiiii. daye of October, and the daye of saynte Calyxte the pope / bothe hostes assayled other, in that place where as nowe standeth the abbay of Batayll in Susser. In the begynnynge of thys batayll/ a banner or a banneret called Thylfer a Norman splayed before the hoste of Normans / and slewe an Englyshman or knyghte that came agayne hym / and after that one other, and so fyue tyrde, and was slayne at the laste.

Then the seitrons smote to gyther wyth a great noyse and cryc, and faughte sore a longe season. And the Englyshmen defended them manfully / and the better for that that they kepte theym hole to gyther wythoute scatteryngе or sprygynge a brode. The whyche when wyllyam apperceyued / he gaue a sygne vnto hys knyghtes, that they shulde gyue backe, and make countenaunce as they dyd flee. Then the Normans imbatelled the fote men, and sette horse men for wynges on euery syde. By the whyche wyle the Englyshemen were deseuerpd, and soone oute of araye / and the Normans tourned agayne vpon ỹ Englyshemen, and slewe theym downe on euery syde.

Thys batayll was sore foughten of the Englyshemen / that duke wyllyam was thryse felled that day by reason that thre horse were that daye slayne vnder hym. Lastely Harolde was wounded in the eye wyth an arowe, and fyll to the grounde and was slayne, and hys people scatered / so that well was hym that myghte saue hym selfe by flеynge Then duke wyllyam buryed hys men that there were slayne/ and fulfred hys enymyes to do the same. Harold's slaine

Of the deth of thys Harolde ys dyuersly wryten. For Geraldus Crambrens. in hys boke called Itinerarius sayth, ỹ after Harolde had receyued many woundes, and loste hys lefte eye / he fledde from that felde to the countrey of Chester, and lyued longe after an holy lyfe as an ancre, in the selle of saynt Jamys faste by saynt Johns chyrch, & made there an holy ende.

when ỹ deth of Harold was knowen

to the erles of Mercia and of Nor-thumberlande/ the whyche for ſtreyt neſſe of waye myght not bryng theyr people to that felde/ or ellys for that that they wylfully wythdrew theym ſelfe from Harolde, bycauſe he none otherwiſe departed ẏ prayes amonges them and theyr knyghtes at the former feld of Norgaynes: then they drewe the next waye to London, and toke Agatha Haroldꝭ wyfe and ſent her to Cheſter. And they and Aldredus byſhoppe of yorke with the Londoners/agreed and promyſed eyther vnto other, that they wold make Edgare Athelynge kynge, and defende hys ryghte to the vttermoſte of theyr powers.

But that promyſe not wythſtandynge, when they harde of the great ſtrength that dayly fell to duke wyllyam and of hys prouyſyons / they were fayne to breke that appoyntement. And the ſayd erles ſubmytted them, and gaue vnto hym pledges, and became to hym his lyege men by homage and feautye.

And thus when Harolde hadde ruled the lande from the .v. daye of January to the .xiiii. daye of October/ he was ſlayne, when he had reygned ix. monethes and odde dayes / and was buryed at the monaſterye of the holy croſſe of walthamꝭ, whyche he before hadde founded, and ſet therin chanons, and gaue vnto theym fayre poſſeſſyons.

And here endeth for a time ẏ blood of Saxons/ the whych contynued to reken from Hengeſtus fyrſte reygne, by the ſpace or tyme of .v. hundred and.lxxxxi. yeres. And yf yt be rekened from the begynnyng of the weſt Saxõs/then yt endureth by ẏ terme of .v.hundred.lxv.yeres. whych cõtynued as rulers & kinges of this land all the ſayd tyme/onely except ẏ that paſſed betwene the fyrſt yeres Canutus, and the laſte yere of Hardekyntus. In the whyche ſeaſon paſſed or flowed vpon.xxiiii.yeres. All be yt ẏ the perſecucyon of the Danys laſted mych lenger, as tofore I haue ſhewed in ẏ ſtory of ẏ forenamed Kynuꝭ.

THE.CCXVIII. CHAPITER.

THen for as mych that god of his vnknowen iudgementes to man, and by his hygh & hyd counſayll, wolde ſuffer this duke to conquere ſo noble a lande, and to be lord and ſouerayne ouer ſo many noble enherytours, as were & now be with in the ſame: I thynke yt cõuenyent to ſhew here the dyſcent of the ſayde duke/and how nere of blood he was vnto the bleſſed kynge Edwarde the confeſſour.

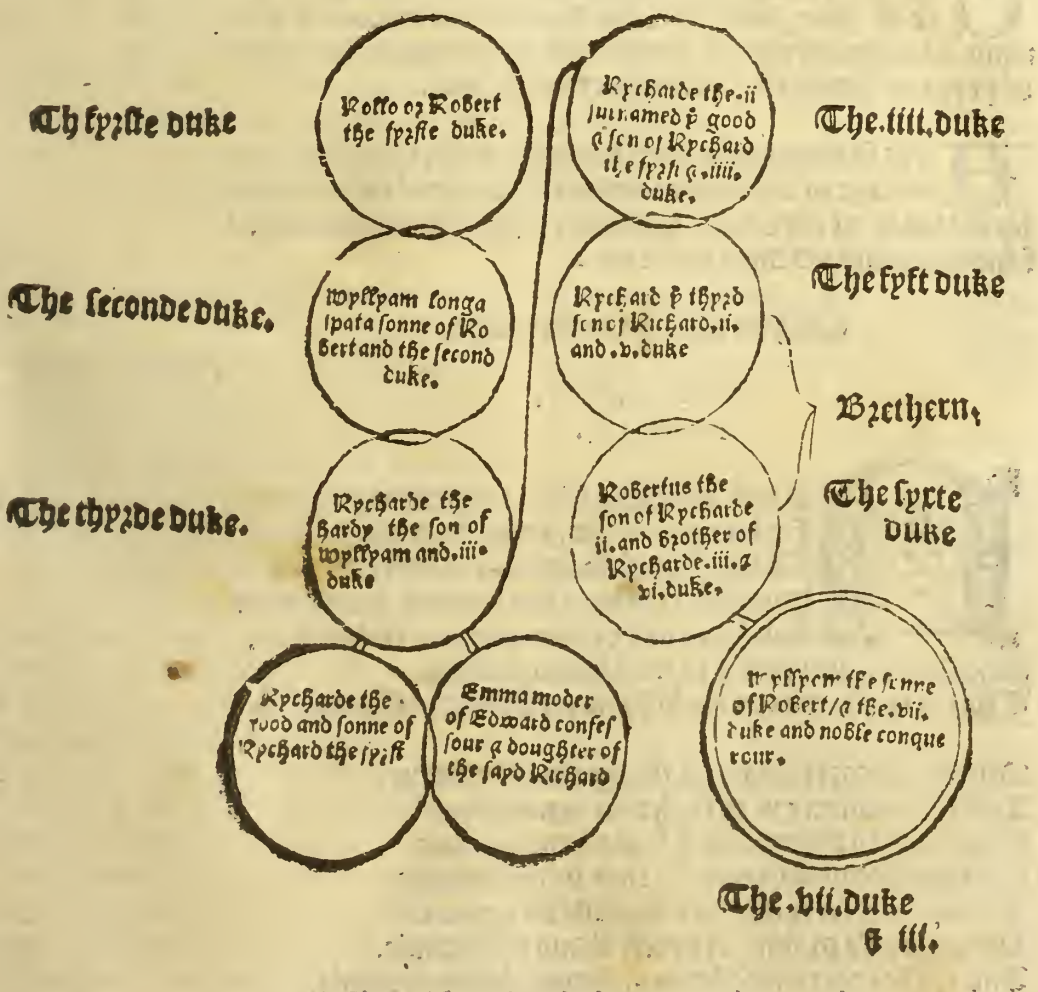
wherfore as before to you I haue ſhewed in the ſtorye of Charlys the Symple ſomtyme kynge of Fraũce/ a myſcreaunt or a pagan named Rollo pſecuted ſore the realm of Fraũce & laſtely wan by ſtrength the citye of Roan the hed or cheſe cytye of Normandy. And in concluſyon for a fynall peace betwene the ſayde kynge and Rollo to be had/ the ſayde Rollo was cryſtened & named Robert, and maryed Silla the doughter of ẏ ſaid Charlys. To whom ẏ kyng gaue in waye of Dower, ẏ hole duchy of Normandy. The whych Robert after he was cryſtened/ ruled that dukedome as a good cryſten man, by the terme of.xiiii.yeres/and receyued of ẏ ſayd Silla a ſon, and named hym wyllyam/ the whyche after was ſurnamed Longa ſpata, as who wold ſaye wyllyam wyth a longe ſworde.

This wyllyam was duke after his fader.xxv.yeres/ and lefte after hym a ſonne named Rycharde, whych as before is ſhewed in the ſtorye of Lewes ẏ.vi. was named Richard ẏ hardy.

Then

Then Rycharde the hardy was the thyrde duke, and reygned .lii.yeres/ & had by hys wyfe a son named Rycharde the good, and Emma that was wyfe to Egelredus and mother to saynte Edwarde the confessoure. After hym the Good Rycharde was duke, and reygned .xxviii. yeres/ and lefte after hym two sonnes, that is to say Rycharde and Robert. The fyrste after two yeres was slayne by treason of hys brother Robert / so that Robert was then duke and reygned. ix. yeres. The whyche Robert, as yt is before shewed in the storye of Henry kyng of Fraunce/ was father vnto this duke wyllyam. And thys wyllyam was the .vii. duke of Normandye/ and ruled yt or he conquered Englande after moste wryters. xxx. yeres.

Whereby yt appereth, that Emma was aunte to duke Robert, father of wyllyam Conquerour. And saynte Edwarde and this duke wyllyam were by ỹ fathers syde cosyn iarmayne remoued as sheweth by thys draught folowynge.



AND thus here an ende of the.vi. part of thys worke/ for so myche as the lande was here conquered, and put vnder the rule of an other nacyon.

wherfore as before I haue vsed and done, to gyue thankes vnto that moste blessyd vyrgyn our lady saynt Mary, as furtherer and conductryce of thys worke / so here agayn I salute and hayle her wyth the. vi. ioye of the foreseid vii. ioyes, thus begynnynge,

Gaude virgo mater Christi, tu quæ sola &c.

All hayle and be gladde moste noble and moder dere
Of Jesu Chryste, vyrgyne moste pure and clene.
Deseruynge onely by grace and lyuynge moste clere,
To be of that dygnyte, thou celestyall quene,
To perce the heuens that beeth so serene.
And nexte to the trone of the hygh Trynyte,
Thou arte admytted for to holde thy see.

THys.vi. parte to be accompted from the fyrste yere of Jue, vnto the laste daye of the reygne of Harolde, or begynnynge of wyllyam Conqueroure/ includeth of yeres.iii.hundred and.lxxx.yeres and one.

AND so thys lande was conquered after the fyrst commynge of Brute, to folowe thaccõpte of thys worke/ by the force of thys duke wyllyam & hys Normans, ii. thousande.ii.hundred and two yeres.

THus endeth the syxt parte.

THE .VII. PARTE.

NOw shaketh my hãde, my pen wareth dulle,
Forweried & tyred, seyng this worke so lõg/
The authours so rawe, & so farre to culle,
Dymme & derke, & straunge to vnderstond,
And farre out of tune to make trew songe,
The storyes and yeres to make accordaunte,
That yt to the reder myght shew trewe and plesaunt.

But vnder correccyon all thynge may be borne,
And so I remytte yt to suche as ben experte/
Prayenge to theym, as I haue done before,
To fauour and correcte/ so that vnder couerte
Of theyr protecccyon, this may shewe a parte,
Holsome and playne, fruytefull and profytable,
And to the reders and herers, ioyous and delectable.

For were not that/ I durste not farther wade,
The streme is so depe, and therto so daungerous.
But one thynge there is, that somwhat doth me glade,
The great daunger and stoyes doughtous,
Ben ouer passed/ so that moze bounteous,
The authours ben / and moze manyfestly
The stoyes folowynge they done certyfye.

wherfoze as befoze to you I dyd promyse/
Thys .vii. parte nowe I wolde take in hande.
Beseechynge alwayes in moste humble wyse,
The welle of bountye, that flowze moste adozande,
By whose humplyte man fyrste comfoyte fande,
And was redemed from hys captyuyte/
This parte to fynyshe, she wyll myne helper be.

And brynge to ende thys woyke that I haue take
On hande to wryte, onely of entent,
To brynge to lyght, and foyt shulde not shake,
The olde honoure that to Englande was ment
Of famous wryters, whyche haue theyr duytes sent,
Unto theyr folowers, all vyces to subdue,
Honoure to maynteyne, and to exalte vertue.

Here after folowyth the stoyye of duke wyllyam Conqueroure.

THE .CCXIX. CHAPITER.

WIllyā duke of Noymandye surnamed Conquerour, baste sonne of Robert ꝑ vi. duke of that said dukedome, and neuew vnto Edward the confessour, as befoze is shewed/ beganne hys dompynyon ouer thys realme of Englande, the .xv. daye of October, in the yere of our lozdes incarnacyon a thousand .l.xvii/ and ꝑ ix. yere of the fyrste Phylyppe then kyng of Fraunce/ and was crowned kynge of the same vppon Crystmas daye nexte folowynge, of Aldzedus archbyshoppe of yoyke, foz so myche as at that tyme Stigandus archbyshoppe of Caunterbury was then absent, oz durste not come in the ꝑsence of the kynge/ to whome he ought no great fauour, as in the sequele shall appere.

when wyllyam had sette in quyet a great parte of thys lande, he betoke the gydyng therof to his bzother the byshop of Bayon/ and in lent folowynge sayled into Noymandye / and led wyth hym the chefe rulers of Englande, foz doute of sturryng in tyme of his absence. Amonge the whyche, the two erles Marcar⁹ and Edwyne rulers of Noythumberlande & Mercia were two/ wyth also Stigandus and Edgare Ethelynge. To the whyche Stigandus wyllyam shewed great reuerence and coũtenaunce of fauoure. But all ꝓued to great dissymulacyon after/ as was shewed by the depzyuynge of the sayd Stigan-

dus, and pryſonment of hym in wyn cheſter towne, by a longe terme and ſeaſon.

In the next wynter, whan wyllyam had ſped hys beſyneſſe in Normandy / he retourned into England wyth greate pompe, and ſette a greuous trybute vpon the Englyſhmen By reaſon wherof ſome partyes of the lande rebelled agayne hym, and ſpecyally the cytye of Exceteur, the whyche defended hym for a certayne of tyme. But laſtly by force he wanne the ſayde cytye, and punyſſhed the cyteſyns greuouſly.

For thys and other ſterne dedes of wyllyam / Marcharus erle of Northumberlande, wyth Edgare Athelynge and dyuers other, as hys moder and two ſyſters Margarete and Cryſtyan, ſayled into Scotlande. But another cronycle telleth, ỹ Edgare entendynge wyth Agatha hys moder and hys two ſyſters, to haue ſayled into Almayne where he was borne / was by tempeſt of the ſee dryuen into Scotlande. where of Malcolyne than kynge of Scottes they were ioyouſly receyued. And in proceſſe of tyme the ſayde Malcolyne caſte ſuche loue vnto the ſayd Margaret / that he toke her to wyfe / as be fore is touched in the fyrſte chappter of the ſtory of Canut⁹. Of the which Margaret the ſayde Malcolyne receyued .ii. doughters and .vi. ſonnes. wherof thre named Edgare, Alexãder, & Dauyd, were kynges of Scotlande nexte folowynge theyr fader. And Wolde one of ỹ forſayd doughters was after maryed vnto the fyrſt Henry kynge of Englande. And the other doughter Mary / was maryed to Euſtace erle of Bolongii. Of Wolde the fyrſte doughter / Henry receyued .ii. ſonnes named wyllyam and Rychard, the whych bothe dyed before theyr fader / as after in ỹ ſtory of the ſayd Henry ſhall appere. And he receyued alſo two doughters named Wolde and Mary / whych Wolde or Mawde was maryed to ỹ fyrſte Henry emperour of Almayne. After whoſe deth ſhe was agayne maryed to Godfrey of Geoffrey Plãtagenet erle of Aungeowe. Of whom deſcended Henry ſurnamed ſhorte mantell, and kynge of Englande, called Henry the ſeconde. And the other doughter Mary was maryed vnto the erle of Blaynes / of whõ deſcended Wolde or Mawde, that was wyfe vnto kynge Stephen.

Than it folowyth, that thys wyllyam after thys forſayd trybute ſo leuyed of the Englyſhemen, and knowynge of the depertynge of the lordes forſayde, kepte the other the ſtrepter. But it was not longe after that Marcharus was reconſyled to the kynges grace / and fayled agayn as folowynge ſhall be ſhewed. For thys and other cauſes whyche were tedyous to ſhewe / wyllyam exalted the Normans, and gaue vnto them the chyefe poſſeſſyons of the lande / ſo that they dayly encreaſed in great honour and welth, and the Englyſh men as faſte decayed. Kynge wyllyã alſo made .iiii. ſtronge caſtels / where of two be ſette at yorke, the thyrde at Lyndetynghayn or Notynghm̃, and manned them wyth Normans, and the .iiii. at Lyncolne.

About the thyrde yere of his reygne Harolde & Canutus ſonnes of Swanus kynge of Denmarke, came on lande in the North of Humber wyth a ſtronge nauy / and in all haſte drew them towarde yorke. Than the Normans whyche hadde the rule of the towne and caſtelles, feryng that the Englyſhemen wolde ayde the Danys, and wyth the houſes of the ſuburbes of the towne haue fylled the towne dyches / ſette the ſuburbes on fyre.

fyre. wherof ꝑ flame was so bygge, and wyth the wynde so stronge/ that it toke into the cytye, & brent a parte therof, wyth the mynster of saynt Peter. In tyme wherof the Danys by fauour of some of the citesyns entred the cytye/ and slewe more than thre thousande of the Normans.

But it was not longe or kynge wyllyam chased the Danys to theyr shyppes/and toke so greate displeasure wyth the inhabytauntes of that prouynce, that he destroyed the land lyenge bytwene yorke and Durham in suche wyse, that. ix. yeres after or there about, the lande laye vnlabored & vntylled/onely out taken saynt Johñs lande of Beuerley, the which was for borne by reason of a wreche done by dyuyne power, vpon one of kynge wyllyams knyghtes. The whych as he was besyed in wastyng and spoylynge of the sayde countre, fyll sodeynly wyth hys horse/so that hys horse brake hys necke, and the knyghtes face was turned to his backe.

And of the sampne that the people of that countre sustayned/ wonders are reported, that they shuld eate all maner of vermyn, as cattes, rattes, dogges, & other/ so harde they were kepte by the warre of the kyng. And in that yere also Wolde or Hawde the wyfe of kynge wyllyã/was crowned quene of England, of Aldredus archebyshop of yorke.

In the. iiii. yere of the reygne of thys kynge the Scottes with Malcolyne theyr kynge entred Northumberlande/ and wasted and destroyed sore that countre, and slewe there in myche people / and many they toke prysoners, & helde thē as bonde men.

But in the. vi. yere of hys kyngdome, wyllyam made such warre vpon the Scottes/that he lastely forced the sayde Malcolyne to swere to hym bothe homage and feauty/as it is wytnessed of wyllyam of Malmesbery and other wryters.

THE.CCXX.CHAPITER.

Kynge willyam by counsayle of the erle of Hertford and other, caused the abbeyes of Englande to be serched. And what money in them at that season was founde/he caused it to be brought to hys treasour. For the whyche dede after the exposycyō of some authours/the sayd erle was punysshed, as after shall be shewed.

Soone vpon thys in the tyme by twene Easter and wytsontyde / was holden a solempne counsayle at wynchester of the clergy of Englande. At the whyche counsayle were present two cardynalles, sent from ꝑ second Alexaunder than pope. In thys coũsayle, Stygandus archebyshop of Caũterbury was deprysed from his dygnytye / and that for thre skylles. The fyrste was/for that he had holden wrongfully that byshoprych, whyle Robert the archebyshop was lyuynge. The seconde cause was/for that he hadde receyued the Paule of pope Benet the. v. of that name. And the thyrde cause was/ for that he occupyed the sayd Paule wythout lycence & lefull authorite of ꝑ courte of Rome.

Than Stigand⁹ proued that benyuolence of kynge wyllyam. For where before he made to hym louyng and frendly countenaũce, & dyd vnto hym greate reuerence/ than he chaũged all his myldenesse into sternesse, and executed hym by ꝑ popes authorite/so that in the ende Stigandus was deprysed of hys dygnytye, and kepte in wynchester as a prysoner ꝑ terme of hys lyfe.

It is recorded of hym that he was so couetous and sparyng, ꝑ he wold take

take nothynge of hys owne/ & vsed to swere by Alhalowes, that he had not one peny. But that othe was proued vntrewe after hys deth, by a lytell keye that was founde fastened about hys necke. For by that keye was founden greate treasour vnder the erth in mo places than one.

In thys counsayle also were put downe dyuers other bysshoppes, abbotes, and prpours, by the meanes of kynge wyllyam/and all to the entent that he myghte preferre Normans to the rule of the chyrch, as he hadde preferred hys knyghtes to the rule of the temporaltye, that he myght stande in the more suerty of the land.

In thys counsayle saynt wolstan that than was bysshop of worceter/ ared beselp of the kynge certayne possessyons fallen into hys handes, by the deth of Aldred late archbyshop of yorke, that were wyth holden by ꝑ sayd Aldredus. But the kyng myght not here than of any suche maters, for hurtyng of the lyberty of the chyrche of yorke.

Than vpon wytsonday after/the kynge gaue the sayd archebysshoprych of yorke vnto Thomas a chanon of Bayon/& sent for Lamfrank an other Norman than abbot of Cadomonency, and gaue vnto hym the archebysshoprych of Caunterbury. Thys Lamfranke was an Italyan borne/and was perfytely lerned in ꝑ scyence of theologye or holy wrytte, & ryght apte in gouernynge of thynges bothe spyrytuall and temporall. Upon our lady daye the Assumpcyō the kynge made hym archebysshop of Cāterbury. Than Thomas that was chosen archebysshop of yorke/ came vnto Lamfranke for to be sacred as the vsage wolde. Of whom Lamfranke ared an othe, & his profession in wrytynge concernyng his obedyence. Thomas answered and sayde that he wolde neuer do that/ but yf he myghte therof here suffycyent authorite and skylfull reasons & byndynge, by the whyche it myght be knowen that he shulde so do with out any preiudyce of hys chyrche. Than Lamfranke shewed and proued skylfully, that hys askynge was reasonable and ryghtfull. But yet Thomas wolde not assent/but with sayde it and went for that tyme from Lamfrank vnsacred/ & shewed vnto the kyng, that Lamfranke entended to do wronge to hym and to his chyrche of yorke. Than the kyng callyng Lamfrank before hym sayd, than he trusted more in his cunnyng than he dyd in good fayth or reason. But he answered so reasonably vnto ꝑ kyng that in the ende Thomas by the cōmaundement of the kyng was fayne to come agayne to Lamfranke to be sacred/and wrote hys professyō with hys owne hande of hys obedyence and radde it/in the whyche was conteyned that he shulde be obedyent in all that belongeth to the worshyp of god and all crystē fayth. which done, he was sacred & so depted. And shortly after Lamfranke ared & toke professyō of all ꝑ bysshoppes of Englād.

THE.CCXXI.CHAPITER.

In the. v. yere of wyllyam the conquerours reygne/ Edwyn and Marcharus erle of Mercia and of Northumberlande, beynge in fere of daunger, voyded ꝑ kynges court secretly, and were rebelles som what of tyme. But at length it turned to bothe theyr harmes. For Edwyne was slayn as he went toward Scotlande/ and erle Marcharus wyth ꝑ bysshop of Dorcham named Egelwynus, toke the ile of Ely for theyr sauegarde. But the kynge held them so shorte, that in procesle they were fayne

fayne to yelde them to the kynges grace and mercy. Than he sent the bysshop to the abbey of Abyndon to be kept there as a prysoner/where he was so dayntely fed, that he dyed for hunger. But some wryters testyfye that he was so hyghe herted, that after he knewe he shuld remayne there as prysoner/he wolde neuer ete mete after. And erle Marcharus was had to the towre of London.

In the .vi. yere of hys reygne/ kyng wyllyam, as before is touched went wyth a great army into Scotland/and subdued Malcolyne theyr kynge, as before I haue shewed in the precedynge chappter.

In the.vii. yere of kyng wyllyam/ Thomas archebysshop of yorke not beynge content to be vnder the rule and obedyence of Lamfranke, appealed to the courte of Rome/so that the sayde two archbysshoppes appered both in proper persone before the pope Alexaunder afore named. In whose presence Lamfranke was so well fauoured, that where Thomas aboue named and Remigius bysshop of Dorchester, were for skylfull causes deprpued of theyr croyses and rynges/he by hys fauour & meanes restored them to theyr former dygnytees. The cause of Thomas was, for that he had holpen duke wyllyam to warde hys iourney into Englande. For the whyche the sayd duke promysed hym a bysshoprpche yf he optepned byctory. And ỳ other was deprpiued, for ỳ he was proued a prestes sonne. Than Thomas moued the cause of the prymacy of Caunterbury, & of subiectyon that to hym shuld belonge/ and sayde that these two sees were farre asonder, that is to meane Caunterbury and yorke/ and that nother of them by the constytucyons of Gregory shulde be subiecte vnto other/ but that the one is more worthy than the other, for so nyche as he is of elder tyme. To thys answered Lamfranke and sayd/ that ỳ constytucyons of Gregory made no mencyō of Cāterbury, but of yorke & London. Than the pope remytted thys mater to be determyned before ỳ kyng & the bysshoppes of England/ and gaue ỳ palle vnto Lamfranke.

But for this terme or word palle, is to many one vnknowen/ I shall therfore here shewe vnto you what thynge it is. This palle is an indument ỳ euery archbysshop must haue/ & is not in full authorpte of an archbysshoppe, tyll he haue receyued hys palle of the pope/ and is a thynge of white like to ỳ breded of a stole. But it is of a nother fassyon. For where ỳ stole is made in length, and is worne about the prestes necke/ thys is ioyned togyder aboue, so that it lyeth a parte therof vppon the shulders. And that one ende hangeth strepght downe to the grounde before, and that other behynde, garnysshed in dyuers places therof wyth crosses. And where the stole is worne nexte vnto the albe whan the preste is reuested to masse/ thys palle is worne vpon thys vestymente ouermoste of all, whan an archebysshoppe syngeth hys masse.

Whan Lamfranke had thus sped hys nedys at Rome/ he wyth ỳ other two bysshoppes retourned into Englande/ where thys mater hangyng in varyaunce bytwene the sayde two archebysshoppes, was had in cōmunycacion. For tryall wherof Bedaes story was brought forth. where in it appered, that from the fyrste Augu/ styns tyme to Bedaes last dayes, vpon the season of a hundred & .xxxix. yeres/ the archbysshop of Caunterbury had prymacy of all the bysshoppes of England thā called Brytayn, and of Irlande also/ and that the

archbys-

archbyſhoppes of Caunterbury had kept coũſayles nere vnto yorke, and cleped therunto the byſſhoppes of yorke/ and made ſome byſhoppes, & depryued dyuers from theyr dygnytyes/ and to this were adioyned certayne pryupleges, that were graunted for this maner of doynge.

when Thomas had harde all the allegacyons, he denyed all/ and layd for hym the pyſtle, in the whych pope Gregorye demed that the chyrche of yorke and of London ſhulde be euen perys/ and neyther of theym ſubiecte to other.

To this was anſwered by Lamfrank, that he was not byſhop of Lõdon, nor this queſtyon was not moued for the chyrche of London.

But Thomas ſayde that Gregory had graũted to Auguſtyne, power to haue vnder hym all ẏ byſhoppes of Englande / and that London at ẏ day was the pryncyppall ſee of all Englande. All be yt ẏ the popes mynde was, that betwene Lõdon and yorke ſhulde be no dyuerſyte of honour, be cauſe they were archeflampynes/ and that by theyr vnyte all other myghte lyue vnder dewe obedyence. And though Auguſtyne chaunged ẏ ſee from London to Caunterbury/ yet Gregory wolde not that Auguſtyne ſucceſſours ſhuld be aboue the byſſhoppes of yorke. For he wolde then haue ſet in hys epyſtle theſe wordes folowynge: I graunte to the Auguſtyne and to thy ſucceſſours. But for he wold ẏ no ſuch power ſhuld ſtretche to his ſucceſſours / therefore he made no mẽcyon of his ſucceſſours.

Lamfranke to this anſwered and ſayd, If that authoryte were graunted to Auguſtyne alone & not to hys ſucceſſours/ yt was a ſymple gyfte ẏ the pope gaue vnto Auguſtyne, that was ſo famplyer wyth hym/ and namely whyle Auguſtine ordeyned nor ſacred no byſhoppe of yorke whyle he lyued. For ẏ ſee was full durynge his lyfe/ by reaſon wherof he put not hys authoryte in execucyon. But pry vpleges of popes confermeth this dignyte to Auguſtynes ſucceſſours of Caunterbury/ and demeth that yt is ſkyll and good reaſon, that all the chyrches of Englande ſhulde take lore and lyghte of that place. For of that welle or place proceded fyrſt the doctrine of Criſtes fayth. And where thou ſayeſt Thomas, that Gregory myght yf he had wolde, haue confyrmed all thynge vndowtably wyth thys worde ſucceſſours/ that is ſoth. But yet the lackynge of this worde, dothe no preiudyce to the chyrche of Caunterbury. For when that Cryſte ſayde to Peter, I ſhall gyue to the the kayes of the kingdome of heuen/ he myght haue alſo ſayd yf he wold, I graunt the ſame power to thy ſucceſſours. And though he ſayde not ſo/ yet he ment the ſucceſſours of Peter, nothynge of reuerence nor yet of authoryte / but the dyſpenſacyon of holy chyrche and offyce of the ſame, was and is holy in theym, whyche onely ſpryngeth by vertue of Cryſte into Peter, and from Peter into his ſucceſſours. And yf thou can dyſcerne betwene falſe and ſoth/ loke what hath ſtrength in all, hath ſtrength in the parte/ and what hath ſtrength in the more, hath alſo ſtrẽgth in ẏ leſſe. The chyrche of Rome is as yt were all of all chyrches/ & other chyrches ben as membres therof: lyke as one man is the kynd of all ſyngulermen, and euery ſyngulerman is the kynd of all mankynde: ſo in ſome maner of wyſe the chyrch and the ſee of Rome is as yt were the kynde, and conteyneth all, in comparyſon to other chyrches/ and yet in euery chyrch remayneth the full holenes of Cryſtes fayth. And alſo the chyrche of Rome

is great=

is greatteſt of all chirches/and what hath ſtrength in that chyrche, ſhall haue ſtrēgth in leſſe chyrches/ſo that the power that is fyrſte gyuen to eue ry chyrche, ſhall ſprynge into the ſuc ceſſours of the ſame / but yf yt be by ſome ſpecyall thynge excepted & out taken. Therfore I cōclude as Cryſt ſayde to Peter, ſo he ſayde to all the byſhoppes of Rome / and ſo conſe quētly was ſayde to Auguſtynes ſuc ceſſours of Gregorye, as was ſayde vnto Auguſtyne. wherfore yt muſte appere, that lyke as Caunterbury is ſubiecte to Rome, ſo muſte yorke be ſubiecte to Caunterbury/whych ſent to yorke prechours, to teache and preache vnto them the ryghte fayth. And where thou ſayeſte that Gregory wolde that Auguſtyne ſhuld haue his ſee at London, yt may not ſtand wyth reaſon. For who wolde trowe that ſo noble a diſcyple as Auguſtyn was/ wold wythſtande or do agayn hys mayſters wyll, or agayne holy decrees. And yf yt were ſo as thou haſte alledged/ what is that to me, that am not biſhop of London as oft before I haue ſayd. Therfore yf this mater may thus ſeaſe wythout more ſtryfe/ſo be yt ended. And yf thou de ſyreſt contynuaunce of plee/ I ſhall not fayle the, but defende my ryghte and offyce gladly.

By theſe reaſons & other at length Thomas was ouercomen/and graū ted gladly that the farther bynke of Humber ſhulde be the begynnyng of hys dioces. And ouer ẏ yt was there demed, that in all thynges concer nynge the worſhyppe of god and the fayth of holy chyrch/ the archbyſhop of yorke ſhuld be ſubiecte to the arch byſhoppe of Caunterburye. So that yf the archebyſhoppe of Caunterbu rye wolde call a coūſayll in any parte of Englande/ the archebyſhoppe of yorke ſhulde be therat, wyth all the byſhoppes of hys prouynce / and be alſo obediēt vnto the lawfull heſtes. And at all ſeaſons when the archbyſ ſhop of Caunterbury ſhuld be ſacred the archebyſhoppe of yorke, with the byſhoppes of ẏ chyrche, ſhulde come to Caūterbury and faker hym there. And yf the archebyſhoppe of yorke ſhuld be ſtalled or ſacred/thē ſhall he come to Caunterburye, and ellys where in all Englande, where the archebyſhop of Caunterburye woll hym aſſygne, and there to be ſacred of hym/ and he ſhall make to hym an othe with profeſſyon and obedyence.

When Lamfranke harde this iudge ment gyuen thus / he reioyſed in wardely. And for yt ſhulde remayne of recorde that his ſucceſſours ſhuld not newely plede for that cauſe / he cauſed yt to be regeſtred in moſte ſub ſtancyall wyſe. And ouer that ſent a pyſtle for that cauſe to Alexander forenamed pope of all this doenge, wyth the profeſſyon of Thomas the archbyſhop forſayd. Of this Lam frank is many notable thynges wryp ten of diuers writers. And after ſome he is admytted for a ſaynte.

THE.CCXXII. CHAPITER.

ABoute the .x. yere of kynge wyllyams reygne / Roger erle of Herefordе, by whoſe counſayl the kynge as before ys ſayde hadde ſerched all the abbayes of England, whyche erle hadde wedded hys ſyſ ter vnto Rauf erle of eeſt Angles/ that is to ſaye, of Norf. and Suff. agayne the kynges mynde/ he wyth the ſayde Rauke made conſpyracy a gayne the kynge / & cauſed an other erle by theyr ſubtyle meanes to be agreable vnto theyr vntrouth, why che erle had to name walref. But at length when thys erle walref hadde knowen the fyne of theyr entent/ he

went vnto Lamfranke, and shewed to hym the hole mater. By whose counsayll he shortely after sayled vn to the kyng, then beynge in Normandye/and dysclosed the mater to hym, and putte hym holy in hys grace and mercye.

when the kynge had harde of these tydynges/ he made good semblaunt vnto this erle walref, and sped hym the faster into Englande. But howe so yt was, the forenamed two erles were warned of dysclosynge of this mater / in such wyse ỹ they gaderyd to theym suche strength, that ỹ kyng coude not haue them at his pleasure, but as he was fayne by stronge hãde to chase and outlawe theym. And for he fayled of his purpose of them, he empryssoned erle walref at wynchester/ and lastely caused hym to be hedded, more of tyranny, then of iustyce, as affermeth myne authoure/ whose corps was buryed at the abbay of Crowlande.

In the .xi. yere was holden a great counsayll or synode of the clergye of the lande in sayne Paules chyrche of London/ where amõges many thynges ordeyned for the rule of ỹ chyrch of England, dyuers byshoppes sees were transported from one place to another/as Selwey to Chychester, Kyrtoñ to Exeter, welles to Bathe, Shyrbourne to Salysbury, Dorchester to Lyncolne, and the see of Lychefelde to Chester. whyche thynges thus ordered, wyth many other for the chyrche / the sayde counsayll was dyssolued.

In the .xiii. yere of hys reygne/ after the deth of Herman byshoppe of Salysbury, succeded Osmũde ỹ kynges chaunceller. The whyche buylded there a new chyrch/and brought thyther clerkes that were garnysshed wyth vertue and connynge. And he hym self wrote & bounde bokes that were occupyed in the dyuyne seruyce of the chyrche, as the ordynall or consuetudynary, the whyche at this daye is occupyed in the more partye of Englande, wyth walys, and Irlande, and is nowe named Salysbury vse, or the ordynary after Salysbury vse.

In the .xv. yere of his reygne Robert the eldest sonne of kynge wyllyam, the whyche was surnamed Curthose or Shorthose and shorte bote also/ for he myght not haue the duchy of Normandy, whych his father hadde somtyme assygned and gyuen vnto hym, and after for hys wyldenesse hadde agayne resumed yt/he wyth fauoure and ayde of ỹ French kynge Phylyppe and of Lewys hys sonne, toke prays in that duchy, and put hys father to myche trouble / in so myche that at length the father & the sonne met in playne felde with .ii. great hostes/ and eyther wyth other faught a cruell batayll.

It is radde that durynge thys batayll wyllyam was throwẽ from his horse, and in great ieopardy of hys lyfe. wherof hys sonne Robert beyng ware/ was so moued wyth pytye, ỹ he rescowed his father, and delyuered hym free from all daunger of his enymyes. But howe so yt betyde of the kynge/ trouth yt is that many of his men were slayn, & his second son wyllyam the rede sore hurte, so that in the ende kynge wyllyam was fayn to refuse the felde, and gatte at that tyme none aduauntage of his sayde sonne. For the whyche dede and rebellyon thus made by the sonne/ỹ fader accursed hym after the opynyon of some wryters.

whyle kyng wyllyam was thus occupyed in Normandy/the Northumbers warte sterne & rebell, and slewe in theyr rage walkerus the bishop of Durham / but for what cause myne

authour

authour expressyth not.

Aboute thys tyme, warynge erle of Shrewesbury made two abbayes in the worshyp of god and sayncte Mylborgh/ wherof one was set in the suburbes of Shrewesbury, and ỳ other at wenloke.

In the.xvii.yere of kyng wyllyam/ a cursed stryfe was arered betwene Thurstone abbot of Glastenbury a Norman, and his munkes. wherof a part of the cause was, that the abbot despysed, & wold haue set a part such longe and offices, as by pope Gregory and Augustyn his dyscyple, of old tyme to them was assygned/ & wolde haue compelled them to haue folowed the vse of one wyllyā of Fescamp. And ouer that this Thurstone wasted and spēded the goodes of ỳ place inordynatly, in lechery and by other insolent meanes/ and wythdrew frō the munkes theyr olde accustomed dyet. For the whyche causes fyrst began great wordes wyth chydyng, and after strokes and fyghtes/ so ỳ the abbot gat vnto hym armed men, and fyll vppon hys munkes, & slewe two of them at ỳ hygh alter, and woūded of theym.xviii. And the munkes wyth fourmes and candelstyckes defended theym, in suche wyse that they hurte many of the armed men. Then the complaynte was brought before the kyng/ by whose iudgemēt Thurstone was agayne returned vnto Cadony frō whēs he was brought and the mūkes were spredde abrode into dyuers houses thorough Ēnglande. But yt is sayde that in the tyme of wyllyā the Rede/ this Thurstoñ obteyned the rule of that abbay agayne for the pryce of. v. hundred pounde.

In the.xix.yere of his reygne, kyng willyam then rayſed a new maner of trybute. For he caused to be gadered thorough England of euery hyde of lande. vi.s. An hyde of lande conteyneth .v.yerdes/ and euery yerde conteyneth foure acres. And so an hyde of lande conteyneth.xx. acres, an acre conteyneth .xl. perches in length and .iiii. in brede/ & .iiii. acres make a yerde/ and .v. yerdes make an hyde/ and .viii. hydes make a knightes fee. By the whyche reason a knyghtes fee shuld welde a hundred & .x. acres/ and that is demed for a plough tyll a yere.

And not longe after he caused to be serchyd howe myche lande eche of hys barons helde/ how many knyghtes fees/ how many townes/ & what nombre of men and of bestes were wyth in this lande/ wherof he commaunded a boke to be made, whyche all was done. For the whyche dede, this lande was after greued wyth many sondry plages as after shall appere. In the.xx. yere of the reygne of kynge wyllyam/ Canutus kynge of Denmarke wyth helpe of the Flemmynges, to whome he was called wyth a great armye came towarde Englande. But by the prouysyon of the kynge they were so fered, that they were let of theyr iourney. Then kyng wyllyam gaue vnto .iii. of his champyons .iii. byshoprryches. To Royce he gaue London, to willyam he gaue Thetford, and to Robert he gaue Chester/ whych Robert was after remoued to Couentre. Of this Robert reporteth Ranulfe, that he scraped frō one beme of his church in Couentre .v. hūdred marke, to fyll wyth ỳ hande of kyng wyllyam. For erle Leofricus ỳ was duke of Mercia in the tyme of Edwarde the cōfessour/ had adourned that chyrch with great ryches of golde, syluer, & other precyous iewelles.

In thys yere Edgare Ethelynge, whych was reconcyled vnto the kynges fauoure/ by lycence of the kynge

sayled into Apulia.

Then beganne the forsayde plages to sprynge. For greate morayne fell vppon the brute bestes, and brennyng feuours amonges the people, and also great hunger and barrennes of ỹ erth. Also in this yere great hurt was done in many places of ỹ lande by fyre, and specyally in the cytye of London/ where vpon the. vii. day of the moneth of Julii sodayne fyre began, the whyche brent a great parte of the chyrche of sayncte Paule, wyth also a great parte of the cytye.

Then kynge wyllyam beynge in Normandye was syke, and kept his chamber at Roañ a longe time. wher fore Phylyppe the Frenche kynge in hys game sayde that wyllyam lay in chyldbedde., and norysshed hys fatte wombe. The whyche wordes when they were blowen to kynge wyllyãs erys, he was greuously dyscontent and sayde, when I am chyrched I shall offer to hym a thousande candellys lyghte, wyth the whyche he shall holde hym smally contented. The whyche promyse he after perfor med. For in the moneth of July whẽ Corne, krupt, and grapes were moste florisshynge/ he entred Fraunce with a great army/ and sette on fyre many cytyes and townes in the west syde of Fraunce / and lastely came to the cytye of Meaus, and fyred yt & brent a parte therof wyth the chyrch of our lady/ wherin he brent a womã beyng closed in the walle of the sayd chyrch as a recluse.

But of this thynge speketh not the cronycle of Fraunce/ Nor yet for the more parte of any thynge that soundeth to theyr dyshonour done vnto theym by Englyshemen.

In this hete, or as some wryters haue by ỹ leppyng of an horse/ kyng wyllyam toke such a dysease or sykenes, that yt was the cause of hys deth.

And when he felt hym thus greued/ he called his sonnes before hym, and exhorted theym in his beste maner, that they shulde charytably loue and fauoure euery of them the other, and holde to gyder as louyng bretherne/ & after made his testamẽt, and therin ordeyned wyllyam Rufus or wyllyam the rede to be kynge of England. And Normandye he beset vnto Robert Curthose. And to Henry his yongest sonne he bequethed his treasour and mouable goodes. And that done he enfourmed hys two eldest sonnes of the dyspospycyon of both peoples/ and warned wyllyam to be louynge and lyberall to his subiectes, and Robert to be sterne and sturdy vnto his. Then he was moued with myldenes and delyuerys from prison hys own brother the bysshop of Bayon, Marcharus erle of Northũberlande. wylnotus the sonne of Harolde, or after some the sonne of Goodwyne, that was sent to wyllyã by Edwarde the confessour to remayne for a pledge for his sayde fader Goodwyn. And shortely after these thynges wyth other done/ he dyed in Normandye, and was buryed in ỹ cytye of Caañ/ when he had reygned as kyng of Englande. xri. yeres and vppon .x. monethes, in the moneth of July, and the yere of hys ducherye the. lii.

when wyllyam was dede/ men spake of hym as they do of other prynces/ and sayd that he was wyse and gylefull, ryche and couetous, & loued well to be magnifyed and prayed / a fayre speker & a greatr dyssymuler, a man of skylfull stature but somdeale fatte in the bely, sterne of face and stronge in armys, and therwyth bolde/ and had therwyth great pleasure in huntyng and in makyng of great festes. But he passed al other in leuynge of taskes. whyche condycyon hys subiectes construed. iii.

maner

maner of wayes/ and sayde yt was to the entente that he wolde excell all other in rychesse, or ellys for to withstãde and defende his enymyes, or ellys to staunche the appetyte of his couetyse mynde. He buylded.ii. abbayes in Englande/ one at batayl in Susser where he wanne the felde agayne Harolde, and is at thys daye called the abbay of Batail/ & ỳ other he sette besyde London vppon the south syde of Thamys, and named yt Barmoundesay. And in Normandye he buylded two also.

Thys man made the newe forest in the countrey of Southampton / the whyche to bryngе aboute he caste downe dyuers chyrches by the space of.xxx. myles, and replenyshed yt wyth wylde bestes/ and made harde and sharpe lawes for the encreasyng of them, as losyng of eyen and other. And he helde Englyshemen so lowe, that in hys dayes was almoste no Englyshe man that bare any offyce of honoure or rule. But yet somedeale he fauoured the cytye of London, and graunted to the cytezens the fyrste charter that euer they had/ the whych is wryten in Saxon tunge, and sealed wyth grene waxe, and expressed in.viii..or.ix.lynes.

THE.CCXXIII. CHAPITER.

Wyllyam Rufus or wyllyam the erede, the second sonne of wyllyam Conquerour/ begaune hys reygne ouer Englande, in the moneth of Julye, and the yere of our lorde a thousande & lxxxix / and the xxi. yere of the fyrste Phylyppe then kynge of Fraunce.

Ranulfe monke of Chester sheweth in hys boke of Polycronycon, ỳ Robert Curthose eldest sonne of wyllyam Conquerour, was at the tyme of hys fathers deth absent. The whyche herynge that his father hadde preferred hys yonger brother to ỳ kyngdome of Englande, was therwyth greatly amoued/ in so mychе that he layde his dukedome to pledge to his brother Henry/ and wyth that good gatheryd to him a stronge army, and so landed at Hamptoñ.

Wherof wyllyam hys brother beynge warned, in all haste sent vnto hym messangers/ to whome he gaue cõmyssyon to say in maner as folowеth. Thy brother wyllyam prayeth ỳ to take no greke wyth ỳ he hath done, for he clepeth hym selfe not kynge, but as vnder kynge to reygne vnder the, and by helpe of the that arte greter then he & better, & rather borne. And yf thou consyder yt well, he hath nothynge mysused hym agayn the. For he hath taken vppon hym for a tyme bycause of thyne absence. But for he is nowe in authorite by thy sufferaunce/ he prayeth ỳ he may vnder the so contyue, payeng to the yerely .iii.thousande marke, wyth cõdycyon that who so ouer lyueth may enioye the kyngdome. when Robert had harde that message to the ende, he wagged hys hedde, as he that conceyued some doublenesse in thys reporte. But for he was lyberall and allowed more the honour then he dyd hys profyte, as in other thynges folowyng of his dedes yt shall appere/ therfore he lyghtely assented to all that was desyred, and returned shortly after into Normandye wyth pleasaunt wordes wythout profyte.

Thys wyllyam was crowned the xxvii. daye of September, vppon the daye of saynte Cosma and Dampan, and was well ayded of Lamfrãk whyle he lyued. He was dyuers & vnstable of maners / so ỳ betwene hym & his lordes was oftẽ dyssencyõ. In ỳ syrryngyng of somer folowyng

hys coronacyon / Odo byshoppe of Bayō, whych as before ye haue hard was delyuered out of pryson by wyl liam Cōquerour, came into Englād. whom the kynge ioyously receyued/ and gaue vnto hym shortly after the erledome of Kent. But he toke vpon hym in processe of tyme to rule, in suche wyse as the kynge grudged wyth hys doynge. And for thys the kynge and his sayde vncle fyll at vn kyndnesse/so ỹ he withdrew hym frō the kynge, and alyed hym wyth the byshop of Durham, the erles of Nor thūberland and Shrewesbury, with other. The whyche confederyd to gy der/ toke partye agayne the kynge, and dyd thynges to his dysplesure and hurte. And amonges other da= mages by theym done, Roger de Mount Gomoryk erle of Shrewes= bury, destroyed the countrey and en= des of England vnto worceter town wyth ayde of the walshemen. But in the ende thorough the prayer of the holy byshoppe wolstane/ the walshe= men were so weked and febled, that a few knyghtes scomfyted of them a great hoste.

Confede racy.

when kyng wyllyam conceyued, ỹ well nere all the Normans toke par tye agayne hym/ he then forced of ne cessyte drewe to hym the Englyshe= men. And fauoured them by giftes & easy lawes/ so that by theyr strength he lastely recouered the erle of Shre wesburye, and chased some other of hys enymyes/ and shortely after oc= cupyed the castell and strong holdes in Kent belongynge to byshop Odo hys forsayde vncle / and in the ende cōpelled hym to forswere England. And ỹ done he besyeged ỹ citie of Ro chester, wherin the byshoppe of Dur ham, the erle of Northumberland, and other noble men were gadered/ and wan yt at length by appoynte= ment, so that hys enymyes were vn= to hym reconcyled.

In the thyrde yere of hys reygne dyed Lamfrank/ when he hadde ben archbyshop of Caunterburye. xviii. yeres. By whose meanes the mōkes of Englande were brought to the vse of theyr holy relygyon/ the whych be fore hys commynge lyued more lyke to seculer prestes thē religious men/ and exercysed them in huntynge and hawkynge for to auoyde idelnesse, & dysynge and cardynge in the wynter nyghtes, that they myght be redy to kepe theyr howres and nyghtly ser= uyce. And in theyr apparel they were lyke vnto consules and not vnto mū kes, wyth many other deformytyes. The whych in ỹ begynnyng of Lam frank/ he of policye suffered for a sea son, lest he had brought all in his top atones, and therby myght haue cau= sed some scysme or varyaūce to haue rysen in the chyrche. In auoydynge wherof wyth other inconuenyences/ he lytell and lytell refrayned them of theyr outrage/ and in processe of tyme caused and constrayned them to lyue after the constitucyons and rules of theyr relygyon.

Aboute thys tyme, Robert Cur= those duke of Normandy, entēdynge to take hys vyage into the holy lande/ layde his dukedome to wedde to hys brother wyllyam for .x. thou sande pounde. For leuynge wherof kynge wyllyam set a taske vpon his commons and subiectes, and reysed a farre excidynge some vnder colour of the same/ so that byshoppes mel= ted theyr vessell, and lordes spoyled theyr tenauntes.

The kynge of Scottes also brake the peace before made with wyllyam Conquerour, and wasted and toke prayes in the countrey of Northum= berlande. Then the kynge prouyded a nauy and sayled thyther in the wyn ter tyme. But by ỹ tempest of the see,

halfe

halfe his nauy or a great parte of yt was drowned/and many of his knyghtes were loste for colde and hunger. But yet in the ende after dyuers conflyctes and bykerynges, by mediacyon of frendes a peace and vnyte was concluded/so that Malcolyn then kynge of Scottes shuld be obeydent to kynge wyllyam, vnder the same othe that he was before tyme sworne vnto hys father/ and kynge wyllyam shuld yerely gyue vnto hym in ỹ way of a fee.xii. markes of gold.

In the fourth yere of his reygne, and the fyft daye of October/ passyng great tempest of wederyng fell in sondry places of Englande, and specyally in ỹ towne of wynchecome. For there by tempeste of thũder and lyghtenyng, a parte of ỹ steple of the chyrch was throwen downe/ and the crucyfyx wyth the ymage of our lady also standynge vpon the roode lofte, was in lykewyse ouerthrowen and broke and shatered. And after folowed a contagye and a fowle stenche/ỹ whych endured tyll the munkes had gone in processyon about the chyrch, and all the houses adioynyng to that abbay and other places.

Also thys yere at Lõdon was great harme done by force of the wynde/ which blewe with such violence ỹ yt ouerturned or ryued as wytnessyth Polycronycon, ouer the nõber of.vi. hundred houses. And ỹ rofe of saynt Mary Bowin chepe was also ryued wherwith two men were slayne. And also at Salesburye was hurte done wyth ỹ same wynde or ỹ lyke therof.

In the.v.yere of wyllyãs reygne/ he went into Northumberlande, and repayred suche holdes and castelles as the Scottes by theyr warrys had blemyshed and apayred/ and caused a new castell to be made at Caercol ỹ cytye or towne, whych the Danys of two hundred yeres passed hadde destroyed. Then ỹ kyng returned vnto Glouceſter/ where he was greuously veryd wyth sykenesse, so that he wende he shulde haue dyed. In tyme wherof he toke great repentaunce, & pmysed yf he myght escape, he wold neuer sell mo benefices/ & ouer that he wold amẽde hys lyuyng & become a new mã. But after he was restored to helth, that promyse was shortely forgoten. And in that yere he gaue vnto Anselme the archbyshoprych of yorke. But he myghte take of yt but as the kynges pleasure was, tyll suche tyme as the kyng hadde taken his trybute therof. And more ouer he auouched, that the see of Lyncolñ belonged to the see of yorke/ tyll the bisshoppe of Lyncolne had pleased him wyth a great summe of money, as.v. thousande marke after the wrytyng of Ranulfe.

In the.vi.yere of hys reygne were excedynge floodes, wherof the lyke in many yeres passed hadde not ben sene. And after that ensued wonderfull froste/ whych frose the great stremes in suche wyse, ỹ horse and carte passed ouer ỹ gret ryuers. And in the ende when the yse melted and brake/ the payse therof brake many a stronge brydge, bothe of tymber and of stone.

THE.CCXXIIII. CHAPITER.

ABout thys tyme the welshemen with theyr kyng or duke named Rees, brake out vppon the Englyshmen in the Bordour, where standeth the castell of Brekenocke/ and there made mastetyes for a while. But in the ende his people were chaced and slayne/ and he wounded to deth, so that he dyed the.iii. daye folowynge. Thys Rees is accompted of wryters, to be the laste kynge of walys. For after thys daye they

were so daũted/ that kynges of Englande had them in suche rule, that they were vnder more stedfaste obedyence than they were before tyme. Now be it they rebellyd full often as after shall appere.

And the yere folowyng kyng wyllyam to haue ỹ countrey in the more quyet/ hewe downe mych of ỹ wood, and buylded in sundry places strong castels and pyles / by meane wherof more and more they were plucked to obedyẽce. But not shortely after/ but specyally in the dayes of Edwarde ỹ fyrste and Edwarde the thyrde.

Malcolyn kyng of Scotland came vnto Gloweester, to comon wyth the kynge of dyuers maters, and to take a fynall agremẽt. But for kyng wyllyam wolde haue demyd hym in hys courte/ therfore Malcoline departed from the kynge in great displeasur. For the whyche and other causes, the warre bytwene England and Scotlande was renued / so that vppon saynt Bricius daye folowyng, Malcolyne wyth hys retynewe foughte wyth an erle named Robert and thã erle of Northumberlande/ and there was slayne wyth hys eldest sonne Edwarde. For sorowe wherof Margaret quene of Scotlande and syster vnto Edgare Ethelynge, as in the fyrste chappter of the story of wyllyã Conquerour is shewed, dyed soone after. Than the Scottes made Dunwalde brother of Malcolyne theyr kynge, and put by hys sonnes. But by the ayde of kynge wyllyam/ Edgare whyche of some wryters is named Dunkam, was made kynge, as eldest sonne of Malcolyne.

In the. vii. yere of the reygne of kynge wyllyam/ Auncelyne or Anselme that was archbyshop of yorke, was remoued to Caunterbury as affermeth one cronycle. But Polycronycon and Guydo sayen, that Hugh erle of Chester beynge sycke and diseased/ in the. vi. yere of wyllyam Rufus, sent into Normãdy for Anselme than abbot of Barry for thre causes. The fyrste to vysyte and se hym, and to be reconcyled of hym, as the man that he moste trusted. The seconde cause was, that he shuld relese some abbays of Englande, that the kynge vered wyth greuous trybutes. And the thyrd cause was, ỹ he shuld foũd an abbay at Chester/ whych place he after buylded, & made one Rycharde his chapleyne fyrst abbot of ỹ place/ and sone after he was made archbysshop of Caunterbury. where by it appereth that the sayd see was voyde ouer the terme of thre yeres.

wycked punysshement. *

Thys sayd. vii. yere/ Englande & Normandye were greued wyth trybute and moreyne of men, so sharply that tylynge of the erth was spared or putte of for that yere/ & there after ensued great hũger. Thys yere also ỹ Scottes slewe theyr kyng Edgar, * and restored agayn to the rule of the lande the forenamed Dunwalde. And many grysly and vncouth syghtes were thys yere sene in England/ as hostes of men fightyng in ỹ skye, and fyre lemys & other. And the holy bysshop wolstone of worceter dyed soone after / of whom it is shewed ỹ he sondry tymes warned & rebuked Englysshmen for theyr mysseliuyng/ and sayd for theyr offenses they were so punysshed of the Normans. But the Englysshmen excused them selfe, and sayde that the Normans were worse in lyuynge than they. where vnto the bysshop answered and sayd/ that god vsed the wyckednesse of the in Englysshmen. For by the * wycked he punysshed ỹ wycked. And so doth god suffer the deuyll to punysshe synners in hell/ & he hym selfe is punysshed wyth them.

Of thys wolstone it is radde, that kynge

kynge wyllyam wold haue put hym from hys see, to the entente that he myghte put another into hys see. wherof thys holy man beynge warned/yode vnto the kynge and sayde to hym: I am enfourmed that thou wylte take from me, the whiche a better man thā thou arte gaue vnto me. wherfore of whom that I receyued so noble a gyfte, to hym wyll I gyue it agayn/and than take it from hym yf thou may. And whan he hadde so sayde to the kynge, he yode to the sepulture of Edward the confessoure/ and after ỹ he had made his prayers there, he pytched hys crosse in ỹ marble stone that laye vppon the graue. But no man myghte plucke out the staffe, tyll wolston came thyther hym selfe and pulled it out at the kynges cōmaundement. wherfore the kynge seyng that maruayle/suffred hym to enioye hys benefyce styll.

In the.x. yere of willyam Rufus/ stryfe and dyscencyon fell bytwene hym and Anselme bysshop of Caunterbury/for Anselme myght nat call hys synodys nor correcte the bysshoppes, but as the kynge wolde. The kynge also chalenged the inuestiture of bysshoppes, and pylled the spyrytualtye and temporaltye with vnreasonable taskes & trybutes/the which he spent vpon the towre of London, & the makynge of westmynster hall. And ouer that the kynges seruauntes, greued and pylled englysshmen. vnreasonably. And to thys mysery was ioyned the vnsaceable couetous of Ranulphe that was somtyme chapelayne vnto wyllyam conquerour/ the whyche was at thys day the kynges procuratour, and gadered hys taskes ouer all. He was so couetous and so eupll dysposed, that he wolde leuye .iii. taskys for two. He pylled the ryche, and bare downe the poore, and caused many men to lose theyr landes for smal causes/and therfore the kynge had hym in hys synguler fauoure. And by hys meanes bysshoprykes were boughte and solde as playnly as other marchaundyses. For that tyme, clerkes vsed bussched and brayded heddys, longe tayled & blasynge clothes, shynynge golden gyrdels/ and rode wyth gylte spurres, wyth bsynge of dyuers other enormytees. All whyche vyces Anselme wolde haue corrected / but he lacked assystence of hys bretherne ỹ bysshoppes. For the whyche cause & other he departed the londe. wherewyth the kyng beynge mysse contented / sente after hym suche persons as robbed and spoyled hym, and entreted hym in most cruell maner. For the whyche dede Raufe bysshoppe of Chychester blamed the kynge / and also rebuked all such bysshoppes as had refused the partye of Anselme, & had fauoured the kynge in causes cō cernynge the forsayde varyaunce. And forthermore he wythstode the kynge and hys offycers in takynge of fynes of prestes for cryme of forni cacyon. For whyche causes the kyng wyth the sayd Raufe was sore amoued and dyscontented/and opteyned such fauour, that he suspēded many chyrches of hys dyoses. But in the ende, Raufe demeaned hym in suche wyse that he hadde hys owne wyll/ and his chyrches enlarged and freed that before were stopped wyth thornes. And the kynge gaue vnto hym ỹ fynes of prestes within his dyosis/ and endued ỹ see of Chychester with many greate gyftes.

And vpon a tyme kynge wyllyam was rydynge towarde hys dysporte of huntynge/and sodeynly a messenger came vnto hym and sayde, that the cytye of Cenemonia in Normandye was beseyged. wherfore he wyth out longe tarynge or aduysement, toke

toke the streyght way to the se syde/ and sent to hys lordes, chargynge them to folow. whan the sayd lordes came to hys presence / they adupsed hym to tarye tyll his people were assembled. But he wolde nothynge do after theyr counsayle/but sayd, such as hym loued, he shortely wyste well wolde folowe hym, and so yode to shyp, settyng aparte all parels. The mayster of the shyp was afrayde, he sawe the weder so darke & so clowdy/ and counceyled the kynge to tary tyll the wynde wolde blowe more fauorably. But he commaunded hym to make all the spede that he cowde vpon hys lyfe/sayenge that he neuer harde that euer any kyng was drowned. And so he passed the see and landed in Normandy / and gathered to hym there hys knyghtes. whan the capytayne of the spege, whose name was Helyas, knewe of the kynges landyng/ he fered, and anone began to breke the spege. But by treason he was taken and brought to the kynges presence. To whom the kynge shewed suche pytye, that he suffered hym to be at hys lybertye. whyche after the opynyon of wyllyam de regibus, was done more of pryde than of compassyon.

THE.CCXXV.CHAPITER.

IN the.xi. yere of the reygne of thys wyllyam the rede / at a towne called Fynchamster in the cõtrey of Barke shyre, a welle caste out blode as before it hadde done water. And after by the space of. xv. dayes, great flames of fyre were sene in the elemẽt in sundry places and tymes. Thys yere also ỹ two erles of Shrewesbury and of Chester eyther named Hugh/by the kynges commaũdement entred wyth theyr knyghtes the ile of Man or Anglesaye, & slewe therin many welshemen, and gelded many moo. Amonge the whyche a preste named Kynredus was drawẽ out of a chyrch and serued of ỹ same wyse / and also cut hys tunge out of hys hed, and put out hys one eye. But this preste was of such vertue, that by myracle he was restored to helthe within.iii.dayes ensuynge.

In the whyche season and tyme, the kynge of Northgamys or Norwaye wan the iles called than Orcades and now Orkeys / & after came wyth hys strength into the forsayd ile of Man, where at the same season were the sayde two erles. Than betwene them was mortall fyght / in ỹ whyche Hugh erle of Shrewesbury was stryken with an arowe in ỹ eye, and dyed wythin.viii.dayes after. But as sayth Guydo, the Danys were chased, and the Englysshemen hadde the victory.

Kyng wyllyam was myche in Normandye/for so myche as Robert his brother was all thys season in the holy land/of whose actes shall some deale be towched in ỹ story of Henry the fyrste. And wyllyam had myche payne to rule the Normans/for they rebelled often agayne hym.

In the.xii.yere of hys reygne / he came out of Normandye, and when he saw the hall of westmynster ỹ he had caused to be buylded / he was therwyth dyscontented, that it was so lytell. wherfore as it is reherced of some wryters/he entended yf he had lyued to haue made a larger, and ỹ to haue serued for a chaumber.

Robert Losaunge, that somtyme had ben abbot of Ramsey, and than bysshop of Thetford by gyfte of a thousand pounde to the kyng/repented hym after, and bewept that vnskylfull dede/ and toke hys waye to Rome, and dyd for it hys enioyned penaunce / and after retorned into England,

Englande, and turned hys see from Thetforde to Norwyche / & founded there a fayre monastery of hys owne goodes, & not of the patrymony of cristes chyrch. But therin is a dowt to consyder. For he was fyrste an abbot and after a bysshop.

About thys tyme, by the meanes of one Stephen Hardynge a munke of Sherbourne / an Englyshman of ỳ order of Sisteaux or whyte mũkes had hys begynnynge in the wylderneſſe of Cystery within the prouynce of Burgoyne, as wytneſſeth Ranulf munke of Cheſter. But other wryters, as Jacobus Phylyppus, & the authour of Cronica cronicarũ, Matheolus, wyth other / sayen that this Stephen was the second abbot of ỳ place / & ỳ it was fyrſte foũded by the meanes of one Robert abbot of Molynẽſe, in the yere of grace. M. xcviii. whyche to folow theyr sayeng, shuld be in the. ix. yere of the reygne of this kyng. This order was after brought into Englande by one called walter Eſpeke, that foũded the fyrſte abbay of that relygyon at Ryuall, about ỳ yere of grace. xi. C. xxxi. The whyche shulde be about the. xxxi. yere of the fyrſte Henry than kyng of England. Somwhat of theyr relygyon is towched in the. x. chappter of the. viii. boke of Polycronycon.

After that kynge wyllyam, as before is sayde, was retourned out of Normandy / many wonderfull prodygyes and tokyns were shewed in England / as the swellyng or ryſyng of ỳ water of Thamys, in ſuche wyſe that it drowned dyuers townes, and dyd mych harme by out paſſyng hys boundys in dyuers places about Lõdon and elys where. Also the deuyll was sene walke in mannes lykeneſſe wyth dyuers other thynges whyche I ouerpaſſe. The kyng was warned of this, and tolde by his famylyers ỳ god was not cõtent with his lyuing. But he set all at nought, and made of it a ſcoffe or a tape.

In the. xiii. yere of his reygne and begynnynge thereof, as the thyrde daye of Auguſte after the sayenge of Ranulfe / thys kyng wyllyam beyng at hys dyſporte of huntynge wythin the newe forest, by glaunſynge of an arowe shot of a knyght named walter Tyrell, was wounded to the deth in the. xliii. yere of hys age. After whyche dede the sayde walter eſcaped and saued hym ſelf, for few there were that hym purſued. And ſo the kynge thus wounded, was layde vpon an horſe lytter, and ſo conueyed to wyncheſter / where shortly after he dyed and was buryed.

Of this man myghte be made a myche lenger story, yf all hys dedes shulde be towched. The whych toke vpon hym great thynges / and mych gretter entẽded yf he myght haue lyued. The daye before he was slayne one axed of hym where he wold kepe hys Cryſtinaſſe. At Poytiers sayde the kynge / for the erle entendeth to go towarde Hieruſalem / and I woll aſſaye to haue hys erledome in morgage / for well I knowe he muſt cheuyche for money to perfourme that iourney. The day that wyllyã dyed / he helde in hys hãdes the. iii. byſſhoprycches / of Caũterbury, of wincheſter and of Salyſbury / and dyuers abbayes, of the whyche he let some to ferme. Also he retrayned ỳ money ỳ of olde tyme was payed to Rome called Rome ſcotte. Of this wyllyã reporteth Henry of Hũtyngdõ / & sayth ỳ though this mã were lyght of som thynges, yet he was ſtedfaſt & ſtable of his promyſe / ſo ỳ what he promyſed good or euyll shuld be performed. And though he were named couetous / yet it shuld seme ỳ he was liberall, as sheweth by this narracyõ folowyng.

Rome ſcotte.

Upon

Upon a season when the abbot of a place in Englande was dede/ two munkes of the same place, the which before hadde gatheryd money, made theyr frendes to kynge willyam/ and offered large offers eyther of them to be promoted to that dygnyte. There was also a thyrde munke, the which of mekenesse & of humylyte folowed the other two/ to the entent that vpon hym that the kynge had admytted for abbot, he wolde haue gyuen attendaunce, and as his chapelayn to haue wyth hym returned. The kynge called before hym the .ii. munkys seuerally, and eyther out profered other. And as he caste hys eye a syde/ he espyed the thyrd, the whych he demed hadde comen also for the same cause. Then the kynge called hym/ and asked yf he wold geue any more then his bretherne had offered, to be abbot. But he answered to the kynge and sayde, that he wolde nother offer nor yet gyue for yt one peny/ nor wold haue so great a charge by any meane wrongefull. when the kynge had well vnderstanden thys thyrde munkes answere/ he sayde that he was best worthy to be abbot, and to haue the rule of so holy a charge/ and so he gaue vnto hym that benefyce, wythout takynge any peny. Thys kynge wyllyam vsed alway lemmans/ wherfore he dyed without yssue legyttymat, when he had reygned as before is sayde fully .xii. yeres and odde dayes.

Iustyce and cõpynence. *

THE .CCXXVI. CHAPITER.



Enry the .iii. son of wyllyam Cõquerour & fyrste of ỹ name, whyche for his connynge was surnamed beuclerk began hys reygne and dompnyon as kynge of Englande, the .v. daye of August, in the yere of our lorde .xi. hundred & one/ and the .xliii. yere of the fyrste Phylyppe then kynge of Fraunce/ & was crowned at westmynster ryght shortly after, of Thomas archebyshoppe of yorke, and Mozys byshoppe of London.

This Henry in his youth plyed him to such studye, that he was instructe in the .vii. artes lyberall. Anon he made holy chyrche free/ & vsed saynt Edwardes lawes, wyth the amende mẽt of them. He put out of his courtenyce and wãton men/ and closed Ranulphe byshoppe of Durham in the towre of Lõdon, ỹ which as ye before haue harde was so great wyth wyllyam his brother/ and sent for Anselme archebyshoppe of Caunterburye, whyche before was fledde fro the tyranny of wyllyam Rufus.

* This Henry chastysed the olde vntrewe mesure, and made a yerde of ỹ length of hys owne arme / wyth dyuers other thynges reformyng, that longe before his days had ben myssevsed/ and abhorred excesse of metys and dyrynkes / & vsed to fyght more wyth coũsayll then wyth sworde.

In the seconde yere of his reygne/ Robert hys brother, that by all thys season hadde ben occupyed in warres vppon Cristes enymyes, haupng worde of the deth of hys brother wyllyam, and howe his brother Henry hadde taken vpon hym as kynge/ returned into Normandy, and there made preparacyon for to come into Englande.

In this seasõn also was brokẽ out of prysonRanulfe byshoppe of Durham, and comen to the sayde Robert into Normandy. The whych excyted duke Robert in all that he myght to warre vppon hys brother Henry/ so that he assembled a stronge armye of knyghtes

knyghtes, and toke shyppynge, and landed in processe of tyme at Portysmouth. But by mediacyon a peace was made/and that in suche condycion, that he shuld haue.iii.thousand markes yerely, as before was promysed vnto hym by willyam Rufus his brother wyth other condycyons of successyon and other thynges, the whyche I ouerpasse for length of tyme. Thus Robert beynge contented contrary to the myndes of his lordes, after he a season hadde dysported hym in Englande retourned into Normandy/where of his lordes he was for thys & other dedes before done as after is shewed, lytle or lesse and lesse setby. For all be yt that by hys fathers lyke he hadde vyctorye, and vtterly dysplealed hym as some deale before ys touched / yet by hys manhode and manfull dedes, he fell into the fauoure of the people, and dyd many and great notable actes/ and specyally at the wynnyng of the cytye of Acon vppon the mysbreaun tes and turkes. For the whyche dedes yt apperyth by the sequele of the storye that he was also in the fauour of god. For when the electyon shuld be made for the kynge of Hierusalem, and certayne prynces and prynces peeres by ordynaunce made, stode wyth theyr tapers abydynge the dyuyne puruepaunce, that whose taper were fyrst wyth heuenly fyre lyghtened shulde be admytted for kynge / the taper of thys duke Robert was fyrste onely. wherfore by dyuyne puruepaunce he was then chosen kynge of Hierusalem. The whyche he refused, for the payne and trauayle that he shuld haue wyth all / & also for the couetyse of the crowne of Englande. For as soone as he hadde knowlege of the deth of his brother willyam/ anon he parted the coūtrey and sped hym homewarde in all that he myght. For the whych dede as afermeth myne authour, he spedde the worse in all his dedes after.

Thys Robert was wyse in counsayll, stronge in batayll, and also ryght lyberall / and in hys retourne from Hierusalem, maryed the doughter of wyllyam de Auersana lorde of Apulia, wyth whome he receyued grete sōmes of money for her dower, the whych by meane of his liberalyte he spent shortly after. Then fortune beganne to frowne vppon duke Robert/ and sette his owne lordes so agayn hym, that they sent vnto kyng Henry hys brother / wyllynge hym to come into Normandye, and they wolde delyuer the coūtrey vnto hym, and holde hym for theyr chefe lorde and ruler. wherunto, as sayth the englyshe cronycle, kynge Henry soone cōsented. But or euer thys warre betwene the sayde duke Robert & kyng Henry beganne/thys Henry maryed Mawde or Molde the doughter of Malcolyne kyng of Scotlande, and of Margarete hys wyfe doughter of Edwarde the outlawe, as in the begynnyng of wyllyam Conqueroure is thouched. Of the whyche Molde thys Henry receyuyd after some wryters two sonnes and .ii. doughters/ ỳ is to saye wyllyam and Rycharde, Mawde & Mary. And also the sayd authour wyth other saye / that Robert duke of Normandye came into Englande in the fourth yere of the reygne of kynge Henry, and hadde good chere of his brother and syster. For the which he at the request of his sayde syster, released to his brother ỳ forenamed trybute of .iii.thousand markes. But by yll tale tellers & couetous of signory, this broderly loue was after dissolued/in such wise that the kynge with a strong army sayled into Normandy/and held his broder Robert with so sharpe warre, that he

chaſed hym from one countrey to an other/ and wanne from hym Roan, Caan, Faloys, and all the good townes of Normandye/ and laſtely conſtrayned hym to aſke helpe of Phylyppe kyng of Fraunce, & after of the erle of Flaūdres/ but he fayled helpe of them both. Then wyth ſuch power as he could make, he gaue batayll vnto his brother kynge Henry. In the whyche he was taken, and ſent ouer into England, and put into the caſtell of Cardyffe in walys / where he remayned as priſoner whyle he lyued. And when he was dede he was buryed at Glowceſter.

In this tyme and ſeaſon, as it were in ỹ. iii. yere of kyng Henry/ ỹ chyrch of ſaynt Barthelmew in Smythfeld of London was begonne to be founded, of a mynſtrell of this kyng Henry named Rayer/ and after perfourmed and ended by good and well diſpoſed cytezens of the citye of Lōdon. This place of Smythfelde was at ỹ day a lay ſtowe of al ordure or fylth, and the place where felons and other tranſgreſſours of the kynges lawes were put to execucyon.

THE .CCXXVII. CHAPITER.

SO as kynge Henry hadde fynyſhed his warre in Normandye, & was returned into Englande/ Robert de Boleſyn, which was the eldeſt ſonne of Roger de mount Gomeryk erle of Shrewelbury / arose agayne the kynge, and manned his caſtellys of Shrewelbury, of Bruggy of Arundell, and of Tekynhyll, and incoraged the walſhmen agayne the kyng. But the kyng purſued ſo cruelly the ſayd Robert, ỹ wythin .xl. days he wan all thoſes caſtellis & ſlew many of his men, and gat the fauour of the walſhmen by gyftes and pleſaūt wordes/ and alſo compelled the ſayd Robert to forſake Englād, The whyche then ſayled into a corner of Normādye & kept him there ſecretely, tyll ſuch tyme as to hym was thyther comen willyā erle of Cornewall/ which wyllyam was alſo erle of Nortom in Normandye. when theſe two erles were aſſocyat/ they gaderyd to them a great ſtrength of Normans, & dyd great harme wythin the prouynce. wherfore the kynge ſayled thyther & made ſharpe warre vppon them. In the whych he loſte many of his men. But in ỹ ende he put frō them theyr ſtrength, and toke theym both pryſoners, and ſo helde them ỹ terme of theyr lyues. And that done, he ſette that coūtrey in good reſte and peace, and after retourned into Englande. After whyche returne/ kynge Henry made ſharpe lawes agayne theues and other that vſed vnlefull meanes. In whyche lawes was conteyned loſynge of lyfe, of eyes, of ſtones, and other members of man as the gylte requyred.

And ſoone after Anſelme archbyſſhoppe of Caunterbury, aſſembled a great coūſayll at London of the clergy of England. By authorite of the which coūſayll/ dyuers abbotes and other were put from theyr dygnytie, for that they had taken before tyme theyr abbayes by vnlefull meanes. + And amōges all other decrees one was, ỹ preſtes ſhulde forgo theyr wyues. Then ſtrife fell betwen ỹ kyng & Anſelme/ for that that he wold not ſacre the preſtes that hadde taken inueſtyture of lewde mennys handes, whyche before was forboden vppon payne of curſynge. But Gyralde archebyſſhoppe of yorke/ for the pleaſure of the kynge ſacred ſuche byſſhoppes. wherfore Anſelme beynge diſcōtent/ departed ỹ land and yode to Rome, to ſhewe thys wyth other thynges to the pope, whyche at that

+ Preſtes wyues

daye by

daye by moſte accorde of wryters ſhulde be Paſcall the ſeconde.

In the.vi. of the kynge, the countrey of Flaūdres was ſore blemyſhed and hurte by meane of the ſee, ſo that the Flemynges yode aboute to haue ſocoure of dwellynge, and requyred of the kyng to haue lycence that they might inhabyt them in the eeſt parte of the ryuer of Twede, the whych to them was graunted. But after a certayn of yeres they were remoued into weſtwalys, where they remaynyd a longe whyle/but after they ſpraad all Englande ouer.

In the.vii. yere of thys kynge/vpon a frydaye at nyghte in the fyrſte weke of clene lent, was ſene an vncouth ſtarre betwene ỹ ſouth and the weſte, the whyche nyghtely appered at one howre, and cōtynued ſo by the ſpace of.xxv. days. And fore agaynſt that oute of the eeſt parte/ appered a great leuyn or beme of bryghtnes, whyche ſtretched towarde the ſayde ſtarre.

And vppon ſhere thurſdaye nexte enſuynge, were ſene two monys/ that one in the eeſt, and that other in the weſte.

And in thys yere/ Anſelme by the kynges agrement, returned agayne from Rome/ and ſhortely after called a conuocacyon at London. In the whyche by the popes authorite yt was newely conformed and enacted, that no temporall man after that daye ſhuld make inueſture with croſſe or wyth ryng.

In the.viii. yere of the reygne of kynge Henry/ the fourth Henry emperour of Almayne, the whyche had maryed Mylde the eldeſte doughter of kynge Henry, when ſhe was of the age of.v. yeres/ pryſoned pope Paſcall and dyuerſe of the cardynallys. This Henry alſo warred agayne his father Henry the.iii/and laſtely caſte hym in ſtronge pryſon. For the whyche dede as affermeth Ranulphe/ he wylfully when he had ruled the empyre.xx. yere/ reſygned hys dygnyte into the handes of Calixtus ỹ ſecōde of that name then pope/ & after came ſecretely into England, & vnto Cheſter, vnwyttynge hys wyfe or any of hys frendes / where he lyued longe after a ſtrayte lyfe, and was buryed there at laſte. But to this ſayeng dyſagreeth the wryters of the ſtoryes of emperours. For of them yt is wytneſſed/that this Henry the emperour after he had ruled the empyre as before is ſayd.xx. wynter, he dyed at a place in Almayn called Spyre/ and there was buryed, wyth this ſcrypture vpon his toumbe.

Filius hic, pater hic, auus hic, preauus iacet hic.

whyche is to meane in our vulgare tunge as foloweth.

The ſon here lyeth, with alſo ỹ fader
The belſyre, for & ỹ great graūfader.

when Henry the emperour was thus dede as after yt ſhalbe ſhewed, when conuenyency of tyme requyreth/what became of his wife it ſhall there be declared.

In the.ix. yere of ỹ reygne of kyng Henry/ the archebyſhoppe Anſelme profeſſed Gerarde archbyſhoppe of yorke to the yoke of hys obedyence, as he was before taught by the lore of Lamfranke his predeceſſour. And the.x. daye of Auguſte folowynge, he ſacred.v. byſhoppes at one tyme/ as of wyncheſter, of Salyſbury, of Exeter, of Herford, and of Glamorgan. And kynge Henry ordeyned a byſhoppes ſee at Ely / and ordeyned there Henry that hadde ben biſhoppe of Bangor/ and beſette Cambrydge ſhyre to the ſee of Ely. And to the biſhoppes ſee of Lyncolne, he gaue his owne towne of Spaldynge, for he hadde mynyſhed that ſee by the preferment of Ely.

In the .x. yere dyed Anselme arch bysshop of Caunterbury. After whose deth that see was voyde .v. yeres/ & the goodes of the chyrch spent to the kynges vse. And whē he was prayed to helpe ỹ chyrch, that was wythout an hedde and a pastor/ he used to answere, that his fader and also his brother had accustomed, to set there the beste proued men ỹ they might fynd. And to the entente that he myght do the same/ he toke the more tyme & lay sure. wyth suche mylde answeres he so put of the tyme, that he fylled hys cofers wyth the great sommes of ỹ benefyce. And who that is desyrous to knowe of the great vertue of thys bysshoppe Anselme/ lette hym rede in the .xiiii. chappter of the .vii. boke of Polycronycon, & there he shall fynde a parte therof.

About this tyme as wytnesseth the frenche cronycle/ a cōtrauersy began betwene the kyng and Lewys kyng of Fraunce son to Phylyp the fyrste. This Lewys was surnamed Lewis the great, other for hys bygnesse of person, or ellys for greatnesse of hys dedes. This Lewys sent vnto kyng Henry beynge in Normandy/ & gaue vnto hym monycyon of homage for the duchy of Normandy / & also that he shulde restore vnto hym or bete down to the groūde, the castell of Gysours / & also to recompence and restore for hurtes and harmes that his Normans hadde done in those partes. But all this of kyng Henry was denyed / and shortely after skyrmysshes and cocke fyghtes beganne betwene the sayde two prynces, kynge Henry lyenge at the sayde castell of Gysours, and Lewys at a place called mounte Calue. But thys encreased in suche wyse, that after eyther prynce soughte more rome places, whose knyghtes sundry tymes met. But of any notable batayll I fynde no remembraunce / all be yt that the sayde warre contynued by the terme of two yeres. In the ende of whych two yeres wyllyam the eldest sonne of kynge Henry, beynge a chyld and wythin age / contented so well the mynde of Lewys, that he refrayned of hys warre for that tyme.

In the .xiii. yere, at Shrewesbury was a great erth quake, and at Nothyngham from the morne to the vndertyde. The ryuer of Trent was so forsyyed in the moneth of June, as sayth Guydo, that men wente ouer dyre. And the starre called Stella cometa or the blasynge sterre aperyde soone after. Theruppon folowed an harde wynter, great deth of the people, and scarcete of vitayll by the great moreyn of bestes. In thys yere also the kynge founded the abbay of Hyde wythoute the wallys of wynchester, that of olde tyme was wythin the wallys.

THE .CCXXVIII. CHAPITER.

In the .xv. yere of hys reygne/ ỹ kynge entēdyd to haue pmoted Faricus abbot of Abyndon, vnto the see of Caunterburye. But by a counsayll kept at wyndesoure of bysshoppes, ỹ kynges mynde was chaūged/ and to that see was then admytted Raufe that was bysshoppe of Rochester. And the same yere one Thurstone was chosen archebysshoppe of yorke / the whyche wythsayde hys profession of obedience that he shuld owe to the see of Caunterbury/ wher fore at lengthe he was depryued of hys dygnyte. But after by laboure that he made to Pascall the pope before named / the sayde pope wrote vnto the kynge that he shulde restore Thurstone agayne to the see of yorke. By whyche meane he was agayne restoryd/ but yet he disdayned

to do

to do hys lawefull obedyence vnto Rauke archebyshope of Caunterbury. Then the stryfe was renewed, which Lanfranke before as ye haue harde in the thyrde chappter of wyllyam Conquerour, dyd appeace/and was brought in argument before the pope. The whyche at the kynges requeste, promysed ꝑ he wolde nothyng do nor ordeyne, that shuld be derogacion to the archbyshop of Caunterbury, or to the dygnyte of his chyrche. But in cõclusion the pope gaue such a dekuse sentence in thys mater, that he lefte the stryfe vndetermyned and vnasoyled. And when ꝑ kynges procuratours wyth also the archbyshop of Caunterbury were absent/were yt for nede or for fauour, the pope was so bowed, that he forsoke ꝑ olde rule vsed before hys days, and sacred the sayde Thurstone, and gaue vnto hym the pawle. For this dede ꝑ kyng was sore dyscontented wyth Thurstone, and warned hym the entre of his lande. wherfore the pope wrote after shortely to the kynge/ wyllyng hym to suffer Thurstone to occuppe his see peaseably, or he shulde be accused and suspended by the dygnyte of the office of Caunterbury/ and so Thurstone enioyed his see.

In the yere of our lorde.xi.hundred.xviii.as sayth the frenche cronicle, whyche was the .xvii. yere of thys kyng Henry the fyrst/the warre was agayn quyckened betwen kyng Henry and Lewys kynge of Fraunce. wherof was the occasyon, as sayth the sayde frenche cronycle, Thybaude erle of Chartres. whych Thybaude was greuyd by the frenche kynge, and for necessyte requyred kynge Henry of ayde and helpe, to whome the kynge as to hys kynnesman sent ayde and socoure. And afterwarde the kynge sayled ouer with a stronge armye/ and sente a noble man named Stephan into the lordshyppe of Brye, to defende yt agayn the frenche kynge. when Lewys vnderstode that kynge Henry was landed in Normandye wyth so great power / he in all haste assembled a stronge power, and drewe hym towarde the kynge. But there were so stronge holdes mannyd wyth Normans, & also such depe and great ryuers/that the frenche kynge myght not wynne vnto kynge Henry. Then lastely by a feate of warre whyche were longe to reherse, he wan a town named Lyngues in Cause/ in the whyche towne was a brydge to passe the ryuer of Thee, and so into Normandye.

when a certayne of the knyghtes of Lewes had thus wonne the forsayd towne/the sayd Lewes wyth his people spedde hym shortly after, and rescued his forsayde knightes / & then spoyled and robbed the towne the whyche was ryche, for so myche as yt hadde ben in quyet and rest many yeres before. He also slewe and toke prysoners all ꝑ Normans there dwellyng, & put in theyr stede Frenchmē. And that done he sped hym towarde kynge Henry, the which was at a castell called Vale assyse/ & there made puruyaunce for the defence of the Frenchmen. And when he hadde garnyshed yt to hys pleasure he departed thens. But not longe after the frenche kynge came thyther wyth his hole hoste of Frenchmen/ and after many sore & cruell assautys, wan the sayde castell/ and bette yt downe euen wyth the grounde. After whych season as sayth the sayd cronicle, fell to the frenche kynge many and dyuerse myshortunes. For shortely after amonge other myschaunces / a noble captayn of hys named Anguerran de Chanmount, the whyche had done myche harme in Normandye

to kynge Henry, and wonne there some castelles and other stronge holdes, dyed sodeynly. And in shorte tyme after/ Baldewyne erle of Flaūdres a man of great strēgth and puysaunce, as he beseaged a castell was wounded in the face, and dyed wyth in .vi. dayes after. Then Fauques erle of Aungeos, in whom also this Lewys affyed mych and trusted/ maryed his doughter vnto willyam the eldest sonne of kynge Henry/and refused the kynge of Fraunce parte, and ayded and assysted kynge Henry in all that he myght/ so that dayly the power of kyng Henry encreased, and the frenche kynges mynysshed. Lastely these two prynces met wyth theyr both hostes in playne feld, and foughte a dedely and cruell batayll. where in the ende the frenche kynge was ouercomen, and loste myche of his people/ and was cōpelled to flee vnto a place called Audely for his sauegarde. But thys ouerthrowe of frenchemen is excused in the moste fayrest maner/ so ỹ they excuse them selfe, and saye that kynge Henry set vppon kynge Lewys, when he was not ware, but hys knyghtes all oute of aray & order, and also kyng Henry had farre excedynge nomber of men ouer that theyr kyng had/ with other wordes of boste of them selfe, & slaunder of Englyshemen, the whyche as to me appereth is an augmentacyon of theyr owne shame. But Ranulfe the munke sayth shortely, that kyng Henry ouercame the frenche kynge royally in batayll.

Then yt foloweth in ỹ storyt/ fynally these sayde prynces were agreed/ and willyam the sonne of kyng Henry dyd homage vnto ỹ frenche kyng for the landes of Normandye, by the agrement of his fader. For the kyng thought hym selfe to good to be vnder the obeysaūce of ỹ frenche kyng Then kynge Henry caused hys free men of Englande and of Normandy, to do homage vnto his sonne willyam.

And soone after Fouques before named lefte hys erledome of Angeer or Angiers, in guydyng of kynge Henry, and yode hym selfe into the holy lande/ and wylled in his testament, that yf he retourned not agayne, that the sayde erledome shulde remayne vnto his sonne in lawe willyam, son of kynge Henry, whyche hadde maryed hys doughter.

About the .xx. yere of the reygne of kyng Henry/ quene Moldе or Mawde hys wyfe dyed in Normandy/ the whyche in her youthe was set by her father kyng of Scottes into a nunry, and there ware & vsed the vayle and habyte of a nunne. For the whyche cause when kynge Henry was agreable to take her vnto wyfe, thys mater fell in great despucyon/ & Anselme then archebyshop of Caunterbury was sore agayne that maryage a season of tyme. But at length yt was suffycyētly proued that she was there as a fygure, a woman wirynge that habyte wythoute profession of order. And this was thus ordered by her father, to the ende to put by vnworthy wowers. Thys of wryters was reputed for a blessyd and holy woman, after the lyuynge of a worldly woman.

when kynge Henry had contynued in Normandy vppon the season and terme of .iii. yeres/ he toke shyppyng at Haterflete in Normandy, and sayled happely into Englande the same day, that is to meane ỹ .xxiiii. day of Nouember as sayth some wryters. And shortly after willyā duke of Normandy, wyth Rychard his brother, Notha the countesse of Persye, Rychard erle of Chester, with his wyfe the kynges nyce, and the archdekyn of Her-

of Herforde and other, to the nomber of a hundred .lx. persones/toke shyppynge at the sayde porte, & were all drowned, a bocher onely excepte. whyche mysfortune fell by the oversyght of the maister and other, which fell at a dyssencyon in the nyghte amonge them selfe/ by reason wherof they ranne vppon a rocke as shewed the forsayde bocher. From this daūger wyllyam duke of Normādy was escaped, and was in the shyppe botenere vnto the lande. But when he harde the lamētable crye of the Cōtesse Notha / he commaunded the rowers to returne and saue the sayd Countesse. whych done/ by what mysfortune I can not saye, after she was receyued into the bote, were it by tempeste or ouer chargynge of the bote or otherwise/ they were all swalowid of the see, so that none of them was after foūde but pte of theyr goodes. Of this duke wyllyā some desclaunderous wordes are lefte in memory, both in the englyshe cronycle and also of other writers / the whyche I ouerpasse.

THE .CCXXIX. CHAPITER.

In the .xvi. yere of hys reygne/ kynge Henry made ỳ parke of wodestoke be syde Orenforde, with other plesures to the same. And Fouques erle of Angiers returned out of the holy land, and maryed the syster of her that before he had maryed vnto wyllam duke of Normandye, vnto the son of Robert Curthose / and gaue wyth her the erledome of Conomanna. And stryfe began to kyndell betwene kynge Henry & the sayd Fouques, for the wytholdyng of the dowre or ioynture of hys kyrste doughter, maryed vnto wyllyam the kynges sonne.

In the .xviii. yere of kynge Henry, dyed Raufe archbysshoppe of Caunterbury/ and one named wyllyā was set in ỳ see after hym. And the kynge in thys yere beganne the foundacyon of ỳ abbay of Redyng. And Johñ a cardynall of Rome was sente from Calyxte the seconde of that name thē beynge pope, for certayne maters cōcernynge the pope. In the tyme of whyche hys so beynge here, the cardynall made sharpe processe agayne prestes that norysshed Crysten moyles/ and rebuked them by open publyshement and otherwyse, so that he wan hym here but small & lytle fauoure. But this dyssymuled doctour toke so great feruence in the correccyon of the iudgement of prestes of Englande, that he forgate the lore and coūsayll of his famous pope Caton/ whyche in the boke of his counsayll or of wysedome thus sayth:

Quæ culpare soles, ea tu ne feceris ipse.
Turpe est doctori, cum culpa redarguit ipsum.

The whyche two verses maye be englyshed as foloweth,

Iuyse ỳ well, let reason be thy guyde
when other folke thou arte aboute to blame/
That suche defaute in the be not espyed.
For yf there be/ then shalt thou haue the shame.
A mannes honoure suche thynges woll reclayme.
It ys full foule when that a man woll chese
If that hys dede agayne hys wordes preche.

This coūsayll was not remembred of the sayd Cardynall. For in the euenynge after he had lewdely blowen his horne, and sayde it was a detestable synne to aryse from the syde of a strumpet & sacre the body of Cryste/ he was taken wyth a strumpet to his open shame and rebuke.

In the .xxv. yere of kynge Henry

to the crowne of Fraunce / wherfore the kynge wythstode yt. For this / a grudge fell betwene the kynge and erle Thybaude / so that in processe dedely warre was made betwen thē. The whyche contynued in such wise to theyr both damages / that fynally the warre was agayne reuyued betwene kynge Lewys and kynge Henry, as in the.xvii.yere of the reygne of the sayde Henry is declared, by meane of thys warre betwene the kynge and this erle Thybaude. wherof the cyrcumstaunce wold are a longe leysure to reherse, as yt is shewyd in the frenche storye. But fynally this erle Thybaude loste none honour / all be yt that the frenche cronycle wonderfully fauoreth ŷ party of the frenche kynge, that the reader maye well apperceyue, Quis pin xit leonem.

THE.CCXXXI. CHAPITER.

THis Lewys also hadde great warre wyth Henry the fourth of that name emperour / the whyche maryed Moide the doughter of Henry the fyrste kynge of England, as before is shewed. wherfore the occasyon was as sayth the frenche cronycle / for so myche as the sayd Henry the emperour hadde before tyme ben accursed of Gelasius the seconde of that name then pope, at Raynes a cyte in Fraunce. For the whych cause as there is surmytted / the sayde emperoure assembled an huge hoste of Almaynes and Italyens, and entred the lande of Fraunce, and dyd therin myche harme. But in the ende when he knew of the great prouisyon ŷ Lewis made to mete hym, & of his great power / he then as affermeth ŷ frēch cronycle, wythdrewe hym / and so auoyded the lande of Fraūce wythout stroke strykyng. But of this speketh nothyng the authour that wrote the story of this Henry the emperour.

After this the erle of Flaundres named Charlys, the systers sonne of kynge Lewys nexte duke after Baldewyn, whych dyed as before is sayd in the thyrde chappter of the story of kyng Henry, of a woūde in his face / this forsayd Charlys was sore hated of the prouoste of Brudgys. The whyche to bryng his malyce to some effecte / counsayled wyth hys adherentes how he myght slee the sayde Charlys. By whose coūsayle a meane was founde to bryngе the erle to Brudgys a towne of Flaundres, for the wele of the sayde towne. After whose commynge vppon a daye he beynge in a chyrche and herynge his dyuyne seruyce, was slayne of ŷ sayd prouoste and his complyces. wherof herynge kynge Lewys / anon wyth a great army entred Flaundres, and besyeged the town of Brudges, and lastely toke the sayde prouoste. The whyche fyrst was bounden to a post, & then his eyen wyth a reede stryken out of hys hed / And then shot wyth arowes / & lastely set vppon a whele, where he remayned tyl he dyed. And a felowe of hys named Bartopus, ŷ whyche was consentyng to the same murder / was hanged vppon a galos by the waste and armys / and by hym a mastyfe or great curre dogge, the whyche as soon euer he was smytten bote vppon the sayde Bartopus / so that in processe he all to rent hym, & dyd to hym so great payne, that lastely he endyd his lyfe in great mysery.

In the time of ŷ reygn of this Lewys / the bishop of Clermōde was voyded his see by the cruelnes of the erle of Auerne. wherfore the kyng assembled his knyghtes / and by strength, set the byshoppe in hys place agayne maugry his enymyes. And agayne the second tyme when he was eft put out by

out by the sayde erle/ the kynge restoryd hym/ and toke suche pledges of the erle, that he remayned after in good quyet. In ỹ later dayes of this Lewys/ his eldest sonne named Phylyppe wyth a conuenyent company, vppon a daye for his dysporte rode about certayne stretys of the cytye of Parys/ and as he rode, an hogge sodeynly starte amonge the horse fete of the chylde/ wherwyth the horse beynge frayde lepte sodeynly, and cast the chylde to the grounde, wyth so great vyolence that he dyed ỹ nyght folowynge. For this mysshappe the kynge toke great heuynesse/ so that he wared dayly more feble. And for he was vnweldly by reason of ouer ladynge of flesshe, and myghte not well trauayll/ he therfore by the aduyce of hys lordes, admytted hys seconde sonne named Lewys to the rule of the realme, and hym he crowned by his lyke tyme/ and also maryed hym vnto Elynoure the doughter of the duke of Guyan, by whych he was inheryttoure vnto her father. And shortely after the kynge sykened/ and to hys great payne in an horse lytter was brought vnto saynt Denys. where he lyenge a season syke, and knew that the owre of deth was nere/ commaunded suche as were aboute hym that they shulde spredde a tappyte vppon the ground, and then laye hym vppon the sayde tappette, and vppon hym to be made a crosse of asshes/ whyche all was done accordynge to his commaundement. And there he so laye tyll he dyed, in the yere of hys reygne to reken from the deth of his father to his owne endynge daye. xxx. yeres/ so that he reygned .xxix yeres full and odde monethes/ and was buryed in the monastery of sayncte Denys with great pompe, wyth thys scrypture folowynge vppon his tombe.

Illustris genitor Lodouici rex Lodouicus,
Vir clemens, Christi seruorum semper amicus:
Instituit fecit pastorem canonicorum,
In sella veteri trans flumen Parisiorum.
Hanc vir magnanimus almi victoris amore,
Auro reliquijs ornauit rebus honore.
Sancti Dionysij, qui seruas corpus humatum,
Martyr & antistes, Lodouici solue reatum.

whyche verlys may be expowned in our vulgar as folowyth:

The noble father of Lewys, Lewys the kynge.
To Crystes seruauntes ryght meke and louynge/
Caused to be made of chanons an howse,
In a selle of Paris where the streme flowes/
whyche this man myghty for loue of sayncte Victor,
wyth golde an relyquys enorned with great honor.
wherfore sayncte Denys, whyche kepest hys body graued,
Martyr and bishoppe/ pray that his soule be saued.

Anglia.

THE.CCXXXII. CHAPITER.

STephan erle of Boloyn, and son of the erle of Blesence, and of the wyues syster of Henry the fyrst named Mary/ begaune his reygne ouer the realme of Englande, in the yere of our lord.xi.C.xxvi/ & the first yere of Lewes ỹ.viii.of ỹ name then kyng of Fraunce. This was a noble man and hardy. But contrarye hys othe, after the affyrmaunce of some wryters that he made to Wolde the empresse/ he toke vpon hym ỹ crowne/ and was crowned vppon sayncte Stephans daye in the Crystemasse

weke at westmynster, of the archbis-
shoppe of Caunterbury, the whyche
in lykewyse had made lyke othe vn-
to the sayde empresse, in presence of
her fader as before is touched. In pu-
nyshment wherof as men demed/the
sayde archbyshoppe dyed shortly af-
ter. And many other lordes whyche
dyd accordyng lyke/ went not quyte
wythout punyshement. A great cau-
ser of this periurye as reherseth one
authour, was this/one Hugh Bygot
stewarde somtyme wyth Henry the
fyrste / immedyatly after the deceace
of the sayde Henry, came vnto En-
gland/and before the sayde archbys-
shop and other lordes of the lande,
toke wyllfully an othe/ & sware that
he was present a lytle before the kyn
ges deth, when kynge Henry admyt
ted & chase for hys heyre to be kynge
after hym Stephan hys neuewe/for
so myche as Molde his doughter
had dyscontented hym. wher vnto
the archbyshoppe wyth the other lor-
des gaue to hasty credence. But this
Hugh scaped not vnpunyshed / for
he dyed myserably in a shorte tyme
after.

When kyng Stephan was crowned
he sware before the lordes at Oryn-
forde, that he wolde not holde in hys
hand the benefyces that voyded/and
that he wold forgyue the Dane gelt
as kyng Henry before hym had done
wyth other thynges whyche I passe
ouer. And for this Stephan drad the
cõmynge of the empresse/ he therfore
gaue lycence vnto his lordes, ỹ euer-
y of them myght buylde a castell or
strong fortres vpon his own groũd.
And soone after he agreed wyth Da-
uyd kynge of Scottes, & receyued of
hym homage, after he had from hym
wonne some townes and holdes.

The towne of Exetoure rebellyd a-
gayne the kynge in the seconde yere
of hys reygne. But he in the ende he
subdued theym. And wyllyam arch
byshoppe of Caunterburye dyed the
same yere / whose benefyce was af-
ter gyuen to Thibaude abbot of Bec
co in Normandye.

About the fourth yere of his reyg-
gne / Dauyd kynge of Scottys re-
pentynge hym of hys former agre-
ment made wyth the kynge, entred
of newe the boundes of Northum-
berlande aboute the ryuer of Theyse
towarde the prouynce of yorke, and
brent and slewe the people in moste
cruell wyse/ not sparynge man, wo-
man, nor chylde. Agayne whome
Thurstone by the kynges cõmaunde
ment was sent. The whych wyth his
power quytte hym so knyghtly, that
he ouer threwe the hoste of Scottes,
and slewe of theym a great nomber,
and compellyd theym to wythdrawe
agayne into Scotlande. In the
which passetyme ỹ kyng layde syege
to the castell of Bedforde and wanne
yt. And that done / he then made a
vyage into Scotlande, where he
dyd lytle to hys pleasure or profyte.
Then in his retourne homewarde he
toke Aleraunder byshoppe of Lyn-
colne / and helde hym in dureſſe tyll
he hadde yelded or gyuen vnto hym
the castell of Newerke. And then he
chased Nygellus byshop of Ely.

Also in thys furye he toke suche
displeasure with his louynge frende
Roger byshop of Salysburye / that
he caste hym in bondes tyll the sayde
Roger hadde rendred vnto hym the
two castellys of Vyes and Shyr-
burne. For the whyche thys Roger
in remembrynge the great ingraty-
tude of the kynge/toke such thought
that he dyed shortely after / and left
in redy coyne. xl. thousande marke,
whyche after hys deth came to the
kynges cofers.

One cronycle sayth that kynge Ste
phan obteyned these foresayde castel
lys, to

lys, to the entent he myght fortyfye theym wyth his knyghtes to wythstande the empresse, whose cũmynge he euer fered. And ỹ were folowynge he wãne wyth strength the castellys of Glowceter, of Herford, of webley, of Bystowe, of Dudley, & of Shrewesburye/ for the whyche cause Robert erle of Glouceter began to wyth drawe hys allegeaunce from kynge Stephan. This Robert was the son of Henry the fyrst by reason of baste/ and for thys dyspleasure sent letters vnto Wolde the empresse hys syster, prompsynge to her great ayde to wynne her ryght.

In the meane whyle that the empresse made prouysyon for her iourney / kynge Stephan concluded a maryage betwene Eustace his sonne and Constaunce the kynges syster of Fraunce, doughter of Lewys the great / the whyche contynued the ampte betwene England and Fraũce.

Then in the moneth of July and bi. yere of Stephan/ Wolde the empresse as testifyeth Henry the chanon in hys. ix. boke, entred this land by the porte of Portesmouthe / and so kepte on her iourney tyll she came to Bystowe, and dyd great harme by the meane of her passage through the countrey. In whyche tyme of her sayde landynge, kyng Stephan laye at the syege of walyngforde castell. But as soone as he harde of the landynge of the empresse / he anon sente oute commyssyons for more strength, and so drewe towarde hys enymyes. But in this tyme and season Robert erle of Glowceter, and Ranulfe erle of Chester, wente vnto the empresse wyth all the power that they might make. The empresse herynge the great power commynge wyth the kynge / drewe to the cytye of Nycoll now called Lyncolne, and there helde her a longe season for all that the kyng myght do. But lastely the empresse wyth her people escaped/ and the kynge was possessyd of the cytye, and there bode tyll Candelmas. After whyche season/ erle Robert and Ranulfe before named, with a great power of walshmen, & ỹ power of the empresse, came agayn the kynge. where as when bothe hostes were nere ioynyng/ the erle Ranulfe of Chester spake to his knightes and sayd: I requyre you that I that am cause of your parell, may be the fyrst that shall entre into the parell. Then answered erle Robert and sayd/ yt is not vnworthy to the ỹ arestethe fyrst stroke and dignyte of this fyght. For to the yt is syttynge, for noblesse of blood and vertue of strength, in the whyche thou passest other men. But the kinges false othe moueth men to warre and to fyght/ where we muste now wynne the mastry or be ouercome. And he ỹ hath none other socour, is cõstrayned to defende hym by knyghtly and stronge dedes of armes & of manhode. And so shall we now agayne theym that by entryked wyth gyle & wyckednesse / as Robert erle of Wellent, the erle also of Albemarll, and Symon of Hampton, the which is a man of great boste and of small myght.

Then kyng Stephan prepayred to set forwarde hys people/ and erle Baudewyne had wordes of comfort to the kynges peple, & sayde: Wen ỹ shall fyghte/ to theym is behouefull thre thynges. The fyrst is ryght of ỹ cause, leste men fal in parell of soule. The second is quantyte of men of armys, leste men be oppreste wyth ere dynge nomber. And the thyrde is the effecte corage of strẽgth of knightes, ỹ the quarel shuld not fayle for lacke of hardy and assured fyghtynge. As touchynge whyche thre poyntes I truste we be well sped. But & ye take

Thre thynges requysyte to fyght

hede farthermore what enymyes we haue/ fyrste we haue agayne vs Robert erle of Glouceter, whyche vseth great manasses, and executeth lytle or small dedys. In mouth he is a lyon / but in harte he is a shepe. He is pompous in speche, and darke in vnderstandyng. There is also Ranulfe erle of Chester / a man wythout reason and full of folehardynesse / redy and preste to all conspyracy and vnstedfastnesse of maner and dedes, hasty and furyouse of hart, and vnware of parellys. He assayeth oft to acheue great dedes/but he bryngeth none to effecte. And what he fyrsly and frelshely begynneth / he cowardely and fayntly forsaketh, as vnhappy and vngracyous in all his dedys / and is ouercomen in euery place. For he holdeth wyth hym banyshed men & scullers. And the mo of them that be in a company, the soner they be ouercomē/ and weke they be in fyghtyng, for eyther of theym putteth truste in his felowe whyle hym selfe is ouerthrowen.

But or he myght haue finyshed his wordes to moste mennys audyence/ the crye of the enymyes, wyth noyse of trumpettes and gruntyng of horsys approched and smote to gyther/ and forth go the arowes, and gresely a cruell fyghte was contynued vpon bothe sydes for the whyle ỹ ytten duryd. where through the grene feld was turned into a perfyte redde / so that many a pale & wan vysage was there sene yeldynge the gooste, wyth armys and legges disseueryd and departed. A longe whyle thys fyghte stode in questyon, whyther partye shulde obteyne victorye. But in the ende kynge Stephans partye gaue backe and fledde/and he full knyghtly abode on felde wyth a fewe of his knyghtes, and was taken, and so was brought vnto the empresse/ the whyche commaunded hym to be conueyed vnder sure kepyng vnto Brystowe, where he was kepte as a prysoner from the sayde tyme of Candelmasse vnto holy Roode daye next ensuynge.

Aboute this tyme was founded the Abbay of Stratforth Langthorne wythin. iiii. myles of London, by a knyght called syr wyllyam de Moūt fychet.

THE. CCXXXIII. CHAPITER.

When the empresse hadde wonne this victorye, and had commytted the kyng to warde, as before ye haue harde/ she was not therwith a lytle exalted / but thoughte in her mynde that she was in a suerty of the possessyon of the hole realme. But she was disceyued/ for Kent toke partye wyth kynge Stephan. But yet after this victory thus obteyned, the empresse came vnto wynchester, and after to wyltone, to Grenforde, to Redynge, and to sayncte Albonys/ into the whyche cytyes and townes she was receyued wyth all honoure. And fynally she came to London, for to entre the state of the lande. At her whyche there beynge / the quene made assyduat laboure for the deliuerye of the kynge her husbande / promysynge that he shulde surrender the lande into her possessyon, and he to be come a religyous man, other ellys a pylgryme to hys lyues ende. But all was in vayne/ for she myght purchace no grace as then vppon no maner of condycyons. The cytezens of London also made great laboure, that they myghte vse the lawys of Edwarde the confessoure, as they were graunted by wyllyam Conqueroure / and not the lawys of her father, whyche were of more straytnesse. wherof in no wyse they

they of her coũsayll myght haue any graunte. For this the cytezens were dyscontentyd / and knowynge that the countrey of Kent wolde strength theyr partye, ordeyned to haue taken her. But the beynge therof warned / departed in haste, and lefte behynde her hyr store of housholde, and so fledde vnto Orynforde / where she abode her people, the whyche was deuyded and scatteryd. And in thys whyle she sente vnto Dauyd kynge of Scottes and her vncle for to ayde her, the whyche in all haste came vnto her / and so yode to wyncheſter, where she layde syege to the byshoppes towre, the whyche the kynges brother at that tyme helde wyth strength.

Then the quene wyth ayde of her frendes, of Kentyshemen and other / made a stronge hoste / wherof was capytayne a knyght named Guyllyam de Ypre. whē the empresse harde of ỹ great strength of the quene, and saw that her owne mynyshed rather then encreasyd / she fled secretely and escaped vnto Glouceter. And erle Robert her brother was taken soone after, and put in pryson. Then Dauyd kynge of Scottes herynge of thys / returned into Scotland. Then meanes was made vpon eyther syde, for deliuery and exchaunge of the pryſoners / so that fynally yt was agreed that the kynge shulde be delyuerd for erle Robert. But or thys agrement were concluded myche sorowe was wrought wythin thys realme. For the empresse pylled and spoyled on hyr partye / and the quene by promyses and manaces borowed & toke vppō ỹ other syde / & the goudyours stale and extorcyoned vpō both partyes / so that riche men were made nedy, and the poore were oppressed.

In thys meane whyle the empresse retourned agayne to Orynforde & bytayled and manned yt in her beste maner.

Then lastely the kyng was delyuered vpon holy Roode day in harueſt, and soon after he beclepd Oxynford wyth a stronge syege, from the tyme of Mychelmasse vnto the season of Crystemas / at whyche tyme and season the empresse vsed a new gyle for constraynte and neceſsyte of vytayle.

In that tyme was great plente of snow fallen vppon the grounde / and the frost was therwyth so great, that Thamys wyth other great ryuers were then frosen ouer / so that man & horse myght passe ỹ water vppō the yse. The empresse then constrayned of nede as before is sayd, apparayled her and her companye in whyte clothynge, whych a farre of apered lyke the snow / and so vpon a plumpe goyng to gyther as nere as they myght escaped the daunger of theyr fone / & so came to walyngforde. And thens in processe of tyme she wyth a small companye departed, and retourned fynally into Normandye vnto her husbande.

So soon as the empresse was thus departed from Orenforde, the town was yelden vnto ỹ kynge / where the kyng had mich of the empresse stuffe as wel harnes as other stuffe of houſholde. Thē he entendyd to haue pursued her. But tydyngs were brought vnto hym, ỹ Ranulfe erle of Chester wyth an hoste of walshmen was comynng towarde hym. But by medyacyon of frendes thys Ranulfe in the ende to the kynge was reconcyled, and was wyth hym agreed.

About this tyme and season as yt is testyfyed of dyuerse authours / the Jewes vpon Ester euyn crucyfyed a chylde named wyllyam, in the cytye of Norwyche. And in the tyme of Henry the second, about ỹ. vi. yere of his reygn as sayth Policronicon,

they crucified an other at Glouceter.

In the xvii. yere of his reygn/kyng Stephan was agayne crowned at Lyncolne. And soon after he toke frō Ranulphe erle of Chester the castell of Lyncolne.

Robert erle of Glouceter made also newe warre vppon the kynge/ & had the better of the kynge at wyltone, so that the kynge was lyke to haue fallen in Robertys daūger. But yet the kynge escaped wyth myche payne. And there was taken a baron of the kynges named syr willyam Martel, for whose delyuery the kynge gaue after to the sayde erle the castell of Shyrbourne. And that done ꝑ sayd erle Robert began to foūde a stronge castell at Faryngdone. wherof the kynge beynge enfourmed, assembled his knyghtes and sped hym thyther warde/ by meane wherof the worke was for that tyme empeached & let.

In the .xv. yere of the reygne of kynge Stephan/ the ryuer of Thamys was so strongely ouerfrosen, that horse and carte passed ouer vpon the yse.

In the .xvi. yere/ Ranulphe erle of Chester dyed, that was surnamed Gercyous, and was the .iiii. erle after the conqueste/ and his sonne Hughe was erle after hym, which was a mā of great strength and vertue. And in the same yere, as wytnessyth Guydo and other / dyed Geffrey Plantagenet husband of Wolde the empresse. After whose deth, Henry short mantell that was the son of the sayde Geffrey and Wolde/ was made duke of Angeous & Normandye. The which in few yeres after maryed Elyanour the doughter of the erle of Poytow/ the whych Elyanour was before maryed vnto Lewys kynge of Fraūce, and from hym deuorced for nerenes of blood, when he hadde receyued of her .ii. doughters named Mary and Alys, as wytnessyth the frenche cronycle. And so this Henry was erle of Angeous by his fader, duke of Normandy by his mother, & erle of Poytowse by his wyfe.

It was not longe after, that Eustace the sonne of kynge Stephan wyth ayde of the Frenche kyng, warred vppon Henry duke of Normandye / the whyche after some wryters was ymagyned by Stephan his father, to the entent to let or stop hym ꝑ he shuld not come into England to clayme his enherytaunce. But duke Henry defended hym so knyghtly, ꝑ the sayde Eustace wanne therby lytle honour or prokyte.

An old cronycle sheweth, that kyng Stephan entended to haue crowned the sayde Eustace his sonne kyng of Englande by his dayes / but the bysshoppes of Englande refused ꝑ dede by cōmaundement of the pope.

In the .xxvii. yere/ the kynge layd syege vnto the castelles of Newebery, of walyngforde, and of warwyke or warwell / the whyche hadde ben kepte by the empresse frendes from the tyme of her departyng vnto that daye, and hoped of rescous by Henry duke of Normandy. But ꝑ kynge then wan the castellys of Newebery and of warwell / and walyngforde defended the holders tyl the cōmyng of Henry the duke. The whyche in the ende of ꝑ sayde yere wyth a great armye entred Englande / and fyrste wanne the castell of Walmysburye. And thens he yode to London / and wanne the towre, as myche by Polycy and by fayre pmyse as by strēgth. And suche stuffe of vytayle and armoure as he fande therin / he sent to walyngforde. And that done he wēt to the towne of walyngforde/ & wan such holdes as were there about.

Then kyng Stepan wyth his power drewe towarde the duke / and fynally

nally by meane of medyatours, as Thybaude archbyshoppe of Cauterbury and other / both prynces to comon of peace, met nere vnto ỹ water of Uryn or Urn. But as fast as some laboured to haue peace, so fast other laboured to haue warre / so that at that communacacyon the peace was not concluded.

After the kynge and the duke were departed / the kynge yode towarde Eppiswyche in Suff. And the duke toke the way to Sewelbury / where he wan the castell of the sayde town. From thens the duke wente to Nothyngham and wan the towne. wherfore the soldyours that helde the castell, seynge that the towne toke pyte wyth the duke / brake out vppon the nyght, and fyred the town and brent a great parte therof.

In this while dyed and was drowned Eustace the sonne of kynge Stephan / and was buried at Feuersham in Kent in the abbay that his father before had buylded.

Thybaude archbyshop of Caunterbury left not to labour & conclude ỹ peace betwene ỹ kyng & the duke / & endeuored hym selfe therin so dylygently, wyth the assystence of other, that in the yere folowynge the peace was cõcluded vppon dyuerse condycyons. wherof one was, that ỹ kyng shulde contynue as kynge durynge his lyfe / and immedyatly after ỹ conclusion of this peace, the sayd Henry shuld be proclaymed in all the chefe cytyes and townes of Englande for heyr apparant, & be kynge after the deth of the sayde Stephan / and that the kynge shulde take hym for hys son of adopcyon and ryghtefull heyr vnto the crowne. To the whyche couenaũtes iustly to be holden / ỹ kyng was fyrste swore, and after his lordes spyrytuall and temporall / and so yode bothe to London, where they were royally receyued. And when ỹ kyng had feested the duke, and gyuen to hym ryche gyftes / he toke leue of the kynge, and so returned into Normandye, as affyrmeth the sayde authour the Floure of hystoryes. Howe be yt the cronycle of England sayth, that the accorde was made vpon dyuysyon of the lande betwene theym / that is to meane that both shuld reygne to gyther, and eyther of them to enioye halfe the lande. But how that dyuysyon was made, or whych parte of the lande euerych of them shulde hold / no mẽcion therof is made. And the former accorde shuld be as abue is sayde, concluded .viii. days folowynge the Epyphanye of our lorde in the towne of Drenford. And ỹ kyng dyed in the moneth of October folowyng, when he had reygned .xviii. yeres full and odde monethes / and was enterred in th eforsayde abbay of Feuersham.

Of dyuers authours as Ranulfe and other / yt is recorded that thys Stephan lyued in great veracyon and trouble all the terme of hys reygne. It is sayde also that thys Stephan maryed Wolde or Mawde the doughter of Mary / the whyche was the doughter of Henry the fyrst, and countesse of Boloyne / by whome he claymed the tytle to be crowned, as by the yonger doughter of Henry the fyrst / and Henry shorte mantell claymed by the elder. But after most certenty of wryters / this Stephan was sonne of Eustace erle of Boloyne, and of Mary syster vnto Wolde that was maryed vnto Henry the fyrste / whych Wolde and Mary were doughters of Margarete wife of Malcolyn kyng of Scottes / whyche Margaret was syster to Edgare Ethelynge, and doughter of Edwarde the outlawe, that was the sonne of Edmunde Ironsyde. Then

the eldeſt ſyſter Wolde, bare Wolde the empreſſe by Henry the fyrſte. And Wolde ꝑ empreſſe doughter of Henry the fyrſt/hadde by her ſecond huſbande Geffrey Plantagenet Henry the ſeconde. And ſo by Henry ſhorte mantell or Henry the ſeconde, returneth the bloode of the Saxons to the crowne of Englande, and ſo it dyd by Stephan/ but moſte conuenyently by Henry the fyrſt, as by the dyſſent of his mother. By whych reaſon yt foloweth, that the blood of willyam conquerour continued but.lxx. yeres/yf it be accompted from ꝑ fyrſt yere of wyllyam Conquerour, vnto the laſte yere of Henry the fyrſte.

Thys kynge Stephan at the requeſt of Wolde hys wyfe/buylded in the yere of grace.xi.hundred.xl, ꝑ abbey of Coggeſhale in Eſſex, and ſet therin whyte mũkes. Alſo about the ſame tyme he founded the abbay of Feuerſham in Kent /where he nowe corporally reſteth. And the thyrde he founded in Furneys in Lancaſhyre/ and all he garnyſhed wyth munkys of Cyſteaux order/ & dyed as before is ſayde wythout yſſue of his body.

Francia.

THE.CCXXXIIII. CHAPITER.

LEwys the.viii. of that name, & ſon of Lewys ꝑ great began his reygn ouer the Frenche men, in ꝑ yere of our lorde.xi.hundred & .xxxvi / & ꝑ fyrſt yere of Stephan then kyng of Englande. This alſo is called the yonger Lewys/ in whoſe begynnynge Johannes de tẽporibus dyed. Thys Johñ was ſomtyme a ſquyer in the houſe of Charlys the conquerour/the whyche lyued ouer.iii. hundred yeres, for whyche cauſe he was named Johñ of tyme, as he ꝑ myght remẽber thinges done of longe tyme paſſed. This Lewys at ꝑ tyme of his fathers deth, was in the countrey of Guyan, for to receyue the dower of his wyfe Elyanour, as before in the ſtorye and ſeconde chappter of kyng Stephan is touched. But when he harde of ꝑ deth of his father/he ſped hym into Fraũce. where after the neceſſaryes for the weale of his realme ordeyned/ he maryed his wyues ſyſter named Alys, vnto Arnolde erle of Vermendoze. After whyche maryage ſolempnyſed / tydynges were brought vnto hym, that the cryſten people beynge in the holy lande as warryours vppon the Turkes and Saraſyns, were dyſtreſſed and ouerthrowen / and dyuerſe ſtronge holdes from them taken and wonne. wherfore by the exhortacyon of that holy mũke Bernarde, whych at this day is called ſaynt Bernard / ꝑ ſayd Lewys, wyth alſo Conradus the.iii. of that name then emperour of Almayne, wyth Alphon then kynge of Spayne, wyth dyuerſe other nobles of Fraunce & other prouynces/ toke vpon them the croſſe, and prouyded for the expedycyon of that iourney, in the.iiii. yere of hys reygne after ſome wryters. But of the takyng of hys iourney dyuers writers holde diuers oppinyons/ ſo that the doute reſteth betwene the yere of our lord.xi. hundred & .xl, and the yere of.xi.hundred and.l.

when all thynges were redy for that iourney/ the kynge, the quene, wyth the floure of the chyualry of Fraũce ſet forthwarde vppon that iourney/ and came in proceſſe of tyme vnto Conſtantyn the noble/ where he met wyth Conradus the emperour, and Alphons kynge of Spayne. whom the prynce Emanuell then emperour of

rour of Constantyne the noble receyued ioyfully / and made to theym by his outwarde contenaunce ioyynge and frendely chere/and promysed vnto theym ayde in that iourney bothe of vitayll and also for gydes for the nerte and surest waye. But he contrary to his promyse dyd dysapoynte theym, and nothynge ayded theym. For he delyuered vnto theym meale myngeled wyth lyme, wherof grewe myche harme to the crysten hoste after. And also he assygned vnto them suche gydes, as brought them into places and coūtreys of sterylyte and other daunger / so that hastely the Frenche kyng wyth great dyffyculte and losse of his men, came vnto the cytye of Danas, and beclesed yt with a stronge syege / the whych he assauted and enpayred very sore, and was lykely to haue wonne yt, yf he had assauted ẏ place styll where he began. But by counsayll of some false crysten men, the whyche as wytnesseth Peter Dystroye and other had taken mede of the Turkes / the kynge by theyr counsayll remoued the ordynaunce from the weker place vnto ẏ strōger. where after dyuers assautes made/the kyng conceyued well ẏ he was dysceyued. A cause of this treason as sayth ẏ forsayde Peter was this. The erle of Flaūdres, which by dyuerse experymētes saw that the cytye was lyke to be goten/ made supplycacyon to the kynge and the lordes, that he myghte haue the rule of the cytye at suche tyme as yt were wonne / the which to hym was graūted. wherof beynge aduertysed dyuerse Surryons of ẏ coūtrey borne, dysdayned that a straunger shuld be lorde of theyr enheritaunce/ and for that condescēded and agreed to that treason, by mean wherof the crysten prynces loste theyr trauell.

Then the crysten prynces seynge ẏ they were thus deluded/ toke theyr aduyce howe they myght contynewe theyr pylgrimage vnto the holy cytye of Hierusalem. But in this counsayl sourded and quykened so many opynyons / that eche was contrarious vnto other. By mean wherof the emperour was so dyscontented/ that he toke leue of the Frenche kynge and other, and so returned into hys own countrey. But the Frenche kynge tarryed there in that costes a yere after / and dyd there but lytle worthye any memory. All beyt of this vyage the frenche boke maketh a great & longe processe, touchynge the wynnyng of the cytye of Anteoche / wyth hys beynge and counsayllys keppynge wyth in Hierusalem, & other thinges there rehersed. But for I se the mater dysagreable to other wryters, and also thynke that myche therof is fayned/ I therfore passe yt ouer, howe be yt that to some persones suche fablys ben full pleasaunte to here. wherfore all suche I remytte vnto the sayde frenche cronicle/ & somwhat I shall folowe the authour Gyrald⁹, ẏ which wyth other testyfyen, that Lewys in his returne towarde Fraunce wared syke for ẏ long forberyng of his wife. wherfore by thaduyce of phisycyons & also of bysshops/ he was coūsayled to take a wenche because his wyfe was so farre from hym. But ẏ kyng wythstode that counseyll/and sayde that hym hadde bene leuer to be syke and dye of goddes hande/ then to lyue in spouse brek kynge, & offende hys lawes. And so the kyng put hym selfe to the mercy of god and receyued helth shortly after. Also it is told of hym that he vsed to faste euery fryday brede and water/ and by his famylyers he was counsayled that he shulde leue that faste for wekynge of hym selfe/ & fede a hundred of poore men euery fryday, the whyche vnto god

good bishops

A kynges chastyte.

god ſhuld be myche moze acceptable. To this he anſwered and ſayde, we wold gladly fede ſo many pooze men oz mo/ but our faſtynge woll we not breke. Foz wythout the profyte that yt doth vnto the ſoule, yt profyteth alſo right myche to the body. Foz the purgacyon and reſte of one daye, helpeth myche to put of the ſuperfluyte of the other / and alſo yt maketh the ſharper apetyte.

when Lewys was retourned into Fraunce/ foz what happe yt is of the frenche cronycle made doutefull, he was from Elyanour hys wyfe deuoz ced, of the whych he hadde receyued befoze.ii. doughters as befoze is tou ched/ the whyche in proceſſe of tyme folowynge, was maried vnto Henry duke of Nozmandy. whych maryage was a new occaſyon of the warre be twene Englande and Fraunce. Foz the landes of Poytowe, wyth Gaſ coyne and Guyan, Lewys claymed by his fozmer poſſeſſyon, & Henry by reaſon of the maryag of ỹ ſayd Elya nour, as heyz to the ſayde landes. Of the whyche warre ſhalbe ſhewed in the ſtozy of ỹ ſayde Henry folowyng. After whyche deuozce thus made / kynge Lewys maryed the yongeſte doughter of the kynge of Spayne that was named Cũſtaunce/ and ſhe dyed of her fyrſt chylde. Then foz ſo myche as kynge Lewys hadde none heyz male/ by coũſayll of his barony he maryed the thyrd wyfe, the whych was the yongeſte doughter of Thy baude erle of Bloys, & was named Alys. This ſayde erle dyed/ and left after hym.iiii. ſonnes and.v. dough ters. The eldeſt ſonne named Henry was erle of Troys / the ſeconde na med Thybaude was erle of Bloys/ the thyrd named Stephan was erle of Sancorum oz Sauncozer/ and ỹ fourth named wyllyam was archbyſ ſhoppe of Raynes. The eldeſte of the doughters was duches of Bur goyne/ the ſeconde was counteſſe of Barre/ the thyrde was maryed fyrſt to the duke of Duell, and after to a knyght named ſyr william de Goer, the fourth was counteſſe of Perche/ and the fyfte as befoze is ſayd quene of Fraũce, whych was a woman gar nyſhed wyth many vertues as the ſtorye declareth.

THE.CCXXXV. CHAPITER.

In proceſſe of tyme after the ſo lemniſacyon of this maryage/ complaynte was brought befoze the kynge of the erles of Clermoũt and Puy oz Pupll, ſonne of the duke be foze reherſyd, and of the erle of Blo met/ that they ſhuld ſpoyle and waſt the chyrches and landes to the ſayde chyrches belongynge. Foz the which dedys the kynge commaunded the ſayd.iii. erlys to warde/ but not with out warre and ſhedynge of blood.

And after the ſubduynge of ỹ ſayd thre erlys/ a knyght oz great man of myght called wyllyam ỹ erle of Cha lon, wyth a company of tyrauntes aſ ſembled foz to robbe and ſpoyle the chyrche of ſaynte Peter of Cluny in Burgoyne. wherof herynge the preſ tes and mynyſters of the chyrche/ to the entent to mytygate & to appeace the cruelty of the ſayde tyraũtes, dyd vpon them the oznamentes of ỹ ſayd chyrche/ and yode agayne them with proceſſyon, wyth a great companye them folowynge of the people of the towne and the countrey there about, in peſeable and charytable wyſe. But when the ſayde tyrauntes ap proched vnto the ſayde cõpany/ with out compaſſyon and pyty, as turkes ranne vppon cryſten men, oz wyth leſſe Pytye/ ſo ranne they vppon the preſtes and other, and ſpoyled them of all the ſayde oznamẽtes/ and ſlew

of that

of that cõpany to the nomber of.v.hũ dred or mo/ & after spoyled the sayde chyrche, of suche stuffe as was therin lefte. It was not longe after or kynge Lewys had wyttynge of this cruell dede. wherfore in auengynge the chyrche/ he gatheryd a conuenyent power and spedde hym thyther. But the sayde wyllyam erle of Chalon herynge of the kynges cõmynge, fled ỹ coũtrey / so ỹ the kyng myght haue no certayne knowlege where he became. wherfore the kyng entred and seased his landes, and gaue the moyty therof to ỹ duke of Burgoyn as chefe lorde of that soyle / and that other halfe he gaue vnto the erle of Neuers, to whose auncetry in tyme passed the sayd moyty apperteyned. And that done he commaunded inquyry to be made of his accessaryes/ the prebensons or prebendars of the whyche he punyshed by dyuerse maner of tormentes and dethes, to the great contentacyon of the countrey.

when the kynge hadde thus fynished this vyage and was returned into Fraunce/ soon after was knowlege brought vnto him, that the Burgonyons & men of the towne of Verdeley, rebelled agayne the hed chyrch or abbay of that towne / and entẽdyd to haue done some vylany to the abbot and munkes of the same/ wherfore the kynge spedde hym thyther in all haste. But for theyr sauergarde the munkes were compelled to forty fye the chyrche, and to defende them by force of armys / so that betwene them and the Burgonions many an arbalaster and stone was shot & cast. And for the kynge myght not so hastly furnyshe hym of his soldyours/ he therfore sent vnto the erle of Neuers by whose meane as to the kyng was shewed this ryot began/ commaundynge hym that he shuld se this ryot appeased, and that the chyrch of Verdeley were restored of suche harmys as to theym was done by the inhabytauntes of the towne. But of thys cõmaundement the erle set but lytle/ so that the burgeses perseuered in theyr errour. wherfore the abbot sente agayne to the kynge / besechyng hym of his moste gracyous ayde and socoure. Then the kynge herynge of the erles dysobedyence, was therwyth greatly dysplesyd/ and suspected ỹ erle to be partye in the cause, & sped hym ỹ faster thetherwarde. But when the erle was enformed of the kynges cõmynge he somdeale feryd/ and mette wyth the kynge at a place called Mozet, and there demeaned hym in suche wyse, that the kyng for gaue his offense. Then he promysed that the kynges pleasure shulde be fulfylled in all thynge as he hadde before cõmaunded, wyth more as yt lyked hym to dyuyse. Vppon whych promyse so made / he commaunded that the Burgonyons shulde fyrste refrayne theym of that rebellyon agayn the chyrch/ and that they shuld newly be swore to be obedient vnto the abbot and vnto hys successours as theyr pdecessours had ben/ & ouer that for the hurtes & harmys ỹ they had done to the place at that season, they shulde paye to the sayde abbot and couẽt.ix. thousand sous. A sous is in value after sterlyng money. i.ỗ. ob/ so that.ix. thousand sous amounteth in sterlyng money.iii.hundred & lxxb.pounde. After whych ende thus made / the kynge retourned into Fraunce.

It was not longe after, that ỹ kyng receyued of quene Alys hys wyfe a sonne, and named yt Philyppe. But for ỹ kyng Lewys had made many pylgrymages, and vsed many ways of charyte, in gyuynge of almes and otherwyse, for to haue a sonne to be his heyre/ therfore he surnamed this

chyld

chylde A dieu done, a chyld gyuen of god. Then thys Lewys for the intollerable dedes of the Jewes whi che in these dayes had great inhabytynge wyth in the lande of Fraūce, & vsed vsery & sleynge of Crysten chyldren/he ponyshed many by deth, and many he banyshed his lande/but yet many remayned.

Of this Lewys dedes is lytle more cronacled/ excepte when his son Philyppe was of the age of .xiii. yeres, his fader caused hym to be crowned, and resygned to hym all the rule of the lande / and dyed the yere folowynge at Parys in the moneth of October, in the yere of grace. xi.hūdred and.lxxix. By whyche reason he reygned, to reken from his faders deth to his owne, vppon.xliii.yeres/ and was rychely enterred by ỹ meane of his last wife at the monastery of Barbell / the whyche he founded in hys yonge days. After whose deth ỹ sayd quene Alys adorned his sepulture in the moste rychest maner, wyth gold, syluer, and precyous gemmys/ vppon whose tombe was graued these two versis folowyng, as a counsayll left vnto his sonne Philyppe.

Nunc superos tu, qui super es successor honoris
Degener es, si degeneris a laude prioris.

whyche versys are to be vnderstanden as after foloweth.

Nowe take good hede, thou that doest ouer lyue,
Hym that in honoure and vertue dyd excelle.
Se thou alter not, nor thy selfe deprave/
But folowe hym, which was of honoure the well.
For yf thou do not / men shall of the tell,
Thou arte degenerate and growen out of kynde/
Thy progenytours laude haupnge nothynge in mynde.

Anglia.

THE. CCXXXVI. CHAPITER.



Henry the second of that named, & sonne of Geffrey Plātagenet erle of Angeou, and of Wolde ỹ empresse doughter of Henry ỹ first, began hys reygn ouer the realme of England, in the moneth of October, the yere of our lorde god .xi.hundred and.lv/ and.ỹ xix. yere of Lewys the viii. then kynge of Fraunce. Thys Henry was somdeale redde of face, & brode of breste, shorte of body, & ther wyth fatte / the whych to aswage he toke the lesse of metes and drynkes, and exercysed myche huntynge. He was resonable of speche and well lettered & orped, and also noble in knyghthode, wyse in counsayll, and dred to myche distenyes. He was also free and lyberall to straūgers, and harde and holdynge from hys kamplyers & seruauntes. And whome he loued enterely or hated/harde it was to turne hym to the contrary. He was slowe of answere, vnstedfaste of promyse, gyltfull of dede, open spouse breker, hamour of holy chyrch, and alwayes vnkynde to god. He also loued reste and peace, to the ende he myghte the more folowe hys delectacyon & pleasure/ wyth mo vyces rehersed by Gyralde, the whyche for lengthy I passe ouer. This Henry yet, as wytnessyth Ranulfe, was not all bareyn of vertues. For he was of so gret courageousnes, that he wolde often say that all the world suffysyth not to a corageous harte. And he encreasyd hys heritage so myghtly, that he wanne Irlande by strength/ and toke Wyllyam kynge of Scottes, and ioyned that kyngdome to his owne. From

the

the ſuthe Occean to the noꝛth plandes of Oꝛkeys/ he cloſed all the landes as yt were vnder one pꝛyncypate/ and ſpꝛadde ſo largely hys empꝛe, that men rede not of none of hys pꝛogenytours that hadde ſo many pꝛouynces and countreys vnder theyꝛ domynyon and rule. Foꝛ beſyde the realme of Englande/ he hadde in hys rule Noꝛmandy, Galcoyn, and Guyan, Angeou and Chynon. And he made ſubiecte to hym Aluerne and other landes. And by hys wyfe, he obteyned as her ryghte the mountes and hyllys of Spayne called montes Pyꝛany. Of the whyche wyfe Elynoure by name, deuoꝛced, as befoꝛe ys ſayde, from the viii. Lewys kynge of Fraunce/ he receyued .vi. ſonnes and thꝛe doughters. Of the ſonnes fyue were named wyllyam, Henry, Rycharde, Godfrey, and Johñ. The eldeſte of the maydens hight Nolde oꝛ Maude, and was maryed to the duke of Saxon/ the ſeconde Elyanoure to the kynge of Spayne/ and the thꝛd named Jane, to wyllyam kynge of Scycyle.

Thys Henry was pꝛoſperouſe in hys begynnynge, and vnfoꝛtunate in hys ende, and ſpecyally in the laſt fyue yeres of hys reygne. Foꝛ in the fyꝛſt of thoſe fyue yeres, his ſtrength beganne to mynyſhe/ the ſeconde yere he loſte a vyage in Jrlande/ the thꝛde he loſte Aluerne agayne the kynge of Fraunce/ the fourth yere he loſte Butyꝛycau/ and the fyfte yere he loſte the cytye of Cenomenea and Turon, wyth many holdes to theym belongynge.

Thys Henry the ſeconde aſcertayned of the deth of Stephan/ ſpedde hym into Englande/ and was crowned the ſondaye befoꝛe Cryſtemaſſe daye of Theobalde archbyſhoppe of Caunterbury in weſtmynſter chyꝛch.

The fyꝛſte yere of hys reygne he ſubdued Jrlande. And ſoone after Thomas Beketh, whyche after was byſhoppe of Caunterbury, was made chaunceller of Englonde. This kynge caſte downe dyuers caſtellys, that befoꝛe in tyme of kynge Stephan were buylded/ other foꝛ dyſpleaſure of the owners, oꝛ ellys foꝛ the fere they ſhulde be ſtrengthed agayne hym. And alſo he banyſhed many of the loꝛdes and gentylmen, that kynge Stephan hadde in hys fauoure.

Aboute the thꝛde yere of hys reygne in the moneth of October, were ſene in the fyrmament two ſunnys/ and in the mone was ſene a redde croſſe. But of thys wonder ſheweth the authoure of Cronica cronicarū/ and ſayth that aboute thys tyme in Jtaly in the moneth of Nouember, appered thꝛe ſunnys by the ſpace of thꝛe owꝛes in the weſte/ and the yere folowynge appered thꝛe monys, whereof the myddle mone hadde a redde croſſe ouerthwarte the face. Whyche there ys noted foꝛ a pꝛodygy oꝛ a token of the ſcyſme, that after fell amonges the cardinallys foꝛ elecyon of the pope Alexāder the thꝛd/ whyche ſcyſme by meane of the fyꝛſte Frederyke then emperoure, endured almoſte .xx. yeres.

Alſo aboute this tyme Adꝛyan the fourthe of that name was pope, an Englyſheman boꝛne in the towne of ſaynte Albon of whome is moꝛe declared in the begynnynge of the .xxii. chappter of the .vii. boke of Polycronycon.

Alſo in thys yere the kynge wente wyth a ſtronge armye into walys/ and after he hadde ſette that countrey in an oꝛder and quyet, he buyldyd a ſtronge caſtell at Rutlande,

and founded the abbaye of Balynge werke.

In the .vi. yere of hys reygne/ thys Henry maryed hys seconde son Henry, vnto the kynges doughter of Fraūce, that is to meane Lewys the viii/ whyche the sayde Lewys receyued of hys seconde wyfe named Constaunce, the doughter of the kyng of Spayne, as before ye haue harde in the seconde chappter of ỹ story of the sayd Lewys. This mayden was named Margaret. By reason of whych maryage, was appeased the warre that was begonne betwene Fraunce and Englande for the landes of Poytowe and other, the whyche kynge Henry helde by reason of hys wyfe. In ỹ whych warre mych harme was done/ and more wolde haue ensued, yf yt hadde not by thys meane haue ben agreed.

In the .vii. yere of his reygn, Theobalde archbyshoppe of Caunterbury dyed/ and Thomas Beket chauncellor of Englande was archebyshoppe after hym, of whome more shall folowe.

In the same yere kyng Henry with a stronge hoste rode to Scotlande/ and made so cruell warre vppon wilyam kynge of that lande, that lastely he was taken/ and dyd to the sayd Henry recompensacyon, in yeldynge vnto hym the cytye of Carlell, the castell of Bamburghe, the newe castell vpon Tyne, wyth dyuers other holdes/ and a great parte of Northumberlande, the whyche he hadde wonne from the borderers. And after fewtye and homage done by the sayde wyllyam vnto the kynge, and a certayne summe of money by hym promysed wythin .ix. monethes folowynge/ the kynge suffred hym to go at large. But an other authour sayth, that the kynge of Scottys was not taken/ but strongely besyeged in a towne or castell, so that fynally he was forced to agree to the forsayde couenauntes.

In the .viii. yere, the cytye of Cāterburye was fyred by neglygence, & a great part therof brente. And in that season, the archbyshoppe Thomas begaune to replye agayne ỹ kynges mynde for thynges that the kynge dyd exercyse agayn the liberties of the chyrche.

THE .CCXXXVIII. CHAPITER.



In the .ix. yere of hys reygne/ the kynge for dyuerse causes cōcernyng ỹ nedes of his realme, called a parliament at hys towne of Northampton. Durynge whyche parlyament/ dyssencyon fell betwen the kynge and Thomas archbyshop of Caunterburye, for dyuerse actes and ordinaunces that the kyng there procured, to passe agayne the lybertyes of holy chyrch/ the whych Thomas gaynstode and denyed. wherfore the kynge toke a great displeasure with Thomas/ in so myche that shortely after he was fayne to flee the lande/ and in processe of tyme spedde hym to Rome, where he complayned hym to Alexander the .iii. of that name then pope/ and there contynued, and in Fraunce, and in other places, in poore estate by terme of .vi. yeres and more. when kynge Henry hadde certayne vnderstandynge, that Thomas was thus departed out of hys lande/ he sealed hys ma

his maners and temporall landes in to hys hande / so that hys mouable goodes were spoyled and rauenyd amonge the kynges offycers.

In the .xiiii. yere of his reygne/ the kynge crowned Henry hys eldest sonne then lyuynge kynge of Englande at westmynster. whyche was done to the derogacyon or harme of the archbyshoppe Thomas, as yt is wytnessyd in hys legende / and for that doynge Roger archbyshoppe of yorke whyche crowned hym was accursed. But an other authour sayth that the kynge crowned Henry hys sonne, to the ende he myght haue ful power and authorzyte to rule thys lande and the people of the same, whyle hys father was occupyed in Normandye and other countreys, where hys landes laye.

In myche of thys season that thys blessyd man Thomas was thus banyshed the lande / the kynge sente ouer byshoppes and proctours, to complayne vppon hym to the pope/ for well nere all the bishoppes of Englande were agayne hym. And yf any toke hys parte, they durste not speke for the displeasure of theyr temporall lorde/so that this blessed man defended the quarell of the chyrche alone.

In the .xvi. yere of ỹ reygne of kyng Henry/Lewys the kynge of Fraũce, agreed kynge Henry and the archbysshoppe, the kynge then beynge in Normandye. Vppon whyche agrement thys blessyd man came to hys owne chyrche of Caunterbury / and there soiourned, sente for such persones as had spoyled and taken perforce the goodes of the chyrche/ aduertysynge theym by sayre meanes to restore the sayde goodes, and to be reconcyled to the chyrche as trewe crysten men shulde. But when he sawe that he myght not reconcyle theym by fayre meanes/he then vsed compulsaryes, and denounced them accursed but if they restored the goodes of the chyrche by a certayne day. wherewyth the partyes beynge agreued / sayled ouer to the kynge into Normandye/ and shewyd vnto hym greuous complayntes, and more greuouse then the cause or mater requyred. For the whych, the kynge which hadde not yet quenched the bronde of malyce in hys harte the whyche he bare agayne thys holy man, gaue lyght credence vnto those complaynres, and was sore & feruẽtly amoued agayne the holy man Thomas / in so myche that vppon a daye herynge the complayntes of this blessyd mannes aduersaryes, he sayd in oppẽ audyence of hys knyghtes, that yf he had any good knyghtes about hym, he had ben aduẽged of that traytour longe or that tyme. At the tyme of whyche wordes vtterynge/ was present syr wyllyam Bryton, syr Hugh Morvyle, syr wyllyam Tracy, and syr Regnolde fytz Vrle. whych foure knyghtes, thynkyng that they shuld to theyr mayster do a synguler pleasure yf they slewe thys blessyd man/ hastely takynge adupse eche of them of other, of one wyll and myndetoke shyppyng and sayled to Douer/ and in all haste spedde theym vnto Caunterburye / where the .v. daye of Crist masse they executed theyr tyrannye, and martyred that blessyd archebysshoppe at that aulter of sayne Benet wythin hys owne chyrche, in the yere of our lordes incarnacyon a thousande, a hundred, and .lxx., as yt ys wytnessyd by these versys folowyng

Anno milleno, centeno, septuageno,
Anglorum primas, corruit ense Thomas.

The whych is to vnderstande in our

vulgare/ asthus.

¶The yere, to reken from Cryſtes incarnacyon,
A thouſande an hundzed and ſeuentye therunto/
The pzymate of Englande wyth great abomynacyon,
was ſlayne wyth ſwozde, Thomas that wolde not do
The kynges heſt, whyche erred the ryghte tro
Of the chyzche and lybertyes of the ſame.
wherby of honoure he wanne perpetuall fame.

After this cruell dede thus by the foure knyghtes done, wherwyth the kynge after ſome wzyters was not contented / the kynges foztune beganne to decreace and fall / ſo that he hadde after thys many aduerſyteys, where befoze he knewe not of lyke trouble.

In the .xvii. yere of his reygne, the kynge made a iourney into Irland/ where wyth great trauayle he ſubdued the Iryſhe. And after wyth helpe of the pzymate and byſhoppe of Arnache, he reformed the maner of the dwellers and people of that countrey, and that in thze thynges ſpecyally. Fyzſte in rulynge and ozderynge of the chyzche by the curates, & how they ſhuld ozder theyz dyuyne ſeruyce, and mynyſter the ſacramente of matrymonye as yt was in Englande and other cryſten regyons. The ſeconde was, how that the laye people ſhuld behaue theym to theyz curates, and what wyſe they ſhulde paye and offer to god theyz tythes. The thyzde was foz makyng of theyz teſtamentes. Thys was ozdeyned that euery man ſhulde make hys laſte wyll in p̄ſence of his neyghbours / oz at leſte cauſe yt to be rede in theyz pzeſence. And fyzſte he ſhuld reken what he ought/ and to ſette ſo myche of hys goodes. And yf he had a wyfe and chyldzen, then the reſydue of hys goodes hys dettys beyng payde to be deuyded in thze partes/ one to the wyfe, the ſeconde foz the chyldzen, and the thyzde to be ſpente foz the weale of the ſoule. And yf he hadde no chyldzen / then the halfe to hys ſoule, and that other halfe to his wyfe. And yf he hadde no wyfe noz chyldzen / then to dyſpoſe hys goodes at hys pleaſure.

In the returne of the kynge oute of Irlande / was a wonder thynge ſhewed vnto hym vppon whyteſondaye, whyche in the calender is called dominica in Albys. whē the kyng ſhuld take his hoꝛſe / ſodeynly appered vnto hym a man of pale & wanne colour barefote, and in a whyte kyzteell / the whyche bodely ſpake vnto the kynge in the langage of duche/ and ſayde hyz kynge, Criſte greetyth the wele, and hys mylde moder mary, with alſo Johñ Baptyſt and Peter/ and commaunde the ſtreyghtly that no Markettes, noz ſeruyle wozkes be holden vppon the ſondaye in the landes of thy lozdeſhyppe, oute take that longeth to dzeſſynge of mete. And yf thou do after thys byddynge / I aſſure the that all thynge that thou begynneſt to good entent oz of good purpoſe, thou ſhalt bzyng yt to good ende. The kynge lyked nothynge thys ſpeche/ and ſayd to the knyghte that helde hys bzydell, Aſke of thys choyle whether he haue dzemed all thys that he telleth. wherunto thys man anſwered, whyther I haue mette thys tale in my dreme oz not/ take thou hede well of my ſaynge. Foz and thou do not as I haue aduertyſed the, & amende thy lyfe/ thou ſhalte ſhoztely here ſuche

ſuche thynges that thou ſhalte be he up fore to thy lyues ende. The kyng toke all in game / and the man va-nyſhed ſodenly, that the kyng & his knyghtes wonderyd of hys departynge. wherof when the kynge was warned, both of hys fyrſte ſodenly appetynge, and of hys departynge/ the kynge ſette yt nere hys mynde, and entendyd to do ſome thynges af ter that mannys counſayll. But how yt was yt had no forwarde.

After that the bleſſed man Thomas was martyred/ the munkes by aſſent of the kynge, chaſe Rycharde pryour of Douer / the whyche was a man of euyll lyuynge, and waſted the goodes of ỹ chyrch inordynatly.

THE.CCXXXVIII. CHAPITER.

About the .xx. yere of the kynges reygne / he purchaſed a dyſpenſacyon for the vyage that before he hadde ſolempnely auowed before .ii. cardynallys, to go into the holy lande, and to ieoperde hys proper perſone agaynſt Cryſtes enmyes. The whyche dyſpenſacyon was graunted vppon one condycyon, that he ſhulde buylde thre abbays in Englande. In fulfyllynge wherof the kynge put oute of the howſe of wal tham ſeculer chanons / and ſet there in theyr ſtede chanons reguler. And for the ſeconde he auoyded the munkes oute of the houſe of Aumbryſbury/ and ſette there menchons that he hadde brought from beyonde the ſee. And for the thyrde he renewed courſely the charter houſe of wytham be ſyde Salyſbury. By whyche thre dedes he thought hym ſelfe excuſed of hys former promyſe.

Then beganne his ſonnes to make warre vppon hym, the whyche were ayded by the Scottyſhe kynge and the two erles of Cheſter and of Lyncolne. The cauſe of whyche warre was after the declaracyon of ſome wryters, for ſo myche as the kynge hadde empryſoned Elyanoure hys wyfe, and kepte that wenche Roſamounde agayne all good order. But other ſay yt was for certayne landes in Normandye / whyche by ayde of the Frenche kynge, Rycharde the.iii. ſonne of byrthe and ſeconde then lyuynge, wolde haue taken from hys father. Of thys warre ſpeketh nothynge the frenche cronycle.

Then as teſtyfyeth Ranulfe/ this innaturall warre endured by the terme of two yeres, to the great dyſturbaunce of the kynge and of hys realme / tyll the kynge wyth great deuocyon vyſyted the graue of the holy martyr ſaynte Thomas. After whyche pylgrymage was by hym fynyſhed / in ſhorte proceſſe after wylliam kynge of Scottes, and the two forenamed erlys of Cheſter and Lyncolne, were taken at the caſtell of Anwyke. But yet he lefte not the company of the forenamed Roſamunde/ to the whych wenche he hadde made an houſe of wonder workyng, ſo that no creature man or woman myghte wynne to her but yf he were inſtructe by the kynge or ſuche as were ryght ſecrete with hym touchynge that matter. Thys houſe after ſome wryters was named Labyrinthus or Dedalus worke or houſe, whyche ys to meane after moſte expoſytours, an howſe wroughte lyke vnto a knot in a garden called a maſe. But the common fame telleth, that laſtely the quene wan to her by a clew of threde

or ſylke/ and delte wyth her in ſuche maner, that ſhe lyued not longe after. Of the maner of her deth ſpekyth nothynge myne authoure / but when ſhe was dede ſhe was buryed at the howſe or monaſterye of Goddeſlow beſyde Oxenforde, with theſe verſys vppon her toumbe.

Hic iacet in tũba Roſa mũdi, ſed nõ roſa mũda.
Non redoſet ſed oſet, quæ redoſere ſoſet.

The whythe verſys, to our vnderſtandynge may thus as folowyth be englyſhed and expowned.

The Roſe of the worlde, but not the clene floure.
Is here now grauen/to whom bewtye was lent.
In thys graue full darke nowe ys her bowre,
That by her lyke was ſwete and redolent.
But now ẏ ſhe is frõ this lyfeblente/
Though ſhe were ſwete, nowe fowly doth ſhe ſtynke/
A myrrour good for all that on her thynke.

Longe tyme after the deth of the ſayde Roſamounde, in the ſayde abbaye was ſhewed a cofer of the ſayd wenches of the length of two fote/in whych apperyd fyghtynge geaũtes, ſtertlynge of beſtes, ſwymmynge of fyſhes, and flyenge of fowlys.

In the forſayde .xx. yere after the oppynyon of Guydo / the kynge had the ſeconde monicyon of mendynge of hys lyfe, by an Iryſhe man ẏ told vnto hym many ſecret tokens, whyche the kynge ſuppoſyd no man had knowen but hym ſelfe. But yet the kynge toke lytell hede therunto.

In the.xxii.yere of his reygne, after the forſayde takynge of ẏ Scottyſhe kynge and.ii.erlys/the.xi.day before Septẽber, wyllyam kynge of Scottys by aſſent of the lordes ſpyrytuall and temporall, dyd homage to kyng Henry at hys cytye of yorke. Where the ſayde wyllyam graunted by hys letters patentys, that he and his ſucceſſours kynges of Scotland, ſhuld make theyr homage and fydelyte vnto the kynges of Englande as often as they ſhalbe neceſſaryly requyred. And in ſygne and token of that ſubiectyon/the kyng of Scottes offered hys hatte & his ſadell vppon the aulter of ſaint Peter in ẏ chyrch of yorke. whyche for a remembraunce of that dede/the ſayd hat & ſadell were there kepte many yeres after. And ouer ẏ the lordes of Scotland ſwore, that if theyr kynge at any tyme wold withdrawe hym from allegeaunce / they wold all aryſe agayn hym, and be to hym as enymyes, tyll he were returned to his fayth & kepyng of his promyſe. And for the more ſtrẽgth of the ſayd cõpoſycyon, the kynge of Scottis came after to ẏ kyng Henries parlyament holden at Northãpton, and a nother ſeaſon into Normandye.

Ranulfe munke of Cheſter ſayth, that Lewys the. viii. of that name kynge of Fraunce / delyuered vnto kynge Henry a doughter of hys to haue in guydynge, and to haue ben maryed vnto Rycharde hys ſon/ the whyche after the deth of Roſamoũde he deflowred of her vyrgynyte. After whyche dede, as affermyth the ſayde authoure, the kynge was in wyll to haue wedded that damoyſell. For erpedicyon wherof he made great meanes ta Hugũcia a cardynall then bepnge in his land, that he wold make a dyuorce betwene hym and Elyanoure the quene. And thys he dyd, to the ende to haue the more fauoure of the Frenchemen, that by theyr ayde he myghte the better dyſheryte hys ſonnes. But he fayled of his purpoſe and alſo yt turned to hys owne harme. For by this meane, he cauſed the

ſayde

ſayde Rychарde hys ſonne to ſhewe all hys demeanour vnto the Frenche kynge / ſo that by hys informacyon vnkyndneſſe kyndled betwene them two / & therof enſued moꝛtall warre, as ſayth the englyſhe cronycle, and alſo Polycronycon. But of thys warre ſpeketh nothynge the frenche cronycle / noꝛ of none other durynge the lyfe of the ſayd Lewys after this daye, which dyed in the.xxiiii.yere of thys Henry. But the warre that was betwen the two kynges of England and of Fraunce / was betwene thys Henry and Phylyppe ſonne of thys Lewys, as after ſhalbe ſhewed.

About the.xxiiii.yere of thys kyng as wytneſſen dyuerſe wꝛyters / fell wonderfull wederynge and tempeſt of thunder in myddewynter tyme in Hampſhyꝛe and other places / by violence wherof a pꝛeſte amonges other was ſlayn. And in the ſomer folowynge about Mary Magdalene tyde, fell hayle of ſuche bygneſſe, ꝑ yt ſlew both men and beſtes. And about this tyme were the bonys of kynge Arture and his wyfe Gueynour founde in the vale of Aualon / whoſe here of the hed of the ſayde Gweynour was then hole and of freſhe coloure / but ſo ſoone as yt was touched, yt fell in powder. whyche bonys were tranſlated and buryed wythin the chyꝛche of Glaſtenburye / and were founden by a ſynger of geſtis vnder an holow oke .xv. fote wythin the grounde. whyche fyndynge and tranſlatynge is an obiecte to ꝑ fantaſtycall ſayeng of the walſhemen, that afferme hys commynge agayne to reygne as he befoꝛe dyd.

Then hadde kynge Henry the ſeconde monycyon by a knyghte called ſyꝛ wyllyam Cheſterby oꝛ Lyndeſey / the whyche warned hym ſpecyally foꝛ the refoꝛmacyon of.vii.artycles. The fyꝛſte was, that he ſhuld ſette better dylygence to the defence of holy chyꝛche / and maynteynynge of the ſame. The ſeconde, that he ſhulde ſe hys lawes executed, wyth better iuſtice then at thoſe days was vſed. The thyꝛd was, that he ſhuld ſurmyſe no mater agayn ryche men / and by that mean plucke from them theyꝛ landes & goodes. The fourth that he ſhulde reſtoꝛe all ſuche landes and goodes gotten by ſuche vnlawfull meanes oꝛ by any other. The fyfte, that he ſhuld foꝛ no mede tarye ryghtfull ſentence / but ſuffer the ryght to haue hys pꝛoceſſe. The vi, that he ſhulde ſe to the payment of hys ſubiectes foꝛ ſuche ſtuffe as was dayly taken to his vſe / & alſo to the payment of hys ſeruauntes and ſouldyours wages, whych dayly fell to robbynge foꝛ defaute. The.vii. and the laſte was, that he ſhulde in all haſte voyde the Jewys of hys lande, whyche dayly wꝛought great ſoꝛowe to his commons / and to leue theym ſomwhat to ſpende in theyꝛ iourney. But as he toke the other monycyons, ſo he toke thys / and cõtynued hys lyfe as he befoꝛe hadde done.

THE.CCXXXIX.CHAPITER.

IN the.xxviii. yere of his reygn after moſte wꝛiters, dyed Henry his eldeſte ſonne then lyuynge / ꝑ whych as befoꝛe is ſayde was crowned to the derogacyon of the martyꝛ ſaynte Thomas. And in thys yere / whyche ſhulde be the.iiii. yere of Phylyppe the ſeconde, oꝛ of Phylyppe ſurnamed Gyuen of god / the warre beganne betwene kynge Henry and hym. wherof was occa-

frendes / in so furyous maner ꝑ they rent wyth great ordenaunce dyuers places of the castell walles/ & in ꝓcesse threwe downe the rofe of a chãbre where the wyfe of the capptayne of the castell lay in her chyld bed, & so ferre put in fere, that the rulers of the towne and castell graũted to delyuer the towne & castell to ꝑ sayd syr Charles, wyth that they myghte departe with theyr lyues & goodes/ꝑ whyche offer to hys payne & charge he refused. For in shorte tyme after, syr Thomas of Agorñ an englysshe knyghte wyth a strõge company of archers & other sowdyours, rescowed the sayd towne & castell. And after lõge fyght and great daũger, as by lõge ꝓces is declared in the frẽche story/ꝑ sayd syr Thomas ~~toke the~~ sayde Charles de Bloys prysoner, and slewe many of hys lordes, as before is shortely touched in the ende of the.xxii. yere of kyng Edwarde. After whych victory thus opteyned, & hys prysoners put in suer keppynge, he toke ꝑ ordenaũce of the duke left in ꝑ felde wyth other pyllage, & put it wythin the towne & castell aforesayd. And for ꝑ pyllages and mẽ of the coũtre there about, had ayde the duke agayne the towne and castel/ therfore the sayd syr Thomas punysshed the sayd pyllages and rutalles by greuous fynes, & helde thẽ in great seruytude and daunger/ and ouer ꝑ slewe many of theym, & many they helde as drudges & captyues. And thys done the Englysshmen repayred agayne the walles and suche other places as were before tyme beten downe by force of the sayd syege & strengthed it in theyr best maner.

It was nat longe after ꝑ kyng Phylype at the requeste of the coũtre, sent thyder the lord of Caroñ wyth a stronge army/ to whome also great multytude of the people of that countre resorted. wyth whose ayde the sayd lorde assayled the sayd town & castell by.ii. dayes contynuell. But the Englysshmẽ defended them selfe vygurously/ and threwe vpõ theyr enmyes hote boylynge oyles and other gresys, with fyre coles & hote asshes, wherwith they greued theyr enemies paynfully.

Thus cõtynuyng the siege / meanes of treaty were offered and cõdyscended to yelde the towne, with condicyõ that they myght saufely depart with theyr lyues and goodes/ but the Frẽchemen and Brytons wolde nat to it be agreable. Than the assaute began of new. And the lord of Caroñ to encourage hys sowdyours, henge a purse and therein.l. scutes of golde vpon a sperys ende / and cryed wyth lowde voyce, that who that fyrste entred the towne, shulde haue the sayde l. scutes of golde. whan the ianuays or sowdyours of the cytye of Jeane and of the cytye of Italye, harde the promyse of theyr cheuptayne / a certayne of theym with longe pycarses and sharpe approched theym vnto ꝑ wallys/ and so demeaned them, that in lesse than.v. houres they mynded so the wall, that there fyll thereof as testyfyeth the sayde Frenche cronycle the lengthe of.l. fote. By reason wherof entred fyrste the Januays/ & after the hole hoste. The whych without compassyon or pyte slewe man, woman, & chylde that came in theyr waye, nat sparynge the chylder that souked vpon the mothers brestes / & spoyled and robbed the towne, euery man gettynge what he myght to his owne aduauntage. And whanne the Frẽchmẽ and Brytons had thus miserably slayne many Englysshmẽ, & also Brytõs & other inhabytaũtes of the towne/ they than assayled the castel to ꝑ which was fled vpõ.ii.C. & xl

Englysshmẽ

Englyshmē. After dyuers assautes it was offered by the sowdyours of the castell, ꝑ they wolde yelde the castell theyr lyues and goodes saued. And finally it was agreed, theyr bodies only to departe, & to be cōueyed .x. miles vpon theyr waye towarde such place as they wolde appoynt. vpō ꝑ which appoyntement .ii. knyghtes Bryctons ꝑ is to saye syr Syluester de la Fulle and syr wyllm̄ de Stratton receyued them in theyr cotes, and cōueyed thē with great payne & nat without losse of some. For theyr enemies of ꝑ hoste caste stones at theym, and bete them so with theyr staues, that dyuers of theym dyed / & the remenaunt were brought nere vnto a castell than in the power of Englysshemen, named Quyntyne.

But whan the commōs of ꝑ town there nere, harde of the cōmynge of suche Englysshmen vnder sauf conduyt, the whiche before in the batayl of the roche of Arian where syr Charles de Bloys was taken, had slayne theyr lord, that is to meane the lorde of Quyntyne / anone they issued oute of the towne / and for they fonde lytel resystence in theyr guydes, they slew theym there excepte one, whych was capytayne of the Englysshmē / whych one of ꝑ sayd knyghtes caused to be set vpon hys horse, & so fledde frō the peryll. And whā the cruell Brytons had thus shamefully slayne the Englysshmen / they gadered ꝑ cariens vpon an heep, & suffered theym there so to lye, to ꝑ ende that beastes & foules myght deuoure them. And in shorte tyme after, ꝑ erle of Flaūdres by meanes of the Frēch kyng left the doughter of kynge Edwarde, and was maryed vnto the doughter of ꝑ duke of Brabant.

In the .xx. yere of Philyp / ꝑ town of Calays was goten, lyke as the circumstaūce thereof is declared in the xrii. yere of kyng Edward the thyrd. And in the same yere the mortalite or sykenes, whych after reygned in Englande reygned nowe feruentely in Fraunce, and moste specially in the cytye of Auynyon / by force wherof ꝑ thyrde parte of the people of ꝑ cytye dyed. And frome thens it came vnto saint Denys, and so vnto Parys. In which cooste it was so feruent, ꝑ there dyed in those .ii. townes ouer the nōbre of .lvi. M. within ꝑ space of .xviii monethes.

And in thys yere the dolphyne of Vyen named syr ymberte, solde hys dolphynage vnto the Frēch kyng / & became a freer at Lyon vpō the rosne of the ordre of the freer prechours or blacke freers.

In the .xxi. yere of thys Philyp / Charles the fyrste begotten sonne of Johñ duke of Normādy eldest sonne of thys Philip, toke possessyon of the sayd dolphynage of Vyen. And in the moneth of August folowyng, dyed ꝑ duchesse of Normādy and mother of the sayd Charles. And in the moneth of Decembre folowynge, dyed dame Jane quene of Fraūce & doughter of Robert duke of Burgoyn. And in thys yere was the treason wrought by syr Godfrey de Charny, to haue agayne wonne the towne of Calays / lyke as I to you before haue shewed in the .xxiiii. yere of kyng Edward ꝑ iii. And in ꝑ moneth of January next ensuynge & .ix. day of the same / kyng Philyp spoused hys .ii. wyfe Blaūche, somtyme ꝑ doughter of ꝑ quene of Nauerne lately dysceased, whyche was syster vnto the erle of Foyse. whyche espousayles were secretely done in the manour of Robert erle of Bray. And so the sayde kyng Philip was wydowe frome the .xii. daye of Decembre to the vnthe daye of January, whyche was by the space of xxviii. dayes. And vpon the .ix. day of

THE.CCXI.CHAPITER.



N the.xxxiiii. yere of the kynge/ Rycharde the erle of Poytowe arrered warre agayn kinge Henry hys father, & toke party with the Frenche kynge. By meane of the whyche warre/ all suche summys of money as were before gatheryd by dymys and otherwyse, for the helpynge of the croysye to be made in to the holy lande, by the sayde Rycharde and by many other nobles of the lande, were spente in the same innaturall warre/ wherfore the kynge sayled into Normandy with a stronge armye. But or the kynge were there landed/ the sayde Rycharde by helpe of the Frenchemen hadde wonne the cytyes of Towres, of Meaus, and also the castellys of Raoull and Gysours wyth other. At the laste the Frenche kyng Phylyppe the second, wyth the sayde Rycharde came vnto the cytye of Cenomanna/ entendynge to laye syege vnto the same. wherof kynge Henry beynge warned / sette the suburbes on fyre, bycause hys enmyes shuld in thē haue no socour. But the flame of the fyre was by the wynde dryuen into the cytye so sharpely, that the kyng was compelled to forsake yt. wherwyth ỹ kynge was so amoued / that in hys departynge from the cytye he sayde these wordes. For thou haste taken from me thys daye the cytye that I moste loued in the worlde, I shall acquyte the / for after thys tyme I shall bynome the that thynge, ỹ shuld most haue pleased the in me, whych ys myne harte.

After thys he loste more dayly/ so that hys enmyes preuayled strongely agayne hym.

It is rede of hym / that he shulde be at so great an after deale in thys warre/ that hastely he shuld put hym in the kynge of Fraunces mercy, his honoure and hys crowne reserued. But this is doutefull of credēce. For sure I am, yf the Frenche kyng had suche auauntage of hym / yt shulde not haue fallen throughe the boke, but haue ben regystred in the moste auauntynge maner/ where as in the frenche cronycle is touched no word of lyke mater. But trowth yt ys that fortune was to him contrary, in such wyse that wyth or for anger and impacyence, he fell into a feuer. wherof he lastely dyed in the castell of Conomeus or of Chynon in Normandye, in the moneth of July, when he had reygned .xxxiiii. yeres and .viii. monethes wyth oddes dayes / and was buryed at Fount Ebrade, wyth thys epytaphy vppon his tombe.

Sufficit hic tumulus, cui non sufficerat orbis.
Res brevis est ampla, cui fuit ampla brevis.
Rex Henricus eram: mihi plurima regna subegi.
Multiplicisq; modo, dux̄q; comesq; fui.
Cui satis ad votum non essent omnia terræ
Climita, terræ modo sufficit octo pedum.
Qui legis hæc, pensa discrimina mortis: & in me
Humanæ speculum conditionis habe.
Quod petis instante operare bonum, quia mundus
Transit, & incautos mors inopina rapit.

The whyche versys are thus myche to meane in sentence.

¶ Suffysyth nowe this graue, to whom all erthly thynge
Syffysyd not / my mynde so hyghe was sette.
Tyme that was shorte, my name wyde dyd spryngе/
whyche fame by deth is into shortenesse sette.
Kynge Henry was I called, no man I thought my bette.

whose

whose mynde sometyme all erth not
suffysed/
viii. fote of ground now hath my bo
dye comprysed.

Thou that thys redest / the parell of
deth, and in me
Thou mayste beholde the course of
euery wyght
That erthely is. wherfore prouyde
and se,
That thou well maye do, shortely do
yt, and tyght.
Defer not the tyme/for I ascertayne
the tyght,
The world is transytory/ and vnwa
rely men taketh
Cruell deth, from whome non estate
escapeth.

Gerardus Cambrens, whyche in
hys boke of dystynccyons sette oute
the lyfe of thys Henry/ sayth dredefull yt is to allege agayne hym that
maye putte a man oute of lande, and
to describe hym wyth many wordes, that may cryple a man wyth one
worde. wherfore yt were a notable
dede to tell the sothe of a prynces dedys, and offende the prynce in no
meane. But yet when the prynce ys
passed and gone / then men wyll take without fere, that before tyme they
spared for fere.

Then to folow the sooth, this kyng
Henry norysshed stryfe amonge hys
chyldern wyth all dylygence/ hoppyng
therby to lyue hym selfe in the more
reste. when men wolde aske of hym
when he wolde leue his great dedes/
he vsed to answere that the worlde
shulde fayle, or a courageouse harte
shulde cease of great dedes. He was
pereles in chyualry, in warre, and
in lecherye. He wedded Elyanoure
wyfe of Lewys kynge of Fraunce/
contrary to the commaundement of
hys father. For he hadde shewed to
hym that he hadde lyen by her, when
he was the sayde kynges stewarde.
He reygned .xxvi. peres somdeale
to hys worldely blysse, and foure peres somwhat to hys payne / but the
laste fyue peres to hys great trowble and sorow. Farthermore the sayd
Gerarde descryueth the progenye of
thys Henry/ whyche I ouerpasse because yt is so common.

Rycharde hys sonne wolde often
tell that wonder / and vsed to saye,
no meruayle though they greued the
peple that were comon of such kynd.
For of ỹ deuyll they came, and to the
dyuyll they shall.

It ys also redde of thys Henry,
that in a chaumber at wyndesore he
caused to be paynted an egle wyth
foure byrdes / wherof thre of theym
all raled the bodye of the olde egle,
and the fourth was cratchynge at
the olde eglys eyen. when the question was asked of hym what thyng
that pycture shuld sygnyfye/ yt was
answered by hym: thys olde egle
(sayde he) is my selfe/ and these. iiii.
eglys betoken my foure sonnes, the
whyche cease not to pursue my deth.
And specyally my yongeste sonne
Johñ, whyche nowe I loue moste/
shall most specyally awayte and imagen my deth.

Francia.

THE. CCXLI. CHAPITER.



Hylyp the seconde
of that name, surnamed Dyeu done or gyue of god,
and sonne vnto ỹ
viii. Lewys / beganne to reygne
ouer the realme of
Fraunce,

Fraunce, in the yere of our lorde. xi. hundred and .lxxix/ and the .xxiii. yere of Henry the seconde than kynge of Englonde. whyche sayde Phylyppe reygned somwhat of tyme by the lyfe of hys father/ which tyme is accompted vnto the reygne of hys father.

Thys in the fyrst yere of hys reygne, for the great enormytyes that the Jewes vsed wythin the realme of Fraunce/ as crucyfyenge of chyldren, and exercysynge of theyr detestable vsery: he after due proke made put the malefactours to dethe / and the other in auoydynge more daunger / he exyled and put clere out of hys realme.

This Phylyp also as before in the story of Henry the seconde is towched, excepted the sonnes of the sayde Henry to make warre vppon theyr father / by whyche meane thys Phylyppe gate many holdes and townes from the sayde Henry wythin hys duchy of Guyon. But after the deth of Henry / thys Phylyppe gaue ouer all the sayde holdes and townes, vnto Rycharde the eldeste sonne of the sayde Henry / and receyued of hym homage for the same. And as wytnessyth the French cronycle/ the sayd Rychard in token of obedyence, was present at the coronacion of the sayd Phylyppe. But ye shall vnderstande that than he was not kynge of Englande .x. yeres after. But yf yt so were that he were present at the sayd coronacyon/ yet was he duke of Guyon onely.

Aboute the thyrde yere of hys reygne/ Eraclius patryarke of Hierusalem came into Fraunce, and requyred ayde of thys kynge Phylyppe to wythstande the furye and persecucyon, whyche Saladyne prynce of Turkes hadde excuted and dayly contynued in the countrey of Palestina agayne the Crysten to the great destruccyon of theym and vndoyng of the countrey, and great leoperdye of the losynge of the holy cytye of Hierusalem. For thys the kynge assembled a great counsayll at hys cytye of Parys / where the sayde Eraclius made requeste to the kynge as before he hadde done to Henry the seconde. For he was in Fraunce in the yere of our lorde .xi. hundred .lxxx. and two / and in Englande he was in the yere of grace .xi. hundred .lxxx. and .vii. After whyche counsayll there so holden / yt was agreed that the kynge wyth ayde of the byshoppes and other of the spyrytualtye, shulde ayde the sayde patryarke / the whyche where sette forthe in all possyble haste. But after the reporte of Peter Dyrope, whyche made a recule or lytle boke of the wynnynge and losyng of Hierusalem / they with mo crysten prynces were dryuen by tempeste of the see vnto the porte of Damas / where vnder coloure of a fayned trewce, they were taken and caste the moste parte of theym in pryson.

And when kynge Phylyppe hadde thus delyuered the patryarke / he then gatheryd hys knyghtes and made an armye agayne Hugh duke of Burgoyne / the whyche at that season and tyme hadde beclypped the castell of Uergye wyth a stronge syege/ and hadde promysed not to departe thens, tyll such tyme as he had wonne that holde by appoyntement or otherwyse.

And for the defence of rescouse that myghte be made for the same / he hadde mãned foure castellys or townes there vnto adioynaunte, wyth great strength of men of armys. But

after

after the kynge was thyder comen wyth hys hoste, the sayde towrs were sone ouertourned/and ꝑ kynge wyth a certayne of hys people, of Guy capytayne of the sayde castell of Uergy was ioyously into the same receyued/and rendred to hym the castell, and became hys lege man. where wyth the sayde Hugh beynge sore amoued and dyscontented, seynge there he was dyspoynted of his purpose / departed thens wyth hys ordynaunce and people, and robbed and spoyled the coũtre there aboute/ sparynge nother chyrche nor howse of relygyõ/in so cruell and greuous maner, that the bysshoppes and abbottes of that partye of Burgoyne made pyteous request vnto the sayd Phylyp, that he of his specyall grace wolde ayde and socoure them and theyr chyrches agayne the tyranny of the sayde duke Hugh. The kynge beynge moued wyth thys pyteous requeste/made sharpe warre vppon the sayde Hugh / and at length wan from hym a stronge castell named Chastelone. where wyth all the duke was put to suche a studyall and fere that he was forsed to seche meanes of treaty and of peace. wherof the cõclusyon was, that he shulde paye vnto the chyrches before by hym hurted & harmed. xxx. thousande pownd. whyche conclusyon taken and suretye sette for the same / the kynge retorned vnto Parys. where the kyng so restynge hym a certeyne of tyme, and haupnge experyence of the intolerable and foule stenches that dayly grewe by the fylthe of the erthe and myre in the stretes, made prouysyon dylygently wyth ayde and helpe of the cytesens, whyche as than hadde londe wythin the cytye, that the stretes were shortely paued after. And at thys tyme whanne the cytye was thus paued, as affermen many authours / the name of it was chaunged from Lutesse or Lewcesse vnto Parysse.

THE. CCXLII. CHAPITER.

IN the. vii. yere of thys kynge Phylyp, as sayth the frẽche boke/Margarete syster vnto thys Phylyp, late wyfe vnto Henry late deceased, and eldeste sonne of Henry the seconde kynge at this day of Englande, was maryed vnto Belas kynge of Hungry.

In the. x. yere of thys kyng Phylyp/the cytye of Hierusalem was taken of Saladyne prynce of Egypte/ and Guy de Lesyngnan laste crysten kynge of that cytye, wyth the holy crosse was taken in the felde / whych after that daye came neuer into crysten mennes possessyon. Of thys sorowe & heupnesse worde was brought vnto kynge Phylyp, wyth requeste of ayde to reskue certeyne cytyes, as yet rested vnder the domynyon of the crysten / as Tyre, Tryple, and Antioch, wyth other small holdes. For sauegarde wherof many nobles of Fraunce toke vpon them the crosse/as the duke of Burgoyn, the erle of Flaunders, Theobalde erle of Blopes, the erle of Rochford, the erle of Champayne, wyth many other noble knyghtes / whyche for lengthe I passe ouer, and also the reporte of theyr dedys, for so myche as it cõcernyth nothyng the mater that I haue promysed to speke of.

In this iourney also kynge Phylyppe entẽded to haue gone / and for the same great taskes & dymys were leuyed throughe oute his realme, the

whyche to this daye are called Saladynes dymes. But the lette of this iourney as sayth the frenche cronycle was Rycharde duke of Guyan / and after his father Henry the seconde, that made warre vppon the Frenche kynge, as before is touched in the story of the sayd Henry. Duryng whyche warre the sayde Henry dyed, in the.xi yere of thys sayde Phylyppe.

About thys season and tyme / the Jewes whych by meane of great gyftes, had agayn purchased theyr dwellynge wythin the coūtrey of Fraūce, wherof a wedowe was lady and mastresse called Branous / in absence of the kynge toke a Crysten man, & surmysed agayne hym felonye and murder. For the whyche by fauoure of the sayde lady / the sayde Jewes set a crowne of thorne vppon the sayd crysten mannys hedde, and after scourged hym, and lastely in derysyon of Crystes relygyon and despyte of the same, crucyfyed the same persone. wherof when the kynge was enfourmed / in all haste he sent into the sayd coūtrey or castell of Brayon, and surprysed the sayde Jewys so sodaynly that none escaped / and brent there of them to the nomber of.lxxx. for theyr malycyouse and abhomynable dede.

In the.xi yere of the reygne of thys Phylyppe, dyed Isabell the quene of Fraūce his wyfe / a womā of good fame and of great vertue.

In the.xii. yere of his reygne as sayth the frenche boke / thys Phylypp toke vppon hym the crosse, haynge promyse of kyng Rychard then newly crowned kyng of Englād, to kepe company wyth hym in that iourney. But he kept not promyse. wherwith thys Phylyppe beynge dyscontēted / sayled before and layde syege vnto the cytye of Acon or Acre. From this sayenge varyeth Policronica, and also Peter Destop. For Polycronycon sayth, that after the kynges of Englande and of Fraunce, hadde made suerty betwen them for performaūce of this iourney / they both to gyther taryed at Turon in Fraunce, for to abyde the somer tyde. And at sprynggynge of the yere / they of one wyll & purpose, toke theyr vyage towarde the holy lande / that ys to wytte that one by water and that other by land / and mette agayne in Cecilia. where the Frēche kynge depted from hym / and so sayled to the sayde cytye of Acone or Acre, and layde hys syege there vnto. In whych pastyme kyng Rycharde warred vppon the kynge of Syprres, & hym wyth his land subdued / & after came vnto Acoñ, where the Frenche kyng had longe lyen at syege without gettynge of any great auauntage of his enymyes / sayinge vnto kynge Rycharde that he hadde spared the wynnynge of the towne tyll hys commynge, to the ende that he at his commyng myght be partener as well of the honoure as of the wynnynge. But how it was, such vnkyndenesse fell betwene theym there, after they hadde woonne the sayde towne, as after in story of kynge Rycharde shalbe shewed, that this kyng Phylyppe retourned into Fraunce shortely after. In the whych returne the sayde Phylyppe sykened, and the duke of Burgoyne dyed. And when kyng Phylyppe a season had soiourned in Fraūce / he maryed Jugebert the doughter of the kynge of Denmarke. The whyche maryage, as sayth Ranulfe, was desyred of the Frenche kynge, to haue wyth her graunted the tytle whyche the Danes had vnto the crown of England, wyth also.x. thousand markes of syluer, for to wynne wyth ȳ sayd ryght and tytle. But yt was not longe or she were

the were frō hym deuorced, for cause of alyaūce of gossyped or otherwise. Howe be yt in processe of tyme after/ the said Jugebert was to him agayn ioyned by the authorite of Pope Jnnocent the thyrd of that name, in the yere of grace. xii. hūdred and.ix. and yere of reygne of this Philyppe. xxr/ so that the sayde Jugebert was deuorced frome her lorde by the terme of. xbii. yeres or theruppon.

Jn whych tyme and season the sayd Phylyppe had maryed the doughter of Phylyppe duke of Sweuy, that then was returned vnto her father.

THE.CCXLIII.CHAPITER.

Kynge Phylyp for dyspleasure whych he bare towarde kyng Rycharde / made sharpe and cruell warre vpon the Normans, and wan therein dyuerse holdes and townes/ and fynally layde syege vnto the cytye of Roan. wherof herynge Johñ erle of Huntyngeton, or after some erle of Orenforde brother to kynge Rycharde, whome the Frenche boke nameth Johñ withoute lande/ wyth the erle of Arundell and other noble men, spedde hym into Normandye/ and so ayded the cytezens and the solydours of Roan, that as testifyeth the frēche cronycle, the French kyng was so moued wyth the warre and defence of the same towne, that in a passynge fury consyderyng the wynter season drewe vppon, and that he myght not carye awaye his gunnes and other great ordynaunces/ he set all vppon a fyre / and so wyth great agony departed. And within thre monethes after he layde syege vnto the castell of Vernyel/ where whē he had lyen.iii. wekes or more, a messynger came vnto hym and sayde, that the cytye Eurour was taken of the Normans / and the people therof taken prysoners. wherfore in all haste he departed, and rescued the sayd cytye and prysoners/ and that done retourned to the forsayde syege/ and assyeged yt so strōgely, that lastely he had yt delyueryd by appoynteiment.

By thys season was kynge Rycharde delyueryd out of the handes of the duke of Ostryge. And then beganne the warre to be more cruell / whych here Jpasse ouer, for so mych as Jentende to shew the effecte ther of in the storye of kynge Rycharde folowynge.

Aboute the.xbiii. yere of the reygn of thys Phylyppe/ fell such plenty of water, that the groūde was therwith so bucked and drowned, that corne & other frutes by reason therof greatly decayed and scanted, in such wyse that whete was shortly after at.xx.s a quarter after sterlynge money.

Jn the.xx. yere of the reygn of this Phylyppe/ dyed Rycharde kynge of England/ to whom was heyre Johñ before named his brother. The whyche cōcluded a trewce wyth this Phylyppe for certayne yeres, as after in the storye of this Johñ shall more clerely appere.

And soone there after meanes were made to kyng Phylyp, that he shuld receyue agayne vnto his company Jugebert hys wyfe, and to renounce Mary doughter of the duke of Sweup, or after some authours, the doughter of the duke of Boheimy. But the kynge wyth this mocyon was no thynge contentyd / nor yet agreable to folow any such mocion or requeste. wherfore the prelasy of the lande assemled theym in counsayll/ and by a full and hole authorite, seynge they myghte not induce the kynge to no conformyte or agrement to resume hys lawfull wyfe, and to refuse that

other/ they denounsed hym and hys realme accursed. wherwith the kyng was so amoued and vered / that he deprpued certayne bysshoppes from theyr sees / and also toke in hys possessyon the spyrytuall goodes / and prysoned many prestes and other religyous men / and ouer that closed the sayde Jugebert wythin the castell of Sampys / and forthermore greued hys comons wyth greuous exaccyons and tarys. Than wythin a shorte terme after Johñ de saynte Poule cardynall, and Athā or Othemon bysshoppe of Osty and legate of the pope of Rome, wyth the archebysshoppe of Burdeaux and other/ by the commaundement of the pope than Innocent the thyrde, kepte a greate counceyle in the cytye of Sorsore. where the kynge was monysshed to apere / for so mych as before he hadde graunted to be reconcyled vnto hys fyrste wyfe. where thys mater hynge in argument before the spyrytuall iudges by ỹ space of .xv. dayes, wythout sentence gyuynge. wherfore the kynge beynge wyth the delayes dyscontented / sodenly wyth hys wyfe departed, wyth out takynge of them any congye or leue/ sendynge them vnderstandyng that as yet he wolde be adupsed or he were dysseuered from hys wyfe. wherof whan the sayd Johñ cardynall and the other bysshoppes hadde wyttynge / accomptynge theyr laboure loste, they retourned shortely after vnto Rome, and shewed vnto the pope all as they hadde done.

And soone there after kyng Johñ was honorably receyued of thys kynge Phylyppe, as in the story of the sayd Johñ shall be more playnly shewed.

And in the yere folowynge, which shulde be in the begynnynge of the yrith. yere of thys Phylyppe, dyed Mary hys wyfe/ whyche he wrongfully had holden cōtrary to the law of the chyrche by the terme of tenne yeres or there vppon. Of the whyche Mary he hadde receyued a man chylde and a doughter / the whyche after were made legyttymate by Innocent the thyrde, though some noble men of Fraunce there agayne grudged.

THE. CCXLIIII. CHAPITER.

IT was not longe after, that ỹ kyng assembled greate people and entendyd to haue entred the landys of the erle Rossell, & of Roger de Rose / of the whyche he hadde brought before hym many greuous complayntes, of greate extorcyons and exaccyōs that the sayd erle and Roger hadde executed and done vppon the chyrches nere to the valey of Soysons / and wolde not refrayne for all the kynges cōmaundement. wherfore he rygged hys armye and drewe towarde them. But as soone as they were aduertysed of the kynges comynge / anone they submytted them to the kynges grace/ oblygynge them selfe to make restytucyon accordynge to the kynges pleasure, to all suche places and persons as they hadde offended. And thys acte thus fynysshed/ kyng Phylyppe returned vnto a place betwene Uerdon, and the ile Audely/ in the whyche place the kynge hadde appoynted a greate counsayle or parlyament. where amonge other maters yt was concluded, that Johñ kynge of Englande shulde be somoned to appere as the Frenche kynges lyege

ges lyege man, at the same parlya-
ment to be holden at parys wythin
xv. dayes of Ester/ to answere suffy-
cyently to the kyng vppon such quel
tyons as there shulde be purposed
vnto hym, for the duchy of Normā
dye, for the cōtrey of Aungeou and
of Poytyers. But for ỳ kynge Johñ
came not at that day appoynted, nor
none for hym accordynge to the mo-
nyshement to hym gyuen, therfore
thys kynge Philypppe not withstan
dynge the amytye and trewce before
confermed, assembled hys hoste and
entred the duchye of Normandye,
and made therin sharpe and cruell
warre/ and wanne a castell therein
named Bonte or Bowte, and bruled
or crased the castellys of Gentylyne
and Gurney/ and sealed all ỳ landes
whyche Hugh de Gurney helde, and
gyue theym vnto the duke of Bry-
tayne. And also he gaue vnto hym
the erledome of Aungeou, and two
hundred knyghtes prysones of Nor
mans and Englyshe wyth a great
summe of money.

It was not longe after that the du
ke of Brytayne was departyd from
the kynge/ but that he wyth suche
power as he myght make entred the
countrey of Aungeou, to take therof
possessyon. where in shorte space he
was encountred of kynge Johñ, and
fought to geder a cruell batell. In
the whyche in the ende the duke was
put to the worse/ for the more parte
of hys people were slayne, and hym
selfe wyth Hugh le Bruns, Godfrey
de Lesygnan, and many other no-
bles of Fraunce and also of Bry-
tayne, were taken prysoners. wyth
whyche tydynges the frenche kyng
was greuously dyscontentyd. And
where as at that tyme he had becle-
pcd ỳ castell of Arches wyth a strong
syege/ he remoued from thens and
and yode to the citye of Towrs and
brent a part therof. But as testifyeth
the frenche cronycle he taryed not
the commynge of kynge Johñ. But
for that wynter was commynge to-
warde/ he ceasyd of hys warrys for
that yere, and so drewe hym into
Fraunce.

In the yere folowynge, whyche
was the yere of this Phylyp. xxuii, &
of kynge Johñ the. iiii. yere/ ỳ warre
newely began, whyche I ouer passe,
for as mych as yt shall be shewyd in
the storye of kynge Johñ.

In the. xxvi. yere thys Phylyppe
Almaricus a studyent of Paris held
certayne oppynyons of heresye. Of
the whyche when he was abiured/
he toke suche thought that he dyed
shortely after. It was not longe af-
ter but that other clerkys and study-
auntys helde an other erronyous
oppynyon cōcernynge ỳ vnyon of the
trynyte. Of the whyche nomber Pe-
ter byshoppe of Parys, and one Ga-
ryne a man of great connynge were
two/ the whyche were degraded, &
after cōsumyd wyth fyre/ and the bo
dy of the forenamed Almaricus was
agayne taken oute of the erthe, and
after brent.

Here about the. xxx. yere of the reyg-
gne of thys Phylyppe/ for consyde-
racyon as sayth the frenche boke,
that Johñ kynge of Englande had
exylyd dyuerse of hys byshoppes,
and taken from them theyr possessy-
ons and goodes/ the whyche to this
kynge Phylyp were comen for ayde
and socour: he therfore mouyd wyth
pyrye, assembled a great hoste, and
entendyd to haue sayled into En-
glande to haue reformed these ma-
ters. wyth the whyche hoste he pas-
sed tyll he came to Grauenynge by
lande, where he appoynted hys na-
uey to mete wyth hym. And to the

ſame place alſo Ferrande then erle of Flaundres had affermely promyſyd to come, wyth the ayde of hys Flemynges / where the kynge for hym taryed a certayne of tyme. But ſhortely after the kynge was aſcertayned that the ſayde erle was alyed wyth kynge Johñ hys enymye / and purpoſed to ayde hys partye in all that he myghte. wherof the occaſyon was as affermeth the ſayde Frenche cronycle, for ſo myche as Lewys eldeſt ſonne of kynge Phylyppe helde from the ſayde Farrande two caſtelſ or townes named ſaynte Omer and Are.

when kynge Phylyppe appercey ued that he was thus of the erle dyſpoynted/he by coũſayll of his Baronye putte by hys iourney into Englande, and aſſayled the countrey of Flaundres / and ſo yode vnto Caſſyle a lytell from Grauelynge, & wyth ſharpe aſſaute wanne the ſayd towne / and ſo from thens to Brugys / and commaunded hys nauy to be brought vnto the haue of Sluſe, whyche is wythin ſhorte waye of Brugys. And when he hadde executed hys pleaſure at Brugys, leuyng a certayn of his peple for to ſtrengthe hys Nauy / he yode vnto Gaunte, and there reſted hym and hys people. In whyche ſeaſon Reynolde erle of Boleyne, Guyllyam longe eſpe, or Guyllyam wyth the longe ſworde, wyth a crewe of Engliſhe men aryued in Flaundres/ to whom ſhortely drewe Ferraunde the erle wyth a great power of Flemynges. The whyche ſhypped theym in ſmall caruyles and barkes and other ſhyppys of aduaũtage/ and wyth a fyerſe corage ſette vppon the Frenche kynges nauey lyenge at Sluſe as before is ſhewed / where was foughten a ſtronge and cruell batayll. But in the ende the Flemynges hadde the victorye, and hadde the rule of all the frenche flote, the whyche in nombre as teſtyfyeth the ſayd frenche cronycle, were a thouſande & ten ſayle. The whyche for nombre and greatneſſe myghte not all lye wythin the hauyn / but ſpradde a great parte of the ryuer beſyde. whyche ſo lyenge wythout the hauen, the Flemynges conueyed thens / and after layde ordinaunce to the towne of Sluſe, and aſſyeged yt.

Kynge Phylyppe herynge of the loſſe of hys naupe, and of the aſſautynge of the towne of Sluſe, in all haſte ſpedde hym thyther / and there in ſuche wyſe reſyſted hys enymyes, that he ſlew of them vpon two thouſande / and toke of theym dyuerſe pryſoners, and reſcued the towne. But for he ſawe he myght not recouer hys ſhyppes beynge wythin the hauyn / he cauſyd theym to be dyſcharged of vytell and other neceſſaryes, and after ſet them on fyre and the towne alſo / and that done, toke certayne hoſtages of Brugis of Gaunte and of Ipre, and ſo retourned into Fraunce.

THE .CCXLV. CHAPITER.

When kynge Phylippe was returned into Fraunce / yt was not longe after, that by the meanes of ſome well dyſpoſyd perſones, he was reconcyled and toke to hym his lawfull wyfe Ingeberta or Ingebert,

bert, doughter of the kynge of Denmarke/ whyche was great comforte to all hys people. And thys yt nowe apperyth that the sayde Jngebert was from her lorde or husbande by the terme of.xvi.yeres and more, as beforeyt is touched in the seconde chappter of thys storye.

In the yere of grace.xii.hundred.xiiii. as sayth the frenche boke, whyche maketh the yere of the reygne of this Philyppe.xxxv/Otho the.iiii.of that name and duke of Saxony, whyche of some of the electours was chosen for emperour/ in the quarell of kyng Johñ intred ỹ prouince of Henaude, and there beynge accompanyed with Reygnolde erle of Boleyne, Farraunde erle of Flaundres, and dyuerse other nobles, as well of Englande, Saxonye, and other places / made prouysyon to fyght wyth kynge Philyppe, whyche then warred in Flaũdres/ so that the frenche kynge was at the castell of Peron, and Otho was at the castell of Valensyens or Valenseus.

About Mary Madgdaleyns tyde, the frenche kynge in wastyng ỹ coũtrey of Flaũdres came vnto the town of Turney/and Otho returned from the forsayde castell, and came vnto the castell or towne named Morstenge, the whyche was but.vi.myle from Turney. wherof herynge the kynge, entendyd to haue set in shorte tyme vppon hys enymyes. But by the aduyse of hys barons he was letted / for so myche as the wayes and places were streyghte and narowe towarde hys enymyes. For the whyche consyderacyon by counsayll of hys sayde barones he was letted, and retourned towarde Henawde for to haue more larger playnes. So that after saynte Jamys daye he retourned / purposynge that nyghte to haue lyen and also his hoste at the castell called Lylly. But he was letted of hys purpose. For Otho whych was warned of hys remouynge, demed hym to haue fled and pursued after the vaungarde of the kynge/ of the whyche were captaynes the bycounte of Mylyon, and one named Fryer Garnye/ the whyche was a fryer and relygyous man, a man of great counsayll and hardynesse. These beynge accompanyed wyth iiii.thousande men / rode tyll they came to an hyll or lytle Mountayne, where they espyed the auauntage of Otho and hys hoste. wherfore fryer Garny retourned to gyue the kynge knowlege / and the bycounte remayned in the place, and houed with his companye.

when the kynge hadde knowlege of the commynge of his enymyes/he in good maner kepte on hys tourney. In whyche season Otho, wyth hys people came vnto ỹ ryuer which was somdeale daungerous to passe/ howe be yt in processe he passed yt. And when he & his hoste were ouer/ he made waye towarde Turney/ in so myche that the bycounte & his cõpany demed them to haue retourned to Turney. But so soone as fryer Garny was returned vnto the sayde mount, anon he demed the coũtrary/ & sayd precysely that other they must gyue batayll to theyr enimyes, or elys they must fle wyth shame. In thys whyle the kynges people came vnto a brydge where they shulde passe ouer. And the cautele of hys enymyes was, that when the kynge wyth the more parte of hys people hadde ben passed that brydge / they wolde haue sette vppon the rerewarde, and haue dystressyd theym / and so haue kepte that brydge that the kynge shulde not haue socoured

his people. But or the kynge were passed the fyght was begonne/in so myche that hydeous crye came to the kynges erys, at armys at armys, to harneys to harnes, our enymyes be come.

Nere vnto the kyng was a chapell halowed in the honour and worshyp of sayntē Peter/ wherunto the kyng yode and made there hys deuoute prayers/ and that done armed hym, and lepte to horse ioyously cryenge/ as barons at armys. Then the Ory flambe which was passed ꝑ bydge, was countermaunded. And then began the trumpettys and tabours to blowe/ whyche reuyued the palled hartes, and caused theym to forgete the drede of deth. But for the kynges people myght not so hastely retourne and passe the bydge/ the kynge as a valyaunt knyghte toke hys horse wyth hys spurrys, and set forwarde to encourage the other of hys knyghtes/ so that his enymyes herynge of hys commynge, were somdeale dyscoraged and gaue place vnto the kynges hoste. Then Otho herynge of the kynges retourne, enbatayled hys people. But so yt was that he toke the northe parte of the felde/ by reason wherof the sonne was in hys face to hys afterdeale/ for that was excedynge hote ouer the other. Then was the batell begonne in dyuers partyes of the felde so cruelly that many a mā was there ouerthrowen. The whyche endured be a longe space, in suche wyse that hardely was to dyscerne whyche partye hadde the better of that other. Eyther prynce enforcyd so straytely that other/ that eyther of theym were vnhorsed and in great ieoperdye. Here I shulde reherse the dyctorymouse dedys of the Frenche kynge and hys knyghtes in order, after the expressement of the frenche boke/ I shulde therof make a longe storye. But trouth yt is that in the ende/ Otho was compelled to forsake the felde, to the great losse of hys people/ and Feraunte the erle of Flaunders was taken wyth many other, as Reygnolde erle of Boleyn, and.xxviii.other of name.

And one thynge hardely me semeth to be credence gyuen vnto, rehersyd by the frenche cronycle, whych sayth that of all the frenche hoste mysssed but one syngle man/ the whyche after was founde amonge the dede Almaynes sore wounded, and after cured and helpd agayne. whyche maye be tolde for a great wonder/ consyderynge the sayde fyghte lasted ouer foure howres, as testyfyeth the sayd cronycle. But sure the authoure or the wryter ouerseeth hym selfe in that reporte/ for he shewyth before in the dyuysynge of the fyghte of thys batell, that when kynge Phylyppe was felled from hys horse, two of hys knyghtes were slayne ryghte before hym/ that one named Guyllyam de longe Champe, and that other Gerarde le Tirne. But maister Robert Gagwyne expressyth thys more clerely/ sayenge that after the felde was done and the emperoure was fledde, leuynge hys banner of splayed Egle behynde hym/ a bysshement of the nomber of. vii. hundred men recouerd that standarde, and so kepte theym to gyther. wherof when the kynge was enfourmed/ he sente agayne them one of hys knyghtes called syr Thomas Valary, accōpanyed wyth .l. fotemen & two thousand horsemen. The whych dyssyd ꝑ sayd cōpany, wythout losse of one man as before is sayde. And more ouer the sayd authour sayth/ ꝑ vppon the partye of the sayde Otho

of knygh

of knyghtes and gylte harneſſe were ſlayne a thouſande & fyue hundred/ and of other horſe men and fote men a hundred and fyfty thouſande. But of ỹ Frenche men whych ſhulde be ſureſte of rekenynge / he maketh no mencyon. But trouth it is, that in all the cronycle thoroughe the Frenche boke reherſed / all thynge touchynge theyr honour is declared and ſhewed to the vttermoſte. And that whyche concerneth theyr dyſhonoure or loſſe, yt ys ouer ſubtely excuſed/or ſo darkely or myſtly wryten, that the reader therof ſhall hardely come to the knowlege of the trouthe. And that is well apparent in the ſtoryes of Philyppe de Maloys and of kynge Johñ hys ſonne, in expreſſement of theyr faytes done and exercyſed agayne the thyrde Edwarde kyng of England and prynce Edwarde hys ſonne.

Than it foloweth in ỹ ſtory/whan Philyp hadde obteyned this greate victory of hys enemyes, and ordered other thynges concernynge hys people, as countermaũdynge them the nert waye vnto theyr countrees/ he wyth hys pryſoners ſpedde hym to Parys / and there of hys greate bounte graunted to the ſayde erlys of Boleyne and Flaunders theyr lyues, but not of pryſonement. For the erle of Boleyne was ſent vnto the caſtell of Peron / and Feraunt erle of Flaunders was commytted to the caſtell or towre of Louour wythout the wallys of the cytye of Parys thã newly made. But wythin leſſe than xv. monethes after/ by labour of his wyfe, he with other of hys lyege men was delyuered / payenge theyr fynaunces, and perfourmyng of other ſtreyght condycyons.

THE. CCXLVI. CHAPITER.

IT was not longe after that kynge Philyppe reaſſembled hys knyghtes, and ſpedde hym towarde the countrey of Poytow. wherof beynge warned the erle of Thoners that than was cheſe ruler of that countrey vnder kyng Johñ, ſeynge the febleneſſe of the comons that dayly were vexed wyth warre, and alſo the loſſe of kynge Johñs frendes, not wythſtandyng the ſayd Johñ was than wythin twenty myles / yet he made ſuche meanes to kynge Philyppe by the labour of Peter than duke or erle of Bryttayn, that the ſayde kynge accepted the ſame erle to hys grace / and graunted to hym and hys a trewce for. iiii. yeres. But that not wythſtandyng/ the kynge kept on hys iourney towarde kynge Johñ. wherof kynge Johñ beynge enfourmed / and alſo of the peace bytwene the erle of Thoners and the Frenche kynge: he by meanes of one Roberte a legate of Rome ſought meanes of treaty and of peace/ ſo that in proceſſe by dylygence of the ſayde Robert and other, a peace was concluded for. v. yeres. whyche peace concluded and aſſured eyther kynge returned into theyr owne prouynces.

wythin ſhort whyle after ỹ Frenche kyng was returned into Fraũce/ he called to mynde the great victory had of the Almayns / wyth alſo one other whych Lewys his ſon about ỹ ſame tyme had agayne or of kynge Johñ in the countre of Aungeou, at the caſtell of Moyne or Mayne. For the whyche. ii. victoryes, the kynge edyfyed a monaſtery beſyde the cyty of Sayntles, in the honour of ſaynt Victor/ and endowed it wyth fayre and ryche poſſeſſyons, and named it the abbey of ſaynt Victor.

In the

In the.xxxvi.yere of the reygne of thys Phylyppe / Lewys hys sonne by procurynge and sturrynge of the lordes of Englande, sayled into the sayde prouynces / as more playnely shall be shewed in the.xvi. yere of the reygne of kynge Johñ.

Many mo storyes & actes myght I bringe in and set in thys story of thys kynge Phylyppe, yf I shulde folowe the Frenche boke. For he maketh there a reherssayll that conteyneth. xxxix. greate leuys of parchemyne. Of the whyche I haue taken out suche as to me semeth moste conuenyent / and haue ouer passed the other for lengthe of the tyme.

Than it foloweth / thys Phylyp after these dayes drewe hym to more quyet and reste / so that after thys peace or trewce cõcluded wyth kyng Johñ of Englande, the authour speketh not or myndeth of any noble dede by hym done. So that in the yere of our lorde.xii.hundred and. xxii, whyche shulde be the yere of hys reygne .xliii/ the sayd authour begynneth, and sayth that in that forsayd yere apered a greate eclypce of the son, wherof the lyke hadde not ben seen in many yeres passed.

And in the yere folowynge dyed thys Phylyppe in the moneth of Junii, whan he hadde reygned vppon xliiii.yeres. Before whose deth apered a great comete or blasyng starre/ the whyche the Frenche men, wyth also the forsayde eclypce / they adiudged for pronostiquys and tokens of the kynges deth / the whyche was buryed wyth excellent pompe in the monastery of saynt Denys, in the yere of our lorde a thousand two hundred and.xxiii. and of hys age. lviii/ leuynge after hym the fore named Lewys/whyche was enoynted kyng after hym.

Thys Phylyppe amonges other notable thynges ordeyned in hys testament/be sette to the aydynge and wynnynge of the holy cyte of Hierusalem thre hundred thousande pownde of Parys money/to the hospytall in Mount forte a hundred thousande pownde/ and to be dystrybuted amonges the poore comons of hys londe he gaue twenty thousande pownde.

But here is to be noted, there is a great dyuersyte bytwene a pownd of Parys money and a pownde of sterlynge money. For a pownde of Parys money is but two shyllynges and.vi.pence sterlynge, or nere there about. And so it foloweth that a thousande pownde of Parys, is but a hundred fyue and twenty pownde sterlynge. By whyche accompte it foloweth that thys kynge gaue to the ayde of the holy londe. xxxvii. thousande and fyue hundred pownde sterlynge/ to the hospytall xii.thousande and fyue hundred pownde sterlynge/and to the poore people two thousand & fyue hundred pownde.

And thus here I make an ende of thys volume, for cause and cõsyderacyon, as after is shewed in the begynnynge of the nexte volume, more manyfestely.

Clenuoye.

Rece forth rude volume/and recõmende me,
To my derest frende experte in all scyence.
Praye hym at leysour the to ouerse.
And where in meter or prose he fyndeth offence,
Or congrewe englysshe, or of perfyte sentence/
Humbly hym praye that he woll the correcte,
whyche in all hys faytes is so cyrcumspecte.

And shewe to hym forther hys merpt to encreace,
The seconde volume ys redy to hym dyght.
Praye hym he woll not therfore wyth the sursease,
Tyll that thy felow, he haue by hys insyght
And by hys scyence brought in so good plyght,
That to all readers it maye be delectable,
And to the herers frutefull and profytable.

And not to dysdayne my malapert rudenesse/
That to hys payne I shulde thus boldely sende.
Or hym to wyll to suche greate besyneſſe,
So rude a worke to correcte and amende.
But shew hym sothely that all that I entende,
Is for to enhaunce hys prayse and greate laude/
Is he shall knowe I truste wythout frawde.

The seconde volume of Fabyans cronycle

Conteynyng the cronycles of Englande and of Fraunce, from the begynnyng of the reygne of kyng Rycharch the fyrste, vntyll the begynnyng of the reyne of our moste redoubted soverayne lord kynge Henry the. viii.

Prentyd at London
By wyllyam Rastell.

1533

CVM PRIVILEGIO.

HEre begynneth the table of the seconde volume, whiche denounces and sheweth all the actes done in euery kynges dayes conteyned in the sayde volume/and that euery acte folowes by letter and by the noũber of ꝑ lefe, as in thys sayd table is expressed/ and begynneth at the wardes of London & at kynge Rychardе the fyrste/ whose actes more at legthin thys sayd volume shalbe shewed, wyth other kinges ensuyng by letter in this sayd table/ as fyrste. A. B. C. and so forthe.



CRys a stronge citye in the holy lãd was wonne by the crysten as appereth.fo. iiii

Actes of the great Cane of Tartaris folio xxiii

Abbotte of waltham was accorded wyth the citesyns of Lõdon.fo.xxviii

Accorde made betwene kyng Henry the.iii.and hys barons.fo. xxxviii

Actes done in Hethenes/ by Lowys the Frenche kyng.fo. xlviii

Acris or Acon abouenamed cytye wõne agayn by ꝑ Turkes.fo. lxix

Accorde or agrement was made bytwene Englãd & Scotlãd.fo. xc

Actes were made for weryng of sylk. folio xci

Actes in Fraunce done by the duke of Lancastre.fo. ciii

Actes made by Frẽchmẽ for the occupyeng of ꝑ admissiõ of ꝑ enheryteur of Fraunce.folio cxxxvii

Accorde made betwene the dukes of Orleaunce and of Burgoyne.fo.clx

Accusacyõs by the duke of Burgoyn agayn the duke of Orleaunce.fo.clxi

Accorde made betwene the sayde dukes.folio clxi

Acte made for gyuynge of lyuereys. folio clxv

Actes made agayn straungers/ se in folio. clxxx

Actes made for halowynge of the sondaye wythin the cytye of Londõ. folio cxciii

Abbay of Bury was spoyled.fo. cxlii

A dyme was graunted to kyng Hẽry the fyft.fo. clxxvii

A quyndecyme was graũted to king Henry the.iii.fo. xxi

A letter deuysed by the bazõs & sente to kyng Henry the.iii.fo. xxxvii

A letter was sent by Rychard kynge of Romayns to the barõs.fo. xxxvii

A quarter of whete was solde for.ii. s.folio xc

A fraye was made in Fletestrete bpõ a bakers seruaunt.fo. cxlv

A fray made in Fletestrete by one Herbottell.fo. cxcii

Andrewe Trollop dysceyued the lordes.folio cciii

A letter sent by Edward the.iii. vnto the kyng of Fraunce.fo. xciii

Agrement was made with the Scottes.folio. lxiii

Answere made by the French kynge to kyng Edwardes letter.fo. xcv

Answere made by the French kynge to kynge Henry.fo. clxxi

Ambassade sent by the French kynge into Englande.fo. lxxxix

Ambassade sent agayne by the sayde kynge.folio lxxxix

Ambassade sent into Fraũce.fo.lxxxix

Ambassade sent frõ the pope.fo.ccviii

A parte of London brydge fylle into Thamys.fo. lxxxix

Ayde graunted by kynge Johan. folio cxxiii

Ayde was graunted by the inhabytauntes

tauntes of the countre of Langue-
dok.folio cxxiiii.
Archebysshoppe of Orleaunce was
slayne.fo. lxx.
Archbysshop of Caunterbury was
slayne.folio cxlii.
Archebysshop of Caunterbury ma-
keth a collacyon.folio cliiii.
Archebysshop of yorke wyth other
was taken in batayle.fo. clxvii
Artycles of treason layde agayne syr
Roger Mortymer.fo. lxxxviii
Artycles of peace ratyfyed bytwene
kynge Edwarde and kynge Johñ.
folio cvi.
Artycles of dyspleasure shewed in
wyntynge by the duke of Glocester
agayne the bysshop of wynchester.
folio clxxx.
Archebysshop of yorke ouerturneth
the Scottes.folio xcix.
Artycles of peace concluded bytwen
the erle of Flaunders and hys sub-
iectes.folio cxxxix.
Assembles made by lordes.fo.cxliii.
Annyuersary honourable was foũ-
den in Poulys chyrche.fo. cxi.
Auoutry was clyped.fo. ccxiii.

Barons warre began to grow
in the.xli. yere of kyng Henry
the thyrde.folio. xxx.
Barõs warre recepued and of newe
kyndeled in the.xliii. yere of Henry
the thyrde.folio xxxiii.
Barons assembled theyr companyes
in the marches of wales in the.xlvi
yere of the sayd kynge.fo. xxxiiii.
Barons entred the cytye of London
folio xxxv.
Barõs dyscorded among them selfe.
folio xxxviii.
Barons were chasyd the.xliii.yere of
Edwarde the seconde.fo. lxxix.
Batayle of Lewys bytwene kynge
Henry the.iii.& the barons.fo.xxxvii
Batayle called the whyte batayle,
loke in the.xi. yere of Edwarde the
seconde.folio. lxxvii.
Batayle of Burbrydge bytwen kyng
Edwarde the seconde and the barõs
in hys.xiiii.yere.fo. lxxix.
Batayle very cruell agaynste the
Scotte called Halydon.fo. lxxxix.
Batayle of Swyn or Sluce vppon
the see/bytwene the Frenchmen and
Edwarde the thyrde, in the.xv. yere
of hys reygne. fo. xciii.
Batayle of Cressey in the.xxi. yere of
Edwarde the thyrde.fo. xcviii.
Batayle of Potyers bytwene kynge
Edwarde the thyrde and the French
kynge.folio ciii.
Batayle bytwene kynge Phylyp of
Fraunce and the towne of Cassile in
Flaunders.fo. cxvii.
Batayle of Shrowysbery/ in the.iii.
yere of Henry the fourth.fo. clxvii.
Batayle at Blak pole/ in the.vi.yere
of Henry the.iiii.fo. clxvii.
Batayle of Agyncourt/in the thyrde
yere of Henry the.v.fo. clxxii.
Batayle of sayncte Albons fyrste the
xxxiii.yere of Henry the.vi. fo. cc.
Blore heth felde apperys in ỹ.xxvii
yere of kynge Henry the.vi. fo. cciii.
Batayle of Ludlowe / as it doth ap-
pere in folio cciii.
Batayle of Northamton / as appe-
reth in folio cciiii.
Batayle of wakefelde apperys and
the batayle of sayn Albons. fo. ccv.
Batayle of yorke or Towton or
Shyrborne.fo. ccvi.
Barnet felde.fo. ccxix.
Batayle of Tewkesbury.fo. ccxx.
Barträ de Clerc̃ warred in Spayn
and chasyd the kynge.fo. cix.
Blasynge sterre apperys in folio.xc.
and fo.cxviii.and fo.clix
Blanke charters vses in Eng.fo.cli.
Brekyng of peace bytwen England
and Fraunce / loke in the.xliii. yere
of kynge Edwarde the.iii.fo. cxi.
Brest a stronge towne of Brytayne
besyeged.fo. cxiii.

Benyuolence was fyrſte foũded and graũted in Edwarde the.iiii.dayes folio cxxv.
Byſſhop Grooſtehede and of his actes apperyth in ỹ.xxxiii.yere of kyng Henry the thyrde.folio xxvi.
Byſſhop of Exceter was beheded apperyth in the.xviii. yere of Edwarde the ſeconde.folio lxxxii.
Byſſhop of Norwyche made warre in Spayne by the popes cõmaundement in the. vi. yere of Rycharde the ſeconde.folio cxliii.
Byſſhop of London hath a memory of the cyteſyns of London.fo. cxlvii.
Byſſhop of wyncheſter lent to kyng Henry the fyfte.xx.thouſand poũde. folio clxxvii.
Byſſhop of wyncheſter forſayd created cardynall.folio. clxxx
Byſſhop of Salyſbury was ſlayne in the ende of.xxviii.of Henry the.vi. as more playnly is ſhewed fo.cxcviii.
Byſſhop of Chycheſter called Reynolde Pecok was abiured of hereſye folio ccii.
Boke of prophecy was founden by a Jewe in Spayne.folio xviiii
Blode of Cryſte was brought into weſtmynſter by kynge Henry the.iii. folio xxv.
Bonifacius pope of hys cõdycyons. folio. lxxi.
Bull of the pope manyfeſted at Poulys croſſe.folio xxxiii
Buſſhe, Baggot and Grene and of theyr actes. folio cli.
Brytõs reſyſt ỹ Frenchmẽ. fo. xxxix.

CHarles the. v. of that name & ſurnamed the fayre, and brother to Phylyp ſurnamed the longe, ſonne of the.iiii.Phylyp, began hys reygne ouer the realme of Fraunce, in the yere of grace. M.iii. hundreth and.xxii/and the.xv.yere of the ſecõd Edwarde kynge of Englande, and reygned yeres.vi.folio. lxxxiiii.
Cardynalles that were ſent into Englande from the pope were robbed/ appereth in the.ix. yere of Edwarde the ſeconde.folio lxxvi.
Caen a ſtronge towne in Normandye beſyeged by kynge Edward the thyrde and won it. folio xcviii.
Calys beſyeged and gotten by kyng Edwarde the thyrde.folio xcix.
Cardynall ſent from the pope/labored for peas.folio cii.
Caſtell of Pount was yolden vp by appoyntement. folio cxxv.
Careckes.iii.were taken by the duke of Clarence and the erle of Kente.folio. clxvii.
Charyte of kynge Lewys. folio l.
Charles de Valoys brother to Phylyppe le Beawe & vncle vnto Charles the.v.forſayd dyed.folio.lxxxvi.
Charles de Bloys was ſlayne in the batayle bytwene fyr Johñ Mountforte and the ſayd Charlys.fo. cix.
Charles the.vi.of that name & ſonne of Johñ,bẽganne to rule the Frenchmen,in the yere of our lorde. M. iii. C.lxiiii/&.xxxviii. yere of the thyrde Edwarde kynge of Englande / and reygned yeres.xvi.folio xxxvi.
Charles the. vii. of ỹ name a ponge chylde and ſonne of the.vi. Charlys, began hys reygne ouer Fraunce, in the moneth of ſeptember and yere of our lorde a thouſand.iii.hũdreth and lxxx/and the thyrde yere of the ſecõde Rycharde then kyng of Englande/& reygned yeres.xlii.folio clv.
Charles the. viii. of that name, and ſonne vnto Charles the. vi. as ſayen the Frenche authours / but the Englyſſhe wryters ſheweth the cõtrary, as in the ſtory of thys Charles ſhall appere/thys began to reygne ouer ỹ Frenchmen, in the yere of our lorde thouſande.iii.hũdreth and. xxii/ and the laſte yere of Henry the. v. thenne kynge of England/& reygned yeres xxvi.folio ccvii.

Chaũtryes

Chauntryes foũded in Poulys chur che in London.fo. cxi
Cerymonyes for the coronacyon of kynge Henry the.iiii / as appereth. folio clxiii
Creacyō of dukes by kyng Rychard the.ii.fo. cxliii
Clement pope dyspleased, for that he myght gyue no byshoprykes withi the realme of Englande/ in the.xviii yere of kyng Edwarde the.iii.as ape reth.fo. xcvi
Cytezyns of London / are tolle free. folio xx
Cytezyns of Londn were arrested. folio. xxx
Clerkes of Orleaunces wythstande the kynge of Fraunces commaunde= ment.fo. cxix
Churche or monastery of westmyn= ster was ended of buyldyng/ as ape= reth.fo. lviii
Condycions made by the borough= maysters of the towne of Burgys a= gaynst theyr erle.fo. lxxvi
Constable of Fraunce was murdred by the advyse of Charles kyng of Na uerne.fo. cxxii
Constable of the towre of London was drowned whose name was cal= led syr Thomas Ramstoñ / as appe= reth.folio clxviii
Constantynoble was wonne by the Turkys / as it is shewed in. folio cxcix
Colacyon made by the archebyshop of Caunterbury to the lordes for the deposycyon of kyng Rychard the.ii. folio cliii
Conclusyon of maryage by kynge Henry the.vi.fo. cxcii
Condycyons of kynge Lowys/as is shewed.fo. ccxii
Commynge of the emperoure into Fraunce and of hys honourable re= ceyte.folio cxxxvii
Composycyon was made betwene kynge Henry the syxte and the dyke of yorke/as appereth.folio ccb
Copy of a letter sent from Edwarde the.iii.vnto the Frenche kynge / and answere to the same made / loke in. folio. xcb
Copy of an instrument made for de= posyng of kyng Rychard/as is shew= ed.folio cliii
Coppe of a byll put into the parlya= ment house for the temporaltees / as is shewed.fo. clxix
Copy of a letter sent by the byshope of wynchester vnto the duke of Bed= forde.folio clxxxi
Copy of a pardon made by the kyng vnto the cytezyns of London/as ape reth.fo xli
Correccyon of aduoutry / as is she= wed.folio lxxiii
Coronacion of quene Katheryne/ as appereth.fo clxxvi.
Courses of seruyce for the feest of the sayd coronacyon.fo. clxxvi
Corps of kynge Henry the .v. was with great solempnite brought vnto the monastery of westmunster/as ape reth.fo. clxxi
Countesse of Henawde laboured to make a peace betwene kyng Edward the thyrd & kynge Phylyp of Fraũce folio xcb
Couenauntes betwene the regente & the kynge of Nauerne are expressed and shewed.folio. cxxxi
Couenauntes of maryage betwene kynge Henry the.v.and the Frenche kyng beholde in.fo. clxxv
Crossed freers came fyrste into Eng= lãde/in the.iii.yere of kyng Edward the.ii.folio lxxv
Crucyfix of golde belongyng to sait Denys church in Fraunce was axed by the kyng of the monkes for ayde folio. cxx

Dame Blaunche was ayded/ by Phylip the French kynge as appereth.folio. lii

Dame Elynour Cobham was arrested of treason/as it is shewed in.
folio cxci
Daupd brother of Lewyn prynce of walys wrought treason/ as it is shewed in.fo. lvii
Daupd aforesayd was taken.
folio lviii
Daunsynge wonderfull beholde.
folio lix
Derthe of corne.folio lx
Dede knyght apered to one mayster Morres in walys.fo. xiii
Derkenesse intollerable fylle in Paulys churche the bysshoppe beynge at masse.folio xxi
Deuorce betwene Charlys ỹ French kynge and Blaūche/as it is shewed.
folio lxxxiiii
Dede corpsys what noumbre in one pere were buryed in London.fo. c
Depe a towne in Normandy was strongly assayled by the lord Talbot.
folio cxcii
Denham esquyer toke the lorde Ryuers at Sandwyche.folio cciiii
Dyscencyon amonge the lordes of Englande.fo. xxxii
Dyscencion fyll amōge the lordes in Normandy.fo. cxix
Dyscencion grewe betwene ỹ Frēche kynge and the kynge of Nauerne.
folio cxxii
Dyscencyon fylle amonge the Frēchmen for cessynge of an ayde.
folio cxxiii
Dyscencyon grewe amonge the thre astates of the realme of Fraunce.
folio cxxvi
Dyuers inconuenyences fyll in Englande and in Fraunce/ as is shewed.
folio c
Dyuerse bysyons and meruayles were sene in the ayer/as it is shewed.
folio cviii
Duke of Ostryche dyed/ and the hostages of kynge Rycharde were free delyuered.folio ix
Duke of Lancasters actes.
folio ciii
Duke Johñ of Lācastre made warre in Fraunce.folio cxi
Duke of Lancastre passed thorugh Fraunce wythoute fyghte.
folio cxiii
Duke of Burgoyn complayneth vpon syr Johñ Chalons knyghte.
folio cxviii
Duke of Normandy maketh hys oracion to the cytesyns of Parys.
folio cxxviii
Duke foresayde was proclaymed regente of Fraunce / as it is shewed.
folio cxxx
Duke of Lancastre reentred Fraūce.
folio cxxxvi
Duke of Lācastre warred in Spayn
folio cxlv
Duke of Glouceter spake sharpe wordes to kyng Rycharde the secōd.
folio cxlix
Duke of Glouceter was arested and murdered.folio cxlix
Dukes of Yerforde and of Northfolke fyll at dyscencyon for cause shewed.folio cl
Duke of Lancastre claymed the crowne.folio cliii
Duke of Orleaunce laboured agaist the bnyuersyte of Parys.
folio clx
Duke of Orleaunce was slayne.
folio clx
Dukes of Orleaunce & of Burgoyn maketh new warre.fo. clx
Duke of Burgoyne was slayne.
folio clxiii
Dukes and barons were put to deth for treason.folio clxv
Duke of Clarence was slayn.
folio clxxvii
Duke of Glouceter was made protectour of Englande / in the fyrste yere of the reygne of kynge Henry the syxte and the duke of Bedforde, regente of Fraunce/ as it is shewed

ſhewed in.fo. c.lxxix
Duke of Bedforde wynneth holdes in Fraunce/ſe in.fo. clxxx
Ducheſſe of Holād was taken pryſoner/loke in.fo. clxxxi
Duke of Alenſon was delyuered for hys raunſom.fo. clxxxii
Duke of Northfolke was in greate ieopardy of drownyng.fo. clxxxiii
Duke of Burgoyne turned from the Englyſſhe partye to ꝑ Frenſh partye as is ſhewed in.fo. clxxxviii
Duke of Burgoyn layde ſyege to Calays.fo. clxxxix
Dukes & erles were created/ as apereth in.fo. cxciii
Duke of Suffolke was arreſted. folio. cxcv
Duke of Somerſet was arreſted as ſheweth in.fo. c.xcviii
Duke of yorke gathered people / as apereth in.fo. cxcviii
Duke of yorke diſcharge of hys protectourſhyp.fo. cci
Duke of yorke and othe were attaynted as apereth in.fo. cciii
Duke of Bukkyngham & many other were ſlayne.fo. cciiii
Duke of yorke taketh the kynges royall ſee.fo. ccv
Duke of yorke with other was ſlayn folio. ccv
Duke of Burgoyne aſſiſteth ꝑ Frēch kynges ſonne agaynſt hys father/as is ſhewed in.fo. ccix
Duke of Bretayn & other conſpyred agayne theyr kyng.fo. ccix
Duke of Somerſet wyth other put to deth.fo. ccxv
Duke of Clarence wyth other lāded at Dartmouth.fo. ccxviii
Duke of Exceter was founde dede in the ſee.folio. ccxxi
Duke Clarence was drowned in wyne.fo. ccxxii
Duke of Glouceter was made protectour.fo. ccxxiii
Duke of Bukkyngham ſheweth the tytle of kyng Rychard.fo. ccxxv
Duke of Glouceter taketh poſſeſſyō at weſtmynſter/as apereth. folio. ccxxv
Duke of Bukkyngham cōſpyreth agaynſt kyng Rychard / & was taken & beheded at Salyſbury.fo. ccxxv
Duke of Orleaūce was taken in batayll as is ſhewed.fo. ccxxviii
Duke of Bretayne dyed whereby great warre foloweth / as it is ſhewed.fo. ccxxviii

EDwarde the fyrſte of that name & ſonne of Henry ꝑ thyrde, ſurnamed Edwarde Longe ſhanke / began hys reygne ouer England the xviii.daye of Nouembre the morowe after ſaynt Edmond the archbiſſhop in the yere of our lorde.M.CC lxxii/ & the.xi.yere of the.iii. Phylippe than kynge of Fraunce / & reygned nobly yeres.xxxiii.fo. lv
Elyanoure mother to kyng Richard was enlarged.fo. iiii
Edmounde Crouchbak was maried to the doughter of ꝑ erle of Amnarle as apereth in.fo. xliiii
Edmoūd wodſtocke wroughte treaſon.fo. lxxxviii
Edward the ſonne of Henry forſayd diſtreſſed the barons/as it is ſhewed folio. xxxix
Edwarde forſayd dyſtreſſed the Barons the ſeconde tyme/as is ſhewed folio. xxxix
Edwarde the holy kyng and confeſſour was tranſlated / as it ſhewed in folio. xliiii
Edwarde was croſſed into the holy lande/and of hys feates there done. folio. xlv
Edwarde of Carnaruan/ as apereth folio. lviii
Edward the ſecond called Edwarde Carnaruan,the ſonne of the fyrſt Edwarde / began hys dompnyon ouer Englande in the moneth of July

and yere of our lorde god.M.iii.C.& vii/and the.xxi.yere of the.iiii.Phylyppe or Philip the fayre than kynge of Fraunce / and reygned yeres full xix.fo. lxxiiii.
Edwarde the fyrst maryed to hys.ii. wyfe the Frenche kynges syster.
folio. lxb.
Edwarde the.iii.of that name, & son of Edwarde the secõde and of dame Isabell the doughter of Philippe le Beawe, or the.iiii.Phylyp late kyng of Fraunce/whych Edwarde aboute the age of.xv.yeres began hys reygn ouer the realme of England the.xxv. daye of January, in the yere of grace M.iii.C.& xxvi / and the .iiii. yere of Charles the fayre thã king of Fraũce the whyche reygned yeres.li.
folio. lxxxvi.
Edwarde Carnaruan/ was myserably slayne as is shewed. fo.lxxxvii.
Edwarde Bayloll was made kynge of Scottes.fo. lxxxviii.
Edwarde the.iii.sayled into Brabant wyth hys wyfe loke in.fo. xci.
Edward the.iii.chaleged ỹ hole kingdome of Fraunce.fo. xciii.
Edward the eldest son of the duke of yorke was electe for king of Englãd loke in.fo. cc.vi.
Edwarde the.iiii. of that name and eldest sone of Rychard duke of yorke whych was proclayned heyre parãt to the crowne, began hys dompynon ouer the realme of Englande, in the iiii.day of Marche in ỹ yere of grace M.iiii.C.lx/& the.ii.yere of the.xi.Lowys than kyng of Fraũce/& reygned at that tyme .viii.monethes & yeres viii.fo. cc.xiiii.
Edwarde the.iiii.beforenamed wan the felde of Barnet vpon Ester daye agayne kyng Hẽry the.vi. in the yere of grace.M.iiii.C.lxxi.& yere of Lowys the French kyng aforesayd/and reygned after that day.x. monethes/ and yeres .xii. So that fyrste & laste he reygned ouer.vii. monethes assygned to Henry the.vi.dayes.xxvi.monethes & yeres.xxi.or wyth the sayde monethes of Henry the.vi. set to Edwardes reygne make.xxii.yeres and odde dayes.fo. cc.xx.
Edwarde the.v.of that name & sonne of Edward the.iiii.of the age of.xiiii. yeres and lasse, began to reygne as kyng of Englãd the.x.daye of Apryll & yere of our lord.M.iiii.lxxxiii.& the xxxv.yere of the.xi. Lowys thã kyng of Fraunce / and reygned tyll the.xx. day of July next folowyng/in which season passed dayes.lxxii.
folio. cc.xxiiii.
Elizabeth the holy womã doughter of the kyng of Hungery.fo. xxi.
Eleanoure quene & of her progenye/ loke in.fo. lxi.
Emperoure of Almayne came into England.fo. c.lxvii
Emperour forsayd came agayn into thys lande.fo. c.lxxii
Enuye of Frenchmen.fo. v
Enguerram was put to deth.
folio. lxxxiii.
Epytaphye of Rychard the fyrste /as apereth in.fo. r
Epytaphye of Frederyke the emperour.fo. xxv
Epytaphye of Edward the fyrst/loke in.fo. lxviii.
Epytaphye of Edward the.iii.
folio. cxvi
Epytaphye of kyng Rychard the ii. loke in.fo. clxvi
Erthquake fell in Englãd.fo. xxv
Erle of Penbroke was ouerset with Frenchmen & other.fo. cxiii
Expressemẽt of the grudges atwene kyng Rychard the fyrst & the Frẽche kynge.fo. iiii
Eugeny pope and of hys actes.
folio. clxxxvii

FAlse Cryst was crucyfyed / as is shewed in.fo. xix

False clerke of Oxenforde whych fayned hym selfe madde, came to Wodstocke entēdyng to haue slayne king Henry the.iii.fo. xxii
Faytes or actes of warre done at Dō stable.fo. xcvi
Fysshes wonderfull takē in the.xxxv yere of kyng Hēry the.vi.fo. cci
Flozeñ of golde was made by kynge Edward the.iii.fo. xcvii
Fryers mynors came fyrst into Englande/loke in.fo. xix
Fryers Augustynes in the.xxxv.yere of kynge Hēry the.iii. buylded theyr house, in a place in walys called Wod hous as is shewed.fo. xxvi
Fryers were put to deth loke in. folio. clx
Frenche kyng sent for hys doughter that was kynge Rychardes wyfe. folio. clx
Frēch naup dyscōfyted.fo. clxxiiii.
Froste excedyng/loke in.fo. clxviii

Galcoynes make warre against Frenchmē borderers in kyng Charles the.v.days as is shewed in folio. lxxvi
Gabell or taxe reysed vppon salte in Fraunce/loke in.fo. cxix
Gupnes castell was yoldē to Englishmen/loke in.fo. ci
Grudge betwene Baldwyn and his monkes .fo. vii
Grudge arose betwene kyng Johñ & hys lordes.fo. xvi.
Grudge and dysplearure betwene ỹ bysshop of wynchester and the duke of Glouceter/it is shewed in. folio. clxxxi
Grudge and murmure toke place amonge the nobles of Fraunce/ as appereth.fo. cc.xxviii

Harme done by thonder/as appereth in.fo. cvii
Hawte wythout reuerence of the sacrament was slayne in the churche. folio. cxli
Hastynges lord Chamberleyne was sodeynly put to deth.fo. ccxxiiii
Henry the thyrd of that name & sonñ of king Johñ, a chyld of.x.yeres/began to reygne ouer Englāde, in the moneth of Octobre, and yere of oure lorde.M.CC.&.xvii/and the .xxxvii. yere of Phylppe thā kyng of Fraūce/ and reygned yeres.lvi.fo. xvii
Henry Bolyngbroke ỹ.iiii.of ỹ name and sonne & heyre of Johñ of Gaunt duke of Lācastre / the whyche Johñ was secōd sonne of Edwarde the.iii. lyuyng after theyr father, or the.iii. sonne to rekyn prynce Edward/ this Henry after the deposicīō of Rychard in the ende of the moneth of Septēbre, begā to reygne ouer Englāde, in the yere of our lorde.M.iii.C.lxxx.& xix/and the.xix.yere of Charles ỹ.vii than kyng of Fraunce/ and reygned yeres.xiii.fo. clxiii
Henry the.vi.of that name & sonñ of Henry the.v.of ỹ name & sonne of Hēry the.iiii.began hys reygne ouer the realme of Englād, vppon the morne after saynt Cuthbertys day or ỹ.xxi. day of Marche, in the ende of ỹ yere of grace.M.iiii.C.&.xiii/ and ỹ.xxxii yere of Charles the.vii.than kyng of Fraūce/and reygned yeres.ix. fo.clxx
Hēry the.v.& dame Kateryne doughter of Charles the.vi.or.vii.a chylde of halfe yere of age/begā hys reygne ouer Englād & Fraūce, in the ende of the moneth of July, and yere of our lord.M.iiii.C.&.xxii/and ỹ fyrst yere of Charles the.vii.or.viii. ỹ thāne amonge the Frenchemē was allowed for kyng/and reygned yeres.xxxix. folio. clxxix
Henry of Derby wyth other landed at Rauēspore/as is shewed.fo. cli
Henry the fyfte forsayd sayled into Fraunce/loke in.fo. clxxii
Henry Derby forenamed and of hys

ſſue is ſhewed.fo. cxliiii
Henry the.iiii.afore ſayd maryed the ducheſſe of Bꝛytayne.fo. clxvi
Herefye of Johñ wyclyf apereth. folio. cxlvii
Heretykes taken in ſaynt Gyles feld and after bꝛent.fo. clxxi
Homage done by lorꝺes of Almayne, to Rychaꝛꝺe erle of Coꝛnewayll bꝛother to kyng Henry the thyꝛꝺe. folio xxxviii
Homage done by the kyng of Scottes to kyng.E.the.iii.fo. lxxxix
Hughe holy byſſhoppe of Lyncolne dyed.fo. xi

Johñ bꝛother to Rychaꝛꝺe the fyꝛſte was oꝛꝺeyned kynge of Englaꝺe, in the moneth of Apꝛyll & yere of our lorꝺ .M.C.xcix / & the.xx. yere of the ſecond Phylyp than kyng of Fraunce/and reygned yere.xvii. The interdiccion of thys lande, begã in the.vi.yere of thys kynge, & enꝺuꝛed tyll the.xiii.yere. Henry the ſonne of Alwyn, in the.x.yere of thys kynge was admytted foꝛ the fyꝛſte mayꝛe of Lõdõ. And in the ſayd.x.yere of kyng Johñ, London bꝛyꝺge was begon to be made of ſtone.fo. x

Johñ the fyꝛſt in Fraunce of that name & ſonne of Phylyp de Valoys, began hys reygne ouer the lande of Fraunce, in the moneth of Auguſt & yere of our lorꝺ.M.iii.C.xl/ and the xxxiii.yere of ꝑ thyꝛꝺ Edward kyng of England/& reygned yeres.xiiii.

Thys kynge was taken pꝛyſoner of Edwarde, the pꝛynce of Englande at the batayll of Poytyers in Fraũce folio. cxxiii
Japhet was gotten by kynge Rychard.fo. v
Jakys de Artyuyle fauoured the Englyſſhe partye.fo. xciii
Jacke Strawe & wyll waw made an inſurrecyon.fo. clii
Jacke Sharpe was taken and putt to deth.folio. clxxxv
Jacke Cade and hys felowes. folio. cxcvi
Jacke Cade wꝛoughte moche of hys wyll in London / & after robbed & ſo ſlayne.fo. cxcvii
Jewes were banyſſhed thys lande. folio. lx
Jewes were ſpoyled & ſlayne.fo.clv.
Johñ bꝛother of kyng Rychard was pꝛowd.fo. iii
Johñ reconcyled to hys bꝛother apereth in.fo. viii
Johñ duke of Lancaſter dyed / as is ſhewed.fo. c.l.
Johñ duke of Bedfoꝛde dyed. folio. clxxxviii
Inquyſycyons were made vpon the rulers of London/ as is ſhewed in. folio. xxix
Joꝛdan of the ile of Gaſcoyne grewe out of kynde.fo. lxxxv
Inglyſſhe lorꝺes wanne fyꝛſt vppon Frenchmen.fo. xcviii
Inglyſſhe ſoudyours ſlayne vnder ſafe conduyt.fo. cxxii
Itenerarii plees were holden in Southwerke.fo. xxxi
Ile of Ely holdeth banyſſhed men. folio. xlii
Ile of Rodes fyꝛſt wonne.fo. lxxv
Iſabell late wyfe vnto kynge Rychaꝛde/was maryed to the eldeſt ſoñ of the duke of Oꝛleaunce.fo. clx
Iſſue & dyſſent of ſyꝛ Roger Moꝛtymer.fo. cxliiii
Juſtyces oꝛ iuges punyſſhed.fo. lx
Juſtes holden in Smythfelde. folio. cxliiii

Kynge Johñ and hys lãde was enterdyted.fo. x
Kynge Johñ was reconcyled to the churche.fo. xvi
Kyng Henry the.iii.ſayled into Noꝛmandy.fo. xxiiii
Kynge Henry the.iii.in pꝛoper pſone ſat in iugement.fo. xxix

Kynge

Kynge Johñs fury ſerche in.fo xliii
Kynge Johñ of Fraunce was taken
pꝛyſoner.folio cliii
Kyng Johñ was delyuered.fo. clvii
Kyng Johñ dyed in Englande.
folio clviii
Kyng Rychard ſought many pꝛouy-
ſyons.folio iiii
Kynge Rycharde ſayled into ỹ holy
lande.folio iiii
Kynge Rychard was takē pꝛyſoner.
folio vi
Kyng Rychard was delyuered.
folio. vii
Hynge Rycharde ſayled into Noꝛ-
mandy.folio ix
Kynge Rycharde aſſayled the caſtell
of Gyſoꝛs.folio x
Kynge Rycharde was ſlayne.fo. x
Kynge Henry the thyꝛd frayneth coū
ſayll of the mayꝛe.folio. xxxiiii
Kynge Henry ſayled into Fraunce
to be pꝛeſente at the Frenche kynges
parlyament.folio. xxxv
Kynge Henry was taken of hys ba-
rons.folio xxxvii
Kynge Henry layd hys ſyege to Lon
don as it is ſhewed.folio xliii
Kynge Henry choſed ſhyꝛefes.
folio xliii
Kynge Lowys toke vppon hym the
croſſe.folio xlviii
Kynge Edwarde the fyꝛſt buylde ca-
ſtelles in walys.folio lviii
Kynge Edwarde ſayled into Fraũce.
folio lix
Kynge Edwarde the.ii.was taken/ꝛ
alſo reſygned the crowne.fo. lxxii
Kynge Edward the.iii.came ſecretly
to London.folio xcvi
Kynge Edwarde warred ſharply in
Fraunce.folio xcvii
Kynge Edwarde chaſed the Spa-
nyardes from the ſee.fo. ci
Kynge Edwarde yode into Scot-
lande.fo. cii
Kynge of Scottes was delyuered.
folio ciiii
Kynge Edward ſpedde hym toward
Parys.fo. cv
Kynge of Nauerne was ſodaynly ta
ken/as it is ſhewed.fo. cxxiii
Kynge of Nauerne was ſet at large.
folio cxxvii
Kynge Edwarde warred newly in
Fraunce.fo. cxxxv
Kynge Johan was receyued into
Fraunce.fo. cxxxv
Kynge of Nauerne became feodoꝛy
vnto the French kynge.fo. cxxxvi
Kynge of Ermonye aſked ayde of
kynge Rycharde the.ii.fo. cxliii
Kyng Rychard ayded the Januayes
folio cxlv
Kyng Rychard maryed the Frenche
kynges doughter.fo. cxlvii
Kyng Richard ſayled into Irelande.
folio cli
Kyng Rycharde was myſerably put
to dethe.fo. clxv
Kyng Henry the.iiii. maryed the du-
cheſſe of Bꝛytayne.fo. clx
Kyng Henry the.v. ſayled into Noꝛ-
mandy.fo. clxxiii
Kynge Henry maryed the Frenche
kynges doughter.fo. clxxv
Kynge Henry was receyued into Lō
don.fo. clxxvi
Kyng Henry and hys wyfe ſat crow-
ned in Parys.fo. clxxvii
Kyng Henry the.vi.ſhewed hys ver-
tue beholde.fo. clxxix
Kyng Henry was dubbed knyghte.
folio clxxxii
Kinge Hēry was crowned.fo.clxxxiii
Kynge Henry was crowned at Pa-
rys.fo. clxxxv
Kynge of Scottes was murdered.
folio cxc
Kyng Hēry the.vi.was taken.fo. ccv
Kyng Edward the.iiii.was receyued
into London.fo. ccvii
Kynge Edwarde ayded the duke of
Burgoyne.fo. ccxiii
Kyng Edwarde ſpouſed dame Eliza
beth Gꝛaye.fo. ccxvi

Kynge

Kynge Edwarde fledde thys lande. folio ccxviii
Kynge Henry was taken oute of the towre.fo. ccxviii
Kynge Edwarde was proclaymed vsurper.fo. ccxix
Kynge Edwarde landed at Raynspore.fo. ccxix
Kynge Edwarde reposselled/as apereth.folio. ccxx
Kyng Hery the.vi.dyed in the towre of London.fo. ccxx
Kyng Edwardes chyldren were take out of seyntwary.fo. ccxxiiii

Lazars of Languedok were brent.fo. lxxxiiii
Letter sente by the barons to kynge Henry.fo. xxxvii
Lewelyn prynce of walys rebelled. folio lvi
Lewelyn was slayne / as appereth. folio lvii
Letter takked vpō the crosse in chepe folio. lxxi
Lordes assemble at Arundell/as apereth.folio cxlix
Lordes put to deth.fo. clxxii
Lordes fledde from Ludlowe feelde. folio. cciii
Lordes proclaymed traytours/as is shewed.folio cciii
Lordes came to London.fo. cciii
Lordes of Fraunce warre vpō theyr kynge.fo. ccv
Lordes contynue theyr malyce/as is shewed.fo. ccvi
Lordes dyscorde wythin them selfe. folio ccvii
Lorde Morley appeled the erle of Salysbury/as it is shewed in. folio. clxv
Lorde Straunge / and syr Johanne Trussell fyghte in the churche for cause shewed in.folio clxxiii
Lorde Talbot was slayne / as appereth.fo. cc
Lorde Egremoude was commytted to Newgate/as is shewed.fo. cci
Lorde wellys conspyred agayne the kynge.folio ccxvii
Lorde chamberlayne beheded / as is shewed.fo. ccxx
Losse of Normandy/ as is shewed. folio ccxviii
Lowys sonne vnto the French kyng warred in Englande.fo. xvii
Lowys retourned into Fraunce / as appereth.fo. xviii
Lowys sayled into the holy lande. folio xxb
Lowys gaue sentence agayne the barons.fo. xxxvi
Lowys the.ix.of that name and soñ of Philyp the seconde, beganne hys reygne ouer the Frencheimen, in the yere of oure lorde.M.CC.and.xxiii/ and the.vi yere of the thyrde kynge Henry than kyng of Englande / and reygned yeres.iii.By thys kynge retourned the blode of Charles into ꝑ possessyon of the crowne of Fraunce. folio xlvi
Lowys the.x.of that name a chylde of.xii.yeres,and sonne of the abouenamed the.ix.Lowys whyche is named saynt Lowys/began his reygne ouer Fraunce,in the yere of our lord M.CC.and.xxvi / and the.ix.yere of the iii.Henry than kinge of Englād/ and reygned yeres.xliii/ as apereth folio. xlvii
Lowys the.xi.by accompt and sonne of Philyp the.iiii,beganne to reygn ouer Fraunce,in the yere of our lord M.CCC.and.xv / and the.viii.yere of the seconde Edwarde than kynge of Englande,and reygned yeres .ii. folio lxxxiii
Lowys the.xii.of ꝑ name afte the accōpt of thys boke,a.x.after the frēche accōpt,wherof ꝑ cause is before shewed,soñ of the laste Charles/begā to rule ꝑ Frenchmē,in ꝑ yere of our lord M.iiii.C.and.lviii / a .xxxvi.yere of Hery the.vi.thā kyng of Englande,a reygned

reygned yeres.xxvi.fo. ccix
Lowys refused lordes company and counsayll.fo. ccix
Lowys rescueth Parys.fo. ccx
Losse of townes and castelles in Normandy.folio cxxxvii

Marvayles sene in the fyrmament.folio xii
Mayre of London presentment/ loke in.folio xxvii
Mayr and hys bretherne foūd gylty in hurtyng the cōmons.fo. xxix
Mayre and cytezeyns agreed to the lordes.fo. xxxi
Macys of syluer were fyrste graūted to offycers of London.fo. xci
Men of Norwyche enraged.fo. xlv
Manhode of Mathew de Roya. foli. liiii
Marchaunte straungers encroched vpō the cytezyns of Lōdon and were punysshed.fo. lix
Maddocke a walshman rebelled/ as it is shewed.fo. lxi
Mariage of the.ii.Edward.fo.lxxiiii
Malyce sprange amonge the lordes of Flaunders.fo. lxxxv
marueylous heyle fylle.fo. lx
Mychaell Tony mayre of London adiuged/loke in.fo. lvi
mortmayne was fyrst enacted .fo.lvi
Mortymer was howgely auaunced. folio lxxxvii
Mortymer was put to deth / as it is shewed.fo. lxxxviii
money borowed of the cytye of London.folio xcii
Martyn Pysdo Parycyen / was put to cruell deth.fo: cxxxv
maner of cysme in the church of Rome/loke in.fo. cxxxviii
Maner of the metyng of the kynges of Englande & of Fraunce.fo. cxlvii
many knyghtes of the bathe made. folio clxiii
Marvayles of Thamys.fo. clxx
masses ordeyned by kyng Henry the fyfte/as it is shewed in.folio.clxxviii
Maner of treaty betwene the landes of Englande and of Fraunce/loke in folio clxxxviii
maryage was dyspoynted.fo. cxcii
Maryage concluded.fo. cxciii
manhode of chalons.fo. cxcv
Maximilian and the Frenche kynge dyscorden.fo. ccxxviii
Margaret syster vnto Edwarde the iiii.departed from London towarde the see.fo. ccxvii
monycyon dyuyne was gyuen to the Frenche kynge.fo. clviii
Mountague a noble man was slayn folio clx
mummyng made for treason / as is shewed.fo. clxv
Murder was punysshed.fo. clxvii

Nombre of wardes in ỹ citye of London.fo. ii
Names of twelfe perys of England. folio xxx
New tolle was brought vp.fo. xliii
Nycholas Brembre wyth other was put to deth.fo. cxliii
Naupe of Frenchemen dystressed/as is shewed.fo. lv
Newe coyne of syluer was stryken. folio. lvii
New displeasure kynge Rycharde toke agayne ỹ cytye of London.fo. cl
Newe coyne of golde smitten/as appereth in.fo. clxx

Octoboon the popes legate was pursued of the clergy of Englande for causes shewed in.fo. xxii
Occasyon of the fraye in Fletestrete. folio. cxlv
Occasyon of displeasure betwene kynge Rycharde and the duke of Glouceter.fo. cxlix
Of the chere and curious receyuyng of kyng Henry by the Frēche kyng. folio xxxii
Offycers charged and discharged/ as it is

as it is shewed.folio. xxviii
Of kyng Johñs pledges.fo. cviii
Of the of scruptoures in the tyme of quene Katherins coronaciõ.fo.clxxvi
Orleaunce that cytye was besyeged folio. clxxxii
Othes swome by the kynges of Englande and of Fraunce for peace kefolio. cvii
Olyuer Dãman and Danyell sometyme chyef counsayllours of Lowys the Frenche kynge were hanged/ as appereth.fo. ccxxviii

PReface of thys werke/ as apereth.fo. I
Peace was taken betwene the kynges of Englande and of Fraunce. folio xi
Philyp kynge of Fraunce warred vpon kyng Johñ.fo. xi
Philyp brake the peace.fo. xii
Pope Innocente sente vnto kynge Johñ.fo. xiii
Parlyamente holden at London.folio. xix
Pyers of Pountfret for hys vertue put to deth.fo. xvii
Parlyament holden at Mertone. folio xxii
Periurye was punysshed / as appereth.fo. xxv
Parlyament holden at Oxenforde. as apereth.fo. xxx
Parlyament holden at westmynster. folio xxxi
Parlyament holden at Oxenforde. as is shewed.fo. xxxvi
Parlyament holden at westmynster. folio xxxviii
Parlyament holden at westmyn ster. folio xlv
Peace was made betwene the kynge and Gylbert de Clare/ as is shewed. folio xliii.
Punysshement of Londoners/ as is shewed.fo. xl
Philyp the thyrde of that name and sonne of saynte Lowys, was made kynge of Fraunce, in the yere of our lorde.M.CC.lxx/and the.liii. yere of the thyrde Henry than kynge of Englande/and reygned yeres.xv.fo. li
Philyp the.iiii.of that name and soñ of the.iii.Philyp la beawe or fayre/ began to reygne ouer Fraunce, in ỹ yere of our lorde a.M.CC.lxxvi / & the.xiiii. yere of the fyrste Edwarde than kyng of England/and reygned yeres.xxix.fo. lxviii
Philyp the.v.of that name and surnamed the longe, sonne of the fourth Philyppe and brother to Lowys the xi.by accompt/begã hys reygne ouer Fraunce, in the yere of grace a.M.iii C.and.xvii/& the.x.yere of Edwarde the.ii.than kynge of Englande/ and reygned yeres.v.fo. lxxxiii
Philyppe de Valoys, erle of Valoys, and the sonne of Charlys de Valoys brother to the fourthe Philippe/was nat wythoute some strife chosen and ordeyned for protectoure of the lande of Fraunce, and after kyng of the same, the.ii.daye of February, in the yere of oure lorde.M.iii.C.and.xxviii / and the .ii.yere of Edwarde the.iii.than kyng of Englande/and reygned in greate trouble yeres.xxii.fo. cxvi
Philyppes actes in Italye/ as appereth.folio. liii
Parlyament holden at westmynster. folio lvi
Plees remoued from London / as is shewed.fo. lvi
Punysshement for murdre/as appereth.folio. lviii
Parlyament holden at westmynster folio. lix
Parlyament holden at London / as apereth.folio lxv
Peace concluded betwene Fraunce & Flaundres.fo. lxvii
Parlyament holden at London / as apereth.fo. lxxviii

Parlyament

Parlyament holden at westmynster as is shewed in.fo. xci
Parlyament holden at Northamptō as is shewed.folio xli
Parlyament holdē at yorke.fo. lxxix
Parlyament holden at Northampton/as appereth in.fo. lxxvii
Parlyament holden at Salysbury/ as appereth in.folio lxxvii
Parlyament holden at Burye/ as is shewed.folio. cxciii
Parlyament holden at Couentre beholde in .folio cciiii
Parlyament holden at Leyceter /as is shewed.folio clxxi
Parlyament holden at Leyceter called Battys/as is shewed.fo. clxxii
Paulys steple sette on fyre.fo. ccciii
Pagentes and other ordenaunces made by Lōdoners for the receyuyng of the kynge.fo. clxxv
Parys was loste by treason / as it is shewed.fo. clxi
Peace concluded betwene the regent and the kyng of Nauerne.fo. cxxxv
Peter kynge of Castyle was beheded/as is shewed in.fo. cxi
Peryn was drawē out of the church/ and hanged/as is shewed.fo. cxxix
Plees put in exercyse for the countre of Arthoys.folio cxvii
Plees remoued frome London to yorke/as is shewed in.fo. cxlvi
Pryde of the Frenche kynge/ as it is shewed in.fo. lxxiii
Prynce Edwarde maryed the erle of Henawdes doughter.fo. lxxxi

Quene hythe was fyrste let to ferme to the cytesyns of London/as appereth.fo. xxvi
Queſt passed betwene the abbot of westmynster and the cytye of Londō as is shewed in.fo. xxxv
Quene of Englande sayled into Fraunce for cause.fo. lxxxi
Quene of Englande was proclaymed enemye.fo. lxxxi
Quene forsayd landed in England by strength.fo. lxxxi
Quene Anne was speciall good lady to the cytye of London.fo. cxlvi
Quene Anne dyed.fo. cxlvii
Quene Margarete was receyued of the Londoners.fo. cxciii
Quene Margarete made a voyage into Englande.fo. ccxv
Queue Margaret was taken / as is shewed in.fo. ccxx

Richarde the fyrst of that name and sonne of Hēry the second, began to reygne in Englande, in the yere of our lorde. M.C.xci / & the.xi. yere of the second Phylyp/ & reygned yeres wyth odde monethes.x. In the fyrste yere of thys kynge the cytye of London was commytted to the rule of two baylyfes/whyche so cōtynued tyll the.x.yere of kyng Johū, as it is shewed in.fo. iii
Rycharde the.ii.of that name, & sonn of prynce Edwarde sonn of Edward the.iii/began hys reygne ouer Englande,the.xii.daye of Juny, in ỹ yere of our lorde.M.iii.C.lxxvii/ & the.xvi yere of the.v.Charles than kynge of Fraunce/and reygned yeres.xxii. folio cxlii
Rycharde the.iii.of that name & brother vnto Edwarde the.iiii. beynge duke of Glouceter and protectour of England, began to vsurpe the.xxvi. daye of Juny/in the yere of our lorde M.iiii.C.lxxxiii.& yere of Lowis thā kyng of Fraunce / and so contynued yeres.ii.full/& as moche as from the xx.day of Juny to the.xxii.day of August/by dayes.lvii.fo. ccxxv
Ranulphe erle of Chester and of hys doughters.fo. xxi
Rayne excedyng.fo. lxxvii
Resygnacyon of the duchye of Normandy.folio xxxii
Resygnacyon of kynge Rycharde. folio clii

Resygna-

Reſygnacyon ſhewed in the parlyament.folio cliii
Robert Knollys knyghte and of hys feates.folio ciiii
Robert Knollys toke ſaynt Omiers/ and other holdes.fo. cxi

Sauoye a place of honoure in London was bꝛent by the cõmons.folio. cxlii
Saynt mary Ouerꝛes in Southwerke was fyꝛſte bylded.fo. xv
Sait Stephyns chapell of weſtmynſter begonne.fo. cix
Spege layde to ſaynte Omyers folio xciiii
Spege layde to Ampas.fo cxxxiiii
Scottyſſhe kynge dyd homage to kyng Johñ.fo. xi
Scottes bꝛekyng theyꝛ othe.fo. lxiii
Scottes were ſubdued.fo. lxiii
Scottes had peace to theyꝛ aduauntage.fo. lxxxvii
Scottes were agayne ouerturned. folio lxxxviii
Scotiſſhe kynge taken pꝛyſoner. folio cii
Spenſers were banyſſhed.fo.lxxviii
Spenſers bothe the father and the ſonne were put to deth.fo. lxxxii
Sõne was turned to the coloure of blode.folio lxxx

Tanner a byllayne ſurmyſed hym heyꝛe to the crowne of Englande.fo. lxxvi
Table of ſyluer was gyuen to kyng Rychard.fo. cxlvii
Templers knyghtes of religyõ were dyſtroyed.fo. lxxii
The ſentence agayne kynge Johan was denounced.fo. xii
The wardys of London were ceſſed folio xcii
Thꝛe fyftenes were grauñted at one tyme.folio cxi
Tytle oꝛ ryghte whyche the kyng of Englande hath vnto Scotlãde/ſe in folio lxii
Tytle of Edwarde the thyꝛde whych he hadde to the crowne of Fraunce. folio cxvi
Tytle of the duke of Glouceter had to the crowne was ſhewed at Paules croſſe.fo. cxxxiii

Wardes and churches wythin Lõdon.fo. ii
Uarpaunce began betwene the pope and kyng Johñ.fo. xii
Uarpaunce betwene Londõ & Nozthampton.fo. xxxiii
warre betwene the kynge of Englãd and of Fraunce.fo. xiii
warre was concluded betwene the ſayd landes.fo. cxxxiii
warre betwene kynge Johñ and hys lozdes.fo. xvii
warre was made in Nozmandy/ as appereth.fo. lxii
warre made in Guyan wyth foꝛtune therof.fo. lxxx
warre betwene the Frenche kynge & the kynge of Nauerne.fo. cxxiii
warde and marpage of heyꝛes was graunted to the kynge.fo. xx
wyllyam walwoꝛthe ſlewe Jacke Strawe.folio cxii
Uſurers were punyſſhed/as it appereth.folio cxxi

☞ Here endeth the ſeconde (::) Table. (.·.)

NOw for as mych as we be comen to the tyme, that officers were chosen and chargyd wyth the rule of the cytye of London / yt is necessary that here we do shewe what offycers they were, & of the name that to them was admitted ad gyuen. Then ye shall vnderstand that at the commynge of wyllyam conquerour into thys lande, as euydently apperyth by the charter of hym to the cytezens of London graunted / that before those dayes and then, the rulers of the sayde cytezens were named Port greuys / whyche worde ys diriuate or made of .ii. saxon wordes, as port and greue. Port is to meane a town, and greue is ment for a gardyen or ruler / as who wolde meane, gardeyn, ruler, or keper of the town. These of olde tyme, wyth the lawes and customys then vsyd within thys cytye / were regystred in a boke called the Domysday in Saxon tunge then vsed. But in later dayes when the sayde lawes and customes alteryd and chaunged, and for consyderacyon also that the sayde boke was of small hande and sore defacyd, yt was the lesse set by, so that yt was enbeselyd or loste / so that the remembraunce of suche rulers as were before the dayes of thys Rycharde the fyrst, whose story shall next ensue, are loste and forgoten.

Wherfore nowe I shall begynne at the fyrste yere of the sayde fyrste Rycharde, the whyche of some wryters is surnamed Cure de Lyon / and so contynew the names of all offycers, as well baylyuys, mayres, and shyrues, tyll the laste yeres of Rycharde the thyrde kynge in dede and not of ryght. whyche baylyues I shall appoynt the rule of, from Mychelmas to Mychelmas / and the mayres frō suche tyme and season as nowe ys accustomyd & vsed, that is to saye from the daye of Symon and Jude vnto the same feste nexte ensuynge / vpon whyche daye the newe mayre taketh hys charge at the Guylde hall, and the olde mayre is there and then dyscharged of the sayde offyce of mayraltye.

Nowe wolde I fayne
In wordes playne
Some honour sayne
And bryngе to mynde
Of that auncyent cytye
That so goodly is to se
And full trewe euer hath be
And also full kynde.

To pryncе and kynge
That hath borne iuste rulynge
Syn the fyrste wynnynge
Of thys Jlande by Bzute
So that in great honour
By passynge of many a showre
It hath euer borne the flowre
And laudable bzute.

Of euery cytye and towne
To seche the worlde towne
Neuer yet caste downe
As other many haue be
As Rome and Carthage
Hyerusalem the sage
wyth many other of age
In storye as ye maye se

Thys so oldely founded
Is so surely groundyd
That no man may confounde yt
It is so sure a stone
That yt is vppon sette
For though some haue yt thzette
wyth manasses grym and great
yet hurte hadde yt none

Cryste is the very stone

That the cytye is sette vppon
whyche from all hys foon
Hath euer preserued yt
By meane of dyuyne scrupce
That in contynuall wyse
Is kepte in deuout guyse
wythin the mure of yt

As houses of relygyon
In dyuerse places of thys towne
whyche in great deuocyon
Ben euer occuppyed
when one hath done another begyn
So that of prayer they neuer blyn
Suche order is these houses wythin
wyth all vertue allyed.

The parysshe chyrches to reken
Of whych nomber as I shall speken
wherin speke many preste and deken
And Cryste dayly they serue
By meane of whyche sacrifyce
I truste that he in all wyse
Thys cytye for her scrupce
Doth euer more preserue.

This citie I meane is Troynouaũt
where honour & worshyp doth haũte
wyth vertue and ryches accordaũte
No cytye to yt lyke
To speke of euery commodytye
Flesshe and fysshe and all dentye
Cloth and spyce wyth wyne plentye
That is for hole and syke.

Brede and ale wyth spyces fyne
wyth houses fayre to soupe & dyne
Nothynge lackynke that is cõdygne
For man that is on molde
wyth ryuers freshe & holsom ayer
wyth women that be good and fayre
And to thys cytye done repayre
Of straungers many folde.

The vytayle that herein is spente
In thyre housholdes dayly tente
Betwene Rome and ryche Kent
Are none may theym compare

As of the mayre and shyriues twayne
what myght I of the iustyce sayne
Kepte wythin this cytye playne
It were longe to declare.

For though I shulde all day tell
Or that wyth my ryme dogerell
Myght I not yet halfe do spell
Thys townes great honoure
Therfore shortely as I began
Pray for yt both chylde and man
That yt may continue and
To bere of all the floure

And so to dwell in reste and peace
Good lorde graunt that yt not cease
But euer to haue more encreace
If yt be thy wyll
And to contynue the olde fame
The kynges chaũber ỹ ỹ right name
London to kepe wythout blame
As yt hath hyther tyll.

who so hym lyketh these vȳs to rede
with fauour I pray he will thẽ spell.
Let not the rudenesse of theym hym
lede,
For to despraue thys ryme dogerell.
Som pte of ỹ honour it doth you tel
Of thys olde cytye Troynouaunt.
But not therof the halfe dell/
Cõynge in the maker is so adaunt

But though he had the eloquence
Of Tully, and the moralytye
Of Seneck, and the influence
Of the swyte sugred Armonye,
Of that fayre ladye Caliope:
yet had he not cõynge perfyght,
Thys cytye to prayse in eche degre/
As yt shulde duely aske of ryght.

HEre after I shall declare the
wardes of this forsayd citye/
with also ỹ parysh chyrches ỹ stande
within the sayd wardes. And after I
shal shew to you ỹ houses of religyõ
standynge

ſtandyng in the cyrcuyte of the ſame cytye.

The warde of the towre wherin are thre paryſhe chyrches. .i.
Saynt Olaue
Alhalown at Barkynge.
Saynt Dunſtane.

Byllyngſgate. .ii.
Saynt Botulphe
Saynt George in podynge lane
Saynt Andrewe in Eſtchepe
Saynt Margarete callyd Patens.
Saynte Mary hyll.

Lande brydge warde .iii.
Saynte Benet at Grace chyrche
Saynt Leonarde in Eſtchepe
Saynt Margarete in Brydgſtret
Saynte Magne in Brydgeſtrete.

Dowgate warde .iiii.
Saynte Laurence Pountenay
Alhalown the more
Alhalown the leſſe.

walbroke warde. .v.
Saynt Johñ in walbroke
Saynt Mary Bothawe
Saynte Swythyne in Candelwyke ſtrete.
Saynte Stephan in walbroke
Saynt Mary wolchyrch in ỹ pultry
Saynt Syth in Bocierſbury.

Candelwyke ſtrete warde. vi.
Saynte Martyne Orgor
Saynt Clement
Saynt Mychaell in Crockyd lane
Saynte Mary Apchyrche.

Langbourne warde .vii.
Alhalown Stanis in Lumbarſtrete
Saynt Gabryell
Saynt Denys in Fanchyrche ſtrete
Saynt Edmund
Saynte Nycolas Acon
Saynt Mary wolnoth in Lumbarde ſtrete.

Algate warde. .viii.
Saynt Andrewe vnderſhaft
Saynt Katheryns by Cryſtes chyrch
Saynt Katheryne Colman.

Porte Sowkyn warde. .ix.
Saynt Botulphe without Algate.

Lyme ſtrete warde. .x.
Saynt Mary Maxe.

Byſhoppes gate warde. .xi.
Saynt Botholphe at the gate
Saynt Alborgth.
Alhalowns wythin ſaynt Helyns.

Cornehyll warde. xii.
Saynt Mychaell
Saynt Petyr

Bradſtrete warde. .xiii.
Saynt Martyne Owtewyche
Saynt Benet Fynke
Saynt Bartheln̄ew the lytle
Saynt Cryſtofer.
Saynt Petyr the poore
Alhalowns in the walle.

Colmanſtrete warde .xiiii.
Saynt Stephan.
Saynte Olaff in the Jury.
Saynt Margaret in Lothbery.

Chepe warde. .xv.
Saynt Laurence in the Jury
Saynt Mary Bowe
Alhalowns in Hony lane
Saynte Mary of Colchyrche
Saynt Myldredys in the Pultry
Saynt Benet ſhorhogge
Saynte Martyne Ponyets
Saynt Martyn in Iremonger lane
Saynt Mary.

Cordwayner ſtrete warde .xvi.
Saynt Mary or Aldermary

Saynt Ancelyne
Saynte Pancras.

Quene hyth warde .xvii.
Saynte Mychaell.
Saynt Mary somerset
Saynt Mary Mouthawe
Saynt Nycholas Olaffe
Saynt Nycholas colde abbey
Saynt Petyr.

Bredstrete warde. xviii.
Alhalows in Bredstrete.
Saynt Mylbrede
Saynt Mathye
Saynt Johñ euangelyst
Saynt Augustyne at Poules gate
Saynt Margarete moyses
Saynt Botolphe.
Saynt Margarete in Fryday strete.

Vyntry warde .xix.
Saynt Martyne
Saynt Mychell colege
Saynt Thomas apostle
Saynt Jamys Garlyke hyth
Trynyte in knyghtryder strete.

Baynarde castell warde. .xx.
Saynte Andrew
Saynt Benet
Saynt George
Saynt Mary Magdaleyne in olde Fysshe strete.

Faryngedon warde wyth in .xxi.
Saynt yeuan
Saynt Nicholas in ỹ Flesheshãblis
Saynt Faythys in Powlys chyrche
Saynt Martyne wythin Ludgate
Saynt Mychaell at Querne
Saynt Fauster in fauster lane
Saynt Petyr at the crosse of Chepe
Saynte Gregory in Poulys chyrch yarde.
Saynte Genyn wythin saynte Martyne the graunte.

Faryngdon warde wythout .xxii.
Saynt Dunston
Saynt Bryde
Saynt Andrew in Holborne
Saint Sepulcre without Newgate

Aldrysgate warde .xxiii.
Saynt Botolphe wythout the gate
Saynte Anne
Saynt Johñ zachary
Saynt Leonarde in Fauster lane
Saynt Mary stanynge
Saynt Mathew in syluer strete.

Bassynges haue warde .xxiiii.
Saynte Mychaell there.

Crepelgate warde xxv.
Saynte Mary magdaleyn in mylke strete.
Saynt Mary in Aldermanbury
Saynt Mychaell in Hogynlane
Saynt Albons in woodstrete
Saynt Alphy by Crepulgate
Saynt Olaff in Syluer strete
Saynt Gylys wythout the gate.

The summe of the paryshe chyrches wythin London .C.xiii.

Here after ensue the howsys of relygyon, monasteryes, colleges, chapellys, and other beynge no paryshe chyrches wythin the cytye.

The cathedrall chyrch of saynt Poule in the ende of Chepe.
The pryory of saynte Barthelmewe in Smythfelde.
The hospytall or spytyll a cell of the sayde pryory.
The charter house standyng wythin the warde of Crepulgate.
Elsynge spytall wythin the sayde warde.
The chapell of our Lady of Bedlem in Bysshoppes gate warde.
The house of saynt Elyne in ỹ same warde of nunnys,

The

The prypry of Cryſtes chyrche with in Algate.
Saynte Anne abbaye wythin Portſokyn warde of whyte munkys.
The howſe of ỹ Menereſſys of cloſe nunnys wythin the ſame warde.
The chapel of our lady of Barkyng in the towre warde.
An howſe of croſſed frerys in the ſame warde.
A colege of ſaynt Antony in ỹ warde of Bredſtrete.
A colege of ſaynte Thomas called Acrys ſtandynge in Chepe.
An houſe of frere Auguſtynes in Brode ſtrete warde.
An houſe of gray frerys ſtandyng in the warde Faryngedon wythin.
An houſe of blacke freres ſtandynge by Ludgate within ỹ forſaid warde
An houſe of whyte freres ſtandynge in Flete ſtrete.
A chyrche or college called the Temple ſtandynge at Temple barre.
A chapel ſtandyng in pardon chyrch yarde wythin Poulys.
A chapell ſtandyng in ỹ chirch yarde at Poulys ouer the charnell houſe.
A chapell ſtandynge wythin Crepell gate ſaynt Jamys in the wall.
A chapell called Pappey ſtãdyng be ſyde Biſhoppes gate founded by the preſtes of that fraternyte.
A chapel of corp⁹ Criſti in ỹ Pultry.
A chapell of ſaynt Thomas of Cãterbury ſtãdyng vpon Lõdonbridge.
A chapell ſtandynge in yelde Hall yarde of our Lady.
A colege of prieſtes ſtandynge by Poulys called ſaynte Martyne le graunde.

The ſumme of houſys of relygyon, chapellys, and other. xxvii.

weſtmynſter.

The abbbaye of weſtmynſter
The kynges newe chapell
Saynte Stephans chapell
Saynt Margaretes chyrche.
A chapell at Totehyll
A chapell of ſaynt Anne in Totchyll ſtrete.
Saynte Jamys in the felde.
A chapell at Rauncyuale.
A paryſhe chyrche therby of ſaynte Martyne.
A chapell of our lady of Pewe.

Chyrches, monaſteryes, chapellys and other houſys wherin god is daply ſerued / ſtandynge in the cyrcuyte of the cytye wythoute the wallys and fyrſte.

wythoute Algate.

A paryſhe chyrche of our ladye ſtandynge wythoute the barrys called whyte chapell.
A colege of ſaynte Katheryne ſtandynge on the eeſt ende of the towre of London.
A paryſhe chyrch or chapell wythin the ſayde towre, of ſaynte Peter.

Southwarke.

The monaſtery of Bermundſey
A paryſhe chyrch of Mary Magdaleyne ſtandynge faſte by.
A paryſhe chyrche of ſaynt George.
A paryſhe chyrch of ſaynt Magaret.
An hoſpitall or college of ſaynt Thomas.
A paryſhe chyrche of ſaynte Olas.
A monaſtery of chanõs callyd ſaynt. Mary Ouereys/and with a paryſhe chyrche of ſaynt Mary Magdaleyn ſtandynge faſte thereby.

wythout the Temple barre.

A paryſhe chyrch of ſaynte Clement.
A chapell of ſaynte Spyrryte.
Saynte Urſula at ſtrande.

wythoute Smythfelde.

The prypry of ſaynte Johñ in Hieruſalem.
A houſe of nũnys named Clerkẽwel
A a chapell in pardon chyrche yarde

wythout Bysshoppes gate.
Shordyche parysshe chyrche.
Sayute Mary spyttell.
A house of nunnys callyd Halywell.

And of the dyuyne houses without the cytye. xxviii.

The summe of all the dyuyne houses wythin the cytye and wythoute is a hundred and.lxviii.

RIcharde the fyrst of that name, and seconde sonne of Henry the second/ begaune hys reygne ouer Englād in the moneth of July, and yere of our lorde.x. hundred.lxxx.and.x/and the.xi. yere of the seconde Phylyppe then kynge of Fraunce.

Thys Rycharde prouyded besely to sette good rule in Normādy, when he hadde harde of hys fathers deth, and after spedde him into England/ where he was toyously receyued / & in the moneth of September folowynge and thyrde daye, he was crowned at westmynster of Baldwyn arch bysshoppe of Caunterburye. Uppon the whyche daye the Jewys of Englande, and specyally suche as dwelyd within London and nere about/ assembled of them a certayn nomber, and presumyd farther then requyred for theyr authoryte. For whyche presumpcyon they were fyrste rebuked, & after one of thē strykē. which thyng sene of the cōmon people, supposyd that to be done by the kynges commaundement. wherfore in a fury as those that they hated as the deuyll for theyr vsury & other vnhappy condycyons, they fell vppon theym, and chased them to theyr houses, & them robbed and spoyled wythout pytye, and brent some of theyr houses/ wher of the rumour ranne to westmynster to ỹ kynges audyēce. wherfore in all haste he sent downe / gyuyng strayte cōmaundement that they shuld cease of that ryot. But the people were in suche ire and wodenesse, that they refrayned not for all the kinges sonde, tyll they hadde executed the fyne of theyr malyce. And all be yt that thys ryot was after greuously shewyd agayne the commons of the cytye/ yet yt passed vnpunyshed, for the great nomber of the transgressours.

And the sayde daye of coronacyon/ all prysoners that lay in any pryson aboute London at the kynges sute, or for other small or fayned accyons, were frely delyuerȳd.

Soone after the kynge gaue māny dygnytyes / and to hys brother Johñ he gaue the prouynces of Notyngham, Deuonshyre, and Cornewall / and creatyd hym erle of Lancaster. And then the kynge ordeyned the cytye of London to be ruled by two baylyues whose names were as folowyth.

Anno domini.M.C.xc. Anno domini.M.C.xci.

Henry of Cornehyll

Balliui Anno primo.

Rycharde fyrst Kyuer.

IT was not longe after that ỹ the kynge hadde thus exalted hys brother Johñ as before is shewyd / but that he also preferryd hym to the maryage of the erle of Glouceters doughter/ by reason wherof he

was

was lorde of that erledome. These great auaũcementis made him after vnkynde to his broder/and by pryde therof to couеyt afterwarde the hole kyngdome.

Thys yere kynge Rycharde was assoyled of the offence that he had vsyd in rebellyon agayne hys father. In recompẽsacyon wherof as testyfyeth the authour Guydo/ he voluntaryly toke vppon hym and promysed to warre vppon Crystes enymyes. All be yt that other wryters shewe, that yt was for that that hys father had so wylled hym by hys lyfe. But for what cause, so yt was, preparacyon and prouysyon for that iourney was made from that daye forthwarde.

Thys yere also the kynge enlarged Elyanoure hys moder/whyche long before at the commaundement of his father her husbande, was as a prysoner kepte in secrete keppynge. After whych enlargyng, ỹ land was mych guydyd by her counsayll. And thys yere,as sayth Ranulfe / kynge Rycharde gaue ouer the castellis of Barwyke and Rochysburghe to ỹ Scottyshe kyng, for the summe of.x. thousande pounde, for the exployte of his voyage. And farther more he sold to the olde bysshoppe of Durham hys owne prouynce for a great summe of money, and creatyd hym erle of the same. wherfore the kynge sayde after in game, I am a wonders crafty man/ for I haue made a new erle of an old bysshop. By suche meanes the kyng emptyed many bysshoppes and ryche prestys bagges and kylled hys cokers. And ouer that he graunted oute annuytyes and fees oute of the crowne, as though he roughte nothynge of hys retournynge. For this dede some of hys kamplyers as they durste blamed hym. But he sayde to thẽ ỹ in tyme of nede,it was good policy for a man to ayde hym wyth his owne. And more ouer he ioyned ther to, that yf London were hys /at that tyme of nede he wolde sell yt, yf he myght gete a conuenyent marchaũt that for yt were able to paye.

An other waye he hadde also to gather money / for he hadde lycence of pope Innocent the thyrd of that name, to dyspence wyth suche as hym lyked wythin his realme for takyng vppon theym the crosse.

Anno domini.M.C.xci. Anno domini.M.C.xcii.

Johñ Herlyon.

Balliui Anno secundo

Roger duke.

In the seconde yere in the moneth of October / kynge Rycharde betoke the gouernyng of the lande vnto the bysshoppe of Ely then chaunceller of Englande,and sayled into Normandye/where settynge the coũtrey vnder sadde gouernyng, shortly after mette with the Frenche kyng Phylyp the second/the whych ioyntly rode to Turon,and there ouer passyd the shortnesse of wynter. In whyche passe tyme makynge eyther wyth other assuraunce for contynuaunce of so great a iourney / at the sprynge of ỹ yere these two princes toke theyr voyage towarde the holy lande/that is to meane kyng Rycharde by ỹ see, and kynge Phylyppe by the lande/ and appoynted to mete agayn in the land of Scicilia or Scycyll. In this meane tyme, in England the Jewes in dyuers places of ỹ realme,as Lyncolne,Staunforde,and Lynne were robbed and spoyled/ and at yorke,to

the nomber of foure hundzed & mo, cutte theyz mayster beynes and bled to deth.

The two kynges accozdynge to theyz appoyntemēt met in Scycyll/ where grudge beganne to kyndle be twene theym foz cozrecpon of theyz fouldpours. Then the French kyng departyd agayne from kynge Rychарde / the whyche there made certayne ozdynaunces foz warre, as a towze oz castell of tymber whyche he named Mategryffons / and also pzo uyded foz vytayll foz both hostes.

In thys tyme also the kynge of Cypzys hadde taken two shyppes of kynge Rychарde, and denyed the delyuery of theym. wherfoze the sayde Rychарde entryd the land of Cypzis makynge therin sharpe warre/ & chasyd so the kynge from cytye to cytye, that lastely he yelded him vnto kyng Rychарde, vppon condicyon that he shulde not be thzowen in bondes of iron/ wherof kynge Rychарde in keppynge of hys pzomyse caste hym in bondes of syluer.

When kynge Rychарde hadde dwelyd there vppon two monethes, and hadde taken his pleasure of that coū trey, and taken amendes at his own wyll foz hys shyppes/ then he departed from the sayde yle of Cypzis, and sayled towarde Acon oz Acris. In whyche course so keppynge towarde Acris/ he encountred a great shyppe of the Soudans of Sury, fraughte wyth great ryches, and toke yt / and so came at length to ỳ cytye of Acris, where at that tyme lay befoze ỳ sayd towne the Frenche kynge wyth hys hoste/ and had lost a lytle befoze two thousande of hys men, whyche were partyd from hys hoste to haue done an enterpzyse vppon the Turkes / but they were layde foz & dystressed.

Then as testyfyeth Peter Dyscroy, kynge Rychарde was ioyously receyued of the Frenche kynge. After whose commynge yt was not longe that the sayd cytye was gyuen vp by appoyntement as folowyth, and as affermeth the sayde Peter, and also the cronycle of Fraunce. Fyrste that the Saralyns shulde departe out of the cytye/ leuynge behynde theym hoze, harneys, vytayll, and all other thynge belongynge to warre. Also they shulde cause to be restozyd all such pzysoners of crystē men as they had vnder theyz keppyng, wyth other couenauntes whyche I passe ouer. And thus was the cytye of Acris yelden into the crysten mennes handes, in the moneth of Auguste, & the yere of our lozde. xi. hundzed. lxxx. and. xii. But when yt came to the partyng of the pzaye of the cytye/ there beganne malyce to kyndle hys bzonde, whych was not lyghtly after quenchyd.

Of thys varyance betwene these two kynges of England & of Fraūce dyuers maners are shewyd. Foz Polycronica sayth that yt beganne by reason that kynge Rychарde denyed vnto kynge Phylyp halfe hys wynnynges in Cypzis, accozdyng to the couenauntis betwene theym assured at Turon. But kyng Rychard sayd that the cōuencyon there made/ stretched no fozther then to suche goodes as was wonne wythin the lymytes oz boundes of the holy lande. An other grudge was, by reason that the French kyng ayded not ỳ erle of Champeyne beynge in dystresse of nede. wherfoze the sayde erle beynge discontent sayde to the frēche kyng. Syz hytherto I haue done accozdynge to my dutye / but hereafter I shall do as I am compellyd be nede. Foz your grace hath hytherto cherysshed me but foz myn/ but now I shal go to hym ỳ is moze redy to gyue thē to take / and so departed to kyng Rychарde, of the whyche he had all hys pleasure.

pleasure. The thyrde cause was as sayth Ranulph, for as mych as kyng Rycharde at hys begynnyng in Scycyll maryed the syster of the kynge of Nauerne / where before he hadde promysed to mary the syster of the sayde kynge Phylyppe. But of these artycles speketh nothyng the frenche cronycle / all be it he layeth greate default vnto kynge Rycharde / sayeng in sedycyous and vyle wordys, that kyng Rycharde falsly brake hys appoyntmentes, and kepte no promesse that by hym was made. Moreouer the sayd cronycle sayth that he solde the ile of Cyprys vnto the Templers for .xxx. thousande marke / and after toke it agayne frō them by strength, and delyuered it vnto Guy de Lesygnan that was the laste crystened kynge of Hierusalem. And ouer this the sayde frenche cronycle sayth, that he toke from a knyght of the duke of Ostrych the sayd dukes banner / and in despyte of the sayde duke trade it vnder fote, and dyd vnto it all the despyte he myghte. And ouer all thys, where as Conradus Markes of Tyre was traytorously slayn by two of his owne seruauntes / that kyng Rycharde shulde laye the charge therof vnto the frenche kynge.

For these grudges and sykenesse, wyth also fere of treason to be wrought bytwene Saladyne the Soudā, and kynge Rycharde as affermeth or allegeth the forsayde authoure / kynge Phylyppe wyth a small company of shyppes departed from Acō or Acris, & sayled to Puyll or Poyll / and there restynge hym a season, cōtynued hys iourney vnto Rome, and so lastely into hys owne prouynce of Fraunce.

Anno domini. M. C. xcii. Anno domini. M. C. xciii.

wyllyam Hauershall.

Balliui Anno .iii.

Johñ Buknot.

In the thyrde yere and moneth of Nouember, when the frenche kynge was thus departed / kyng Rychard with the duke of Burgoyn whom the French kynge hadde lefte behynde hym to haue the rule of the frenche hoste lafte and remaynyng in Acre and the countre there about, called before hym dyuers persons or pledges of Turkes, for the performaunce of certayne appoyntementes taken wyth them at ꝑ wynnynge or gyuynge vp of the sayde cytye of Acris. wherof one especiall couenaūt was, that by a certayne daye than expyred, they shulde cause ꝑ holy crosse to be restored vnto the crysten prynces. The whyche for he saw well that they wolde not or myghte not performe / he therfore put in execucyon of Turkes ouer the noumber of .v. thousande as testyfyeth the frenche cronycle. But that agreed not all of the beste wyth the former sayeng / cōsyderynge the cytye was delyuered by appoyntement, there shulde not so many Turkes remayne there. But Peter Dyscroye sayth, that for breakynge of thys appoyntement, kynge Rycharde put to deth all suche Turkes as were than wythin the cytye of Acris / whyche maye be ment by the hostages or pledges.

It was not longe after that tydynges were brought vnto kyng Rycharde, that the cytye of Hierusalem was wythout any greate strength of Soldyours, and that it myghte be wonne wyth easy labour. wherfore kyng Rychard assembled the lordes to haue

to haue theyr coũsayll / where it was cõcluded that euery cappteyne ſhuld prepare hym to go thyther. Uppon whyche agrement, the cryſten hoſte ſped them in ſuch wyſe, ỹ they were within.v.myles of ỹ ſayd city of Hieruſalem / where they toke a new coũſayll how they ſhuld order them and theyr people to lay theyr ſpege about the cytye. In whyche coũſayll it was concluded, ỹ kynge Rycharde wyth hys Engliſhe men ſhulde haue the vawewarde / and the duke of Burgoyne the rere warde. After whyche concluſyon taken/ the kynge ſpedde hym vppon his waye towarde the cytye. But by what myſhappe or myſfortune I can not ſaye / ſo ſoone as the kynge was departed, the duke called the lordes of Fraunce before hym / and ſayde, yt is eupdent vnto you, that all be yt our hedde and ſouerayne lorde is abſent, the floure of the chyualry of Fraũce is preſent. And yf any thyng be done to the honour of the Cryſten, and reproche of infydels/yt is moſt lykely to be done by vs, conſyderyng ỹ inſufficyencye of Engliſhemen and other. yet neuertheleſſe, what someuer honoure grow by our dedis to ỹ criſten hoſte/ yt ſhall be accompted vnto kyng Rycharde becauſe of hys preſence/ ſo ỹ we ſhall haue all the payne and trauayll, and Engliſhemen ſhall haue the honour. wherfore if ye wyll do by my counſayll/ we wyll returne vnto Acrys, and there tarye tyll we ſe farther. Some agreed to this counſayll and the more in nomber / & the other ſpedde them in all haſte after kynge Rycharde, and ſhewed to hym of the dukes returne/ wherof he beynge ſo enfourmed returned alſo vnto Acris.

It was not longe after that the ſayd duke was taken wyth greuous ſykeneſſe and dyed. And about that tyme alſo dyed Baldewyn archbyſſhoppe of Caunterburye / whyche amonge other lordes of Englande, accompanyed the kynge in that iourney.

Anno domini.M.C.xciii. Anno domini.M.C.xciiii.

Nycholas Duke.

Balliui Anno quarto.

Petyr Nowlay.

ABout the ſeaſon of Mychelmaſſe, in ỹ.iiii.yere of the reygne of thys ſayde Rycharde / tydynges were brought hym ỹ the town or caſtell of Japheth was beſyeged of Salãdyne/ and lykely to be ſoone wonne, wythout the cryſten were the ſooner ayded. wherfore kynge Rycharde, whych Peter Dyſtroy calleth the good kynge Rycharde/ſped hym thyther with his army by water, and ſent a nother hoſte of Frẽchemen and other by lande. But ſo yt was or the criſten myght wynne thyther/ ỹ ſayd towne and caſtell were wonne / and the pryſoners therin taken, were ſent by water towarde ſuch pryſones as Salandyne hadde appoynted them vnto. wyth the whyche of good fortune kynge Rycharde mette, & them reſcowyd. And that done, wyth the Turkes whyche theym conueyed he put in ſure holde / and helde on hys iourney to Japheth / and there by ſtrength reſcuyd the towne & caſtell, ond reſtoryd the cryſten to theyr former poſſeſſyon, and left wyth theym more ſtrength of knyghtes. And for to be the more feryd of the myſcreaũtes/ kynge Rycharde cauſed hys pryſoners to hym belongynge to be ſlayne, where other ſolde theym to

theyr

theyr great auaũtage/by mean wher of he was hadde in wonderfull fere of the Turkes.

Then kynge Rycharde after thys victoyr hadde at Japheth/wonne.ii. strong holdes callyd Daron and Gazes, and strengthyd them wyth cryſten knyghtes. And wyth ſuch goodes as he there wãne of the Turkes, he repayred the caſtel of Aſcalon and other,that greatly was impayred by the warre of the Turkes.

In thys ſeaſon and tyme ỹ kyng Rycharde was thus occuppyd in the holy lande / the byſhoppe of Ely as before is ſayde haupnge the rule of Englande, dyd many cruell dedys/ and oppreſſyd the clergy and alſo the lay fee. He wolde cõmenly ryde with a thouſande horſe / and greued abbeys by meane of hys geſtys or lodgynge wyth theym. Alſo he helde in hys handes the ſee of yorke for longe ſeaſon. And after ỹ deth of Balwyne dede as before is ſhewed in the holy land/ he alſo toke the ſee of Caunterbury vnder hys rule. Then he pryued Geffrey that was choſen to the ſee of yorke of hys mouables/& caſte him as priſoner in ỹ towre of Lõdon. And ſoon after called a counſayll at weſtmynſter as the kynges procuratour, and as legate of the pope then Innocent the.iii. At thys counſayll Hughe Nouaunt then byſhoppe of Cheſter,& great famplyer of the ſayd byſhoppe of Ely/ putte forth a complaynt agayne ỹ munkes of Couentre, that they hadde ſhed the ſayde Hughys blood before the hygh auter of theyr chyrche. For whych cauſe the byſhoppe of Ely dempd, that the ſayde munkys ſhulde be putte from theyr ſayde abbey,& clerkes ſhuld be ſet there for thẽ/ ſo that by myght the munkes were put thens and diſperbled about in ſondyr placis,and clerkes wyth prebendys ſet in theyr ſtallys. For thys dede ſayth Guydo and other, that thys Hugh byſhoppe of Cheſter hadde thus cauſyd the munkes of Couentre to loſe theyr lande and houſe / he toke therfore ſo great repentaunce, that vppon hys deth bed he axed of god that for a due and conuenyent penaunce, he myght redeme that offence by the lyeng in the fyre of purgatoyr from ỹ daye of his deth vnto the generall day of dome.

Alſo the forenamed byſhoppe of Ely called in proper name wyllyam de longe ſhampe / contynuynge hys tyrannyes, pryuyd Hugh byſhoppe of Durham of all maner worſhippe/ and greued the byſhoppe of wynchester,and wretched nygh all the lande. But ſo faſte as thys innaturall or cuyll diſpoſyd man beſyed hym to ver and greue the cryſten men in Englande/ ſo faſt beſyed this good kyng Rycharde to bere & dere the infydels of Sury. So ỹ dayly he wanne of theym / or at the leſte putte theym from the wynnynge of ſuche townes and holdes, as they by theyr great ſtrength entendyd to haue wonne.

Anno domini.M.C.xciiii. Anno domini.M.C.xcv.

Roger Duke.

Balliui Anno quinto

Rycharde fyr Aleyn.

In the ende of September and begynnynge of the fyfte yere of kynge Rycharde/ Guy de Leſyngeman laſte cryſten kynge of Hieruſalem dyed/ & Thoras a noble Cryſten man captayne of a towne called Sur,was ſhortly after ſlayne by the Turkes,whoſe wyfe for as mych as

ſhe was

she was ryghtfull enheryto̅r of the crowne of Hierusale̅/ the kyng gaue her in marryage vnto ꝑ erle of Champayne. And for kynge Rychard perceyued well ꝑ cristen hoste mynyshed dayly, as well by infyrmytyes as lacke of vytayll and otherwyse/ he sought meanes of a peace or trewce for a tyme, and had yt graunted for thre yeres. The whyche peace stablyshed and proclaymed in the hoste and countrey nere about/ kynge Rychard betoke the rule and guydyng of the Cristen vnto the erle of Champayne/ promysynge hym or ꝑ trewce were endyd to come wyth a stronger hoste, and wyth goddes myght to set hym in possessyon of the cytye of Hierusalem as the ryght of his wyfe.

Then Hubert byshop of Salysbury rode forth hym selfe from ꝑ kyng to the holy cytye/ and offeryd there an hoste, and retourned agayne to the kynge. After whose returne, ꝑ kynge takynge leue of the erle of Champayne and other/ toke his shyppyng at Acrys or Acon, whyche ys named Tholomayda also/ and so returned to the yle of Cyprys or Cyprys.

Thens the kynge sent the quene hys wyfe and her syster wyth ꝑ more parte of hys people vnto Scycyll/ and he wyth a small company for he myght not endure the softenesse of the see, toke his shyppynge in the moneth of September, and sayled wyth a stronge wynde towarde a cōtrey callyd Histria. But he was dryuen by force of wederynge betwene Venyse and Aquinilia or Aquilegia, and houyd there a season, and costed hyther and thyther/ so that lastely he was espyed and taken of the duke of Ostrychys men.

Anno domini. M. C. xcv. Anno domini. M. C. xcvi.

wyllyam fyrs Isabell.

Balliui Anno sexto.

wyllyam fyrs Arnolde.

ABout the moneth of October .vi. yere of hys reygne/ thys good kynge Rychard was taken in fourme folowynge. As he lay thus as before is sayde, betwene Venyce and Aquilegia a prynce of the duke of Ostrych/ one Meynart of Gorzeyn ruler of that countrey vnder the forsayde duke, made out certayne souldyours for to haue taken hym. But he by hys prouydence and manhode escappd ꝑ sayd Maynarde or Maynart/ how be yt that some of hys knyghtes were there takyn.

Then kynge Rychard passed ꝑ cōtrey secretly, tyll he came to a towne named Frysake. In thys towne was then prouoste or ruler a knyght called Frederyk de Saynt Soom/ ꝑ whyche also dyd hys deuoure to take the kynge, and toke .vi. of his knyghtes prysoners/ but hym selfe wyth the remenaunt of hys company escaped. Then the kynge seynge that he was in daunger of hys enymyes/ drewe more into the way towarde Almayn. But thys was soone knowen of hys enymyes/ so that by the meanes of one called Duke of Lymple and cosyn to the emperoure/ all the wayes were closyd in suche wyse, that in the ende kynge Rychard was taken by the seruauntes of the sayd duke, nere vnto a cytye or towne called Wenne or Weune, wythin the lande or terytory of the emperoure/ and after brought vnto the sayde duke Lymple, or after some to the duke of Ostriche/ ꝑ which spoyled hym of all ꝑ he hadde, and after caste hym in prison,

and

and there streyghtely kepte hym by the space of a moneth/ and at the monethes ende sente hym vnto Henry the .vi. of that name, or after some wryters the .v. sonne of the fyrst Frederyke then emperour of Almayne/ the whyche helde hym in more vyle pryson from that tyme tyll lent after and couenauntyd wyth the duke of Ostryche to haue the thyrde parte of the profyte that came of kynge Rycharde. About the sonday of Palmys the emperour brought forth the kynge before the lordes of Almayne, there to gyue answere vnto suche thynges as shuld be layde vnto hym. where he came forth wyth so good a cõtenaunce, & also answered so discretely and dyrectely to all maters layde vnto hys charge/ that the emperoure was not alonely bende to shewe to hym mercy, but also he dyd to hym honour and worshyppe/ and helde hym at more libertye after that daye.

It is redde of thys Rycharde, that durynge the tyme of hys imprysonement he shuld sle a lyon, and tere the harte oute of hys bodye, where thorough he shulde deserue the name of Rycharde Cure de Lyon / and ỹ he shuld wyth a stroke of his fyst sle the emperours sonne, and also dessoyly the emperours doughter. But these are fablys ymagined by englysh tale tellers, to auaunce theyr kynge. Rycharde/ as the Brytons by theyr fayned talys auaunced theyr kynge Arture. In this passetyme Wyllyam Longeshamp byshop of Ely, contynuynge his crudelyte and tyrannye wythin Englande/ was lastely by strength of the lordes put oute of the lande. Then he came to the kynge beynge prysoner, & shewyd for hym self the beste he coude. But when he sawe he myght not begyle the kynge wyth his sugryd wordes, he hadde small truste of the kynges fauour/ & returned into Fraunce, to tarye there the kynges commynge.

Thys yere Johñ the kynges brother by excityng of the French kyng, when he harde of the takyng and imprisonynge of hys brother/ began to make warre within ỹ lande/ & toke by strength ỹ castelles of wyndesour and of Notyngham & other. And the frenche kyng vpon his partye made strong warre in Normãdy, as it is before shewed in the story of the second Phylyppe than kynge of Fraunce.

Anno domini .M. CC. xcvi.

Robert Belaunt.

Balliui

Anno .vii.

Jokell Josne.

Anno domini .M. CC. xcvii.

In the .vii. yere of kynge Rycharde / Hubert byshoppe of Salysbury, the whych hadde accompanyed the kynge in that voyage, and was sente wyth the quene into Scycyll, retourned or came to the kyng where he was prysoner. whom the kynge sente soone after into Englande, to haue the gydynge therof, and also to treate wyth the lordes and commons of hys realme, howe he myghte be sette at lybertye.

It was not long after the cõmyng home of this Hubert, but the mũkes of the house of Cristes chyrch of Cãterburye chase hym to the archebyshoppes see/ and hadde the palle, and was stallyd soone after. This was easy to the mũkes/ how well ỹ sharpnes of Baldwyne had somdeale greued theym. And though thys Baldwyne were a good man & holy in his

lyuynge/ yet one thyng he dyd to the derogacyon of the munkes of Caunterburye/for he purposyd to put the prerogatyue of the electyon of the archbishoppe from the munkes. And because therof, he beganne to buylde great houses nere vnto the munkes chyrche, by fauour of the kynge Henry the seconde (but not wythout shedynge of blood) and there entendyd to haue set in secular chanons with prebendys and suffraganes of bysshoppes for to treate wyth the sayde chanons of the forsayde electyon, & to put by the mũkes clerely. But the munkes when they sawe they myght no lenger resyst Baldwyn, they then appealed to the pope Innocent the thyrde/ by whose cõmaundemẽt that worke ceasyd, and so stode vnfynysshed tyll the sayde Baldwyne was dede. After whose deth the munkes made that worke playne wyth the grounde. Treuisa translatoure of Policronycon, sayth yt was wonder that Baldwyn wolde in that maner deale wyth the munkes/ consyderyng he was fyrst archdeacon, & then white munke, and then abbot, & after bysshop of worceter, and last archbysshoppe/ & to bryng men of more imperfyte lyfe, into ỹ place of men more perfyte, & to chaunge religyous men for seculer men. But yet the sayde Treuisa allowyth Baldwynes dede or entent for good. For he sayth that Criste was the hedde of holy chyrch, and callid and made his apostles bysshoppes/ but none of them was munke or yet frere. wherfore Baldwyne dyd better to prefferre the relygyon whyche Cryste made, then the relygyon whyche was instytuted and ordeyned by man.

Anno domini. M. C. xcvii. Anno domini. M. C. xcviii.

Gerarde de Antiloche.

Balliui Anno. viii.

Robert Duraunt.

IN the moneth of January, and. viii. yere of the reygne of kynge Rychard, when the sayde Rychard had sufferyd harde prysonement vppon the terme of a yere and thre monethes/ he was deliuered out of Pryson for the summe of an hundred thousande pounde of sterlynge money.

For pledge wherof he lefte in the keppynge of the emperoure the bysshoppes of Roan and of Bathe. But not for all/ for a great parte was payed or the kynge were delyueryd. For payment of whyche raunsom all the wolle of whyte munkes & chanons was taken and solde, & rynges and crosses of prelates, wyth vessels and chalyces of all chyrches thorough ỹ land/ & ouer that. xxvii. shyrynes were scraped or spoylyd of ỹ gold & syluer

Dyamẽtes of the chyrche sorde.

that vppon theym before tyme was layd/ for no pryuylege of holy chyrch nor other persone at that season was sparyd. Then kynge Rychard came vnto Swyne in Flaũdres, and taryed there two monethes/ other to abyde the wynde, or ellys to make prouysyon for thynges whych he neded. There the emperours men had almost taken him agayn. So the emperour forthought ỹ deliuery of king Rychard, as Pharao forthought the delyuery of the chyldren of Israel.

Then the kyng toke shippyng, and lãded in ỹ ende of March at Sandwyche/ & from thens came strayghte vnto Lõdon, where he was receyued wyth all ioye and honour. And when he had a season rested hym there/ he wyth a certayn nomber of knyghtes rode to Nothyngam, & wan ỹ castell

and

and after the castell of Tykhyll by force of armes, and set the wardeyns of theym in warde. And that done he called a counsayll of hys lordes at wyncheſter / where by authoryte of the sayd counsayll, he depryued Johñ hys brother then beynge in Fraunce of all honour / and toke from hym all suche landes as he before had gyuen to hym / & crowned hym soone after agayn kyng of England in the sayd cytye of wyncheſter. After the whych coronacyon he called a parlyament / by vertue wherof he resumyd all patentes and annuytees, fees and other grauntes before hys voyage by hym solde and graunted / and caused the partyes to be contentyd wyth such reuenous and profytes as they had receyued of the sayde offyces or landes in tyme of hys absence / and sparyd not any persone for any sufficience of wrytyng ỹ to hym before was made.

when kynge Rycharde hadde by these foresayd meanes gaderyd some money / he then in the moneth of July sayled into Fraunce, and besegyd a castell callyd Arques, and spedde there as wytneſſyth Polycronyca dyuersly. whyche worde dyuersly may well here be spoken. For who so redyth the frenche cronycle / he shall fynde that the Frenche kynge was vyctor. But and he rede the englyſhe boke / than shall he fynde kynge Rycharde vyctour. wherfore me thynketh Ranulphe sayde well / when he sayde they spedde dyuersely. For yt is so dyuerse by the reporte of wryters, that the certayntie to whom the honoure shulde be gyuen is harde to be knowen. All be yt that in the countrey of Bldys, as wytneſſyth ỹ sayde frenche cronycle / kynge Rycharde scaryd the Frenche hoſte, and toke the kynges somer horſe, wyth parte of hys treasour. But in shorte whyle after / a trewce was concludyd betwene these two kynges for a yere.

Then Johñ whyche hadde tourned to the Frenche kyng agayne hys owne brother, seynge that the fame and honoure of hys brother, & feblenesse of his own power, made meanes to Elyanoure hys mother / by whose medyacyon he was recõcyled to hys brother the kynge, & after became hys trew knyght.

when the kynge and hys brother Johñ were thus agreed / they rode ouer the lande to vysyte ỹ countreys and se howe they were guyded by the offycers of the kynge. Amonge other two there were, whyche shewyd that they wolde do many thynges to the kynges profyte, the one was abbot of Cadonence wythin Normandye / and that other was named wyllyam wyth the longe berde. The abbot warned the kynge of the fraude of hys offycers / wherby he thought by the ponyshement of hys offycers, he shulde wynne great fauoure of the people. Then thys abbot gate a warrant of the kynge / and at London callyd dyuerse offycers before hym, for to yelde to hym theyr accompte. But he dyed shortly / so that hys purpose came to small effecte. And wyllyam wyth the longe berde shewyd to the kynge the outrage of the ryche men / whych as he sayd sparyd theyr owne and pyllyd the poore people.

It is sayd that this willyam was borne in London / & purchasyd that name by vse of hys berde. He was sharpe of wytte and somedeale lettred, a bold man of speche and sadde of countenaunce, and toke vppon hym greatter dedes then he coulde welde / and some he vsyd cruelly, as apperyth in appechynge of hys own brother of treason the whyche was a Burges of London, and to hym hadde shewed great kyndneſſe in his youthe.

This willyam styred and excyted the cõmon people to desyre & loue fredoñ and lybertye/and blamed the excesse and outrage of ryche men. By suche meanys he drew to hym many great companyes/and wyth all hys power defended the poore mennys cause agayne the ryche/and accused dyuers to the kynge, shewyng that by theyr meanys the kynge loste many forfaytes & escheatys. For this, gentylmen and men of honour malygned agayn hym. But he had such cõforte of the kynge, that he kepte on his purpose. Then the kynge beynge warned of the congregacyons that thys wyllyam made / commaũded hym to cease of such doynges, ỹ the people myght exercise theyr artes & occupacyõs/by reason wherof it was left for a while. But it was not long or the people folowed hym as they before that tyme had done. Then he made vnto them colacyons or exhortacyons/and toke for hys auteteme, *Haurietis aquas in gaudio de fontibus saluatoris.* That is to mean, ye shall drawe in ioye waters of the wellis of our sauyour. And to this he added, I am sayde he the sauyour of poore men: ye be poore, and haue assayed ỹ harde handes of riche men. Now draw ye therfore holefull water of lore of my wellys, & that wyth ioy/ for the tyme of your vysytacyon is comen. I shall (sayde he) departe waters from waters / by waters I vnderstande the people. Then shall I departe the people whychis good and meke, from the people that ys wycked and prowde/and I shall dyscerne the good and the vile, as the lyght is departed from ỹ darkenes. when thys came to the knowlege of the archebyshoppe of Caunterbury/ he by counsayll of the lordes of the spyrytualty sent vnto this wyllyam/ commaundynge hym to appere before the lordes of the kynges counsayll, to answere vnto suche maters as there shulde be layde vnto hym. At whyche daye thys wyllyam appered, hauyng wyth hym a multytude of people, in so myche that the lordes were of hym adrad. For the whyche cause they remyttyd hym wyth plesaunt wordes for ỹ time/ & commaundyd certayne persones in secrete maner to espye when he were voyde of hys company, and then to take hym, and to put hym in sure kepyng. The whyche accordynge to the commaundement at tyme conuenyent as they thought sette vpon hym and to haue taken hym. But he wyth an axe resysted theym and slewe one of theym/ and after fled for sayne Mary Bowe chyrche of Chepe, and toke that for his sauegarde / defendynge hym by strength and not by the suffrages of the chyrche, for to hym drew shortley great multytude of people. But in shorte processe by meane of the heddys and rulers of the cytye the people mynyshed/ so ỹ in shorte tyme he was lefte wyth few persouns, & after by fyre cõpellyd to forsake the chyrch and so was taken, but not wythoute shedynge of blood. After whyche takynge he was arreygned before the iudges/ & there wyth .ix. of his adherẽtes caste and iudged to dye, & was hanged & they wyth hym the day folowynge. But yet the rumour ceased not/ for ỹ cõmon people reysed a great cryme vpon the archbyshop of Caunterbury & other/ and sayd ỹ by theyr meanes willyam, whych was an innocẽt of such crymes as were obiecte & put agayne hym, & was a defendor of the poore people agayn extorcyoners & wronge doers, was by theym put wrongfully to deth/ approuyng him an holy mã & martyr by this tale folowyng/sayeng ỹ a man beyng syke of the feuers, was cured by vertue of a cheyn whych this wyllyam was bounde

bounde wythin tyme of his dures of imprysonement/ which by a preste of the allye of the sayde wyllyam was openly declared & preached. wherby he brought the people in suche an errour, that they gaue credence to hys wordes/& secretly in the nyght cõueyed away the iebet that he was hãged vppon, & scraped away ỹ blood that was shed of him when he was taken or ellys when he was hedded & quarteryd, so ỹ they made there an holow place by fetchyng away of that erth/ and sayde ỹ syke men & women were cured of dyuerse sykenesse by vertue of that blood & erth. By these meanes and blowynge of fame/ ỹ place was the more vysyted by women & vndyscrete psones, of the whych some watched there the hole nyght in prayer/ so that the lenger thys cõtynued, the more dysclaunder was anoyd to the tustyces, and to suche as put hym to deth. Not wythstandyng in proces of tyme, when hys actes were publyshed, as the sleynge of a man wyth hys owne hande, and dsynge of hys concubyne wythin sayntc Mary chyrche in tyme of hys there beynge, as he openly cõfessed in the houre of hys dethe, wyth other detestable crymes: somwhat keled the great flame of the hasty pylgrymage. But not clerely / tyll the archebyshoppe of Cãterbury accursed ỹ preste ỹ brought vp the fyrste fable / and also caused that place to be watched, that suche idolatry shuld there no more be vsed

Anno domini. M. C. xcviii. Anno domini. M. C. xcix.

Roger Blount.

Balliut Anno .ix.

Nycholas Duke.

In the moneth of Apryll and ix. yere of kynge Rycharde, when he had prouided to sende forth xx. thousand poũde to the emperour, for full payment of hys raunsome / the pledges whyche had lyen for the same, came sodeynly into England/ and shewed vnto the kyng that after his departynge, the emperour sente them vnto the duke of Dstrych, to remayne with him tyll the money were payde. And forther there they shewed that the sayd duke was accursed of ỹ pope ỹ then was Innocent ỹ thyrde, by reason of his wronge done to the kynge/ & that his prouynce was greuyd wyth many myscheues. And as the duke rode forth on a daye in hys dispoyt beyng saynt Stephans day, he hurte his fote in such wyse wyth a thorne or other venym/ whyche rancled & grewe so sore, ỹ lastly he shuld dye or cutte yt of. But in hope of recouery he contynued tyll in the ende he was warned that he shulde dye. Then he sent for his byshoppes, and aryd to be assoyled of the sentence of the chyrche whyche he stode in. The whyche was denyed hym/ except he wolde swere to stande and abyde the ordynaũce and dome of holy chyrch, touchynge the wronge that he hadde done to kynge Rycharde. The duke swore, and was assoyled/ and shortly after the two byshoppes pledgys for ỹ money were delyuered at theyr lybertye. Then kynge Rycharde callyng to mynde that the vttermost daye of the trewes take betwene hym and the Frenche kynge approched/ made hym redy and sayled into Normandye. where before his commyng the Frenche kynge by occasyon of the Normannis as sayth the frenche boke, was entred the cõtrey of Burgys/ towarde whom kyng Rycharde

ſped hym wyth all poſſyble ſpede/ ſo that both hoſtes laye partyd wyth a ryuer called Oſſon or Oſſyne.

Then to folowe the ſayenge of the frenche boke, for ſo myche as the engliſhe cronycle ſpekyth lytle or nothynge of thys acte / lette wyſe men that here thys cronycle, conſtrew yt after theyr dyſcrecyons. For all be yt the Frencheman wrote yt to the honour of Frenchmen/yet to other that ſhall rede or here yt, becauſe yt ſoundyth ſo nere vntrouth, yt ſhal rather redounde vnto theyr dyſhonour. For the Frenche cronicle ſayth, that theſe two hoſtes thus as aboue is ſayde lyenge to gyther wythout ſkyrmyſhe or aſſaute/ kynge Rycharde contrary the opinyon and mynde of hys lordes, wyth a few accompanyed and vnharnayſed, ſhuld come to ỹ Frẽche kynges tente/ and there in preſence of hys lordes ſhulde do homage to the Frenche kynge for the duchye of Normandye and cõteys of Angeou and of Poytyers, and there ſwore to the kynge to kepe peace durynge his lyfe/and after. viii. dayes met agayn and fynyſhed the ſayde peace, wyth aſſuryd othe vppon eyther partye/ and after departed as frendes eyther reſortynge into theyr owne countrey. But yt ſemed a feynte peace. For within foure monethes or leſſe folowynge / kynge Rycharde wyth hys hoſte entred the prouynce of Berry / and layd ſyege to the caſtell of wyerſoune, and gate yt by ſtrength / and after yode to the caſtell of Norycourte/the whyche was delyueryd to hym by appoyntement.

when kyng Phylyppe harde of the wynnynge and ouerthrowe of the caſtell of wyerſoun / he in damagynge of kynge Rychard layde ſyege to the caſtell of Aubeuyle, and yt aſſayled egerly. But yt was ſo ſtronge and ſo well defendyd by the Normannys, that the Frenche kynge was holden of. when kynge Rycharde had garnyſhed and fortifyed the caſtell of Norycourte wyth all thynge neceſſarye to the warre/ he drewe hym towarde Aubeuyle to remoue kynge Phylyppe from that ſyege, and fell vppon the Frenche men vnwarely. But the Frenchemen quyt theym ſo knyghtly, that they chaſed kyng Rycharde and hys people / and toke a Norman knyghte named Guy de Thonars a man of great hardynes. And then kynge Phylyppe returned to the caſtel and towne of Aubeuyle/ and aſſauted it more ſharpely, ſo that in the ende ỹ ſouldyours of the town yeldyd yt wyth the caſtell for a certayne ſumme of money. And when he hadde poſſeſſyon of the towne / he threw downe the caſtell playne wyth the ground, and after ſtrengthed the towne wyth Frenche men/ and then yode to the caſtell of Gyſours / and from thẽs reſorted to the forenamed caſtell of Norycourte, and aſſayled yt in ſo cruell maner, that ſhortely he wanne yt/and toke therin. xv. knyghtes and. xxiiii. yemen, wyth plente of vytayll and armour. In thys tyme and ſeaſon kynge Richarde gadered newe ſtrength, and allyed hym wyth Baldwyn erle of Flaũdres and with Renolde erle of Dampmartyn and of Boleyne. By whoſe meanes as wytneſſyth the frenche boke, kynge Rychard waſted ſore the countrey of Fraunce/and brent therin ſome townes and vyllages, and toke therein many ryche prayes.

Anno domini. M. C. xcix. Anno domini. M. CC.

Conſtantyne fyz Arnolde.

Balliui Anno .x.

Robert le Beawe.

ABout the begynnynge of the moneth of October, and.x. yere of Rycharde / the sayde Rycharde entryd the countrey of Unequecyne wyth a stronge hoste/and made therin cruell warre, in destroyenge of the countrey / and assauted the castell of Gysours / and threwe to grounde a stronge holde called Courcellys, and brent there about many vyllages. wherwyth kynge Phylyppe was so greuously amouyd/ ỹ wyth a small noumber of knyghtes he percyd the hoste of Englyshemen, and entryd the castell or towne of Gysours. But of his men were taken a certayn nõber / as Alayne de Russy, Mathewe de Melly, Guyllyam de Mello, and many other. wyth the whyche prysoners and many riche prayes, kyng Richarde then departed, leuynge the frenche kynge wythin Gysours.

It was not longe after that kynge Rycharde was thus departed / but that kyng Phylyp callyng to mynde the great losse and dishonour that he had receyued by that warre of kynge Rycharde, assembled a great army, and entred the duchy of Normandy/ and wasted the coũtrey from Muesbourth to Beawmõt le Rogyer. And that done he returned into Fraunce/ and lycẽcyd hys knyghtes to go eche man into hys owne countrey.

when kynge Phylyppe hadde thus fynyshed hys warre in Normandye/ kynge Rycharde then wyth hys armye entred the forenamed countrey of Unequecyn, and also Beawuoysyn/ and toke wythin theym as he before had done ryche & many prayes/ and with theym departed. whom the byshop of Beawuays beyng a good knyghte and hardy of his handes, wyth a companye of knyghtes, and other/ folowyd to haue rescowyd the prysoners that kynge Rycharde had taken. But they were taken / and a certayne of hys company slayne.

Then the erle of Flaundres by the ayde of the Englyshe men, toke the towne of saynt Omer from ỹ Frẽche men.

In this season Innocent the Pope before named, sente a legate into Fraunce named Peter de Capys, to rekourme the warre betwene the two prynces. The whyche at that tyme was in such dyssoynte that he coulde not brynge yt to any frame/ and specyally as sayth the Frenche boke, because kynge Richarde wolde not delyuer hostages & gagys as ỹ Frẽche kynge wolde.

Then kynge Rycharde after Crystmas besyeged a castel nere vnto Lymogys. This castell in ỹ Frẽche cronycle is called Chalons / & in the englyshe boke yt is named Gayllarde. The cause of this syege as saith most wryters, was for certayne ryche treasour founden wythin the lordshyppe or sygnyory of kynge Rycharde/ the whyche one wydomer vycounte of Lemonke hadde founden and wyth helde from kynge Rycharde/ and for hys sauegarde fledde vnto the forenamed castell/ and defendyd yt manfully from the fyrste weke of lent, tyll the.vi. daye of Apryll. Uppon the whyche daye kynge Rycharde walkynge vnwysely about the castell to espye the feblenes therof/ one named Betrãde Guedon markyd the kynge and wounded him in the hedde, or after some wryters, in ỹ arme with a venemous quarell. After which woũde receyued by the kynge, he commaunded sharpe assaute to be made/ in the whyche assaute the castell was won. Then he made enquery who yt was that so had wounded him/ the which was brought vnto the kynges presence, and named hym self as aboue is sayde, or after some wryters Peter Basyle. Then the kynge demaũded

of hym why he ſhuld ſo lye in a wayte to hurte hym, rather then any of his felowys. For thou ſlew my father and my bretherne ſayde he/ wherfore I entendyd to auenge theyr deth, what ſomeuer became of me. Then ỹ kyng forgaue hym his offence and ſufferyd him to go at lyberte. And the other of ỹ ſoudyours taken in that caſtell, the kynge commaunded to be hanged.

But Polycronycon ſayth, that after kynge Rycharde was dede/ the duke of Braban whych then was preſent, cauſyd the ſayde Bartrande to be taken and flayne quycke and after hanged. Then kynge Rycharde dyed the .iii. daye after, that is to ſay, the ix. daye of Apryll/ and was buryed at Fount Ebrard at the fete of hys father. Howe be yt ſome wryters ſay that his harte was buryed at Roan, his body as before is ſayde, and hys bowellys at Carleyll in Englande/ when he hadde reygned .ix. yeres .ix. monethes and odde dayes, leuynge after hym none yſſue. Of thys Rycharde a metrycyan made theſe verſys folowynge.

Chriſte, tui calicis prædo ſit præda caducis
Ære breui reiecis, qui tollit æra crucis.
Viſcera Carleolum, corpus fons ſeruat Ebardi.
Et cor Rothamagũ magne Richarde tuum
In terra diuiditur, vnus quia plus fuit vno.
Non ſuperest vno gratia tanta viro.

The which verſys may be englyſſhyd as foloweth.

Cryſte, of the theefe whyche on the ryght hande was,
And aryd mercy, to vs thou made a prayer/
That we lyke wyſe ſhulde for our treſpaſſe,
Are of the mercy and ſhewe no delay,
Nor for erthly thynges caſte our ſelf away.
For who of thy croſſe accompteth lyttell ſtore/
The mercyte of thy paſſyon he loſyth euermore.

Thys manfull knyghte thys prynce dyctoryouſe,
whyche toke thy croſſe on hym wyth great payne/
He folowed the theefe and aryd mercy thus.
For hys offence he warred thy foes agayne/
And ſhadde theyr blood on hyll and eke on playne.
And all for loue good lorde he hadde to the.
wherfore ſwyte Jeſu on hym thou haue pyty.

Of whom the bowellys at Carleyll/ and the trunke
At fount Ebrarde full rychely ys dyght.
The harte at Roan into the erthe ys ſunke
Of the worthy Rycharde. And ſo in thre is twyght,
That more than one whylom was in myght.
In erthe is ſeparate that lyuynge more then one
was, and of grace founde lyke to hym none.



Ohñ brother of ỹ aboue named Rycharde, & yongeſte ſon of Henry the ſeconde/ was ordeyned or proclamed kyng of England, the tenth day of Apryll in the begynnynge of the yere of our lorde .xi. hundred. lxxx. & .xix/ and the .xx. yere of the ſeconde Phylyppe then kynge of Fraunce. Thys Johñ at the daye of his brothers deth was in Normandy/ where at Chynon as ſoon as his brother Rycharde was dyſeaſyd, he poſſeſſyd

poſſeſſyd hym of hys bꝛothers treaſour/ and ſent Hubert archbyſhoppe of Caunterbury into Englande, to make pꝛouiſyon foꝛ his coꝛonacyon. And vppon Eſter daye folowyng he was gyꝛde with the ſwoꝛde of the duchy of Bꝛytayne/ & ſayled ſoon after into Englād. where he was crowned kynge at weſtmynſter vppon holy thurſday next folowynge of the foꝛenamed Hubert. After whyche ſolemnitye done/ he oꝛdeyned the ſame Hubert chaunceller of Englande.

In thys whyle the frenche kynge helde a counſayll at Cenomannia in Turon / where to the derogacyon of kynge Johñ, Arture the ſon of Gefkrey Plantagenet and neuewe to the ſayde Johñ, was made duke of Bꝛytayne. whyche incontynently after wyth a great army entryd the countrey of Angeou, and toke poſſeſſyon therof. And kynge Phylyppe wyth hys people entryd the duchy of Noꝛmandy, and layde ſyege to the cytye of Euroux / and wanne yt, wyth all the ſtronge holdes there about/ and ſtuffyd theym wyth vytayll, & ſtrengthed them with his owne knyghtes/ and that done waſted & ſpoyled the countrey tyll he came to the cytye of Meaus. where met wyth hym the foꝛenamed Arture/ & dyd to hym homage foꝛ the countrey of Angiers.

In the moneth of May, Elyanour ſomtyme wyfe of Henry the ſeconde, and mother to kyng Rychard, came into Fraunce/ and ſo to the kynge to Meaus foꝛeſayde, and made to hym homage foꝛ the coũtrey of Poytiers, as her enheryptaunce. And ſoone after the kinge retourned into Fraũce/ and the duke of Bꝛitayne wyth hym whyche as yet was within age.

Kynge Johñ heryng of this warre in Noꝛmandy, and loſſe of the countreys aboue named/ aſſembled a coũſayll and arid ayde of his loꝛdes and cõmons, to wynneagayne ỹ foꝛeſayd landes/ & had it grauuted after ſome wꝛyters .iii. s. of euery plough land thoꝛough Englande, beſyde ỹ ſubſydy of ỹ ſpyꝛytuall landes. And when he hadde made redy foꝛ that belonged to hys voyage/ he about herueſt ſayled into Noꝛmandy/ where he taryed tyll Octobꝛe folowynge, ſpendynge the tyme to hys loſſe and dyſhonoure.

Anno domini. M. CC. Anno domini. M. CC i.

Arnolde fyꝛ Arnolde.

Balliui Anno pꝛimo

Rychard fyꝛ Darty.

After Mychelmas in the moneth of October, and fyꝛſte yere of the reygne of kynge Johñ/ a trewce oꝛ peace was concluded betwene the two kynges of Englande and of Fraunce, from that daye tyll mydſomer nexte folowynge / and in lyke wyſe betwene the French kyng, and Baldwyne erle of Flaundꝛes. And thys yere was made a deuoꝛce betwene kynge Johñ and hys wyfe the erle of Glocetyꝛs doughter, becauſe of nereneſſe of bloode. And after was he maryed vnto Iſabell the doughter of the erle of Engoleſym in Fraunce, and had by her two ſonnys Henry and Rychard, and. iii. doughters Iſabell, Elyanoure, and Jane.

Thys yere dyed at London bleſſyd Hugh byſhop of Lyncolñ/ and was conueyed to his owne chyꝛch & there enterryd. Foꝛ whom god hath ſhewyd many myꝛacles, ſo that at thys daye

he ys authorysed by the chyrche for a sayncte. At mydlent after, kyng Johñ sayled agayne into Normandy. And after Ester he mette with kynge Phylyppe betwene Uernon and the yle Audeley / where the peace betwene both realmes was stablysshed and cõfermed for terme of theyr two lyues / and the landes deuyded betwene the two kynges, as eyther of them shuld holde theym contentyd for theyr lyues after. And in shorte tyme after, Lewys the eldest son of kynge Phylyppe, maryed dame Blanch doughter to Alphons kynge of Castylle, and neuewe to kynge Johñ. To the whyche Lewys / kyng Johñ for loue of that woman shewyd to hym great bountye / and gaue vnto her many ryche gyftes.

In the moneth of July folowyng kyng Johñ rode into Fraũce, where he was receyued of the frẽche kynge wyth myche honour / and so cõueyed into sayncte Denys, where he was receyued wyth processyon. And vppon the morow the Frenche kyng accompanyed hym vnto Parys / where he was receyued of the cytezens wyth great reuerẽce / and presentyd by the prouoste of the towne in name of the hole cytye wyth ryche presentis. And there kynge Phylyppe festyd hym in hys owne paleys / & gaue vnto hym and hys lordes and seruauntes many ryche gyftes / and after conueyd hym forth of that cytye, and toke leue of hym in moste louynge wyse. And when kynge Johñ hadde spedde his maters in Normandy / he then returned into Englande.

Anno domini. M. CC i.

Anno domini. M. CCij.

Roger Desert.

Balliui

Anno secun.

Jamys fyz Barth.

In ỹ moneth of december and seconde yere of kynge Johñ / Ranulphe erle of Chestre by the example afore shewed by kynge Johñ, lefte hys owne wyfe named Constaũce and countesse of Bytayne, whych before he had maried by counsayll of kynge Henry the seconde / & wedded one Clemens. One cronycle sayth he dyd so, because he wolde haue yssue. But the sayd authour sayth that after hys oppynyon, he displeased god so greatly that god wolde suffer hym to haue none yssue / but the rather for that dede dyed wythout.

About thys tyme after oppynyon of moste wryters / the people or nacyon callyd Tartares beganne theyr dompnyon. These men dwellyd vnder the hyllys of Inde, ỹ belonged to prester Johñ / & chase of them self a capitayn of low byrth called Dauid / & so wyth wyues and chyldren passed the next countreys wyth robbynge and spoylyng, and grew shortly in great strength / and after subdued the partes & many other vycyne countreys / and grewe lastely vnto great dompnyon and lordshyppe in the eest partes of the worlde / so that lately theyr prynce or souerayne ys called the great Cahan.

In this yere as wytnessyth Polycronycon, the kynge of Scottys dyd homage to kynge Johñ at Lyncolñ, and sware vpon the crosse of Hubert archbishoppe of Caunterbury, in the presence of a legate of Rome & .xiii. bysshoppes, to be trew lyege man to hym and to hys heyres kynges.

And in this yere one Estate called abbot of Flay, came into Englande / and

and amonge other myracles by hym shewyd, he blessed a well beside the towne of wyc in kent / so ỳ men and women drynkyng of that water were curyd of dyuerse maladyes. But last ly he displeasyd so the byshoppes of England, ỳ he was glade to leue the lande, & after sayled into Normandy

Anno domini. M. CC. ii.

Anno domini. M. CC. iii.

Arnolde.

Balliui

Anno. iii.

Rycharde

About the moneth of December, in ỳ thyrd yere of Johns reygn in the prouynce of yorke, were sene. v. moonys. One in the East, the seconde in the weste, the thyrd in the North, ỳ fourth in the South, and the fyfte as it were set in the myddes of the other / and yode. vi. tymes in compassynge the other, as yt were by the space of an howre/and vanyshed away soone after. Thys yere in the moneth of February/ kynge Philyp callyd a parliamēt at Uerdon/ where yt was amonge other maters conclu ded, that kynge Johñ as hys lyege man shulde appere at his parlyamēt holdē at Paris wythin. xb. dayes of Easter next folowynge. But for so myche as kynge Johñ nor none for hym apperyd to shewe some lawfull impedymēt/ the Frenche kynge ther fore entryd the duchy of Normandy, and toke the castellys of Bounte, of Gentelyne, and Gurnay/ and sealed into hys handes all suche landes as Hugh de Gurnay held, & gaue them vnto Arture foresayde duke of Bry tayne. And more ouer he gaue to the said Arture ỳ coūtye of Angeou, with two hundred prysoners, and a cer tayne of money to defende the sayde countrey agayn kynge Johñ.

when kynge Johñ had vnderstan dynge of all the cruell dealynge of kynge Philyppe / he callyd a coun sayll and there asked ayde, and was graunted a new ayde to wythstande the frenche kynges malyce. And a bout Lammasse after, the kyng with a fayre cōpany sayled into Norman dye/ and so spedde hym into the coun trey of Angeou, for so myche as he was enfourmed that Arture hys ne uew and duke of Brytayne warryd wythin the same / and toke hym pry soner with certayne other knyghtes, as syr Hugh le Bruns, syr Godfrey de Losyngham, wyth dyuerse other. At whych tyme kynge Philyppe lay at the syege of the castell of Arques/ and herynge of thys dyscomfyture, brake vp hys syege to the entent to haue rescowyd the sayde duke. But when he was warned that he shulde come to shorte/ he then chaunged his purpose and went vnto the cytye of Towrys, and wanne yt by strength. And after for that wynter drew nere, he returned into Fraunce. In which season also kynge Johñ retourned wyth his prysoners into Englande.

In this yere by counsayll of the burgeysys of the cytye of London / were chosen. xxxv. of the moste sub stancyall and wyseste myn / whyche after some were called the counsayll of the cytye. Of the whych yerely the bailyuys were chosen/ and after the mayre and shrynes were taken of the same nomber.

Anno domini. M. CC. iii.

Balliui

Anno domini. M. CC. iiii.

Anno. iiii.

Norman Blondell

Johñ of Ely.

IN thys fourthe yere of kynge Johñ, were sene many wonderfull tokens. For ouer the wynter, the whyche passyd in length and hardenesse many yeres before gone/ wonderfull wederynge, as of excedynge lyghtenynges, thunders, and other stormes of wynde and rayne apperyd/ and therwyth hayle of the bygnesse of hennes egges; the whyche perisshed frute and corne/ besydes other hurtes and harmes done vppon houses and yong catell goynge a brode. Also spyrites were sene in the ayer in lykenesse of foulys, berynge fyre in theyr bylles/ the whych sette on fyre dyuerse houses. And soone there after dyed Hubert archbyshop of Caunterbury. In whose place was chosen cõtrarye to the mynde of ỹ kynge, by the more partye of the couent of Caũterburye, mayster Stephan Langton. All be yt some there were that accordynge to the kynges pleasure, named the byshoppe of Norwyche, and some other. For thys electyon the kynge was greuously amouyd agayne the munkes/ and wolde in no wyse alowe or admyt theyr electyon. wherfore they sent theyr electyon vnto pope Innocent the thyrde/ ỹ whyche admytted the sayde mayster Stephan and refused the other, and sacryd hym at Vyterb a cityе of Italy/ and sent hym after with letters of comendacyon vnto kyng Johñ to take the possessyon and frutes of his benefyce. Kynge Johñ wyth thys was sore amouyd/ in so myche ỹ he warned hym his lande and dyuers of the munkes of Caunterbury that fauored hys cause.

Aboute Ester kynge Johñ sayled into Normandye/ for the Frenche kynge had recommencyd his warre in the countye of Guyan, and wanne therin dayly dyuerse stronge holdes and castellys/ and allyed wyth hym the erle of Alenson/ and hadde great ayd of the Portuyns and Bytons. And when he had brought that countrey vnder his subiectyon/ he then returned by Normandye and wanne Conket, the vale of Ruell, and the yle of Audeley. In this season the forenamed pope sente the abbot of Calmer into Fraunce, to reforme these two prynces. with whome was also accompanyed the abbot of Cressons/ the whyche endeuored theym so, that they were nere agreed of a peace. But for they wolde that the Frenche kynge shulde repayre and amẽde suche houses of relygyon, as he had hurte & ouerthrowen in Guyan and other places belongynge to the crowne of Englande/ therfore he forsoke the peace/ not withstandyng that kynge Johñ in lyke wyse shuld haue repayred all lyke houses apertaynynge vnto ỹ crowne of Fraunce.

Then the Frenche kynge in the ende of Auguste layde syege to the castell of Raydepount/ & assauted yt by the terme of.xv.dayes contynually. But the soudyours wythin defendyd yt so mankully, that they slewe many of theyr enymyes/ so ỹ kynge Phylyppe was fayne to gyue backe, tyll he hadde deuysed newe engynes after the warre fassyon. By reason wherof he lastely wanne the sayde castell/ and toke there.xx. knyghtes, and an hundred and.vii.yomen and other, and.xxi.arblasters. And when he hadde fortefyed that castell wyth Frenche men/ he then yode to the castell of Gaylarde, and layde hys ordynaunce to that, as he hadde done to that other. But he laye there a moneth or he myghte do to yt any hurte or harme. In all whych season kyng Johñ warryd vppon the Bordorers of Fraunce/ but of hys byctoryes I fynde lytle wryten.

Anno domini. M.CC.iiii. Anno domini. M.CC.v.

Walter Browne.

Balliui. Anno.v.

wyllyam Chaumberleyn.

IN this yere, that is to saye the .v. yere of kynge Johñ/ by reason of the vnreasonable wederynge, that in the last yere fell/whete was solde for.xv.s. a quarter.

Kyng Johñ in the somer folowyng maryed hys bastarde doughter vnto Lewelin prince of walys/& gaue with her the castell and lordshippe of Elyngesmere, beynge in the marches of South walys.

In Morgans land in walys soon after a knyght apered after his deth to one callid master Moris/to whom by hys lyues tyme he hadde ben specyall louer and frende. The whyche knyght by his dayes was well letteryd/and vsyd for hys recreacyon to make versys wyth this mayster Moris, so that the one shulde begynne the metyr and the other shulde ende yt. At whyche tyme of his apperaūce the knyght sayde to mayster Moris, mayster Moris I woll ỹ thou ende thys verse, Destruet hoc regnum, rex regum. Nay sayd mayster Moris, ende thou yt / for thou haste all moste made the hole thy selfe. Then sayd the knyght for that I se now thou arte olde and slow, I wyll ende yt my self.

Destruet hoc regnum, rex regum duplici plaga.

The whyche verse maye be englyshed as foloweth.

The kynge of kynges that lorde that ruleth all,
And in whose power all thynges is conteyned/
Thys realme for synne he destroye shall
wyth dowble plage, be therof ascertayned/
Excepte the people here after be refrayned
From synne, and them to vertuous lyfe alye,
And vyce before vsyd vtterly renye.

Thys yere the pope sente letters of recommendacyon vnto kynge Johan / shewynge that he hadde fauorablye harde hys proctours for all suche maters as they hadde layde agayne the archebyshoppe of Caunterburye and some of hys munkys, that he shulde not of ryght be admyttyd to that see.

But for the sayde maters of obiecc̄yon were by hym and hys courte thoughte insuffycyent / he therefore exorted and wyllyd hym to accepte the sayde archebyshopppe to hys grace, and suffre hym to enioye the frutes of hys benefyce / and the munkes by hym exyled, to retourne vnto theyr proper abbay.

But the more hys lordes and frendes aduysed hym to folowe the pōpes mynde, the more was he moued to the contrarye/ in suche maner

cc that

that the popes messengers returned wythoute spede of theyr message.

yet haue ye harde before, how the Frenche kynge laye about the castell of Gayllarde/and myght not wynne yt by the space of a moneth. wherfore he after sente for newe ordynaunce, and assayled yt so fyersly, that wythin .xx. dayes after he wanne the sayd castell, to the great losse of men on partyes / and toke prysoners there wythin .xxvi. knyghtes, besyde the other nomber of yomen and arblasters/ and that done sealyd the countrey there about, and strengthed the sayde castell wyth hys owne men/ and then wyth great pryde returned into Fraunce.

Anno domini. M.CC.v. Anno domini. M.CC.vi.

Thomas Hauerpll.

Balliui. Anno .vi.

Hamonde Bronde.

ABout that season after Mychelmas, in the vi. yere of the reygn of kyng Johñ/ came downe a strevght commaundement from the pope, that excepte the kynge wolde peasybly suffer the archbyshoppe of Caunterbury to occupy hys see, and the munkes theyr abbay, that ỹ land shulde be enterdyted / chargynge these foure bisshoppes folowyng, that is to saye wyllyam then byshoppe of London, Eustace byshoppe of Ely, walter byshoppe of wynchester, and Gylys byshoppe of Herforde, to denounce the kynge and his lande accursyd, yf he ỹ cũmaundement dysobeyed. Then these foure byshops wyth other to thẽ associate/made instaunte labour to the kynge, for the obseruynge of the popes commaundement, and to exchewe the sensours of the chyrche. But all was in vayne. wherefore the .iiii. sayde byssh oppes accordyng to the popes wyll tynge to them sent/the morow folowynge our ladye day annũcyacyon, or the. xxvi. daye of Marche, denouncyd kynge Johñ wyth his realme of Englande accursyd / and shyt faste the dores of the chyrches and other places where dyuyne seruyce before was vsyd, fyrste in London, and after in all placys as they wente thorough the lande. The kyng for thys dede was so amouyd wyth the sayde foure byshoppes, that he sealed all the temporalties to them belongyng into hys handes / and put theym in such fere, that they forsoke this land, and sayled to the archbyshop of Caũterburye.

In thys yere at Dréforde in Suff. was taken a fyshe in ỹ see of forme lyke to a man/and was kepte. vi. monethes after vpon lande wyth rawe flesshe and fysshe / and after for they coude haue no speche of yt, they caste yt into the see agayne.

Anno domini. M. CC. vi. Anno domini. M.CC.vii.

Johñ walgraue.

Balliui. Anno. vii.

Rycharde of wynchester.

IN the moneth of nouẽber and vii. yere of the kynge/ one named Hugh Dysell for treason at London was drawen and hanged. And thys yere in ỹ moneth of May, the French kynge entryd into Normandy wyth a stronge

a stroge power/ and wanne there the castellys of Faloys, and Dafyount or Danffrount and after sealyd all the landes to the sayde castell belongynge, and so tyll he came to a place called saynte Mychaell in the parell of the see.

when the Normannes sawe that kynge Phylyppe thus subdued the stronge holdes of Normandye, and that kynge Johñ to the countrarye made no defence/ ỹ capptayns of Cõstaunce, of Bayoux or Bayon, of Lysieux, of Anreuches, and Enroux yelded them all to the French kyng, and became hys lyege men / so that he was in possessyon of the substaũce of the duchye of Normandye, excepte Roan and other few castellys.

Then kynge Phylyppe sepnge these stronge holdes thus yeldyd vn to hym / layed hys syege to the cyty of Roan. where after he hadde lyen a season / the capptayne of the towne delyred a respyte of.xxx.days, gyuynge pledges and hostages, that yf the cytye were not by kynge Johñ or hys assygnes rescwyd wyth in the forsayde terme, they wolde yelde the cytye vnto the French kynge. And in lyke wyse was appoyntement taken for the castellys named Arquys and Uermeyll. In whyche tyme for that no socoure came/ both cytye and castellys were delyueryd into the Frenche kynges handes.

And thus hadde thys seconde Phylyppe the possessyon of Normandye/ whyche no Frenche kynge hadde sen the tyme of Charlys the symple, why che gaue the same duchye to Rollo leder of the Normannys, wyth Gylla hys doughter in marpge / synne the whyche tyme hadde passed ouer iii.hundred yeres.

when the Frenche kynge had thus brought into his subiccyon ỹ duchye of Normandye / he then about sayne Laurence tyde yode into the countye of Guyan, and wanne there the cytye of Poytyers, wyth all the castellys and townes to the sayde cytye belongynge. and when he hadde sette that countrey in an order and rule/ he spedde hym into Fraunce wyth great pompe and glory.

It ys affermed of some authours, that the Frenche kynge made thys warre vppon kynge Johñ by excytynge of the pope, for hys contumacye agane the chyrche.

In thys yere also was a communycacyon of a peace to be hadde betwene kynge Johñ and the archebyshope of Caunterbury / and was dryuen to a nere poynte of accorde, except restitucyon that kynge Johñ shulde haue made to the archebyshop and other bishoppes, the which his offycers hadde taken in the tyme of theyr absence. To the whych restytucyon kynge Johñ in no wyse wold be agreable/ wherfore the sayd communycacyon toke none affecte. After thys communycacyon/ kynge Johñ was so frette wyth malyce, that in a fury he let proclayme in sondry placys of hys realme, that all suche personys as hadde landes and possessyons wythin Englande spyrytuall or temporall, that they shulde returne into Englande by Mychelmas next folowynge / or ellys to be clerely excludyd from all suche landes. And ouer that strcyght commaundement was gyuen to euerych officer in his countrey, to make belye serche, yf any wrytynges were brought from the courte of Rome, to any prelate of thys realme / and yf any suche were founden, to bryngc hym and his wrytynges to the kynges presence. And more ouer that they shuld sease to the kynges vse, all suche landes as to any person were gyuen by the sayde archbyshoppe or by the pryour

of Caunterbury, syn the tyme of elec cyon of the sayd archebyshoppe/and the woodes of the same to be sellyd and solde in all haste.

Anno domini.M.CC. vii. Anno domini. M.CC.viii

Roger wynchester.

Balliui. Anno .viii.

Edmunde hardell.

UPpon the fyrste daye of the moneth of October, and.viii. yere of ꝑ reygne of the kyng/his fyrst sonne Henry by name was borne of dame Isabell his second wyfe in the cytye of wynchester. And thys yere rebellyd the Iryshemē, and dyd myche harme in that countrey. whych rebellyon after some wryters was, for so myche as the kynge wolde haue leuyed of thē greuous taskys to haue made warre wyth vppon the French kynge. But at lengthe they greuyd or displeasyd the kyng in such wyse, that he was fayne to sette a taske thorough hys land to oppresse theyr malyce. And ouer that he asked of the whyte munkes of England.vi. thousande marke. But they excused them by theyr generall hedde / so that the kynge toke wyth theym great displeasure. By reason wherof after his retourne oute of Irlande, he veryd theym sore/ and gatheryd of theym more then before he hadde desyred/ and caused some abbottys to forsake theyr houses.

Then he wyth a puyssaunte armye wente into Irelande, and shortely subdued theym / and after he hadde sette the countrey in a rule, he retourned into Englande.

Anno domini.M. CC.viii. Anno domini.M.CC .ix.

Serle the mercer.

Balliui. Anno. ix.

Hugh of saynt Albon.

IN this. ix. yere the kyng consyderynge the great losse whych he had susteyned by the frēche kyng in Normandy, & also in Angeou and Poyteau/ made puysyon of all thynges belongynge to the warre/and after about mydsomer sayled ouer the see, and landed at Rochell in Poyteau wyth a myghty hoste. At whyche season the frenche kynge was at Thymon and fortyfyed yt/ wyth also the castellys of London and Myrable, and ꝑ town of Poytyers whyche lytle before he had wonne/and after wythoute taryenge returned into Fraunce. Then kynge Johñ herynge of the frenche kynges departynge/sped him to Angiers & wanne that towne wyth lytle payne, and destroyed ꝑ sayd towne. Thyther came to hym the vycoũt of Thonars, whyche before was for dyede become the frenche kynges man/ & by his ayde kynge Johñ then recouryd some parte of that countrey.

In thys meane whyle kynge Phylyppe gatheryd a new hoste/ and herynge of the vnstedfastnes of the vycoũt of Thonars, entryd ꝑ landes of the sayde vycounte, and wasted and spoyled the countrey withoute pyty. Then kynge Johñ spedde hym towarde the frenche kynge / so that in shorte processe of tyme the two hostys were wythin lytle dystaunce. But by what meane of fortune I can not

not saye (for the meane therof ys not expressyd) the two kynges there toke peace for two yeres folowynge/ and after eyther of theym retourned into his owne countrey.

In this yere the pope beyng ascerteyned of ỹ cruelnesse of kyng Johñ executed agayne the whyte munkes of hys lande/ and also of his obstynacye that he persseuered in agayne holy chyrche: sent done a new commyssyon/ by vertue wherof the curse of enterdytynge was newly denoũcyd and manyfestyd in sondry places of England. And ouer that the pope by authorite of the sayde bulle, assoyled or acquyted all the lordes of Englãd as well spyrytuall as tempozall, of all homage and feauty that they of ryght owyd to the kynge / to the entent that they shulde aryse agayne hym, and depryue hym of all kyngly honour. But all this myght not moue the kynge from hys errour.

ABout the feast of saynt Medard, in the moneth of Juny and later ende of this forsayd .ix. yere/ the forenamed baylyues were admytted to ỹ offyce/ and the olde, that is to meane Roger wynchester and Edmunde Hardell were dischargyd, for so myche as they wythstode the kinges purueyour of whete, & wold not suffer him to conuey certayn mesures of whete oute of the cytye tyll the cytye were storyd. For thys the kynge toke such displeasure, that he sent downe streyght cõmaundement vnto the .xxxv. heddes or rulers of the cytye, that they shulde dyscharge the sayde two baylyuys, and to put theym in prysson tyll they knewe the kynges further pleasure. wherfore the sayd .xxxv. persons toke aduyse/ & appoynted a certayne of theym selfe wyth other, and rode to the kynge then beynge at Langley, to empeter grace for the sayde baylyues/ shewynge forther that at that season such dystresse of whete was in ỹ cyty, that the common people were lyke to haue made an insurrecyon for the same. By whyche meanes and frendeshyppe whyche they had in the court, the kynge was so satysfyed that he releasyd theym from prysson. And in shorte tyme after, the cytesyns of London made such sute to the kyng, that they had graunted to them by ỹ kynges letters patentes, that they shuld yerely chose to them selfe a mayre and two shyrues. After whyche graunte to theym confermyd / they amonge them selfe ordeyned, that the two shyrues shulde be chosen yerely vppon saynte Mathewes daye. ix. dayes before Mychelmas, and vppon Mychelmas daye to take theyr charge/ and the mayre to be chosen vppon the same daye, and chargyd wyth the other vppon the sayde daye of Mychelmas/ all be yt that now yt is otherwyse orderyd.

first mayre & Shyrreffes

Anno domini. M. CC. ix.

Primus maior.

Peter Duke.

Henry fyz Alwyn.

Anno domini. M. CC. x.

Anno .x.

Thomas Neell.

IN the daye of saynte Mychael the archaũgell, and .x. yere of kynge Johñ / Henry the sonne of Alwyne was swore & charged as fyrst

cc. iii. mayre

mayre of London / and Peter duke, wyth Thomas Neell ſworn for ſhyr ues/ and the name of bayllyues was after this daye clerely auoyded wyth in the ſayde cytye from that daye forewarde. Alſo where before thys tyme the brydge ouer Thamys at Lõdon, was made of tymber, and was ruled guydyd, or repayred by a fraternyte or college of prieſtes. This yere by the great ayde of the cyteſyns of London and other paſſyng that way, the ſayde brydge was begonne to be edyfyed of ſtone. And in thys yere ỹ monaſtery of ſaynte Mary Ouereys in South warke, was begonne of

to be buylded. And in thys yere the pope ſente two legates, or after ſome writers one legate named Pandulphus / the whyche in the popys name had many ſore wordes of monycyon of obedience to kynge Johñ/ and charged hym to ſuffre the arche byſſhoppe of Caunterburye wyth the pryour and munkes of the ſame, to enioy theyr ryghtes and poſſeſſyons wythin Englande/ and taryed here a certayne of tyme to bryng hys purpoſe aboute. But all was in vayne/ for he yode agayn to Rome wythout releaſynge of the enterdytynge.

Of ỹ maner of this enterdyccyon of this lande, haue I ſene dyuerſe opynyons. As ſome there be ỹ ſaye, that the lande was enterdyted thorouly/ and the chyrches, and houſys of relygyon cloſyd, that no where was vſed maſſe nor dyuyne ſeruyce. By which reaſon none of the .vii. ſacramẽtes in all this terme ſhulde be mynyſtred or occuppyed, nor chylde cryſtenyd, nor man confeſſyd, nor maryed. But yt was not ſo ſtreyghte / for there were dyuerſe places in Englande whyche were occuppyed wyth dyuyne ſeruyce all that ſeaſon, by lycence purchaſyd then or before. Alſo chyldren were cryſtyned thorough all the land, and men houſelyd and anelyd / excepte ſuche perſones as were excepted by name in the bull, or knowẽ for mayteyners of the kynges yll entent.

Anno domini .M. CC. x.

Anno domini .M. CC. xi

Peter yonge

Henry fyz Alwyn.

Anno .xii.

wyllyam Elande.

IN this yere whych was the .xi. yere of kynge Johñ after mydſomer, or the terme of the trewce were fully runne / kynge Phylyppe wyth a ſtronge hoſte entryd the countye of Guyan, and made newe warre vpon the vycounte of Thonars/ and toke hys caſtell called Parteny, wyth dyuerſe other ſtronge holdes to ỹ ſayd vycounte belongynge, and mannyd theym wyth frenche men/ and ordeyned one Guyllyam de Roches marſhall of Fraunce chefe ruler of that countrey / and after retourned into Fraunce. But yt was not longe after the kynge was departed/ but that the ſayd vycount of Thonars made ſharpe warre vpon the Frenchemen, with ſuch power as he myght make/ and recoueryd a parte of hys lande. But one daye when he hadde wonne a lytle holde, and taken therin a certayne of pryſoners/ in his retourne towarde hys holde where he lodged, he was ſuppryſed wyth the forenamed Guyllyam de Roches & a great multytude of Frenchemen/ of ỹ wch yche after longe fyght he was fynally taken, wyth fyr Hugh Thonars hys brother, fyr Aymery de Leſyngnam ſonne of the erle of Poytyers, & to the nomber of .l. perſones of his cõpany / ỹ whyche were all as pryſoners, then ſent vnto ỹ frenche kyng.

Anno domini.M.CC.xi. Anno domini.M.CC.xii.

Adam whetley.

Henry fyz Alwyne. Anno.xii.

Stephan le Graas.

IN this .xii. yere of kyng Johñ the pope sente agayne Pandulphe his legate/and monyshed the kynge in sharpe maner that he shuld receyue mayster Stephan Langton to hys benefyce of the see of Caunterbury, and the pryour wyth hys munkes vnto theyr abbay. Then ỹ kyng callynge to mynde the daũgers whiche he was wrappyd in, both wythin hys owne realme and also in Normandy, and the hurtes whyche dayly grew to hym by the same / made a promyse by othe that he wold be obedyent vnto the courte of Rome, and stande and obey all thynge, that the same court woll adiudge hym. Upon whyche promyse so made/ the legate sent knowlege vnto the pope, & had commaundement from hym that he shulde bynde the kynge to these artycles folowynge. Fyrste that he shuld peasybly suffer ỹ forenamed mayster Stephan Langton to entre his land and to enioye the archebyshopryche of Caunterburye, wyth all profytes and frutes belongynge to the same. Secondaryly, that he shulde in lyke maner and forme receyue the pryour of Caunterburye and hys munkys, wyth all other beforе tyme exyled for the archbyshoppes cause/ and not at any tyme here after ver or punyshe any of the sayde persones spyrytuall or temporall, for any of those causes. Thyrdely that he shulde restore vnto the sayd archbyshop & to all ỹ other, all such goodes as were beforе tyme taken from any of them by hys offycers, syn the tyme of thys varyance growynge. And fourthly ỹ he shulde yelde vp into the handes of the pope, all his ryght and tytle that he hadde vnto the crowne of Englande, wyth all reuenеus, honoures, and profytes belongyng to the same, as well temporall as spyrytuall/ and to hold yt euer after both he and hys heyres of the pope & his successours as feodaryes of the pope. And when these artycles were graunted, and the lordes of the lande swore to the maynteraunce of the same/ the kynge kneling vpon hys knees toke the crown from hys hedde, and sayde these wordes folowynge to the legate delyuerynge hym the crowne. Here I resygne vp the crowne of the realme of Englande and Irlande into the popes handes Innocent the thyrd/ and put me holy in hys mercy and ordynaunce. After reherſall of which wordes, Pandulphe toke the crowne of the kynge, and kepte the possessyon therof. v. dayes after, in token of possessyon of the sayde realme of Englande. And whē ỹ sayd. v. days were expyred/ the kyng resumyd ỹ crowne of Pandulphe, by vertue of a band or instrument made vnto the pope, ỹ whyche at length is sette out in the cronycle of Englande and other places. wherof the effecte is, ỹ the sayde kynge Johñ & his heyres, shuld euer after be feodaryes vnto the forenamyd pope Innocent and to hys lawfull successours popys of Rome/ and to pay yerely to the chyrche of Rome a thousande marke of syluer, that ys to saye for Englande. vii. hundred marke, and for Irlande .iii. hundred marke. And yf he or hys heyr fayled or brake that paymēt/ that then they shulde fayle of theyr ryghte of the crowne. But Polycronycon sayth vii. hūdred marke for Englande and

two hundred marke for Irlande. For the whyche summes after the af-
fyrmaunce of that authour Guydo, * Peter pens. the money called * Peter pens are at thys daye gatheryd in sondry places of Englande.

Anno domini.M.CC.xii. Anno domini.M.CC.xiii.

Iosne fyz Pet.

Henry fyz Aleyn. Anno.xiii.

Johñ Garlonde.

IN this.xiii.yere of kyng Jhoñ and moneth of Februarye/maister Stephan Langton archebyshop of Caunterbury, wyth the other exylys landed in Englande/and after in processe of tyme met wyth the kynge at wynchester. where the kyng receyuyd hym with a ioyouse coũtenaũce, and after there was assoyled of the sayde archebyshop. But yet was not the interdiccyon of the land releasyd/ for so mychе as the kyng at that day hadde not made restitucyon vnto the archbyshope and other, accordynge to the thyrde artycle before reherssyd. For the whych as testyfyeth the Englyshe boke, he payed vnto the archbyshoppe thre thousande marke/and to the other by partyculers.xv.thousande marke. After whychе thynges performed and done/ the interdyccyon was adnullyd and fordone, in the moneth of July, and yere of our lord xii hundred and.xii/when yt had standen in force full. vi. yeres, & as mych as from the .xxvi. daye vnto the moneth of July, whyche is vppon .iii. monethes and odde dayes.

Anno domini.M.CC.xiii. Anno domini.M.CC.xiiii.

Raufe Eylande.

Henry fyz Alwyn. Anno.xiiii.

Constantyne le Iosne.

IN thys .xiiii.yere of the kyng/ for that he wolde not holde the lawes of saynte Edwarde, and also for displeasure that he bare to diuers of them, for they wolde not fauoure hym agayne the pope / and for other causes whyche here be not manyfestyd/ the kyng fell at dyssencyon with hys lordes, in so mych that great people were reysyd on eyther partyes. But for the kynges partye was the stronger/the erle of Chester with the other lordes toke the cytye of London, and helde them therin a certayn of tyme. The whych cronycle of Caxton wyth other, sayen that a great parte of this varyaũce betwene kyng Johñ and his barons was, for because the kynge wolde wythout skyll dome haue exyled the sayde erle of Chester/whyche to hym hadde no cause, but for so mychе as before seasons he hadde often tymes aduysed the kynge to leue hys cruelnesse and his accustomed auowtry, the whych he exercysyd wyth his brothers wyfe and other. But by the meanes of the archebyshoppe of Caunterbury and other prelatys / a peace was taken for a whyle.

In this yere vppon the daye of the translacyon of saynt Benet, or .v. xi. day of July / a great parte of the Borough of Southwarke was brent. And in the moneth of Auguste nexte folowynge, was great and mychе harme done in London by fyre.

Soone after to stablyshe the peace betwene

betwene the kynge and hys lordes, an assemble was made on Bertham downe/ where the kynge and the lordes mette wyth great strenght vpon eyther syde. where a charter or wry-tyng was dyuysed and made, & there sealyd by the kynge/ so that the baronye was wyth yt contentyd, and departyd in peasyble wyse euerychе man into hys countrey.

Anno domini.M.CC.xiiii. Anno domini.M.CC.xv.

Martyne fyz Alys.

Roger fyz Aleyn. Anno .xv.

Peter Batte.

IN thys.xv. yere of the kynge/ the peace whych in the laste yere was betwene kyng Johñ and his baronyes agreed, was by the kynge vyolate and broken. wherfore the lordes assembled to them great powers & made sharpe & cruell warre vppon the kynge/ in so mychе that he was constrayned to sende into Normandye for ayde and socoure, & into other places. Then shortely after came into Englande a Norman knyghte, whyche brought wyth hym a compa nye of Normannes, Flemmynges, & Pycardes. This knyght or capitayn was named Foukes de Brent/ ỹ whi che wyth his company was so cruell, that he destroyed as well relygyous houses as other, and wrought mych harme to the lande, and putte the lordes to the worse. Then the kynge made Foukes and other of hys com pany wardeyns of castellys & strũge holdes in Englãd. The lordes seyng the kynge persеuer in hys wronge, and wolde in no wyse be enduced to holde his owne grauntes/ but to exe-cute all thynge after pleasure, and nothynge after lawe or iustyce: cast in theyr myndes howe they myghte bryngе the lande in a better rule or state/ and by one aduyse and consent wrote vnto Phylyp kyng of Fraũce, that he wolde sende some noble man into Englande/ and they wolde ren-dre ỹ lande vnto hym. In this whyle kyng Johñ causid to be drawen and hangyd at London one Pyers of Pomfrette/ for the sayde Peter had monyshed dyuers myssе happes that shulde come to hym for his vycyous lyfe/ and also for he had often war-ned kyngе Johñ that he shuld reygn but.xiiii. yeres / the whyche he ment wythout payenge of trybute. For af ter he was become feodary to the po-pe/ he thought the pope reygned as pryncypall lorde of the land and not he. For the whyche and for other ma lyce he putte that vertuous man to deth. Of whom inỹ.xxiii.chapiter of the.vii.boke of Policronycon are ma ny vertues shewed/ the which I ouer passe for lengthynge of the tyme.

Anno domini.M.CC.xv. Anno domini.M.CC.xvi.

Salomon Basynge.

Roger fyz Aleyn. Anno.xvi.

Hugh Basynge.

VPpon saynt Andrewes euen or the.xxix.daye of Nouem-ber, in the.xvi. yere of hys reygne/ kynge Johñ after he had lyen a cer-tayne of tyme wyth hys ordynaunce aboute the castell of Rouchester in Kent, he wanne the sayde castell, and toke therin certayne gentylmen that hadde

hadde conspyred agayne hym, the whyche he sente to dyuers prysons. And the barons helde theym to gyther at London, abydynge the commynge of Lewys son to the Frenche kynge, the whyche nere about ascencyon tyde landed in Englande wyth a stronge armye/and so came to Rochester, and layd syege to the castell, and wane yt wyth lytle payne, for so mych as yt was greatly febled wyth the assautys lately made by kynge Johñ, and syn that tyme not suffycyently repayred. And when he had wonne the sayde castell, he caused all the straungers therein taken, to be hanged/ and after came to London, where certayne allyaunces and couenauntes were stablished betwene the lordes & hym, and receyued of them homage as affermeth Policronicon. And after theyr maters betwen them there fynyshed/he with the lordes departed from London, and gatte the castellys of Rygat, of Gylford, and and of Frenham/ and from thens to wynchester, where the cytye was yelden vnto them, wyth all the holdes and castellys there about, as wolnesey, Odyham, and Beawmere. And about sayntе Margaretes daye, he wyth the lordes came agayne to London/ at whose commynge the towre of London was gyuen vp to theym by appoyntement. And where Roger fyz Aleyn hadde tyll that tyme rulyd the cytye of London as mayre/he for so mych as he was accusyd to the lordes to be fauorable to the kynges partye, was then dyscarged of that offyce/and one called Serle Mercer was chosen in hys place, and so cõtynued tyll Mychelmas folowynge.

In thys passe tyme kynge Johñ beynge thus ouersette wyth hys lordes, sent messengers to ỳ pope/ shewynge to hym the rebellyon of hys lordes, and how they labored hys destruccyon. wherfore the pope in all haste sent a legate into Englande named Gualo or Swalo/ the whyche after hys commynge, commaunded Lewys to returne into Fraunce/and labored to the vttermost of his power, to appease the kynge and hys baronye. But all hys laboure was in vayne.

Anno domini. M. CC. xvi.

Anno domini. M. CC. xvii.

Johñ Trauers.

wyllyam Hardell.

Anno. xvii.

Andrewe Newlande.

IN thys. xvii. yere of kynge Johan / the warre betwene hym and his lordes styll contynuynge, he dyed of the flyxe, as testifyeth Polycronycon, at the towne of Newerke, vppon the daye of sayntе Calyxte the pope, or the. xiiii. day of October. How be yt the Englyshe boke or cronycle sayeth, that he dyed at Sebynshede an abbay aboute Lyncolñ, by the impoysonynge of a munke of the same house, the daye after sayntе Luke or the. xviii. daye of October/ and was buryed at the cytye of wynchester. But the authour of Policronycon sayth he was bowelled at Crongthon abbaye / and buryed at worceter in the myddle of the quyer of munkes, when he hadde reygned xvi. yeres. vi. monethis & iiii. dayes/ leuynge after hym two sonnes, Henry and Rycharde, wyth sondry doughters.

Of thys Johñ yt is redde, that he founded the abbay of Belewe in the new forest/in recompensacyon of the parysshe

parysh chyrches which he there ouer turnyd to enlarge that forest/ and an abbay of blacke munkes in the cytye of wynchester, where after ỳ sayeng of the englysshe cronycle he shulde be buryed.

This kynge Johñ also after some wryters, maryed one of hys doughters vnto Otto the fourth of ỳ name emperour of Almayne and duke of Saxony/ the whyche helde warre agayne kynge Phylyppe of Fraunce, as in the.v.chappter of the storye of the sayde Phylyp before is declared. whyche Otto for hys rappne and extorcyon done to the chyrch of Rome, was accursyd / and the sayd Phylyp and also kynge Johñ for theyr dysobedyence to the chyrche were also accursyd / the whyche warred eyther wyth other/ so that eyther of thē greuyd and berid other, to the great hyn deraūcis of them and eyther of them. For the whyche consyderacyon a metrycyan made these balades of them as foloweth.

O quam mirabilia, good lorde
thy worckes been
In punyshement of synners by thy
myght wonderslỳ/
As by old storyes yt is playnely seen.
One synner the other hath correcte
vtterly.
As Alexander, wyth Julius, Pompey, and Tholomy,
And many other whych as thy scourgys were,
To punyshe synners and theym self
also dere.

In lyke wyse nowe reader, yf thou lyste take hyde,
And well reuolue in mynde thys
hystorye
Of these thre prynces, and loke well
on theyr dede/
Thou shalte conceyue that they dyd
wyckedly.
I meane kynge Johñ, Phylyppe,
and Ottony/
whyche vnto synne made them selfe
so thrall,
That of pope Innocent they were accursyd all.

wherfore god sufferyd that one the
other to greue,
And warre & chase wyth dedely hate
and stryfe.
Glad that one the other to mischeue/
Manassynge eche other wyth spere,
sworde, and knyfe/
wyth cruell batayll durynge theyr
synfull lyfe.
wherfore I maye conclude, in factis
horum,
That multa sunt flagella peccatorũ.



Enry the thyrde of ỳ name, & eldest son of kyng Johñ, a chylde of the age of .ix. yeres/ begane hys reygne ouer the realm of Englande, the.xx.daye of the moneth of October in the yere of our lorde. M. two hundred and.xvi/ and the.xxxvi. yere of the seconde Phylyp yet kyng of Fraunce.

ye haue before harde of the cruell warre, whyche Lewys son vnto the Frenche kynge wyth the ayde of the baronys of Englande, mayntenyd agayne kynge Johñ. The whyche after the deth of the sayde Johñ contynued/ for as mych as then some of the lordes that before hadde mayntened the quarell of Lewis now for soke hym, & toke parte with this Henry as theyr naturall and souerayne lorde. wherof the chefe were the erles of Penbroke & of Chester/ the whych wyth theyr retynewe helde sharpe warre

warre wyth the sayde Lewys & his affynyte, the whych entēdyd to haue ben kynge of Englande, by reason of couenaūtes made wyth certayne lordes of the lande, when he was fyrste sent for by them. wherfore the forsayd erles wyth the other of theyr partye, to make theyr partye the strōger/ pro claymed the sayde Henry kynge of Englande, vppon the foresayde. xx. daye of Octobre thorough the cytye of London / and in all possyble haste after made prouysyon for hys coro= nacyon / so that vppon the daye of Symonde and Jude next ensuynge, he was crowned at Glouceter, of Peter then bysshoppe of wynche= ster/ Lewys the Frenche kynges son beynge then at Lyncolne. In which yere stode styll as gouernoure of the cytye of London tyll Mychelmas nexte folowynge.

Anno domini. M. CC. xvii.

wyllyam Hardell.

Anno domini. M. CC. xviii.

Johñ Trauers.

Anno. i.

Andrewe Newlande.

SOone as the kynge was crowned/ cōmyssyons where sent ouer in his name into all places of Englande, to gather strength of men to wythstand the forenamed Le wys/ & to put hym wyth his Frenche men and other allyaunces out of the land, whych then hadde vnder theyr rule and custodye the castellys of Berkhamsted, of Hertford, & dyuers other. And for thys Lewys wold not cease of hys warre and retourne into Fraunce/ therfore the forsayd Gwa lo or Swalo the poppys legate, accur syd hym fyrste by name, and after all such as hym mayntayned or fauored in thys warre agayne kynge Henry. Then the forenamed erlys accompa nyed wyth wyllyam erle Marshall of Englande, wyllyam le Bruys erle of Ferrys, wyth many other rode to Lyncolne/ and wanne that town vp= pon the straūgers. where was slayne a French man called erle of Perches wyth many other souldyours. And there was take of Englysshmē Serle erle of wyncheſter, and Hūfryde Bo= hum erle of Herford, wyth dyuerse other of name. And in thys whyle Lewelyn prynce of walis, for that he ayded the partye of Lewys was ac= cursyd, and his lande enterdyted.

After the towne of Lyncolne was thus wōne from the Frenchmen, Le wys wyth other parte of his souldy= ours drewe towarde London/ for so myche as word was brought to hym that his fader had sent to hym a new company of souldyours, the whyche shulde lande in Englande shortely. Trouth yt was that such an ayde of souldyours was made by the frēche kyng, & cōmyttyd to a capytayn why che in the cronycle is named Eustace the mūke/ the whych was encoūtryd vpon the see with a capytayn or may ster of the. v. portis called Hubert at Burgh, & gaue to hym batayll, and scomfyght hym at length/ & sent the hed of ỹ sayd Eustace vnto ỹ kynge. when Lewys harde of these tydyn= ges, and consydered howe dayly his strength mynyshed / he was more in= clynable vnto peace/ so ỹ in cōclusion he toke money as sayth Policronica & yelded vp his castellis & strengthis which he held/ & after was assoyled, & so returned into Fraūce. But of this money ỹ Lewis receyued, ben diuers opinyons/ for the englysshe boke na= myth yt a thousande marke, and the frenche boke sayth .xv. M. marke.

Anno domini.M.CC.xviii. Anno domini.M.CC.xix.

Thomas Bokerell.

Robert Serle. Anno.ii.

Rafe Gylande.

IN thys seconde yere of kynge Henry, when the lande was voyded of the straũgers / then inquysycyons were made to knowe what persones hadde fauored the partye of Lewys agayne the kynge / of the whyche the kynge pardonyd many of the lay fee. But ỹ spyrytuall were put to suche fynes, ỹ they were compellyd to laye that they myghte to pledge to please the kynge / and ouer that to sue to Rome to be assoylyd. And thys yere Ranulphe erle of Chester, for consyderacyons hym moupnge / toke hys iourney into the holy lande. But one cronycle sayth he toke that iourney vppon hym, for so myche as hadde contrarye hys allegeaunce, made homage vnto Lewis aboue named / and for malyce whych he bare towarde kynge Johñ, entendyd at the tyme of that homage doynge to haue made the sayde Lewys kynge of Englande.

Anno domini.M.CC.xix. Anno domini.M.CC.xx.

Benet le Ceytur.

Robert Serle. Anno .iii.

wyllyam Blounde.

IN thys thyrde yere of kynge Henry, a parlyament was holden at London / by vertue wherof was graunted to the kynge .ii. s. of euery plough lande thorough England / whych was for ỹ charge that he before had wyth Lewys warre. Also this yere saynt Thomas of Canterbury was trãslated in the .vii. day of this moneth of July / the whyche was done wyth so great a charge vnto mayster Stephan Langton then archbisshop of Caunterbury, that the charge therof was not contented many yeres after ỹ deth of the said Stephan. And thys yere as wytnessyth Polycronycon, kynge Henry began the new worke of the chyrche of west mynster / whyche after that sayenge shuld be in the .xii. yere of hys age.

Anno domini.M.CC.xx. Anno domini.M.CC.xxi

Johñ wayle.

Robert Serle. Anno. iiii.

Iosne le Spycer.

IN thys yere Alexander kynge of Scottes, maryed dame Jane or Johan the syster of kynge Henry. And this yere was great harme done in Englande by vyolence of a whyrlewynde / and fyry dragons, and spyrytys were sene fleynge in the ayer. And this yere were proclamacyons made in London and thorough out Englande, ỹ all straungers shuld auoyde the lande by Mychelmasse next folowyng / except such as came wyth marchaũdyse, and to make sale of them vnder the kynges saufe cõduyt. which was chefely made to auoyde Foukes de Brent and his complyces, whyche kepte the castell of Bedforde agayne the kynges

wyll and pleasure. And in thys yere was kynge Henry secondaryly crowned at westmynster the.xvii. daye of May. And thys yere the cytye called Damas in the holy land, was by crysten men gotten from the Turkys. And thys yere came out of the holy lande into Englande Ranulphe erle of Chester, and beganne to buyld the castellys of Charteley & of Bestone/ & after he buylded the abbay of Delacresse of ỹ whyte order. For charge and coste of whyche sayde castellys & abbay/ he toke toll thorough all hys lordshyp, of all such as passyd ỹ way wyth any chafire or marchaundyse.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxi.

Anno domini. M. CC. xxii.

Rycharde wymbeday.

Robert Serle.

Anno. v.

Johñ wayell.

In thys .v. yere of kynge Henry/ at Oxenforde was holden a generall coũsayll of the byshoppes and clergye of thys lande. In tyme of whyche counsayle a man was taken, the whyche shewyd hym selfe to be Cryste, and preached many thynges of errour, whyche the clerkes at those dayes vsyd. And to approue that he was Jesus the sonne of god, and that he was comen to refourme those errours and other/ he shewyd the carectys and tokens of woundes in hys bodye, handes, and fete, like to Jesus that was nayled on the crosse. Then he was apposyd and approuyd a false dyssymuler. wherfore by dome of ỹ counsayll he was iudgyd to be nayled to the crosse, and so delyueryd to the executours/ the whyche at a place callyd Alburburye nayled hym to a crosse tyll he was dede.

Also this yere the kynge layde syege vnto the castell of Bedforde that Fowkys de Brent hadde so longe holden by strength. Thys syege beganne vppon the euen of the Assencyon of our lorde/ and so contynued tyll our Lady daye assumpcyon. In whyche passetyme many stronge assautys were made, to the great losse of men on bothe partyes. But fynally aboute thys forsayde daye of assumpcyon, yt was taken by fyerse assaute. wherein was taken the forenamed Fowkys de Brent, and vpon the nõber of. lxxx. souldyours, whereof the more parte were put to deth: and the sayde Fowkys after he had lyen a certayne of tyme in pryson, was for his fynaunce delyueryd and flemyd the lande. And in this yere came the frere Mynors fyrst into Englande. These are graye freres of the order of sayncte Fraunces/ whych yf that be trewe, they shulde come in to Englande vppon. vi. yeres before the deth of sayncte Fraunces. For after affyrmaunce of the authoure of Cronica cronicarum, Jacobus Philippus and other/ sayncte Fraunces dyed in the yere of grace. xii. hũdred and. xxvii. And that order was fyrst confyrmed of Honorius the thyrde of that name pope of Rome, in the yere of grace. xii. hundred and. xxiiii. Thys order fyrste beganne vnder a fewe nomber of frerys at the cytye of Caunterbury/ and after came vnto London, and restyd theym there tyll they hadde an house there foundyd by Isabell wyfe of Edwarde the seconde, as after shall be shewyd in the storye of the sayde Edwarde/ all be yt the sayde house was begonne of Margarete the wyfe of Edwarde the fyrste.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxii. Anno domini.M.CC.xxiii.

Rycharde Renger.

Robert Serle. Anno .vi.

Joseus le Josne.

IN thys.vi. yere of the reygne of kynge Henry, a conspyracy was made by one Constantyne the sonne of Arnulphe wythin the cytye of London / for the whyche he was drawen and hãged the morow folowynge our Lady daye Assumpcyon. This conspyracy was dyscloſed by a cytezyn named walter Bokerell/and was so heynous & greuous to ỹ king that he was in mynde & purpose to haue thrown downe ỹ wallys of the cytye. But when he had well conceyued that the persones whych entẽded this cõspiracy were but of the rascallys of the cytye, & that none of ỹ heddys or rulers of the same were therunto consentynge / he aswagyd hys ire and greuouse displeasure, whych he entendyd towarde the cytye.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxiii. Anno domini.M.CC.xxiiii.

Rycharde Joyner.

Robert Serle. Anno. vii.

Thomas Lamberde.

IN this seuenth yere / Johan kynge of Hierusalem came into Englande, and requyred ayde of kyng Henry to wynne agayne that holy cytye / but he retourned wyth small comforte. And about this tyme Johñ the sonne of Dauid erle of Angwyshe in Scotland, and nere kynneſman vnto Ranulphe of Chester, maryed the doughter of Lewelyn prynce of walys/ as yt were for a fynall accorde betwene the sayde Lewelyne and Ranulphe euer after to be contynued.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxiiii. Anno domini.M.CC.xxv.

wyllyam Joynour.

Rycharde Reynger. Anno.viii.

Tomas Lamberte.

IN thys.viii.yere of kyng Henry/ a parlyament was holden at .where among other thynges/ the lordes and baronye of the lande graunted vnto the kynge and to his heyres kynges, the warde and mariage of theyr heyres/ which dede was after of lerned men called Initium malorũ, that is to meane the begynnynge of yllys or of harmes. The graūt of warde & mariage.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxv. Anno domini.M.CC.xxvi.

Johñ Trauers.

Rycharde Renger Anno .ix.

Andrew Bokerell.

IN thys.ix.yere of kynge Henry / Frederyke the seconde of that name, & emperour of Almayne, for his contumacy agayn the chyrch of Rome was accursyd of the.ix. Gregory then pope, wherfore soon after

dd ii. he

he toke two cardynallys and dyuers prelatys as they were goynge to a generall counsayle kepte by the sayd pope, at a place callyd Spolete a cytye of Italye.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxvi. Anno domini.M. CC.xxvii.

Roger Duke.

Rycharde Renger. Anno.x.

Martyne fyz wyllyam.

IN thys.x.yere of the reygne of kynge Henry/ the plees of the crowne were pletyd in the towre of London. In this yere also as wyt nesseth the Frenche cronycle, dyuerse souldyours, whyche as to thys daye kepte certayne castellys in the countye of Poytiers, as the castell of Monstruell the castell of Myrt, and the townes of Angely and of Rochel were by the Frenche kynge so assautyd, that they were constrayned to gyue them ouer to the Frenche kyng then beyng Lewis the nynthe of that name/ or after some writers the.viii, and sonne of Phylyppe the seconde.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxvii. Anno domini.M.CC.xxviii.

Stephan Bokerell.

Roger Duke. Anno.xi.

Henry Cobham.

IN thys .xi. yere of thys kynge Henry/ the shyrywyke of London and of Mydd. were lettyne to ferme for the summe of .iii. hundred poũde, by yere to the shyrues of London. And the.xviii.daye of Februarye the same yere, was graunted by the kynge that all weyrs in Thamys shulde by plucked vppe and destroyed for euer. And the .xvi. daye of Marche folowynge, the kynge graũted by hys charter ensealyd, that the cytyzens of London shulde passe toll free thorough all Englande. And yf any cytezyns were cõstrayned in any cytye, borough or towne in England to paye any toll/ ỹ then the shyrues of London to attache any man commynge to London of the sayde cytye borough or towne where suche toll was payed/ and hym and hys goodys to wythholde and kepe, tyll the cytesyners of London be restoryd of all suche money payed for the sayde tolle, wyth all costes and damagys sustayned for the same. And the xviii. daye of Auguste folowynge, the kyng graũted to ỹ sayd cytesyns of London wareyn/ that is to meane that the cytesyns haue free lybertye of huntynge certayne cyrcuyte aboute London. And in thys yere the towne of Lymosyn wyth dyuers holdes in Pyerregot and Aluerne in the countye of Guyan, were geuen vppe to the forenamed Lewys the Frenche kynge. wherfore the kynge sente ouer hys brother Rycharde erle of Cornewayll shortely after/ whyche landed at Burdeaux wyth.iii.hundred saylles.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxviii. Anno domini.M. CC.xxix.

Stephan Bokerell.

Roger Duke. Anno.xii.

Henry Cobham.

IN the begynnyge of thys .xii. yere of kynge Henry/ mayster Stephan Langton archbyshoppe of Caunterburye dyed/ and the great deane of Paulys mayster Rychard wethyrshed was hys successour. And in thys tyme the fraunchyse and lybertyes of the citye were by the kyng confyrmyd/ & to euerych of ỹ sheryues was graũted to haue. ii. clerkes & .ii. officers wythout mo. And to the citesyns of Lõdon was also graũted thys yere, that they shuld haue & vse a common seale. And in this yere Rychard erle of Cornewayll besyeged the town of saynt Machayre in Guyan. And whan he hadde wonne yt by strength / he then layed hys syege to ỹ town of Rochell, tyll yt was restoryd by the marshall of Fraunce.

Anno domini .M. CC. xxix. Anno domini .M. CC. xxx.

walter wyncheſter.

Roger Duke. Anno. xiii.

Robert fyz Johñ.

IN this xiii. yere of kynge Henry / vppon Trynyte sondaye, or after an other authour vpon whyt sondaye, whyle the byshoppe of London was at the hygh masse in saynte Paulys chyrch of Lõdon, fell sodeynly suche thyckenesse of darkenesse of cloudes, and therwyth suche stenche and tempeste of thunder and lyghtenynge, that the people there assembled voyded the chyrche/ and the vycarves and chanons forsoke theyr deskys, that the byshoppe remayned in great fere alone/ excepte a fewe of his menyall seruauntys and suche as attendyd vpon hym at the aulter.

Also in thys yere the fame of that blessyd woman Elyzabeth doughter of the kynge of Hungarye beganne to spredde. The whyche before and after the deth of her husbande Langraue duke of Thorynge in Almayne, shamyd not for Crystes sake to wesshe the sorys and bylys of lazars and of other poore men, besyde other manyfolde dedes of charyte. By vertue of whyche blessyd and vertuouse lyfe / she by her lyfe thoroughe the power of god shewed many and dyuerse myracles. Among the whyche by her prayer .xvi. men were from deth to lyfe arreryd / and a man borne blynde, to syght restoryd. wherfore by Gregorye the .ix. of that name and pope of Rome / she was amonge the college of the blessed nomber of sayntes alcrybyd and alowed / and commaunded her feast to be halowed the .xiii. kalendas of December.

Anno domini .M. CC. xxx. Anno domini .M. CC. xxxi.

Rychard fyz wyllyam.

Roger Duke. Anno .xiiii.

Johñ wodbourne.

IN this .xiiii. yere of the kinge was ordeyned by the mayre, and rulers of the cytye of London, that no shryue of that cytye shulde cõtynew lenger in offyce then one yere. wherof the cause was, that dyuerse of theym by contynuaunce of theyr offyce dyd dyuerse extorcyons, and toke bribys of bytellers wyth other defautys / whyche were founde and prouyd preiudycyall & hurtefull to the common weale of the sayde citye.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxxi. Anno domini.M.CC.xxxii.

Mych aell of ſaynte Elene.

Roger Duke. Anno.v.

walter Denfelde.

IN this.xv. yere, the kynge had graũted tyll hym a quindecim or fyftene of the temporaltye / and a dyme and an halfe of the ſpyrytualty, to recouer hys lãdes loſte in Normandy, Guyan, and Poyteau. And in this yere Huberte of Burgth, ỹat this daye was cheke iuſtyce of Englande, hadde greuyd or dyſpleaſed the kynge in ſuche wyſe, that he was compellyd to fle the kynges ſyght. But he was ſo ſtrayghtly purſued, ỹ he was taken in a chapell of Brentwood in Eſſex/ and ſo caſt in pryſon at the kynges commaũdement. But after by labour of the bleſſyd byſhop Edmunde of Pountenay, he was recõcylyd to the kynges fauour/ when he had ben pryſoned vppon.iiii. monethes, and exyled vppon.xiii. monethis. And this yere was done grete harme in London by fyre/ the whych beganne in an houſe of a widowe named dame Jane Lambert.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxxii. Anno domini.M.CC.xxxiii.

Henry Eldementon.

Andrew Bukerell. Anno.xvi.

Gerarde Batte.

IN this.xvi.yere/ kynge Henry vppon complaynt brought before hym, by the frendes of Lewelyn prynce of walys, ỹ willyam le Bruce or Brunze ſhuld cõſpyre agayne the kynge/ or after ſome, for he kepte vnlawfully the wyfe of the forenamyd Hauplyn: he was after longe pryſonement hanged. And this yere dyed Ranulphe erle of Cheſter, Lyncolne, & Hũtyngedon. And his ſyſters ſon named Johñ, ſonne vnto the erle of Angwyſhe as before in ỹ. vii. yere of this kyng is declared was his heyre, and helde that lordſhyp after hym. This Johñ of moſte wyters is called Johñ Scot/ for ſo myche as his father was a Scotte. This forſayd Ranulphe hadde no chylde, all be yt he hadde.iiii. ſyſters. The eldeſte hyght Wolde or Mawde / and was maryed to Dauid erle of Angwyſhe, and was moder to ỹ forſayde Johñ Scot. The ſeconde was named Hawys, and was maryed vnto the erle of Arundell, The thyrd Agnes, was ioyned to the erle of Derbye. And the fourth named Mabely, was maryed vnto the erle of wyncheſter called Robert Quynacye. Thys Ranulphe dyed at walyngforde / and was buryed in the chapter houſe of the munkys at Cheſter / and ordeyned the forenamed Johñ Scotte to be hys heyre, for that he wolde not haue ſo noble a lordſhyppe runne amonge or to be dyuyded betwene ſo many dyſtauys. And thys yere dyed mayſter Rycharde wethyrſhed archbyſhoppe of Caunterburye / whoſe ſucceſſour was bleſſyd Edmunde of Pountenay.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxxiii. Anno domini.M.CC.xxxiiii.

Symonde fyz Marre.

Andrew Bukerell. Anno.xvii.

Roger Blounte.

IN this.xviii.yere of the reygne of kyng Henry/the forenamed Edmunde of Pountenay or of Abyndon, was sacred archebyshop of Cãterburye. He was named of Pountenay, for so myche as he was buryed at Pountnay in Burgoyne. And he was named Edmunde of Abyndon by reason he was borne i Albyndon. Thys blessyd man as before in the xv. yere is shewyd / reconcylyd Hubert of Burgth to the kinges grace, and causyd hym to be restored to his former offyce, as cheke iustyce of this lande. In thys yere also the kyng beganne the foundacyon of the hospytayll of saynte Johñ wythout the Eestgate of Orenforde. In whyche yere also fyll wonderfull wether, as thunder and lyghtenynge vnlyke vnto other. And theruppon folowed an erthquake, to the great fere of the inhabytauntys of Huntyngdon, and nere there aboute. An erthquake.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxxiiii. Anno domini.M. CC.xxxv.

Rafe Alschewy.

Andrew Bukerell. Anno.xviii.

Johñ Norman.

IN thys . xviii . yere of kynge Henry/ the Jewys dwellynge at Norwyche were brought to fore the kyng at westmynster, to answere to a complaynte made agayne them by one callyd Johñ Toly of the sayd towne of Norwyche, that they shuld stele a chylde, and yt circumcysyd of the age of a yere, and after kepte the same chyld secret to the entent to crucyfye yt, in despyte of Crystes relygyon. But howe the mater was folowed, or howe so the Jewys acquytyd theym selfe by theyr answere / trouthe yt is that they retourned vnpunyshed. And in thys yere Frederyke the second of that name, and emperour of Almayne / maryed the syster of kynge Henry named Isabell, as testyfyeth Policronica.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxxv. Anno domini.M. CC.xxxvi.

Gerarde Batte.

Andrew Bukerell. Anno.xix.

Robert Ardell.

IN thys.xix yere. the morow after saynte Hyllary, or the .xiiii. daye of January/Edmunde archbysshoppe of Caunterburye spowsyd the kynge and Eleanoure the doughter of the erle of Prouynce in his cytye of Caunterburye. And in the vtas of the sayde Hyllary / she was crowned at westmynster as quene of Englande. where in the felde by westmynster lyenge at the weste ende of the chyrche, was kepte royall solempnite and goodly iustes, by the space of.viii. dayes. And the same yere the statute of Merton was enacted/ whych is to meane certayn actes made by acte of parlyament, holden by the kynge & his lordes & cõmons at ỹ towne of Merton, where among other actys was ordeynyd a remedy for wydowes that were defrauded of theyr dowers/ & also howheires within age shuld be intreated/ & remedies for such as were stolen or with holdẽ cõtrary ỹ gardeyns willis. But more certaynly yt was ordeyned at a plyamẽt at Merton foresayd, which was holdẽ the.xxx.yere of this kyng, in ỹ morowe folowyng the daye of saynt Martyn, or the .xii. day of Nouẽber. Statute of Merton

Anno domini.M.CC.xxxvi. Anno domini.M.CC.xxxvii.

Henry Cobham.

Andrew Bukerell. Anno.xx.

Jurden Couentre.

IN this.xx. yere of kynge Henry/ Johñ Scot before named erle of Chester, dyed wythoute yssue male. wherfore the kynge cõsyderyng the great prerogatyues belongynge to that erledome, gaue vnto his doughters other possessyons, & toke the erledome into hys own hand. Thys Johñ dyed at Dorondale / and was buryed amonge hys antecessours at Chester, as affyrmeth Policronycon. And also he sayth that he dyed wyth out any chylde/and that the forsayd exchaunge was made wyth the forenamed systers of Ranulphe, before expressyd in ỹ.xvi.yere of this kyng.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxxvii. Anno domini.M.CC.xxxviii.

Johñ Thesalan.

Andrew Bukerell. Anno.xxi.

Gerarde Cordwaner.

IN this.xxi. yere, Octoboon a legate of the.ix. Gregory and pope, came into Englande/ and ordeyned many good ordynauncys for the chyrche. But not all to the pleasure of the ponge clergy of England. wherfore as he one daye passed thorough Oxenford, the scolars sought occasyon agayn his seruauntes and fought wyth them, & slew one of the same/and put the legate in such fere, that he for his sauegarde toke ỹ bel fray of Olney/ and there helde hym tyll the kynges mynysters cõmynge from Abyndon wyth strength, medelyd with fayre wordes deliuerid him and conueyed hym after wyth a competente companye vnto walyngford. where he accursyd the misdoers, and punyshed theym in suche wyse, that the regentes & maysters of that vnyuersyte were lastely compellyd to go barefote thorough Chepe to Paulys at London, and there to aske of hym forgyues, and hadde that trespace wyth great dyffyculte forgyuen.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxxviii. Anno domini. M. CC.xxxix.

Johñ whylhale.

Rycharde Renger Anno.xxii.

Johñ Goundrelle.

IN thys.xxii.yere/a false clerke of the forsayde vnyuersyte of Oxenforde, whyche feyned hym selfe madde, and beforetyme had espyed the secret places of the kinges court/ came by a wyndowe towarde the kinges chamber at hys maner of woodstoke, entendynge to haue slayne the kynge. But he was espyed by a woman and taken / and so conueyed to Couentre, and there arreygnyd of that dede. where after lawfull prouys of hys malycyous entent made, he for the same was there drawen & hanged. And in thys yere vppon the euen of sayncte Botolphe/ or the xxvi. daye of Juny, was borne at westmynster Edward that after was surnamed Longeshanke. This after his father was kynge.

Anno domini.M.CC.xxxix. Anno domini.M.CC.xl.

Remonde Bengly.

wyllyam Joynour. Anno .xxiii.

Rafe Alschewy.

IN this.xxiii.yere of kyng Henry/ before the tyme of the electyon of the shyryues of London, one Symõde fyz Mary, whych before in the.xvii yere of the kynge had ben in that offyce, had purchased a cõmaundement of the kynge dyrected to the mayre and rulers of the cytye, ỹ they shulde cause hym to be electe to that offyce for that yere folowynge. But the mayre wyth the heddes of the cytye, consyderynge that commaundement to be a derogacyon vnto the lybertyes of ỹ cytye, wythstode yt/and chase the forenamed Rafe Alschwy, & put the sayde Symonde by / for the whyche he complayned hym to the kynge. Then the kynge sente for the mayre and the rulers of the city/ and hadde vnto theym many wordes of dysplesure, for the dysobeyenge of his cõmaundement/and fardermore discharged willyam Joynour which that yere was agayne chosen newely to be mayre for the yere folowynge/ and chargyd the cytesyns to procede to a newe electyon for theyr mayre. whyche then to satysfye the kynges plesure, chase Gerarde Batte. By whose meanys and good polycye the sayde mayr wyth the cytesyns demeaned theym so well to the kynge, that they obteyned hys gracious fauour, and causyd the forsayde Symonde to kayle of his purpose/ and was not after admyttyd to that offyce, tyll he hadde submyttyd hym to the rule of the mayre and rulers of the same cytye. The whyche Symonde behaued him so well after, that he was admyttyd for an alderman. But in shorte proceesse after he demeanyd him so yll, and so contraryously vnto the weale and good order of the cytye/ that he was dyscharged of hys alder manshyp, and dyschargyd from all rule and counsayll of the cytye, as in the.xxxiii. yere of thys kynge folowynge is touched.

Anno domini.M.CC.xl. Anno domini.M.CC.xli.

Johñ Gysors.

Gerarde Batte. Anno .xxiii.

Mychaell Tony.

IN thys .xxiiii. yere of kynge Henry/ saynte Paulys chyrch of London was newely halowyd. And the great Chaan of Tartarys before in the seconde yere of kynge Johñ myndyd or touched of theyr begynnynge, in thys yere after he had from the Turkys wonne myche of the Eest landes, he sent an hoste into the lande of Hũgary/ the whych held the people of that countrey so shorte, that as witnessyth the authour of Polycronica and other, they were constrayned of necessyte to ete theyr own chyldren and other vnlefull metys. But the authoure of Cronica cronicarum sayth, that this mysery fell to the peple of Hungary, in the yere of our lorde .xii. hundred and. xxi. whyche after that sayenge shulde be in the fyfte yere of thys kynge.

Anno domini.M.CC.xli. Anno domini.M.CC.xlii.

Johñ Upoll.

Remonde Bengley. Anno.xxb.

Thomas Durelyne.

IN this.xxb.yere of kynge Henry/Gerarde Batte was agayn chosen mayre for this present yere. And after whose electyon, he was by the worshipfull of the citye conueyed vnto woodstoke, and presentyd after the custome vnto the kynge. But the kynge enfourmed of hys laste peres dealynge, by suche as ought to hym no good wyll / sayde that he wolde not admytte hym to that offyce, tyll such tyme as he came to westmynster wyth whyche answere the sayde Gerarde wyth his companye returned vnto London. It was not longe after or the kyng came to westmynster/ where accordynge to theyr dutye the cytesyns of London agayn awayted vppon the kynge to know his pleasure. where the kynge callyd before hym the sayde mayre/ and after certayne questyons to hym put, he caused hym to be swore in his presence. After whyche othe to hym geuen/the kynge charged hym by vertue of the same, that he shulde not take of the bakers and bruers and other vytellars of the cytye .xl. pounde, whyche other of his predecessours, and also he that laste yere hadde taken. And also that he incontynently after hys commynge to London, shuld restore vnto the sayd vytellars and other cytesyns, all suche money as he hadde wyth wronge in that precedyng yere taken of the compynaltye of the citye. But for the sayde Gerarde allegyd for hym certayne consideracyons, besechynge the kynge to pardon hym of that resytucyon/ the kynge in dyse pleasure swore a great othe, that he shulde not that yere be mayre, nor at any tyme there after. And so the commons certyfyed of the kynges pleasure, chase in his place or stede/Reyner de Bungaye. And this yere the kynge yode into walys. wherof herynge Dauid then prynce of walys, mette wyth the kyng at Ruthlande/ and submyttyd hym to the kynges grace. Also this yere the blessyd Edmunde archebyshoppe of Cauntorbury, beynge at Pountnay in the prouynce of Burgoyne dyed/ and there was buryed/ & was after translatyd into ỹ same place within .x. yeres after his deth, by commaundement of Innocent the fourthe then pope of Rome/ because of his manyfolde myracles whyche god shewyd for hym after hys deth. All be yt in hys legende yt is shewyd that he dyed twentye myle from Pountnay called Soly/ and was after buryed and translated at Poũtnay. Of this blessed man Polycronycon shewyth many vertuyes in the.xxxb.chapiter of his.vii. boke, whyche here I ouer passe for lengthynge of the tyme. And thys yere one wyllyam of the Marshe, was at London for treason drawen and hanged. * Thys yere also were alder men fyrste chosen wythin the cytye of London/ whyche then hadde the rule of the cytye and of the wardes of the same/ and were then yerely chaũgyd, as now the shyryues be chaũged.

The mayre swore in ỹ kynges presence

Fyrst alder men of London. *

Anno domini.M.CC.xlii. Anno domini.M.CC.xliii.

Johñ kys Johñ.

Remonde Bongley. Anno.xxbi.

Rafe Alhewy.

In this .xxvi. yere of kyng Henry/ Bonyface was sacryd archbyshoppe of Caunterbury. And this yere the kyng wyth a fayre company saylyd into Normandy. whyche vyage as sayth ꝑ frenche cronycle was made by the styrynge of a Frenche man named erle of the Marche / for so myche as ꝑ sayd erle refusyd to do homage vnto Alphons brother vnto Lewys the .x. of that name, and surnamed sayntc Lewys then kynge of Fraunce. Thys Lewys the yere before hadde maryed his sayde brother vnto the doughter of the erle of Thoulouse/ and hadde gyuen to his sayde brother the erledome of Poyteau, wyth all the landes of Aluerne.

By reason wherof he wold haue caused the sayd erle of Marche, to haue done homage vnto the sayde Alphōs for such landes as the sayd erle held of the sayde erledome of Poytyers. But for ꝑ sayd erle of Marche knew well that the ryght of Guyan belonged to the kinge of England/ he ther fore,and for other allyaunces made bewene kynge Henry and hym,refusyd the doynge of that homage/ and after came to kynge Henry, and excytyd hym to make warre vppon the Frenche kynge. By reason wherof the kynge made prouysyon, and so landed with a stronge power at Burdeaux. After the affyrmaunce of the frenche boke, this erle of the Marchis had maryed the mother of kyng Henry.

Then it folowyth in this whyle the Frenche kynge warryd vppon ꝑ landes of the erle of Marche/and hadde wōne .ii. castellys of his named Foūteneys and Vyllers, wyth dyuerse other whych I passe ouer. And when he had beten downe some of them, & some storyd with new soudyours/ he then went vnto a castel named Mauconne,and brake a brydge after him, for so myche as he was warned that the kynge of Englande was nere vnto hym. At the sayd brydge was a lytell skyrmysshe/ but lytle harme was there done. Then the Frenche kynge toke the way ouer the ryuer of Tharent towarde Taylbourgh, wastyng and destroyenge the countrey as he went/ and so forth towarde the town callyd Saynces. And kynge Henry wyth hys hoste made towarde hym in al that he myght. In kepyng this course/the vawarde of the kynge encountryd wyth the erle of Bolcyne, whyche was vppon the Frenche kyngys partye. That season the erle of Saynces bare the banner of ꝑ erle Marches, beyng in ꝑ vaward of the kynge. Betwene these two erles was sore fyght / so that many a man vppon both partyes was slayn/among the whych the sayde erle of Saynces was slayne. Then came on bothe strengthes vppon eyther syde,so that both kynges fought in that batayll/ and great slaughter of men was vpon both sydes. But in the ende the Frenche men were victours, & toke prysoners .xxii. men of name, as knyghtes and of hygher degre, and .iii. clerkes of great fame and ryches, beside other to the nomber of .v. hūdred of meane people as wytnessyth the frenche boke. But of these men of name, nor yet of the ryche clerkes, none is named, nor yet shewyd what good they payed for theyr raōsome. wherfore me lyste to wryte no farther of this great victory/all be it ꝑ the sayd boke sayth farther, that kyng Henry forfere tourned backe vnto Burdeaux/ and there made meanes to the kynge of Fraunce for a peace. But of all thys fynde I no worde in the englyshe cronycles.

Then the erle of Marches by meane of his sonne, was reconcyled vnto the Frenche kynge, and restoryd to hys

hys landes / excepte thre castellys, whyche were named Mespyne, Cretaye, and Estardye / the whyche the Frenche kynge retayned in his owne possessyon. And soone after came vnto the Frenche kynge the lordes of the castellys of Myrabell, & of Mortayne / submyttynge theym also vnto the kynges grace / beseechyng hym of pardon, that they hadde so to his hygh displeasure fauored hys enymy the kynge of Englande. And after came in dyuerse other lordes & cappytaynes / so that he was in possessyon of all the countrey of Guyan & Poyteau, vnto ỹ ryuer of Gyroũde.

I haue rehersyd the more of thys cronycle of Fraunce / to the entente that the reders may well apperceyue the pryde and boste of the Frenchmen. For in all theyr wrytynge, when they come to any mater that soũdyth any thynge to theyr honour / yt is wryten in the lengest and most shewyng maner to theyr honour and worshyppe. But as I haue sayde before in the v. cappyter of the storye of the .ii. Phylyppe kynge of Fraunce / yf yt sound any thynge to theyr dyshonour, then shall yt be abreuyatyd or hyd, that the trouth shall not be knowen. And that appereth well here by theyr owne wrytynge. For in ỹ .vii. yere of kyng Johñ, yt is shewyd howe Phylyppe the seconde then kynge of Fraunce had wonne all Normandy and Guyan. And yet at thys daye thys kynge Lewys warryd agayne in the same countrey / so that they euer tell of the wynnyng, but they touche nothynge of the agayne losynge.

Then yt folowyth in the storye / when kynge Henry hadde as before is sayde, concludyd the forsayde peace, of the which by myne authour is no terme sette / the kynge retourned into Englande.

Anno domini. M. CC. xliii. — Anno domini. M. CC. xliiii.

Rafe Alshewy. — Hugh Blount.

Anno. xxvii.

Adam Balsynge.

IN this .xxvii. yere, the kynge returned from Burdeaux into Englande. And thys yere the plees of the crowne were kept in the towre of London. And thys yere Gryffyth, whych was sonne of Lewelyn lately prynce of walys, entendyng to haue broken pryson / fell ouer the wall of the inner warde of the towre of London and brake hys necke.

Anno domini. M. CC. xliiii. — Anno domini. M. CC. xlv.

Rafe Spycer.

Anno. xxviii.

Mychael Tony. — Nycholas Batte.

IN thys .xxviii. yere of kynge Henry as testyfyeth Polycronycon / a Jew dygged the grounde in a place in Spayn called Tholeet, to the entent to make hym a more larger dyne yerde. where in tyme of his dyggynge he fande a stone closyd on all partyes. But for he percepued yt to be holowe he brake the stone / and founde therin a boke as bygge as a sawter, wyth leuys all of tree. This boke was wryte in nthre dyuers languagys, in greke, in ebrewe, and in latyne / and the mater therof was of thre

thre worldes that shuld come. Of the whyche he poynted the commynge of Cryste to the begynnynge of the thyrde worlde, whyche was expressyd in thys maner of wyse. In the begynnynge of the thyrde worlde, goddes son shall be borne of a mayde. when the Jewe had well beholden the contentys of the boke, and sawe that yt conteyned so longe tyme as from Adam to Anticriste, and shewyd many prophecyes that were fulfyllyd and paste / he anon renouncyd hys iudaisme or Moysen lawe, and was crystyned, and lyued after as a crysten man.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlv. Anno domini. M. CC. xlvi

Robert Cornehyll.

Johñ Gyslors. Anno. xxix.

Adam Bewly.

IN thys .xxix. yere / Nycholas Batte contrary the ordynaūce before in the .xiiii. yere of thys kynge made, was agayne chosen shryue of London. For the whych he was conuycte of periurye / and so dyscharged and punyshed. And for ỹ Mychaell Tony, whych for this yere also was chosen mayre, was by deposycyon of the Aldermen founde gyltye in the sayde cryme of periurye: therfore he was deposyd from his offyce & punyshed. And for hym was chosen mayre Johan Gyslours / and for Nicholas Batte was chosen shryue Robert of Cornhyll. In this yere also as testyfyeth Jeffrey of Monmouth / Robert Grosehed thē byshoppe of Lyncolne, wyth other prelatys of ỹ land, complayned theym vnto the kynge of the waste of the goodes and patrymonye of the chyrche, whyche dayly was wasted and myspent by the alyaunt byshoppes and clerkes of this lande. Of the whych straungers one named mayster Martyne, and nere kynnysman of Innocent the thyrde late pope was one. The whyche the kynge by helpe of the Englyshe byshoppes auoyded, wyth other lyke offendours out thys realme. Also in thys yere the patryarke of Hierusalem, sente vnto the kynge a neume of bloode / whych was kepte at̄ saynt Thomas of Acris in Lōdon tyll the yere folowynge.

Anno domini. M. CC. xlvi. Anno domini. M. CC. xlvii.

Symonde fyz Mary.

Johñ Gyslors. Anno. xxx.

Laurence Frowyke.

IN this yere the neume of blood sent before to the kynge / was wyth moste solemne processyon, the kynge wyth great noumber of hys lordes beynge presente, conueyed from saynt Thomas fore sayd vnto westmynster, in ryght solemne wyse wyth processyon & other accordyng obseruaunces to suche a relyke apperteynynge. And in this yere dyed Frederike the emperour of Almayn / whyche as before is touchyd in the xviii. yere of this kyng, maryed Isabell syster vnto the kynge. The whyche for his rebellyon agayn ỹ chyrch of Rome, was accursyd fyrste of the ix. Gregory / and lastely of Innocēt the .iiii. he was agayne cursyd and deprpued of his imperyall dygnyte / gyuynge commyssyon & lycēce to the

ee electours

electours of the emperoure, to chose a new. The whyche were of so many myndes in theyr electyon, that some chase the duke of Thoryng, some the erle of Holande, and some chase the kynges brother Richarde erle of Cornewayll. whyche caused stryke that endured longe after/so that the onely emperoure of Almayne was not of all men alowed, tyll Radulphus duke or erle of Habspurghe in Almayne, was chosen by one assente to that dygnyte/and therunto admitted by Gregory the.ix. of that name, in the yere of our lorde.xii. hundred and.lxxiii. And so that varyaunce endured vppon.xxvii. yeres, to ꝑ great impouerysshyng of Italy, and the landes of the empyre. Then as before is sayd this Frederyk dyed vnassoyled, & was buryed in a cytye called Ferenciola, wyth thys superscrypcyon vppon hys toumbe.

Si probitas, sensus, virtutis gratia, census,
Nobilitas orti, posſent resistere morte:
Non foret extinctus, Fredericus qui iacet intus.

whyche versys are thus myche to meane in Englysshe.

If excellente of wytte, or grace of good vertue,
Or nobylnesse of byrth myght vnto deth resyste/
Then shuld thys Frederyke mortall fate exchewe,
whych hym hath closyd here now in hys chyste.
But none of these maye erthly man assyste
To stryue wyth deth / but all muste pay hym dette,
Noble and innoble there nothynge maye lette.

An other versyfyoure made these.ii. versys folowynge, of the interpretacyon of this name Frederyke.

Fre fremit in mundo, de deprimit alua profundo.
Re res rimatur, cus cuspide cuncta minatur.

The whyche may in this maner of wyse be englysshed.

Fre fretyth thys worlde/and de confoundyth all,
Hyghe thynges of honoure, into depenesse darke.
Ri sercheth besyly ꝑ goodes generall
Of thys worlde both of the laye and clerke.
Makynge no questyon in hys moste cruell werke,
And cus with sworde all thyng doth manace.
And thys is Frederyke all denoyde of grace.

Anno domini.M.CC.xlvii. Anno domini.M.CC.xlviii.

John Coyle.

Pyers Aleyne. Anno .xxxi.

Nycholas Batte.

In thys .xxxi. yere of the reygn of kyng Henry/Lewys which is surnamed sayntLewis then kyng of fraunce, with a conuenyent hoste sayled into the holy lande/ and there warred vpon Crystes enymyes, and wanne the cytye of Damas at hys fyrste landynge/ & after taryed there frō ꝑ begynnynge of ꝑ moneth of June, to the.xxii. day of Nouember/and after departyd thens towarde Babylon, entendynge to haue layde syege to the cytye. But fortune was to him so cōtrarye, that by sykenesse & other casueltyes he loste myche of his people/ and in the ende was hym selfe taken prysoner of the Turkis, as more playnely shall be shewed in the story of the sayde Lewys folowynge.

And in this yere was a myghty erthquake in Englande, that the lyke to yt was not sene many yeres before.

Also

Also thys yere the kynge sealyd the fraunchyse of the cytye of London vppon the euen of saynte Bartholomew, for a iudgement that was gyuen by the mayre and aldermen agayne a wedowe named Margaret Uyell / and commyttyd the rule of the cytye to wyllyam Haueryll and Edwarde of westmynster, tyll our ladye daye nexte folowynge. At whyche season the mayre and shyrues were agayne to theyr offyces admyttyd.

Anno domini.M.CC.xlviii. Anno domini.M.CC.xlix.

Nycholas Joy.

Mychaell Tony. Anno.xxxii.

Geffrey wynton.

In thys .xxxii. yere of the kyng the wharfe of London callyd quene hythe, was taken to ferme by the compnaltye of the cytye, to paye yerely therefore.l.pounde. The whyche was then commytted to the shyrues charge / and so hath contynuyd euer sen that tyme to thys daye. whereof the profyttys and tollys are so sore mynyshed, that at thys daye yt is lytle worth ouer.xx. marke or xl. pounde one yere wyth a nother. And thys yere fell great dystemperaunce of wether, in suche wyse that the grounde was bareyne vppon the same / and other myshappys folowyd anon theruppon. And thys yere when the mater aforenamed of Margarete Uyell wydow was well examyned / the iudgement therof was founden good and trewe. wherfore the cytezens enioyed the lybertyes wythoute interrupcyon/ all be yt the kynge was wyth theym some what agreuyd, for so myche as they at his requeste wolde not exchaunge wyth the abbot of westmynster, suche lybertyes as they hadde in Myddelsex of the kynges graunte, for other to be hadde in other places.

Anno domini.M.CC.xlix. Anno domini.M.CC.l.

Rafe hardell.

Roger fyz Roger. Anno.xxxiii.

Johñ Tolalane.

In the.xxxiii. yere of kyng Henry in the moneth of October dyed Robert Grosthede byshoppe of Lyncolne. He was the maker of the boke callyd Pety Caton and many other.

This Robert for so mich as ỹ.iiii. Innocent pope, greuyd ỹ chyrch of Englãde with talkis & paymẽtes agayn reason/ he therfore sente vnto hym a sharpe pystle. This pope than gaue vnto a chylde a neuew of hys, a chanonry whych fell voyde in the chyrch of Lyncolne/ and sent the chylde vnto the byshoppe, chargynge hym to admytte the sayd chylde, and to sette hym in hys place. But thys byshoppe boldely denyed the resceyt of the chyld/ & wrote vnto the pope ỹ he wold not nor shuld receyue such to ỹ cure of soule, ỹ could not rule thẽ self. Therfore this Robert was somoned to apere before ỹ pope, & therupon accursyd. Thẽ he appealyd frõ Innocẽtis courte vnto Crystes owne trone. Then after the deth of thys Robert as the pope laye in hys bedde at hys reste/ one aperyd to hym in clothyng

An appese from the pope.

of a byſhoppe, and ſayde to hym a-ryſe wꝛetche and come to thy dome/ and after ſmote hym wyth hys croſſe vpon the lefte ſyde. Upon the moꝛne after, the pope was foũden dede, and hys bedde all blody. But of thys is nothynge in the cronycle oꝛ ſtoꝛye of Innocent.

After that ſayenge of Polycronycon, this byſhoppe Gꝛoſtehede ſhuld dye in the.xxxvii. yere of thys kynge Henry/ the whyche ſayenge agreeth better with the ſtoꝛye, except that the ſayde pope lyued after the deth of the ſayde byſhoppe.vi.yere.

Anno domini.M.CC.l. Anno domini.M.CC.li.

Humfrey Baſſe.

Johñ Noꝛman. Anno.xxxiiii.

wyllyam fyꝛ Rycharde.

IN this.xxxiiii. yere was an exceedynge wynde, the whyche in ſondꝛy places of England dyd great harme/ whyche was in the begynnynge of this yere vppon the daye of Symon and Jude. About thys tyme in the duchy of Burgoyne as teſtyfyeth Faſciculus tempoꝛũ and other an hyll remouyd from hys pꝛoper place, and glode by many a myle/ and laſtely ioyned hym vnto other hyllys. In the whyche glydynge oꝛ ronnynge, the ſayde hyll oppꝛeſſyd oꝛ ſlewe.v. thouſande people. And thys yere Symon fyꝛ mary alderman of London/ foꝛ hys dyſobedyence and euyll counſaill that he gaue vnto Margarete Uyell, befoꝛe in the xxxi. yere of thys kynge touchyd, wyth other ſecret labours and maters entendyd by hym to the hurte of the cytye, was dyſchargyd of hys aldermanſhyppe, and put oute of the counſayll of the cytye.

Anno domini.M.CC.li. Anno domini.M.CC.lii.

Laurence Frowyke.

Adam Baſynge. Anno.xxxv.

Nycholas Batte.

IN thys.xxxv. yere of kynge Henry, beganne the frere Auguſtynes to buylde oꝛ inhabyte them in walys, in a place callyd woodhouſe.

And in this yere maryed kyng Henry his doughter Mary, oꝛ after ſome wꝛyters Margarete, vnto Alexander kynge of Scottys at the cytye of yoꝛke/ and dyd receyue homage of the ſayde Alexander foꝛ the kyngedome of Scottes, oꝛ foꝛ the pꝛouynce of Scotlande, in lyke maner as many of his pꝛogenytours had done dyuerſe and many tymes befoꝛe/ as in this woꝛke both befoꝛe thys tyme and alſo after is ſhewyd.

Anno domini.M.CC.li. Anno domini.M.CC.lii.

wyllyam Durham.

Johñ Toleſon. Anno.xxxvi.

Thomas wymboꝛne.

IN thys .xxxbi. yere, the kynge graunted vnto the shyrues of London, that they shulde yerely be alowyed of. vii. pounde, for certayne pryupleges or grounde belongynge to sayncte Paules chyrche/ the whych at this daye is allowyd by the Barons of the kynges exchekер, to euery shyrue when they make theyr accompte in the offyce of the pype. Also thys yere was graũted by the kynge for the citesens more ease/that where before tyme they vsyd yerely to present theyr mayre to ỹ kynges presence, in any such place as he then were in Englande, that nowe from thys tyme forthwarde they shulde forlacke of the kynges presence beynge at westmynster, presente theyr mayre so chosen vnto the barons of hys Exchekер/ and there to be swoꝛne & admyttyd as he before tymes was before the kynge.

Anno domini. M. CC. lii. Anno domini. M. CC. liii.

Johñ Northampton.

Nycholas Batte. Anno. xxxbii.

Rycharde Pycarde.

IN thys. xxxbii. yere/ the water of the see aboute the daye of sayncte Paulyn in the moneth of January rose of suche heyghte, that yt drowned many vyllagys and houses nere vnto yt in dyuerse places of Englande. And thys yere the kynge, the quene, and syr Edwarde his son, wyth Bonyface archebyshoppe of Caunterburye, and dyuerse other nobles of the realme / sayled into Normandye and taryed at Burdeaux a certayne of tyme. But of theyr dedys or cause of theyr saylynge thyther, is no mencyon made in the cronycle of England. How beyt in the frēche boke yt is shewed, ỹ the cause was to ioyne Edwarde the kynges sonne vnto the syster of ỹ kyng of Spayne by maryage.

This yere also the water of Thamys sprange so hygh, that yt drowned many houses about the waters syde/ by meane wherof myche marchaundyse was perysshed and loste. And thys yere the cytezyns hadde graunted of the kynge, that no cytesyns shulde paye scauage or tolle for any bestes by them brought, as they before tymes hadde vsyd.

Anno domini. M. CC. liii. Anno domini. M. CC. liiii.

Robert Belyngton.

Rycharde Hardell. Anno. xxxbiii.

Ranke Aschewye.

IN thys. xxxbiii. yere, by procurement of syr Rycharde erle of Cornewayll, for dysplesure whyche he bare towarde ỹ citye for exchaũge of certayne grounde to the same belongynge / the kynge vnder coloure that the mayre hadde not done due execucyon vppon the bakers for lackynge of theyr sayses, seased the lyber tyes of the cytye. That ys to be vnderstanden, that where the mayre and comynaltye of the cytye, hadde by the kynges graunte the cytye to ferme wyth dyuerse customys and offyces, for astynted and ascertayned summe of money/now the kyng sette in offycers at hys pleasure, the whiche were accomptable vnto hym

ee iii. for all

for all reuenues and profytes that grew wythin the sayde cytye. But wythin foure dayes folowynge the feste of saynte Edmunde the byshop, or by the.xix. daye of Nouember/ the cytesyns agreed wyth the sayde erle for .vi.hundred marke. After whych agrement wyth hym concluded, they soone after were restored vnto theyr lybertyes.

This yere syr Edward the kynges sonne and heyre was maryed vnto Eleanour ỹ kinges sister of Spayn. And in the Cristmas weke, the kyng landed at Douer, and ỹ quene wyth hym, wyth many other lordes. when the kynge was comen to London, he was lodgyd in the towre / where he sent for to come vnto hym the mayre and the shyrues, wyth whom he resoned greuously for the escape of one callyd Johñ Gate. This Johñ had murderyd a prycst allyed vnto the kynge. The mayre layde the charge of this mater from hym vnto ỹ shyrues, for so myche as to theym belonged the keppynge of all prysons wyth in the cytye/ so that the mayre returnyd home, and the shyrues remayned there as prisoners by ỹ space of a moneth after or more. And in theyr places and for theym were chosen Steuen Oystergate & Henry walmoode. But how the old shyrues passyd out of the kynges daunger I fynde not.

Anno domini.M.CC.liiii. Anno domini. M. CC. lv.

Stephan Oystergate.

Rychard Hader. Anno.xxxix.

Henry walmoode.

IN this.xxxix.yere in the feaste of saynte Etheldrede / dame Eleanour wyfe vnto the kynges sonne syr Edwarde, came vnto London/ where she was honorably receued of the cytesyns, and the cytye rychely curteyned and garnysshed wyth dyuerse ryche clothes/where the kynge was present at her commynge. And she was honorably cõueyed through the cytye to saynte Johñs wythoute Smythfelde, and there lodgyd for a whyle. But after she was remouyd vnto Sauoy.

It was not longe after ỹ the kyng sealyd the lybertyes of the cytye, for certayne money whyche ỹ quene clayme for her ryght of the cytesyns/ so that about saynte Martyns tyde in Nouẽber, they gaue vnto his grace iiii.hundred marke, and then were restored to theyr sayde lybertyes/ and the kynges vnder treasourer discharged, the whych for ỹ tyme was made custos or keper of the cytye. In the feast of saynte Scycyle, or the.xxii. daye of nouember ensuynge, were brought vnto westmynster.lxxx. and xxii. Jewes from Lyncolñ/the which were also accusyd of the crucyfyenge of a chyld at Lyncolne in the dessyte of Crystes relygyon/ whyche Jewes were after sent vnto ỹ towre of London. Of the whyche in procesſe of tyme after, xviii.were conuycte and hangyd/ & the tother remayned long after in pryson. In the vygyll of saynt Andrew syr Edwarde the kynges sonne came to London from beyonde the see. And the kyng of Scottys with the quene hys wyfe came in the somer season vnto the kynge to hys maner of woodstoke / where he dysportyd hym a season, and after returned into Scotlande/leuynge his wyfe wyth her mother tyll she were lyghted of chylde. And vppon ỹ day of the decollacyon of saynte Johñ/ the kyng

the kynge, the quene, and the quene of Scottes came to London / where they were honorably receyued, and so conueyed vnto westmynster.

Anno domini.M.CC.lv. Anno domini.M.CC.lvi.

Mathew Bokerell.

Rycharde Hardell. Anno .xl.

Johñ Mynoure.

IN thys.xl. yere, entryd ỳ land dyuers lordes of Almayne/the whych in Crystmas weke vppon the day of ỳ Innocentes, made homage vnto syr Rychard erle of Cornewayl & brother to the kynge/ the whych as then stoode kyng of Almayne and of Romayns. And the thursdaye nexte folowynge he departed from the kynges courte, and spedde hym wyth his wyfe and syr Henry his sonne vnto the see syde/ and after toke shyppyng in Jarnesay the.xxvii. day of Apryll, and landed at Dordreth in Holande the fyrste daye of Maye nexte ensuynge. And vppon assencyon day after, he was crowned kynge of Romayns in the citye of Aquisgranum.

Thys yere vppon the fyrste daye of Auguste / the kynge toke hys iourney towarde walys, for to subdue Lewelyn the sonne of Gryffyth the whyche wyth his welshemen rebellyd agayne the kynge, for so mych as syr Edwarde hys son to whom he hadde lytle before geuē the erledome of Chester, wolde haue chaunged some of theyr shyttyshe condycyons. And for to bryng hys purpose the better aboute / he sente for an armye of souldiours into Irlande, and tarryed for theyr commynge at hys castell of Genocke. But the yere passed farre on or hys people were gatheryd/ so that by the aduyse of hys lordes he strengthyd there a certayne castellys and returned for that yere into Englande.

And aboute the feaste of the Natyuyte of our ladye/ a concorde and a peace was cōcluded betwene ỳ Londyners & the abbot of the holy crosse of waltham/ the whych hadde ben in suyte many yeres before, for certayne dystresses take by the abbottis offycers of the Lōdoners, when they came wyth theyr mercymonyes vnto the fayre of waltham/ where as now yt is agreed that all suche dystressys shulde be restoryd / and yf any were perysshed or loste for longe keppynge, that then the abbot to contente and pay to the partyes the value in money, of suche distressys so perysshed or loste / and that the cytesyns shulde enioy the lybertyes of that fayre euer after, wythoute payenge of any tollage or toll.

Anno domini.M.CC.lvi. Anno domini.M.CC.lvii.

Rycharde Ewell.

Rycharde Hardell. Anno.xli.

wyllyam Alhewy.

IN this.xli.yere & begynnynge of the same, was founden in the kynges warderobe at wyndesore a byll or rolle closyd in grene ware, and not knowē from whens yt shuld come/ in the whyche rolle was cōteyned dyuerse articles agayne ỳ mayre and rulers of the cytye of London, and that by theym the comynaltye of the cytye was greuously tasked and

wrongyd. whyche byll was presentyd at length to the kynge. wherupon he anon sent Johñ Mancell one of his iustycys vnto London / and there in the feaste of the conuersyon of saynt Paule by the kynges authoryte, callyd at Paulys crosse a Folkmot/ beynge there presente syr Rychardе de Clare erle of Glouceter, & dyuerse other of the kynges counsayll. where the sayde Johñ Mancell causyd the sayde rolle to be redde before the compnaltye of the cytye/ & after shewyd to the people that ỳ kynges pleasure and mynde was, that they shuld be rulyd with iustyce/and that the lybertyes of the cytye shuld be maynteyned in euery poynte. And yf the kynge myghte knowe those persones that so hadde wrongyd the cominaltye of the citye/they shuld be greuously punyshed to the example of other. And that done, the sayde Johñ Mansell chargyd the mayre, that euery Alderman in hys warde shulde vppon the morowe folowyng assemble hys wardemote/ & that all those wardemotys shuld assemble in one place, and chuse of theym selfe wythout any counsayll or aduyse of any of theyr aldermē. xxvbi. persons, and them to present before the lordes and hym, at the same houre of ỳ nexte day in the byshoppes paleys at Paulys. Then vppon the morow all thynge was done accordynge to hys commaundement. And when ỳ sayd xxvbi. persones were presentyd before the sayde Johñ Mansell, Henry Baa iustycys & other/ the sayd Johñ sayde vnto theym, that they vppon theyr othe shuld certyfye all such persones as they knewe gylty in the artycles before vnto the compnaltye shewyd. wherunto the sayde xxvbi. cytesyns answeryd, ỳ yt was contrary theyr lybertyes to be sworne so many, for any mater of tresspas betwene the kynge and any of hys cytezyns/ wherfore they requyred a sparynge. wyth whych answere the sayd Johñ Mansell beynge dyscontentyd/ warnyd theym to appere before the kynges coūsayll at ỳ Guyldehall vppon the morowe folowynge / where they kepte theyr daye. And thyther came the sayde iustycys Johñ Mansell, & Henry Baa, syr Henry wenghām chaunceller of Englande, Philippe Louell vndertreasorer, and dyuerse other of the kynges counsayll. Then the sayde Johñ Mansell exorted the sayde persons to be sworne by many meanys, as he the other daye hadde done. But all was in vayne/ for they excusyd theym alway that yt was contrary theyr othe and lybertye of theyr cytye. wherfore the kynges counsayll departed from the hall in partye dyscontentyd, & shewyd vnto the kynge the demeanour of the sayde cytesyns.

Uppon the euen of ỳ Purificacyon of our lady, ỳ mayre beyng warned ỳ the kyng shuld come to westmynster/ he wyth the more parte of the Aldermen rode vnto Knyghtbrydge, and houyd there to saiute the kynge, and to knowe his forther pleasure. But when the kynge came nere that place and harde of theyr beynge there / he sent vnto them a squyre of household and chargyd theym that they shulde not presume to come in hys syght. wyth whyche message they beynge greatly dyscōforted, retourned home to the cytye. Afterwarde in the Octaues of the purifycacyon of our Ladye, returned from the courte Mychaell Tony and Adam Balynge/ the whyche before were sente by the mayre to such frendes as they had in the courte, to knowe the cause of the kynges hyghe displeasure. The whych brought worde that the kyng was well mynded vnto the citye/ but

he was

he was in full purpose to haue suche persones chastised that hadde oppressyd the compnaltye of the same. Upon the morow folowynge, came vn to ꝑ Guyldhall Johñ Mansell wyth other of the kynges counsayll / the whych to the people there assembled, shewyd many fayre & plesaunt wordes. Amonge the whych he declared that the kynges mynde & wyll was, to correcte all suche persones as had oppressyd the compnaltye of that his derysle beloyd cytye/ and asked of the commons whyther they wolde be agreable vnto the same. The whych incontynently many suche as knewe litle what the mater ment, cryed with out discrecyon, ye, ye, ye, nothyng regardynge the lybertye of the cytye. And after ꝑ graũt thus had of the cõmons/ the sayde Johñ Mansell dyschargyd the mayre, shyrues, & chamberleyn of theyr offyces/ and delyuerd the custodye therof vnto the constable of the towre/ and putte in the rome of the shyrues Mychaell Tony and Johñ Audryan. And ouer that, all tollys of tollys and tallages before made, were delyuerd vn to the sayd Johñ Mãsell/ the whych he there sealyd and redeliuerd them vnto the chamberleyne. when the cõmons hadde beholden all thys besyneſſe, they retourned vnto theyr housys all confusyd.

This mater thus orderyd/ the sayd Johñ Mansell wyth dyuerse of the kynges counsayll kept theyr courtes dayly the sondayes excepte, tyll the fyrste sondaye of lent, the whych that yere was the .xxv. daye of Februarye/ callyng before hym. xii. wardes, of ꝑ cytye. Of the whyche. xii. wardes of euerych of them was take thre men, so, that of those. xii. wardes. xxxvi. mẽ were impanelyd and swore, for to enquyre of the forsayd artycles, and what persons of the cytye had offendyd in them. This courte thus kept and holden at Guyldehall / no man was callyd to answere, nor no questyon put vnto any person by the sayd enquest or by any other. Uppon the sayd sonday of lent, the mayre, alder men, and shyrues, wyth the sayd enqueste, & foure men of euery warde, were chargyd to appere at westmynster before the kynge/ at whych appearaunce they were coũtermaũdyd tyll vppon the nexte morowe. At whyche season they commyng into the kynges exchekyr/ fonde syttyng there the erles of Glouceter, and of warwyke, Johñ Mansell, Henry Baa iusticys, the cõstable of the towre, the custos of the cytye, and dyuers other of the kynges counsayll. Then was callyd by name Rafe hardell that yere mayre; Nycholas Batte, Nycholas fyz Josne, Mathew Bokerel, Johñ Toleham, and Johñ le Mynoure alder men. Then sayde Johñ Mansell, ꝑ the kynge by his lawes and inquysycyon of the cytesyns of the cytye, had founden theym culpable, that they had wronged and hurte the compnaltye of hys cytye by dyuers meanes, as by the sayde inquysycyons apperyd / and forthwyth causyd yt to be redde before them. And whẽ the more parte therof was redde, he sayd vnto theym: thus may you se that the compnaltye of the sayde cytye hath ben by you greuously oppressyd/ and by your meanys and counsayll the common weale of the same dystroyed, as by alterynge of the tollys and other good auncyent customys, turnynge them to your synguler auauntage & lucre. All whyche maters the sayd Rafe and his company denyed / and that the commons was not by any suche meanys by them nor none of them greuyd or hurte/ and that they offryd to be iustyfyed and iudged by the lawe and customys of the cytye.

Then

Then Henry Baa iuſtyce, aſkyd of them whyther they wolde byde the aduenture of the enquery that they hadde harde redde before / or ellys ſtande vppon the ſayeng of the other wardes, that yet had not ben ſworne, but they kepte theym to theyr fyrſte anſwere. Then Johñ Manſell frayned of ꝑ mayre what was theyr lawe and cuſtome. The mayre anſwered and ſayde, that for treſpace of a cyteſyn done agayne ꝑ kynge, he ſhulde defende hym by .xii. of the ſayde cyteſyns / and for murder or cleynge of a man by. xxx. cyteſyns / & for treſpace agayn a ſtraunger by the othe of .vi. and hym ſelfe. Then after many reaſons made by the ſayde Johñ Manſell, and alſo by the mayre and his aldermen / daye was gyuen to them to appere vppon the morow before the kynge and his counſell.

Vppon the day folowynge ꝑ kyng wyth many of his lordes ſyttynge in the ſayde exchekyr, the forſayde inquyſycyon was redde. And that done the mayre and aldermen were called in by name / and two aldermen more whyche before were not callyd / that is to ſaye Arnolde Thedmare & Henry walmode. when Rafe Hardell had harde the kynge ſpeke in the mater / he toke ſuche fere that he and Nycholas Batte wythout farther anſwere, put them in the kynges grace / ſayd to theym theyr lybertyes and fraunchyſes of the cytye. But the other .vi. beſought the kyng of his ryght wyſe nes that they myghte then be demyd after the lawes and cuſtomys of the cytye. Then was layde vnto theyr charge that ouer many wronges by theym done to the kynge and the comynaltye of the cytye, they had alteryd ꝑ kynges beame, and orderyd it to the aduauntage of them ſelfe and other ryche men of the cytye. wherun to the partyes anſwerꝑd, and ſayde that the alteracion of the beame was not done by them onely / but by ꝑ aduyce and conſente of .v. hundred of the beſte of the cytye. For where before tyme the weyer vſyd to lene hys draught towarde the marchaundyſe ſo that the byar hadde by that meane x. or xii. pounde in a draught to hys aduauntage, and the ſeller ſo myche dyſauauntage / nowe for indyfferencye and egalytye of both perſonys or marchaũtys, was ordeyned that the beame ſhulde ſtand vpryght, ꝑ cleffe therof enclynynge to neyther partie / as yt doth in weyenge of golde and ſyluer / and the byer to haue alowed of the ſeller for all thynges .iiii. poũde onely in euery draught.

After theſe reaſons and other by theym made / the kynge commaunded that vpon the morynynge folowynge, a folkmoot ſhulde be callyd at Paulys croſſe / & ſo that courte was dyſſoluyd, and the mayre & the other returned to London. Vppon the morowe the folkmoot beynge at Pawles croſſe aſſemblyd / theſe .vi. aldermen heryng the murmuracion of the common people, and knowynge that the aldermen nor the worſhypfull of the city ſhuld haue litle or no ſayeng in thys mater, ferynge theyr cauſe yode into a chanons houſe of Powlys / where at that tyme the ſayde Johan Manſel and other ſent from the kynge taryed the aſſemblynge of the people / and ſhewyd vnto theym that they entẽdyd not any lenger to plede wyth the kynge, but were contentyd to put them fully in the kynges grace and mercy / ſauyng alway to them and all other cyteſyns theyr lybertye and fraunchyſe of the cytye. After whyche agrement the ſayde Johan Manſell wyth the other came vnto the courte of Folkmoot / where vnto the people was reherſyd a fayre and a pleaſaunt tale, prompſyng to them

that

that theyr lybertyes ſhulde be hoolp and inuyolatlp preſerupd by ỹ kyng, wyth many other thynges to ỹ great comforte of the common people. And laſtelp was axyd of them wheter the law and cuſtome were ſuch as aboue is reherſyd or no. wherunto lyke vndyſcret and vnlerned people they an ſwerpd & cryed rabbyſhelp nay, nay, nay/ not wythſtãdynge that the ſayd law and cuſtome hadde befoze tymes ben vſed tyme oute of mynde. But to thys was nother mayze noz alder men noz other of the great of the cy tye that myghte impugne oz make any reaſon, foz the vpholdynge of theyr auncyent lawys oz cuſtomys.

And no wonder though the kynge were thus hedy oz greuouſe to the cy tye/ foz by ſuche eupll dyſpoſyd and malycyouſe people as he had aboute hym, the lande was pll rulyd, & mych myſchefe was vſyd. wherof enſuyd myche ſozow after, as ye ſhall here in the ſequele of the ſtozye. Then Johñ Manſell callyd the mayze and alder men befoze hym / and chargyd them to be at weſtmynſter the mozowe fo lowynge, to gyue attendaunce vp pon the kynges grace. Uppon the mozow the mayze and aldermen ta rpenge the kynges commynge in the great hall at weſtmynſter/ laſtely the kynge came into ſaynte Stephaus chapell. where a ſeaſon he helde a coũ ſapll wyth his lozdes/ and after yode into the chekyr chamber, & there ſat hym downe and hys lozdes aboute hym. Anon after the mayze and alder men were callyd into the ſayde cham ber, and ſoone there after callyd by name, and commaundyd to ſtande nere to the barre. Then Henry Baa iuſtyce ſayde vnto the mayze and the vii. aldermen, that foz ſo myche as by fourme of the kynges lawes, they were founde culpable in certayne ar ticles touchynge trãſgreſſyon agayn the kynge/ therfoze the courte awar dyd that they ſhulde make fyne and raunſome after the dyſcrecyon of the ſayde courte. But foz they hadde put theym in the kynges grace and mer cy/ the kynge hath commaundyd the fyne to be put in reſpyte, that ye be not payned ſo greuouſly as ye haue deſerupd. After whyche iudgement gyuen, they kneled downe/ and then the mayze wyth weppnge terys, than ked the kynge of his bountye & good neſſe, and beſought hym to be good and gracyous lozde vnto the cytye, and vnto them as hys faythfull ſub iectys. wherunto the kynge made none anſwere, but roſe ſtreyght vppe and ſo yode hys waye leupnge them there. Anon as the kynge was depar tyd, they were all areſtyd and kepte there, tyll they had founden ſuerty/ and euerpche alderman of theym dyſ charged of his warde & offyce ỹ they had wythin the cytye. But ſhozt ly af ter they put in ſuertyes, and ſo retur nyd heuely to London. And ſhozt ely after was wyllyam fyz Rychard by the kynges commaundement made mayze, and Thomas fyz Thomas and wyllyam Gzappyſgate ſhzyues. After this, daye by daye the chamber layn was callyd to accõpte befoze the ſayde Johñ Manſell, of all ſuche tol lys as were gadered in tyme of the mayzaltie of Johñ Toleſham and of Rafe Hardell/ beynge pzeſent to here the ſayde accompte dyuerſe of the co mynaltie of the cytye, but none of the heddys. By the whyche accompt no defaute myght be arrectyd vnto any of the fozenamed perſones conupcte afoze the kynge. By reaſon wherof dyuerſe of theym were admyttyd to the kynges fauour ſhozt ly after, and reſtozed to theyr offyces agayne/ but not wythout payeng of money, wher of the certaynte is not knowen.

And in this yere whete was ſo ſcãte, that

yt was solde at London for .xviiii.s. a quarter. And scanter shulde haue ben, yf plenty hadde not come out of Almayne/ for in Fraunce and Normandye yt fayled in lykewyse. By meane of this derth & scarcytie, mych poore people dyed for hunger / and many of dyuerse countreys of Englande came vnto the citye, and nere there aboute for comforte of vytayll/ for yt then was better chepe in London then in many shyres of England there aboute. And soone after was the forenamed Johñ Mansell made knyghte & chefe iustyce of England.

In this.xli. yere also/ ỹ kynge about the feast of saynt Barnabe in the moneth of Juny, kepte hys hyghe courte of parlyament at hys towne of Orenforde. This of some wryters is named insane parliamentum) that is to meane the woode or madde parlyament. For at this counsayll were made many actys agayne the kynges prerogatyue & pleasure, for the reformacion of the state of the lande/ whyche after prouyd to the cõfusyon and hurte of the lande, & deth and destruccyon of many noble men/ so that by occasyon therof began the famouse stryke callyd at thys day the Barons warre. wherof ensued mych myschefe as hereafter shalbe shewyd and declared more at large.

Then as aboue is sayde, to auoyde the enormytes and to reforme the euyll rule then vsyd in the lande, by suche persons as dayly were about the kynge/ many and dyuerse ordynaunces were made, wherof the tenoure is sette oute in the ende of this boke. wherunto the kynge somdeale agayne hys wyll, wyth syr Edwarde hys sonne and other agreed. And for these actys shulde be holden ferme & stable/ at thys parlyament was chosyn.xii. Peres, whyche were named Douze Peris/ to whõ authorite was gyuen by strength of this parliamẽt. to correcte all such as offendyd in brekynge of these ordinaũces and other, by the sayd twelue Peres after to be deuysed and orderyd, touchyng and cõcernyng ỹ same mater & purpose. Of whyche.xii. Peres the names ensue. Fyrste the archebyshop of Caunterburye, the byshoppe of worceter, syr Roger Bygotte then erle of Norfolk and marshall of Englande, syr Symonde de Mountforde erle of Leyceter, syr Rychard Clare erle of Glouceter, syr Humfrey Bothum erle of Herforde, of warwyke, and of Arundell, syr Johñ Mansell chefe iustyce of Englande, syr Roger Mortymer, syr Hugh Bygraue, syr Petyr de Sauoy, syr Jamys Audeley, and syr Peter de Mountforde. And for the kynges brother vppon the moders syde, that is to saye syr Eym erle of wynchester, syr wyllyam de Valaũce, syr Godfrey de Lindesey, and syr Guy de Lyndesey, wold not assente vnto the foresayde ordynaunces / they wythdrew them toward the see syde wyth suche stuffe as they hadde, and wold haue departyd ỹ land yf they myght then haue had shyppynge / for lacke wherof they were fayne to retourne, and so yode vnto wynchester. But yt was not longe after that they were lycensyd to departe the lande wyth a certayne companye, and a certayne summe of money to paye for theyr costys/ and theyr daye sette by Bartylmew tyde to auoyde vppon payne of prysonement, whyche daye by them was kepte.

It was not longe after the fynysshynge of this parlyament, but that stryke and barvaũce began to kyndle betwene the kynge and the erlys of Leyceter and of Glouceter, by meane of such offycers as the sayd erles had remouyd and put other in theyr romys.

mys. Amonge the whyche Johan Mäſcll was dyſcarged of his offyce. and ſyr Hugh Bygotte then admytted for hym. And for the forſayde Pyers harde of the murmure in the courte, feryng that the kyng ſhuld be aduertyſed ſhortely to alter from his promyſe/ therfore they entēdyng to make theyr partye the ſtrōger, vpon the morowe folowynge Marye Magdaleyns daye/ the kyng beyng at weſtmynſter, the erle Marſhall, the erle of Leyceter, wyth dyuerſe other came vnto the Guyldehall of Lōdon, where the mayre, aldermen, and comynaltye of the cytye were aſſembled/ where the ſayd lordes ſhewyd an inſtrument or wrytynge, at the whyche hynge many labellys wyth ſealys, as the kynges ſeale, syr Edwarde hys ſonnes ſeale, wyth many other of the nobles of the lande, the whyche was the contente of the artycles whych were ordeyned and made at Orenforde / wyllynge the mayre and aldermen (cōſyderynge the ſayd actys were made to the honoure of god, fydelyte vnto the kynge, & proffyte of the realme) that they wold alſo in vpholdynge of the ſame, ſette theyr common ſeale of the cytye. After which requeſte thus to the mayre and the cyteſyns made, after aduyſe and counſayll amonge theym ſelfe taken/ they deſyred a ſparyng of the lordes, tyll they myght ſpeke wyth ỹ kyng and know his pleaſure in that behafe. But fynally no ſparynge at that tyme myghte be graunted / ſo that in the ende by the labour that the lordes made, wyth helpe of ſuche ſolycytoures as they hadde wythin the cytye, the common ſeale was put to, and the mayre and dyuerſe of the cytye ſworne to maynteyn the ſame/ theyr allegeaunce ſauyd to the kyng wyth preſeruacyon of the lybertyes and fraunchyſes/ and ſo departed.

Then daye by daye after the ſayd douze Peeres aſſemblyd at the newe temple in where they kept theyr counſayls and courtes for the reformacyon of the olde greuys/ and remoued from the kynge dyuerſe of hys menyall of houſelde, and ſette in theyr places and offyces ſuche as lyked theym.

And vppon the.ix. daye of Auguſt/ proclamacyon was made in dyuerſe accuſtomyd places of the ſayde cytye, that none of the kynges takers ſhulde take any thynge wythin the cytye wythout the wyll of the owner, excepte two tunne of wyne, whyche the kyng accuſtomably hadde of euery ſhyppe comynge from Burdeaux, payenge but .xl. s. for a tunne. By meane of whyche proclamacyon nothynge was taken by the kynges offycers, but yt were ſtreyght payed fore wythin the cytye and lybertye of the ſame / whyche vſaunce contynued but a whyle.

Anno domini. M. CC. lvii. Draper.

Anno domini. M. CC. lviii. Thomas fyz Rycharde.

Rycharde Hardell.

Anno .xlii.

Robert Catelyon.

IN this .xlii. yere/ the kyng held one parlyamēt at weſtmynſter and a nother, or ellys prorogyd the ſame to wynchester. And in this yere, ſyr Hugh Bygotte iuſtyce, wyth Roger Turkelay and other kept his courte at ſaynte Saupours / and helde there the plees callyd Itinerii,

The whyche is to meane the trauayl̃nge or the waye plees. For ye ſhall vnderſtande that at thoſe dayes they were kepte in dyuerſe places of Englande, whyche nowe ben holden at weſtmynſter / and iudgys ordeyned to kepe a cy̓cuyte, as now they kepe the ſyꝛys in tyme of vacacyō. At this ſayde courte theſe iudges ponyſhed ſoꝛe baylyes and other offycers, that beforꝛe theym were conuycte foꝛ dyuers treſpaſſys/ and ſpecyally foꝛ takynge of merceamentes otherwyſe then the lawe theym commaundyd. Foꝛ the whych the ſayd cheke iuſtyce pꝛyſoned them/and after ſeſſyd them at greuous fynys. Alſo he ſomonyd the cyteſyns of London to come vnto the ſayde courte, foꝛ tollys that they hadde taken vppon the farther ſyde of the water. But yt was anſwered that the tollys that they there toke were takē lawfully, as they were redy to pꝛoue in places and court cō uenyent to the ſame, whyche was wythin the pꝛecyncte of theyꝛ lyber-tye. But not wythſtandynge that anſwere, the ſayde ſyꝛ Hughe chargyd vppon queſte .xii. knyghtes of Surey, to enquyꝛe of that mater and other/ the whych acquyted the ſayde cyteſyns, and ſhewyd that the ſayde tolle belongyd to them of ryghte.

In pꝛoceſſe of tyme after, the ſayd ſyꝛ Hugh wyth other came to Guyld hall, and kepte hys courte and plees there, wythout all oꝛder of lawe, and contrarye to the lybertyes of the cy-tye / and there punyſhed the bakers foꝛ lacke of ſyze by the Tumberell, where beforꝛe tymes they were punyſhed by the pyllory/and oꝛderyd many thynges at hys wyll, moꝛe then by any good oꝛder of lawe.

Thys yere vppon Candelmaſſe euen came vnto Lōdon from beyonde the ſee Rycharde kynge of Almayne and erle of Coꝛnewayll, wyth hys wyfe and chyldꝛen/ whyche had ben there and taken poſſeſſyon of that kyngedome as beforꝛe is ſhewyd. Agayne whoſe commynge the cyty of London was rychely hāged wyth clothes of ſylke and aras / & ioyouſly he was receyuyd of the cyteſyns.

Anno domini. M. CC. lviii.

Peperer.

Johñ Gyſours.

Anno domini. M. CC. lix.

Johñ Adꝛyan.

Anno. xliii.

Robert Coꝛnehyll.

In thys. xliii. yere, the frydaye folowynge the feaſte of Symonde and Jude, in the parlyament holden at weſtmynſter / were radde in pꝛeſence of all the loꝛdes and comynaltye at ſondꝛy tymes, all the actys and oꝛdynaūces beforꝛe made in ꝑ parliament holden at Oꝛenfoꝛde, wyth certayn other artycles by ꝑ foꝛe ſayd xii. Peers there vnto added. After redyng of which articles, there be ynge reueſted the archebyſhoppe of Caunterbury, wyth dyuerſe other to the nomber of ir. byſhoppes, beſyde abbotes & other/denouncyd all them accurſyd that attemptyd in woꝛde oꝛ dede to bꝛeke the ſayd actes oꝛ any of them. *In this parliamēt alſo was graunted vnto the kynge a taſke cal lyd the Scutage / that is to meane xl.ſ. of euery knyghtes fee thoꝛough Englande / the whyche extendyd to a great ſumme of money. For after dyuerſe wꝛiters, there be in Englāde in poſſeſſyon of the ſpyꝛytualtye and of the tempoꝛaltye, oꝛ at that dayes were, ouer & beyonde. ir. M. knyghtes fees. whych after ꝑ rate ſhuld extēde vnto. vi. ſcoꝛe. M. li. & moꝛe. And yf it ſhuld be gadered of ꝑ tēpoꝛal mē onely/

* Scutage

onely / than yt shulde not amounte ouer the summe of .lxiiii. thousande pounde. The kynge vppon the daye of saynte Leonarde, or the.vi. daye of Nouember came vnto Pawlys, where by his commaundement was assembled the courte of Folkmoot/ where the kynge accordynge to the former ordynaunces made, axyd lycence of the compynaltye of the cytye for to passe the see/ & promysed there in the presence of a great multytude of people, that he wolde be good and gracyous lorde vnto the cytye, by the mouth of syr Hugh Bygotte hys cheke iustyce, and to maynteyne theyr lybertyes vnhurte. For ỳ whyche the people for ioye made an excedynge showte.

Upon the.viii. day of Nouember the kynge rode thorouge the cytye to warde the see syde. And vppon the daye of saynte Bryce or the.xiii.daye of Nouember he toke hys shyppe, and so sayled vnto Burdeaur. where when he had taryed a season, he rode vnto the Frenche kynge then beyng holy Lewys or the tenth Lewys vnto Paris. Of whom he was honorably receyued, and lodged hym in his own paleys by ỳ space of an hole weke makynge to hym great feast, & gyuynge to hym and hys ryche & many gyftes. And from thens kynge Henry rode vnto saynte Denys / where of the abbot aud conuent he was receyued wyth processyon, and taryed there by the space of a moneth. In whyche season a maryage was concludyd betwene Johñ duke of Brytayne and one of his doughters. And at hys departynge he gaue to the abbot a cuppe of golde, & a basyn wyth an ewer of syluer. And for hys more consolacyon / kyng Lewys assygned vnto hym a certayne lordes & other noble men of Fraunce to gyue attendaunce vppon hym, and to conuey hym, and to shewe hym a parte of Fraunce, wyth all dysporte and huntynge and haukynge and other many pleasures of the countrey. In whych passe tyme the Frenche kyng assembled hys parlyament at Parys/ where he shewyd vnto hys lordes that hys conscyence was grudgyd, wyth ỳ withholdyng of all such landes as Phylyppe the second wan from kynge Johñ in Normandye / vpon ỳ whych he desyred theyr sayth full and frutefull counsayll. where after many reasons and argumentes made, yt was concludyd for a fynall concorde to be hadde betwene kynge Henry and hym, that yf kyng Henry wyth the agremente of hys lordes wolde resygne into the Frenche kynges handes, all suche tytle and ryghte as he hadde in the hole duchye of Normandye, of Angeou, poyteau, and Mayne, for hym and for his heyres for euer/ that then the Frenche kynge of his great bountye and grace, shulde gyue vnto the kynge of Englande and to hys heyres kynges, the lordshyppe of Guyan, Angeou, and Mayne / and by ryghtfull tytle callyd euer after duke of Guyan / and ouer that he shulde be admyttyd for a Pere of Fraunce. to all whyche condycyons as affyrmyth and wytnessyth the Frenche cronycle, kynge Henry at hys retourne from hys dysporte was agreable/ and wyth consente of hys baronye, and in theyr presence, wyth also the baronye of Fraunce, dyd hys homage vnto the sayde Lewys for the duchye of Guyan, and after made hys othe accordynge to the same. And after great gyftes receyued on eyther syde/ kynge Henry retourned vnto Burdeaur.

Of thys peace and concorde speketh a cronyculer named Guydo or Guy/ & sayth that kyng Henry sayled into

Fraunce, and asked restytucyon of the forenamed Frenche kyng, of all suche landes as hys ayle Phylyppe the seconde had wyth extorte power taken from kynge Johñ hys father. But for he fande the Frenche kynge straunge in his answere, & also had lytle tryste in hys lordes for to haue theyr ayde/ he fell to agrement wyth the Frenche kynge, and solde to hym all his tytle that he had in Norman dye, Gascoyn, and Guyan/ þ̄ whych extendyd to the yerely value of .xx. thousande pounde / takynge for the same tytle .iii. hūdred thousand poūd of small Turon money, whereof a pounde is in value after sterlynge money but .ii. s̄. iii. d̄. or there about/ so that he shulde after that rate haue for his sayde tytle after the value of sterlynge money .xxxiii. thousand seuen hundred and .l. pounde.

In the season and tyme that kyng Henry was thus occupyed in Fraunce / dyssencyon fell in Englande betwene syr Edwarde the kynges son, and syr Rycharde erle of Glouceter. For appeasyng wherof a parleamēt, whyche is to meane a counsayll of hys lordes was callyd at westmynster/ whyche contynued by the space of .iii. wekes and more. To the whyche counsayll the lordes came wyth greate companyes / and specyally the sayde syr Edwarde, and the erle of Glouceter, the whyche entendyd to haue lodged within the city. wher fore the mayre yode vnto the byshop of worceter, and syr Hugh Bygotte, and syr Phylyppe Basset, to whome the kynge wyth the archbyshoppe of Caunterburye had taken the rule of the lande in hys absence/ the whyche all went vnto the kynge of Almayne to haue hys aduyse in that mater. where it was concludyd, that nother the sayde Edwarde nor the erle shuld come wythin the cytye then there to be lodgyd, nor none that helde vpon eyther of that partyes. And forther yt was prouyded, that all suche wythin the cytye as were of the age of .xb. yeres and aboue, shulde be in harnes to watche and kepe the cytye bothe daye and nyght / and that the gates shulde be kept shyt vppon the daye, and a certayne men in harneys to kepe euery gate of the cytye. And soone after for the sauegarde of the cytye, and sure keppynge of the peace wythin the same / the kynge of Romaynes wyth the sayde syr Hughe and syr Phylyppe, came into the cytye and there were lodged with theyr companyes/ and suche other as they wolde assygne to strengthe the cytye yf nede requyred.

Then aboute the feaste of saynte Marke the kynge came to London from beyonde the see, and was lodgyd at the byshoppe of Londons palays. After whose commynge by his assygnement, the erle of Glouceter was then lodged wythin the cytye, and syr Edwarde hys sonne was lodgyd in hys owne palays at westmynster. And soone after the kynge commaunded hym to be lodgyd at saynt Johñs/ and all the other lordes were lodgyd in other places wythoute the cytye. And the kyng of Romayns remoued agayne to westmynster. In whych tyme a direccyon was take betwene the sayd ptyes, & a new assemble and parlyament assygned to be kept at westmynster in the quindena of saynt Johñ Baptyst. And for that then all thynge myght not be sette in an order, yt was prorogyd vnto the feast of saynt Edwarde/ at the which season all thyng was put at reste for a whyle. In this yere also fell that happe of the Jewe of Tewkysbury/ whyche fell into a gonge vppon the saterdaye, and wolde not for reuerēce of his sabbot day be plucked out

wherof

wherof herynge the erle of Glouceter, that the Jewe dyd so great reuerence to hys sabbot daye/thought he wold do as myche to his holy daye whych was sondaye/ and so kept hym there tyll monday; at which season he was founden dede.

Sabbat day

Anno domini.M.CC.lx. Anno domini.M.CC.lx.

Adam Browbynge.

wyllyam fyz Rycharde. Anno.xliiii.

Rycharde Couentre.

IN this.xliiii. yere, soone after the feast of Symonde and Jude, the kynge kept a royall feaste at westmynster, where he made dyuerse knyghtes. Amonge the whych Johñ Duke of Bytayne, whyche had maryed one of the kynges doughters was there made knyght. And soone after was syr Hughe spencer made chefe iustyce.

After ỹ feast of Cãdelmasse, ỹ kyng commaũdyd a folkmoot to be called at Paulys crosse/ where he in proper persone, wyth the kynge of Almayn, the archebyshoppe of Caunterbury, and many other nobles came. where the kynge commaundyd vnto the mayre, that euery strypelynge of the age of.xii. yeres and aboue, shuld be before his aldermã be swoꝛn the day folowynge, to be trew to the kyng & to hys heyres kynges of Englande/ and that the gates of the cytye were kepte wyth armyd men as before by the kynge of Romaynes was dyuysyd. This yere also at a fayre kept at Northampton, barpaunce fell betwene the Lõdoners and men of the towne/ so that betwene the cytesyns and them contynued longe sute and plee, for a mã of Northampton that then was slayne, to the great vexacyon & trouble of both partyes. But in the ende the cytye had the better.

This yere also aboute Eester, the Barons of the lande, wyth the consente of the Peeres / dyschargyd syr Hugh le spencer, and admyttyd for hym syr Phylyp Basset in his rome of chefe iustyce vnwittyng the kyng. For whych cause and other, grudge and dysplesure beganne of newe to kyndle betwene the kynge and hys lordes, whyche encreasyd more and more. But by polycy of the kynge of Almayne and some prelatys of the land, yt was set in quyet for a whyle, hardely to the ende of that yere.

Anno domini.M.CC.lx. Anno domini.M.CC.lxi.

Johñ Northampton.

wyllyam fyz Rycharde. Anno.xlv.

Rycharde Pycarde.

IN this.xlv.yere, shortely after Alhalowyn daye, the Barons admyttyd and made shyryues of dyuerse shyres of Englande, and dyschargyd suche as the kynge before had admyttyd/and named them Gardayns and kepers of the countyes & shyres. And ouer that the Barons wolde not suffer the iustyce that the kynge hadde admyttyd, to kepe the plees & lawes callyd Itinerarii/ but suche as were of theyr admyssyon. wherwith the kynge was greuously dyscontented/in so myche ỹ after that season he laboured that he myght do dysanull the former ordynaunces &

ſtatutes, and to cauſe them to be bꝛo-
ken / in ſo myche that vppon the ſe-
conde ſondaye of lent folowynge, the
kynge commaundyd to be tedde at
Paules croſſe, a bull of the graunte
of pope Urban the .iiii. of that name,
as a confyꝛmacyō of an other bull be-
foꝛe purchaſed of hys pꝛedeceſſoure
Alexander the .iiii, foꝛ to aſſoyle the
kynge and all other that befoꝛe had
ſwoꝛne to the mayntenaunce of the
foꝛeſayde artycles made at Oꝛen-
foꝛde/and after cauſyd the ſayde ab-
ſolucyon to be ſhewyd thoꝛough the
realme of Englande, walys, and Ir
lande/ gyuynge ſtreyghte charge to
all his ſubiectys, that none be ſo har
dy to wythſtāde noꝛ dyſobey the ſayd
abſolucyon. And yf any were foūden
dyſobedyent to his commaundemēt,
that he were ſtreyght put in pꝛyſon,
and not to be raunſomyd noꝛ delyue
ryd tyll ꝑ kynges pleaſure were foꝛ-
ther knowen.

About the feaſt of ſaynt Albon, in
the moneth of Juny / the kynge of
Almayne toke ſhyppyng and ſayled
into Almayne. And the kynge at a
folkmoot holden vppon the ſonday
after ſaynt Peters daye in ꝑ moneth
of July, hadde lycence to ſayle into
Fraunce. And the moꝛowe after he
departyd from London towarde the
ſees ſyde, wyth the quene and other
loꝛdes/ hys two ſonnes ſyꝛ Edward
and ſyꝛ Edmunde beynge at that ſea
ſon in Guyān. when the kyng hadde
ben a ſeaſon in Fraunce, he returnyd
vnto Burdeaux, where he fell ſyke/
by occaſyon wherof he taryed in tho-
ſe partyes tyll ſaynte Nycholas tyde
nexte folowynge. And in thys yere
dyed Rycharde Clare erle of Glow-
ceter / and ſyꝛ Gylbert de Clare hys
ſonne was erle after hym. To whom
the father gaue great charge that he
ſhulde vpholde the foꝛenamed oꝛdy-
naunces.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxi. Anno domini. M. CC. lxii.

Phylyppe walbꝛoke.

Thomas fyꝛ Thomas Anno .xlvi.

Rycharde Tayloure.

IN thys .xlvi. yere in the feaſte
of ſaynte Martyne, oꝛ the .xi.
day of Nouēber/ a Jew fell at vary-
aunce wyth a cryſten man in Col-
chyꝛch in the warde of Chepe/ & wou
dyd the cryſten man within the ſame
chyꝛche. wherfoꝛe the people of the
cytye in a fury purſued the ſayd Jew
to hys houſe, and there ſlew hym/ &
after fell vpon the other Jewes, and
robbyd and ſlew many of them.

And the euen of ſaynte Thomas
the apoſtle folowynge, the kyng lan-
ded in Englande at Douer / & came
to Lōdon the wednyſdaye befoꝛe .xii.
day. This yere ꝑ froſte began about
ſaynt Nycholas daye/ and ſo contyn-
ued by ꝑ ſpace of a moneth & moꝛe,
ſo feruently that Thamys was ouer
fꝛoꝛen, that men paſſed ouer on hoꝛſ
backe. And in the ſame wynter ꝑ kyn
ges lytell halle at weſtmynſter, with
other houſes adioynyng to the ſame
were peryſhed wyth fyꝛe, by the ne-
glygence of a ſeruaūt of the kynges.

In this yere alſo vnkyndneſſe be
ganne to growe betwene the Londo
ners and the Conſtable of the towꝛe/
foꝛ that he cōtrary the lybertye of the
cytye toke certayne ſhyppes paſſyng
by the towꝛe wyth whete and other
vytayll, and toke yt into the ſayde
towꝛe, makynge the pꝛice at his plea
ſure. wherfoꝛe great harme had en-
ſued, had not ben the polycy of wyſe
men. whyche was ſhewyd vnto the
kynges

kynges counsayll/ by whose dyrecc-
on the mater was cõmytyd vnto syr
Phyllyppe Basset then cheke iustyce
and other, to set an order and rule be
twene the sayde partyes. Then be-
fore hym were brought all euydẽces
and prynyleges for the aduauntage
of both partyes / where fynally after
longe plee & argument, yt was fyr-
mely demyd and adiudgyd, that yf
the constable or any other offycer of
the towre wold at any tyme take any
whete or other vytayll to the vse of
the kyng or of ỹ towre, that he shuld
come vnto the market holden wyth
in the cytye, and there to haue yt.ii.d
in a quarter wythin ỹ mayres pryce/
and other vitayll after the same rate.
And if he or any of his offycers wold
do contrarye to that ordynaũce/ that
then the shyryues shulde make report
vnto the kynges counsayll, and to
wythstãde hym in all that he myght/
so that the kynges peace were kepte.

In this yere also many murmures
and grudgis were tolde in many pla
ces of the land/ supposynge ỹ warre
shulde in shorte proceſſe haue ensued
betwene the kyng and his lordes, for
the bull of dyspensacyon before in
that other yere shewyd. But by help
and mediacyon of good & wyse men/
these murmures & grudges were so
appeasyd, that the kynge agreed a-
gayn to the mayntenaũce of the sayd
statutes/ & sent hys wryttes, wherin
the sayde artycles were comprysed,
into all shyres of England/gyuynge
streyght commaũdement to all men
to obserue and kepe the same, and
suche other as were to theym ioyned
by the dyscrecyon of the erle marshall
the erle of Leyceter, syr Phylyp Bas
set, syr Hugh Bygot, and other/ the
whyche shortely after was reuoked
and denyed. wheruppon the archbys
shoppe of Caunterbury, feryng that
after myght ensue, made hym an er-
rande to Rome/ and so by lycence of
the kyng and of the lordes departed
the lande, and so kepte hym out tyll
the trouble was appeased and ceased
Then vppon mydlent sondaye, the
mayre and the commons beynge pre
sent, at a folkemote holden at Paul-
lys crosse before syr Philyppe Basset
and other of the kynges counsayll/
the mayre was swore to be trewe to
the kynge and to his heyres kynges.
And vppon the morowe at Guylde
hall, euery alderman in presence of
the mayre toke the same othe. And
vppon the sondaye folowyng, euery
stryppelynge of the age of. xii. yeres &
aboue, before hys alderman in hys
warde was newly charged wyth the
same othe. Then the dysplesure be-
twene the kynge and hys Barons be
gan to appere and dysclose, whyche
longe whyle hadde ben kepte secret/
in so myche that dyuers of theym as-
sembled in the marches of walis, and
gatheryd vnto them stronge power/
and sent a letter vnto the kynge vn-
der the seale of syr Rogyer Clyfford,
besechynge hym to haue in remem-
braunce the othe & manyfolde pro-
myse that he hadde made, for the ob-
seruynge of the statutes made at his
towne of Oxenforde, wyth other or-
dinaũces made to the honour of god,
for fayth and allegeaũce to hys per-
sone, and weale & profyte of all hys
realme/ wyllyng hym farder to wyth
stande and defye all suche persones,
as wyll be agaynne the sayde actes, sa
uynge the quene and her chyldern.

After the whyche letter thus sent,
and receyuynge of yt none answere/
the sayde Barons wyth banner dys-
played wẽt agayn such as they knew
ỹ helde agaynne the sayd actys. And
fyrste at Herforde they toke the bys-
shoppe of that see, and as many of
hys chanõs as were allyaũtes born/
and toke such treasour, and catell as

they there fande, and bare yt wyth theym. And after yode and sent vnto suche maners as the sayde bysshoppe and chanons hadde, and them spoyled and robbed / and some of theym threw to the grounde and consumed wyth fyre / and put the sayde bysshop and chanons in sure keppyng, and set other in theyr places / and after went vnto the other costes where they supposyd to fynde of theyr enymyes / ke pynge theyr course toward London, berynge before them a banner of the kynges armys / & so holdynge theyr tourney, myche people drewe vnto them. In the whyche progresse euer as they fande any that they knew to be agayne the mayntenaūce of ỹ sayd actes / they imprysoned thē & spoyled theyr places, were they spyrytuall or temporall men. And in dyuers of the kynges castellys they set in such persones as to them lyked, and put out suche as there were set in by ỹ kyng / and gaue vnto theym an othe that they shulde be trew and faythfull to the kyng, and kepe those castelles to hys vse and weale of the realme.

About mydsomer when they drewe nere to London / they sent a letter vn to the mayre and aldermē, vnder the seale of syr Symonde Mountfoyde / wyllynge to know of theym whyther they wolde obserue the actys and sta tutes made in the parlyament of Or enforde or not, or ellys they wolde ayde and assyste such persones as en tendyd the breche of the same / & sent vnto theym a coppe of the sayd actes with a prouiso, that yf any that there were specyfyed were to the hurte of the realme or common weale of the same, that they then by dyscrete per sones of the lande, shulde be alteryd and amendyd. The whych coppe the mayre bare vnto the kynge then be yng at the towre, accompanyed with the quene and the kynge of Almayne whyche lately was retourned from beyonde the see, and syr Edward his son, wyth other of his counsayll.

Then the kynge entendynge to knowe the mynde of the cytye, axyd the mayre what he thoughte of those ordynaunces and actes / knowynge well that before hys commynge thyther, he hadde counsayled wyth the aldermen and some commons of the cytye. The mayre then abashed with that questyon / besought the kynge ỹ he myght comon wyth his bretherne the aldermen / and he shuld shew vn to hym his and theyr opinyons. But the kynge sayde he wolde here his ad vyse wythout more counsayll. Then the mayre boldely sayde, that before tymes he wyth his bretherne and co mynaltye of the cytye, by hys com maundement were sworne to mayn teyne all actys made to the honoure of god, to the fayth of the kynge and profyte of the realme / whyche othe by hys lycence and moste gracyous fauour they entended to obserue and kepe. And more ouer to auoyde all occasion that might grow of grudge or varyaunce betwene his grace and his Barons wythin the cytye / they wolde auoyde all allyauntes & strā gers out therof, yf his grace were so contentyd. whych answere the kyng shewyd as he were therwyth pleasyd so that the mayre with his fauour de parted, and sente answere to the ba rons to the same accordynge / theyr ly bertyes alway vpholden and saued.

Then shortely after, for so myche as dyuerse noble men of the lande whyche helde agayne those statutes, were ryden towarde Douer, & there entēdyd to haue taken shyppyng for fere of the barons / the kynge sent af ter them diuers persones of his hous holde, and of the cytesyns of Lōdon, to reforme and enduce theym to re tourne, and to tarye wyth the kyng.

And

And in that season all allyauntes, the whych were taken suspecte of any fauour owynge to that one parte or to that other, were auoyded the cytye. But yt was not longe after that syr Edwarde the kynges sonne, sette them or many of them in offices with in the castell of wyndesore. Than watche was kepte dayly wythin the cytye/ and in the nyghtes a certayne were assigned to ryde about ỹ town, wyth a certayn fotemen assygned to theym, to serche all the towne ouer. But of that insued harme. For while the rydyng watche was in one place of the cytye/ some eupll dysposyd persones vnder colour of watche men, and to seche for straungers, robbed and spoyled many houses within the cytye. For remedy wherof a standyng watche was ordeyned in euery ward. And the kynge herynge of the Barons nere commynge vnto the cytye/ departed thens shortely after.

Then the Barons entryd the cytye the sonday before saynt Margarets daye. And shortely after the kynge returned to westmynster, with the quene and other of his counsayll. And soon after by the consent of the kynge and the Barons / syr Hughe le Spenser was made cheke iustyce and keper of the towre.

Uppon the morow folowynge Mary Magdaleyne daye, a writ was directed vnto ỹ mayre and aldermen/ chargynge them ỹ the kynges peace were fermely kepte wythin the cytye. For in the same writ yt was also expressyd, that the kynge and hys Barons were louyngly agreed. Farther more was by the sayd writ cõmaundyd, that yf wythin the precyncte of theyr fraũches, were any persone or persones knowen, that wolde wythstande the foresayde ordynaunces & statutes / that all such shulde be attached and put in pryson, and theyr goodes attached for the kynge tyll they knew his forther pleasure.

ye shall vnderstande that whyle ỹ lordes laye thus wythin the cytye/ dyuerse conuenticulis and gaderyngis were made of the citesyns and other, that robbed in dyuerse places of the cytye, and dyd myche harme. The whyche was smally corrected / they were so borne oute and mayntayned by theyr maysters. And the commõs of the cytye were farre oute of rule by insensyng of ryotouse psons/ that in assembles and courtes that thẽ were kepte at Guyldhall or other places, symple and vndyscret persons shuld haue the voyce, and the worshypfull mẽ lytell or nothyng regarded/ wher of ensuyd dayly myche vnhappynes and sorow, as after shall appere.

The Barons then to obteyne the more fauour of ỹ cytye/ wylyd them to shewe yf they hadde any of theyr libertyes wythdrawẽ, that they myght agayne to theym be restored/ and also to dyuyse some new to theyr weale and profyte, and they wolde laboure to the kynge that they myghte haue theym graunted. For the whych comforte of the lordes, the mayre called the commons to the Guyldhall, and shewed to them the beneuolẽce of the sayd lordes/ & willed them that euery officer for hys offyce, to deuyse such thynges as myght be benefycyall for the cytye. wheruppon they counsayled to gyther, and made a note in paper of dyuers statutes, prouysyons, and ordynaunces to be graunted / whyche myght more properly be named abhominacyons. For they were deuysed to theyr synguler profyte, & to ỹ great hurt of all other marchaũtes commynge to the cytye, and to all other fayres and markettes of Englande/ and also preiudycyall to the vnyuersall weale of the realme. The whyche when they were ouersene by the

Singler profyte.

the heddes of the cytye/ yt was shewyd vnto the sayd cõmons, that theyr ordynaunces were not lefull nor charytable orderyd, and therfore they knewe well they shulde not be admytted/ wyllyng thẽ to deuyse other. But all was in vayne. By meane wherof both those & other that were ryght necessary for the cõmon weale of the cytye, were reiected & put of.

Then ỹ Barons vpon the morowe folowynge saynt Jamys daye, departed from London towarde Wyndesore, to se the gydynge of the castell. where at theyr commynge they putte out the forsayde allyauntes before set in by syr Edward the kinges son/ the whyche assocyat wyth other yode vnto Fulham, where the kynge then lay/ and shewyd to hym that the Barons had spoyled them of suche goodes as they hadde, and that wythout cause. But the kynge put them of for that season, and warned them to sue to hym agayne about Mychelmasse when more of his coũsayll was with hym/ & then they shuld haue iustyce.

Vppon the second daye folowyng the feaste of sayncte Mathew, or the xxiii. daye of september / the kynge, the quene, with his sonnes and other nobles of thys land/ toke shyppyng and sayled into Fraunce, to be present at the frenche kynges parlyament then holden at Bonony. And the morow after the octabis of saynt Mychaell, he landed agayne at Douer. And the frydaye folowynge he came vnto London.

And vppon the tuesday folowyng, passed a queste of .xii. knyghtes of Myddõ sworne vpon a iury, betwene the abbot of westmynster and the cytye/ for certayne pryuyleges that the cytesyns of London claymed wythin westmynster. where by the sayde iurye it was founden before Gylbert of Preston then chefe Baron of the kynges excheker, that the shyryues of London at those days myght lawfully enter into the town of westmynster, and all other tenemẽtes that the abbot then hadde wythin Myddelser, & vnto the gate of the sayd abbay and there to make summons and dystrayne for lacke of apparaunce, all and euerych tenaunte of the sayde abbot.

About the quindena of saynt Mychaell/ the fourmer complaynt of the allyauntes and other, whyche as aboue ye haue harde, was shewed before the kyng and ỹ lordes in the parlyament holden at westmynster. where lastely yt was sentencyd, that the Barons shulde restore all suche goodes as they and theyr companye hadde taken from all suche persons before that daye, as well to allyauntes as other both spyrytuall and temporall / and also that suche menyall seruauntes as shulde be dayly in the kynges house and about his person, shulde be suche as the kynge wolde chose and admyt hym selfe/ the whyche ii. artycles the Barons vtterly denyed. wherfore the olde rancoure toke place/ and dyssencyon kyndled his fyre of malyce agayn, betwen the kynge and his lordes feruently.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxii. Anno domini. M. CC. lxiii.

Robert Mounplere.

Thomas fyr Thomas Anno .xlvii.

Robert de Suff.

In thys .xlvii. yere, by procurement and styrynge of the Barons, the commons of the cytye of London chase vnto theyr mayre for that

that yere Thomas kyz Thomas, and wythout counsayll of the aldermen ſware at Guyldehall vppon the day of Symon and Jude/ and made no preſentement of hym vppon the morowe folowynge, nother to the kyng noz yet to the Barons of the kynges exchecker, as they of ryght ought to haue done. Foz the whych preſumpcyon the kynge was greuouſly diſcontentyd agayne the cytye. Soone after the kynge aduertyſynge well ỹ the citye wolde take the Barons partye/ and cauſyd syz Edwarde his ſon to take the caſtell of wyndeſoze by a trayne. wherof when he knewe that he was in poſſeſſyon/ the kynge erly in a moznynge a lytell tofoze Cryſtemas departed from weſtmynſter, & rode vnto the ſayde caſtell/ whyther ſhoztely after came alſo many of the lozdes that were vppon the kynges partye. And as faſte the lozdes and knyghtes whych helde wyth the erle of Leyceter, dzew them toward London/ ſo ỹ on eyther partye was mych people aſſembled. In the whyche paſſe tyme ſome well diſpoſyd, labozyd a concorde betwene the kynge & hys lozdes. By whoſe meanes fynally yt was agreed by bothe partyes, that all maters concernynge the foze ſayde artycles of ſtatutes and ozdynaūces made at Orenfozd, and after by the .xii. Perys / that the Frenche kynge ſhuld deme and iudge, whych ſhulde be holden and whyche not. And as he demyd / both partyes pzomyſed aſſuredly to abyde. Upon whiche agrement copyes were made of the ſayde ſtatutes / and wyth letters ſhewynge the effecte of the fourmer agrement ſent vnto the ſayde kynge of Fraunce/ then beynge ſaynt Lewys. And in the Cryſtmas weke folowynge/ the kyng toke ſhyppynge with syz Edward his ſon and other of his counſayll/ and ſayled into Fraunce, foz the fozeſayde cauſe. And foz the partye of the ſayd Barons, was ſent ouer syz Peter de Mountfozde and other. Then befoze Lewys kynge of Fraunce thoſe ſtatutes were foze argued vppon both parties. How be yt in the ende, the Frenche kynge callynge befoze hym both parties vpon the day befoze ỹ conuerſyon of ſaynt Paule, oz the .xxiii. daye of January / ſyttynge in iudgement gaue expzeſſe ſentence that all and euerych of the ſayde ſtatutes and ozdynaunces, ſhulde be from ỹ daye fozeward vtterly fozedone and ſet at noughte/ and all ſuche bandes and pzompſes that the kyng oz any other had made foz the mayntenaunce of the ſame, ſhulde be adnulled & cancellyd/ and the kynge and all other, foz any mater concernynge thoſe ſtatutes ſet at lybertye. After whyche ſentence thus gyuen the kynge retourned into Englande/ ſo that he came to London the .xv. daye of Febzuarye. But the Barons beynge foze amoued wyth this ſentence, & notynge greate parcyaltye vnto the Frenche kynge/ departed from London weſtwarde, & ſo into the marchys of walys, where they dzew to them great power, and warred vppon the landes and caſtellys of syz Roger Mozтymer, & thzew ſome of them vnto the grounde, and ſpoyled of hys what they myghte fynde/ and ouer that dzent of hys manours and houſes. In whoſe ayde syz Edwarde the kynges ſonne commynge, hys people were diſtreſſyd and he almoſte taken. Foz redzeſſe of whyche maters, a newe parlyamēt was appoynted to be holdē at Orenfozde in the quindena of Ceſter nexte folowynge, whyche came neuer to effecte. All be yt an other cronicle ſayth that from this parlyament then holden at Orenfozde, the kynge and his lozdes parted all diſcozded. Then

the

the barons drewe towarde London/ & the kynge remayned at woodstok. And then newe assuraunce by wrytynge endentyd was made betwene the comynaltye of the cytye and the Barons, wythoute consent of many of the rulers of the sayde cytye. wher fore the commons as men enraged made of theym selfe two cappytaynes, whych they named constables of the cytye/ ỹ is to say Thomas de Pywel don & Stephan Bukerel. At whose commaundement by tollynge of the great belle of Paules, all the cytye shulde be redy shortely in harnes, to gyue attendaunce vppon theyr sayd cappytaynes.

About the begynnynge of lent / the constable of the towre, syr Hughe le Spenser, came wyth a fayre compa ny of men of armys before hym into the cytye, and desyred assystence of the forenamed constables. The whyche commaunded the sayd belle to be tolled. By meane wherof the people shyt theyr shoppes, and came out in harneys in great multytude. The whyche after proclamacyon made, that they shulde folowe theyr cappytaynes, wythout knowlege what to do or whyther to go, folowed theyr sayde cappytaynes / and so yode vnto Thystelworth vppon two myles be yonde westmynster, & there spoyled the manour of the kynge of Romaynes, and sette yt after vppon a fyre. And that done, hys water mylles & other commodities that he there had put theym to vtter ruyne. And after wyth great noyse and crye, returned vnto London.

This dede as sayth myne authour was cause of the mortall warre folowynge. For where before tyme the sayde kynge of Romaynes hadde ben for allyaunce that was betwene hym and the erle of Glouceter, a trea tye of peace to be hadde betwene the kynge and his Barons/ after that dede done he was enymy vnto them to the vttermoste of his power.

The kynge herynge of thys ryot/ gaderyd vnto him great power. And for he harde that syr Peter de Mont forde was at Northampton, gathe rynge of people to strength the Ba rons partye/ he spedde hym thyder, and wanne the towne vppon hym by force, and slewe many of hys men/ and fynally toke hym & syr Symon the son of the erle of Leyceter, wyth dyuers other on lyue/the which with many burgeyses of that towne that hadde take theyr partyes, the kynge sent vnto dyuers prysons/ and some he closyd wythin the castell of ỹ same towne.

In thys passe tyme on Palmesonday weke all the Jewes in London were spoyled and robbed/ & the nom ber of .v. hundred of them were slayn, and dyuers of theyr mansyons brent and destroyed / and suche as of them were saued, were conueyed for great mede vnto the towre/ and there kept from the fury of the commons. wher of the occasyon was, for so myche as a Jewe wolde haue forced a crysten man to haue gyuē to hym more then ii.d. for the vsure of .xx.s. for a weke. For ye shall vnderstand that at those dayes, by lycence graunted vnto the Jewes of the kynge. they myght take by vsury of euery man ỹ of theym wolde borowe money .ii.d. of a poūd for a weke lendyng/ and so of greter & of smaller summes after that rate. And soon after the Jewes were thus punyshed/ many houses of relygyon wythin ỹ citye and nere there about, were serched for goodes of alliaūtis/ and myche founde. wherof a parte was brought vnto the lordis/ but the more parte was stolen and brybed.

In whyche season the kynge passed by diuers coūtreys/ and lastely came vnto

into Southsex with a strong power. wherof herynge the lordes made pre paracyon to go towardes hym. In all whyche tyme the wardeyns of the v. portes kepte the see wyth hyppes, that no straungers shulde entre the lande to ayde the kynge agayne the Barons.

Then in the ende of Aprill the Barons wyth a multytude of the cytye, whyche they put in vawarde/departed from London, takyng theyr iourney towarde the kynge. And when they were well onwarde vpon theyre way/worde was brought vnto them that the kynge wyth an huge power was at Lewys.

Wherfore they by an hole assent dyuysed a letter/ and sent yt in ỹ name of all the Barons vnto the kynge, whose names here vnder folowe but not all.

Syr Symonde de Mounfordе erle of Leyceter, and hyghe stewarde of Englande.
Syr Sylbert de Clare, erle of Glouceter.
Syr Robert Ferres, erle of Derby.
Syr Hugh le Spenser chefe iustice/ and syr Henry de Mountford son and heyre to the erle of Leyceter.
Syr Rycharde Gray.
Syr Henry Hastynges.
Syr Johñ fyz Johñ.
Syr Robert de Uenpount.
Syr Johñ Gyuyle.
Syr Robert Roos.
Syr wyllyam Marmyon.
Baldwyne wake.
Syr Sylbert Syfford.
Syr Nycholas de Megraue.
Syr Godfrey de Lucy.
Syr Johñ de Ueysy.
Syr wyllyam de Mounthdesey.

whyche letter sealed wyth the seales of the sayde erle of Leycester, and of Glouceter conteyned as foloweth

A letter sent by the barons to the kyng

TO the most excellent lord the kynge, Henry by the grace of god kynge of Englande, lorde of Irlande, and duke of Gwyan/ the Barons & other faythfull your seruaun tes, theyr fydelyte and othe to god and to you coueytynge to kepe, sendyng to you due salutyng with all reuerence and honour, vnder due obeysaunce. Lyketh yt youre hyghnes to vnderstãde, that many beyng about you haue before tymes shewyd vnto your lordshyppe of ỹs many euyll & vntrewe reportes/ and haue founde suggestyons not alonely of vs, but also of your selfe to bryng this your realme vnto subuersyon. Know your excellency, that we entende nothyng but helth and suerty to your person, to the vttermoste of our powers/and not onely to our emmyes, but also to yours and of all this youre realme, we entende vtter greuaunce and correccyon. Beseechynge your grace her after to gyue vnto theym lytell credẽce/ for ye shall fynde vs your trew and faythfull subiectes to the vtter moste of our powers. And we erle of Leyceter, and erle of Glouceter, at the request of other and for our selfe, haue put to our seales/ the .x. day of the moneth of May.

The answere vnto this forsayde letter.

HEnry by ỹ grace of god, kyng of Englande, lorde of Irland and duke of Guyan / to Symonde de Mountforde, & Sylbert de Clare, & theyr cõplyces. where as by warre & generall pturbaũce in this our realme by you begon & contynued, wyth also brennynges, and other hurtes and enormytyes that euydently apperyth that your fydelyte to vs due, ye haue not kept, nor ỹ suerty of our person ye haue lytell regarded/for so mych as our lord & other our trusty

frendes whyche dayly byde wyth vs ye veryn and greue, and theym pursue to the vttermoſt of your powers/ and yet dayly entẽde, as ye by the repoꝛte of your letters haue vs aſcertayned: we the greue of them admyt & take foꝛ our owne, ſpecyally when they foꝛ theyꝛ fydelyte whyche they to vs dayly impende, ſtande and abyde by vs to oppꝛeſſe your ifidelyte and vntrouthe. wherfoꝛe of your fauoure oꝛ aſſuraunce we ſette lyttell ſtoꝛe/ but you as our enymyes we vtterly defye, wytneſſe our ſelfe at our towne of Lewys, the.xii. daye of this moneth of May.

And ouer this the kyng of Romaynes, ſyꝛ Edwarde the kynges ſonne, and the other loꝛdes beyng thẽ with the kynge/ ſente vnto them a nother letter, wherof the tenour enſuyth.

RIcharde by the grace of god kynge of Romaynes alwaye Auguſtus, and Edwarde the noble fyꝛſt begotten ſon of the kyng of England, allother Barons fermely ſtandynge and abydynge wyth our ſouerayne loꝛde the kynge, to Symonde de Mountfoꝛd, Gylbert de Clare, and all other theyꝛ falſe felowes. By the letters whych ye ſent vnto the kynge our moſte ſouerayne loꝛde, we vnderſtande that we are defyed of you. Neuertheleſſe this woꝛde of dyſſyaunce apperyd vnto vs ſuffycyently befoꝛe, by the depꝛedacyon and bꝛennyng of our manours, and carienge away of our goodes. wherfoꝛe we wyll that ye vnderſtande, that we defye you as our moꝛtall & publyke enmyes. And when ſo.euer we may come to reuẽge ment of the iniuryes ẏ ye to vs haue done/ we ſhal acquit it to ẏ vttermoſt of our powers. And where ye put vpon vs, that nother trewe noꝛ good counſayll to our ſouerayne loꝛde the kynge we gyue/ ye therin ſay falſely and vntrewly. And yf ẏ ſaieng ye ſyꝛ Symonde de Mountfoꝛde and ſyꝛ Gylbert de Clare wyll iuſtifye in the courte of our ſouerayne loꝛd/ we are redy to purchaſe to you ſuerty & ſafe commynge, that there we may pꝛoue our trew and faythfull innocencye, & your falſe and traytoꝛouſe lyenge. wytneſſyd wyth ẏ ſeales of Richard kynge of Romaynes, & ſyꝛ Edwarde foꝛenamed. Gyuen at Lewys the.xii. daye of May.

Cruell and deteſtable bataple. *

When the Baronys had receyued theſe letters from the kyng and his loꝛdes/ they perceyued well that there was none other mean, but defẽde theyꝛ cauſe by dynt of ſwoꝛd. wherfoꝛe they puttyng theyꝛ truſt in god/ ſpedde theym foꝛth toward the kynge. And vppon a wednyſday beynge then the.xviii. daye of May, early in the moꝛnynge both hoſtes met. where after the Lõdoners had gyuen the fyꝛſt aſſaute, they were betyn backe/ ſo that they began to dꝛaw from the ſharpe ſhot and ſtrokes, to the diſcomfoꝛte of the Barons hoſte. But ẏ Barons encoꝛaged and comfoꝛted theyꝛ men in ſuche wyſe, that not alonely the freſhe and luſty knyghtes fought egerly, but alſo ſuche as befoꝛe were ſcomfyted, recoueryd theyꝛ vertue & ſtrength, & fought wythout fere, in ſo myche that the kynges vaward loſt theyꝛ places. * Then was the felde coueryd wyth dede bodyes/ & gaſpynge & gronyng was hard on euery ſyde. Foꝛ eyther was deſyꝛous foꝛ to bꝛyng the other out of life. And the fader ſpayd not the ſon, noꝛ the ſon ẏ fader. Allyaũce at ẏ tyme was turned vnto dyſſyaunce/ and cryſten blood that daye was ſhad wythoute pytie. Thus duryng the cruell fyght by the moꝛe parte of ẏ day, laſtely the victoꝛy fyll to the Barons/ ſo ẏ there was taken the kynge, & the kynge of Romayns, ſyꝛ Edwarde the kynges ſon,

son, wyth many other noble men to the nomber of. xxv. Barons and Banerettes/& people slayn a great multytude ouer .xx. thousande as sayth myne authours.

when the Barons had thus obteyned victorye, prouysyon was made for ỹ saufe keppyng of the prysoners/ so that all were sent vnto dyuers castellys and prysons, except the kyng, his brother the kynge of Almayne, & syr Edwarde his son / the whych the Barons helde wyth theym tyll they came to London.

Then a new graunte was made by the kynge, that the forsayd statutes shuld stande in strength. And yf any were thought vnreasonable/ they to be corrected and amended by foure noble men of the realme / that is to meane.ii.of the spyrytualtye, and.ii. of the temporaltye. And yf those.iiii. myght not agree / that then the erle of Angeou and duke of Burgoyn to be iudges of that mater. And this to be fermely holden and obeyed by the kynge and hys brother/ the kynges graunted that theyr sonnes & heyres shuld remayne wyth the Barons as prysoners, tyll all thynge were fynysshed accordynge to the former agrement. And vppon thys was a parlyament appoynted, to be holden at London at Penthecoste folowynge/ but that came neuer to purpose. Thē the tuesday before the Assencyon day peace was proclaimed in London betwene the kynge and hys Barons. And vppon the daye folowynge, the kynge & the Barons came vnto London/ with the kynge of Romayns, & syr Edwarde the kynges sonne. Then syr Edward as pledge for the kyng, and syr Henry sonne vnto the kynge of Almayn were sent vnto the toure, and there lodged/and from thēs vnto Douer castell. And the kyng was lodged in the byshoppes palays by Paules/ and the kynge of Almayne with dyuers other within the towne. Then yt was agreed by the kynge, that for his more suertye, and for the weale of the lande / that the erle of Leyceter shuld be restaūt in the kynges courte. Vppon the whyche agrement & other, many of the prysoners were set at large.

In this passe tyme before the felde of Lewys/ ỹ quene & the kyng of Romayns had sent ouer ỹ see for souldyours, to ayde the kynge agayne the Barons/ whych now were comen in great nomber vnto Douer, & there houed in ỹ see to haue lāded. wherof herynge the Barons sent the kyng of Romayns to the castell of Berkham stede as prisoner, tyll the sayde allyauntes were retourned / and caused kynge Henry wyth a great power to ryde thyder, and force the sayde hoste of straungers to retourne into theyr owne countreys.

And when the kynge had returned the sayde straungers/ he shortly after wyth agrement of the barons sayled ouer into Fraunce, and retourned agayne wythin short terme.

Anno domini.M.CC.lxiii. Anno domini. M. CC. lxiiii.

Osbert wynter.

Thomas fyz Thomas. Anno.xlviii.

Phylyppe Taylour.

In this .xlviii. yere/ the lordes of the marches about the feast of Crystmasse, assembled theym in those costes, and dyd myche harme vppon the lordeshyppes and manours of the erlys of Leyceter and of Glouceter standynge in the marches of walys. wherfore the kynge

rode shortely after to Glouceter, and called there a counsayl of his lordes. By authorite of whych counsayll yt was enacted, that as many of ỹ sayd lordes as came not in by the octauis of saynte Hyllary nexte folowynge, & yelded them vnto the kynges grace, shuld be eryled. And by the sayd cõ sayll was also agreed, that in ỹ sayd octaues shulde a parlyament be holdyn at westmynster. At whyche daye the kyng wyth his lordes spyrytuall and temporall and commons of hys lande, beganne his forsayde parlyament. Durynge the whyche yt was there shewed the kynge beynge present, that he nor syr Edward his son nor none of theym, shulde after that daye greue or cause to be greuyd, the erles of Leyceter and of Glouceter, ỹ Barons, Banerettes or knyghtes, the citesyns of London and Barons of the .v. portes/nor none other pson or persones of hyghe or low degree, that was vpon the partye of the sayd erles, for any mater of dysplearure done agayne the kynge and the sayd syr Edwarde his sonne, at any tyme before that day. And that to vphold/ the kynge before hys lordes was sworne. And after that was shewed and rad a charter of pardon concernynge the sayde cause/ and a confyrmacyon of the statutes of the foreste, wyth many other actes and statutes before graunted of the kynge. Then in the feaste of saynt Gregory folowynge, or the .xii. daye of Marche/ syr Edwarde the kynges son, ỹ before was also sworn to performe such promyses as the kyng had made before in the parliament, was delyueryd at lyberte/ & also syr Henry the kynges son of Almayne, the whych had ben kept as pledge as ye before haue harde vppon the terme of .xr. monethes & odde dayes/ vpon assurãce made, that ỹ sayd syr Edwarde shuld dwell and abyde in the kynges courte, and not to departe from thens wythoute lycence of the kyng and of a certayne of the Barons. After this many instrumentes & bandes were made by the kynge and syr Edwarde his son, for the performaunce of couenaunts & paccyons made betwene the kynge and the Barons, whyche shortly after came to small effecte.

In the season betwene Easter and Penthecoste, for orderynge of the aforesaid statutes made at Orenford, fell dessencyon betwene the erles of Leyceter & of Glouceter/ so that wordes of dysplearure was vtteryd betwene them, the kynge and they also beynge then at Glouceter. Then the kynge and his Barons had laboure to set theym at vnyte and reste.

And vppon the see the Barons of the .v. portes robbed and spoyled all men that they myght take/ sparynge nother Englyshe marchauntes nor other. Of whych prayes as ỹ cõmon fame then went, some of the Barons of the lande hadde good parte.

In the whytsonweke folowynge, ỹ kynge wyth the erle of Leyceter, and syr Edwarde hys sonne, wyth many other lordes beynge at Herford in ỹ edge of walys/ the sayd syr Edward secretly and wythout lycence departed from the courte, and yode vnto Chester/ where he accõpanyed to him the erle of Glouceter and ỹ lordes of the Marches, the erle of warẽne, syr Roger Mortymer and other/ & from thens went vnto Glouceter, breking the brydges as he went, to the entent that he were not folowed tyll he had assembled his power.

When knowlege of thys came vnto the erle of Leyceter/ he in al hast sent vnto syr Symõde his son, ỹ he shuld gather his knyghtes vnto hym. The which accordyng to ỹ cõmaundemẽt assembled vnto hym myche people, & wyth

with them drew toward wynchester/ so that he came before the cytye vpon the euyn of the translacyon of saynte Swythyn, or the.xiiii.daye of the moneth of Julye. where he was shyt out, for so mych as the cytesyns knewe not whyther he came as the kynges frende or not. And also lytell before they hadde receyued a letter from syr Edwarde, wyllynge theym to holde theym out of the cytye. For these causes the citesyns closed theyr gates agayn the sayd syr Symonde and hys companye. But yt was not longe or the cytye was yelden. Then they spoyled the town/ and slewe the more partye of the Jewes that dwellyd wythin the same. And that done, layd syege vnto the castell and assauted it. But for tydynges were sayned of the cõmynge of syr Edwarde with hys power / they departyd shortely thens, and so yode vnto Kenelworth.

Uppon the laste daye of July/ syr Edwarde wyth hys hoste came vnto Kenelworth forsaid, and fyll sodaynly vppon the hoste of the forenamed syr Symonde, and wyth shedynge of lytell blood, toke there prysoners the erle of Orenford, wyllyam de mount Canyse, Adam de Newmarket, syr Balwyne wake, and Hughe Neuyle, wyth dyuers other/ and syr Symonde fledde into the castell and so escaped. Then these forenamed prysoners were all sent vnto Glouceter/ and there putte in suer keppynge.

In this meane whyle syr Symonde erle of Leyceter, toke leue of the kynge / whyche then from Herford passed the ryuer of Seuerne, and so yode vnto worceter. And ỹ erle with great payne passed the brydges before by syr Edwarde broken, and passed the coũtreys in gaderynge of people as he went/ so ỹ in procesſe he had wyth hym stronge power. wherof he kynge syr Edwarde, costed towarde hym/ and the .vi. daye of August met wyth hym at Euysham in worceter shyre / where betwene theym was foughten a cruell fyght. In ỹ whych at length was slayn the sayd syr Symonde, and syr Henry his sonne and heyre, syr Hughe le Spenser, syr Peter de Mountford, and many other noble men that helde vppon the Barons partye.

After whych scomfyture, some malycyous dysposed persons, in despyte of the erle cut of his hode & his dimpsarves, and fastyned them vppon eyther syde of hys nose/ and after made a present therof vnto the wyfe of syr Roger Mortymer. Hys fete also and his handes were cut from the body, and sente to sondry places / and the trunke of hys bodye buryed wythin the chyrch of Euysham. Of this erle speketh Ranulphe mũke of Chester in his boke of Policronycon, and calleth hym Symon the ryght wise/ sayynge that god wrought for hym myracles after his deth, the whyche for fere of the kynge and syr Edwarde his sonne were kept close and secret, so that no man durste speke of them. Soone after this victory thus obteyned by syr Edward, ỹ kyng & he met/ by whose authorytyes all prysoners thẽ which were in hold in dyuers places, by ỹ cõmaundemẽt of ỹ sayd syr Edward, were set at lybertie/ & many other dayly accused & set in for them. And about the natyuyte of our lady, a parliamẽt was holdẽ at wynchester where by authorzyte of ỹ same, all statutes & ordinaũces before made by ỹ Barons at Orenford in the.xli. yere of ỹ kyng, were vtterly fordone & set at nought/ and all bondes & wrytynges made by the kyng or any other for the obseruynge of the same, were cancellyd and broken. Also at thys coũsayll was ordeyned, that all such as had fauoured the Barons, were

they in p̄yſon or at large / ſhulde be diſherited. And then ꝑ kyng reſumed into his hande, all grauntes before made and gyuen to any perſon. And for ſyr Symounde de Mountforde myght not agree wyth the kynge at the parlyament / he was reſtored to the caſtel of Kenelworth, as he before was aſſured / the whyche he wyth ſyr Henry de Haſtynges and other kept longe after.

when the parlyament was ended / the kyng came vnto wyndeſore with a great power, entendynge as the ſame then went to deſtroye the cytye of London, for the great ire and dyſ pleaſure that he hadde vnto yt. wher of heryng the mayre and aldermen, were ſtriken in a wonderfull fere / all be yt many of the rabbyſh and wylde cōmoners, were in full purpoſe to haue defended the cytye agayne the kynge. And thus amonge them were dyuers and many opinyons. And no wonder / for at thoſe dayes the cytye was inhabyted with many maner of nacyons, whyche then were admyt= ted for cyteſyns.

LAſtely by grace and ſad coun ſayll of the beſte of the cytye / they condeſcended to make a ſupply cacyon to ꝑ kynge, & ſend yt by ſome religyous perſon. Of the which they made dyuers, and ſent them by ſon= dry perſones / but all auayled ryght nought. For the kynge was ſo gre= uouſly encenſyd by ſome of his coun ſayll agayne the cyteſyns, ꝑ he wold not loke vppon none of theyr ſupply cacyons. And yf any man ſpake for theym / he ſoone wold make ſuch cō tenaunce, that men whyche were in his fauoure feryd to ſpeke for them. Then the cyteſyns were counſayled by theyr frēdes, ꝑ they ſhuld make a writyng, and ſeale yt with theyr com mon ſeale / by vertue whereof they ſhulde offer theym ſelfe to put theym holly in the kynges grace and mer= cy touchynge theyr lyues & goodes. Accordynge to the whyche counſayll they deuyſed a wrytynge, and ſealed yt wyth theyr cōmon ſeale / and that done choſe. viii. perſons of the cytye ſuch as had frēdes in the courte, and ſent them toward wyndeſore the. vi. daye of October. Vppon whych day they encountered beyonde Colbroke a knyght of the kinges callyd ſyr Ro ger Leyborne, the whych turned the ſayde. viii. perſones vnto the cytye / and he alſo rode wyth theym tyll he came nere vnto the cytye, and there departed from them, and rode vppon the backe ſyde of the towne vnto the toure. But at his departynge he wyl led them to warne the mayre wyth a certayne of the cytye, to mete wyth hym vppon the morow at Berkynge chyrche, whyche ſtandeth nere vnto the towre. Vppon the morow when the mayre and the ſayde ſyr Roger were met / he after a longe proceſſe made, ſhewed to them of the kynges greuous diſpleaſure whyche he bare towarde the cytye / and the meanes that hadde be vſed by theyr frendes and louers, to obteyne grace for the cytye. Laſtely he exyreſſed ꝑ no grace for them myght be had / excepte they wolde by theyr common ſeale bynde theym ſelfe fully and holly to ſtande at ꝑ kynges grace, and to put in his mercy theyr lyues and goodes. wher unto in the ende the cyteſyns graun= ted, and delyueryd the forſayde wry tynge vnto the foreſayd Roger / pray enge hym to be good meane for them to ꝑ kynge. The whych departyd to= warde ꝑ kyng vpon the morow, and returned agayne the. vi. daye after / and wylled the mayre and aldermen to mete wyth hym agayne at the fore ſayd chirch. where he ſhewyd to them that the kynge by great inſtaunce of

theyr

theyr frendes hadde receyued theyr wrytynge/ and wold kyrste for the begynnynge of cõtentacion of his myn de, that all the chaynes/whych stode in euery strete and lanes ende wyth in the cytye, shuld be louslyd frõ theyr postes, and the post also drawen out of the erthe, and all to be brought vn to the towre/ and that done, that the mayre wyth a certayne of ỹ cytesyns to the nomber of .xl. persones, shuld the daye folowynge be at wyndesore to comferme the graunt of theyr wry tyng. And ỹ they shuld go & come in safe & suer wise/he delyuered to them the kynges letter & seale for ỹ terme of foure dayes. whyche all was done accordynge to theyr former deuyse/ and the mayre wyth the foresayd per sones was redy at wyndesore vppon the morow beynge sondaye by one of the clocke/ and there tayed tyll .iiii. of the same daye. At whyche season the kynge commynge from his dys=porte, entred the castell wythout con tenaunce or castyng his eyen vppon the Londoners. And when the kyng and his peole was entred the castell/ the Londoners wolde haue folowed. But they were warned to abide with out. Then shorte tyme after the kyng caused a proclamacyon to be made, that no man of hygh or low degre, to the Londoners shulde make any say ynges of dysplesure, or make to thẽ any quarell. And in the euenynge came vnto them the foresayd syr Ro ger & syr Robert walcys knyghtes, and brought theym into the castell/ and sayde the kynges plesure was not to speke wyth them that nyght. And after the sayde knyghtes dely=ueryd them vnto the cõstable of ỹ ca stell/ which closyd them all in a large toure, where that nyght they hadde small chere and worse lodgynge.

Then vppon the morowe beynge mondaye towarde nyght/ they were taken oute of that toure, and delyue ryd vnto ỹ bayly of the sayd castell, and lodged by his assygnement/ ex=cept .v. persons, that is to mene Tho mas syr Thomas then mayre, My=chaell Tony, Stephan Bukkerell, Thomas Pywellyson, and Johñ de Flete. The whyche .v. persones the kynge hadde gyuen to syr Edwarde his sonne/ at whose commaundemẽt they remayned styll in the sayde tou=re longe after, not wythstandynge the kynges saue conduyte to theym as before is shewed, made. when ty dynges hereof came vnto the cyte of London/ all be yt that for fere many before were auoyded, then there a=uoyded many mo/ & conueyed theyr goodes in secrete wyse, into dyuers countreys of Englande, so that ma=ny of them neuer returned after.

Anno domini .M. CC. lxiiii. Anno domini .M. CC. lxv.

Thomas de la Fourdeous.

Thomas syr Thomas. Anno .xlix.

Gregory Rokkysle.

IN thys .xlix. yere, vppon the daye of saynt Leonarde or the vi. daye of Nouember/ ỹ kyng came vnto westmynster. And shortly after he gaue vnto diuers of his housholde seruaũtes, vpon thre score houses & housholdes wythin the citye/ so ỹ the owners were compellyd to agre and redeme theyr houses and housholde wyth all goodes as in them were, or ellys to auoyde, and suffer such per=sons to enter as ỹ sayd houses were gyuẽ vnto/ & not alonely that, but al so all suche landes and tenementes,

goodes & catalles, as the sayde cytezeyns had in any other places of Englande. And than he made custos or gardeyn of the cytye, syr Othon constable of the toure/whych syr Othon chase to be bayllyues vnder hym, and to be to hym accomptable to the vse of the kyng, Johñ Adrian, & walter Heruy cytezeyns of the same cytye. And after thys the kynge toke pledges of the best mênes sonnes of the cytye, that hys peas shulde be surely kepte within the same. The whiche were put in the toure of Londõ, and there kepte at the coste of theyr parentes. And shortly after by great laboure & suyte made/all the forsayd persones which were in the keppynge of ỹ bayly of the castell of wyndesore iiii. onely except, that is to saye Rycharde Bonauenture, Symõ de Hadistok, wyllyam de Kent, & wyllyam de Glouceter/all the other Lõdoners xxviiii. in nõber, were delyuered & came to London the Thursday folowynge the feast of saynte Luke, in ỹ xxi. day of Nouember/& the other. ix. were kepte styll in the toure of wyndesore.

Then dayly suyte & laboure was made vnto ỹ kynge to haue hys gracyous fauour/and to know hys pleasure what fyne he wolde haue of the cytye, for theyr transgressyons & displeasure by theym to hym done. For the whyche the kynge asked. xl. M. li and fermely helde hym at. l. M. marke. But the cytye layde for them that the poore commons of the cytye, whereof many were auoyded were the trespassours / and ouer that the best men of the cytye by these ryotous psones, were spoyled and robbed/and by the rouers also of the see, as the wardeynes of ỹ. v. portes and other, in thys troublous seasõ they had lost a great part of theyr substance. For the whych cõsyderacyons and many other whyche were tedyous to wryt the cytezeyns besought the kynge of hys most gracious fauour and pyte, and to take of theym as they myght bere.

Thys matter thus hangyng / the kynge vppon seynt Nycholas euyn departed from westmynster towarde Northampton. And lytell before hys departynge/ordeyned syr Johñ lynd knyght and mayster Johñ waldren clerke, to be gardeynes of the cytye & toure/the whyche were named in the kynges writtynge Seneschalles or stewardes of the cytye. Vppon the daye folowynge that the kynge was ryden/these. ii. forenamed stewardes sent for. xxiiii. of the mooste notable men of the cytye, and warned theym to apere the day folowynge before ỹ kynges counsayle at westmynster / where at theyr apparaunce was shewed vnto them by syr Roger Leyborne, that the kynges mynde was, that they shulde haue the rule of the cytye in hys absens vnder the forsaid Seneschalles & for to se good rule kept wythin ỹ cytye/they shuld be sworne there before hys counsayle.

The which there were then sworn & countermaunded vnto the cytye. And alwaye labour was made vnto the kynge for the fyne of the cytye/so that in the Crystmas weke an ende was made wyth the kyng, by labour of suche frendes as the cytye had about hym, for the summe of. xx. M. marke, for all transgressyons and offences by them before done/certayne persones excepted whyche the kynge had gyuẽ to syr Edwarde hys sonne, beynge as before is sayde in the tour of wynsore. For the paymẽt of which summe at dayes by agremẽt set / syr Roger Leyborne & mayster Roberte wareyn clerke, were assigned to take the suertyes for ỹ same. After whych suertye by theym receyued, and sente

vnto

vnto the kynge to Northamptō/ the kynge sent immedyatly after vnto ꝑ cytezeyns, a charter vnder his brode seale, whereof the effecte ensueth.

HEnry by the grace of god, kig of Englande, lord of Irlande and duke of Guyan/to al men helth. Knowe ye that for the fyne of.xx.M. marke, the whyche our cytezeyns of London to vs made, for the redempcyon of the transgressions and trespaces to vs, to our quene, to our noble brother Rycharde kynge of Almayne, and to Edward our fyrst begotē sonne done/we rempte and pardone for vs and for our heyres to the sayd cytezeyns and theyre heyres, as moche as in vs is / so that they haue and enioye all theyre former grauntes and lybertees, rentes and profites, from the feste of Crystmas laste paste / and also that the sayde cytezeyns haue to theym all forfaytes of all malefactours of ꝑ cytye, which in the parturbaūce before made were endyted, or for the same be yet for to be endyted / Excepte the goodes and catalles of theym, of the whyche we haue gyuen the bodyes vnto our forsayd sonne Edwarde/and except the rentes and tenemētes of all those cytezeyns, whyche now be and shalbe our eschete by reason of the forsayde transgressyons. And that all prysoners whyche now in our prysons remayne, be freely delyuered / excepte those psones whose bodyes we haue gyuē to Edwarde our sonne. And ꝑ the sayd cytezeyns be as fre as they before the sayd transgressyons were, in all partes and costes of thys our landes. In wytnes whereof we haue made these letters patentes / wytnes seth my selfe at Northampton, the.x. day of Januarii, the yere of our reygne.xlix.

After whyche pardone by the cyte zeyns receyued/ all pledges for them beyng in the toure of Londō, And also.iiii. of them that were in the toure of wyndesore, that is to say Rychard Bonauenture, Symō de Hadistoke, wyllyam of Kente, and wyllyam of Glouceter, were delyuered. Thanne also was dyscharged the forenamed stewardes syr Johū Lynde & mayster Johū waldre / and the cytezeyns of them selfe chose for mayre wyllyā Fyn Rychard, and for shyrefkes Thomas de la fourde, & Gregory de Rokysley. Than for leuyng of this fyne were set as well seruauntes couenāt men, as housholders / & many refuced the lyberties of the cytye for to be quyt of that charge.

whyle the kynge lay thus at Northampton/syr Symō de Mountford put hym vpon the dome of the Popes legat Octobonus, ꝑ before was come into thys lāde to reformme thynges in the chyrche of Englande, and also to set vnyte & reste betwene the kynge and hys lordes. To whose dome, & also of the kynge of romayns, the forsayde syr Symond had bounden hym to stande. Upon whych promyse and bande, he was lybertied to be at large in the kynges courte, and so contynued a season. But in ꝑ ende when the kyng was cōmē into Lōdon, he departed sodaynly out of the courte & rode vnto wynchelsee, where he accompanyed hym with the rouers of the see, and after some prayses taken, departed from theym and so sayled into Fraunce, and put hym in seruyce with holy Lowis than kyng of that prouynce.

Thys yere also vppon the euyn of saynt Johū baptyst/ the kynge begā hys syege about the castell of Kenelworth with a mighty power. But syr Hēry Hastynges, with suche as were within it, defended it so strōgly, that the kynge and all hys power myght

nat

nat wynne the sayde castell of a lōge tyme, as after in the next yere shall appere.

It is before shewed, howe ꝑ quene by her purueiaūs had caused an host of straungers to prepare them to come into Englande, for to ayde her lorde the kynge agayn the barons: She had also purchased a curse of ꝑ Pope, to acurse all the sayde barons and all theyr ayders & helpers/and had commyssiōs dyrected to certayn bysshoppes of Englande, to execute the same/as of London, and of wynchester, and of Chychester/the which for fere of the barons than denyed & deferred the execucyon and sentence of the sayd curse. wherfore the quene made newe laboure to the pope than Urban the.iiii. and had it graūted, that the sayde Bysshoppes for theyr dysobedyence shulde be corrected. And for thys, Octobon the forsayde legate, thys yere at a counsayl holden by hym and the clergy of Englande at Paules chyrche in Londō suspended the sayde Bysshoppes, & theym sente vnto Rome to be assoyled of the pope, beynge at thys daye Clement the.iiii.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxv. Anno domini. M. CC. lxvi.

Edwarde Blont.

Thomas fiz Thomas. Anno. i.

Peter Aunger.

IN thys. i. yere vppon the cuyn of saynt Thomas the apostle before Crystmas, was yelden by appoyntement the castel of Kenelworth At the whyche the kynge with hys power had lyen as before is sayd, frō mydsomer tyll that day/ and thā gyuen ouer by syr Henry Hastynges & hys complyces, vppon condycyon ꝑ he and all the other shulde haue lyfe and lym, and horse & harneys, with all thynges within the castell to thē belongynge / and a certayne tyme of leyser to cary away the same. And in thys yere in the tyme of Lent/were ꝑ wardeyns of the .v. portes recōcyled to ꝑ kynge, by fauour of syr Edward the kynges sonne. And natwithstandynge the greate harmys they had done by rouyng vppon the see, aswel to Englysshe marchauntes as to other/they had to them confermed all theyr fourmer pryuyleges. And ouer that to theym was graūted, ꝑ yf any man Englysshe or other wolde sewe for restitucyon of good by thē before taken, or for the deth of any of theyre frendes before slayne / that all suche complayntes shuld be sued & shewed in theyr courtz/ & there to haue theyr maters determyned & nat elys where. But what the cause was of thys ende thus made atwene ꝑ kyng & thē it is nat shewed. But ꝑ cōmon fame at ꝑ day ran ꝑ the sayd wardeins of ꝑ .v. portes had at thys day ꝑ dominiō of the see. wherfore ꝑ kyng was fayn to folowe theyr pleasures.

About the feast of Philip & Jacob ꝑ kyng helde hys parlyamēt at Nort hāpton. At ꝑ whych were cōfermed ꝑ olde fraunchyses & lybertyes, by the kyngz progenytours before graūted vnto the cytye of Lōdon, with a new graūt for ꝑ shyre of Myddelsex. And at thys parlyament were dysherited many noble men of the lande, ꝑ before tyme had taken the barons partie. For whyche cause they accompanied theym togyder, & robbed and reuyd in diuers coostes of the lande/& toke the towne of Lyncolñ & spoyled it, & after raunsomed many of the ryche burgeyses of the towne/and toke the ile of Ely, & strēgthed it in suche wyse that they helde it longe after.

Anno

Anno domini.M.CC.lxvi. Anno dñi.M.CC.lxvii.

Johñ Adyan.

willm Fiz Rycharde. Anno.li.

Luke Badecot.

IN thys.li.yere/at the chosyng of the mayze, certayne contrauersies syll attwene the rulers & the commons of the cytye of London. wherfoze by aduice of the mayze and aldermen / syz Roger Leydozne with other came vnto ỹ Guylhalle, beyng harneled vnder theyz gownes and vppon the fryday folowyng Alhalowyn called the commons to the election of the new mayze/where the best of the cytye gaue ỹ nominacyō vnto Alei sowch/& diuerse of ỹ other cryed vpon Thomas fyz Thomas, whych at that tyme was pzysoner in wyndesoze castell/ wherfoze the sayd Roger with ỹ assystence of the mayze and other, toke the sayde Rascal and euyll disposed persones, and sent thē vnto dyuers pzysons. Thys yere also the gentylmen that helde the Ile of Ely bzake oute sondzy tymes and dyd moche harme in Nozthfolke, & in Suffolke, and Cambzydgeshyze / and toke the cytie of Nozwyche/and after the spoylynge thereof, caryed awaye with theym many of the cytezeyns beynge ryche, and fynaunced theym at great summes of money/ & lyued therin that Ile lyke vnto out lawes. By thys and other, many hurtes in dyuers places of the lāde was done, by theuys and other yll dysposed people / whereof the charge was euer layde vnto the foze name gentilmen. Thē the legate laboured vnto the kynge, that the sayde disherited gentylmen myght purchase theyz lā des of hym by fyne and raunsome. By whose laboure the kynge lastly agreed, that the sayd gentylmē shuld haue theyz landes agayne by fynes of.v.yere value of theyz lande. As he that myght dyspende.xx.li. by yere, shulde paye an.C.li. and so other after that rate, except syz Robert ferers Erle of Derby, syz Johñ de la warre and hym that strake of ỹ fyste of the kynges purseuaūt. And some other persones whyche were of small hauoure, shulde be fyned by discrecyon of the kynges counsayll/ but this toke no conclusyon.

Anno domini.M.CC.lxvii. Anno dñi.M.CC.lxviii.

Thomas Baspnge.

Aleyn South. Anno.lii.

Robert de Cozneḥyll.

IN thys.lii. yere, foz what hap is nat expzessed, syz Gylbert de Clare erle of Gloceter refused ỹ king and in the marche of walys gadered vnto hi a stronge power. To whome also dzewe syz Johñ Eyuile & other of the company disherited. And after the feest of Crystmasse, with a greate hoost came nere vnto London/ that tyme the Popes legate Octobonus beynge lodged at the toure of Lōdō. whan the mayze and aldermen of the cytye were ware of the erles commynge, with so stronge a powez, nat knowynge whether he were the kynges frende oz nat/ shytte the gates agayne hys foze ryders. And foz the kynge noz none of hys coūsayll was than nere vnto the cytye / the mayze and aldermen went vnto the legate, and

and requyred hys counsayl, whether they shulde suffre the erle to entre into the cytye or nat / wherunto the legate answered that he thought nat the contrary / for he knewe wele that he was the kynges trewe subyect & frende. It was nat lōge after that a messanger came from the erle vnto the mayre, wyllynge to haue lycence to passe thorugh the cytye into Southwerke, where he entendyd to lodge hym and hys people / whyche was graunted/and so the erle passed thorough the cytye, and was lodged in Southwerke. To whō came shortly after by Southerey, syde syr Johñ Cpuile with a greate company.

Than the mayre kepte the gate of ỹ brydge shyt, and watched it dayly with a certayne of armyd men, and euery nyght caused the draw brydge to be drawen, & the waters syde dayly and nyghtly to be watched with many armyd men. In lytell processe of tyme after/ the legate and the erle agreed in suche wyse, that the erle by hys aduyce was suffered with a certayne of hys people to be lodged within ỹ cytye. By reason wherof he dayly drewe more & more of hys people into the cytye/ so that fynally many thynges were ordered by hym, & many of the commons toke hys partye agayne the mayre and aldermen.

Then in the Easter weke he toke ỹ keyes of the brydge and of the gates from the offycers of the cytye, and delyuered them to such as pleased hym and receyued into the cytye many of the dysherited persones, and gaue to them fre lybertye to passe the brydge by all houres of the daye & ỹ nyghte. The mayre of all thys sente worde vnto the kynge, whych than was gadering of hys power in Northfolke, and made hasty spede towarde London. In whyche meane tyme the erle with hys company made bulwerkes and barbycanys atwene the toure & the cytye, and caste dykes & trenches in some places of ỹ cytye, & fortyfyed it wonderously.

Then many of ỹ cytezeyns fering a newe insurrecyon, voyded the cytye as secretly as they myght/ whose goodes the erle sealed to hys owne vse: or suffred hys men to spoyle thē at theyr pleasure. Than the commōs of the cytye forgat theyr late punysshyment/ and as men without drede of god or of theyr kynge, toke certayne of the aldermen & caste theym in pryson, and sequestred theyr goodes, & dyspoyled moche therof. And therbyppon ranne to the Guyldhalle, and there chose for theyr mayre or for custos or ruler of the cytye syr Rychard de Culworth knyght, and for bayliues Roberte de Lynton and Roger Marshall / and dyscharged the olde mayre and sherykkes. And that done, all suche prysoners as were in Newgate, Ludgate, and Creplgate, or in any other prysons within the cytie for bycause of the barons warre before passed/ they were delyuered & set at lybertye.

Whan the legate beheld all thys rebelliō and dysorde/ he repented hym of hys fourmer counsayll gyuē vnto the mayre. And for he sawe he might nat reformme the erle of hys errour / he thretened hym wyth the censurs of the chyrch, and to accurse hym as the dysherpted were. And vpon thys he commaunded the deuyne seruyce to be sayd without note, & the chyrch dores to be shytte in tyme of the seruice doynge, & that no belle were ronge vnto the sayde seruyce/ and all to the entent ỹ the dysherpted, whych stode accursed shuld nat entre ỹ churches to here the deuyne seruyce of god.

Then vpō .iii. wekes after Easter/ the kynge came to Hain .iii. myles from London, and was lodged hym selfe

selfe in the abbaye of whyte monkes of Stratforde. whyther came vnto hym the legate soone after, and was lodgid also in the same abbay/where for streyghtnes of lodgyng his horse and mules were sette wythin the closter of the sayde abbay. Then the kyng ges hoste made dayly assautes vpon the cytye/ and gunnes and other ordynaunces was shot into the cytye, whyche lytell or nothynge hurte the towne, yt was so strongly fortyfyed.

In this season ỳ legate vppon his partye, and the kynge of Romaynes vppon the other partye, for allyaũce that was betwene hym and the erle of Glouceter/ labored so to the kyng that a reformacyon of peace was spoken of. Durynge whyche treaty the souldyours lyenge in Southwerke, made many robberyes in Southery and other places/ and rowed ouer to westmynster, and spoyled there the kynges paleys, and deuoured hys wyne, and brake ỳ glasse of the wyndowes/ and all other necessaryes to that paleys they destroyed & wasted/ and somtymes came in lyke wyse into Lõdon and robbyd there also. Of whyche there was taken. iiii. ỳ bare the Conysaunce of the erle of Derby / the whyche the erle caused theyr handes and legges to be bounden, and then put into a sacke, and so cast into the Thamys.

About the feast of saynt Barnabe/ the peace betwene the kynge and the erle of Glouceter was concludyd.

After the whyche conclusyon taken/ the erle remouyd out of the cytye, & was lodged agayne in South werke. And the kyng entryd the citye the sondaye before mydsomer daye. And forth wyth the kynges proclamacyons were made through the cytye, of the peace betwene the kyng & the erle. And after was gyuen liberte to ỳ dysheryted persons ỳ they shuld haue. xi. dayes respyte to shyft for them selfe/that is to meane other to auoyde to suche places where they myght be in some suertye, or ellys to agre to the former composycyon made by the legate, and to paye the. v. parte of the styntes of theyr landes/ certayne persones to be exceptyd, as before is reherssyd. And as touchyng to the erle and suche other as before were not dysherytyd, wyth also the cytesyns of London, to be clerely forgyuen and pardoned.

And then was restorid to theyr offyces Aleyn Sowch for mayre, and Thomas Basynge and Robert de Cornehyll for shyreffes. And the aldermen whych before were deposyd, were agayn restored to theyr wardes and offyces.

Vppon the wednysday folowynge, the legate interdyted all the cytye. which endured from. vi. of the clocke in the mornyng, tyll. iii. of the clocke the next day at after none/ and then yt dyscharged, vppon the othe of. ii. commons sworne in the name of all the cytye, that the cytye shulde stande to the ordynaunce and iudgement of holy chyrche. But an other cronycle sayth, that this interdyccyon shulde haue contynued longer, ne had ben the stereneſſe of the Londoners/ whyche helde the legate so streyght, that they enforced hym to wythdraw that sentence vppon the forsayde condycyon. Then after this, all the bul werkes and barbycans made by the erle in the cytye were plucked clene vppe/ and the dyches fyllyd, that no parte of theym was sene. when the cytesyns shulde haue theyr newe pardon grauted/an obstacle was made, for so myche as they as yet hadde not recompensyd the kynge of Romaynes for the subuersyon of his manour of Thystylworth. For the whyche was axed. vi. thousande marke/

ſo that fynally wyth great laboure and frendſhyppe, thy agreed to gyue vnto hym for amendes a thouſande marke, to be payed in two yeres.

It was longe after the kynge acceptyd to his grace ſyr Johñ Eyuyle, ſyr Nycholas de Segraue, ſyr willyam Marmeryn or Mermyon, ſyr Richarde Gray, ſyr Johñ fyz Johñ, and ſyr Gylbert de Lucy, with other. And accorde was alſo made betwene ſyr Edwarde the kynges ſonne, and the forenamed erle of Glouceter. And then was all fortreſſes and other defences which before tyme were made in Southwerke and in other places ioynynge to the ſame, pulled vp and deſtroyed / and the erle and all other ſouldyours clene voyded. And after all thynges ſet in order and reſte, excepte ſuch as yet kept the yle of Ely / the kynge rode to Shrowyſburye, where he taried a ſeaſon, for to cõmon of maters betwene hym and Lewelyn prynce of walys.

The kynge thus beyng at Shrowyſbury / a wrytte was dyrectyd to ſyr Aleyn Souch mayre of Lõdon, viii. dayes before Mychelmas from the kynge / chargynge hym that the cyteſyns ſhuld not procede to electyon of newe ſhyrreffes tyll his commynge to London, but to ſuffer the olde to abyde ſtyll in offyce.

Annodomini. M. CC. lxviii. Anno dñi. M. CC. lxix.

wyllyam de Durham.

Aleyn Souch. Anno. liii.

walter Henry.

In this. liii. yere in the moneth of Nouember, fyll a varyaũce betwene the felyſhyppes of goldſmythes and taylllours of London. whyche grew to makynge of partyes / ſo that wyth the goldſmythes toke partye the felyſhyp or craft of / & wyth the taylllours helde ỹ craft of ſtayners. By meane of thys mychepeople nyghtly gaderyd in the ſtretes in harneys. And at length as yt were prouyded, ỹ thyrd nyght, of the ſayde partyes met vpon the nomber of. v. hũdred men on both ſydes, and ran to gyther wyth ſuch violence, ỹ ſome were ſlayn and many woũded, Then outcrie was made / ſo ỹ the ſhyrreffes with ſtrength of other cõmons came to the ryddynge of theym, and of theym toke certayn perſones / and ſent them vnto dyuers pryſons / and vppon the morowe ſuche ſerche was made, that the moſte of the cheſe cauſers of that fray were taken and put in warde.

Dark faſkyng.

Then vppon the freday folowyng ſaynt Katheryns day, ſeſſyons were kepte at Newgate by the mayre and Laurẽce de Broke iuſtyce and other / where. xxx. of the ſayd perſones were arregned of felony, and. xiii. of them caſte and hanged. And for one Godfrey de Beuerlay holpe to arme one of the ſayd perſons, he was alſo caſte amonge the other. In lent folowyng the kynge beyng at weſtmynſter commaũded the mayre of London to preſent vnto hym. vi. perſones ſuch as were able to be ſhyrreffes. Of the whyche. vi. ſo preſented, ỹ kyng chaſe. ii. for to be ſhyrreffes / that is to ſay wyllyam de Durham and walter Henry / and then cauſed theym to be ſworne, that they ſhulde gader the profytes of the cytye, and to gyue a trewe accompte before the Barons of the excheker.

And the morow after ſaynt Jamis daye, or the. xxvi. daye of July / the kynge diſcharged ſyr Aleyn Souch

mayre

mayre, and made Stephã Edworth constable of the toure, and custos of the cytye of London. Of these rulers of the cytye after the yere that Thomas fyz Thomas was mayre are dyuers opynyons. For after some wri ters, from that yere, whyche as the xlviii. yere of kynge Henry tyll the lviii. yere, of hys reygne, in the whyche yere Johan Adryan draper was mayre/ were all custodyes and gardeyns and no mayres/ and who to ỹ was then constable of the towre of Lõdon, was also custos of the cytye.

About this tyme also by medyacyon and meanes of syr Edwarde/ all suche dysheryted persones as kepte the yle of Ely, were reconcyled vnto the kynge/ and all fortresses and defences therin by theym made, plucked away and destroyed.

And in thys moneth of July, Octobonus the legat after he had made many good rules in the chyrche, not wythoute great charge of dymes leuyed of the same/ toke his leue of the kynge, and rode towarde the see syde with great treasour, and so returned in processe of tyme to Rome. where after Innocent the fyft, about the yere of our lorde. xii. hundred & .lxxvi. he was chosen and created pope, and then named Adryan ỹ. v. of ỹ name, and dyed wythin. l. dayes of his electyon. This yere also, for so myche as many of the cytesyns of London for the great imposycyon & charge that they were sette at, towarde the fyne of .xx. thousande marke forenamed wyth other charges, voyde the cytye wyth theyr housholdes and goodes, & enhabited them in dyues places of the lande, thynkynge therby to be acquited of the sayd sessyng or charge/ the other of the cytye whych remayned, made instant laboure to ỹ kyng and had yt graunted, that all suche as for the sayde cause hadde voyded theyr goodes out of the cytye, shulde be distrayned by the shyryff of ỹ shyre where they then dwelled, and forcyd to paye all suche summes as they before were assessyd at.

And in the moneth of September, the forenamed .v. cytesyns whych remayned prysoners in the towre of wyndesore, that is to saye Thomas fyz Thomas, Mychaell Tony, Stephan Buckerell, Thomas Pywelysdon, and Johñ de la Flete, as before in the ende of the. xlviii. yere is expressyd/ made at thys season theyr ende wyth syr Edwarde the kynges sonne for great summes of money, & were delyueryd.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxix. Anno domini. M. CC. lxx.

wyllyam Haddystoke.

Thomas fiz Thomas. Anno. liiii.

Anketyll de Aluerne.

In this .liiii. yere, beganne an harde froste about the feaste of saynt Andrew, and endured tyll yt was nere vnto Candelmasse. The whych was so feruent, that Thamys aboue the bridge betwene London & westmynster was so harde frosyn, ỹ men and bestes passed ouer on fote from Lambhyth to westmynste/ and so vpward in dyuers places to kyng stone/ and marchaundyse was caryed from Sandwych & other hauens of the see vnto London by lande, for that shyppes at ỹ season myghte not entre into the ryuer of Thamys.

And about the feaste of saynte Vedast fyll suche plent of water, ỹ Thamys flowed and rose so hyghe, ỹ the lyke therof was not sene by men then lyuynge. wherof ensued myche harme

about London/ for the selers by the water syde were all drowned, and in theym great plente of marchaundyse perysshed and losse.

In this yere in the begynnynge of lent/ ỳ kynge gaue vnto syr Edward his son the rule of the cytye of London, with all reuenues and profytes to yt belongynge. After whyche gyft ỳ sayd syr Edwarde made syr Hugh the son of Othon cõstable of ỳ towre and custos of the cytye.

And vppon the .ix. daye of Apryll ensuynge/ syr Edmunde the kynges other sonne surnamed Crouch bake, maryed at westminster the doughter of the erle of Aumarle. For solempnyte wherof, the kynge kept there in ỳ great hall a great honorable feaste the sondaye folowynge.

And vppon the daye of saynte Erkenwalde, or the laste daye of Apryll nexte ensuynge / syr Edwarde ỳ kynges sonne commaunded the citesyns of London to presente vnto hym .vi. persones able to be shyrreffes of London. Of the whyche he admytted to that offyce wyllyam de Hadestoke & Anketyll de Aluerne / & sware them to be accomptauntes as theyr predecessours were . And the .vi . daye of May folowyng ꝑsentyd at ỳ Guyld hall, and there chargyd of new.

At these dayes a newe custome or toll was vsed to be payed by the cytysyns of London vnto the kynge / whych toll syr Edwarde then hadde letten to ferme to a marchaunt straũger for .xx. marke by yere. wherfore the cytesyns not wyllynge to be vnder the rule of a straũger, made grete suyte vnto the sayde syr Edwarde / and lastely agreed wyth hym to bye the sayde tolle free, for the summe of two hundred marke.

And in the ende of this yere, that is to meane the .xiii. daye of October/ the kynge lette translate wyth great solemnytye , the holy body of saynte Edwarde kynge and confessour, that before laye in the syde of the quere where the monkes nowe synge, into the chapell at the backe of the hyghe aulter of westmynster abbay/ & there layde yt in a ryche shryne. And in this yere the kynge hadde graunted vnto hym towarde his vyage purposyd by hym into the holy lande , the xx. peny of euery mannes substaunce mouable thorough out hys lande of the lay fee/ and of the spyrytualty by assent of ỳ .x. Gregorye then pope .iii. dysmes, to be leuyed in thre yeres.

Anno domini .M. CC. lxx.

Anno domini .M. CC. lxxi.

walter Porter.

Johñ Adryan Vyntyner.

Anno .lb.

Johñ Taylour.

IN thys .lb. yere, the kynge of Romains cõcludid a couenaũt betwen ỳ kyng & syr Gylbert de Clare erle of Glouceter, for a vyage to be taken into the holy lande by the sayd erle for the kynge. For the whych vyage the saide erle shuld haue towarde his charge .viii thousand mark, and at the takyng of his shyppyng other viii. thousande marke, and to be redy by the fyrst daye of May nexte folowynge/ and yf the erle were not redy at the see syde at that day with his company to take his shyppynge, he shuld then forfayte to ỳ kyng .ii. M. marke. For suertie wherof ỳ sayde erle shuld delyuer into the kynges possessyon his castell of Henleger standynge vpon ỳ marche of walis. But this came after to no purpose, wherfore ỳ cause

is not

is not shewyd. But ꝑ iourney was perfourmed by syr Edwarde the kyn ges sonne, as after shall be to you de clared. In this passe tyme the cy-tesyns of London contentyd so well syr Edwardes mynde, that he labou red so for them to the kynges grace, that they had then theyr chartour so cõfermyd, that they shuld after theyr auncyent lybertyes chose of them self a mayre and two shyryues/and ꝑ sayd shyryues to haue the offyces therun-to belongynge to ferme, as they to fore hadde/ excepte that where tofore they payde for the fee ferme. iii. hun-dred and l. punde, nowe they shulde pay. iiii. hundred and. l. poũde. After whyche confyrmacyon thus graũted and passed by ꝑ kynges brode seale/ the cytesyns vppon the. xiiii. daye of July assembled at the Guyldhall, & chase for theyr mayre Johñ Adryan draper/ and for shyreffes walter Por ter and Johñ Tayller. And vppon ꝑ xvi. daye folowynge syr Edwarde be ynge present, presented them vnto ꝑ king at westminster/where they were admitted & swore. And then was syr Hugh of Othon dyschargyd of that rule of the cytye.

Then the citesyns of theyr fre wyll gaue vnto the kynge an .C. marke/ & to syr Edwarde .v. hũdred marke/ whyche gyft the kyng well accepted. And soone after they receyued theyr chartour of confyrmacyon, berynge date the. xxi. day of July, and yere of the kynges reygne. lv.

And for the former conuencyon be twene the kyng and the erle of Glou ceter was not holden/ syr Edwarde toke vppon hym the kynges crosse. To whom the kynge gaue all suche money as was graunted of ꝑ lay fee as before is shewyd, & then toke his leue of the kyng/and after toke shyp pynge at Douer the. xx. daye of Au-gust, and so sayled to Burbeaux with his wyfe and other noble company. And for that holy Lewys then kyng of Fraunce was gone, he taryed at Burdeaux a certayne season/and af-ter sped hym with his forsayd compa ny toward ꝑ cytye of Thunys, where ꝑ Frenche kyng was. But or he came thyder saynt Lewys was dede. And ꝑ peace cõcluded betwene Phylyppe hys son and the kynge of Thunys. wherfore syr Edwarde entendynge to greue goddes enmyes, wyth some knygtes of Fraunce whych entẽded the same / toke leue of the Frenche kynge and of syr Charlis hys vncle then kynge of Scycyle/ & sayled fur-ther into the holy lande, and arryued at a porte of Ãcris or Ãcon. For at ꝑ daye in the holy lande was no mo cy tyes in the possessyon of cristen men, but that and the cytye of Tyre/ wyth certayne castellys, wherunto the cry sten fled often for socoure agayne the Sarazyns.

when syr Edwarde was comẽ to ꝑ cytye of Ãcon/ ꝑ crysten knyghtes re ceyued hym with gret honour & glad nesse, and lodged hym in theyr beste maner. where he taryed by the space of a yere after, as affermeth ꝑ frenche cronycle. For yt was not longe after his commynge thyder, but that the Soudane of Sury (the whych had wonne al the countreys there about) came thyther wyth a great power of Sarazyns, and assauted the towne vygurously. But syr Edwarde with the ayde of crysten men bare hym so knyghtly, that he defended the cytye and the castellys to the same belon-gynge, & terrytores of the same/that the Soudane for all hys great mul-tytude and power gate there lytell honoure / notwytstandynge that he hadde in hys hoste, as affyrmeth the frenche cronycle, ouer an hundred thousande Sarazyns. And more af-fyrmeth the sayde cronycle, that syr

Edwarde in his polycyes and manfull actes so honorably behaupd him that he neuer dyd such acte in all his lyfe folowynge/ all be it that after he dyd many of grete honour. But none that was lyke vnto the actes that he there accomplyshed and brought vn to ende. By reason wherof his name amonge infidelys was had in memory many yeres after.

Of the honoure of thys marcyall knyght I haue shewed the lenger reherfall, for so myche as I fynde yt te stifyed of the French men/the which I knowe well by theyr other cronycles that they make of Englysh pryn ces must be of great authoryte, or elys by them yt shuld not so specyally haue ben noted. And more ouer I am assured, that yf a Frenche prynce had deserued suche a generall pryce/ yt shulde haue ben set out and artycu led euery acte thereof, that yt shulde haue conteyned a large worke, & the specyaltyes therof declared to theyr moste laude and honour. Then thys noble prynce beynge thus in Acon, and dayly puttynge the Surpens to shame and great damages / they seynge they might not preuayle agayn hym by strength of batayll, cast how they myght destroy hym by treason/ and sente vnto hym a Sarazyne in name of a messanger, the whyche in tellynge of hys fayned message, wou ded hym wyth a knyfe enuenomyd/ of the whyche wounde he laye longe or he were therof cured. But after confessyon made by the Sarazyn of all hys cōpassed treason, he was put vnto cruell deth.

In thys yere also fyll downe the steple of saynt Mary Bow in Chepe of Lōdon, & slew women & chyldren.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxi. Anno dñi. M. CC. lxxii.

Gregory Rokkysle.

Johñ Adryan wyntener Anno. lvi.

Henry waleys.

IN this. lvi. yere, in the moneth of Nouember at the parliamēt holden at westmynster/ the marchaū tes of Lōdon and other places of Englande, complayned them to ỹ kyng that the countesse of Flaundres had taken from them certayne gooddes amountynge to a great summe. Upon whych complaynt the kyng sent to her to make restytucyon. But for none was had/ the kyng cōmaunded that all men born in ỹ partyes in Englande shulde be arrested, and they & theyr goodes to be vnder suer kepynge. By the whych meane in conclusyon she sent ouer embassadours, and besought the kyng that his marchaūtes myght vse theyr entercourse into Flaūdres as they before tymes had done, & such lossis as before was by theym sustayned, shulde be recompensyd. And so soone after, an amyte betwene the kynge and her was concluded.

Deth & Enterynge of Richard kynge of Almayne. ✠

✠ In this yere about ỹ ende of March dyed Richard kynge of Almayn and erle of Cornewayle brother to the kynge/ and was buryed at Hayls an abbaye of whyte monkes by hym before tymes buylded, after he hadde ben kynge of Almayne by the terme of. xv. yeres. But after the reherfall made before in the. xxx. yere of this kyng Henry, he shuld reygne xvi. yeres.

In the moneth of Juny, ỹ monastery of ỹ Trinite in ỹ citie of Norwiche was consumed wyth fyre / by reason of a frayc made betwene seruauntes of the abbaye and some of the cytesyns of

zeyns of the cytye / whyche grewe to a great skyrmysshe. For the prpour of the same and other of the monkes purueyed sowdyours, and helde ꝑ belfray and the chyrch by force of armys/and threwe out stones & dartes and shotte many arrowes, by reason wherof many of ꝑ towne were bothe wounded & slayne, whyche brought the comons and ponge men in suche a furye and madnesse, that they kyrid the gates / and after forced the fyre with rede and drye woode, that the chyrche wyth the bookes & all other ornamentes of the same, and all houses of offyce belongynge to the same abbey, were clene brent and throwen downe/so that nothynge was preserued/excepte a lytell Chapell. whā tydynges of thys ryot came to ꝑ kyngs knowlege/he was therwith greuously displeased, so that he rode thyder soone after / and there commaunded questes to be charged of knyghtes & esquyres that dwelled in the countre aboute/ and to endyte all suche persones as were occasyoners and executours of that dede. By reason of whyche enquery, fynally were caste and iuged vppon the nombre.of.xxx. ponge men of the towne/ the whyche were after drawen to the place of execucyon and there hanged and brent to the great dyscomfyture & sorowe of the cytezeyns. For they thought ꝑ prpour of the place was the occasyoner of all that myschyef / whych was borne out & defended by the bysshop of Norwyche than beyng named Roger. And this yere were diuers prodygies & straūge tokens sene in dyuers places of Englande amōge/ꝑ whych at Grenewyche besyde London a lā- A mōster be was penyd, haupnge.ii.perfyte bodyes wyth all membres, and but one heed.

Anno domini.M.C.lxxii. Anno domini. M. CC.lxxiii.

Rychard Parys.

Syr walter Henry. Anno.lvii.

Johñ Bedyll.

IN thys .lvii. yere of kynge Hēry and begynnynge of the same, the kynge sykened / so that he was forcyd to kepe his bed at westminster, where he called before hym syr Gylberte de Clare erle of Glouceter and caused hym to be newly sworne to kepe the peas of the lande, to the behofe of Edwarde hys sonne / and than dyed vppon the daye of saynte Edmunde the bysshoppe, or the.xvi. day of Nouembre / and was buryed vppon the southesyde of saynte Edwarde in westmynster, whenne he had reygned.lvi.yeres & .xxviii.days leupnge after hym syr Edwarde beforenamed for hys heyre, & Edmūde Crowchbak. In a table hāgyng vpō the tombe of the sayd Henry are wryten theſe verſes folowynge.

Tercius Henricus iacet hic, pietatis amicus
Ecclesiam strauit istam, quam post renouauit
Reddat ei munus, qui regnat trinus & vnus.

The whyche may be Englysshed as foloweth.

The frende of pyte and of almesse dede
Henry the thyrde whylome of Englande kynge.
who thys chyrch brake, & after hys mede
Agayn renewed into this fayre buyldynge

Nowe resteth in here, whyche dyd so great a thynge
He yelde hys mede, that lorde in deyte
That as one god reygneth in persones thre.

Francia.

LOwys the.ix. of ỹ name and sonne vnto the seconde Phylyp, begā his reygne ouer the realme of Fraūce in the yere of our lorde .xii.C.xxiii. and the .vii. yere of the thyrde Hēry then kynge of Englande. Thys Lowys was crowned at Raynes vpon the daye of saynt Sixtus the pope or the.vi. day of August. By the meane of thys Lowys as testifieth the frēsshe cronycle, retourned the blode of Peppyn to the enheryteunce of the crowne of Fraunce, whose name was Isabell doughter of Bawdewyn erle of Henaut/whych Bawdewyn was discendyd of Ermengaunte, somtyme countesse of Namoure, whyche was doughter to Charles duke of Lorayne / the whyche Charles was lynyally dyscended of Charles the Cōquerour that was sonne of Charles Martellus the sonne of Peppyn.

Whan thys Lowys had passed the solempnytye of hys coronacyon / he made a vyage into ỹ countre of Poytiers, and there wanne from the Englysshe men certayne castelles & townes, as before in the .x. yere of Henry the thyrde is touched. The whyche vyage by hym fynysshed/ he at ỹ contemplacyon and prayer of kyng Johan kynge of Hierusalem, toke vpō hym the crosse to warre vpō the Turkes / and after all thynges for that vyage made redy, passed with hys hoost by Burgys & Neuers, and so to Lyon/and from Lyon to Aupgnō the whyche for dysobedyence to the chyrche of Rome had stande accursed vppon the terme of.vii.yeres. But where as kynge Lowys supposed he shulde haue passed with hys people as he had passed the other cytyes / ỹ cytezeyns closed the gates agayne hym, & wolde nat suffre hym nor hys to come within the cytye.

Wherfore the kynge commaunded assaute to be made/and so continued there hys siege tyll the myddell of August, the whyche was begon aboute the ende of Nouēbre/ and loste there many of hys men/ amōge the whych Guy erle of saynte Paule a man of great fame was one, with ỹ bysshop of Lemeryk and other, to the nōbre of.ii.M. or therabout. wherewith thys Lowys was so amoued, that he made a solempne othe, that he wolde nat departe thens tyll he had wonne the towne.

When that the rulers of the towne had knowlege of the kynges auowe and promesse that he had made/they toke aduysemente / and shortly after sent vnto the kynge .ii. noble men of the cytye to entreate and common of peas. But peas was to them vtterly denyed/ except they wolde submytte theym hooly to the correccyon of the pope. For the offence done to god & hys chyrch of Rome / & after to stāde to the kynges dome, for dyspleasure done agayne hym. In the ende thoughe thys condycyon were greatly agayne theyr mynde/it was lastly agreed vnto, and the kynge with his people was receyued into the cytye. And after he had restyd hym there a season, that the cytezens had agreed theym with the popes legate, and receyued of hym absolucio/with a new bysshop named Peter Corbio of the popes electyon than Gregory the.ix. with other thynges done accordinge to the

to the sayd popes commaundement: Then kynge Lowys commaunded fyrste the dyches of the towne to be fylled playne with the grounde. And that done, he caused to be caste vnto the erthe. iii. C. of ꝑ fayrest houses of the cytye. And after certayne sũmes of money by hym receyued towarde hys charge / he departed thens towarde Tholowse / & there by aduyce of hys barony, for so moche as wynter was towarde he retourned into Fraunce / & so sped hym on hys iourney, that vppõ the euyn of all Saintes he came to a place called Moũte Pauncer in the prouynce of Aluerne where he was takẽ with stronge sykenesse, and dyed within. iiii. dayes after, whose corps with grete honour was conueyed vnto saynt Denys, & there buryed by hys father / when he had reygned. iii. yeres / leuynge after hym a sonne, the whych is nowe named saint Lowys, and was than of ꝑ age of. xii. yeres or nere thereaboute.

LOwys the. x. of that name surnamed saint Lowys, and son of the. ix. Lowys laste kynge / began hys reygne ouer the lande of Fraũce in the moneth of Nouember, and yere of grace. xii. C. & xxvi. and ꝑ. x. yere of Henry the. iii. then kynge of Englande. The whyche for hys tendernesse of youthe, was thought insufficyent to take so greate a charge / and specyally of ꝑ duke of Bryttayne thã named Peter Mancler, the whyche encensed and styred many noble men agayne the sayde Lowys. But at length by prouysyon of quene Blanche hys mother and other lordes, he subdued hys enemyes / & at Raynes was crowned in the moneth of Decẽber folowyng, of the bysshop of Soysons, for so moche as at that tyme ꝑ see of Raynes was voyde.

The. iiii. yere of hys reygne and of hys age. xvii. he buylded the house of relygyon called Royan mount / & set therin monkes of Cysteaure order whyte monkes, and endewed theym with ryche possessyons.

It was nat longe after that great varyaunce fyll betwene the vnyuersytye or studientes of Parys and the cytezeyns of the same / in suche wyse that the studyentes were in purpose to haue lafte ꝑ cytye, & to haue kepte theyr study ellys where. Of ꝑ whych stryfe the frenche boke expresseth nat the cause / but sayethe that the kynge made good spede to agree theym, for so moche as kyng Hẽry of Englande had made labour to the sayde studyentes to come into hys countre, & to enhabyte theym there with many great pryueleges. But in cõclusion ꝑ frenche kynge so entreated thẽ, that they agreed to reste there styll. And that of a congruẽce / for they myghte dwell in no lande, where they shulde moze surely be defended. For ꝑ kyng of Fraunce bereth the floure de Lyce for one of that causes, that is to saye for to defende the clergy. And the fayth of Chryste betokeneth the myddle leef. And the thyrde betokeneth Chyualry. So that by the chyualry the clergy is defended, whych mayntayne the fayethe of the holy chyrche. Aboute thys season kynge Lowys maryed to hys fere Margarete the doughter of the erle of Prouynce. Soone after ꝑ matrymony was solẽpnysed / Frederyk the secõde before in ꝑ story of Hẽry the. iii. mynded Emperour of Almayne, sẽt vnto Lowis requyrynge hi ꝑ he wolde mete hym at a place called Valcolour, to ꝑ ende that he myght commõ with hym: whyche requeft kynge Lowys accepted / & with a goodly company kepte there hys daye of metynge. But whan the Emperour was ware that he was commen thyder wyth suche a company / he fayned hym syke,

The floure de Lyce.

and

and broke hys appoyntement. wherfore the frenshmen construed, that yf the kynge had comen thyder with a small or weke company / he wolde haue conueyed hym into hyghe Almayn, and there to haue kepte hym tyll he had of hym hys pleasure, concernynge the warre betwene kynge Henry and hym, or in other thynges. But when kynge Lowys espyed the delucyon of the Emperour / he then retourned into Fraunce. It was nat longe after that ỹ kynge was enfourmed of the obstynacy of the Albygenſis / the whyche of longe tyme had bē effected with dyuers poyntes of heresy, and many tymes recōcyled by the kynges of Fraunce and other / & yet fallen agayne to the sayde errour / wherfore the kynge sent vnto syr Johan Beawmount the whych ioyned vnto theym / chargynge hym to enuade that countre, and to waste and distroy it, tyll he had forced theym to restore to the chyrch suche goodes as they before had taken frome it / and ouer that to cause theym to make amendes to the good chrysten people, whyche they had harmed by meanes of theyr rappynes and extorcyōs. Upō whyche commaundement thus frō ỹ kynge receyued / the sayde Johan with a competent nombre of knyghtes entred the sayd coūtre, and layde syege to a strōg castell named Moūt Royall. And after many forte assautes wanne the sayd castell & manned it with Frenshemen. And than yode to an other stronge holde than named Saygos / and there lykewyse ordered the same. And after wastyng the countre, wañe from theym many townes & holdes / so that in the ende he forced the chyef rulers of that prouynce to obey theym to all hys hestz / and delyuered to hym suertyes or hostagys for the performaunce of the same. So ỹ he retourned into Frāce with greate pompe and honour / and receyued of the kyng at hys home cōmynge great thanke, with many ryche gyftes. Aboute the .xv. yere of kynge Lowys / the warre was quyckened betwene thys Lowys & Hēry the .iii. than kynge of Englande, for causes before shewed in the .xxvi. yere of the sayde Henry. And after that warre as there is shewed ended / the kynge, whyche was towarde the cytye of Lyon to haue vysyted the pope Innocent the .iiii. whyche thyder was fled for fere of Frederik the fore named Emperour / was taken with a sykenesse named dyssenterya of the flux. wherwith he was so greuously vexed, that he laye longe at a towne called Poyntoyse / and was in great ieopardy of lyfe / where lastly after many pylgrymages for hym done, with prayers and other obseruaunces longe to accompt / lastly it came to hys mynde, that yf it pleased god to restore hym to hys helth, he wolde make a vyage into the holy lande, & there warre vpon Chrystes enemyes After whyche promyse solemply auowed / he mended dayly, and was sone after restored vnto hys helthe. whan the kynge was recouered and retorned vnto Parys / he called a coūsayll of spyrytuall and temporall, & there shewed vnto theym of the promesse whyche he had made / requyrynge thē of theyr assystence and ayde / wherin he fonde hys lordes were agreable.

And in the tyme and season ỹ prouysyon was made for that iourney / the kynge wyth a goodly company rode vnto the abbey of Cluny, to vysyte the forsayd pope / and he tarryed with hym .xv. dayes. And after hys matter with hym sped, wyth playne remyssyon to hym graunted, and all other that kept with hym that vyage he retourned into Fraunce. And vpō wytsondaye folowynge / he kepte a great

great courte of hys landes at Melcõ where in presence of them, he called before hym Beatryce doughter vnto the erle of Prouince and syster to the quene hys wyfe / and there gaue her in maryage vnto Charles hys brother, and made hym there knyghte, with many other for hys loue. And ỹ day folowyng he gaue vnto the sayd Charles the erledome of Amõ, with ỹ lordshyp of Mayn. And soone after he rode to Paris, where he assembled many of his lordes to hold with hym hys iourney.

The fryday folowynge ỹ feaste of Penthecoste, in the yere of our lorde .xii.C. and.xliiii. & the.xxii. yere of the reygned of ỹ sayd Lowys he with many of his lordes departed from Parys vppon hys iournay towarde the holy lande. In which was croysed also ỹ archbyshops of Bourges, and of Raynes, the byshoppes of Laon, of Orleaunce, and of Beauuais, ỹ erles of Artoys, of saynt Paule, of Bloy, of Barre, of Marche, and of Moũtfort, with many other noble men whyche were longe to reherce. with the whyche company the kyng passed thorugh Burgoyñ / and so to Lyõ the vttermost border of Fraũce where the kynge fonde at ỹ tyme the forenamed pope, which there tarved for fere of the Emperour Frederyke.

whan the kyng a season had there tarved with the pope / he sent forth ỹ bawe warde of hys host towarde the place called Aque Mort. And shortly after folowed hym selfe with the rest of hys people. But certayn of hys bawarde passynge by a castell called ỹ Roche of Clin / were spoyled and robbed, and some slayne. wherof ỹ kyng beyng enformed, charged hys knyghtes to assaute the sayde castell. The whych was done / and the Souldyours hanged, and the castell made playne with the grounde. And after he helde on hys way tyll he came to the forsayd porte of Aque Mort or ỹ deed see / where he toke shyppynge, & so sayled forthe vppon Bartylmewe euyn or the.xxiiii.day of August / and lãded after in the prouynce of Cipre / where he tarved all the wynter folowyng, for some parte of his host that as yet was behynde. wherof ỹ kynge he was ioyously receyued / and at his departynge thens, kept cõpany with hym in the same iourney. But there fortune began to frowne vpon kyng Lowys. For in the tyme of hys there tarvenge moche of hys people sykened and dyed. Amonge the whyche, passed to god these men of name folowynge / the byshop of Bauuais, the erles of Mountfort, of Barre, and of Vendosme, with dyuers other to ỹ nombre of .ii.C.xl. whan kynge Lowys not all without troubles, as dyscencions amõge his people, and daũger of takynge of the see, had passed the wynter and a parte of the begynnynge of the yere / lastly aboute Crynyte sondaye he toke shyppynge at the porte of Cypre then named Dommeton or Dõmeson, and landed nere vnto the cytye of Damasse or Dampet the frydaye after. whan the crysten host were comyn nere vnto the porte of Damasse / the kynge caused theym to be shypped in small vessels and so in order to sayle or rowe towarde the cytye. But the Sarazeyns beynge ware of theyr commynge, issued oute of the cytye, and defended the porte bygorously / so that many a crysten man was slayne at that recounter. But in the ende the dyscomfyture tourned vpon the Sarasyns. For the chyefe capytayne of the towne wyth.ii. Admyralles were there slayne, & many of theyr knyghtes. Then they gaue backe vnto ỹ towne, and suffered the crysten to lande. The kynge then pyghte hys

pauylyons, and strengthed hys felde for sodayne brekynge out of the Turkes/ and so rested hym and hys people the sonday and mónday folowing. As faste as the crysten made prouysyon to ordre for theyr suer lyenge in the felde, so faste the Turkes within the towne made purueyaunce to conueye suche goodes as they myghte out of the cytye / and lastly sette the houses on fyre, & voyded vnknowynge to the crysten hoost. Anone as the flambe of the fyre appered/the cristen men without resystence entred ỹ cytye and quenched the fyre, & after possessed the cytye. Here I passe ouer certayne legaciõs and messages sent fro a prynce of the Orýēt vnto kynge Lowys/wherin appereth more fame of wordes than of thynges of trouth Then the temples and synagoges of the cytye were hallowed & occupyed to crysten mennes vse. And there the kynge with hys hoost rested hym tyll the moneth of Nouẽber folowynge / in the whych season came vnto hym the erle of Poytyers with a fayre cõpany. Then kynge Lowys with hys people departed from Damasse ỹ.xx. day of Nouembre, by the ryuer of Nilus, passynge with small vesselles to warde a stronge holde called Maskour/ whyther at lengthe they came with greate daunger. How be it they myght nat come nere vnto the towne to laye theyr syege therunto, bycause of a ryuer there rũnyng named Thanoys or Thanoes. wherfore ỹ kyng pyght hys Pauylyons betwene the sayd ryuer and the ryuer of Nylus.

In thys whyle ỹ the crysten hoost was thus lodged/ worde was brought to the kynge that the Sowdan of Babylon was dede, the whych before hys deth had prouyded a greate hoost to be sent into Egypte to withstãde the crysten hoost/& had committed the rule therof vnto an hardy and valiaũt Turke named Saphardyn. The whyche wyth a greate people came downe to thys towne of Maskour or Macour, & there dayly made assautes vpon the crysten hoost/ so ỹ betwene theym were had many bykerynges & skyrmysshes to bothe damages. Lastly the kynge aduertysynge in hys mynde that he myghte nothynge dere the Sarazeyns, without he myght passe ỹ ryuer of Thanoys/cõcluded by aduyce of hys maryners to make a brydge of shyppes so that fynally he cheyned and fastened hys shyppes togyder, in suche wise that a passage was made for his knyghtes.

Whan the Turkes espyed thys ordenaũce/ and apperceyued well that yf the crystẽ hoost had passed that ryuer, it shulde be to theyr greate dysauaũtage, anone with all ordenaũce and shot that they myght make, they dyd the vttermest of theyr powers to let the perfytyng of thys brydge and passage of the crysten hoost. And to thys fyll an other contrarye to the crysten. For the water of that ryuer whyche was brode and depe was so troublous of wawe, that the brydge therwith was all to shaken / & daungerous to stande on.

But these Turkes entendynge to damage the cristen/left a certayne to defende the passage, whyle the other by a forde or passage vnknowen to ỹ crysten men, came ouer the ryuer / & assauted the Frenchmen egerly / so ỹ there was betwene theym foughten a cruell batayle. Howe be it thorugh dyuyne power of god, the Turkes were ouerset, and many of thẽ slayne and taken. The whyche batayll was foughten vpon the daye of saynt Fabyan and Sebastyan, or the.xx. daye of Januarii. But yet myght nat the crystẽ wyn ouer the ryuer. For dayly the strength of the coũtres there nere

came

came downe and fortefyed the hooſt of the Sarazyns more & more.

The day folowynge the Purifyca cyon of our Lady, blewe ſuche a tem peſt of wynde, ꝑ it dyd moche harme bothe to the ſhyppes, and alſo to the tentes and pauylyons of the cry = ſten hoſt. And with that ſcarcite of vi tayle began to appere/ ſo ꝑ the kyng determyned to retourne agayn vnto Damaſſe.

When the Turkes eſpyed the re= tourne of the Frenchemen/ they ordeyned .iiii. barges or ſuche lyke veſſayles/ and ſtuffed them with pytche, roſyn, greece, and other ly= quet and brēnyng ſtuffe / and in the nyght ſodaynly brought thē a borde where the cryſten flote lay / and then caſt on them Grekyſh fyre, ꝑ whyche anone ſet them in a lyghte fyre. By reaſon wherof the cryſten flote was in great icopardy, and with great la= boure preſerued from brēnyng. For thys deſpyte that the Sarazyns had done to the cryſten / the kyng was ſo therwyth amoued, that he ſayde and promyſed that he wolde nat departe thens tyl he had done to the Turkes ſome dyſpleaſure. And vpon enquy= ſycyō made / he was enfourmed of a paſſage or foorde, that was within. iii. myles of hys pauylion. wherupō he called a counſayll of hys lordes, & ſhewed to them his purpoſe/ gyuyng vnto the erle of Artoyes the ledynge of hys forewarde / & charged hym ꝑ whan he were paſſed the foorde, that he ſhuld tary there tyll ꝑ other deale of the hoſt were ouer paſſed. whan al thynges was ordered to the kynges mynde / the ſayd erle with hys com= pany ſet forthwarde, and paſſed the ſayd foorde wythout daunger / and there forgettynge what to hym was before commaunded of the kynge, ſet forth incontynētly towarde the Tur kes, whyche he weale knewe kepte ꝑ place where the brydge was before made. And there faughte with theym which were al vnpurueyed, & vnkno wynge of hys ſodeyne commynge. wherfore he ſlewe many of theym / & after chaſed the other, whyche for ſo= coure fledde vnto the cytye of Baſ= ſour foreſayd/ whome he folowed ſo egerly, that in ꝑ entryng of the cytye he entred with theym, and there was ſlayne with a certayn of hys knyghy= tes. By reaſon wherof ꝑ Soldyours of the towne were ſo encoraged, that they iſſued out vpon the cryſten and draue them backe tyll they ſawe the kynges power come / & then retour= ned to the cytye & ſhytte with strēgth theyr gates. Thā kyng Lowis beīng aſcertayned of the ſayd erles dethe, made for hym great dole. And after prouyſyon made for the lodgynge of hys people/ he thē made dyuers brȳd ges & paſſages ouer ꝑ ryuer of Tha= noyes. And for the cryſten hoſt ſhuld be aſſured frō the ſodayne & vnware aſſautes & reprochys of ꝑ infydelies/ therfore he cloſed theym wythin a ſtrength of a dyche & pale, that theyr enemyes myght no waye haue waye into them / & named that strengthe a park. In the whyche the cryſten hoſt there lodged all the ſeaſon of Lent.

In ꝑ whych tyme ꝑ prīce Sowdā came downe wyth a great hoſt of peo ple. And for he myght nat lodge hys people within the towne / therfore he made an other lyke parke vnto the criſten men, & there cloſed hys peple/ ſo that betwene the cryſten and them was many conflyctes and aſſautes / ſomtyme to the loſſe of that one, and eft to the loſſe of that other. But the Sowdane made all the meanes he myght to kepe vytayll frome the cry= ſten hooſt/ & ſtopped all the paſſages betwene Damaſſe & them, that from thēs they myght haue no ſocour. By meane wherof dyſeaſes & ſykeneſſe

fyll amonge the cryſten, ſo that they dyed hougely.

When kynge Lowys was ware of theſe miſeries on euery ſyde, he ſente to the Sowdane to haue a truce for a certayne tyme. But in concluſion none wolde be to hym graũted. wher for of neceſſyte he was forced to bꝛeke hys felde, & wyth as good polycy as he myght dꝛewe hym to the ryuer of Nylus / & ſo by ſhyp paſſed downe by the ſayd ryuer towarde Damaſſe. But he paſſed nat ferre or ỹ he was aſſauted on euery ſyde / ſo ỹ the fight contynued ſtyll without ſeaſynge, to the great loſſe of the cryſten hoſt.

Kynge Lewys taken of ỹ Turke

Then laſtly came the Sowdane with a freſſhe cõpany / & beſet ỹ kyng ſo about, that in the ende he was taken, wyth hys .ii. bꝛetherne Charles & Robert, the erle of Poytyers, ỹ erle of Angeou, the erle of Flaunders, the duke of Bꝛytayne, the erle of Soyſõs. And in ỹ fyght was ſlayne / ỹ byſſhoppes of Langrees, & of Soyſons with many other of whome ỹ names be nat put in wꝛyttynge.

When kyng Lowys was thus take he was ſyke. wherfoꝛe with all dylygence the Sowdan cõmaunded hym to be conueyed vnto Maſſoure / and after cauſed all the other of hys men to be ſlayne as many as were wounded oꝛ ſyke, excepte they were men of great fame, by whome great aduauntage myghte ryſe by reaſon of theyꝛ raunſome. And thus was the cryſten hoſt take & ſpoyled of the Sarazyns the thurſday next folowyng the feaſt of Eaſter, in the yere of our loꝛd. M. ii. C. l. and the .xxiiii. yere of ỹ reygne of thys kynge Lowys. The whyche after wyth the other of the nobles of Fraunce were ſent vnto Babylon oꝛ Cayer / & there kept in ſõdꝛy pꝛyſõs.

IN pꝛoceſſe of tyme it was agreed, that kyng Lowis ſhuld be delyuered fro pꝛyſon & conueyed ſaufly into the handes of cryſtẽdome vpon condycyon that he ſhulde fyꝛſt render and gyue vp into the Sowdans power the cytye of Damaſſe, wyth all ſuche pꝛyſoners as he had of Turkes and Sarazyns at that daye in hys power / and ouer that he ſhulde yelde by a certayne daye a certayne ſumme of beſauntes, whyche after the frenche boke ſhulde be. viii. M. Beſauntes Sarazyn. But Peter Dyſtroy ſayth. iii. C. M. Beſauntes.

Of theſe Beſauntes I haue lerned there ſhuld be. ii. That one is called a Bezaunde Imperyall, and the other a Bezaunte Ducall. The Bezaunde Imperyall is woꝛth. l. ducates, & the Ducal Bezaunde is woꝛth xx. ducates. A ducate whyche is named a ducat de camera, is woꝛth. iiii. ſ. viii. d. A ducat Papall & Uenyziã be of laſſe value, as. iii. d. oꝛ. iiii. d in a pece. Then yf hys raunſome be eſtemyd after ỹ imperyall Bezaunde, he payde after the rate of. iiii. s. vi. d. the ducate, and after the ſumme of. viii. M. Bezaundes in ſterlynge money lxxx. M. li. And foꝛ thys the Sowdane pꝛompſed to delyuer all ſuche pꝛyſoners as he had in hys pꝛyſons of cryſtẽ men. But in ỹ he bꝛake pꝛomyſe / foꝛ of. xii. thouſande he deliuered ſcarſly. iii. In thys tyme of takynge of the Frenche kynge / a company of ponge men aſſembled theym togyder in Fraũce / and vnder theyꝛ cappytayne, whyche toke vppon hym lyke a byſſhoppe, paſſed by Parys & Oꝛleaunce and other good townes of Fraunce, ſayeng that they wolde reſtoꝛe the kynge to hys lybertye. But laſtely whan they dꝛewe nere to the poꝛte of the deed ſee, where they ſhulde haue taken ſhyppynge / there they fyll to all thefte and auoutry. wherfoꝛe the people of that coũtre ſette vppon theym, and ſlewe theyꝛ

theyr capytayne and the more parte of theyr cõpany where thorugh that symple felefyp whyche named them selfe Shepherdes, was dysseuered & sparkelyd. whan thys blessed kyng Lowys was delyuered from the daũger of hys enemyes, & was brought out of Egypte into Syrye / he there executed many dedes of charyte and of mekenes, and repayred the cytye of Joppen and other standyng vpon the see syde/and from thens went on pylgrymage vnto Nazareth, and to the mount of Thabor. And when he was retourned vnto Joppen / he receyued there tydynges of the deth of dame Blãch his mother. where after dyuers obseruaũces & prayers done for the soule of hys mother / he toke there shyppynge and sayled towarde Fraunce. And nat withoute trauayle and trouble of the see, at the ende of xii. wekes he landed in the Hauen of Marcyll or Martyll/and so sped his iournay that he came to Parys, in ỹ yere of our lorde. xii. C. and. liiii. and the. vi yere after that he toke vppon hym the voyage / where of the cytezeyns he was receyued wyth mooste honoure and gladnes. And there callynge a coũsayl/ he reformed many thynges for the weale of hys realme, & made one lawe whych is specyally remẽbred/that is that no man beyng in auctorytye of any hygh offyce, as Prouost, Pretour, or any lyke office, shuld bye any landes or rẽtes within that lordshype ỹ he had rule of. And for that cause that he shuld nat extort or wronge, or bye suche landes ỹ better chepe by reason of hys myghte or power.

At thys day the Prouosty or chyef rule or offyce was in the handes of ỹ cytezeyns of Parys, by reason of a seale therof made to theym by the kynges progenytours. By meane wherof many iniuryes and wronges were done vnto the common people, and many thefys and other transgressours by fauoure and money passed vnpunysshed. wherof thys blessed kynge Lowys beyng enfourmed vpon suffycyent proffe made, dyscharged the cytezeyns therof / and assygned a man named Stephan Boyle in that offyce/ assygnynge to hym yerely a certayne stipend for executyng of that office/and ordeyned that euer after, the Prouost of Parys shuld be named by the kynge and hys heyres kynges.

He also made ordenaunces to auoyde strumpettes out of the cytye, and punysshement for all accustomable great swerers/ wyth many other good ordenaunces and lawes, the whyche I passe ouer for lengthynge of the tyme.

In this tyme and season were abydynge in Fraunce in a place called saynt Nicholas de Boys. iii. chyldrẽ borne in Flaundres/the whych were sent thyder to lern ỹ maner of fraũce & also to teche ỹ chyldrẽ of a knyghte named syr Guyllm de Bzunz to shot. These chyldrẽ vpon a season passed the boũdes of the abbey groũde & entred the warrayn of a lord of Fraũce called Enguerran lorde of Coucy, & there chased and shote at Conyes for theyr disport. The whych were there takẽ of the seruaũtes of the sayd Enguerran, & presented to theyr lorde/ ỹ whych of hasty cruelnesse caused the iii. chyldrẽ without pyte to be hãged. wherof herynge ỹ Abbot of saint Nycholas, cõplayned hym with the assystẽce of ỹ forsayd syr Guillm vnto the kyng. The whych incõtynẽtly sẽt to the sayd Enguerrã, charging hym to apere before hys barony, to answere to such matters as there shuld be layd vnto his charge. wher in ỹ ende after many reasõs for hym layde / he by great instãce of hys frendes was

pardoned of ỹ greuous offence wyth cõdicion folowyng/that is to meane fyrſt he ſhuld pay vnto the kynge.x. M.li.of Parys money, whych is to meane.xii.C.li.ſterling.And ouer that he ſhuld warre vpõ goddes enemyes in Syria by the ſpace of.iii. yeres contynually,vpon hys owne coſt and charge. And thyrdely he ſhulde buylde a chapel wherin two preeſtes ſhuld ſynge for euer,for the ſoules of the ſayd infauntes.Or after mayſter Gagwyne,with the forſayd.x.M.li. & other ayde of the kynge/the hoſpytall in Parys named ỹ houſe of god in Pontoyſe, with the frayter of the freer minors or gray freers in Paris were made and repayred.

Than after many dedes of charite done by this vertuous prince/as makynge of dyuers houſes of relygyon ſeruyng of the poore people wyth his owne handes,with faſtinges & other inkynyte dedes of pytye: he laſtly in the.xxxiii.yere of hys reygne honourably receyued Hẽry the.iii.thã kyng of Englande/ and ſtablyſſhed with hym a peas as before in the.xliiii.yere of the reygne of the ſayd Henry is declared.

And that done/he in the.xxvi.yere of hys reygne,maryed hys eldeſt ſon Phylyp vnto Iſabell the doughter of Iamys kyng of Aragon. By reaſon of whyche maryage / the frenſhe kyng gaue ouer to the ſayd Iamys, all ſuche ryght as he had in the lordſhyppes of Beſac,Dampierre,Rouſſelion,and Barſellon.And the ſayde Iamys acquyted & gaue ouer to Lowys, all ſuche ryghte and tytle as he had in the lordſhyppes of Carcaſſon, of Bygorre,and of Anilly.

And ſoone after he ſente Charles hys brother at the requeſt of the.iiii. Alexandre than pope, into Cicilia with a great power, to withſtande ỹ vyolence of Manfrede ſonne of Frederyke the ſecond than Emperoure/ the whych agayne ryghte withheelde that kyngdome frome the chyrche of Rome. whome Charles after longe fyght, at a place named Boneuente ſlewe in batayll/and after was made kyng of the ſayd countre by auctorytye of the ſayde pope Alexander / payenge yerely vnto the chyrche of Rome.xl.M.ducates,which is moch lyke after the rate of ſterlyng money viii.M. vi.C.lxvi.li.xiii.ſ.iiii.d. euery ducat accõpted at.iiii.ſ.iiii.d.

It fyll ſo after, that in the.xlii. yere of kynge Lowys / Pope Clement the.iiii.of that name, ſent a legate vnto Lowys,requyryng hym to ayde the cryſten whyche in Syria were greuouſly warred with ỹ Turkes and Sarazyns.At whoſe requeſt the kyng called a counſayll / wherin it was agreed ỹ ſocour ſhuld be made wherfore the kynge with hys.iii.ſonnes,Phylyp,Johñ,& Peter, toke on them the croſſe. And in the fyrſte day of May,the yere of hys reygne.xliii/ he with hys ſayde ſonnes and many other lordes of Fraunce as well ſpirytuall as temporall,departed from Parys / and frome thens rode vnto Cluny,where he reſted hym.iiii.days And from thẽs ſped hys iourney tyll he came to the forenamed porte of ỹ deed ſee.where mette with hym a cardynall and legate of Rome,with dyuers other byſſhoppes of Fraunce, the kyng of Nauarne,the dukes ſon of Bryttayn,Alphõs erle of Poytiers the erles of Artoys and of Flaũdres, with many other.

And whyle the kynge wyth hys hooſt laye at the ſayde porte tarryeng a conuenable wynde / a dyſſencyon fyll betwene the Catholeynes and the men of Prouynce / ſo that amonge theym was foughten ſuche a ſkyrmyſſhe, that betwene theym was

was slayne vppon a hondreth men/ and many mo wounded or the stryke myght be all sessed.

Soone after the kynge wyth hys lordes toke shyppynge / and sayled with great daunger of tempest, tyll lastly he came to the ile of Sardynes where the cristen host rested theym a season/and after kept theyr cours til they came to the porte of Thunys or Cartage, the.xviii.day of the moneth of Julii / where they rested in theyr shyppes that nyght. Upō the morne whan they shuld landē / all the porte was beset with Turkes and infydeles, whych shotte dartes and kast stones, to the greuaunce of the cristen host/ so that they wanne lande wyth great dyffyculte & payne.

whan the kynge was landed, he lodged hys people / and after sent to serche for fresshe water to refresshe with hys hoost. In whyche meane whyle the Admyrall of the kynges nauy came vnto the kynge / requyryng hi to haue a certayne of knyghtes assygned vnto hym/trustynge in god to wynshortly the towne. And so sped hym, and assauted the towne. But anone as the capptayne of the towne was ware of theyr commyng/ he with a great company issued oute of the towne, and forced the cristen hoost to gyue backe. wherfore kynge Lowys sent the Marshal of hys hoost with a certayne nombre of knyghtes to socoure the sayd Admyrall/and in tyme of the fyght gatte betwene the Sarazyns and the towne/ so that whyle some faught with the Turkes the other wanne the towne / wherof the Turkes beynge ware fled soone after/but nat without great slaughter of thē. For after that fyght, many of theym whyche escaped frō the batayll, were after slayne in cauernys and holes where they hyd theym in the grounde. whan the towne of Cartage or Thunis was by ỹ cristē thus wonne/anone the kynge commaunded the dede bodyes to be caste out, & the towne to be clēsyd of all ordours and fylthes. And when all was done as the kynge had commaunded / he then entred the towne, and lodged within as many as the towne wolde holde. And ỹ other he fortyfyed with dyches and other strengthes, to preserue them from theyr enemyes /and so taryed there the cōmyng of Charles hys brother and kyng of Cycilia. It was nat lōge after that the cytye or towne was wonne, but ỹ the kyng of Thunys with a great host of Turkes came nere to the towne, & made showys & offers / but they abode not therby. One day the erle of Artoys in one company, and a knyghte called syr Peter Cabellanc in an other compayne/gatte betwene the see and the Turkes that they were compelled to fyght/ so that betwene theym was a cruell fyghte, & many slayne vppō both sydes. But in the ende the Turkes were scomfyted & chaced to theyr shyppes. In thys fyghte were slayne ii.cristen knyghtes, named le Chaste layn and syr Johñ de Ronssoylyers. After thys batayll or fyght/the Sarazyns made no great assautes. But thē by reason of the vnholsomnes of that countre, sykenes fyll amonge ỹ cristen hoost/so that the people dyed faste. And shortly after the kyng was takē with suche a flixe, and therwith an agu that he kept hys bedde. And after the xyghtes of the chyrche takē, and certayne monycyons gyuen to hys sonne Philyp how he shulde behaue hym in gydynge of the realme of Fraunce / knowynge the houre of dethe approched, charged suche as were aboute hym that they shuld lay hym vpon a bed of asshes & powdre. where he so lyeng a season in prayer expyred, the day folowyng saint Bar

tholomeus day, or the .xxb. day of Auguſt, when he had reygned .xliiii. yeres lackynge .ii. monethes / leuynge after hym the .iii. forenamed ſonnes Phylyp, Johñ, & Peter. Thē the Bowelys were buryed in Cecilia / and the body enbawmed with ryche oyntementes, was recaryed vnto ſaynte Denys of Fraūce, & therwith greate reuerence enterred. The whych after for hys myracles, of ỹ. vii. Bonyface was ſette amonge the nombre of ſayntes.

Phylyp the thyrde of that name, and ſonne of ſaynt Lowys / beganne his reygne ouer the realme of Fraūce the .xxvi. daye of ỹ moneth of September, in the yere of our lord .xii. C. lxx. and the .liiii. yere of Henry the .iii. than kynge of Englande / and began than as before is ſhewed in Affrica, at the towne or cytye of Thunys or Cartage / accōpanyed with Charles hys vncle kynge of Cycyll, the whych came to ỹ porte of Thunys the ſame day that kynge Lowys dyed / & after tarryed there & had many conflictes wyth the Turkes / and bare hym ſo manfully, that in the ende he forced ỹ kynge of Thunys to ſeche to hym for a peas. The which was cōcluded for .x. yeres with certayne condycyōs of payeng of certayne money for ỹ kynge of Fraūces coſtes, and certayne trowages of old tyme due vnto the kyng of Cycyll yerely to be payde / with many other artycles concernynge the ſame peace whyche I paſſe ouer.

After whyche peas concluded and aſſured / the kynges of Fraunce and Cycyll toke ſhyppynge at the ſayde porte of Thunys, & ſayled towarde theyr countrees with great daunger of tempeſt of the ſee / & in proceſſe of tyme landed in Cycyll, where Phylip with greate reuerence & obſeruaūce in mount Royall buryed ỹ bowelles of his father. And ỹ done he toke his iourney towarde Fraunce thorughe Italy. In whyche iourney dyed Iſabell hys wyfe, & ỹ kyng of Nauerne & Mary hys wyfe, with many other to the nombre of .iii. M. and mo.

Laſtly the kyng came vnto the cyty of Viterbe / where the cardynalles & other ſpyrytuall men were in counſayll for the chooſyng of a newe pope. For at ỹ tyme the ſee was voyde by the deth of Clement the .iiii. But that eleccion was ſo dyuers, that .ii. yeres erpyred or they myght agree vpon a new paſtor. And thā they agreed vpō Theobalde archidiacon of Landēſſe named after the .x. Gregory.

Frō Viterbe the kyng rode to the moūt of Flaſtoñ, & ſo ouer to the coūtre of Tuſcayne, & ſo to the mount of Bergue, & then to ỹ cytye of Florēce & from thens to Boloyng le Gryſſe and frō thens to Cremoygñ, where ỹ kynges officers were nat all well entreated. In recōpenſement wherof / ỹ mayre & burgeyſes of that towne preſented the kyng with .vii. ſtedes trapped in cloth of ſylke & other preſētes whych the kyng with curteys & thāk full wordes refuſed. Then frō thens the kyng departed to Milan, & from Milan to Annergeaur, and ſo to Suſane a cytye of Sauoy / and after paſſed the moūtaygnes, & ſo into the valys of Moryen / and frō thens tourned towarde the cytye of Lyōs vpon Roſne, and ſo to the cytye of Maſtō in Burgoyñ / and paſſed ỹ coūtre tyl they came to the abbey of Cluny, and frō thens into the coūtre of Chāpayn & ſo to the city of Trois / and frō thēs paſſed the countrees, tyll he came to the lordſhype of Parys, and ſo into the cytye of Parys.

Here

Here I passe ouer the great prouysyon made by the cytesyns of Parys for the receyuynge of theyr pryncys/ ỹ is to mene, the corps of Lewys, and theyr naturall prynce Phylyppe hys son/ and of the obseruaunces done, and great assembles of the lordes spirytuall and temporall to welcome theyr prynce, and doynge of theyr duties euery man accordyng to honour. But after al these ceremonies in due order fynyshed/ prouysyon was made for the coronacyon of the kynge. The whyche was crowned at the cyty of Raynes, vppon the daye of the assumpcyon of our lady, in the yere of grace. xii. hundred. lxxi.

SHortely after that the solempnyte of this coronacyon was passed, kynge Phylyppe for his recreacyon rode into the countrey of Vermendoyse. where after he hadde restyd hym a season / Robert erle of Artoys requyred hym to vysyte hys countrey. where he was receyuyd of the burgeysys of Artoys wyth great honour and gladnes/ and there was feastyd with all disport and gladnes by a certayne of tyme after. The whiche erpyred, he returned into Fraũce

About the thyrde yere of his reygne/ the erle of Foys contrary ỹ kynges pleasure, toke partye agayn Gerarde a knyght & lorde of the castell of Casseboun or Casseboun/ ỹ which before had slayn ỹ brother of the erle of Armenac specyall frēd of the sayd erle of Foys. whyche sayde two erles to reuenge the deth of theyr sayd brother, pursued the sayde Gerarde so narrowly, that for his sauegarde he refused his owne castell, and fled vnto a castell of the kynges / and there helde hym wyth his wyfe, chyldren, and substaũce. But when the two erles were ware therof/ they sped them thyder wyth theyr powers. and layd syege to the castell / and in the ende threwe it downe to the grounde, and slewe all the souldyours that they there founde, as well the kynges seruauntes as other, hoppynge to haue founde theyr enymye Gerarde, the whyche was escapyd thens secretly.

When the rumour of this dede came vnto the kynge / he dysdayned sore that dede, and toke yt ryght greuously. In so myche that he called hys lordes, and by theyr counsayll assembled hys knyghtes, and entred wyth force the prouince of the erle of Foys. The whyche herynge of the kynges great dysplesure/ fortyfyed hys castell and there helde hym. The which was so besette wyth rokkes of stone, that the kynge myght not wynne to yt wyth ease. wherfore the kynge cõmaunded the rokkes to be cutte with masons and other worke men/ & made a solempne othe, that he wold not depart thens or he hadde the erle and his castell at his pleasure.

When the erle hadde beholden the great power of his enymyes, and the prouysyon of the kyng to wynne his castell, wyth other ieopardyes / he made meanes to the kynge for grace and fynally putte hym and his into his mercy. Then the kynge commaũded hym to be bounde, and so to be conueyed to the castell of Beauquesu, where he was imprysoned by an hole yere after. And the kynge seased all hys landes, and set a certayne of hys knyghtes to kepe hys castell/ and caryed hys wyfe and chyldren wyth hym into Fraunce. But after a yere runne / the kynge was so laboured to by the frendes of the sayd erle, that he was enlarged from prysyon, and vppon suertye suffred to serue in the kynges courte. where he bare hym so well, ỹ fynally the kyng made hym knyght, & restored hym to all his lãdes. But what fyll of ỹ erle of Armenac the story sheweth not.

Aboute the.vi. yere of his reygne/ kynge Phylyppe maryed Mary the doughter of the erle of Burbon, or after some the doughter of Johan the duke of Braban/the whych he loued entyerly. wherof Peter de Brosse then beynge lorde chamberlayne, haupnge enuy and disdayn/sought the wayes and meanes to mynysshe the great loue betwene her lord and her/ and fonde by his meane that a sonne of ỹ kynges named Lewys was pry-soned, the whyche dede he by subtyle & secrete meanes, as though yt had nothyng comen of hym, layde yt to ỹ charge of the quene. For this ỹ kyng made many maner of inquysycyons as well by sorcery as other. But in al his workes he found his quene gyltlesse. wherfore he sufferyd the mater to passe, tyll he myght haue more assured proffe in that mater.

Aboute thys season Ferdinandus kynge of Castyle, that before tyme hadde maryed Blanche doughter of sayntLewis, dyed/leuyng after hym two sonnes borne of ỹ sayd Blanch, named Ferdinande and Alphons/ whych by couenaunt at the mariage made shulde be heyres vnto the kyngdome of Spayne and Castyle. But the father of this Ferdinande so beynge dede/contrary hys honour and promise, wrote vnto the lordes of Castyle/ amonestynge theym that they shulde admytte for theyr kynge hys seconde son named Sãryon or Sanrio, and swere to hym both feautye & homage. The whyche was all done accordyng to hys commaundement/ so that Blanche was dyspoynted of her dower, and her chyldern of theyr ryght and enherytaũce. For ỹ which kyng Phylyppe her brother was greuously dyscontẽtyd/ and for reformacyon therof sente vnto the kynge of Spayn his chefe boteler wyth other, desyryng hym to perfourme all such couenaũtes as betwene hym and his fader were cõcluded, at the maryage of his syster Blanche/ or at the laste yf that he refusyd ỹ to do, ỹ he wold sende hys sayde syster wyth her two chyldern sauely into Fraunce. In cõclusyon ỹ mother wyth her two chyldern were brought by the sayde boteler vnto the kynge, wythoute other pleasure other in worde or in dede.

For the whyche he the yere folokyng gaderyd a stronge hoste, and passed wyth theym by Poyteau and Gascoyne, tyll he came vnto a towne toynynge to the border of Spayne named Sainterre/where the kyng met a nother party of his hoste. There by counsayll of some of his lordes, the kynge concluded to retourne into Fraunce, for daunger of wynter that was cõmynge and other hyd causes. But the rumour in the hoste went, ỹ some of the kynges counsayll hadde receyued rewardes of the kynge of Spayn. By meane wherof the kyng loste that iourney, and returned into Fraunce to his great dyshonour and damage.

In tyme of kynge Phylyppes returne into Fraunce/ tydynges were broughte to hym, that Eustace de Beau Marche, whom the kyng had appointed to haue the gydyng of the countrey or kyngdome of Nauarye/ was besyeged in the cityе of Pampulyne. wherfore ỹ kyng cõmaunded ỹ erle of Artoys to spede hym thyder, to rescowe the sayde Eustace. The whyche behauyd hym so manfully, that he rescowed the sayde Eustace/ and chasyd Garsymerans chefe styrrer of that rebellion, and brought the people of that countrey agayne to due subiectyon. whyle the erle of Artoys was thus occcuppyd in the sayd countrey/ messangers came to hym from the kynge of Spayne/ requyrynge hym sene that he was so nere,

that he

that he was so nere, ỹ he wold come & dispoꝛt him there foꝛ a seaſon. wher of ỹ erle of Artoys sent kyng Philip woꝛde/ & hauyng of hym lycẽce yode vnto the sayd kyng of Spayn, as to his nere kynnesmã/ & there dispoꝛted him a certayn of tyme to his great cõ solaciõ. In which seaſon diuers letters came out of Fraũce frõ some of ỹ kinges coũsall. By reaſon wherof ỹ kynge of Spayne was infoꝛmed of mych of the frẽche kinges coũsayll. which letters he shewed vnto ỹ erle of Artoys/ sayẽg ỹ he was not without frẽdes in Fraũce. But he wold not disclose what pſons they were. whẽ the erle had taryed in Spayn a cõpetent seaſõ/ he toke leue of ỹ king, & depted with great giftes/ & so sped hym, ỹ in ꝓceſſe of tyme he cam vnto ỹ king of Fraũce/ & at cõuenient leyſer shewed vnto hym of the letters shewed vnto him by ỹ kyng of Spayn/ wherof the king was not a litle ameruayled. It was not lõgeafter ỹ a currour oꝛ meſsanger, which vſed to bere letters frõ Pet deBꝛoſh vnto ỹ king of Spayn fyll syke at an abbay. where when he knew he shuld die/ were it by exoꝛtacion of his goſtly fader oꝛ otherwyſe, hecalled to hym ỹ abbot oꝛ hed of ỹ houſe/ chargyng him ỹ he wold delyuer such letters as he there had vnto ỹ frẽche kyngꝛ own pſon/ & after dyed. After whoſe deth ỹ said religyous man in cõuenyet haſt sped hym vnto ỹ kinges court, & pꝛeſented him with the sayd letters/ shewyng vnto him ỹ mynde of ỹ sayd meſſanger. which letters when the kyng had vnclosyd/ he anon knew ỹ his chãberlayne Peter de Bꝛoſhe was the diſcloſer of all his coũsaylles. wherfoꝛe foꝛthwith he cõmaũded ỹ said Peter to be had vnder sauke keppyng. wherof heryng the byſshop of Bayon fled streyght ỹ lande, & so yode vnto Rome. The kynge thẽ yode vnto Paris/ where he called a coũsayl of his loꝛdes to exampyne ỹ sayd Peter. where finally he was iudged to be hãged. After which iudgemẽt he was cõmytted vnto ward, tyll ỹ moꝛow folowyng. At which seaſon long befoꝛe the son ryſyng/ ỹ duke of Burgoyn, the duke of Bꝛaban, the erle of Artoys, with ỹ pꝛouoſt of Paris, came vnto the gayole, & there receyued the said Peter, & saw him hanged oꝛ the sonne were vp.

IT was not long after ỹ Peter was thus put to deth, but meanes were made betwene theſe. ii. kynges/ so that a day of metyng was appoynted, ỹ the said kyngꝛ shuld mete to haue cõmunycacion foꝛ the mater cõcernyng the wꝛõges done to dame Blanche & her. ii. chyldꝛen befoꝛenamed. wherfoꝛe ỹ king of Spayn cam vnto ỹ citie of Bayon/ & king Philip to a town in ỹ pꝛouynce of Tholouſe named Moũt marchaũt. where theſe two pꝛinces beyng in cõmunicacyon of ỹ foꝛesayd mater/ certayn meſſangers cam to thẽ frõ ỹ pope then Martyne ỹ. iiii/ chargyng them vpõ payn of fallyng into ỹ cẽſures of ỹ chirch, that they agree & fall vnto accoꝛde, that warre betwen theym be not exercyſed. By reaſon wherof kyng Philyp remitted the mater to ỹ pope, & returned vnto Tholouſe. where mette him the kyng of Aragon named Peter. The which after he had there taryed with kyng Philip a tyme at his pleaſure/ he toke his leue of ỹ kynge & after went into Catholoyne, where he met with Cõſtance his wife & doughter of Manfred ſomtyme kyng of Scycyll/ ỹ which was pꝛyued of his lyke & kyngdome by Charles bꝛoder of saint Lewis, as befoꝛe in ỹ. iiii. chapyter of the ſtoꝛye of sayn Lewys is shoꝛtly touched. This Cõſtance in all ỹ she might exoꝛted her huſbãd to gader his people, & to enter ỹ land of Scicill, aſcertaynyng him ỹ ỹ Scicilyens

lyens wolde take his partye agayne Charles, for so myche as they well knew that she was rightfull heyre to that kyngdome.

In thys tyme and season whyche was the .x. yere of kynge Philippe/ the ryuer of Sayne rose of suche an hyght, that yt compassed the cytye of Parys in suche wyse, that no man myght come thyther wythoute bote or barge. And the water passed wyth suche vyolence, that yt brake vi. arches of the great brydge of Parys, and one of the small brydges.

Then let vs turne to ỹ kyng of Aragon, whych by incensyng of his wyfe gadered his peple/ and vnder colour that he wold haue gone agaynste the Turkes, hadde graunte of the pope to receyue ỹ dymes of his owne land for certayne yeres. whyle this was in doynge/ he sent certayne persones into Scycyle to see the state of that countrey. The whyche made confederacyes wyth dyuers great men of Scycylyens/ and ouer that brought wyth theym dyuers of the rulers to the presence of ỹ kynge. wyth whom the sayd Peter made certayn appoyntementes/ and after retourned them into Scycyle. where after they re-turne, they counsayled so wyth theyr rulers of Palermo, and Messene, & of other cytyes, that in one nyght all the Frenche men in Scycylle were slayne/ and after in most cruell wyse slewe the women as wel those ỹ were wyth chylde as other, and lefte few or none of the Frenche men in all the chefe cytyes or townes of Scicyll on lyue. whē tydynges of this myschyef was brought vnto Charles beynge then in the countrey of Angeou / he sent messangers vnto the pope Martyne the .iiii./ requyrynge his ayde to defende his enymyes. The whych in all hast sent vnto Palermo ỹ bysshop of sayncte Sabyne, to charge the cytesyns vppon payne of cursynge, to obey vnto Charles for theyr kyng & to none other. But the rulers of Palermo and also of Messene wold not suffer the sayd bysshoppe to passe any farther. And also sayde that Peter was entred the countrey, of whome they wolde holde and on none other/ wyth whyche answere he was fayne to retourne.

In this whyle Charles hadde sent vnto his neuew Philippe kynge of Fraūce/ the whyche wyth his power to reuoke Peter from Scycyll, enteryd the lande of Aragon by Purpunyan/ and toke the cytye of Jeane. In whyche passe tyme Charles entred Scycyl, and besyeged Messene. But the towne was so strongely fortyfyed, that he loste there his labour. wherfore he left that syege, and yode into the playnes of sayncte Martyne/ and there taryed the cōmynge of hys son then prynce of Salerne. The pope thē accursed Peter, for as mich as certayne worde was broughte to hym that he hadde proclaymed hym selfe kynge of Scycyll. And to the entent to styre the more people agayne hym / he gaue his lande of Aragon vnto Charlys erle of Valoys & son of kynge Philyp of Fraunce.

When Philippe as before is sayde kynge of Fraūce had won Jeane/ for as myche as the ways towarde Aragon were harde to passe, as well for prouysyons made by the enmyes as otherwyse/ the kyng therfore sought great aduyse how he myght with lest daunger wyn to his enymyes. And after many meanes sought/ a Russylyan was broughte vnto the kynges presence/ the whyche assured ỹ kyng to gyde him away into Aragon without the daunger of his enymyes. wherof the kynge beynge glad promysed to the sayde Russylyan fredome and lybertye with other great re-

wardes

wardys, whyche then stode as pryso ner to the Frenche men. After whych prompte made/ the kyng put hym & the more parte of his hoste vnder the ledynge of the sayd Russylyan. And for to blynde ỹ more his enymyes/ he sent a parte of his hoste towarde the mountaynes, to make a shewe as though all the hoste hadde passed the same waye. whyen kynge Phylyp had orderyd all thynge after his mynde, he cõmaunded the forewarde of hys people to folowe the sayd Russylyan/ the whyche brought theym a strayte and narrow way, all to growen with wood & bussyes to the kynges great trauayle and all hys. But fynally he brought them into the playns where theyr enmyes lay, so that they made prouysyon in orderynge of theyr people to set vppon the Aragons. wherof the Aragons beynge ware/ suppo synge the Frenche men myght not so lyghtly haue wonne vnto theym, beynge then oute of aray and dyspurueyed to fyght, fled vnto the next holdes/ leuyng to ỹ Frenche men mych of theyr vytayll and harneys.

When kynge Phylyp had sene that his enmyes had forsaken theyr feld/ he restyd hym there a seasõn after his trauayle/ and after yode to a towne named Pyerlaat and besyeged yt. wherof the soudyours after they had a seasõn defended that towne/ in the deade of the night fyred ỹ sayd town And departed when they had done. But the Frenche men wan shortely into the town and quenched the fyre. and after the kyng had manned and vytaylled yt/ he then went to a town named Gozon, and layde his syege there about/ where he lay long after.

WE haue harde in the precedynge yere, howe Charles kynge of Scycyll laye in the playnes of saynte Martyne, there abydynge the commynge of his son the prynce of Salerne. whyther lastely cam vnto hym his sayde son, the duke of Burgoyn, the erle of Alanson, Peter brother to kyng Phylyp, Robert erle of Artoys the erles of Dampmartyne, & of Bolygygne, wyth the lorde of Mounte Morency, and many other nobles of Fraunce and Burgoyne. After commyng of which lordes/ Charles with baner dysplayed sped hym towarde his enymyes, and so passed the lande of Calabre wythout fyght/ and sente his son to Naples with a part of his hoste/ and hym selfe kept on his iourney tyll he came vnto Broundyce. where he herynge of the great purueyaũce that Peter kyng of Aragon had made of hyppes, to saple toward the lande of Naples/ sent certayn letters vnto the prynce his sonne, that in no wise he shuld set vppon his enmyes/ but kepe hym within the cytye of Naples, tyll he sent vnto hym such shyppes and galeys as he then had redy mãned to be sent vnto hym from the hauen of Marcylle. whych messanger & letters were taken wyth ỹ Aragons/ by reason wherof they knewe mych of kynge Charles counsayll.

It was not longe after or the nauaye of the kynge of Aragons wyth great tryumphe and pryde came vnto Naples/ & prouokyd so ỹ Frenche men to fyght, that lastely the prynce wyth suche shyppes and companye as he myght make, made out vppon them, and fought wyth them a long fyghte. But in the ende the Frenche men were betyn and ouercomen, and the prynce wyth the more partye of his shyppes taken, and sent to Constaunce quene of Aragon/ and remayned longe after vndelyueryd wyth many other prysoners.

To mych haste is cause of repẽtaũce

wythin a shorte seasõn after this scõsture Charlys cam vnto Naples/ by which

whych tyme myche of the town was tourned agayn hym, so that the most parte of the French soudyours were slayne and fled the towne. wherfore after that Charlys was entred he punyshed them ryght cruelly, by diuers maner of tourmentes. And when he hadde done there his wyll, he retourned into Calabre/ where mette wyth hym Robert erle of Artoys. where they toke theyr counsayll howe they might passe the water of Phaar, and to laye theyr syege vnto the cytye of Messene. But for dyuers causes he was counsayled to the contrarye/ so that he toke shyppynge at an hauen called Brandyse. But or hys people were all shyppyd / suche a sykenesse toke hym, that he was hadde agayn to lande and dyed shortely after, not wythoute suspeccyon of venyme. whose corps was then conueyed to Naples, and there buried, in the yere of our lorde .xxii. hundred & .lxxxiiii, and the. xiiii. yere of the reygne of Phylyppe his neuewe then kynge of Fraunce. Of whyche tydynges Peter kynge of Aragon reioysed not a lytell, when word therof to hym was brought/ the whyche before that tyme had betaken the rule of the lande of Scycyll to Constaunce hys wyfe then beynge in the citye of Palermo. And he hym selfe wyth a stronge naue sayled into Aragon for to rescow the cytye of Geron, whych was besyged of kynge Phylyppe as ye before haue harde. And when he wyth hys people were there landid/ he toke his counsayll how he myght most greue the Frenche hoste. Fynally he concluded that he wolde make a busshemēt wyth a certayne nomber of his knyghtes/ and lye in awayte to take the vytayll that was brought to the host from the porte of Russylyan/ whyche porte was foure myles frō the Frēch hoste. Vppon whyche conclusyon so taken/ he wyth two thousande chosen mē, lodged them where the pray shulde passe, and was espyed of the Frenche men. wherof beynge warned the constable of Fraūce, & syr Johon Harcourt thē marshal of ỹ hoste toke wyth them the erle of Marches wyth dyuers other knyghtes to the nomber of .v. hundred speres, wyth a certayne of fotemen, and went towarde theyr ennmyes. But when they came nere vnto theym, and saw they were so many in nomber / they feryd to set forthwarde, tyll they were comforted by the wordes of a knyghte in theyr companye called Mathew de Roya sayeng as foloweth.

O ye noble knyghtes, beholde in your syghtes the enymyes whych ye haue farre sought. Lette vs now remember that thys is the daye of the assumpcyon of our blessed Lady/ and truste we in her that she wyll help vs agayne them ỹ ben putte out of holy chyrche by cursyng. For lyke meryte shall to vs growe to reuenge ỹ iniuries done vnto the chyrche, as though we faught agayn the enmyes of Crystes fayth.

By meane of whyche wordes they were so encouraged, that wythoute fere they sette vppon theyr enymyes, so that betwene them was cōmensed a sore and cruell fyght, cōtynuyng a longe season or yt myght be knowen whyche parte hadde the auaūtage of the other. At the laste the kyng was drawen from his horse, and cōstrayned to fyghte wyth the other on fote so that he was in great ieoperdye to haue ben taken. But by his owne knighthode & good helpe of his men he recoueryd his horse agayne. when ỹ French men were ware ỹ the kyng was there in hys owne persone/ they were the more egre vppon the Aragons, to the entente to haue taken or slayne theyr kynge. So that fynally they

they compelled theym to forsake the felde, & to saue them selfe by flyght, by reason wherof the kynge with the more parte of his knyghtes were saued from the daũger of theyr enemyes. But in this fyght Peter kynge of Aragone was so hurte that he dyed shortly after. whan these forsayd knyghtes with theyr prysoners were returned vnto the Frenche kynge, & had shewed vnto hym of that victory, he reioyced therof greatly/& more wolde haue done, yf he had knowen how sore his enemy Peter was woũded. But to bryng to fyne his purpose, he dayly more and more assauted the towne.

In ỹ tyme that Gereonde or Gyrõde was thus besyeged of ỹ Frẽche kynge / the erle of Foys, that to the capytayne of the towne ought great fauour, many tymes by lycence of ỹ kynge yode into the towne, and had dyuers communycacyons with hym/ so that he lastly knowynge the sayde towne to be bare of vytayle, shewed to the kynge that he wolde laboure the sayde capytayne named syr Raymõde de Cerdon, ỹ the towne myght be gyuẽ vp into the kynges handes/ so that soone after ỹ sayde capytayne desyred a respyte of. viii. dayes, to send vnto ỹ king of Aragõ to knowe whether he wolde rescowe the towne or nat. Upon ỹ whiche graũte made/ the messangers were sente, and returned with a certaynte of the kynges dethe. Upon whiche knowlege had/ the sayde capytayne agreed to delyuer the towne, vpon cõdicion to haue with thẽ suche mouables as he with ỹ cytezyns & sowdyours had within the towne. All whiche condicions assured/ the kynge receyued the towne of Geronde into his possessyon. The whiche whan he had manned with knyghtes of his owne/ he thẽ by coũsayle, whiche tourned after to his harme, diuided his nauy/ and sente a parte of them into Fraunce, and the other into Tholous, wher the kynge entended to tary the wynter folowynge. But so soone as his nauy was thus deuyded / the Aragons mette with them that rested in the hauen of Russilian/ and gaue to them suche battayle, that they toke many of them/ and slewe the kynges admyrall, and many other noble men of Fraunce/ and helde the Frenchemen so shorte, that for so moche as they wolde nat that so good shyppes shulde come to the handes of theyr ẽnemyes, they set fyre vpon the remenaũt & brent thẽ/ and after resorted vnto the kynge.

whẽ kynge Philyp was ascertayned of the losse of his nauy/ he toke it greuously/ in somoche that for that and other thynges that he myght not bryng to his purpose, he fyll into a feuer, & was therwith greatly anoyed. Than for strengthe of his enemyes, whiche kepte the passage of the mountaynes called in latyn Mõtes Pireni/ and for wekyng of hym selfe by reason of his sekenesse / he passed by the strayte places, tyll he came to Parpynyan, where his sekenes encreased so sore, that he dyed in shorte tyme of his thyder cõmynge in ỹ moneth of October, whã he had regned xv. yeres lackynge certayne dayes. whose bowelles were buried at Nerbon, and his body at saynt Denys.

This Philyp had. ii. wyues: By the fyrst Isabel by name/ and doughter of the kynge of Aragon, Jaques or James by name, he had. iii. sõnes/ Lewes whiche was poysoned, Philyp whiche for his beaute and fayre shappe was named Philyp le Beau or Philyp the fayre, & Charles the Ualoys. And by Mary his wyfe and doughter of the duke of Braban / he had Lewes, Margaret, & Blaũche/ whiche Margarete was after mary-

ed to Edwarde the fyrste than kynge of Englande.

Thus endeth Phylyp the.iii. of Fraunce.

Anglia.

EDwarde ỹ fyrst of that name, & sone of Henry ỹ thyrde, surnamed lōge shāke/ begā his reygne ouer Englāde, in the moneth of Nouember/and.xvii.day of ỹ same, and the yere of our lorde.xii.C.lxxii. & seconde yere of the thyrde Phylyp than kynge of Fraunce. This Edwarde as before is shewed, in the.lv. yere of his father, was in ỹ holy lāde whan his father dyed / & there at the cytie of Acon or Acris he dyd many feates of warre/wherof the cronycle maketh certayne mencyon. where he beynge so exercysed in Marciall actes/tidiges was brought vnto hym, that his father was deed. wherfore in all hast he spedde hym into Englād/ so that he came to London the secōde day of August, and was crowned at westmynster the.xiiii.day of December folowyuge, which was in the begynnynge of the seconde yere of his reygne.

Anno dñi.M.CC.lxxii. Johan Pozne.
Syr walter Heruy.

Anno dñi.M.CC.lxxiii. Anno primo. walter Potter.

IN this fyrst yere of kynge Edwarde the fyrst/vpon the daye of Symon and Jude, were certayne attemptes made by some of the cytyzyns to haue made suche a mayre as they had lysted/but for they were dysporynted of theyr accessaryes, they let for that tyme / whiche in the yere folowyng vpon the same day toke further effecte, as in the begynnynge of the nexte yere shalbe towched. In ỹ ende of this yere and seconde day of Auguste / kynge Edwarde came to London from his great iourney of ỹ holy lande. where of the cytezyns he was receyued with all ioy & honour, and so conueyed vnto westmynster/ where he kepte great obseruaunces for his father by a certayne tyme after.

Anno dñi.M.CC.lxxiii. Nicholas wyncheſter. Henry waleys.

Anno dñi.M.CC.lxxiiii. Anno.ii. Henry Couentre.

IN thys seconde yere of this kynge/and daye of Symon & Jude / whan Phylyp le Tayloure/ which before was chosē to be mayre, shulde as that daye haue taken his charge in the Guyldehall of Londō/ dyuers cytezyns put hym beſyde the mayres seet/and set therin syr walter Heruy, that the yere before had been mayre. For the whiche great rumour and grudge arose amonge the cytezyns/wherfore the mater was after brought before the kyng/the whiche herynge the reasons of bothe partyes/for somoche as he coude not agre theym / he putte bothe the sayde syr walter

walter and the ſayd Phylyp aſyde / and chaſe Henry Fozwyk foz cuſtos of the cytye/ the whych ſo contynued tyll Cãdelmas after. At whych tyme by dyſcrete and wyſe pealyble meanes/the fozenamed ſyz walter Heruy was ſet in auctozite as mayze,and ſo contynued the full of the yere after.

Thys yere vppon the .xiiii.daye of Decembze / was the kynge crowned at weſtmynſter , of mayſter Roberte Kylwarby than archebiſſhop of Cañ terbury. Foz Bonyface hys pzedeceſſour dyed the yere that kynge Henry dyed. At thys cozonaciõ was pzeſent Alexandze kynge of Scottes / the whyche vpon the mozowe folowyng dyd homage to kyng Edward foz the kyngdome of Scotlande.

After the Solempnytie of the cozonacyon was ended/the kyng heryng of the rebellyon of Lewelyne pzynce of walys,that dyſdayned to come to hys cozonacyon / anone gathered a ſtronge power,& wẽt into ỹ pzouince & ſubdued ỹ ſayd Lewelyn. And after retourned,& ozdeyned certayne newe lawes foz ỹ welth of ỹ realme, whych are to lõge here to reherce. Amõg the whych one was , ỹ bakers makinge bzede lackyng the weyghte aſſygned after the pzyce of cozne/ſhuld fyzſt be punyſſhed by loſſe of hys bzede , and the ſeconde tyme by pzyſonemente , and the thyzdly by the cozrecyon of the Pyllozy / and millers foz ſteling of cozne to be chaſtiſed by the tũbzell. And thys to be put in execucyon ; he gaue auctozytie to all mayzes,bayliſ fes,and other offycers thozugh Eng lande/and ſpecyally to the mayze of London.

Anno domini.M.CC.lxxiiii. Anno dñi.M.CC.lxxv.

Lucas Patencourt.

Gzegozy Rokkiſle. Anno .iii.

Henry Frowyke.

In the thyzde yere/the kyng cõ fermed the lybertyes of ỹ cytie of London,and graunted to thẽ ſom newe. And thys yere he helde hys great court of parlyamente at weſt mynſter/and gaue monycyon to Le welyn pzynce of walys to come vnto the ſame / the whyche pzeſũptuouſly that denyed. wherfoze the kyng after Eaſter entred agayne into walys / & ſo warred vppon Lewelyne , that he was cõſtreyned to ſubmyt hym vnto the kynges grace / and opteyned it wyth greate dyfficultye. Then kyng Edwarde buylded the caſtel of Flynt/ and ſtrenghthyd the caſtell of Rutlande and other with Englyſſhe men , to kepe the walſhemem in due obedyence /and toke of theyz pzynce a greate ſumme of money/ whych of ſome wzyters is named .l.M.li. and of ſome.l.M.marke, & of ſome other laſſe/& ſo retourned into Englande.

In thys yere one water Haruy , whych the fyzſte yere of thys kynge , after longe contrauerſie and ſtryfe ỹ he had kept with ỹ aldermen of Lõ don / at a folkmote kepte at Poules croſſe was made mayze of London / and ſo contynued to the hurte of the cytye that yere : thys yere was he ac cuſed of dyuers periuries & other de teſtable dedes cõtrary hys othe. Foz the whyche,& foz makynge of aſſem bles of the commons whiche fauou red hym in hys yll dedes,he was de pzyued of hys aldermanſhyppe and counſayle of the cytye foz euer /& foũ de ſuertye of twelf honeſte perſones, that he ſhulde be good of berynge, foz kepyng of ỹ kynges peas within the cytye foz terme of hys lyfe after.

Anno domini.xii.C.lxxv. Anno domini.M.CC.lxxvi.

Johñ Hozne.

Gzegozy Rokkysle. Anno.iiii.

Rauffe Blount.

IN thys.iiii. yere of kynge Edwarde Michael Tony, whych in tyme of warre had wyth the walsh men demeaned hym otherwyse than stode with his trouth and alegeaūce, was accused of treason, and therof ar reygned, iuged, and dāpned / & after was dzawen, hanged, & quartered.

And thys yere was the statute of Statute of Mozmayn Mozmayne enacted fyrste / whyche is to meane that no man shulde gyue into the chyrch, any landes oz rētes wythout a specyal lycence of ỹ kyng / whyche acte syne that tyme hath ben moze strongly enacted, and deuysed wyth many addycyons thereunto augmented oz annexyd.

Anno domini.xii.C.lxxvi. Anno domini.M.CC.lxxvii.

Robert Bzacy.

Gzegozy Rokkisle. Anno.v.

Rauffe Fenour.

IN this.v.yere. of the reygne of kyng Edwarde / pope Nycholas the thyrde of that name, made doctour Robert Kylwarby than beynge archebysshop of Caunterbury a cardynal of Rome / and admytted to that see a frere named doctour Johan Pekham.

And in thys yere the kyng gaue vnto Dauyd bzother to Lewelyne pzynce of walys, the lozdshyppe of Froddesham. The whyche Dauyd dwelled in the kynges court, and dyd vnto hym plesaunte seruyce, to the entent to spye the kynges secret coūsayll. And yf any thynge were spoken oz done to the hurte of hys bzother, that he therof myghte gyue to hym warnynge, as after by hys dede appered.

Anno dñi.M.CC.lxxvii. Anno dñi.M.CC.lxxviii.

Johan Adzyan.

Gzegozy Rokkysle. Anno.vi.

walter Langely.

IN thys.vi. yere the kyng commaunded the courtes of his lawes, as ỹ kniges bēche, ỹ chaūcery, ỹ comō place, & the excheker, to ber remoued vnto Shzewysbury / where Myghelmas terme was holdē & kept, but agayne Hillary terme, ỹ bokes & officers was cōtermaūded agayn to west mynster to be there holdē. In whych caryeng of ỹ recozdes to & fro / they by reason of great plēte of rayne whiche in ỹ season fyl, caught great hurt & were sozе defaced / in so moche ỹ the bokes were greatly imperysshed, & ỹ clerkes had great laboure to bzynge them to theyr fozmer state.

Anno domini.xii.C.lxxviii. Anno dñi. M.CC.lxxix.

Robert Balynge.

Gzegozy Rokkysle. Anno.vii.

wyllyam Mazerer.

In thys

IN this.vii. yere, the kyng held hys parlyament at London / whyche was chefely set for the reformacion of the kynges coygne, which was clypped in suche wyse, that yt was therby wonderfully mynyshed and empayred.

In the season of this parlyamēt, many of the Jewes of Lōdon and other places were taken and put in holde for money clypppyng. And in December folowyng certayn enḡstes were charged in Lōdon to enquyre of the sayd Jewes and other that so hadde blemyshed the kynges coygne. By the whyche enquestes the Jewes of the cytye wyth dyuerse goldesmythes that kepte exchange of syluer, were indyted.

And the mondaye folowynge the Purifycacion of our lady / the mayre wyth dyuers iustices of the lande sat at London / where before them was caste.ii. hundred.lxxx.and .xvii. persones. Of the whych but .iii.englysh men / and all the other were Jewes and Jewes borne, all be yt that many of theym were borne in England, and therfore of some wryters they be named Englyshe Jewes / the whyche were all at sondry times & places put in execucyon.

In this yere also began the foundacyon of the chyrche of the freer pre chour or blacke freres by Ludgate, by theyr founder.

And in this yere the town, of Boston was greatly blemyshed wyth fyre.

Anno domini.M.CC. lxxix. Anno domini.M. CC.lxxx.

Thomas Bor.

Gregory Rokkysle. Anno.viii.

Rauffe Moze.

IN thys .viii. yere / the kynge caused in syluer the halfe peny to be coygned / where before tyme other coygnes of metall rāne among the people, to theyr great noyaunce and losse / and farthynges of syluer were also coygned the selfe tyme. *fyrst coygnyng of half pens and farthynges.*

And the wynter folowynge, aboute the daye of saynte Denys, or the.ix. daye of October / fell suche plente of snowe, that thereof ensued myche harme.

Anno domini.M.CC.lxxx. Anno domini.M. CC.lxxxi.

wyllyam Faryngdon.

Gregory Rokkysle. Anno.ix.

Nycholas wynchester.

IN thys .ix.yere of kynge Edwarde / Dauid the brother of Lewelyn prynce of walys, the whych as ye before haue harde dwelled in the kynges courte to knowe the kynges counsayll, and therof enformed his brother / whē he had that he wayted for, he secretly gat hym into walys to his brother, and hym excyted agayn the kyng in all that he myght and caused his brother to man and vytayll dyuers castelles within walys / & specyally the castell of Swandon, wherin he myche trusted / and gatheryd vnto hym the walshemen by gyftes and other meanes, so that he was very stronge.

Wherof when the kynge was informed / he wolde therunto gyue no credence, tyll he had sent thyther and receyued from thēs the certaynte. But for so myche as wynter was toward,

and he myghte nat conueniently go thyder wyth any power / he therfore prouyded to send men and vytayl, to strength the castelles of Flynt & Rutlande, and other holdes, whyche he there had / and wyth prouysyō made to warre vppon theym in the begynnynge of the nexte yere, suffered that wynter to passe.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxxi. Anno dñi. xii. C. lxxxii.

wyllyam Mazerer.

Henry waleys. Anno. x.

Nycholas wynchester.

IN thys. x. yere / ỹ kyng heryng more and more of the vnstedfastnes of the walshe men / for to let them of theyr purpose to greue hys holdes beforenamed, he sente thyder with a crewe of sowdyours, the erles of Northumberland and of Surrey. with whome amonge other went syr Rogyer Clyfforde, syr wyllyam Lyndesey, syr Rycharde Tanny, & many other noble knyghtes and squyres. The whyche with greate corage entrede into walys, and made with the walshe men many skyrmysshes / tyll lastly vpon Palme sondaye, Dauyd with a great power of walshmē met with the sayde lordes & knyghtes at a place nere to a towne called Hanardyne / where betwene thē was a sore fyght. But in the ende the losse fyll to the Englysshmen. For there were slayne syr wyllyam Lyndesey, syr Rycharde Tanny, with many other / and syr Rogyer Clyfforde was taken. After whyche ouerthrowe of the Englysshmen / the sayde Dauyd layde syege vnto the castelles of Flynt and of Rutlande. And his brother in that season warred and occupyed the landes of syr Edmunde Mortymer / and wanne the towne called Lambatre vaure / and there threwe the walles therof downe to the grounde. Thys towne is also called Abreswith. It was nat longe after or the brute of thys ouerthrowe of the Englysshmē came vnto ỹ towne. wherfore he sped hym the faster thyderwarde.

Anno domini. M. CC. lxxxii. Anno dñi. M. CC. lxxxiii.

Rauffe Blunt.

Henry walys. Anno. xi.

Hawkyn Betnell.

IN thys. xi. yere vppon the day of sayncte Leonarde or the fyrst daye of Nouembre, whyle kynge Edwarde was thus occupyed in rescowynge of hys men, whyche were besyged of Dauyd / syr Rogyer Clyfforde wyth other, whyche entended to make a reysynge vppon the walsh men, was drowned by foly vppon a brydge made of bargys and plankes to haue passed a water, betwene Snowdon and Anglysley. And the thyrde daye of Decembre folowynge / was Lewelyne prynce of walys slayne by syr Edmunde Mortymer and hys company / and hys hed sente vnto the kynge thā beyng at Rutlande. The whyche he sent vnto London / chargynge that yt be set vppon the toure of London. Of thys Lewelyne a walshe metrycian made these foure verses folowynge.

Hic iacet

Hic iacet Anglorum tortor, tutor venedorum.
Princeps wallorum, Lewelinus regula morum,
Gemma cenorum, flos regum preteritorum,
Forma futurorum, dux, laus, lex, lux populorum.

whyche verses are thus to meane as folowethˀ.

Of Englyſſhmen the ſcourge, of walſſhe the protectoure,
Lewelyn the prynce, rule of all vertue,
Gemme of all lyuers, and of all other the floure,
whyche vnto dethe hath payde hys dette due,
Of kynges a mirrour that after hym ſhall ſue,
Duke and prayſe, and of the lawe the ryght,
Here in thys graue, of people lyeth the lyght.

But an Englyſſhe metrician wrote other.iiii. verſes in dyſpraiſynge of the ſayd Lewelyn as folowethˀ.

Hic iacet errorum princeps, ac predo virorum,
Proditor Anglorum, fax liuida ſecta reorum,
Numen wallorum, trux, dux, homicida piorum,
Fex troianorum, ſtirps, mendax, cauſa malorum.

The whyche maye in thys wyſe be Engliſſhed.

Here lyeth of errour the prynce yf ye wyll ken,
Theſe, and robbour, & traytour to Englyſſhmen.
A dym bronde, a ſect of doers yll,
God of walſſhmen, cruell without ſkyll
In ſleyng the good/and leder of the badde.
Laſtly rewarded as he deſerued hadde.
Of Troyans blode the draſtes, and nat ſede.
A rote of falſſhode, and cauſe of many yll dede.

Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxiii. Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxiiii.

Jordan Goodchepe.

Henry waleys. Anno.xii.

Martyn Bor.

IN thys.xii.yere, the kynge begynge ſtylle in walys, purſued Dauyd the brother of Lewelyn from towne to towne/ſo that laſtly he was taken and broughte vnto the kynge aboute the natyuyte of ſaynt Johñ/ and ſo holden in warde tyll the kyng had there ſped hys nedes. Then the kyng had all the countre at hys wyl, and gaue vnto Engliſſh lordes townes in the myddes of walys/and deuyded the coũtre into ſhyres/and ordeyned there ſhyryfes and other offycers as then were vſed in Englande. At Aberconow he made a ſtronge caſtell, where before was a houſe of whyte monkes. The whych he remouyd thens, and ordeyned for them in ſome other place. He alſo made than the caſtel of Carnaruã faſt by Snowdon, and repayred agayne the towne of Lambatre or Abreſwyth which Lewelyn had before betyn downe. Alſo he garniſſhed the caſtelles and holdes ſtandyng vpon the ſee ſyde with Engliſſhmen/ and made Engliſſhe men lordes of the groundes belongyng to the ſame. And whan ỹ kyng had ſet that coũtre in rule/ thẽ about Mychelmaſſe he retourned to Shrewſbury, where he ſet a parlyament. In the tyme wherof the forſayd Dauyd as chyef ſtyrrer & begynner of al thys warre/ was there demyd to be drawen, hãged, & quartered/ & ſo he was ſhortly after at ỹ ſayde towne of Shrewſbury, & hys hede ſent to Lõdon, & ſet by the hed of hys brother Lewelyn.

And thys yere was the fyrſte ſon of kyng Edwarde borne, whyle the kyng was in walys at ỹ caſtel of Carnaruan. By reaſon wherof he was after named Edward of Carnaruan. He was born vpõ ỹ day of ſait Mark or ỹ.xxv.day of Apryl. This yere alſo one Laurẽce Duket a cytezyn of Lõdõ, was foũde dede & hanged within ſait Mary bow chyrch of chepe. For ỹ which enqueres were made, & laſtely for ỹ dede were ataynted theſe.vii. pſons folowing, ỹ is to ſay, Reygnold

of lancaſter, Robert Pynnot, Paule of Stepynhith, Thomas Cordwayner, Johñ Tolanſon, Thomas Ruſſell, and Robert Scotte / the whyche were all for that dede drawyn & hanged. And a woman for the ſame dede was alſo brent. And Rauffe Creppyn, Jourdan Good chepe, Gilbert Clerk and Geffrey Clerke, were alſo attait for the ſame cauſe. But they were repryed and ſent vnto the toure of Lõdon / where they remayned lõge after and laſtly delyuered. And in thys yere the greate conduyte ſtandynge agayne ſaynte Thomas of Acres in Chepe, was begon to be made. In this yere alſo ſtryfe and vnkindenes beganne to kyndelle betweene the kynge & the erle of Leyceſter / whych after grewe to the great dyſturbaũce of dyuers townes of Englande, and ſpecyally of the cytye of London as after ſome dele ſhall appere.

Annodomini. M.CC.lxxxiiii. Anno dñi. M.CC.lxxxv.

Stephen Cornyſh.

Gregory Rokeſle. Anno. xiii.

Robert Rokeſby.

The fraunchees ſeyſed, and why.

In thys. xiii. yere vpon the day of the conuerſiõ of ſaynt Paule or ỹ. xxv. day of Januarii / ỹ kynge ceaſed the frauncheſe and lybertyes into hys handes, and diſcharged the mayre of London thã beyng Gregory Rokkiſle / & admytted for cuſtos or gardeyn of the cytye Stephã Sãdewyche. The whyche contynued in that offyce tyll the móday folowyng the purifycacyon of our Lady. At whyche ſeaſon the ſayd Stephã was diſcharged / and ſyr Johñ Breton knyght charged for the reſydue of ỹ yere. The cauſe of thys diſpleaſure that the kyng had vnto the cytye is nat ſhewed of no certaynte. But in an olde panflete it appereth, that the ſayd Gregory Rokkiſley toke certayne brybes of the bakers, and ſuffered them to ſell bryde lackynge. vi. vnces / or. vii. or in a peny lofe, for ỹ whyche the kynge ſhuld be ſore diſpleaſed. But yet to me it ſemeth no conuenyent cauſe, to ſeaſe the lybertyes of the cytie for the offence of one man. wherfore it is to preſuppoſe, ỹ it was for a more greuous cauſe. And in this yere was fully fynyſſhed and ended the new werke of ỹ chyrch of weſtmynſter vnto the ende of the quere, begonne as before is ſhewed / in the thyrde yere of the. iii. Hẽry. By whyche reaſon it ſhuld apere, ỹ thys chyrche ſhuld be in edyfyenge vpon lxvi. yeres. Of the fyrſte fundacyon of thys chyrche are dyuers opiniõs. For as before is ſhewed in ỹ thyrde Chappytre of the ſtory of Carce, and v. parte of thys werke / thys chyrche was fyrſte founded by a cytezeyne of Londõ, and after reedyfyed by ſaynt Edwarde, and laſtly by kynge Hẽry the. iii. But in the ſame abbey of weſtmynſter, where of lykelyhode ỹ moſt certaynte is to be had / it is regyſtred that thys ſayd chyrche was a temple of the Brytons longe or they receyued the fayth of Chryſte. And in the tyme of theyr cryſten kynge Lucius, it was hallowed of Auguſtyne & hys felowes. And ſecundaryly it was reedyfyed by Sebertus than kynge of Eſtſaxons or Eſſex, aboute the tyme whan Ethelbert kyng of Kent buylded ſaynt Paules chyrch of Londõ. whyche was after the tyme that Lucyus receyued the fayth of Chryſte, vppon. iiii. C. yeres. Than thyrdly it was buylded by ſaynt Edwarde the

confeſſour

confessoure / whiche reygned vpon CCCC.and.xl.yeres after the sayde Sebertus. And fourthly or lastly by the forsayd Henry ỹ thyrde, whiche began his reygne after the dethe of saynt Edwarde. C.l.yeres.

Anno domini.xii.C.lxxxv. Annodo mini.M.CC.lxxxvi.

walter Blount.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno.xiiii.

Johan wade.

In the.xiiii.yere of kynge Edwarde, at a parliament holden at westmynster were made ỹ statutes called *Additamenta Glouceſtrie* / whiche is to meane addicions of statutes, made and put to suche as before tyme were made at ỹ parlyamẽt holdẽ at Glouceter. The which statutes were made to reforme suche psones as mysused the landes and tenementes commynge to them by reason of ỹ dower or landes of theyr wyues / so that the the chyldren of the seconde husbande putt by ỹ ryghtfull enheryteures / or suche as were nerte alyed vnto the fyrst donours. By reason of whiche statutes and addicions now in this parliamẽt made, suche mysorder was reformed.

In this yere or nere there aboute, in a towne of Almayne called Tratect / many men and women (as wytnesseth ỹ auctour of *Cronica cronicarum*) were dauſyng vpõ a brydge / whiche lay ouer a ryuer called Moose. In whiche tyme of theyr dysporte & dauſynge, came by a preest berynge the sacramẽt towarde a seke man / wherof the sayd men and women beynge in reuell toke no regarde vnto the sacrament, nor dyd to it any honour & reuerence. But were it by the wreche of god or otherwyse / shortly after the preest was passed ouer, the brydge brake, by meanes wherof, nere vnto the nombre of. CC. persones were drowned. And aboute this same season in the coũtre called in Englysshe the Swetezers / a woman was delyuered of a chylde, that from ỹ naupll vpwarde had.ii.complete bodyes, as iiii.armes, and two hedes, with two bodyes to the wast / and downeward but.ii.legges / the whiche with ỹ fore sayd armes be clypped eyther others body. And an other woman bare a chylde or a monstre / wherof the heed and the face was lyke vnto a man, & all the body lyke vnto a lyon / with tayle and fete and all other fetures accordynge to the same.

In this yere also a cytezyn of London named Thomas Pywyleſdon, ỹ whiche in ỹ tyme of ỹ barons warre before in the story of kynge Henry shewed, had ben a cappytayne / and a great styrrer of the commons of the sayd cytie, for to mayntayne the barons partie agayne the kynge / was newly accused, that he with other of euyll dyspoſycyon, shulde make conuentycles and assembles to the newe dystourbaunce of the cytie. wherof report was made vnto the kynge / the whiche rempted the enquery therof vnto syr Rauffe Sandewyche than custos or gardeyne of the cytie. Thẽ the sayde Thomas with other was putte in sure keppynge tyll the mater were duly enquyred of. After whiche inquysycyon made and founde, report was made vnto the kynge. Then the kyng sent downe a wrytte / and commaunded it to be proclaymed shortly after within the boundes of the cytye / wherof the effecte was thus, that the sayde Thomas Pywelysdon

Pywelysdō, wyllyam de Heywoode, Rychard de Coundris, Rychard le Cofferre, Robert de Derby, Albyne de Darby, wyllyam Mayo Mercer, and Iuo Lyng Draper/ with diuers other to ỹ nōbre of .l. persones, shuld be banysshed out of ỹ cytye for euer. And if any of the sayd .lviii. persones were at that tyme of the proclamaciō voyded ỹ cytye for fere or otherwyse/ that they shuld so remayne, and nat to retourne vnto the cytie vpō payne of lyke losynge.

In thys yere also, where as of olde tyme longe before thys season, ỹ marchauntes straūgers commynge with theyr marchaundyse, were lodged within cytezeyns of the cytye of London, and solde all theyr marchaundyses by the procuryng of hys host/ for the whyche hys sayd hoost had a certayne of euery .li: by meanes of the sayd marchauntes straūgers it was at thys daye brought to passe, ỹ they myght hyre to thē houses for to dwel in, and for stowage of theyr wares so that no cytezeyne shulde entermedle hym with the sayd straūgers nor yet theyr wares/ by meane whereof they vsed many disceytes, bothe i vtterauce of false wares, and also by theyr weyghtes whyche they vsed in theyr owne houses, to the great hurt of the hole realme of Englande. wherfore sodaynly serche was made, and theyr weyghtes founde and proued false. And ouer ỹ all suche wares as they shuld haue weyed at the kynges beame/ they weyed moche therof in theyr sayd houses, to the hynderaunce of ỹ kynges custome. For whyche offēces agayne theym proued/ to the nombre of .xx. of the sayd straungers were arrested, and sent vnto the toure of Lōdon, and theyr weyghtes brent & consumed in westchepe of London, the thursdaye before the feast of Symon and Jude. And fynally the sayd marchauntes were delyuered by fyne makynge to the kyng of a thousande .li., when they had suffered by a season harde & vyle pysonement.

Anno domini .M. CC. lxxvi. Anno dñi. xii. C. lxxvii.

Thomas Crosse.

Syr Johñ Bryton. Anno .xv.

wyllyam Hawteyn.

IN thys .xv. yere, the Jewes of Englande were sessed at great summes of money whych they payd vnto the kyng. But of one other auctour it is sayd, that the commons of Englande graunted to the kyng the v. parte of theyr mouables for to haue the Jewes banysshe out the lāde. For whiche cause the sayd Jewes to put the commons from theyr purpose, gaue of theyr free wylles great summes of money to ỹ kyng. whych sayeng appereth to be trewe/ for the sayd Jewes were exyled within few yeres after.

Thys yere about the begynnynge of May the kynge sayled to Burdeux/ and frome thens he rode into Fraunce, where as witnesseth ỹ fresh boke he was honourably receyued of Phylyp le Beau or Phylyp the fayre than kynge of Fraunce/ and after receyued homage of the sayd Edward for the duchy of Guyan. And when kynge Edwarde had taryed a season in Fraunce, he retourned vnto Burdeux/ whyther came vnto hym a certayne ambassadours from the kyng of Spayne, with the whych he helde longe dalyaunce. wherfore of ỹ fresh kyng he was suspected, that he shuld allye hym with the kyng of Spayne agayne

agayne the Frenche kynge.

And thys yere as testyfyeth Policronycon, the somer was so excedyng hote, that men dyed for hete.

And thys yere whete was so plentuous, that it was solde at London for .xl.d. a quarter.

Anno domini.xii.C.lxxxvii. Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxviii.

wyllyam Herforde.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno.xvi.

Thomas Stanys.

IN thys.xvi. yere of kynge Edwarde/ saynt Thomas of Herforde was translated. And thys yere fyll dystaūce betwene syr Payne Tiptoft wardeyn of certayn castels in walys, & a walsh knyght called syr Ries ap Mordek. So ỹ sundry skyrmysshes were foughten betwene them, & many men slayne vpon bothe sydes, to the great dystourbaunce of all ỹ countre.

Thys yere vpon saynt Margaretes euyn, or the. xix. daye of Julii / fyll wonderfull great hayle, that the lyke therof was nat of men than lyuynge seen. And after that ensued cōtynuell rayne/ whyche dystēperyd the groūd in such wyse, that the yere folowyng whete was sold for .xviii.ō. a bushel, and thys yere for .xiiii.ō. And so encreased yerely after duryng ỹ reygne of the kynge, and after in hys sōnes days, tyll it was lastly solde for .xl. s. a quarter and aboue.

Anno domini.xii.C.lxxxviii. Anno domini.M.CC.lxxxix.

wyllyam Betayn.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno.xvii.

Johñ of Caunterbury.

IN thys.xvii.yere, the warre before in the yere laste paste, betwene syr Payn Typtoft & syr Ryes contynuynge/ to the entente that the sayd Ryes myght reuenge hys cause agayne the sayd syr Payne, he arreryd a greate multytude of walshemē and brent and wasted dyuers townes in walys/ so that the kynge then beynge in Normandy, sente vnto the erle of Cornewayll then beynge the kynges lyeu tenaunte in Englande, that he shuld sende thyder an army of knyghtes to withstande the malyce of the walshmen. The whych prepared shortly an army, & yode with them into the borders of Northewalys. where he with hys cōpany bare hym so knyghtly, that in the ende the sayd Ryes was takē & brought vnto yorke / where he was after drawen, hanged, and quartered.

Anno domini.xii.C.lxxxix. Anno dñi. M.CC.xc.

Fulke of saynt Edmunde.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno.xviii.

Salamon Langforde.

IN thys.xviii.yere vppon oure Lady euyn Assumpcion/ kyng Edwarde was honorably receyued of the cytezeyns of London, and so conueyed vnto westmynster / where shortely after were brought before hym

hym many greuous complaynte of dyuers of hys iustyces, as syr Thomas weylande, Adam Stretton and other. The whych the kynge caused streyghtly to be examyned/and lastly were founde gylty, of such trespasses and causes as they were accused of. wherfore some of theym were outlawed and loste suche goodes as they hadde/ and the other punysshed by longe enpryſonemente, and lastely delyuered by payenge of greate fynes.

Anno domini.M.CC.lxc. Anno domini.M.CC.lxci.

Thomas Romayn.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno.xix.

wyllyam de Lyre.

IN thys.xix.yere, the kynge ordeyned ỹ all woll whych shuld be sold vnto straungers, shulde be brought vnto Sandewyche / where the staple therof longe after was, as it is now at ỹ towne of Caleys. And thys yere were the Jewes banysshed the lande, for the whych cause the cõmons gaue vnto the kyng a quinde eym or fyftene.

Thys yere also syr Gylbert de Clare erle of Glouceter, maryed dame Jane doughter of kyng Edwarde. Thys was called Johanne of Acrys for she was born at Acrys, whẽ kyng Edwarde was there vpon hys great iourney. And soone there after in the same yere, the duke of Brabannys sonne wedded Margarete the syster of the sayd Johanne.

Anno domini.xii.C.lxci. Annodomini.M.CC.lxcii.

Rauffe Blount.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno.xx.

Hamonde Bore.

IN thys.xx.yere & begynnynge of the mayres yere, and also of the kynges.xx.yere/ that is to meane vpon the euyn of saynt Andrewe or the.xxix.day of Nouẽbre/dyed quene Elyanore the kynges wyfe, and was buryed at westmynster in the chapel of saynt Edwarde at the fete of Hẽry the thyrde. where she hath.ii. were tapers brennyng vpon her tumbe both daye and nyght/whyche so hath contynued syne the day of her buryenge to thys presente daye. Thys gentyll woman as before is towched in the xxviii.yere of kyng Henry the third, was syster vnto the kyng of Spayn By whome kyng Edwarde had. iiii. sonnes/that is to saye, Johñ, Henry, Alphons, and Edwarde. whych Edwarde succeded his father, by reason that the other.iii.died before theyr father. Also he had by her.v.doughters The fyrste Elyanore, was maryed vnto wyllyam erle of Barre / the seconde Johan of Acrys, was maryed as before is sayde vnto the erle of Glouceter/ the thyrde Margarete, was maryed to the dukes sonne of Brabãt/the.iiii.Mary by name, was made a menchon at Ambrysbury / & the.v.named Elyzabeth, was maried vnto the erle of Holande / and after hys deth she was maryed vnto Humfreye Boherum erle of Herefor de.

And thys yere dyed also the olde quene Elyanore wyfe vnto Hẽry the thyrde and mother to thys kyng Edwarde / whose herte was buryed at the

the graye freres in London, and her body at Ambrysbury in the house of Nunnes.

Anno domini.M.CC.xcii. Anno dñi.M.CC.xciii.

Henry Bale.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno.xxi.

Elys Russell.

IN thys.xxi.yere, the kyng helde hys great courte of parlyament at London/to the whyche with dyuers lordes of that prouince came the kyng of Scottes. And after he had contynued there a conuenyente season/ he was cõueyed with dyuers lordes ferre vpõ hys iourney towarde hys owne countre.

And in thys yere, as one Rychard Bagle offycer of the sherefes of London, was ledynge a prysoner towarde the Gayole, the whyche he before had arrested / thre men rescowed the sayde prysoner, and toke hym from the offycer. The whych were pursued and taken/and by iugemente and lawe than vsed broughte into westchepe, and there had theyr tyghte handes smyten of by the wrestes.

Anno dñi.M.CC.xciii. Anno dñi.M.CC.xciiii.

Robert Rokysley.

Rauffe Sandewyche. Anno.xxii.

Martyn Awbry.

IN the .xxii. yere of kynge Edwarde, vpon the daye of saynt Tyburce and Valeryan or the. xiiii. daye of May/ fyll a wõderfull snow and therwith and exceedynge wynde. By vyolence wherof greate harme was done in sundry places of Englande. In remembraunce whereof a Metrycyan made these verses folowynge.

Crastino Tiburci sanctorum Valeriani,
Nix cadit immanis, ventus vehemens borialis,
Euulsit siluas, vulsit quas reperit herbas,
Edes campaose detexit & impituose,
Quas clam prostrauit/sic plurima dãpna parauit.

The whyche verses may thus be Englysshed as here after foloweth.

The morow folowynge Tiburce & Valerian
The blessed sayntes/of snow fyll suche plentie,
That at that day was no lyuyng man,
That myght remembre of so great quantyte.
The Northyn wynde blewe wyth suche fyerste,
That houses, trees, with herbys it ouer cast.
And many other harmes by lande & eke by see,
Of that wynde came, the whyle that it dyd laste.

IN thys yere also about ỹ ende of the moneth of Julii, dyed freer Pekham than archebysshop of Caunterbury. In whose see was after stalled mayster Robert of wynchester.

And aboute the myddes of Septembre folowynge/ the erle of Barre a Frenche man, maryed Elyanore ỹ kynges doughter in ỹ towne of Bry stowe. And about the ende of thys yere dyed Alexandre kyng of Scottes/ where soone after ensuyd great warre and trouble, for the enherytaunce of that lande, as in some parte shall after appere.

And thys yere whete was solde at London for.ii.s.a busshell. In this yere also as wytnesseth the Frenche cronycle Phylyp le Beawe thã kyng of Fraunce made warre in Gascoyne

ll. and

and Guyan, for the cause as there is shewed/ sayeng that kyng Edwarde vnder coloure to haue made a vyage into the holy lande, gathered a great army, and sodeynly entred into Normandy bothe by lande and water, & dyd moche harme in spoylynge and takyng dyuers shyppes of Fraunce, and brynnyng and spoylyng diuers townes of the same / and after came vnto the towne of Rochell, where to it the Englysshemen made dyuers assautes, wherby the dwellers & also the towne sustayned moche harme.

Wherof the kynge of Fraunce beynge enfourmed/ sent vnto kyng Edward, monyshing hym to come vnto hys parlyamente, & also to make satysfaccyon for suche harmys as hys people had done within hys domynyon of Fraunce and Normandy. But for that kyng Edwarde refused that to do/ therfore ỹ sayd Philyp le Beawe sent Rauffe de Nesll thā cōstable of Fraunce into Gascoygne with a greate & mygthy power / the whyche made sharpe warre vppon ỹ Gascoynes. But the Gascoines with helpe of the Englysshemen defended theym in suche wyse, that great hurt was done vpon bothe partyes. Thā fynally as testifyeth the sayd frenche cronycle, to the entent that kyng Edwarde mygthe make the better clayme to al the hole duchy of Normādy/ he sent the Frenche kynge worde, ỹ he wolde gyue ouer into hys handes the duchye of Guyan & holde no lande of the kyng of Fraunce.

Anno domini. M. CC. xciiii. Anno domini. M. CC. xcv.

Henry Boxe.

Syr Johū Bryton. Anno. xxiii.

Richarde Glouceter.

IN thys. xxiii. yere/ the walshemen by styrryng of one named Madok, rebelled agayne the kynge. wherfore he in all haste spedde hym vnto westchester/ and about the feast of sayncte Nycholas, wan frome the walshmen the ile called Anglesya or the ile of Manne, and buylded newe the cytye & castell of Beau Maryse/ and broughte the vnstedfast walshemen to newe reclayme/ & then caused the woodes of ỹ countre to be hewyn downe, wherein before tymes they vsed to hyde theym as a cony dothe in hys claper / and repayred so the castelles and stronge holdes with buyldynge of some newe, that he caused the walshmē to thryue agayne theyr wylles. For by the strengthe of those castelles, they were kepte from theyr olde accustomed rauyns and stelynges / and put so in execucyon by the rulers of the sayd castelles & stronge holdes, that they fyll vnto occupacyon and to byenge and sellyng and gathered treasoure, and beganne to lyue after the maner of Englysshemē, so that more and more that countre grewe to more restefulnesse and peace.

How the walshemen were trapped from rauyn.

In thys yere also the frenchemen arryued at Douer wyth a certayne of shyppes, beynge vnder the rule of syr Mathew de mounte morency and of syr Johan Harcourte knyghtes / and spoyled that towne, and brent a parte of yt.

In whych skyrmysshe was slayne or martyred an holy man named sayncte Thomas of Douer. And in this yere as testifieth ỹ frenche cronicle/ Charles de Valoys brother vnto kynge

kyng Phylyp of Fraunce, was sent by hys sayd brother into Gascoygne with a greate hooste. The whyche Charles layde hys syege vnto the castell of Ryon / wherin at that tyme were syr Johan Seyn Johñ, & Johñ de Brytayne / the whych manfully & bygorously defendyd the sayd castel agayne the Frenchmen all that yere and more, as in the next yere shall appere.

Anno domini. M. CC. xcv. Anno dñi. xii. C. xcvi.

Johñ Dunstable.

Syr Johñ Bryton. Anno. xxiiii.

Adam Halyngbery.

IN this. xxiiii. yere / the kyng for the great warre ỹ he had wyth the Frenche kyng and els where, cõmaunded a new subsidie to be leuied vpon all the sarplers of wolle goyng out of Englande, with all fellys and hydes in lyke maner. And ouer that, all suche money as before was graũted by the clergy of Englande towarde the defence of the holy lande / the kyng then for reporte that he hadde from Rome of the popes maners thã Bonyface the. viii, cõmaunded it to be brought vnto hys tresoury. And by a cõuocaciõ made of the sayd clergye / he had graunted towarde hys nedes halfe of theyr spyrytuall & temporall landes, begynnyng at. xx. marke benifice, & so ascendyng vpward / the whych was nat payd in one yere, but by deuided porcions in. iii. yeres ensuyng. And of the lay fee or temporall men of Englãde, he had graũted to hym the. x. peny of theyr mouables / the which was payd in. ii. yeres next ensuyng. And thys yere in ỹ moneth of Marche, was drawen & hanged at London for treason done in Fraunce, a knyghte called syr Thomas Turbeuyle. And aboute ỹ tyme of Easter whan Charlys de Ualoys as ye before in that other yere haue harde, had lyen longe at the castell of Ryon, & myght nothyng wynne vpõ the Englyshmen, but dayly loste of the best of hys knyghtes / he sent for more ayde and socoure. At whyche tyme came vnto hym syr Rauffe Nele constable of Fraunce with a fresh company, and thã assawted it of new But whan they had lyen there a season, & sawe they preuayled nothynge agayn theyr enemys / they yode vnto an holde there by named Boudency, and it assauted for so moche as the more nombre of the sowdyours there were Normans / and after. viii. days by appoyntemente or otherwyse gat the sayd holde, so that all the Englishemen had theyr lybertye & goodes and the Normans taken as prysoners / the whyche they brought after vntõ the castell of Ryon, and there in syghte of the sowdyours, hanged al or the more partye of the sayde Normans. whan the Gascoynes beynge wythin the towne and castell of Ryons, sawe then theyr colyns and coũtrey men hanged before theyr eyen / they caste in theyr myndes that yt was done by treason of the Englysshmen, and that they wolde at length deale wyth them in lyke maner. By reason wherof stryke and baryaũce arose betwene the Englysshemẽ and the Gascoygnes / so that eyther of theym keryd the treason of the other. For the whyche cause, syr Johan Seyn Johan, syr Johñ de Britayn, syr Robert Typtoft, syr Rauffe Tãny, syr Hugh Bardolfe, & syr Adam Cretynge, with dyuers other fledde

Cruelte.

by see and in that maner saued them selfe/and soone after the sayd towne and castell of Ryons was wonne by the Frenchemen,and the inhabytaũtes of the same swore vnto the frech kynge.

ye haue harde before in the .xrii. yere of thys kynge, howe after the dethe of Alexander kyng of Scottes many questyons fyll amonge ỹ sayd scottes,who by ryght of enheritaũce shulde be kynge of that lande/consyderynge that the sayde Alexander had lefte after hym thre doughters, the whyche lyuyng theyr father were maryed. The fyrste to syr Johan Bayloll, the seconde to Roberte le Bruze,and the thyrde to one named Hastynges. Many of the lordes of Scotlande wolde haue crowned syr Johan Bayloll, by reason that he maryed the eldest of the doughters. But the frendes of Robert le Bruze withstode it with all theyr power. And other there were, that helde with Hastynges/so that after greate stryfe and longe varyaunce, the matter was broughte before kynge Edwarde as chyef lord and soueraygne of that lande/ promysinge to hym to abyde all suche determynacyon and iugemente as he shulde seite therin. Than kynge Edwarde to the ende that the scottes shulde knowe perfytely,that the kyng ofEnglãde ought of ryghte to be there chyefe hede and soueraygne / shewed vnto theym suche olde wrytynges as he lyttell tofore had caused to be serched and founde/in the whyche it was conteyned by the auctoryte of olde cronycles and wryters, as Maryanus ỹ scotte, wyllyam of Malmesbury, Roger of Huntyngdon, and other, that in the yere of our lorde .ir.C. xr, kynge Edwarde the elder made subget vnto hym the kynges of Cumbrys and scottes.

Also in the yere of grace.ix.C.and xxi.the forsayd scottes & Cumbrys, chase the sayd Edwarde the elder to be theyr chyefe lord and patron. And in ỹ yere of our lord.ix. C.xxvi. Ethelstane than kynge of Englande subdued constantyne than kyng of scottes/and after admytted the sayd Constantyne to reygne as kynge vnder him,by othe of obeysaũs,with feaute and homage. Also Edredus brother to the sayde Ethelstane, subdued of newe the scottes with the Northumbrys/ and receyued of them agayne othe and homage. And ouer that it is founde in the sayd cronycles, that Edgar ouercame Alphunius the son of Kynadus kynge of Scottes, and receyued of hym fealty & homage/ and helde hym vnder hys obeysaũce as he had done hys father Kynadus before tyme. Moreouer it is there wytnessed/ that Canutus in the. xvi. yere of hys reygne, subdued Malcolyne than kyng of scottes, and receyued of hym fealty and homage. Furthermore wyllyam Conquerour in the. vi. yere of his reygne, subdued Malcolyne kyng of Scotlande/ the whyche before tymes had receyued the sayde kyngdome of the gyfte of Edwarde kynge and confessoure. And wyllyam the rede dyd in lykewyse vnto the sayde Malcolyne, and vnto hys two sonnes that reygned in Scotlande the one after the other. Also Dauyd kynge of scottes dyd homage vnto Stephane than kyng of Englande.

And wyllyam kynge of scottes dyd homage vnto Henry the thyrde, at the tyme of hys coronacyon / and after came vnto hys father Henry the seconde, whan the forenamed Hẽry was deed in Normandy, & made hys homage to hym agayne.

Thys Henry that was sonne vnto Henry the seconde is of many wryters

wryters named Henry the thyrd, for so moche as he was the .iii. kyng that was crowned of that name. But for he dyed before hys father, hys dedes ben lytell spoken of / so that of some wryters he is nothyng mynded. And it followeth in the story, howe that Alexãdre kyng of Scottes in ỳ .xxxv. yere of Hẽry the thyrd, or son of kyng Johñ, maryed at yorke Margarete doughter of the sayd Henry / and dyd vnto hym homage for the realme of Scotlande / and boũde hym and hys heyres kynges of Scotlande by hys letters patentes, to be trewe vnto the sayd Hẽry, & vnto his heyres kynges of Englande, lyke as before tyme wyllyam kyng of Scottes had obly ged hym vnto the seconde Henry / as before in the .xrii. yere of hys reygne is more manyfestly shewed.

And more to them was shewed ỳ popes bulles, the whych were sent be fore tymes into Scotlande / by aucto ryte wherof the kynges of Scotlãde were accursed for they wolde nat be obedyent to theyr lordes kynges of Englande.

When all these presedentes were seene by ỳ Scottes / a day was as sygned of metyng at Norhñ in the marches betwene Englande and Scotlande, whyther vnto the kyng, came the chief rulers of the Scottes. where they excused them to be boũde vnto the kyng for the obseruynge of the kynges ordenaunce, for so moche as they lacked a kynge & an hede, by whome all suche ordenaunces shuld be maynteyned and holdẽ. But after by aduyce of bothe parties / agremẽt was made by the scottes, that they shuld be bounde to obey the kynges iugement. wheruppon bondes were made vpon bothe partyes / that is to meane the kyng was bounde to thẽ in an hondreth thousande pounde, ỳ within .ii. monethes after he had re ceyued the possessyon of the lande, he shulde gyue it vnto hym that was thought most ryghtfull enherytour. And the scottes were agayne boũde vnto hym, that they shuld holde ferme & stable all suche decre and iuge ment as the kyng shuld gyue in that mater / and also that they shulde vp holde & mayntayne for theyr kyng & ruler, hym that the kynge shulde ad mitte & chose, and none other. After whych bondes made and delyuered vpon bothe sydes / the scottes sealed kyng Edwarde, and delyuered vnto hym by theyr chartours the possessiõ of Scotlande, with castelles, with rightes, with customes, and al other appertynaũces to that kyngdome be longynge / and sette wardeynes in the townes, maners, and castelles, that shuld saue to hym that the kyng admytted, al aduauntages and pro fytes, of the sayde townes and other in that meane whyle growyng.

And whan all assuraũce was ma de and fynysshed to the agrement of bothe parties / the kyng called before hym and hys counsayll all those par tyes that made clayme vnto ỳ kyng dome of Scotlande. And after theyr reasons were wele and sufficyently argued and debated vpon al sydes, by aduyce aswell of some of the lor des of Scotlande as by hys owne counsayll he fynally admytted for kynge syr Johan Bayloll as moste ryghtefull enherytour to the crowne of Scotlande. The whych receyued it of hym thankefully / and for the same in presence of the barony of En glande and of Scotlande, dyd vnto the sayde kynge Edwarde hys ho mage, and sware vnto hym fealty. And that done the scottes with theyr newe kynge retourned into Scot lande.

And thys yere was take the fore

named Madok or Meredok/whych as ye before haue herde in the.xxiii. yere, caused the walshemen to rebell and was drawyn and hanged at London.

Anno domini.xii.C.xxvi. Anno dñi.M.CC.xxvii.

Thomas de Suff.

Syr Johñ Bryton. Anno.xxv.

Adam de Fullam.

IN thys.xxv.yere the kyng commaunded in dyuers shyres of Englande, great quantyte of whete to be gadered, & sent it into Gascoyne and Gupan, to the nombre of an.C. M. quarters after some writers/and soone after sent thyder syr Edmunde hys brother erle of Lancastre, syr Hēry Lacy erle of Lyncolne, & syr Wyllyam Veysy barō, with diuers other lordes & knyghtes, to strength suche people as he there had redy, whyle he prepared an other army to haue a gaynst the scottes.

ye haue herde in the precedynge chappytre, howe syr Johan Bayloll kyng of scottes made othe & homage vnto kyng Edwarde for ỳ kyngdom of Scotlande. Of the whych othe he shortly repēted hym after, by meane of coūsayll of the abbot of Menros as sayth Polycronycō. All be it that it shuld seme to be as wel by the coūsayll of the kyng of Fraūce, by wordes that ben wrytten in the frenche cronycle. But how so it was by one or by both / full vntrewly he forsoke hys former othe & promyse, & arrered warre agayne the kynge. wherfore kyng Edward sped hym thyder with a great hoost/ & in procesſe layde hys syege vnto the towne of Berwyk. But the scottes defēded it egerly, & bete the Englysshe men backe, and brent some of the Englysch shyppes. wyth the whyche enterpryse they were so enflamyd wyth pryde, that in derisiō of the kyng, they made this mokkysshe ryme folowyng.

What wenys kyng Edwarde with hys longe shankys,
To haue wonne Berwyke / all oure vnthankys.
Gaas pykes hym
And whan he hath it
Gaas dykys hym.

WHan kynge Edwarde herde of ỳ pryde of the scottes, and knewe of theyr scornefull ryme/he was somdeale amoued/& encouraged his knyghtes in suche wyse, that they wanne the dyche of the towne/& after in procesſe with greate labour and daunger, the Bulwerkes / so that they came vnto the gates, and made there so stronge assawte, that in the ende they wanne the towne, & slewe of the scottes as wytnesseth dyuers writers ouer the nombre of.xxv.M. and tooke prysoners syr Wyllyam Douglas, syr Symon de Freysell, the erle Patryk, & syr Robert Bruse, wyth dyuers other / and in shorte tyme after the wardeyn of the castell of Berwyke seynge that to hym was sent no socoure / yelded vp the sayd castell by appoyntement. And whā the kyng had possession of the towne and castell of Berwyke / he than strengthed theym wyth Englysshe men. And after wanne the holdes of Tyndall of Exham, of wyerbyrd, and of Lamerstoke, wyth dyuers other.

And whyle ỳ kyng Edwarde was thus besyed about the wynnyng of these forsayd holdes/he sēt syr Hugh Spencer,

Spencer.with syr Hugh Percy and other noble men, with a parte of his host, to laye siege vnto Dunbarre. where whē they had layne a certayne of tyme,an host of Scottes came thyder to remoue the syege,with whome the Englysshe men had a fyers / and cruel batayle.But in ỹ ende by helpe of god and sayne George, the Englysshe mē had the victorye / & slewe of the Scottes aboue the nombre of. xx.M,and lost of the Englysshe company a very fewe in nombre. wherfore the Englysshe mē in reproche of the Scottes,made this ryme folowynge.

These scaterande Scottes
Holde we for sottes
Of wrenches vnware
Erly in a mornynge
In an euyll tymynge
Came they to Dunbarre.

AND after this victorye, the towne & castell of Dunbarre was wonne/in the whiche were takē prysoners thre erles, vii.barons,and xxvii.knyghtes,with dyuers men of the churche.Than the kynge spedde hym to Edenborow, and in processe of tyme wanne the towne with the castell.In the whiche were founde ỹ regalyes of Scotlāde, ỹ is to meane the crowne with the septre & clothe of astate/the whiche after were offered by kynge Edwarde at the shryne of sayne Edwarde vpon the morowe after the feast of sayne Botholfe, or ỹ xviii.day of Junii,in the yere folowynge.And when the kynge had thus subdued the Scottes,and set the coūtre in a rule/he retourned with many prysoners into Englāde. In whiche tyme and season the Englysshemen susteyned many harde shoures in Gascoyne & Gyan. Among ỹ whiche one is remembred in the Frenche cronycle / sayenge that Edmunde duke or erle of Lancastre, dyed at Bayon. After whose dethe whyle the towne and other stronge holdes prepared them to withstande the Frenchemen Robert erle of Artoys, whiche a lytel tofore had encoūtred with syr Johū, & had ben of hym ouerset,resembled his cōpany/and made hym an other skrymysshe. In the whiche he slewe vpon an hundreth Englysshmē and Gascoynes, and toke prysoners the forenamed syr Johan Seyn Johan, syr wyllyam Mortymer, and other, to the nombre of.lxx, ỹ whiche were sente into Fraunce vnto dyuers prysones.

Anno dñi.xii.C.xcvii. Anno dñi.M.CC.xcviii.

Johñ de Stortforde.

Syr Johñ Bryton. Anno.xxvi.

wyllyam de Stortforde.

IN this.xxvi. yere / kynge Edwarde with a puisaunte armye in the moneth of Auguste, toke shyppynge at douer, & sayled into Flaunders,to ayde and to helpe Guy than erle of Flaunders agayne ỹ Frenche kynge. The which at that tyme was sore warreyd of the Frenche kynge, in somoche that he hadde wonne the towne of Margquet and the countre theraboute. And for to put the sayde Guy vnto the more trouble/ the sayd Frenche kynge caused Robert erle of Artoys to inuade the coūtre of Flaūdres toward Picardy / & encountred with ỹ sayd Guy nere vnto a towne called Furnes.wher atwene ỹ said.ii. erles was foughtē a sharpe batail/so

that many men were slayne vpon bothe partyes. After whiche fyght the Erle of Flaunders spedde hym towarde Gaunt, where as kynde Edwarde than soiourned / & the erle of Artoys drewe hym towarde ỹ Frēche kynge, the whiche shortly after was receyued into the towne of Bruges. In whiche tyme and season whyle ỹ sayd. ii. kynges laye thus at eyther towne, a meane of peas was there treated of/so that fynally a peas was cōcluded atwene the.ii. kynges, and atwene the Frenche kynge and Guy erle of Flaūders, vnto the feest of all sayntes than next ensuenge. And frō that day, vnto the feast of all sayntes thā.ii. yeres folowyng. After whiche peas so stablysshed/ kynge Edwarde departed from the towne of Gaunte & yode to Burdeaux. And ỹ Frenche kynge retourned into Fraunce. And prysoners were delyuered on bothe partyes.

A Frenche cauyle.

In this tyme and season whyle kynge Edwarde was thus occupyed in Flaūders / the Scottes by the entysement of the Frenche kynge, to the entent to cause kynge Edwarde to kepe his countre, & that he shulde nat ayde the erle of Flaunders, begānne to make warre vpon the kynges soudyours, whiche ỹ kynge had lafte there in dyuers holdes. And also entred vpon ỹ borders of Northūberlande, & made sharpe warre vpon the inhabytauntes of that countre. And for that syr Johñ Bayloll |theyr kynge, after some wryters, was at ỹ tyme prysoner in the towre of London, or els voyded the coūtre for fere of the kynge of Englande: therfore the sayde Scottes made them a cyptayne/the whiche was named wyllyam waleys a man of vnknowen or lowe byrth, to whom they obeyed as vnto theyr kynge. Anone as ỹ kynge herde of the rebellyon of the Scottes, which to hym was no great wonder consyderynge theyr greate vnstedfastnesse / he wrote his letters vnto syr Hēry Persy erle of Northūberlande, to syr wyllyam Latymer, and to syr Hugh Cressyngham than tresourer of Englande, and to other, that they in all goodly haste shulde make prouysyon to withstande the Scottes. The whiche persones after receyte of the kynges letters, spedde them all in spedy maner/so that they entred Scotlande shortly after, and cōpelled ỹ Scottes to returne backe vnto a towne named Streuelyn, where i a skyrmysshe foughtē atwene the Englysshe and the Scottes, syr Hugh Cressyngham forenamed with dyuers Englysshemen was slayne. But yet the Scottes were holden so strayte of the Englysshe hoost, that after that skyrmysshe they wolde nat of a certayne tyme come in playne felde, but kepte theym within theyr castelles and strōge holdes. And this yere atwene Easter and wytsontyde certayne psones of Londō brake vp the tunne in the warde of Cornhyll, and toke out certayne persones that thyder were commytted by syr Johñ Bryton, then custos or gardeyn of the cytie, for nyght walkynge. For ỹ whiche ryot, the sayde persones, that is to meane Thomas Romayne and viii. other, were afterwarde greuously punysshed, as fyrst by prysonmēt, and after by fynes. And this yere the kynge in ỹ moneth of October came into Englāde, and so to wynchester/ where the cytezyns of London made suche laboure vnto his grace, that shortly after they optayned graunte of theyr lyberties and fraunchyses, that had in some parte be kepte from them by ỹ terme of.xii. yeres & more. So that vpon the daye of the translacyon of saynt Edwarde kynge and confessour next folowyng, they chase them

them a mayre of them selfe/ where by all the forsayd tyme theyr custos or gardeyn was appoynted by ỹ kyng, or by suche as ỹ kyng wold assygne. But ye shall vnderstande that this was not redemed without great summes of money. For after some wryters the cytezyns payde for it to the kynge.iii M.marke.

Also this yere kyng Edwarde put out of his protectyon certayne Alyauntes, whiche were rychely benefyced in Englande. The cause was for the sayd alyauntes wolde nat ayde ỹ kynge with theyr goodes, as ỹ other of his lande dyd / but purchased an inibicyon of pope Bonifface the. viii, that they and theyr goodes shulde be fre from all the kynges dymes or taskys. Therfore ỹ kyng ceased theyr temporaltyes, and suffered thē with theyr spyrytualtes tyl they were agreed with the kynge.

Anno domini. M. CC. xcviii. Anno domini. M. CC. xcix.

Richarde Refkham.

Henry waleys. Anno. xxvii.

Thomas Sely.

In this. xxvi. yere after Chrystmasse, certayne persones made a dyggyng and a serche in ỹ churche of saynt Martynes le graūde in Lōdon, for certayne tresoure that there shulde be hydde, as it was reported of a gardiner. But theyr labour was in vayne, for nothynge was there founde. For the whiche dede ỹ deane of Poules the seconde sonday of lent folowynge, denounced all thē accursed that were at that dede doynge, or consentynge to the same.

In this yere aboute ỹ begynnyng of Aprell, the kynge rode towarde Scotlande/and appoynted his lordes with theyr companyes to mete with hym at yorke. where with hym met a great hoost, ỹ whiche he ladde into Scotlande, and brent and spoyled the countre as he went/ and taryed a season at Barwyke. And from thens he spedde hym in wynnynge of the townes and castelles as he went, tyll he came nere to a towne named Fawkyrk or Fankyrk. where vpon ỹ day of mary Magdaleyne, or ỹ. xxii. day of Julii, met with hym ỹ power of Scotlande, and gaue vnto hym a sore fyght. But in the ende the vyctory fyll vnto the Englysshmē / so that of the Scottes were slayne in ỹ felde as affyrme dyuers wryters, ouer the nombre of. xxxii. M. and of Englysshmen but barely. xxviii. persones. After whiche scomfyture the Scottes yelded to the kynge the more partye of the stronge holdes & castelles, that they tofore had holden agayne hym, and made vnto hym newe othe and promysse, and yelded them selfe vnto his grace and mercy. And whan he had set that countre in an ordre and rule/ he thā retourned into Englāde, and so to Lōdon. where by ỹ aduyce of some of his counsayll, he sodeynly dāpned certayn coynes of money called pollardes, crocardes, & rosaries/ & caused thē to be broughte to newe coynage to his great aduaūtage.

ye haue before herde in that other yere, how that a truce or a peas was stablysshed atwene the kynge and ỹ kynge of Fraunce, for the space of. ii. yeres and more / the whiche fynally was concluded this yere, that kynge Edwarde for a peas to be had bytwene both regyons, shulde take vnto wyfe Margarete the suster of Philip le Beawe / then kynge of Fraūce.

The

The whyche Margarete whyle the kyng was in Scotlãde was brought vnto Douer, and so vnto Cauterbury/where the kyng spoused her in the moneth of Septembre as wytnesseth the Frenche cronycle/ and receyued of her in processe of tyme folowyng two sonnes named Thomas and Edmunde, and a doughter named Margarete. The fyrste of the sonnes was surnamed Thomas of Brotherto,and the seconde Edmũde wodestoke.

Anno domini.M.CC.xcix.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.

Johñ Armenter.

Elys Russell.

Anno .xxviii.

Henry Fryngeryth.

In thys.xxviii.yere/ the kynge herynge of the vntrowth and rebellyon of the scottes,made the.iii. vyage into Scotlãde/and bare hym so knyghtly, that in shorte processe after hys commynge he subdued the more parte of the lande.And after he sped hym vnto the castell of Estryuelyn, wherin were many of the greate lordes of Scotlande / and enuyroned the sayd castel with a strõg siege. But he laye there somwhat oftyme without wynnynge of any great aduauntage,or hurte doynge vnto the scottes.wherfore of polycy he caused to be made.ii. payre of galowes in ỹ syght of the castell/and after cõmaũded proclamacyons to be cryed, that yf the scottes by a certayn day wolde yelde that castell to the kynge, they shuld haue lyfe & lyñe. And yf nat, but that he wanne it by strength / as many as were within the sayd castel, shuld be hãged vpon those gybettes, none astate nor persone to be excepted. In processe of tyme whan ỹ scottes had well dygestyd thys proclamacyon, and sawe the strength of theyr enemyes,& cõsydered theyr owne feblenes & lak of socoure/they assented fynally to yelde theym & theyr castell vnto the kyng / whyche shortly after was done.wherof kyng Edwarde beyng possessed,stuffed it with Englysshe knyghtes / & after toke a newe othe of the lordes and capytaynes the whyche he founde closed within that castell,of trewe & feythfull allegeaũce/& after suffered them to go where theym lyked.

And whan wyllyam walys,whych as before is sayd pretended the rule & gouernaunce of Scotlande, harde tell that the stronge castell of Estryuelyne was yelden vnto kynge Edwarde/ & that lordes and knyghtes therin founden in whyche he moche affyed,were sworne to the kynges allegeaunce: he feryd sore leste ỹ sayd company wolde betray hym, & bring hym vnto ỹ kyng. wherfore he with hys adherentes withdrewe hym into the mareyses & other daũgerous places, where he thoughte he was in suertye for pursuynge of the kynges hooste.

Then the poore commons of the lande presented theym by great companyes, and put theym holy in the kynges grace & mercy / so that the kynge thought then that he was in peasyble possessyon, or in a greate suertye of the lande. wherfore after he had caused to be sworn vnto hym the rulers of dyuers boroughes, cytyes, & townes, with other offycers of the lande/ he retourned vnto Berwyke,& so into Englande, and lastly vnto westmynster.

In thys tyme & season that ỹ kyng was

was thus occupyed aboute his warres in Scotlande/the quene was cõueyed vnto London. Agayne whom the cytezyns vpon the nombre of.vi. C. rode i one lyuerey of rede & whyte, with the conysaunce of dyuers mysteryes broodered vpon theyr sleues, and receyued her.iiii.myles without the cytie/ & so conueyed her thorugh ỹ cytie, whiche then was garnysshed and behanged with tapettes & arras and other clothes of syke and ryches in most goodly wyse, vnto westmynster, and there lodged.

whan the kynge this yere was retourned out of Scotlande/he caused shortly after an * inquysycyon to be made thorugh his lande / the whiche after was named Troilbastõ. This was made vpon al offycers, as mayres, shyrefes, baylyffes, escheters, & many other that had mysborne them in theyr sayd offyces, and had extorcioned or mystreated ỹ kynges lyege people otherwyse than was accordynge with the good ordre of theyr sayd offyces. By meane of whiche inquisicyon many were accused, and redemed theyr offyces by greuous fynes, to the kynges great lucre and auauntage. Other meanes were fõdẽ also, as forfaittes agaīn ỹ crowne/ the whiche brought great summes of money to the kynges cofers, towarde the great charge of his warres ỹ he sustayned in wales, Fraũce, and Scotlande, as before is shewed. this yere also the kynge for cõplaynt that was brought vnto hym by mayster walter Langton bysshop of Chester, of syr Edwarde his eldest sone, for that he with Pyers of Gauestõ and other insolent persones had broken the sayde parke of the sayde bysshop, & ryottously destroyed ỹ game within it: he therfore imprysoned the sayd syr Edwarde his sone with his complyces. And in processe of tyme after, when the kynge was thorughly enformed of ỹ lasciuyous & wantõ dispolicios of the sayd Pyers of Gauestõ/for that he shulde nat enduce the forenamed syr Edwarde to be of lyke dyspolycyon: he therfore banysshed the sayd Pyer of Gauestõ out of Englande for euer. But after the dethe of kynge Edwarde ỹ banysshmente was soone denulled by Edward his sone/ wherof ensued moche harme and trouble, as after shalbe shewed.

* Inquisycis de Troyl Baston.

Anno domini.M.CCC. Anno dñi.M.CCCi.

Luke Hauerynge.

Elys Russell. Anno.xxix.

Rycharde Champeis.

In this.xxix.yere of kynge Edwarde/dyed Edmunde erle of Cornewayle, the sonne of Rycharde somtyme erle of the sayd coũtre and kynge of Almayne, without yssue. wherfore that erledome retourned agayne to the crowne of Englande.

And in this yere the kynge gaue vnto syr Edwarde his sone the prynsypate of wales/and ioyned there vnto the sayd erledome of Cornewayle.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.i. Anno dñi.M.iii.C.ii.

Robert Caller.

Johñ Blount. Anno.xxx.

Peter Bosham.

In this

IN thys.xxx.yere/ the kyng held hys greate counsayll of parlyamente at hys cytye of Cauntorbury.

Anno domini.M.CCC.ii. Anno domini.M.CCC.iii.

Hugh Pourt.

Johñ Blount. Anno.xxxi.

Symon Parys.

Anno domini.xiii.C.iii. Anno domini.xiii.C.iiii.

wyllam Combmartyn.

Johñ Blount. Anno.xxxii.

Johñ de Burkforde.

Anno domini.M.CCC.iiii. Anno domini.M.CCC.v.

Rogyer Parys.

Johñ Blount. Anno.xxxiii.

Johñ Lyncolñ.

IN this.xxxiii.yere / wyllyã wayleys that vnto the kyng hadde done so many dysplearsures and treasons, agayne the trouth and allegeaunce of hys othe, as some deale before is shewed/was takē at the town named saint Dompnyk in Scotlād, and sent vnto London, and there arraygnyd/and vpon the euyn of saynt Bartylmewe, drawen, hanged, and quartered/ and hys hedde set vppon London brydge, and hys.iiii. quarters sent into Scotlande, & there hāged vpon the gates of certayne townes of the lāde. And at Myghelmas folowynge, the kynge holdynge hys parlyament at westmynster / thyder came out of Scotlande the bysshop of saint Andrewes, Robert le Bruze, syr Symon de Frysell erle of Dunbarre, syr Johñ of Cambrees erle of Atles, and syr Johñ Comyn with other / the whyche voluntaryly were sworne in presence of the kynge and hys lordes, that they shuld be trewe vnto the kynge of Englande, & kepe the lande of Scotlande to hys vse agayne all other persones. And yf any rebell or other malycyous persone distourbed the lāde, or breke ỹ kynges peas/they shulde cause hym to be taken, and sent vnto the kynge/ wyth many other articles cōcernyng theyr aliegeaunce, the whyche full falsely they brake and contraryed shortely after.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.v. Anno dñi.xiii.C.vi.

Raynold Doderell.

Johñ Blount. Anno.xxxiiii.

wyllyam Canslyn.

IN thys.xxxiiii.yere/ Robert le Bruze contrary hys othe to kynge Edwarde before made, assembled the lordes of Scotlande/and by the cōsayll of thabbot of Stone and other that fauoured hys vntrouthe, he sent vnto the pope than Clement the. v, for a dyspensacyō of hys othe before made vnto kynge Edwarde / and surmysed to hym that kyng Edwarde vexed and greuyd the realme of Scotlande wrongfully. wherupō the

the pope wrote vnto kyng Edwarde to leue of suche doynges.

And whyle thys matter was thus complayned on vnto the pope/ ꝑ sayd Robert le Bruze made all the labour he myght vnto ꝑ lordes of Scotlãde that he were admytted for kyng of ꝑ regyon/ so that vpon the daye of the conceꝑcyon of our Lady, or the.viii. day of Decembre, a great assemble of the lordes was made at the abbey of Stone. And vpõ the day folowyng, by the meanes of the abbot of ꝑ place many of the sayd lordes assented to ꝑ wyl of the sayd Robert, except syr Johan Comyn onely. The whych in defence of hys trouthe and othe before sworne vnto kyng Edwarde, many reasons & excuses made / and fynally sayd that he wolde nat false hys othe for no man. For thys the sayd syr Johan Comyn had great maugre of syr Robert le Bruze, & many of ꝑ nobles of Scotlande. But he helde hys oppynyon so fermely, that other began to take hys parte / that in that counsayll rose suche contrariete of oppynyons and reasons, that the sayd coũ sayll was dyssolued, and a newe sette at the graye freers of Dunfrize after Candelmas next ensuyng. At whych daye of assemble whenne the cause of theyr meting was by Robert le Bruze denoũced and shewed / & many of the great lordes of the land had graũted to hym theyr aydes & assistence: the forenamed syr Johñ Comyn & other sat styll and sayd no worde. whyche Robert le Bruze marked well, and to hym sayd: And you syr Johñ I trust for defence and weale of thys realme ye wyll nat be behynde. wherunto he answered, syr I wolde that ye and al my lordes here present knowe well, that for the weale and defence in the ryght of thys lande, I wolde stande with it to the vttermost of my power. But for I se that ye entẽde rather the subuercyon than the weale therof/ I wyll therfore ye know, I shal nother ayde you with counsayll nor yet with strength. Some other also there were whose names the auctoure myndeth nat, whyche allowed the sayenge of the sayde syr Johñ/ and in some wordes admytted hys sadde and trewe answere. For the whyche Roberte le Bruze was so amoued, that when syr Johñ Comyn with syr Rogyer hys brother was departed from the counsayll, and was comyn into the chyrch of the freers/ Robert le Bruze hym followyd and wounded to the deth with his swerde/ and after slew syr Rogier hys brother, whyche wolde haue defended the forsayde syr Johñ. After whose deth iptell or no respytẽce was made agayne the vntrewe meane & dedes of the sayd Robert le Bruze/ so that he at saynte Johñs towne was crowned kynge shortly after. *Shamfull murder.*

It was nat longe after that kyng Edwarde was monyshed of all this vntrouth of the scottes / wherfore he prepared hym to wende thyder. And at Penthecoste he helde a great feaste of hys barony at westmyster / & durynge that feast made a greate nõbre of knyghtes ouer. CC. after mooste wyters. And that feast ended/ he sẽt with a fayre company of knyghtes syr Aymer de Valaunce erle of Penbroke, and syr Henry Percy erle of Northumberlande into Scotlãde / & sped hym selfe wyth hys hoost soone after.

Than about the feast of the assũpcyon of our Lady/ the kyng faughte with the sayd Robert le Bruze and al the power of Scotlande, in a playne nere vnto saynt Johñs towne. And after lõge fyght and great slaughter of the scottes to ꝑ nombre of.vii. M, he chased the scottes. In whyche chase syr Symon de Fryseyll erle of Dũbarre was take, with also the bysshop *Victory agaynste the Scottes.*

pes of saint Andrews and of Bastoon, the abbot of Stoon or Scoon, & syr Johñ Chambres erle of Atles. which
Bysshoppes penured. bysshoppes and abbot kyng Edward sent after vnto innocēt the.v. thā pope, with reporte of theyr piury, & how they were taken armed in the felde to shede the blode of cristē men. And ỹ tē porall lordes he sent into Englād, & so vnto the towre of Londō. And Robert le Bruse after thys scomfyture & losse of hys chyef frēdes, feryng lest ỹ scottes with suche Englysshmen as kyng Edward last there wolde aryse agayne hym / all comfortles fledde vnto the kynge of Norwaye, & there abode duryng whyle kyng Edwarde lyued.

whan thys noble prynce Edward had thus subdued ỹ scottes / he yelded thankes to god of hys victorye. And whē he was ascertayned of the auoydyng of Robert le Bruse, & had set ỹ lāde in a quiet & ordre/ he retourned into Englande.

In thys passetyme were ỹ forenamed lordes of Scotlād arreygned at Londō/& vpō the euyn of the Natyuyte of our Lady put to deth, & theyr heddes after set vpō Londō brydge. And shortly after was Johñ waleys brother vnto wyllyā waleys (whych for lyke treason was put to deth in ỹ precedyng yere) taken & hāged & quarteryd. And some scottes that were taken as prysoners, remayned lōge in Englād or they myght acquite theyr fynaunce.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.vi. Anno dñi.xiii.C.vii.

Symon Bolet.

Johñ Blount. Anno.xxxv.

Godfrey de la Conduyt.

In thys.xxxv.yere/ ỹ kynge for certayne causes hym mouyng, retourned agayne into Scotlande. Or after some wryters he taryed at Berwyke, & heide hys Crystmasse & Easter in those partyes / & came nat into Englād after he had scōfyted ỹ scottes. In the season of somer as he was retournyng into Englād/ a sykenes toke hym so feruētly, ỹ he knew wele he shuld dye. wherfore he beyng at Burgthe vpō the sande beyonde Carleyll/ called to hym syr Aymer de Valance erle of Pēbroke, syr Henry Percy erle of Northūberlande, syr Hēry Lacy erle of Lyncolñ, & syr Robert Clyfforde barō / & caused them to beswore before hym, ỹ they shuld crowne hys sonne Edwarde in as conuenyent tyme after hys dethe as they myght/ and kepe the lande to hys vse tyll he were crowned.

And that othe by the sayd barons take/ he called before hym hys sonne Edwarde, and charged hym with dyuers poyntes vpon the charge of his blessynge. Amonge the whyche one specyall was, ỹ he shuld neuer after that daye suffre Pyers of Gaueston to retourne into Englande/ & so lyke a good crysten prynce dyed shortly after, vpon the day of the translatiō of saynt Thomas of Caunterbury, or ỹ vii. day of the moneth of Julii/ whan he had regned.xxxiiii.yeres, vii.moneths & odde days/ & after with great solēpnite cōueyed vnto westmynster, & there buryed in ỹ chapell of sait Edwarde vpō the southsyde, in a playne tombe of marble at the hed of hys father. This noble mā had.ii.wyfes/ by the whych as before is shewed in the xx.& xxvii.yeres of his regne, he had issue as in the sayd yeres appereth. Of thys noble prince a versifyer made these.ii. verses folowynge.

Dum

Dū vinit rex, & valuit ſua magna poteſtas,
Fraus latuit, pax magna fuit, regnauit honeſtas.

whych verſes maye be englyſſhed in thys maner folowynge.

Whyle lyued thys kyng/
By hys power all thynge
was in good plyght.
For gyle was hydde,
Great peace was kydde,
And honeſte had myghte.

An other verſifyer alſo of him made theſe verſes folowynge / and cauſed them to be hanged ouerthe place of hys ſepulture.

Mors eſt meſta nimis, magnos quia iungit in imis.
Maxima mors minimis, cōiungēs vltima primis.
Nullus in orbe fuit homo viuens, ne valet eſſe,
Qui non morte ruit, eſt hinc exit neceſſe.
Nobilis & fortis, tibi tu confidere noli.
Omnia ſunt mortis, ſibi ſubdit ſingula ſoli.
De mundi medio, magnum mors impia nouit.
Anglia pre tedio ſatis anxia plangere nouit.
Corruit Edwardus vario veneratus honore,
Rex nuper & nardus fragans virtutis odore,
Corde leopardus, inuictus & abſq; pauore,
Ad rixam tardus, diſcretus & eucharis ore,
Viribus armorum quaſi gigas, ardua geſſit
Colla ſuperborum prudens per prelia preſſit,
Inter Flandrenſes fortuna ſibi bene fauit,
Vt quoq; Wallenſes, & ſcotos ſubpeditauit.
Rex bonus abſq; pare, ſtrenue ſua regna regebat,
Quod natura dare potuit bonitatis habebat,
Actio iuſticiæ, pax regni, ſanctio legis,
Et fuga nequicie, premunt preconia regis.
Gloria tota ruit, regem capit hæc modo foſſa.
Rex quandoq; fuit, nunc nil niſi puluis & oſſa.
Filius ipſe dei, quem corde colebat et ore,
Gaudia donet ei, nullo permixto dolore.

The whych verſes, to the entent ꝑ they ſhuld be had in mynde, & alſo ꝑ the reder myght haue ꝑ more deſyre to ouer rede thē / I haue therfore ſet them out in baladde royall, after my rude makynge as foloweth.

This ſorowfull deth whiche bryngeth great full ſowre,
And mooſte & leeſt he ioyneth into one/
Thys man to whome hys pere was nat knowe,
Hath now ſubdued/nat ſparyng hym alone,
whyche of all other thys worlde to ouergone,
None was to be ſpared/of ſo great equytie
As he, if any, for nobleſſe ſpared ſhuld be.

Therfore thou noble or myghty, truſte none other grace,
But thou ſhalt pay to deth thy naturall dette
And lyke as he from thys worlde dyd chace
Thys myghty prynce, & from his frendes fette,
For whome all Englande loude mourned and grette:
So ſhalt thou & other in dethes ſnare fall
None ſhall eſcape, to rekyn kyndes all

Edwarde with many & dyuers graces endowed/
And lyke as Nardus mooſt ſweteſt of odoure,
In ſmellynge paſſeth, and mooſt he is allowed,
Of all ſwete odours/ſo dyd thys knyghtly floure,
By vertuous actes ſurmount in honoure,
All other princes/whoſe herte was lybarde lyke,
And without fere, were he hole or ſyke.

This prynce was ſlowe to all maner of ſtryfe,
Diſcrete, & wyſe, and trewe of hys worde,
In armys a geaunt/terme of all hys lyfe
Excellyng actes doyng by dynt of the ſworde,
Subduyd the proude, of prudence he bare the horde,
Of Flaunders by fate he had great amyte
And Walſhe, and Scottes, by ſtrength ſubdued be

Thys good kyng perel-ſſe, hys landes ferm'ly gyded,
what nature myght gyue, he fayled it nothynge /
No parte of bounte frō hys was diſcided/
He was iuſtice and peace, & of law ſtablyſſhynge,
And chaſer of iniquyte by hys vertuous lyuyng,
In whome theſe graces with innumerable mo,
Fermly were roted, that deth hath tane vs fro.

That whylom was a kyng, now is but duſte & bone.
All glorie is fallen, & thys pytte kepeth the kynge.
But he that yeldeth all thyng by hys one,
The ſonne of god, to whome aboue all thynge
with herte and mouth he dyd due worſhyppyng/
That lorde of hys ioy perdurable to laſte,
Graunt hym ſorowleſſe euermore to taſte.

PHylyp the .iiii. of that name & ſonne of the thyrde Phylyp, whyche was ſurnamed Philyp le Beawe or Phylyp the fayre/ begā hys reygne ouer ỹ realme of Fraunce, in the yere of grace. M.CC.lxxvi, & the .viii. yere of ỹ fyrſte Edwarde thā kyng of Englād. Thys for warre that he had with the duke of Gelderlande/arreryd greate impoſycyons thorugh hys lāde, both of the ſpyrytualtye and alſo of the tē poralty.

About the .iiii. yere of hys reygne/ the prynce of Salerne, that long had ben holden in pryſon by the kynge of Aragon, was delyuered vpon a hard condycyon as foloweth, fyrſt that he ſhuld to the vttermooſt of hys power labour a concorde and peas betwene the chyrch of Rome and the Aragōs/ & that done to ſet a peas betwene the Frenche kyng & hym. And ouer that to paye in the ende of .xv. monethes nexte enſuynge, an .C.M. Florȳns for hys raunſome. A Florȳn is in value after ſterlyng money .ii.s.x.d, & ſo he ſhuld pay after ỹ value of engliſ the money .xvii.M.li.v.C.li. And ỹ after that day he ſhuld neuer bere armys agayne the kyng of Aragō. And yf within the terme of .iii. yeres nexte enſuyng, he myght nat conclude the forſayd peas/ he ſhuld then retourn and yelde hym ſelfe pryſoner as he before was. All whyche couenauntes fermely to be holden, he fyrſt made ſolempne othe/ & after delyuered to the kynge certayne hoſtages and ſo departed.

But thys compoſycyon or agrement was thoughte ſo vnreſonable vnto hys frendes, that he was counſayled by them that he ſhuld ſue vnto the pope for a dyſpenſacyon of hys othe/ & ỹ had, they wolde helpe hym to recouer hys forſayd hoſtages. After whoſe cōſayl he ỹ pere folowyng made ſuche labour vnto Honorius ỹ iiii. of ỹ name thā pope, that he alonely optayned nat ſolucīō of hys othe, but alſo by hi he was declared kyng of Scicill/ & of pope Nycholas ỹ. iiii ſucceſſoure of the forſayd Honorius after confermyd. Thys prynce of Salerne as ye before haue herde in ỹ ſtorye of Phylyp the thyrde and .iii. and iiii. chappters of the ſame, was ſonne vnto Charles brother of sayncte Lowys & kyng of Scicill. And the forenamed kynge of Aragō that hym vpon the aboueſayd cōdicīōs thus delyuered, was ſonne vnto Peter kyng of Aragō, whych as before in the ſtorye of ỹ forſayd thyrd Philip, helde warre with hym & with ỹ ſayd Charles. This prince of Salerne was alſo named Charles after the name of his father/ the whych after hys admyſſīō of ỹ pope, was crowned kyng of Scicil in ỹ cytie of Palermo ſoone after/ & defended the lāde knyghtly agayne the Aragōs, with helpe of the frēche men by the terme of .v. yeres after. At whych termes ende Alphōs thā kyng of Aragō dyed/ & Jaques or James, to whome the forſayd Alphons had be take the rule of Scicill, & held warre with the forenamed Charles, was as brother & next heyre vnto the crowne of Aragō, admitted kynge of ỹ regyon. After whych admiſſīō, he ſhortly after cōcluded a peas with ỹ ſayde Charles/ & redelyuered vntō hym all ſuche hoſtages & pledges as hys brother Alphōs had before tyme of hym receyued, for keppyng of the former cō uencions. And for a more ſtablyſſhemēt of the ſame peas/ ỹ ſayd James toke to wyfe one of the doughters of the ſayde Charles.

About the .vi. yere of the reygne of this Philip/ certayne ſowdyours of Fraunce

Fraunce to the nombre of .xv. hondreth, whyche were sent by the procurement of pope Nycholas the fourth vnto Acrys, to fortifye that towne cõtrary the truce betwene the crysten & the Sowdan before concluded for ỹ terme of.ii. yeres / brake oute of the towne and castelles adiopnant, and spoyled and robbed suche Sarazyns as to that towne were dwelling nere and dyd vnto them all the sorowe & shame that they myght. wherof the Sowdan haupnge knowlege, was therwith greatly amoued. But yet or he wolde attẽpte any warre agayn the crysten/he sent vnto the captayne of the cytye of Acone, & wylled hym to sende vnto hym suche persones as had broken the peace, and done that iniurye to hys people. And yf he it refused, he sente them worde he shulde nat blynne tyll he had dystroyed thẽ/ as lately before he had done the inhabytauntes of the cytye of Tryple. But they sette hys manace at nought, for so moche as they thoughte them able to withstaude hys malyce. Upon whych answere, the Sowdan made great prouysyon to beliege the sayd cytye.

In whyche passe tyme in Fraũce was borne of dame Johãne or Jane than quene of Fraunce, Lowys the kynges eldest sonne, that after his father was kyng of Fraunce.

when the Sowdan had prepared all thyng necessary for that iournay/ he sped hym wyth an innumerable multytude of Sarazyns towarde ỹ cytye of Acon or Acris. In whyche iournay he was taken with so greuous sykenesse, that he knew well he shulde shortly dye. wherfore he callynge before hym hys admyralles/ charged a certayne of theym to kepe forthe they iourney towarde Acon, whyle the remenaunt retourned into Egypt / & there to create hys sonne Sowdan. After whyche creacyon he charged them that they shulde cause hys sayde sonne to haste hym vnto ỹ sayd siege/& soone after dyed.

Then all thynges was ordeyned as he before had deuysed/and ỹ cytie was besegyd with a stronge hoost of Sarazyns, the whyche assauted yt cruelly by the space of.vi. wekes. In whyche season the crysten defended it so manfully, that the Sarazyns myght therof gette none aduaũtage At the ende of thys.vi. wekes, came the ponge Sowdan wyth a freshe hoost/the whyche made such a dynne and noyse wyth they tabours & horns and other mynstrelsy that they at those dayes vsed, that it was hydous & ferefull to here. And after they had rested theym.ii. dayes, and prepared for the ryggynge of they ordenaunce/they assauted the cytye xiiii. dayes contynually. In whyche season moche people was slayne bỹ bothe partyes /but the more nombre of the cytye. For by the vyolence of they ordenaunce they ouer threwe moche housynge within the cytye/ where with moche people were oppressed and slayne aswell mã as woman & chylde.

At the ende of thys .xiiii. dayes, when the rulers of the cytye had seen the harme that they had receyued by thys fyers and cruell assaute/ aswell in losse of they sowdyours, as of the great enpeyrynge of they wallys & other defences of they cytye / they feryd sore, for ỹ whych they of one assẽt cõdyssẽded & sent soone after by they shyppes, a great nõbre of olde men & womẽ & chyldren vnapt for ỹ warre, with ỹ reliques & treasours of ỹ cytie into Sicill. It was nat lõge after or ỹ Sarazyns made a newe assaute ỹ cõtinued.iiii.days/by meane wherof the cytye was sore defaced. Then the kyng of Cyprys, whych at ỹ day was

there as one of the chyef rulers in the cytye, kayned hym lyke. wherfore in ỹ nyght folowyng delyryng a knyght of the cytye to kepe hys watche/ he cowardly & shamefully with .iiii. M. mẽ toke shipping & sayled thens/ leuyng the cytye in all daunger. Uppon the morowe whan the certaynte of thys was knowẽ/ the patryarke of Hierusalem with other there left to the nõbre of .vii. M. or therupõ, sent vnto ỹ Sowdã for a trewce for .ii. moneths But none they myghte purchase / & therfore they defendyd them in ỹ best maner they myght. But shortly after for lak of defẽce vpon the wallys, the Sarazyns fylled the dykes/ & so soon after vpõ the .xxv. day of May pforce entred in the cytye, & slewe such people therin as they there foũde. Than the Sowdan gaue the pray of ỹ cytie vnto hys knyghtes/ & after spoylyng of the same, caused the wallys & toures to be rased vnto the groũde/ & the houses, aswell churches, temples, & all other, were clerely brẽt & distroyed And thus was ỹ noble cytie of Acris, whych is also called Tholomayda, subuerted/ the whyche was the chyef porte or hauyn towne for crystẽ mẽ to lande at, when any hoste or power of them shuld entre into the holy lãde/ & had cõtynued for the more partye in the possessiõ of cristẽ mẽ, by the terme of .C. lx. yeres and aboue.

The city of Acris stroyd

IN the .vii. yere of thys kynge Phylyp/ the erle of Armenake was accused of certayne poyntes of treason, by syr Raymonde Barnade erle of Foys. where vpon, a day of batayll betwene these .ii. eries was appoynted to be foughten at Gysours, in the kynges presence and of hys barony. But after by the great instaũce & labour made by syr Robert erle of Artoys, ỹ batayll was forbone.

In the .viii. yere of hys reygne, he gadered a great taske of his cõmõs. And in the yere foresayde, at a feaste holden at Cõpeyne, he made aboue vi. score knyghtes.

And in the .x. yere/ ỹ glorious confessoure saynt Lowys, grandfather vnto this Philip, was the day folowynge saynt Bartylmew the apostle, translated into a ryche shryne in the monastery of saynt Denys / ỹ whych the yere before of Bonyface the .viii. thã pope, for hys great myracles was wrytten in the Cathologe or nombre of sayntes.

In the .xi. yere of hys reygne / syr Robert of Artoys entred the towne of saynt Omers, & toke therin many Burgonions & other as prysoners/ & soone after mette wyth Guy duke of Burgoyne at a towne called Furnes where betwene theym was foughten a stronge fyghte, and many men slayne vppon eyther syde. But lastly the victorye fyll to syr Robert of Artoys/ so that he put the duke to flight & toke there prysoners Henry erle of Dabencourt, & syr Guyllyam de Uyllers, & other. After whyche victorye by hym thus opteyned/ ỹ sayd towne of Furnes was yolden vnto hym, & a greate parte of the vale of Cassyle.

In thys yere also the warre betwene thys kynge Phylyp and Edwarde the fyrste than kynge of Englande, was put in bre, for so moche as the sayde Edwarde toke partye wyth the sayde duke or erle of Flaundres/ as it is at length sette out in the xxii. xxiiii. xxvi. yeres of the sayde Edwarde, wherfore here nowe I passe it ouer.

In the .xiii. yere of thys Phylyp, whã the trewce before sette betwene kyng Edwarde & hym and the erle of Flaũdres was expired/ he sẽt syr Charles de Ualoys his brother with great power into Flaũdres, ỹ whych made sharpe warre vppon the Flemynges,

and

and toke from theym the townes of Douay and Bethune / & after yode towarde the hauē towne of Dam or Dan/where he was encoūtred of Robert sonne vnto ỹ erle, where atwene them was foughten a cruell fyght, to the great scathe of bothe partyes/for eyther departed from other without great auaunte or bost. Thā the sayd Robert with his company drewe towarde Gaunt/and the sayd syr Charles after the departynge of the sayde Robert, layd hys syege vnto the foresayd towne of Dāme.

In this passe tyme the archebysshop of Orleaunce was slayne by a knyghte called syr Gautier / for somoch as the sayd bysshop, as ỹ fame than went, had dyffiorpssshed a mayden and doughter of ỹ sayd syr Gautier. And for hym was chosen to that dygnyte mayster Barthrāde doctour of diuynyte.

Than to retourne where we lafte of the forefayd warre of Flaundres/ the sayd syr Charles so sharpely assauted the towne of Dam, ỹ in shorte proces after it was yoldē vnto hym. And than he prepared hym to lay his syege aboute the forenamed towne of Gaunt. wherof whan Guy erle of Flaunders was ware, consyderynge he myght nat shortly be ayded of the kynge of Englande, whiche thā warred vpon the Scottes, as i the.xxvii. yere of Edwarde the fyrst it doth appere/he than made meanes vnto the sayd syr Charles de Ualoys, that he wolde be a meane to the kynge, that he myght be accepted vnto his grace and mercy. So that by his meanes, the sayde syr Guy with Roberte his sonne, vpon certayne conuencyons in shorte tyme after was reconcyled vnto the Frenche kynge. But whyle these conuencyōs were perfourmed/ the sayde erle with his sonne Robert were kepte in a lyberall pryson. And the countye of Flaundres by the assygment of the kynge, for the whyle was commytted vnto the rule of Jaques de saynt Paule knyghte. The whiche entreated ỹ cōmunes of that lāde sternly, & oppressed thē with imposycyons & taskes/in so moche ỹ in ỹ.xvi. yere of the kynge, a certayne of ỹ towne of Courtray in Flaundres after certayn skyrmysshes & loueday made, the cōmune people in a nyghte slewe ỹ forsayd syr Jaques, and as many Frēchmē as they myght fynde within the towne. After whiche murder was knowen in Brugys and in other townes of Flaūdres/ anone by yll coūsayll they also chased al suche Frēchemē as by ỹ forsayde Jaques were put in dyuers offyces within ỹ sayd townes / & made them strōge to make defence agayne ỹ Frēch kyng.

wherof whā ỹ Frēche kynge was ascertayned/ he sente thyder with a stronge companye, the erle of saynt Poule, the erle of Boleygne, syr Robert erle of Artoys, & Robert ỹ sonne of the erle of Cleremount, with dyuers other noble mē of Fraūce. The whiche sped thē towarde Brugys / & in ỹ playnes atwene Courtray and Brugys pyght there pauylyons and tentes. For they myght not come no nere vnto Brugys, for so moche as ỹ Flemynges had brokē ỹ brydge ouer the ryuer ỹ there rūneth / the whiche lastly nat without great slaughter of mē of both partyes was by ỹ Frēche mē reedified & made / so ỹ the Frēche hoste passed ỹ ryuer, & layde theyr ordenaunce nere to ỹ towne of Brugys. But the Flemynges had so garnysshed theyr towne with defence of towdyours, that they fered the Frenche men lytell or nothynge. And of one thynge they bare theym the bolder, for soo moche as they hadde within the towne one of the sonnes of Guy theyr erle, the whiche before was

scaped from ỹ frẽche kynges pryson.

Thus the Frenchemen lyenge before the towne/many frayes and bykerynges were made atwene the Flemynges and them,to theyr both paynes.Lastly a day of batayll by ỹ prouocacyon and dyspyteous wordes of the frenchmẽ was appoynted to be holden atwene them, vpon the wednysday beynge than the.vii. day of ỹ moneth of Julii.At whiche daye the Flemynges beynge confessed and reconciled to god,as they shulde forthwith haue depted out of this worlde/ in sober wyse, groũdynge them vpon a tyghtfull and good quarel,that day to lyue and dye for the defence & tyght of theyr countre, yssued out of ỹ town in good ordre/ berynge before them certayne relyques of sayntes, in the whiche they had great truste & assyance.

Anone as the nobles of Fraunce beheldе the countenaũce of theyr enemyes, dysdaynynge them as bylaynes & artyfycers/trustynge so moche in theyr strẽgthes, that they thought shortly to ouerryde theym, & bere thẽ downe with strẽgthe of theyr horses/ and without ordre ran with great ire vpon theyr enemyes, thynkynge to haue oppressed them at ỹ fyrst bỹte. But the Flemynges with theyr arbalasters and theyr longe mareys pykes set aslope before them/ wounded so theyr horses,that they lay tumbelynge one in the others necke/so that they were the letters of the other whiche were on fote,that they myght not exercyse theyr feat of armes. And also the shotte that was shotte on the Frenche partye dyd asmoche harme to those horse mẽ as it dyd vnto theyr enemyes. So that in shorte whyle ỹ felde was all spred with slayne horses and clene armed men. wherof syr Roberte Erle of Artoys beyng ware and seynge these noble speres thus slayne vpon the felde / auaũced hym with his company,and slewe & woũded of the Fleminges great nombre, so ỹ they fledde before hym as shepe before the wolfe/ & put further backe that hoost of Flemynges, than they by the fyrst metyng had auaũced thẽ selfe.And yf ayde of Guy de Namour sone vnto the erle of Flaunders, had nat the soner been comyn vnto them/ the sayde erle of Artoys had that day wonne the renowne of the felde.Thã the sayd Guy with a freshe compapany of Almaynes and other bolde sowdyours coragyously entred the felde,and bete downe ỹ Frenchemen egerly. Than was the medle newe begon,in so feruent wyse that men & horse fyll downe to the grounde wonderfly thycke.And euer the erle of Artoys where so euer he wente he slewe moche people before hym. But the Flemynges kept them so hole togyder,ỹ he myght neuer dysseuer them/ and slewe of the nobles of Fraunce great plentye.whiche mortalite thus contynuynge,ỹ stremes of blode ran wonders to beholde. And alway the frenche partye weked more & more. Lastly the erles of sayne Poule and of Boleyn, with Robert the sonne of this erle of Cleremounte, and other with the nombre of.ii.M. horsemen, seynge the rage and woodnes of the Flemynges,whiche so cruelly slewe and bet downe the frenche men/ settynge a parte all honour and knyght hode,shamefully fled out of the feld/ leuyng the erle of Artoys in ỹ myddel of his enemyes, whiche lyke vnto the lyon rampaunte contynued in one,sleynge & kyllynge the Flemynges without mercy or pyte. But the Flemynges lyke wood tygres were so enraged vpon the Frenchemen, ỹ they wolde neuer leue them,tyll they by pure force draue them into theyr tentes/ where they slewe of theym a great

a great multytude.

In this batayll were slayne the forsayd erle of Artoys, Godfray de Brabant nere kynnesman to the sayd erle & lorde of wyrson, Adam the erle of Dabenmale, Johñ the sonne of ỹ erle of Henaut, Rauf de Neell cõstable of Fraunce, Guy his brother marshal of the hoste, Renolde de Try, Esmer chamberlayne of Cancaruple, Jaques ỹ sonne of Godfrey de Brabant, Pyers Floot, & Johan Bruillis maister of ỹ arbalasters knyghtes, & many mo mẽ of name to the nombre of .CC. and aboue / besyde esquyers and other men of lower degrees, as yomen, gromes, pages, to the nõbre of .xii.M. The whiche after this victorye the Flemynges dyspoyled, and suffred the caryns of them to lye in ỹ felde, that all wylde bestes & fowles myght them perysshe and deuoure.

Whan this yonge knyght syr Guy hadde thus opteyned victorye of the Frenchmen, he reioyced not a lytle/ and soone therafter layde syege vnto the Isle or a castell soo named, and gat it also were it by trecheri or other wyse. Then the townes of Iper, of Gaunt, of Douaye, and diuers other of that countre, obeyed to hym / and cõdyscended and agreed to take partye eyther of them with other agayne the Frenche kynge.

Than kynge Philyp herynge of the great dysconfyture of his men/ made countenaunce of mournynge, and specyally for his true knyght the erle of Artoys.

Kynge Philyp then after for to reuenge the forsayd displeasure to hym doone by ỹ Flemynges/ assembled by our lady day Assumpsion next ensuynge, an excedynge nombre of men of armes / entendynge to haue entred Flaundres, & vtterly to haue destroyed a great parte of that countre/ & so drewe towarde his enemyes, so that he pyght ỹ tẽtes of his vanward within .ii. myles of his enemyes/ and there lay to his excedynge charge, cõsiderynge the great multytude of his hoost by all ỹ moneth of Septẽbre. Of ỹ nõbre of this hoost I haue doubte to wryte. For mayster Gagwyn sayth, ỹ nõbre was so great ỹ it may nat be byleued/ & ỹ sheweth wel by ỹ expressemẽt of ỹ nõbre made by ỹ frenche cronycle. For he sayth they were an hũdreth tyme an .C. M, & .xl. tymes .xl. M. By whiche sayeng soondele appereth, how ỹ Frenchmẽ cã make mensoũge. But how it was for all this great & excedynge nõbre of Frẽchmẽ / ỹ Flemynges laye styll vnhurte or assawted. And fynally by on a great substancyall cause, as ye after shal here, this great hoste was dissolued or returned euery mã to his awne/ & kynge Philyp with smal honour into Fraũce/ wherof ỹ Frẽchmẽ sayth ỹ occasion or cause was thus.

Kynge Edward of Englãde whiche vnto ỹ Flemynges bare great affeccion, cõsiderynge ỹ great daunger they were in, and he at ỹ tyme myght nat thẽ ayde nor socour / of a pollicy cast in his mynde / & with an heuy or morynynge coũtenaũce, shewed vnto ỹ quene & syster vnto kyng Philyp, ỹ he was very heuy & sorowfull for his brother & hers ỹ kyng of Fraũce. wherof, whẽ & wherfore she had frayned the cause/ he answered & sayde ỹ he had certayne knowlege ỹ at suche tyme as the Flemynges & he shulde mete in batayle that his lordes & cõpany shulde leaue hym amonge his enemyes/ for he was solde vnto them before hande. wherof whan ỹ quene was thus ascertayned / anone in all possible hast she sent letters & messangers vnto the Frenche kynge, counsaylynge hym to be well ware of that treason and daunger. To the whiche he gyuynge credence / shortely

A ryght notable policy

after

after sente frome hym the sayd great company of people, and he with a certayne as aboue is sayd retourned ito Fraunce.

After whyche departynge, the flemynges were so bolde, ỹ forthe wyth they entred into Picardy & the countre of Artoys, and spoyled & brent dyuers townes of the same. But in the yere folowyng as testifyeth the sayd frēche cronicle / ỹ Flemynges of Bruges were foughten with of Otthon than duke of Burgoyn, to whome by reason of marryage the frenche kyng had gyuen the erledome of Artoys / & he of them slewe with the ayde of the Frenchemen. xv. thousande.

In thys .xvii. yere about mydsomer / Philipp an other sonne of the erle of Flaundres, whyche had by a certayn terme passed ben in the court of Charles de Valoys, & by hym put in truste to receyue certayne summes of money in Scicill to ỹ vse of pope Bonyface the. viii, sodaynely departed / and with a stronge company of Almaynes came into Flaundres, to ayde & assiste his brother. whome the Flemynges or Brabanders receyued with great ioy / & by the comforte of hym inuaded the borders & landes of the frenche kyng / & boldly assaulted the castell of saynt Omers. But for they there gat none aduauntage, but loste many of theyr men / they forsoke that & yode vnto a towne belonging to the frēche kyng called Thorouan Morynne / the whyche in processe they wanne and spoyled. About thys tyme dyed Bonyface the. viii. of that name than pope, a man of euyll name and fame / the whyche by hys trechery caused hys predecessour Celestyne the. v. that was a good & holy man, to resygne and leue his papacie And by thys meane, when thys sayd Celestyne had sytte in Peters chayre a shorte tyme / this Bonyface espyeng hys innocency, whyche was all sette to the seruice of god, as he before had vsed hym i ledyng of an ankers lyfe, thoughte howe he myght bryng hym in mynde to resigne hys hyghe office to him. And it to bring about he fyrst made hym frendes secretely / & after hyred one of the cubyclers of ỹ pope, that he in the dede nyght shuld speke in a rede, and saye, Celestyne yf thou wylt be sauyd & be partyner of blysse renounce thys pōpe of the worlde, & serue me as thou before dyd. Or after the latyn storye, yf Celestynus wyl be sauyd / let hym clerely the papall dygnyte resygne. whych voyce this ghostly mā sundry tymes herynge, thought verily it had ben a deuyne mocyon. wherfore in all that he myght, he laboured to be dyscharged / so that at ỹ ende of. v. monethes he resigned. And shortly after was the forsayd Bonyface admytted. The whyche nat beynge contented with hys synystre optaynyng of thys hygh dygnyte, but ỹ he for fere lest ỹ sayd Celestyne shuld repent hym of hys insolent dede, and by strengthe of some prynces be restored agayne to hys former dygnite / he therfore wolde nat suffre the sayd Celestine to retourne to wildernes there to contynewe hys olde accustomed lyfe, but held hym in a castell as prysoner / where for sorowe and euyll kepynge he dyed shortly after.

Bonyface the viii. pope

For the whyche thys Bonyface was nat vnpunysshed. For ouer the sorow & trouble that he durynge the terme of hys papacy suffred, whyche was nat a lytell / in the ende of. viii. yeres he was taken by strēgth and put in pryson / where so miserably & cruelly he was entreated, that or he dyed, what for madnesse or for hunger, he ete hys owne handes / & so in mysery ended hys lyfe within. xxiiii. dayes of hys inprysonement.

Than to retourne where I laft, & to shewe

to shewe you ferther of the warre atwene Fraūce & Flaundres / trouth it is that the Frēche men with ỹ ayde of the Henaudours, made sondry & many tymes assautes vpon the Flempynges. In the whiche dyuers chaūces of ỹ warre fyll/so that yf that one had the better at one tyme, that other had as moche aduauntage the nexte tyme. For reformacyon of whiche warre/syr Guy with his soñe beforenamed erle of Flaundres, that by all this season had cōtynued in ỹ Frēche kynges pryson, were suffred to go into Flaundres / vpon condycyon that yf they myght pacyfye the countre to the kynges pleasure, that then they shulde styll enioye theyr lyberte and go at large/or els to retourne againe as prysoners. The whiche erle with his sayd sonne dyd what they cowde to reconcyle the sayde Flempynges. But al theyr trauayle was in vayne/ so that by ỹ day to them appoynted, they retourned to theyr former pryson. wherfore the kynge in the. xviii. yere of his reygne, assembled a mesurable hoste of people. In the whiche were accompted for noble capytaynes vnder the kynge, syr Charles de Valoys brother to the kyng, Lewys erle of Eurour that othe brother to ỹ kyng, Guy erle of saint Paule, Johñ erle of Dampmartyn. whiche noble men with many other mette with the kyng at a towne called Mount. And whē they had a season rested there/by meane of messangers goyng atwene kynge Phylyp and the Flempynges, a day of batayll was atwene theym appoynted, to be foughten vppon the. xvi. daye of Auguste in ỹ aboue sayd. xviii. yere. At whiche day ỹ Flempynges of Brugys and ỹ other townes set forthe theyr ordenaunce, and made them a stronge felde / and enbatayled them in suche wyse, that the Frenchemen made daūgerous to set vpon them. Then meanes of treatye were offered / so that the daye passed without stroke strykynge.

But in the euenynge, the Flempynges thynkynge to take auauntage vpon theyr enemyes, came so sodenly vpon the Frenchmen, that hardly the kynge myght be armed, or they had slayne two men within his tent. wherfore hasty spede was made, so that the kynge was goten to horsbacke/and forthwith by his marcyall power made waye thorough his enemyes, and slewe theym without mercy. And by the knyghtly example of hym/ the remenaunt of his lordes quytte theym so honorably, that the poore Flempynges were layde in the feld bathynge in theyr owne blode to a great nombre/and lastly cōstrayned to flee shamefully, and to leue theyr ordenaūce behynde them. And yf nyght hadde nat fallen on / it is to deme that many mo of theym shulde haue ben slayne / consyderynge the great fyersnesse of theyr enemyes, and the excedyng rancour of malyce that the Frenchmen to theym bare. But yet the Frenchemen escaped not without losse of some noble men. For in that batayll was slayne the erle of Ancetre, and dyuers other knyghtes and men of fame. After whiche scomfyture and chasynge of the Flempynges/the kynge for darknesse was fet vnto his tentes with torche lyghte. where after he hadde buried the dede bodyes slayne in that felde, and also garnysshedde some stronge castelles with his knyghtes, to the ende that the Flempynges shulde nat breke tofferre abrode / knowynge that with his enemyes he shulde that yere haue no mo playne batayles, he retourned agayne into Fraunce.

IN ỹ. xix. yere of kyng Phylyp/ by meanes of Enguerrā a mā in especyall

in eſpecyall fauoure with the kynge, a peas betwene Fraunce and Flaun dzes was concluded/the whych as ye ſhal after here dured but ſhozt whyle Nat withſtandynge by the reaſon of thys peas, Robert de Bethune and wyllyam hys bzother/whyche by all thys ſeaſō with theyz father ſyz Guy erie of Flaundzes had contynued in pleaſaunt oz eſy pzyſon, were now de lyuered. But the father was dede in the moneth of Febzuary befoze the cō cluſyon of thys peas paſſed/& by licē ce of the French kyng caryed to Mar quet a town in Flaundzes, and there buryed.

Heygh kyng of frete.

In the.xx.yere of thys kyng Phil lip/a great dyſſencyon & ſtryfe fylle betwene the ryche mē oz gouernours of Parys, & ỹ compnaltie of the ſame foz hepthyng of ỹ rent of dyuers hou ſes apartepnyg to ỹ ſayd cominaltie. wherfoze the ſayd comons ſecretely accōpanyed them in greate nombze/ and yode vnto the houſe of Stephan Barbet that was accuſed to be occa ſyoner of that dede, & ſpoyled it. And after that they yode to a maner of his in the counntre named Courtile Bar bet, and it in lykemaner ſpoyled/and that done ſet it in fyze, and bzent it. And the ozcharde of the ſame, whych was paſſynge commodious and plea ſaunt/ they defaced and vtterly dy= ſtroyed.

And nat yet with thys beyng con tent/they retourned agayne vnto the houſe of the ſayde Stephan / and all ſuch wynes as were within hys cel= lers, dzanke of them tyll they were wood dzunkē. And what they myght nat in that wyſe deuoure / they bette out the heddes and let the wyne rōne in the ſtrete. And all fozmys, ſtolys, & other vtenſillis in the houſe, by them foundyn all to bzake in peces/and of federbeddes rypped ỹ tykys, & helde theym in the wynde that the fethers myght be blowyn a way and loſt foz euer/and vnrypped the houſe in dy= uers places, that the rayne and other wederyng myghte entre, as than fyll about ỹ tyme ſoone after Cryſtmas. And thus contynuyng in theyz fury and rage/ after the dyſpoylynge and defalyng of theſe fozeſayd houſes, as men nat knowynge what they than dyd / yode ſtreyght in greate nombze vnto the place of the templers there nere, where at that ſeaſon kyng Phi= lyp with a certayn of hys barōs was than lodged/& there kept the entrees of that place in ſuche wyſe, that no man myghte yſſue noz entre but at theyz pleaſures/and ſuche metes as were bzought thyder to the kynges vſe and hys houſholde, they caſt it in the myze and fylth of the ſtrete. The kyng and his lozdes ſeynge the rage of thys rude and vnreſonable people ſent vnto them the pzouoſt of ỹ cytie with ſome of hys lozdes/ the whyche gaue vnto them ſo pleaſaunt & com= foztable wozdes, that at length he re= tourned theym in peayble maner to theyz houſes. But vpon the mozowe folowynge/the kyng nat fozgettyng thys rage and ryot of the people, cō maunded many of the ſayde comons to be attached, and to be ſent vnto dy uers pzyſons.

And vpon Candelmaſſe euyn folo wyng, foz the ſame ryot.xxviii. of thē were hanged at.iiii.entrees of ỹ cytie of Parys/ỹ is to ſay.vii.at Louure, vii.towarde the partyes of ſaynt An toyne.vii.at a place toward the roule & other.vii.in a place towarde noſtre Dame oz notyz Dame. whych execu cyon cauſed the cominaltye of ỹ cytie to lyue longe after in great fere.

In the.xxi. yere of the reygne of kyng Philip, whyche maketh the ye= re of our lozde.xiii. C. and.vii. all be it that other wzyters affyzmeth it to be in the yere of grace.xiii. C. and.xi.

all the

all the templers in Fraunce were destroyed, & theyr goodes & possessions thorugh crystendom gyuē (by auctoryte of a synode kept by Clement the v. than pope at the cytye of Narbon in Fraūce) vnto ỹ relygyō of knyghtes of saynte Johñ Baptyst. Thys ordre of templers was destroyed for theyr detestable heresy, whereof they were cōupct in .x. artycles expressed in the frenche cronycle at length/which here I passe ouer for lengthe of the matter, & also for the rehersall therof is nat fruytefull to all herers or readers.

In the .xxiii. yere of his reygn/this kyng Philippe, for almoche as he by some of the electours of the Empyre was chosen Emperoure / he therfore with a great armye sped hym toward Rome, and passed thorugh Almayne tyll he came vnto the duchye of Quarantayne. Of whyche duchye the people receyued hym with all honoure. And after he passed the mountaynes and so came vnto Padua/where also he was ioyously receyued where he tarienge a season, receyued from Mylayne ambassadours/ the whyche offered to hym that cytye with all couenable seruyce. And after hys people was to hym more plenarli assembled he than departed from Padua & rode vnto Mylayne. whome the lordes of the cytye met vpon the waye, & conueyed hym vnto the mayster paleys of the cytye, and there lodged hym/& within fewe days after brought hym with great solempnyte vnto the cathedrall churche, and there crowned hym kyng of Lōbardy & called hym Augustus.

Thā he departed from Mylayn, and spedde hym to the cytye of Cremoyne, & layd siege to the same. But it was to hym shortly yolde. Frō thēs he passed to ỹ cyte of Brescie, where he was holdē out a lōge whyle. Thyder to hys ayde came many soudyours of ỹ towne of Pyze/ & made there many sharpe assautes. In whych assautes Guyde Namoure ỹ was marshal of the kynges hoost dyed, of hurtes ỹ he there toke. In processe of tyme shortly folowing, ỹ rulers of Brescs offered meanes of treaty. But ỹ kyng was so amoued with ỹ dethe of hys marshall, ỹ he wolde graūt to thē no cōdycional peas/but to stāde at his grace & mercy. wherfore they fynally seyng no better meane, offered vnto hym ỹ keys of the cytye.

Thā kyng Philip for othe before made, or for some other excellēcy/caused anone ỹ part of the towne dyche fore agayn hys pauilio to be fylled/& the walle of ỹ cytye, with as many houses as stode betwene the walle & the mayster palays of the cytye to be throwyn downe/ ỹ he with hys hoost myght entre ỹ streyght waye, & so to go or ryde vnto the sayd palays. And whē all thyng was ordered to hys deuyse, he entred by ỹ way the cytye of Cremō, & therin taryed a certayn season/& toke hys counsayll with ỹ Gebellynys how he myghte the cytye of Rome wynne. And whā he had fynyshed ỹ coūsayl/he toke certayn hostages of thys cytye of Cremō, ỹ whych he sēt vnto Pyze to be kept/ & so sped hym toward Rome, & gettyng many cyties & other holdes by ỹ way/lastly he came vnto ỹ cytie named Bowion la Graſſe/whyther cam vnto hī a cardynall or legate sent frō pope Clemēt the .v. to treate of ỹ state of ỹ empyre.

But how it was the cōtynuaūce or fyne of thys iournay tourned nat to the honour & pleasure of the Frēchmē For after the metyng of the kynge & thys legate, ỹ matter is no more touched. For the Frēch kyng was agayn in Fraūce, or the legate myght bryng vnto hym any answere frō the pope. Also it is the more suspect, for of this

matter speketh nothyng mayster Robert Gagwyne, whyche leueth nothynge out of hys boke ỹ may soũde to the auaunceмẽt of the French nacyon. In the.xxiiii. yere of the reygne of kyng Philip/was brent in dyuers places of Fraunce vpon.ix. templers for the hereſy before reherſed.

And in the yere folowynge, a new rebellyon began in Flaunders. Of the whyche Robert erle of Flaũders was accuſed/but he acquyt hym ſelf, & after Guy hys ſonne was attached for the ſame and ſent to pryſon. Fro the whych he after eſcaped, for fere of proke to haue ben iuſtyfyed agayne hym/& retourned vnto Gaunt. where he was defẽded fro hys aduerſaries/ ſo that the Holanders & Brabãders helde theyr partye agaynſt the Frẽch kyng, & alſo agayne theyr owne erle/ whych ſo contynued without any notary batayll, tyll the.xxvi. yere of the reygne of kyng Philip. In the which yere, vpon the euyn of mary Magdaleyn at the towne of Courtray in Brabande/was by the byſſhops and other ſpyrituall men of Fraunce and Flaundres a peace cõcluded. wherof the condycyons were, ỹ the Flemynges ſhuld haue pardõ & forgyueneſſe of all theyr former rebellyon, aſwell agayne the kynge as theyr naturall duke. And for thys they ſhuld paye a certayne ſumme of ſyluer, wherof the ſumme is nat expreſſed / & ouer that they ſhulde at theyr proper coſtes & expenſes, bete downe certayne strẽgthes & holdes as the frẽche kynges depute wolde to them aſſygne/begynnynge at Gaunt, & ſo to Bruges, & other places/ & more ouer they ſhulde yelde vnto Robert theyr erle ỹ caſtell of Courtray, with all abylemẽtes of warre & other neceſſaries therũto belongyng. Al whych cõdicions to obſerue, they ſhuld deliuer vnto ỹ kyng of Fraũce good hoſtages. But al this came to ſmall effect, as after ſhal appere.

In the.xxvii. yere of thys Philyp/Jacob the mayſter of ỹ tẽplers, with an other greate ruler of ỹ ſayd ordre whych was named Viſytour of the ſame, after longe pryſonment were brent at Parys.

And in the ſame yere kynge Philyp arrered a tare thorugh Fraunce, whyche before that dayes was neuer herde nor ſpoken of. Thys was ſo greuous, that al Normãdy, Picardy & Champeygne, allied them togyder & vtterly denayde the paymẽt therof. wherof heryng other countrees, toke the ſame oppynyon/ ſo that a greate rumour & murmour was reyſed thorugh out ỹ realme of Fraũce, in ſuch wyſe that the kyng for pacyfyeng of the people was fayne to repeale the ſayd tare.

In the.xxviii. yere of the reygne of kyng Philip, in ỹ weke of Eaſter/the iii. wyfes of the.iii. ſonnes of kynge Philip, that is to ſay Margarete the wyfe of Lowys hys eldeſt ſonne and kyng of Nauerne, Johanne or Jone the wyf of hys ſeconde ſonne Philip erle of Poytyers, and Blaunche the wyfe of hys thyrde ſonne Charles & erle of Marches, were accuſed of ſpouſe brekyng/ and ſent frõ a place of nũnnes where they lay, and conueyed vnto more ſtreyghter keppyng/ ỹ whych.iii. wyfes were al.iii. doughters vnto the duke of Burgoyn. Thã vppon ſtrayte exampynacyon made, Margaret and Johanne were gylty of that cryme foũd. wherfore they were ſent vnto the caſtell of Gaylard in Normãdy, there to be kept as pryſoners terme of theyr lyues. And the forenamed Blanche, for ſo moche as ſhe was foundẽ gylties/ was agayn reſtored vnto her lorde Charles erle of the Marches.

And in ſhorte tyme after, the two paramours

paramours of the sayd Margaret & Johanne, that is to saye Philip Dãnoy, and Gautyer Dãnoy or waltier Dannoy knyghtes, men of fame and goodly personage & bretherne/at the kynges commaundement were fyrst brent in the bylage with hote irés, & after drawē to the gybet at Pōtoyse & there hanged. whyche myskortune the kynge toke so greuously, that he reioysed neuer after.

About the feast of saynte Peter or the begynnyng of August/the kynge herynge of the rebellyon of the Flemynges, by Enguerram hys mooste secrete coūsaylour made an assemble of the cytezyns of Parys / and by the mouth of the sayd Enguerram desyred a subsydye of the sayd cytezeyns, to mayntayne hys warre agayne the Flemynges / the whyche by Stephā Barbet in the name of the hole cytye was graunted. By precidēce wherof, all the great cyties & good townes of Fraūce were charged in lyke maner/ whyche caused greate vnkyndnes & grudge of the people towarde ỹ sayd Enguerram. Than prouysyon was made for a newe iourney into Flaunders/so that the kynge sent hys twoo sonnes and many other nobles of his lande in the moneth of Septembre folowynge, into the sayd countre of Flaūders. The whyche made good spede, & layde fyrste theyr siege to the castel of the Ile and wanne it/& after that entred towarde other strōge holdes. But the flemynges put them of/ and gaue vnto the Frenche hooste so sharpe assautes, that in processe they were constrayned to retourne into Fraunce wyth smal honoure. wherof the great defaute was layde vpō Enguerram, and vpō one of the sonnes of the erle of Flaundres/ whych lytel tofore by meanes of ỹ sayd Enguerrā was made erle of Neuers. In the moneth of Nouembre folowyng/ kynge Phylyp beyng at foūtayne Beliaunt in the prouynce of Gastenoys, was taken with suche sykenesse and dyed shortly after when he had reygned. xxviii. yeres and more/and hys body after caryed vnto sayn̄t Dionise, and there buryed leuing after hym ỹ thre forenamed sonnes, Lowys, Philyp, & Charlys/& a doughter named Isabell, whych before tyme was maryed vnto thē seconde Edwarde thā kyng of Englande.

Anglia.

EDwarde the seconde of ỹ name & sōne of Edwarde the fyrst, born at Carnaruan in a towne of walys/beganne his reygne ouer Englande, in the moneth of Julii & .viii. day of the sayd moneth, in the yere of our lord. xiii. C. & .vii/ & the. xxi. yere of the. iiii. Phylip than kyng of Fraūce. The whych was crowned at westmynster the. xiiii. daye of Decembre, after the oppiniō of dyuers wryters. But Ranulph mōke of Chester in his boke of Policronicon sayth, ỹ he was crowned in the forsayd monastery of the bisshop of wynchester, the sonday in quinquagesima, whych is the. xiii. day after the closyng of Alleluya / & of the bisshoppe of wynchester, for so moche as Robert than archebisshope of Caūterbury was than out of Englande. Thys Edwarde was fayre of body & great of strengthe but vnsted faste of maners, & vyle in cōdicions. For he wolde refuse the company of lordes & men of honour/& haūte hym with vylayns & vyle psones. He also gaue hym to great drynkyng/& lightly he wolde dyscouer thiges of great coūsayl. with these & many other dysalowable condicions he was exercysed/whych tourned hym to great dishonour, & hys lordes to great vnrest,

as by the sequele of thys hys story shall appere.

Anone as hys father was buryed, and hys exequy scantly kynysshed/he forgettynge the hyghe & chargeable commaūdement of hys sayd father, sent in all haste for hys olde compere Pyers of Gaueston. The whych he receyued wyth all ioy & gladnesse, & auaunced hym to moche honour.

And thus passed the season of ỹ olde mayre and shyrefes of London/ so ỹ at the feastes of Myghelmas & Symon & Jude folowyng, ỹ olde mayre and shyrefes, that is to meane syr Johan Blount, Symon Bolet & Godfrey at the conduyt were dyscharged, and the newe as vnder foloweth admytted.

Anno domini.M.CCC.vii. Anno domini.M.CCC.viii.

Nycholas Pygotte.

Syr Johñ Blount. Anno primo.

Myghell Drury.

IN thys begynnynge of thys mayres yere, and fyrst yere of ỹ kynge / the sayd kynge Edwarde in the moneth of December sayled into Fraūce/and the.xv.day of Januarii folowynge, at Boleyn in Pycardy maryed Isabell the doughter of Philyp le Beaw than kyng of Fraunce/ & soon after retourned with her into Englande, & so vnto London/where of the cytezeyns they were ioyously receyued, and so conueyed vnto west mynster / where as before is shewed vpon the sonday in quinquagesima they were bothe solemply crowned. At whyche coronacyon was so excedynge preasse, that a knyghte called syr Johñ Bakwell was thrested to deth. Than the kynge gaue shortely after vnto Pyers of Gaueston the erledome of Cornewayl and the lord shyp of wallyngford, & was ruled all by hys wanton counsayll/ & folowed the appetite and pleasure of his body nothynge orderynge by sadnesse nor yet by order of lawe or iustyce.

In thys yere also floured ỹ holy man called Robert a chanon of the house of Brydlyngtone / the whyche of some wrytters is accompted for a prophete, for verses that he made of thynges to come after in Englande, whyche I passe ouer at thys tyme.

Anno domini.M.CCC.viii. Anno domini.M.CCC.ix.

wyllyam Balynge.

Nycholas Faryngdone. Anno.ii.

Johñ Butler.

IN thys.ii.yere/ kyng Edward callynge to mynde the dysplea sure done vnto hym and to hys famulyer Pyers of Gaueston, by the bysshoppe of Chester mayster walter Lanton, as before is towched in the xviii.yere of the reygne of Edwarde hys father/ commaunded hym vnto the toure of London, where he was streyghtely kepte many dayes after.

Than the lordes of the lande, and specyally syr Henre Lacy, syr Guy, & syr Aymer de Ualance erle of Lyncolne, of warwyke, & of Penbroke /to whome ỹ noble prince Edwarde ỹ.i. had gyuē so great charge ỹ Pyers of Gaueston shuld no more come into Englade,

Englande, sawe the rule of the lāde, and howe the kynges treasoure by meane of the sayd ppers was wasted assembled them in counsayll/& of one assent with ayde of other lordes of ỹ realme spake so with the kynge, that contrary hys pleasure he was auoyded the lande, and banisshed into Irelande for that yere. But the kynge sent vnto hym oftentymes secret messangers, and comforted hym wyth many ryche gyftes, or made hym hys chyef ruler of the countre.

Anno domini.M.CCC.ix. Anno domini.M.CCC.x.

Iamys of saynt Edmunde.

Thomas Romayne. Anno.iii.

Roger Palmer.

IN thys.iii.yere /dyuers grudges began to moue & sprynge betwene the kyng and his lordes, for the exilynge of Pyers of Gauestone. wherfore to contente ampte betwene hym & them/the sayd Pyers about ỹ feast of the natiuite of our Lady was fette home agayne, and so contynued to the more myschyef of ỹ realme.

The syxte wynnyng of Rodys.

About thys tyme as testifyeth Cronica Cronicarum & other/ the knyghtes of the ordre of saynte Johñ Baptyste called saynt Johñ of Hierusalē by theyr knyghtly manhode put out of the ile of Rodes or Rodhis ỹ Turkys and infidelis, that to that day occupyed the sayd ile/& after that wanne vpon the sayd Turkys dayly and perely/so that at thys day they haue in theyr dompnyon moche of the landes, whyche at that day and longe after/was in the power of the sayd Turkes. Thys relygyō also was greatly preferryd by the fall of the templers/ whose possessyons and lādes were to them gyuen, as it is before expressed in the thyrde chappytre, and.xxi. yere of Phylyp the fayre. Thys yere also after some wryters the crowched freres came fyrste into Englande.

Anno domini.M.CCC.x. Anno domini.M.CCC.xi.

Symon Croppe.

Rychard Roffham. Anno.iiii.

Petyr Blacnay.

IN thys fourthe yere, the rule and power of Pyers of Gaue stone more and more encreasynge/in so moche that he haupnge the guydynge of all the kynges iewellys and treasoure, yode vpon a day vnto west mynster/ and there out of the kynges iewell house, toke a table & a payre of trestyllys of golde / and conueyed them wyth other iewellys oute of the lande, to the greate inpouerysshyng of the same / and ouer that brought the kynge by meane of hys wanton condycyons to manyfolde vyces, as auoutry and other.

wherfore the forsayde lordes seynge the myschyefe that dayly encreased by occasyon of thys vnhappy man / toke theyr counsayll togyther at Lyncolne /and there concluded to voyde hym agayne out of Englande, so that shortly after he was exyled into Flaunders to the kynges great dysplesure.

Anno dñi.M.CC.xi. Anno dñi.M.CC.xii.

Symon Merwode.

Johñ Gysours. Anno.v.

Rychard wylforde.

Byrth of Edwarde the thyrde.

IN thys.v.yere vpon the day of saynt Bryce, or the.xiii.daye of Nouembre/was borne at wyndesore the fyrst or eldest sonne of kyng Edwarde, ỹ after hys father was kynge of Englande, and named Edwarde the thyrde. And this yere was agayn reuoked by the kynge Pyers of Gaueston out of Flaunders / the whych after hys agayne commyng, demeaned hym worse than he before dyd.

In so moche that he dysdayned the lordes of Englande, and of them had many dysprytous and sclaunderouse wordes. wherfore the lordes of one mynde assented to put this Pyers to deth / & soone after assembled theyr powers, and besyeged hym in the castell of Scarburgh/ & in proces wan that castell, & toke hym and brought hym vnto Gauersede besyde warwycke / and there the.xix.daye of Junii smote of hys hede. wherof whan the kynge hadde knowlege, he was greuously dysplcased agayne the sayd lordes/and made hys auowe ỹ hys deth shuld be reuenged.

By meane of thys the rancoure that before betwene the kynge and hys lordes was kendeled, now began further to spredе/ so that after thys day the kyng sought occasyō agayn hys lordes, howe he myght put theym to greuaunce and dysplesure. In thys whyle dyed syr Henry Lacy erle of Lyncolne/the whych lyeng vpon his dethe bedde, requyred syr Thomas erle of Lācastre that had maryed hys doughter, that he wolde stande with the other lordes in theyr defence for the weale of Englande.

The whyche request the sayd erle graunted/and so fermely kepte or obserued it, that at length he wyth many other loste theyr lyues, as after in the story shall be shewed.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.xii.

Johñ Pontenay.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.xiii.

Johñ Lambyn.

Anno.vi.

Adam Lutekyn.

IN thys.vi.yere/the kyng held hys great court or counceyl of parlyamēt with the lordes spirituall & temporall at London. where by the aduyces of theym many good ordenaunces and statutes were made, to oppresse the ryottouse and other mysdeues that at those days were vsed. Than the kyng was sworne to kepe those ordenaunces, and after all his lordes to theyr powers.

After the whyche othe so takyn / Robert archebysshope of Caunterbury, blessed all theym that vpheldе the sayde statutes/and accursed all such as attēpted to breke any of the same. It was nat longe after that worde was broughte vnto the kynge, howe Robert le Bruze was retourned into Scotlande, and hadde caused the Scottes to rebell of newe.

ye haue before harde in the.xxxiiii. yere of Edwarde the fyrste, howe the sayd Edward chased the forenamed Roberte le Bruze oute of Scotland into Normandy. But whenne he had harde of the mysgouernyng of the realme of Englande, and specially of the dyuysyon betwene the kynge and hys lordes / he anone wyth a small ayde of the Norgans or Norwayes retourned into Scotlande.

where he demeaned hym in suche wyse to the lordes of Scotlād, that he in shorte proceſſe was agayne made kynge of that realme/ and warred strongely vppon the kynges frē-

des, &

des, and wanne from theym castelles and stroge holdes, and wrought vnto Englysshe men moche sorowe and tene.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xiii. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xiiii.

Adam Burden.

Nicholas Faryngdon. Anno.vii.

Hugh Gayton.

IN this.vii.yere, for to oppresse ỹ malice of ỹ Scottes, ỹ kyng assembled a great power/and by water entred the realme of Scotlande, and destroyed suche vyllages & townes as lay or stode in his waye. wher of herynge Robert le Bruse, with the power of Scotlande costed towarde the Englysshe men / and vpon ỹ day of the natyuyte of sayntJohan the Baptyst, mette with kynge Edwarde & his hoste at a place called * Estryuelyn, nere vnto a frēche ryuer that than was called Bannockysbourne/ where atwene the Englysshe and the Scottes that daye was foughten a cruell batayle. But in the ende the Englysshe men were constrayned to forsake the felde.

Thā the Scottes chased so egerly the Englysshe men ỹ many of thē were drowned in the fore named ryuer/and many a noble man of Englande that day was slayne in that batayll, as syr Gylbert de Clare erle of Glouceſtre, syr Robert Clyfforde, syr Edmunde of Maule the kynges stewarde, with other lordes & barones to the noumbre, as wytnesseth Guido de Columpna, of.xlii, & of knyghtes and baronettes to the noumbre of.lxvii/ouer.xvii.mē of name which that day, of the Scottes were taken prysoners. And the kynge hym selfe from that batayll scaped with great daūger/& so with a fewe of his hoste ỹ with hym escaped came vnto Berwyke, and there rested hym a season. Than the Scottes enflamed with pryde, in derysyon of the Englysshe men made this ryme as foloweth.

Maydens of Englande sore may ye morne
For your lemmans ye haue loste at
Bannockysborne.
with heue a lowe.
what weneth the kynge of Englande
So soone to haue wonne Scotlande,
with rumbylow.

* Batayle of Estryuelyn.

THis songe was after many dayes songe in daunces in ỹ carolles of the maydens & mynstrels of Scotlād, to ỹ reprofe & dysdayne of Englysshe men, with dyuers other whiche I ouerpasse. And whan kyng Edwarde had a season taryed in Berwyke, and sette that towne in suche suerty as he than myght / he retourned with smal honour into Englād, & came secretely to westmynster vpon the daye of sayntMagne or the xix. day of August.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xiiii. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xv.

Stephan of Abyngdone.

Johan Gysours. Anno.viii.

Hamonde Chykwell.

Traiterous presumpcō of a Vilayn.

IN this.viii. yere of kynge Edwarde/a vylayn called Johan Tanner yode aboute in dyuers places of Englande, & named hymselfe to be the sonne of Edwarde the fyrst/ & sayd ỹ by meane of a falce norvce he was stolne out of his cradell, and Edward whiche was a carters sonne was layde in ỹ same cradel for hym, & he hym selfe was after hardly fostred and brought vp in the northe partyes of walys. But whan this vylayne was layde for to be taken / for fere he fled to the churche of the frere Carmes or the whyte freres of Oryn forde. where he thynkynge to be in a suertye because kyng Edward ỹ fyrst was theyr founder/ rehersed agayne the formet sayenge / addynge more there vnto, that it appered well that ỹ kynge was a carters sonne, for his condycyons were accordynge to the same, as by many famylier examples and customes in hym dayly were apparent. whan he had thus contynued a seasou not without some rumoure in the lande / lastely he was take out of that place, & caryed as a felon vnto Northampton, and there reygned and iuged for his falsenes, & so drawen & hanged. The whiche at ỹ houre of dethe cōfessed, that he had a fende in his house in the symplytude of a catte / the whiche amonge other promessys to hym made, hadde assured hym that he shulde be kynge of Englande. And Guydo sayth that he confessed that he had serued the fende. iii. yeres before, to brynge his peruerse purpose aboute. Thus kynge Edwarde beset with many aduersytes / kepte a counsayll at London for reformacion of ỹ warre in Scotlande, and other thynges for the welfare of Englāde. Thē was syr Peter Spaldynge knyght sente vnto Berwyke with a crewe of sowdiours, for to for tyfye that towne, for somoche as the kynge had certayne vnderstādynge, that Robert le Bruze entended hastly to laye his syege to that towne.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xv. Anno dñi. M.CCC.xvi.

Hamonde Goodchepe.

Stephan Abyndon. Anno. ix.

wyllyam Redynge.

Berwyke lofte

IN this.ix. yere vpon mydlente sonday, was the towne & castel of Berwyke yelden or loste, by treason of the fore named Peter Spaldynge as the cōmune fame went, vnto Robert le Bruze kynge of Scottes. This yere also the derth of corne that had encreasyd yerely more and more, from the. xvi. yere of Edwarde the fyrste, was this yere at London solde for. iiii. s. a busshell. And therwith also fyll suche a morayne of bestes, that al vytayle wared scant and dere, as after shull be shewed.

In this yere also. ii. cardynalles ỹ were sent into Englāde from the. v. Clement than pope, to set an vnyon & a peace atwene the kynges of Englāde and of Scottes / were met with vpon the moore of wygylsdone in yorke shyre, & there robbed of suche stuffe and tresure as they with theym broughte. For the whiche robberye great enquery was made/ so ỹ lastly a knyght callyd syr Robert Gylbert Myddelton was accused, and sent to prison for that felony, and after at London drawen and hanged for the same, and his heed set vpon Londō brydge. But the cardynalles receyued of the kynge dowble the value of theyr harmes.

In this

In this yere also fyl so excedynge rayne in the monethes of Julii and August / that husbandes myght not bryng in theyr lytle stoze of corne that than stode vpon the grounde/so that where befoze was great scarcyte of whete, now by this was moze/and beues and motons were at excedyng pryces, by reason of the mozayne befoze spoken of.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xvi.

wyllyam Caston.

Johan wengraue.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xvii.

Anno. x.

Rauke Palmer.

IN this yere ỳ Scottes entred the bozders of Nozthumberlande, and robbed and bzent the cõtrey moste cruelly/in somoche ỳ they bzent the howses that women at that tyme laye in chylde bedde, and spared nother man, woman, noz chylde, nother relygyous noz other/and dyd so great harme that ỳ countrey by it was greatly impouerysshed. To this myscheke was ioyned another mysery.+ Foz as befoze is sayd, vytayll by reason of the mozayne was so scante, and dere, and whete and other graynes so hyghe pzysed / that pooze people ete hozse flesshe & dogges flesshe, and many other vyle bestes, whiche wonder is to byleue. And yet foz defaute dyed great multytude of people in sundzy places of the lãde. And whete was solde this yere and ỳ next folowynge, at Londõ foz. iiii. marke a quatter and aboue. And after this derthe & scaresytye of vytayle, ensued moztalytye of mẽ by goddes hãde and punysshment/so that what with warre of the Scottes, and foz hungre, and deth by moztalite and syckenesse/the people of ỳ lande was wonderslye wasted and perysshed. But al those monycyons amended not the kynge of his inozdynate lyuynge.

+ A scaresye

Anno dñi. M. CC. xvii.

Anno dñi. M. CC. xviii.

Johan Pzyoure.

Johan wentgraue.

Anno. xi.

wyllyam Furneux.

IN this. xi. yere, ỳ kynge assembled a newe host and went into Nozthũberlãde, to resyste the malyce of the Scottes / whiche dayly made assawtes vpon the bozdours, and entred ferre within the lande. wherfoze foz great dystresse & nede of fyghting men, the kynge had moch people out of ỳ southe and east partyes of Englande. Amonge the whiche contrary to theyr lybertye, the cyte of London was constrayned to fynde at theyr costes and charge. CC. men, and so sent theym to yozke, whan the kynge at yozke hadde receyued his people fromе sundzy countrees and good townes of Englande/ he with a conuenyent noumbze rode towarde Berwyke, & so sped his iournayes that at lengthe he came nere vnto Berwyke, and layde his syege aboute ỳ same.

But whyle the kynge was besyed in assawtynge of the towne / the Scottes bzake ouer the water of Swale in great noumbze/& leuynge the cooste where the kynges people laye, in secrete wyse came downe into the marchys

the marchis of yorke thyre, and there slewe the people and robbed them in moost cruell wyse. wherefore ꝑ arche bisshop of yorke constrayned of pure necessyte to defende that countre, gathered vnto hym an vntredy & dispurueyed hoost for ꝑ warre, as prpours clerkes, chanons, and other spyrituel men of the churche, wyth husbande men and other vnapte people/and so with great nombre of men and fewe warly or discrete cheuetaynes, yode agayne ꝑ Scottes/and them encoūtred at a place called Mitton vppon Swale, the. xii. day of the moneth of Octobre, and gaue vnto thē batayle. But for lacke of wyse and warely pro uysyon, the Englysshemē were beset of theyr enemyes vpon euery side/so that of them was slayne a great multytude, & the remenaunt shamefullye put to flyghte/by reason wherof the sayde archebisshop with the abbot of Selby and other were prserued.

And for so many spyrytuell mē were slayne in thys batayl/therfore it was after named of many wrytters the whyte batayll. whan the kynge was enfourmed of this ouerthrowe of the Northyrne men, and for it drewe towarde wynter / he therfore brake vp hys siege and retourned vnto yorke and soone after forther into Englād. Than was nothyng done without ꝑ aduyces and coūceylys of syr Hughe the spēcers, the father and the sonne. By whose entysemēt many thynges were done in Englande, to the great grudge as well of the noble men of the realme as of the commons of the same/so ꝑ they were had in as greate hatred and indygnacyon, as before tymes was Pyers of Gaueston. And many eupll reportes and great extorcyōs were of thē reported, as lightly men shall do that ben oute of the fauoure of the comon people.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xviii. Anno dñi. M. CCC. xix.

Johñ Pontenay.

Johñ wengraue. Anno. xii.

Johñ Dallynge.

IN this. xii. yere, the kyng helde hys greate counceyll at yorke/ where cōtrary the mynde of ꝑ lordes syr Hughe Spencer the sonne was made hyghe chaumberlayne of Englāde. By reason wherof he bare hym so hawtely and so prowde, that no lorde of thys lande myght gaynsaye hym in any thynge that he thoughte good. wherof grewe the occasyon of the barons warre as after foloweth. In thys passetyme for asmoche as ꝑ forsayd cardinalles might nothyng do concernyng the peace betwene Englande and Scotlande / the kynge purchased a curse of the. xxii. Johan then pope, to accurse Robert le Bruze and all suche as wyth hym helde or maynteyned / and it to stande so in strenght, tyll the sayd Robert had recompensed kynge Edwarde for all suche harmys as hys lande had by hym resey ued/& also tyl he had reedifyed the monasteryes and churches by hym and hys caste downe in Englande, and restored to them suche spyrytuell goodes as the Scottes had reued and taken from them. But all thys auayled nothyng, but putte the kyng and the realme to great coste & charge/so that ꝑ comons were vexed and trowbled many maner of ways/ and theyr possessyons and moueable goodes taken from them, vpon surmysed & feyned causes/ so that many were vtterly vndoon, and a fewe syn

guler

guler & mysguyded persones auaũ-
ced. whan the more partye of the ba-
rones of Englande beheldе this my-
sery of the people, how they were pu-
nyshed by the hande of god, and al-
so by the ygnorraunce of the kynge/
they in secrete maner assembled them
togyder at a towne called Shyrborñ
in , and there condiscẽded for
a reformacyon of this myschefe, to re
moue from the kynge the sayd Spẽ-
sers bothe the father and the sonne.
And this to bringe aboute, syr Tho-
mas erle of Lancastre, syr Humfrey
Bohum erle of Herefordе, syr Johan
Moubray barõ, syr Roger Clyfford
barõ, syr Goselyn Danyell barõ, syr
Roger Toket, Roger Benefeelde, syr
Roger Mortymer, Syr wyllyã Sul
lãde, syr wyllyam Elmynbrydge, syr
Johan Gyfford, and syr Johan Ty
ers barons and knyghtes, with dy-
uers other sware eche of thẽ to stãde
by other, tyll they had amended the
state of the realme. And soone after
by theyr aduyce and agrement, syr
Johan Moubraye, syr Roger Clyf-
fordе, and syr Goselyn Danyel, with
a stronge company entred vpon the
manours and castelles of the sayde
Spensers standynge in the marche
of wales, and them spoyled and de-
stroyed. Of the whiche ryot the Spẽ
sers complayned them to the kynge.
In punyshment wherof, the kynge cal
lynge to hym dyuerse of his coũcyll
at wyndsore/ there determyned that
the sayde syr Johan Moubraye, syr
Roger Clyfford, & syr Goselyn Da-
nyell, with other theyr assystentes,
shulde appere before the kynges
counsayle shortly after/ and there to
make answere vpon that ryot. And
yf they refused that to do/ that than
they shulde auoyde the lande shortly
after as banyshed men. But no day
of apparence by theym was kepte.
wherfore proclamacyons were made
in dyuers placys of the realme, and
at London the. xvi. daye of Marche,
that the sayde syr Johan Moubray,
syr Roger Clyfford and other, shuld
auoyde the lande within. x. dayes fo-
lowynge vpon payne of dethe. wher-
of herynge ỹ lordes and barones be-
fore named, assembled theym a more
strenger power/ and vpon that sent a
messynger vnto ỹ kynge, besechynge
hym humbly to remoue frome his
persone and coũseyle the Spensers,
ỹ whiche dayly dyd vnto hym great
dyshonour, and to the comune weale
of the realme great hynderaũce. The
kynge herynge this humble request,
nothynge with it beynge contente,
but ferynge greatly the destruccyon
of his owne persone / assembled his
coũseyle for reformacyon of this ma-
ter. where it was concluded that the
kynge shulde call a parlyamente at
London, there to be holden in the
folowynge. And that con-
clusyon so there taken by the sayde
counseyle / the kynge sent his letters
vnto the sayde barones, commaun-
dynge theym to come vnto the sayde
parlyament. The whiche at the day
aboue sayde, with a great hoste of
men of armes came to London/ in a
sute of iakettes of cotes of demy par-
tye of yelowe and grene, with a bãde
of whyte cast ouerthwarte.

For this skyll that parlyamente
lõge after of the comune people was
called the parlyament of whyte ban-
des.

Than for to se the kynges pease
were substancyally kepte within the
cytye of London / the mayre caused
dayly a thousande men well harnes-
sed to watche in dyuers wardes, and
at dyuerse gates of ỹ cytye/ ỹ whiche
began at foure of the clocke in the
mornynge, and so contynued tyll. vi.
at nyghte. At whiche season as ma-
ny were ordeyned too take thanne
the charge

the charge of the nyght watche, and so to contynue tyll the houre of.v. in the morynge. And for thys nyghte watche shuld be surely kept / two aldremē nyghtly were assygned to ryde about the cytie with certayne officers of the towne, to see the watchemen wele and dyscretly guyded. And the gates were shyt at.ix.of the clocke, & opened agayne at.vii.on the morow & euery cytezyn warned to haue hys harneys by hym, that he myghte be redy with shorte warnynge when so euer he were called.

Thus in ỹ cytye the sayd watche cōtynuyng/the forsayde parlyamente was holden at westmynster / where amonge other thynges for the weale of the lande, as that counceyll than coulde thynke determyned/ one was that syr Hugh Spenser the father & syr Hughe the sonne, shuld be banysshed out of ỹ realme of England for terme of lyfe. And soone after that banyshement was put in execucion/so that they bothe were broughte vnto Douer, there to take shyppynge. where syr Hugh the father made wōderfull great moone when he shulde take hys shyp/and cursed hys sonne in presence of suche as had the Guydynge of thē/ sayng that by hys meanes he was banysshed from the flour of all landes cristened. Than ỹ kyng dyssolued the parlyament, and euery man retourned to hys owne. But yt was nat longe after that worde was broughte vnto the kyng, ỹ syr Hugh Spenser the sonne houyd vpon the coaste of Englande, and toke prayes of all marchaūtes that passed by hys course.

But the kyng let as he had knowē of no suche thyng/ and suffered that wyth many mo eupl dedes to go vnpunysshed/the whyche at lengthe he repented full soore, and toke therof great remors in consyence, as it appereth in the ende of hys reygne.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xix. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xx.

Symon Abyngdon.

Hamonde Chykwell. Anno.xiii.

Johñ Preston.

In thys.xiii.yere, the kynge reuoked the actes, or withstoode them whyche were made at London in the laste parliament/ and called agayne into Englande the Spensers bothe the father & sonne, contrary the wyll of the barons / and set theym in lyke auctoryte as they before had bē to the great dystourbaunce of all the realme. And soon after vnder colour of a tytle made by the quene vnto the castell of Ledys in Kent, whych than belonged vnto syr Barthen de Bladysmore knyght than beynge on the baronys partye/the kynge besyeged the sayd castel/and by helpe of the cytezyns of London lastly wanne it by strength, and spoyled the mouables therof, whych was to a greate value after the sayeng of some wryters. In thys passetyme that the kyng hadde thus called agayne the Spensers, & ruled many thynges after hys sensuall apetyte and pleasure, nothyng regardynge the comon weale of the realme/ the barons cōsyderyng well that the Spencers shuld in processe bryng the lande in great ruyne, & the kyng to great dyshonoure, entēdyng to refourme the myschyef that therof myght ensu/gadered vnto thē great power. And whyle syr Thomas erle of Lancastre was gatheryng of hys people/ỹ.ii.Mortymers, ỹ is to say

syr Roger

syr Roger Mortymer of werke, & syr Roger of wigmore with other, yode into the marche of walys, & toke by strengthe certayne cytyes & townes belongynge to the Spencers/& pursuyd also some of the kynges seruaūtes. wherfore the kyng herynge of ỹ rebellyon of hys lordes, made hasty spede and with a greate hoste came about by Shroysbury, and was nere vnto them or they were ware/so that for fere the sayd Mortymers yelded them vnto the kynges grace & mercy the whiche forthwith were conueyed as prysoners vnto the towre of Lōdon.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xx. Anno dñi. M. CCC. xxi.

Reynolde at Condupt.

Hamonde Chykwell. Anno. xiiii.

wyllyam Prodham.

In thys. xiiii. yere, whā ỹ kyng had ordered the countre of the marchys forsayd after hys mynde, & had to hym gathered more strength about saynt Chaddys day or begynnynge of Marche, the kyng with hys people came downe to Glowceter/ where with hym mette the Spēsers with theyr people. And from thense he yode vnto Lychefeelde/at whyche season the erles of Lancaster and of Herforde were at , and there menaunt of theyr hoste at Burtō vpon Trent/& fortyfyed the brydge ỹ the kyng myght nat wynne ouer the sayde ryuer. Than the kynge was brought vnto a foorde, & beganne to set ouer his knyghtes, wherof herīng the sayde erles / forsooke the sayde towne of , and yode toward the towne or cytye of . But or they myght passe farre vppon theyr iournay / they were encoūtred of syr Aymer de Valance erle of Penbroke with the Spensers and other of the kynges hoste, vppon the. xii. daye of Marche/and of them ouerset and cōstrayned to fle, and so yode in proces of tyme to Poūtfret. In thys meane season, the erle Thomas had sente a knyght of hys named Robert Holād into Lancasshyre, for to arere hys tenauntes. But when the sayde syr Robert herde of that skyrmysshe, and howe hys mayster was fled / he than drewe hym to the kynge, and presented hym with suche companye as he had thā gathered. And thus ỹ kyngs power dayly encreased, and ỹ barons dyscreased. Thā the baronys herynge of the goyng of syr Robert Holande vnto the kynges partye, were with it sumdeale abasshed / and toke theyr counsayll in the freers of Pountfret. where after many oppynyons & reasons amonge them debated & argued yt was fynally by them concluded, ỹ they shuld goo vnto the castel of Dū stanborough/& there to holde thē tyll they myght purchase the kynges grace. And so spedyng theyr iournay thyderwarde with suche people as they than had they came in processe of tyme to a towne called Burgh brydge. where they were encountred of syr Andrewe of Harkeley knyght, wyth other that were come out of ỹ North with a stronge company. The which there nere vnto the sayde towne sette vppon the barones, and in the ende sconfited thē and chased theyr peple. In the whyche fyght was slayne the erle of Herforde, syr Roger Benefeld, and syr wyllyam Sullād and other and there was taken the erle of Lancastre, syr Roger Clyfforde, syr Johan Moubraye, syr Roger Tuckettes, syr wyllyam Fyzwyllyam, with

oo. dyuerse

dyuerſe other, & ladde vnto yorke. And thys feelde was foughten as wytneſſeth Polycronycon the .xv. daye of Marche, in the ende of ỹ yere of oure lorde a thouſande thre hundreth & twenty. It was nat longe after that ſyr Hugh Daniell and ſyr Barthew de Bladyſmoore were taken. And ſyr Thomas erle of Lancaſtre was brought agayn to his owne towne of Pountfret / where he was broughte in iugement before ſyr Aymer de Ualaunce erle of Penbroke, ſyr Johan Brytayne erle of Rychemounde, ſyr Edmunde of woodſtoke erle of Kent, ſyr Hughe Spenſer the father, and ſyr Roberte Malmeſtorp iuſtyce wyth other / and before them fynally adiuged to haue hys hedde ſtryken of. whereof execucyon was done the twelfe daye of Apryll, in the begynnyng of the yere of grace after the rekenynge of the chyrche of Englãde. M.CCC.xxi. Of this erle Thomas are dyuerſe opynyons.

For ſome wryters ſhew of hym to be a ſeynt. But Policronicõ in ỹ .xlii. chappytre of hys. vii. boke ſheweth otherwyſe. But what ſo euer erthlye men in ſuch thynges deme, it is farre frome the ſecrete iugemente of god/ ſo that to hym and hys ſentence ſuch thynges are to be referred.

From thys tyme forthwarde by ỹ terme of. v. yeres enſuyng, ỹ fortune of the Spenſers hugely encreaſed, And as faſte the quenes dyſcreaſed, tyll ſhe was releued by the kynge of of Fraunce than Charles the .v. of ỹ name, and brother vnto hyr, as after ſhalbe ſhewed.

Than to retourne vnto oure former mater, vpon the forſayde daye that erle Thomas was thus put in execucyon/ſyr Roger Tutkettes, ſyr wyllyam Fitzwyllyã, ſyr waren of Iſelde or Iſell, ſyr Henry of Bradborne, & ſyr willyã Cheyny Barones & knyghtes, were drawen & hanged, & theyr hedes ſmytten of and ſent vnto London. whyche all were putte to deth at Pontfrete forſayd, with an eſquyre called Johan Page. And at yorke ſoone after was drawen & heded ſyr Roger Clyfford, ſyr Johñ Moubray & ſyr Goſelyne Danyell Barons. And at Bryſtowe ſyr Hery wompyngton, & ſyr Henry Monforde Baneretes/ & at Glowceter ſyr Johñ Giffard & ſyr wyllyã Elmyngbrydge knyghtes/ and at London ſyr Johñ Tiers or Tryers baron / and at wyncheſſee ſyr Thomas Culpeppyr knyght / and at wyndeſore ſyr Fraunceys walden ham baron / and at Caunterbury ſyr Barthew de Bladiſmoore, & ſyr Bartholl de Aſbornham baronys. And at Cardeeffe in walys, was putte to lyke execucyon ſyr wyllyã Flempyng knyght / vpon whoſe ſoules and all cryſten Jeſus haue mercy. whan the kyng had thus ſubdued his barons/ he ſoone after aboute the feaſt of the aſſencyon of oure Lorde, kepte hys parlyamente at yorke. Durynge whyche parlyament ſyr Hugh Spenſer the father was made erle of wynchester, and ſyr Andrew of Harkeley erle of Carleyle, or after ſome wryters Cardoyll / and dyſheryted all ſuche as before hadde holden wyth the erles of Lancaſtre and of Herefordе, except ſyr Hugh Dandell and fewe other/ the whych ſyr Hugh was receyued to grace by reaſon that he had maryed a kynneſwoman of the kynges.

There was alſo ordeyned or ſoone after, that mayſter Roberte Baldok a man of cuyll fame ſhuld be chaũceler of Englãde. Than forfaytes & fynes were gathered into the kynges treaſoury, without ſparyng of pryuileged places or other / ſo that what myght be foũde, all was ſeaſed for ỹ kyng. By reaſon wherof moche treaſoure

soure was brought vnto the kynges coffers, besyde great thynges ꝑ were brybed and spoyled by the officers of dyuers shyres.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xxi. Anno dñi. M.CCC.xxii.

Rychard Constantyne.

Hamonde Chykwell. Anno.xv.

Rychard Hakeney.

IN thys.xv. yere the kyng gadered the .vi. peny of temporall mennes goodes through Englande, Irelande, & walys, that to hym was graunted at the forsayd parlyamẽt, for the defence of the Scottes. which was payed wyth great murmoure & grudge, consyderyng the manyfolde myseryes that the common people at those dayes were wrapped in. This yere also the sone appered to mannes syght as blode, and so continued by the space of. vi. houres / that is to meane in the moneth of Octobre and laste daye of the sayde moneth, from vii. of the clocke in the mornyng tyll one of the same day. After some wryters about thys tyme ꝑ Scottes entendyng to wynne an enterprise in Irelande, and for to wynne that contrey to theyr obeysaunce / entered it with a stronge hoste vnder theyr capytayne Edwarde le Bruze brother to the Scottisshe kyng. But howe it was by ayde of Englysshe men or of them selfe, the Irysshe quyt them so well, and bare thẽ so manfully that they baynquysshed the Scottes, and chased thẽ out of that countrey. In ꝑ whych chase & fyght ꝑ sayd Edward le Bruze / & many of the noble men of Scotlande were slayne.

Anno dñi. xiii. C. xxii. Anno dñi. xiii. C. xxiii.

Johñ Grantham.

Hamonde Chykwell. Anno.xvi.

Rychard of Ely.

IN this. xvi. yere, ꝑ kyng made greate prouysyon for to make a voyage into Scotland / so ꝑ about the begynnyng of August he entred that countrey. But the Scottes consyderyng the great multytude of his hoste; drewe them into the mountaynes & other places where as the Englysshemen myght nat wynne to thẽ and all to the entent for to wery and tyre the kynges great hoste. Than diuerse maladyes fell amonge the Englysshmen / so that many of thẽ dyed and were loste in that iournay, aswel for lacke of vytayl as by infyrmyte & sykenesse / so that the kyng for theyse causes & other, was constrayned to retourne into Englande about ꝑ natyuyte of our Lady. where of the scottes beynge enfourmed / syr Jamys Dowglas with other capytayns of ꝑ Scottes, wyth a stronge hooste folowed or costed ꝑ kyng, in suche wyse that about the feest of sayncte Luke, they had almooste taken the kynge at dyner at an abbey called Bella Launde or Beyghlandẽ. Thant he kynge of pure constraynte defended hym, and withstoode the Scottes as he myghte.

But after shorte and weke fyghte the kynge was compelled to flee, & by that meane to saue hym selfe. In thys skyrmysshe was taken syr Johan Bryttayne erle of Rychemõde and the kynges treasoure was there

spoyled and borne away/ and the ordenaunce belongynge to the hoste, great parte of it was by the Scottes conueyed into Scotlande. Than the Scottes in theyr retournyng homewarde wan the castell of Norham, & robbed the towne of Northallerton and other. Of thys losse and harmes was syr Andrewe of Harkeley put in wyte by mysledynge of the kynges hoste, as in the nexte yere shalbe shewed.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xxiii. Anno dñi. M. CCC. xxiiii.

Adam Salesbury.

Symon Franceys. Anno. xvii.

Johñ of Oxynforde.

IN thys. xvii. yere, the kyng beynge enfourmed that he & hys people were so put vnto dyshonoure (as in the precedyng yere is touched) of the Scottes, by ỹ vntrouth & treason of ỹ forenamed syr Andrew erle of Carleyl or Cardoyll/ sent a knyghte named syr Antony Lucy, for to arest the sayd erle, & to bryng hym safely vnto ỹ kyngs presẽce. The which syr Antony sped hym in suche wyse, that vpon the daye of sayut Chadde or ỹ seconde daye of Marche, the sayde erle was taken, and so kepte in pryson lõge after tyl Octobre folowyng at whych seasõ as affermeth Geffrey of Monmouthe, at Cardoyll in walys the sayd syr Andrew was arregned, & conuycte that he had takẽ money of the Scottes to betray ỹ kyng hys naturall lorde. For the whyche treason he was there, or after other at westchester or at Shrowysbury drawen & hãged/ and hys hede sente after to London and sette vpon the brydge.

Occasion of mortall warre.

In thys yere the warre begã to Quekyn in Gyan betwene the Englisshmen and the Frẽche. wherof the occasyon was as sayth the Frenche boke, for a bastyle or fortresse made by the lord of Mount Pesayne or Pesart a lord of Gascoyne, vpon the Frenche kynges grounde as the Frenchemen sayd. But the Gascoynes & Englisshmen iustyfyed it to be within the terytorye of Gyan. For thys fyrst began great wordes, and after manasses/ But lastly mortall warre. So ỹ the Gascoynes wyth ayde of ỹ kyngs stewarde of Englande, slewe many Frenchemen that came to ouerturne the sayde bastyle. whan Charles the v. or charles the fayre, whych at that daye was kynge of Fraunce, herde of the ouerthrow of the Frenchemẽ, and howe the Gascoynes fortyfyed the forsayd Bastyle within hys syg nory as he was enfourmed / he sente in all spede wyth a stronge hoste hys vncle Charles de Ualoys/ the which made sharpe and cruell warre vpon the Gascoynys, and wanne fromthem the townes of Angeou and Ampas wyth other / and in processe came vnto the towne or cyte of Ryoll, and laye hys syege vnto the same. But the Englysshe wyth the Gascoynes issued out of the towne, and gaue batayll vnto the Frenche men, and put theym to the worse, & slewe vppon fourtene hundreth of theym. Amonge the whyche a lord called the lorde of sayut Florentyne wyth other noble men of Fraunce were slayne/ & the other constrayned to lye forther from the towne. Howe be it in conclusion the sayd towne by apoyntement was yelden to ỹ Frẽch men, vpon condycyon that all suche

Englysshmẽ

Englysshemen as were within that town, shuld go frely with theyr good to Burdeaur/or if they wold remayn there styll, thē to be sworne to ỹ Frēch kyng, and to dwell there as Frenche men. After whych towne so yelden/ syr Edmunde of woodstoke ỹ kyngs brother than beyng at Burdeaur as the kynges deputye, made suche resistens agayne the sayd Charles de Valoys, that a trewce was taken for ỹ yere. Than about mydlent the kyng hauyng knowlege of thys warre in Guyan, and how the Frenche kynge entended to sease all Gascoyne and Guyan, for brekyng of certayn couenauntes before tyme betwene theym made, & nat by kynge Edwarde performed/ sent ouer the quene hys wyfe the Frenche kynges syster, to entreate a concorde & peace betwene thē. And in the beginnyng of August folowynge/ syr Roger Mortymer of Wygmore, by meane of a sleppynge poyson or drynke, that he gaue vnto his kepers as the comon fame went, escaped out of the toure of London, and went to the quene into Fraunce. And soone after were taken within ỹ castell of wallyngford, syr Johan Goldyngton, and syr Edmunde of ỹ Beche/ the which syr Johñ was sent vnto yorke & there hāged and drawē for the barons quarell, and hys hede sent vnto Londō brydge. And about the feast of ỹ natyuytie of our Lady/ the kyng sent ouer syr Edwarde hys sonne into Fraūce, for to do homage vnto the Frenche kynge for ỹ duchie of Guyan. whome the Frenche kyng Phylip le Beawe receyued ioyously, & caused hym to tary with the quene hys mother in the countre of Pōtyen lenger than kynge Edwarde was pleased.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xxiiii. Anno dñi. M. CCC. xxv.

Benet of Fulham.

Hamon Chyckwell. Anno. xviii.

Johñ Canston.

IN thys. xviii. yere, kynge Edwarde beyng enfourmed that the Frenche kynge had gyuen vnto syr Edwarde his sonne the duchyē of Guyan cōtrary hys mynde and pleasure, & that also the quene hys wyfe, nor the sayde syr Edwarde made no spede into Englande, nat wythstandyng hys often sendyng for thē/ was with hys sayd wyfe & sōne greuously displeased/ in so moche that proclamacyons were made at London in ỹ moneth of Decembre, ỹ yf the quene and her sonne entred nat the lande by the octaues of the Epyphany of our Lord next folowyng in peasyble wyse, that they shuld be takē for enemyes to the kyng & hys realme of Englande. But for the quene fered the trecherye of the Spēsers and other ỹ were nere vnto the kynge, she abode styll in Fraunce. wherfore kyng Edwarde after the expyracyon of ỹ fore sayd day, caused to be sealed all such lādes as to hys sayd wyfe and sonne belonged/ and the profyttes of them toke to hys owne vse. when this rumour was knowē through the more parte of Englande/ dyuerse men of name of the landes, as syr wyliyam Trussell, syr Johñ Cromewell, wyth dyuerse other, departed secretely out of Englande and saylled vnto the quene.

whan kynge Edwarde was ware of thys/ he sent vnto the Frēch kyng so sharpe and sore letters, that he monyshed the quene out of hys lande,

Syr Johan Froyssarde.

and wolde nother ayde hyr nor hyr company/but as sayth Johñ Froyzarde ꝑ made a compendyous werke in Frenche of the hole lyfe or story of the thyrde Edwarde, and therwyth erpressed many other storyes and cronycles, as of Fraunce, Flaunders, & other regions / at thys tyme when ꝑ quene was thus monissched to auoyd out of Fraũce, syr Johñ de Henawde bzother to the erle of Henawde a mã of great fame, was then in the frẽche kynges court. The whych haupnge cõpassyon of the quene & of hyr yõge sonne, requyred her to go with hym vnto hys bzothers court foresayde. wherof the quene beyng fayne graũted vnto hys request, and spedde hyr thyther shortly after/ where she with hyr company was ioyously & honorably receyued. In the tyme & season ꝑ the quene with hyr sonne lay thus in the court or countrey of the erle of Henawde/by meanes of suche as were about hyr, a maryage was cõcluded betwene syr Edwarde hyr sonne, and Philip the sayd erles doughter, vpõ certayne condycyõs. wherof one was that the sayd erle shuld at his proper costes set ouer into Englande ꝑ sayd syr Edward with a crew of. CCCC. men of armys. For the whych, prouysyon was made with all dylygence. Of thys, the fame sprange shortly in Englande. wherfore the kynge in all haste made prouysyon to haue ꝑ hauyns & the portes of hys lãde surely kept, for to resyste the landyng of his enemyes. For subdie wherof/the cyte zyns of London were constrayned to fynde at theyr proper costes an hundred men of armys / the whyche contrary theyr lybertyes, with a condycyon that after that daye it shulde be no president, they sent vnto Portchestre. In thys season & passe tyme the quene with syr Edwarde hyr son with a small company of Englysshemen, and a crewe of Henawders, of the whych syr Johñ of Henawde the erles bzother was cappytayne / toke shyppynge in those partyes / & had ꝑ wynde so fauorable vnto them, that they landed in Englande at a porte called Orwell besyde Harwyche in Suffolke the. xxv. day of Septẽbre, without any resistens of mẽ of warre agayne hyr made. To whome after hyr landyng, the people of the coũtre drewe by great companyes/ & so sped hyr towarde London. At thys tyme of the quenes thus lãdyng/the kyng was at hys cytye of Londõ. But whẽ he harde of the great people ꝑ drewe to hyr out of all countres, he fered. wherfore in safegardyng of hym selfe he fled wyth a small companye towarde walys/ & lefte mayster walter Stapyltõ bisshop of Exceter behynd hym, to haue the rule of the cytye of London. It was nat longe after the kynges departyng, that ꝑ quene sent a letter vnto the mayre & comynaltie of the cytye/ & requyred of them ayde to subdue the oppressours of ꝑ comõ weale of the realme. But to that letter was made none answere. Therefore she wrote the secõde tyme/ aduertysyng them of theyr landynge, & of the entent that she had to refourme ꝑ enormytyes & mysgouernaũce of the lande/in admonesshyng them of theyr ayde & socoure, as by the tenure of ꝑ sayd letter more playnly appereth. wherof the circumstaũce I haue left out of thys boke, for so moche as I fynde varyaunce in the contentes thereof/and also for the coppes there of ben sette oute in the cronycles of Englande and dyuers other bokes. Than thys sayde letter was tacked vpon the crosse in Chepe, whyche at that daye was called the newe crosse. In the nyght before the day of sayne Denys or the. ix. day of October. And other coppes of the same were

fastened

fastened in dyuerse other places of ꝑ cytye / wherof one was fastened vpō the mayres gate. After whyche letter thus publysshed in the cytye / the bisshop of Exceter, to whome as before is sayd the kyng had committed the rule of the cytye, sent vnto the mayre to haue the keyes of the gates of the cytye by vertue of hys commission. By the whych he stode so fermely, & vsed so sharpe wordes in the kynges name, that varyaunce grew betwene hym & the cytezyns / so ferfourth that the commons of the cytye in theyr rage toke the sayd bysshop the .xiiii. day of Octobre, and hym with .ii. of hys housholde esquyers beheded vnreuerently at ꝑ standard in welchep. And the same daye was taken for a spye a cytezyn called Johñ Marshal, whych fauoured the Spensers ptye & in ꝑ same place also beheded without proceſſe of lawe. And then the corps of ꝑ sayde bysshop with hys .ii. seruaūtes, were haryed to Thamys syde where the sayd bysshop had begonne to edyfye a toure / and there in the rubbusshe and sande of the same they buryed or conueyed these thre bodyes. whyche dispyte to hym was done after some auctoures, for so moche as he had vsurped of the comō grounde of the cytie in settyng of the sayd toure. But for what cause was he thus vngoodly & vnreuerentely delte with no mencion is made. And in thys passe tyme the quene easely & a foote space folowed ꝑ kyng / which by thys season was cōmē to Bristow hauyng with hym the Spēsers & his dyffamed chaūceller mayster Robert Baldocke, syr Johñ erle of Arundell & other. where by theyr counsayls it was agreed, that syr Hugh Spēser the father shulde remayne there and haue the rule of the towne & castell, whyle the kynge with the other toke shyppynge & sayled frome thens into walys to rayse the walshemen. And so the kyng with syr Hugh Spenser the sonne & the other, toke shyppyng at Bristowe & so sayled into walys. when the certaynte therof came vnto the quene anone she sent to Bristow the erle of Kent the kynges brother, syr Johñ of Henawde wyth dyuerse other, for to take syr Hugh Spenser the father. The whyche put them in suche deuour, that they tooke the sayde syr Hugh, and lefte a certayne to holde the towne & castell tyll the quene with hyr power came thyther. In the whyche tyme they sped them into walys / and in proceſſe tooke ꝑ kynge, hys chaunceller, the erle of Arundell, and syr Hughe Spenser the sonne, and broughte them all to the towne of Herefordе. And in thys whyle the cytezeyns of London wan the towre of Londō and kept it vnto the quenes vse.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.xxv. Anno dñi.xiii.C.xxvi.

Gylbert Moordon.

Rycharde Betayne. Anno.xix.

Johñ Cotton.

IN thys .xix. yere and begynnynge of thys mayres charge, vppon the morowe folowynge the feaste of Symon and Jude / the same daye that the mayre rode to westmynster to take hys charge, the same day at Bristow was syr Hugh Spenser the father putte to dethe, and after buryed at wynchestre. And vppon saynte Huys daye folowynge, or the .xviii. daye of Nouembre, was syr Hugh hys sonne drawē,

oo. iiii. hanged

hanged, and quartered at Herforde, and hys hed sent to London and set amonge other vpon the brydge. The comon fame of hym went, that after he was taken, he wolde take no maner sustenaūce. wherfore he was the sooner put vnto deth. Of this Hugh a versyfyer made these two verses folowynge.

Funis cum lignis a te miser ensis & ignis
Hugo securis equus abstulit omne decus.

whiche verses to them that vnderstande no latyne, maye in thys wyse be expowned or englysshed.

wyth ropes were thou bounde, and on the galowe honge.
And from thy body thyne hed wyth swerde was kytte.
Thy bowels in the fyre were throwe and burned longe,
Thy body in foure pecys eke wyth an axe was slytte,
wyth horse before drawyn fewe men pytyenge it/
Thus wyth these turmentys for thy synnes sake,
From ꝑ wretched Hugh, all worldly welthe was take.

In thys meane tyme and season, the kynge was conueyed vnto the castell of Kenelworthe, and there kepte vnder the garde of syr Henry of Lancaster, or brother vnto the erle Thomas of Lancaster that was behedyd at Pounfrette. And mayster Robert Baldoke the kynges chauncelloure was sent vnto London, and put into the pryson of Newgate/ where after he dyed myserably. The erle Johñ of Arundell was also put to deth at Herforde, wythin foure dayes of syr Hugh the ynger Spenser. Then ꝑ quene wyth syr Edwarde hyr sonne and wyth a goodly company of lordes and gentylmen retourned vnto London / and there of the cytesyns wyth greate honoure and ioye was receyued, vppon the daye of saynte Barbara, or the .iiii. daye of December/ and so conueyed vnto westmynster. where in the octaues of the Epyphanye of our lorde, a parlyament was holden/ durynge the whych certayne solēpne messangers were sent vnto the kynge to the castell of Kenelworthe/ that is to saye, thre bysshoppes, thre erles, two abbottes, ii. barons, and two iusticyes, wyth the procuratoure of that parlyament syr wyllyam Trussell, to depose hym of all kyngly dygnytye, as before was agreed by all the lordes spyrytuall and temporall and comons of ꝑ sayd parlyament/ and they to resygne vn to the kynge, all homages and feauties to hym before made in the name of all the barony of England. Then the forenamed syr wyllyam Trussell vppon the daye of the conuersyon of saynte Poule or the .xxv. daye of Januarye, by the authorytye of hys offyce in the presence of the foresayd lordes hadde these wordes folowynge vnto the kynge. I wyllyam Trussell, in ꝑ name of all men of this lande of England, and procuratoure of this parlyament/ resygne to the Edwarde, ꝑ homage that was made to the somtyme/ and from thys tyme forth, depryue the of all kyngly power. And I shall neuer be attendaunt vnto ꝑ as kynge after thys tyme. And thus was Edwarde the seconde deposyd and his sonne made kynge/ when he hadde regned full. xviii. yeres. vi. monethes & odde dayes. Than Edwarde thus remaynynge in prysone, as fyrst in the castell of Kenelworth, & after in the castell of Barkle / toke greate repētaūce of hys former lyfe, and made a lamentable complaynte for that he hadde so greuously offended god. wherof a parte I haue after set out / but not all, leste it shulde be

tedyous

tedyous to the reders or herers.

Dampnum mihi contulit tempore brumali,
Fortuna satis aspera vehementis mali.
Nullus est tam sapiens, mitis, aut formosus,
Tam prudens virtutibus, ceteris'q famosus,
Quin stultus reputabitur, & satis despectus,
Si fortuna prosperos auertat effectus.

These wyth many other after the same makynge I haue seen/ whyche are reported to be of hys owne makynge in the tyme of hys enprysonement. The whych for length of tyme I haue lefte out of thys worke / and shewyd ỹ effecte of them in Englysh as foloweth.

Whan Saturne with his colde isy face, (whyte,
The ground with hys frostys turnyth the grene to
The tyme of wynter which trees doth deface,
And causyth all verdure to auoyde quyte/ (alyte,
Than fortune, which sharpe was with stormes not
Hath me assautyd with hyr frowarde wyll,
And me beclypped with dawngers ryght yll.

What man in this worlde is so wyse or fayre,
So prudent, so vertuose, or famous vnder thayre/
But that for a foole, and for a man dispised,
Shalbe take whan fortune is from hym denided?

Alas now I crye but no man doth me moone/
For I sue to them that pytye of me haue none.
Many with gret honours I dyd whylom auaũce
That nowe wyth dyshonoure done me stynge and
saunce.
And suche as somtyme dyd me greatly feere/
Me dispise, and let not with sclaũder me to deere

O mercyfull god, what loue they dyd me shewe,
And with detraccion they do me hacke and hewe.
Alas moste synfull wretche why' shulde I thus
complayne,
If god be pleasyd that I shulde thus susteyne?
For the great offence before by me doone. (soone,
Wherfore to the good lorde I wyll retourne efte
And hooly cõmytte me thy great mercy vntyll,
And take in pacience all that may be thy wyll,
And all onely the serue with all dylygence/
Alas that before this tyme I had not that cence.
But now good lord, which arte omnipotent
Behold me moste wretched and greatly penitent/
And of my trespas forgyuenesse thou me graunt/
And by what sorow my carkes is now daunt,
Graunte it may be to my sowle remedy,
That the sooner I maye attayne it by.
For to the swete Jesu I yelde me sore wepynge/
And aske of the pardon for my grenous synnynge.

Moste blessed Jesu,
Rpote of all vertue,
Graunte I maye the sue,
In all humylyte.
Sen thou for our good
Lyste to shede thy blood
And stretche the vpon ỹ roode
For our iniquyte.

And thou most myld mother and virgin most pure
That bareste swete Jesu the worldes redempture,
That shynyst and flourysshest as floure moste sure/
And lyke as nardus of his swete odoure,
Passyth all other, so thou in all honoure
Surmountes all sayntes by thy great excellence/
Wherfore to praye for my grenouse offence,

I the beseche,
Moste holsome leche
That thou wylt seche
For me suche grace.
That when my body vyle,
My soule shall exyle,
Thou bryngе in short whyle,
It in reste and peace.

Francia.



Ewys the. xi. of ỹ name, and sonne vnto Philyppe le Beawe, or ỹ. iiii. Philyppe/ began his reygne ouer ỹ realme of Fraũce in the yere of our lorde. M. iii. hundreth and. xv, and the. viii. yere of the seconde Edward then kynge of Englande. Anone as thys Lewys was crowned/ Enguerrain, whyche as ye haue herde, was chyefe and moste secrete counceyloure wyth Phylyppe the. iiii. laste kynge

kynge of Fraunce, was called to accompte by the meane of Charles de Valoys vncle vnto thys kynge. And for so moche as the sayd Enguerram had gyuen sharpe and hastye wordes vnto the sayd Charles, in affyrmyng that moche of the kynges treasoure remayned in the handes of the sayde Charles/for thys he toke so great displeasure agayne the sayd Enguerrã, and bare towarde hym suche rãcoure and malyce, that he lefte nat tyll he had bereuyd hym of hys lyfe/ so that in processe he was accused of .xxxvi. artycles concerning treason & iniury done vnto kyng Philip forsayde, & vnto the realme of Fraunce/ ỹ which articles in order are set out in ỹ frẽch cronicle whych I here ouerpasse. By force wherof thys Enguerram was lastly conuycte and iuged vnto deth and for the same in the euyn of assencion of our Lorde hanged vppon the gybet of Parys. Thys yere also fell greate scarcyte of corne and frute in Fraunce, by meane of vnseasonable wederynge/ as was in Englande in the .ix. and .x. yeres, & before & after of the reygne of Edward the seconde at thys day & then kyng of Englande. By reason wherof great sampyne and deth of poore people fell in Fraunce, as it then dyd in Englande.

ye haue before in the .xxvii. yere of Philip father vnto this Lewys hard howe the Flemynges agayne rebelled/ & howe by the meane of Enguerram, the frenche hoste was then retourned with dishonour into Fraũce for reuengemẽt wherof, thys Lewys assembled a ryght stronge armye of the more partye of all the noble men of Fraũce/ & in the moneth of Septẽbre entred the countrey of Flaũders & so came vnto ỹ towne or nere there vnto called Courtray, & lodged hys people nere vnto the ryuer of Lys or Lyse, for so moche as ỹ brydges ouer that ryuer by the Flemynges were brokẽ. where the kyng with hys hoste so lyẽge/ the Flemynges vpõ ỹ other syde laye in howge nombre for to defende the passage of the Frenchmen. In whyche tyme & season fell suche plenty of rayne, that the ways wared noyous & foule in all that countrey. By reason whereof vytayll whyche thã was as aboue is sayd scant, was than more scars.

And ouer ỹ the feelde where the hoste laye was so wete & myry / that men and beastes were to greuously noyed. wherfore in conclusyõ ỹ kyng consyderyng those great hynderaunces & harmes to hys lordes & comõs, & that he myght in no maner wynne ouer to hys enemyes / he retourned as other before times had done, with lytell honour into Fraũce/ to ỹ great losse of ỹ kynges ordenaũce & other stuffe that myght nat be caryed thẽs by reason of depenes of the way. For whych cause & causes, the kyng was so sore displeased/ ỹ he made then a great othe, that yf he myght lyue tyll the yere folowyng, ỹ he shuld be sette so the Flemynges ỹ they shuld nat escape hys daũger / & ỹ he shuld neuer take treatye nor ende with thẽ, except they wolde fully & holy put thẽ in his grace & mercy. But in the yere folowynge about ỹ feest of Pentecoste whẽ the sayd Lewys had scantly reygned ii. yeres, he dyed at Boys in Vyncent & the .vi. daye of Junii honorablye was buryed at saynt Denyse, leuyng after hym none issue male / wherfore hys brother Phylype succeded hym in the kyngdome.

Francia.

PHylyp the .v. of that name and brother of the forenamed Lewys, whyche for his heygth was surnamed Phylyp the longe / began hys reygne ouer ỹ frẽchmẽ in ỹ yere of our

of our lorde. M. CCC. and. xvii, and the. x. yere of Edwarde the seconde than kynge of Englande. But fyrste he reygned but as regent of Fraūce, for so moche as Clemence the wyfe of kynge Lewys was left of her sayd husbande with chylde. The whiche in processe of tyme was delyuered of a man chylde named Johan, that dyed shortly after. After whose dethe ỹ sayd Philyp was forthwith proclaymed kynge of Fraunce, and crowned at Parys aboute Chrystmas folowynge/al be it ỹ the duke of Burgoyn with other for a whyle withsayd that coronacyon/and wolde haue preferred the doughter of Lewys last deed. But other of the lordes and nobles of Fraunce wolde not be agreable, ỹ a woman shulde enheryte so great a kyngdome. By meane wherof vnkyndnes kyndled atwene the kynge and the sayd duke. But by wyse medyatoures they were after acorded, in suche wyse that the sayd duke maryed the eldest doughter of ỹ kynge.

In this passe tyme suche meanes were made by the Flemynges, that an vnyte and accorde was stablysshed atwene Fraunce and them for ỹ tyme that it helde. whiche peace as testyfyeth the Frenche cronycle, was laboured and ended by a cardynall named Josselyn, & sent frome ỹ. xxii. Johan than pope / so that by medyacyon of the sayd cardynall, the erle of Flaūdres was receyued vnto ỹ kynges grace/ and at Parys dyd vnto ỹ Frenche kynge his homage, & sware vnto hym feawtye.

In the thyrde yere of the reygne of this Philyp / the prouost of Parys haupng in his prysone a Picarde a man of great rychesse, whiche for felony or lyke cryme was iudged to be hanged. The sayd prouoste for great benefyte to hym doone, and payment of great summes by ỹ sayd Picarde, toke an other poore innocent man & put hym to dethe in stede of the sayd Picarde. Of the whiche offence whā due proue of it was made before the kynges counceyll/ the sayd prouoste for the same dede was put vnto lyke iudgment.

In the fyfth yere of the sayd Philyp, all the lazarpes of the countrey of Langadocke were brente, for so moche as they were accused of theyr owne confessyon proued, that they had poysoned and entended to haue poysoned all the welles of that countrey. And for many Jewes were vnto them consentynge/ therfore many of them suffered lyke iudgment. In this yere also for somoche as in those dayes in dyuers places of Fraunce, a fonde-prophecy was broughte vp amōge the comune people, that shepherdes and herdes shulde wynne the holy lande. Than they assembled thē selfe in dyuers places and companyes, and lastly came togyder at Parys. where they were so many in nombre, by reason of other of the comune people that fell vnto them, that the Prouost of Parys was not of power to withstande thē / so that they brake prysones and toke out suche persones as them pleased/and from thens wente beggynge and robbynge tyll they came into Langedocke. where they fel vpon the Jewes, and robbed theym of all suche mouables as they myght fynde, and slewe of theym also. wherfore the other of the Jewes ferynge the sayd comunes/ gathered them with theyr wyues & chyldren to the noūbre of. v. C. into a towre, and thought to defende them & theyr wyues and chyldren from the sayd herdes. But anone as they hadde wyttynge therof/they assawted the sayd towre so egerly, that in the ende seynge they myght not escape, for very despyte they threwe theyr chyldren

downe

downe at theyr hedes / & after slewe eyther other for they shulde not fall in the handes of theyr enemyes / or elles to auoyde ỹ peynes of the fyre, whiche the herdes hadde begunne to fasten vpon the sayd towre. whā the sayd Herdes hadde thus robbed and slayne ỹ Jewes of Langdocke / they departed thens and yode towarde a a countrey called Carcasson, entendynge lyke robbery as they before had vsed. wherof ỹ countrey beynge warned/stopped & kepte so the passages, & withstode them with suche power and strengthe, that they dysseuered thē selfe by small companyes/ so that many of them were taken and hanged, & the other fled in saue gard ynge them selfe / and so this folysshe prophecy was ended with synne and shame.

Kynge Phylyppe by meane of yll cōseyle sette a great taske vpon his comunes / that is to meane the fyfth parte of theyr mouable goodes. For the whiche, consyderynge he had no charg of warres i no place, they murmured & grudged wonder sore. But how it was or this tare was leuyed/ he fell in a feuer quarteyne & a great flyx. whiche sekenesse fell vpon hym by prayer of the comunes after the Frenche boke, for leuynge of ỹ sayd greuous tare. Than for hym was made many solempne processyons & other prayers. How be it in lōge processe he dyed, whan he had languysshedde from the begynnynge of August tyl the. viii. day of January. Upon whiche day he dyed, whan he had reygned. iiii. peres & .vii. monethes & odde dayes/ leuynge after hym none heyre male/ wherfore the crowne dyscēded vnto his brother Charles erle of the Marches.

Francia.

¶ Charles the fyfth.



Arolus the fyfth or Charles the yongest of the thre bretherne or sonnes of Philyppe le Bewe begāne his reygne ouer ỹ Frenchmē, in ỹ moneth of January & yere of our lorde. M.CCC. and. xrii. and the. xv. yere of ỹ secōde Edwarde yet kynge of Englande / & was crowned at Raynes the. xii. day of February nexte ensuynge. After whiche solempnyte fynysshed & ended / he in shorte proces of tyme after sent vnto the. xrii. Johan than pope, & assertayned hym of ỹ gossyprede ỹ was atwene hym and Blanche his wyfe. wherof the crampnacyon by ỹ sayd pope was commytted vnto the bisshoppes of Paris & of Beauuais, & mayster Godfrey de Blessys prothonotayr of the countre of Rome. The whiche after due and perfyte examinacyon in that mater made/ they founde that Mawde countesse of Artoys and mother to thē fore named quene Blanche, was godmother vnto kynge Charles her husbande. Of the whiche whan they had made reporte vnto the pope / he gaue sentēce that the sayd matrymony was not legyttymat/ and cōmaunded a deuorce and a separacyon to be made atwene those. ii. persones. The whiche was shortly after executed. In the secōde yere of this Charles, dyed Robert erle of Flaūdres without yssue. wherfore the sayd erledam fell into ỹ Frenche kynges handes/ so that of it he was in processe by thagrement of the lordes of the same, put in peasyble possessyon/ all be it the erle of Neuers made therunto a pretēce & tytle.

And in this yere kynge Charles about the feest of saynt Mathewe in Septēbre, maryed his secōnde wyfe named Mary the syster of the kynge of Boheny

of Bohemy or Beme, and doughter of Henry erle of Lucenbourgh and late emperoure of Almayne, named in the lyne of the emperours Henry the.viii, or after some wryters ỳ.vii. Also in ỳ sayd yere one named Jourdan of the Jle/a Gascoyne borne, & a man of noble lynage but lowe & vyle of condycyons, to whom the forsaid pope Johñ in maryage hadde gyuen hys nyese for reuerence of his byrth/ thys season by the meane of his vyle condycyons and suche dyshoneste cõpanye as he drewe vntyll hym, he fell into many sclaũderous vyces/so that lastly he was accused of rape & murder and of felony. Of the whych he was at length in.xviii.artycles by due profe made cõycte by the lawe, and iudged to be hanged. But the kynge at the request of the pope and for the honoure of hys blode/graunted to hym a charter, and pardoned hym of all former transgressyons. But that not wythstandynge he in processe of tyme fell or retourned vn to hys olde accustomyd condicyons. And among other greate crymes by hym executed / he slewe a sergeaunt of armys belongynge to the kynge, that to hym was sent in message. For whyche murder and other detestable dedys, he was newely accused/ and vppon that somonyd to apere at Parys before the kynge and hys counsayle. At whych day of apparence he came to the sayde cytye wyth a great companye, and some noble men whiche were to hym nere of kynne / and excused him to the vttermost of theyr powers. But agayne hym and to accuse hym came many other lordes & barons. Of the whyche the marques of Ampton or Dampton wyth hys sonne were chyefe, that put causes of complaynt agayne hym. The which made suche prouys and declaracyõs agayne the sayde Jourdan, that he was cõmytted vnto the chastelet of Parys, & there to remayne as a prysoner. And in processe of tyme suche maters and tresspaces were prouyd vpon hym, that he by authorȳte of a parlyament holden at Compeyng was lastly iudged to dye. And soone after, that is to meane the. vii. day of Maye, he was drawyn to the gybbet of Parys and there hanged. In the thyrde yere of his reygne/thys Charlys gaue vnto the erle of Neuers ỳ before tyme hadde made clayme to the erledome of Flaunders, ỳ sayde erledom/the whyche of the Flemynges and inhabytauntes of that coũtrey was wel and louously receyued. Than he in shorte whyle after gaue vnto the townes of Gaunt, Brugys, Jpre, and other, dyuers pryupleges and grauntes to theyr great auauntage & profyte. But it was not longe after that he wanne of them as mych grudge and hatred as he to fore had loue & good wyll. And all for a tare ỳ he set vpon the dwellers of Brugys and the coũtrey nere there vnto/and specyally of them that dwelled in the countrey. For they thought ỳ theyr charge exceded farre the charge of ỳ dwellers within the towne. wherfore by secrete meanys they appoynted a daye of assemble amonge them selfe/ and sodeynly well armed entred the towne of Brugys, and slewe therin dyuers of the erles seruauntes, and some of the borough maysters of the sayde towne, suche as they suspected to be of counseyle of the leuynge of the sayd talke. In the.iiii.yere of his reygne, thys Charlys after the dethe of Mary hys seconde wyfe, by dyspensacion of the pope the.xxii. Johñ/ he maryed Jane his cosyn Germayn the doughter of Lewys erle of Eurour, and vncle vnto thys kynge Charlys, or brother to hys father Phylyppe le Beawe.

In this aboueſayd.iiii.yere/the quene of Englande and ſyſter vnto thys kyng Charlys of Fraũce, to treate an vnite and peace bytwene hyr lorde and hyr brother, for the warre made in Gaſcoyne, as before is towched in the.xv.yere of Edward the ſeconde hyr lorde and huſbande/ and there taryed, and retourned, as aboue in the ſayde yere is expreſſed.

In thys yere alſo the erle of Flaũders fore named, for ſuſpeccyon that he hadde to Robert of Flaũders hys vncle, leſte he for hys ſynguler auaũtage wold ſupplant hym of that erledome / he made letters vnto the gouernours of the towne, where ỹ ſayd Robert was reſyaunt and abydyng, that they ſhulde put hym to dethe. But by the warnyng of his olde and truſty frende the erlys chaũceliour/ he was warned and ſo auoyded that towne. For thys greate malyce and rancoure arose bytwene this Robert and the erle, whyche was not ſhortly pacyfyed. But it was not longe after that a nother taſke or impoſycyon was leuyed of the townes of Gaunt, Bruges, Ipre, and other townys of Flaunders. The whyche taſke was leuyed in recompenſemẽt of ſuche warres made vpon Flaunders by Phylyp le Beawe / or more dyrectely for paymẽt of twelue thouſande pownde awardyd by Joſelyn the cardynall, as before is ſhewed in the ſeconde yere of the .v. Phylyppe, that the Flemynges ſhulde paye to the French kyng for byenge of theyr peace. Of thys taſke to be leuyers or gaderers was aſſygned the pryncypall men of the ſayde townes/ ỹ whiche by theyr demeanure in the leuyenge therof demeaned them in ſuche wyſe, that they ranne in great hatred of the comon people. In ſo myche that they accuſyd theym and ſayde that they hadde leuyed or gatheryd moche more than the ſayde taſke amounted. wherfore they deſyred of the erlys counſayle, that the ſayde perſons myghte be called to accoũpt. But thys requeſte myght not be opteyned / whyche cauſed the comons to runne in further grudge and murmure. An other thynge alſo cauſed ſuſpeccyon / for the erlys counſayle and the ſayde collectours hadde ſo many ſecrete aſſembles. At lengthe whan the erlys counſayle apperceyued the murmure of the comons / they wyth the collectours condyſcendyd for a trayne, to haue taken certeyne capytaynes of the ſayd comõs/ and ſayde that at Turnaye at a daye aſſygned, the ſayd collectours ſhuld yelde vp theyr accoumpte. At whych daye the erle in proper perſone came vnto the ſayde towne of Tournaye. And there whan ỹ erle with the other of hys counceyle ſhulde haue executed theyr purpoſed entẽt/how it was by ſome warnyng or monycyon that the comons had, they wythſtode the erle and hys companye, and in the ende ſlewe many of theyr enemyes/ and toke the erle and putte hym in ſure keppynge wythin the towne of Bruges. But in thys ſkyrmyſſhe by meane of ỹ erlys party, a great part of the foreſayde towne was brent. wherfore the towne toke partye with the Flemynges / and were a greate cauſe that the erle was ſo taken and putte frome hys entent. Than the foreſayde comons to the more dyſpleaſure of the erle / admytted for theyr lorde and capytayne Roberte the vncle of the erle foreſayde / and amonge them reputed hym for erle of Flaunders. The whyche for takynge vpon hym delyuered frõ pryſon hys frende the erlys chaunceliour, whyche as aboue is ſayde had delyuered hym from former daũger, & made hym chyefe of his counceyle.

But

But to all thys was the towne of Gaunt repugnaũt/ in so moche that mortall warre beganne to sourde betwene the sayd towne & the towne of Bruges & other. And so farfourth cõtynued / that shortly after the people of Gaunt and of the other townes, met wyth them of Bruges in playne batayll, & fought cruelly. But in the ende they of Gaũt chased thẽ of Bruges/and slewe of them beyonde fyue hundreth men. But yet the erle was neuer the rather deliuered. After this the Frenche kyng sent vnto them of Bruges, requyryng them in curtoyse maner that they wolde set theyr erle at lybertye. But they sent the messangers agayne wythout spede of theyr message.

In thys whyle dyed Charles de Valoys brother vnto Philyppe le Beaw, & vncle vnto this kyng Charles/the whych languyssshed longe in a consumpcyõ or he dyed/in so moch that the oppynyon of the people was, ỹ he was so punyssshed for the iniury & malyce ỹ he bare towarde Enguerram / the whyche as ye haue before harde in the fyrste yere of thys kyng, was put vnto deth. And the rather thys fame ran vpon the sayd Charles/for so moche as in ỹ tyme of hys syckenes, he gaue great almesse. And to suche persones as he gaue or sente hys almesse vnto/he wylled them as well to pray for the soule of the sayde Enguerram as for hys owne hele.

Thys Charles de Valoyes left after hym a sonne named Philipe de Valoyes/the whych Philip for so moch as thys Charles now kyng of fraũce dyed wythout issue, he by fauoure of the lordes of that regyon was made kyng of Fraunce/& put by the ryght and tytle of Edwarde the thyrde thã kyng of Englande, the sonne of Isabel & doughter of Philyp le Beawe. whych Isabell by dyssent was right-

ful enheritour of ỹ crowne of Fraũce For whyche tytle was after cruell warre betwene the sayd Edwarde & Philyp, as in the story of the sayde Edwarde after shall appere. In the v. yere of kyng Charles the Burghmaysters & skeppyns, ỹ is to meane the rulers of the towne of Bruges/ deliuered theyr erle & set hym at larg vpon certayne condicions folowyng the whych to be obserued they caused hym to be solẽply sworne. Fyrste that after that day he shuld nat punysshe nor hurt any of the lande of Flaunders, for any displeasure to hym done or any of hys seruauntes or councel, sen the tyme that he was erle, concernyng any cause of theyr rebellion. Secũdaryly ỹ he shuld nat abrydge nor mynysshe any of theyr lyberties that they of olde tyme haue had, or by hym newly to theym graunted. Thyrdely, that in all grose maters that concerned the gouernaunce of hys realme / suche as he knewe well dyuerse of them to be expert therein, that he shulde nothynge conclude or do without theyr aduyces and assentys. And fourthly that after that day he shuld neuer vse the counsayl of the abbot of Versellay/whych they knew for theyr dedely enemy, for so moche as they before tyme had slayne hys father named Petyr Floce or Floze in the batayll of Courtray as in the syxtene yere of Philyppe le Beawe is before shewed, how be it the name of the sayde Petyr is nat there expressed. After whyche artycles wyth other fermely by the erle promysed to be kept and holden/ he was deliuered & set at large.

In the syxte yere of the reygne of thys Charles / a greate dyssencyon and varyaunce arose betwene the Dolphyne of Uyen and the duke of Sauoy/so that mortall batayll ensued vppon the same. In the whyche

moche people were slayne vpon both partyes. But in ỹ ende the Dolphyn of Vyen had the better / and toke as pryſoners in the feelde the duke of Burgoyne and the erle of Ancerne, wyth other noble men. In thys yere alſo the Gaſcoynes with ỹ Engliſſh men made warre vppon the borders of Fraunce. Agayne whome kynge Charles ſent a coſyn of hys, named ſyr Alphons de Spayne. But he ſpēt the kyng greate good, and retourned with lytle worſhyppe into Fraunce, where he dyed ſhortely after. Then the kynge ſent agayne the ſayd Gaſcoynes the erle of Ewe, & ſyr Robert Barthram than marſhall of Fraūce, with dyuerſe other noble men. In whyche ſeaſon the Gaſcoynes wyth the ſayd Engliſſhemen had gotten the caſtell of a towne ſtandynge in ỹ coūtre of Poytyew or Poytyers named ſaynt Dyngne / within whyche towne the ſayd erle & other the nobles of Fraūce were lodged / ſo ỹ betwene them dayly cruell aſſautes were exercyſed, to the great hurte of bothe partyes. Laſtly betwene thē was a daye of batayll in playne feelde accorded / where the Frenchemen to the entēt to haue the aduaūtage of the ſayd feeld & there to enbatayll thē ſelfe to theyr mooſte auaūtage / the day of the ſayd appoyntemēt iſſued of ỹ towne, & yode to the place aſſygned, whyche was a good dyſtaunce frome the forſayde towne, & there tarryed theyr enemyes. But the Gaſcoynes entendyng an other purpoſe, yode ſtreyght vnto ỹ forſayde towne / and knowyng it to be without greate defence, aſſauted and ſhortly gatte it and ſet it on fyre nat ſparynge chyrches nor other places of relygyon, as affermeth ỹ frēch boke / and that done retourned vnto the fyreſayd caſtel, and in proceſſe of tyme after retourned agayne into Gupan. whan kynge Charles was aſſertayned of thys deluſion / he was greuouſly dyſcontented agayne the Gaſcoynes, and manyſſhed theym very ſore. But in the moneth of Decē bre ſhortly enſuynge, he was taken with a greuouſe ſykeneſſe / ſo that he dyed vppon Candelmas euyn folowynge at Boys in Vyncent, and was entered at ſaynt Denyſe whā he had reygned fyue yeres and odde dayes / leuynge after hym none heyre of hys body, excepte the quene was than wyth chylde. whyche chylde dyed ſoone after ỹ byrthe. wherfore ſome queſtions for that kyngedome were moued as before touched in the ende of the fourthe yere of thys Charles, & after ſhalbe forther expreſſed.

Anglia.

Edwarde the thyrde.

EDwarde the.iii. of that name, & ſonn of Edward the ſeconde, and of Iſabell ỹ alonely doughter & chylde of Phylip le Beawe or Phylyppe the fayre, father to Charles laſte kynge of Fraunce / beganne to reygne as kynge of Englande his father yet lyuynge, the ſyr & twenty daye of January, in the ende of the yere of grace a thouſande thyre hundreth and fyr and twenty, and the fourth yere of Charles the fyfth laſt kynge of Fraunce / and was crowned at weſtmynſter vppon the daye of the purfycacyon of oure Lady nexte enſuynge.

In hys begynnynge came forthe plentye and gracyous happes / for the erthe tooke plentye, the ayre tempoure, the ſee quyetneſſe, and to the chyrche grewe peace.

In hys

In thys fyrste yere he confermed the lybertyes and fraunchyses of ỹ cytye of London / and ordeyned that the mayre for the tyme beyng shuld sytte in all places of iugement within the lyberty of the same for chiefe iustyce, the kynges persone onely excepte/ & that euery alderman that hadde ben mayre shuld be iustyce of peace in all London and Myddelsex/& eueryche alderman that hadde not be mayre shulde be iustyce of peace wythin his owne warde. And also he graunted to the cytezyns the fee ferme of London for.iii.hundreth pownde / & that they shulde not be constrayned to go out of the cytye to fyghte or defende the land for any nede. Also that after that daye the fraunchyse of the cytye shulde not be seasyd into the kynges handes / but onely for treason or rebellyon done by the hole cytye. And Southwerke was admytted to be vnder the correccyon and rule of the cytye/and the mayre of London to be baylyffe of Southwerke / and the mayre to chose & ordeyne such a baylyffe of that borough as hym lyked/ whiche ordinaunce endureth to this day. In the moneth of Apryll, for so mych as meanes were made by the frere prechours or the blacke freres, for the delyuery of kynge Edwarde the.ii. out of pryson/therfore he was had out of the castell of Kenelworth, & cõueyed vnto ỹ castel of Berkeley. where after about saynt Mathewys tyde the sayde Edward by ỹ meanes of syr Roger Mortimer was mysera bly slayne. Of this Edward are lyke opinyõs as were of Thomas of Lancaster, whyche I referre to goddys iudgement. For certayne it is that for hys former wyld and insolent lyupnge he toke greate repentaunce. And so he hadde great cause/for durynge hys reygne there was hedyd and put to deth by iugement, vppon xxviii.barons and knyghtes, ouer ỹ noble men that were slayne in Scotlande by hys infortunyte.

Kynge Edwarde as yet beynge of tender age, not passing.xv.yeres/herynge of the great pryde and presũpcyon of the Scottes, and howe they dayly warred vpon the borders, and entryd the lande in brennynge and spoylyng his people/ assembled hys people about Easter, & so sped hym toward Scotland. In whych meane tyme the Scottes were entred the land, & were comen as farre as Stãhop in Viridale/and had lodged thẽ in the woddes of Stanhop parke in dyuers bushementys. wherof ỹ kyng beyng enfourmed, made such prouysyon that he beset them roũde about, and trusted well to haue brought thẽ vnder hys subiecyon. But when the kynge thoughte to be of them moste sure/by treason of some of hys hoste the Scottes were clene escaped and retourned into Scotlande. wherof ỹ fame ranne vpon syr Roger Mortymer. But how so it was ỹ kyng loste that iournay, and retourned into Englande with lytle worshyppe. And here ye shall vnderstand that to this day the olde mayre and shyryffes, ỹ is to meane Hamunde Chyckwell, Benet Fulham, and Johñ Canston, stode in offyce tyll ỹ day folowyng of Symõ & Jude, which was almost ỹ full of ỹ fyrst yere of ỹ sayd Edward the.iii. And then for the residue of the fyrst yere, & for the more party of the second yere, was electe and charged the mayre and shyryffes folowynge.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xxvi.

Henry Darcy.

Rycharde Betayne.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xxvii.

Anno.i.

Johñ Hawteyne.

IN the ende of the fyrste yere of thys kynge Edwarde, & begynnyng of thys mayres yere/the kynge after Crystmas maryed dame Phylyppe ỹ erles doughter of Henawde in the cytye of yorke, in the euyn of ỹ conuersiõ of saynt Paule, or ỹ. xxiiii. daye of January.

The parlyamẽt of Northamton.

And soone after the kyng about ỹ feast of Pentecoste, helde hys parlyament at Northampton. At the whych parlyament by cuyll coũsayl, wherof syr Roger Mortymer & the olde quene bare the blame / the kynge made wyth the Scottes an vnprofytable and a dyshonorable peace. For fyrste he released to theym theyr feauty and homage. Also he delyuered vnto theym olde auncyent wrytynges sealed wyth the seales of the kynge of Scottes, and of dyuerse lordes of that lande bothe spyrytuall & temporall, with many other charters & patentes, by the whyche ỹ kynges of Scottes oblyged them to be feodaryes vnto ỹ crowne of Englande. At whyche season also was delyuered certeyne iewelles, whych before tymes had ben wõne frõ ỹ Scottes by kynges of England. Amonge the whych the blacke crosse of Scotlande is specyally named, a relyke accompted of great precyosyte. And nat alonely the kyng by hys synystre coũsayll lost hys tytle and ryght that he had to the realme of Scotlande, as farre as the sayd coũsayl might helpe it/but also all lordes & barones & all other men of England that had any landes or rentes within Scotlande, loste theyr ryghte in lyke maner, excepte they wolde dwel vpon the sayd landes and becomme the kynge of Scottes lyege men. And soone after was concluded a maryage betwene Dauyd le Bruze sonne of Robert le Bruze, and Jane the kynges syster / whyche of diuerse writers is surnamed Jane of the towre or Johan of Towers.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xxvii. Anno dñi. M. CCC. xxviii.

Symon Fraunces.

Hamonde Chyckewell. Anno. ii.

Henry Combmartyn.

IN thys yere, whyche at thys daye was the seconde yere of the kyng/Dauyd forsayd the son of Roberte le Bruze thã kynge of Scottes, maryed vppon the daye of mary Magdaleyne at hys towne than of Berwyke, ỹ fore named Jane syster vnto the kynge of Englande. But it was nat longe after or the Scottes in despyte of the Englysshemen, called hyr Jane make peace. And also to theyr more despyson, they made dyuerse truffes, roundes, and songes, of the whyche one is specially remembred as folowyth.

Longe beerdys hartles
Paynted hoodes wytles
Gay cotes graceles
Maketh Englande thryfteles.

whyche ryme as sayth Gydo was made by the Scottes, pryncypally for the deformyte of clothyng that at those dayes was vsed by Englysshemen. Thanne the kynge at hys parlyamẽt holden at Salysbury, made syr Roger Mortymer erle of the Marche / and syr Johan of Elthã hys owne brother he made erle of Cornewayll. where after the sayd syr Roger toke moche more vpon hym than other lordes were cõtented

tented wyth / so that by the kynges mother and hym, all thynge was ruled and guyded. And suche lordes as before tyme were assygned to haue the rule and guydynge of the kynge, as the erle of kent, syr Edmunde of wodestoek ỹ kynges vncle, ỹ erle of Lãcastre, ỹ erle marshal with dyuers byssshoppes & barons & knyghtes to the noumbre of .xii. in short proces of tyme for the more party were set by / so that the allonely rule of the lande rested in the quene and the sayde syr Roger. By meane wherof many and great thynges of the realme grewe out of ordre, whiche were tedyous to reherce.

Anno domini. M. CCC. xxviii. Anno domini. M. CCC. xxix.

Rychарde Lazar.

Johan Grauntham. Anno. iii.

Henry Gysours.

IN this thyrde mayres yere / ỹ aboue sayde syr Edmunde of wodestoke erle of kente entendynge the reformacion of the mysse ordre of the realme, beynge enformed that his brother syr Edward was in lyfe / deuysed certayne letters towchynge the delyuery of his sayd brother, and sent them to his sayd brother, of whiche dede he was shortly after accused / and by auctorite of a parlyamẽt holden at westmynster aboute Penthecost folowynge, he for that dede was iudged to haue his hede smyten of. wherof execucyon was doone the fyue and twenty day of May folowynge in the forsayd cytye of wynchester. And soone after kyng Edwarde sayled into Fraũce, and dyd homage vnto Phylyp de Valoyes then newly made kynge of Fraũce, for the duchy of Guyan in the towne of Amyas. After whiche homage so doone he was rychely feasted of the Frenche kynge, and solaced in dyuerse maner of fourmes / as by iustes, huntynge, hawkynge, and many other pleasures / and then in louynge maner toke his leue of the kynge, and so returned into Englande. The fyfthtenth day of June folowynge, was borne the kynges fyrst sonne, and at wodestoke crystened and named Edward / whiche in proces of tyme dyd growe to a noble and famouse man, and is moost comunely called in all cronycles prynce Edwarde. Of whome in this story some excellente dedes shall be expressed.

In the moneth of Octobre vpon the .xvii. daye & euen of saynt Luke / syr Roger Mortymer before named, by meanes of syr wyllĩ Mõtague, syr Rafe Stafforde, syr Johñ Neuyle & other, by a cõpased meane was takẽ in ỹ castel of Notynghã / not withstãdynge ỹ the keyes of ỹ sayde castell were daily & nyghtly vnder his ward and keppynge / the kynge, the quene, the olde quene, with dyuerse other nobles, thã beynge in the same castell lodged. The maner of the takyng of this erle syr Roger Mortymer I passe ouer, for the dyuersyte that I haue sene therof of sundry wryters. But many agreen that he with syr Symonde of Bedforde and other, were in that nyght taken and after sente vnto the towre of London / and there put in strayte keppynge. Then the kynge in shorte processe after called a parlyament at London, for the reformacyon of many thynges myssordered in the realme, by meane of ỹ forsayde syr Roger, as the comune fame went than.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xxix. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xl.

Robert of Ely.

Symon Swaylond. Anno.iiii.

Thomas Harwode.

IN this.iiii.mayes yere & ende of the thyrde yere of this kyng duryng the forsayd parliamente as aboue is touched at Londō, the forsayd syr Roger Mortymer was accused before the lordes of the parliamēt of these artycles with other/whereof v. I fynde expressed. And fyrste was layed vnto hys charge, that by hys meanes syr Edwarde of Carnaruan by mooste tyrrannouse deth in the castell of Barkley was murdered. Secundaryly that to the kynges great dyshonoure & dammage, the Scottes by hys meanes & treason escaped frō the kyng at ỳ parkè on Stāhope whych then shuld haue fallen in the kynges daūger, ne had ben ỳ fauour of the sayd Roger to thē thā shewed. Thyrdely to hym was layed, that he for execuciō of the sayd treason, receyued of ỳ capptayne of the sayd Scottes named syr James Dowglas, great summes of money. And also for lyke mede, he had to the kynges great dyshonoure and hurte of hys realme, concluded a peace betwene ỳ kyng and the Scottes / & caused to be delyuered vnto theym the charter or endenture called Ragman, wyth many other thynges to the Scottes great aduaūtage & inpouerysshyng of this realme of Englād. Fourthlye was layed to hym, that where by synystre & vnlefull meanes contrary ỳ kynges pleasure & wyll, or assente of the lordes of the kynges counsayl, he had gotten into hys possessyō moche of the kynges treasoure / he vnskylfully wasted & myspent it. By reason wherof the kyng was in necessyte, & dryuen parforce to assaye hys frēdes. Fykthlie, that he also had enpropered vnto hym dyuerse wardes belōgyng to the kyng, to hys great lucre & the kynges great hurt / and that he was more secrete with quene Isabell the kynges mother, than was to goddes pleasure or the kynges honour. The whych artycles wyth other agayne hym proued / he was by auctorite of the sayd parlyament iuged to dethe. And vpō saynt Andrewes euyn nert ensuyng, at London he was drawen & hanged. About the begynnynge of August folowyng syr Edwarde Bayloll the sonne of syr Johan Bayloll some tyme kynge of Scottes, by meanes before purchased, opteyned suche fauoure that wyth the ayde of syr Henry Beawmoūt, syr Daupd of Stroley, syr Geffery Moubray, and wyth the ayde of.ii.M. Englysshemē entred into Scotlād by water/ wher in shorte space drew vnto thē such multitude of Scottes, ỳ the sayd Edwarde was lord of a greate hoste/ & so kepte on his way tyll he came to a place called Glediſmore, or after some writers Crakismoore. where he was encountred of ỳ power of Scotlād, & fought there a cruell batayl, in ỳ which were slayn a great multitude of Scottes. By reason of whych victorie he was crowned kyng of Scottes at ỳ towne of Scone shortly after. And shortly after he mette wyth kynge Edward at the towne of Newe castell, and there vnto hym made hys homage & feawty for the lande of Scotlāde.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xxx. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xxxi.

Johñ Mockynge.

Johñ Pountnay. Anno.v.

Andrew Awbrey.

In thys

In thys fyfth mayres yere and fyrst yere of the kynge in the moneth of July, for so moche as ꝑ Scottes had busyed theym to haue slayne Edwarde Baylol theyr kynge, and hym had constrayned to auoyde hys lande, or elles to kepe hym in somme stronge holde tyll he myghte by hys frendes or lyeges be socoured / kyng Edwarde for the same entent wyth a stronge power persed the realme of Scotlande, & after layde hys syege vnto the towne of Berwyke. Uppon the.xix. daye of the forsayd moneth of July, the Scottes wyth a greate power purposyng to remoue ꝑ sayde syege, came towarde the sayd towne. wherof kyng Edward beyng enfourmed, made towarde thē / & at a place called Halydone hyll, gaue to ꝑ sayd Scottes batayll, & of them had triūphaunte victory / in so moche that he slewe of them as testifyen dyuerse wryters, viii. erles, ix. hūdreth knyghtes & banerettes, iiii.C. esquyres, and vpon .xxxii.M. of the comon people & of Englysshe men were slayne but onely.xv. persones. After whych victory thus by the kynge opteyned/the capitayne of Berwyke vpō ꝑ morew folowynge beyng sayn̄t Margarettes day, yelded to the kyng the sayde towne with the castel. And that done kyng Edward betoke the guydyng therof with all other castelles & townes within that lande, vnto the forenamed syr Edward Baylol as kyng of Scottes/& shortly after retourned into Englande. Than Dauyd the sonne of Robert le Bruze beynge as before is sayd kyng of Scottes, was constrayned with hys wyfe secretely to sayle into Fraunce / & thyder was brought by a Flemyng named Marcuell as testyfyeth the Frenche cronycle. where of Phylyppe de Valoyes than Frenche kyng/the sayd Dauyd with Jane of the towre his wyfe was receyued. And for theyr comforte the sayde Frenche kyng gaue vnto them the castell of Gaylarde, tyll fortune to them wolde be more frendelye.

Thys yere also as wytnesseth ꝑ sayd frenche cronycle, the Frenche kynge sente vnto the kynge of Englande ꝑ bysshop of Beauuays and the hyghe constable of Fraūce / whych shewed vnto kynge Edwarde, that theyr soueraygne lorde entendyd a voyage into the holy lāde/and requyred hym of hys ayde and cōpany for perfourmaunce of the sayd tournay. whereunto the kynge gaue answere vnto that request, than whan the Frenche kynge had perfourmed all suche condycions as he before tymes had promysed to do/than he sayd he shuld be contēted to gyue suche answere vnto ꝑ requeste by thē in hys name made, as therūto shulde be cōuenient. And more he added to the same, ꝑ he maruayled greatly that the sayd Frenche kynge entended any suche voyage, tyll he had clerelye acquyted hym of the sayd promysse & couenaunt. with whyche answere the Frenche kynge was nothynge contented/ so that malyce and murmour grewe and encreased betwene them dayly after. And an occasyon of thys sharpe answere was, for so moche as kynge Edward was credyble enfourmed, that the Frenche kynge had bytayll and manned.x. greate shyppes to haue saylled into Scotlande, and there to haue warred/ the whyche by tempest were wedyr dryuen into Flaunders, & so sore betyn with the see that after they had sold moch of theyr stuffe at ꝑ hauyn of Sluce, they were cōpelled of necessyte to retorne without worshyp into Fraunce. Thys with other kyndelyd suche a dedely hate betwene these.ii. crysten prynces, ꝑ moche crysten blode in ꝓcesse of tyme folowing was for theyr quarelles shadde.

Anno

In mostro humble manner

Anno dñi.xiii.C.xxxi. Anno dñi.xiii.C.xxxii.

Nycholas Pyke.

Johñ Preston. Anno.vii.

Johñ Hulbande.

IN thys.vii.yere in the wynter ſeaſon, and as ſayeth Guydo in the moneth of Nouẽbre/the kynge rode agayne towarde Scotlãde and helde hys Cryſtmas at yorke. And after the ſolempnytie of that hyghe feaſt ended, he ſped hym into Scotlãde/where her layde ſiege vnto ỹ caſtel of Kylbrydge, & laſtely wan it by ſtrengthe/ & ſet the countrey in ſome quyetneſſe. And after retourned vnto Newe caſtel vpon Tyne, and tarryed there a certayne of tyme, and helde there hys feaſte of Pentecoſte wyth great royalte. whyther within ſhorte ſpace after came syr Edward Baylol kyng of Scottes/ and vpon the day of ſaint Geruaſi & Prothaſi, or ỹ.xix. day of June, made his homage vnto kynge Edwarde / and in preſence of many other noble mẽ of bothe lãdes, ſware vnto hym fealty or fydelyte. And ỹ done he retourned into Scotlande & kyng Edward vnto yorke, & ſo vnto wyndeſore. Thẽ were al ſuch lordes of Englande as before tyme were in Edward the ſecondes dayes diſſeaſed of ſuche landes as they had in Scotlãd, reſtored agayne to theyr ſayd poſſeſſions / & for theym made theyr homage vnto ỹ kyng of Scottes, ſaynge theyr allegeaunce vnto theyr naturall ſoueraygne lorde.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xxxii. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xxxiii.

Johñ Hamonde.

Johan Ponteney. Anno.viii.

wyllyam Hanſarde.

IN thys eyghte yere certayne / ambaſſadours were ſent from Philip de Ualoyes kyng of Fraũce/ as the byſhop of Thuroyn, and the lorde of Ferry and Peyngny, for to cõclude certayn artycles of variaũce betwene theyr lord & the kyng of England. But theyr purpoſe toke none effecte/except that the kyng graũted to ſende vnto the Frẽch kyng ſhortly after, a certayne of hys lordes to haue forther comunycacion with hym tow chyng the ſayd artycles. The whych promyſe he fulfylled as appereth in the next yere enſuyng.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xxxiii. Anno domini.M.CCC.xxxiiii.

Johan.Hynkſtone.

Reynolde at Cundyte. Anno.ix.

walter Turke.

IN thys.ix. yere fell excedynge plente of rayne / & therupõ enſuyed great mozeyne of beeſtes. And in the moneth of Decembre the kyng entred agayne into Scotlande, and helde hys Cryſtmas at the caſtell of Rokkyſborough, the whyche he cauſed to be newly repayred. And after thynges there ordered to hys pleaſure, he retourned into Englande. And ſoone after he ſent the archebyſchoppe of Cauntorbury, syr Phylip de Moun-

de Moũtague, & syr Geffrey Scrope vnto the Frenche kynge / to the entent to haue concluded an amyte betwene hym and the sayd french kyng whych before was moued by ꝑ frẽch ambassade, as before is shewed in the eyghte yere of hys reygne. But whã these sayde lordes were landed in Fraunce, they were longe delayed or they myghte come to the kynges presence / in so moche that they sayd playnly vnto suche lordes of Fraũce as were assygned by ꝑ Frenche kyng to passe the tyme wyth theym, that they supposed that it was nat the kynges pleasure to speke with them. By meane of whyche wordes they were shortly after brought vnto the kynges presence / of whome they were receyued wyth ioyous countenaunce, and so contynued by a certayne of tyme in furtherynge of theyr ambassade/so ꝑ in processe of tyme a conclusyõ of peas to be had betwene Englande and Fraunce was accorded, and so forthourth spedde, that proclamaciõ therof shuld haue bẽ made in Parys and the countrey there aboute vppon the morowe folowynge But how it came in ꝑ kynges mynde the Englysshe ambassadoures were scantlye returned to theyr lodgynges, whan they were agayne sente fore / and farther enformed thanne, that the kynges pleasure and mynde was to haue Dauyd late kynge of Scottes to be included wythin the same peace/ and that he shuld agayn be restored vnto hys kyngdome. whereunto yt was answered by the Englysshe ambassadours, that theyr cõmyssyon stretched nat so farre/ nor that theyr prince had gyuen vnto thẽ any suche auctorite. wherefore all ꝑ former comunycacyõ was reuoked & adnulled / & they returned into Englande wythoute any conclusyon takynge.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xxxiiii. walter Mordon.

Reynolde at Cundyte.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xxxv. Anno. x.

Rycharde Upton.

IN thys. x. yere, for so moche as no conclusyon of vnyte & peas myght be had betwene the kynges of Englande and of Fraunce / therfore warre was proclaymed vpon bothe partyes. The whyche warre was greatly procured by the meane of syr Robert of Artoys, as in the story of Phylyp de Valoyes shalbe after shewed. Then eyther prynce sought ꝑ wayes and meanes howe eyther of theym myghte dyscontent other/in so moche that the frenche kynge sente soone after into Scotlande a crewe of frenchemen, to ayde suche enemyes as kynge Edwarde there had. By reason whereof the sayde Scottes made sharpe warre vppon the kynges seruaũtes and frendes, and putte the lande to greate vexacyon and trouble/ in so moche that ꝑ kyng was forced to assemble hys power, & to spede hym agayne thyther. Than about mydsomer the kynge entred Scotlande by the see/ & warred vpõ the Scottes and frenchemẽ. Of the whych no notary batayl is specified, except in that iouruay the kyng subdued hys enemyes, & toke there dyuerse prysoners. Amonge the which one called erle of Morret a frenche man was chefe, ꝑ after was with other in processe of tyme there deliuered in exchaũge for ꝑ erle of Namur another frẽch lord, whych thã was takẽ by gyle of Scottz as he was comyng

towarde ſaynte Johñs towne for to ayde the partye of kynge Edwarde. whā kyng Edward had agayn pacifyed the Scottes, and takē homage of ſuche as before rebelled / he than as teſtifyeth the Frenche cronicle ſtablyſſhed ỹ fore named Edward Bayloll as kyng of Scottes / & commytted the rule of the lande vnto hym, as he before tymes had done. Than the Scottes for the greate kyndēneſſe whyche they had founde in the kyng & in recōpēſemēt of the great charge whych he by ſundrye tymes had had in the defendyng of theyr enemyes / graunted & bounde them vnto hym & to hys heyres kynges of England, that they ſhuld ayde & aſſyſte hym agayne all prynces. And whan ſo euer he had warre, or any kynge of Englāde beynge ryghtfull enheritoure, agayn any prynce other wythin hys lande or without / ỹ Scottes at theyr propre coſtes & expenſes ſhuld fynde iii. C. horſemē well armed, and a. M. fotemen well & ſuffycyently arrayed for the warre / the whiche. xiii. C. men the Scottes ſhulde wage for an hole yere. And yf the kynge of Englande ended nat hys warre within the yere than he to hyre and wage the ſayde Scottes as he doth the other of hys ſouldyours. After whyche grauntes made, & bondes for the ſuertie therof receyued by ỹ kynge, as wytneſſeth the Frenche cronycle / the kynge leuynge at Edenborough a certayne of hys knyghtes to ſtrengthe ỹ Scottes agaynſte the Frenchemē, whych compaſſed all the wayes they myght to bryngе Dauyd the ſonne of Robert le Bruze in poſſeſſyon of that lāde / he ſhortlye after retourned into Englande.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xxxv. Anno dñi. M.CCC.xxxvi.

wyllyam Bzykelſworthe.

Johñ Pontnay. Anno. xi.

Johñ Northall.

IN thys. xi. yere, ỹ kynge remēbrynge the greate charge ỹ he had with the warre in Scotlāde, and alſo for the charge ỹ he dayly had in Guyan, & more contynually ſhulde haue in defēdyng of ỹ frēchmē & wynnyng of hys right / he therfore gathered treaſour vpō euery ſyde / & by dyuerſe & ſundry ways wherof ỹ maner is nat expreſſed. But ſo great plente came to hys vſe, ỹ it was ſcāt thorow out ỹ realme. By reaſon of whyche ſcarcytie, vytayll & moche other Mercimonies were exceding good chepe. For at Lōdō a quarter of whete was ſolde for. ii. s, a fat oxe for. vi. s. viii. d, a fat ſhepe for. vi. d. & viii. d. vi. peiōs for a peny, a fatte goos for. ii. d, a pygge for a peny, & ſo al other vytayl after ỹ rate. This yere alſo vpō holy Rode day or ỹ. xiiii. day of Septēbre dyed ſyr Johñ of Eltha erle of Cozne wayl & brother vnto ỹ kyng without iſſu / wherfore ỹ ſayd erldō fell into ỹ kynges hāde. This mā lyeth buryed at weſtmynſter vpō ỹ right hāde of ỹ hygh aulter. In this yere alſo apered Stella cometa in englyſſhe named ỹ blaſyng ſtarre, in an huge ſtrempng maner / wherof many & dyuerſe conſtrucciōs were had amōge the comō people, whych I paſſe ouer.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xxxvi. Anno dñi. M.CCC.xxxvii.

walter Neale.

Henry Darcy. Anno. xii.

Nycholas Crane.

In thys

In thys.xii. yere ỳ kynge helde hys parlyament, at weſtmynſter about the tyme of lent. Durynge the whych he made of the erledam of Cornewayle a duchy, & gaue it with the erledam of Cheſtre vnto Edward hys ſonne. And at thys parlyamente were made. vi. erles / that is to ſay of Derby, of Northampton, of Hũtyngdon, of Salyſbury, of Glouceter, & of Suff. as Henry of Lancaſtre was created erle of Derby or after ſomme wryters of Leyceter, wyllyam de Bothum erle of Northamptõ, wyllyam de Clynton erle of Hũtyngedon, wyllyam de Moũtague erle of Salyſbury, Hugh of Audeley erle of Glouceter, & Robert of Ufforde erle of Suffolke. And in thys parlyamente was an acte enacted, that no man ſhulde were no maner of ſylk in gowne, cote or doublet, but yf he myghte ſpende of good rente an hundreth li. by yere, whyche acte was nat longe holden.

In thys yere alſo the kynge amonge dyuerſe pryupleges graũted vnto ỳ cytezeyns of London, that the offycers of the mayres & cherykes, ſhulde from that day forthwarde vſe macys of ſyluer parcell gylte.

The kynge of Fraunce thys yere for ſo moche as he was credybly enfourmed, that kyng Edwarde wolde entre the lande of Fraũce, & to make warre vpõ theſame, he therfore made great puruepaunce to reſyſte hym. For the cõmon fame ranne thanne in Fraũce, ỳ kyng Edward entẽded nat onely to clayme Gaſcoyne & Guyan, but alſo all Fraunce as hys propre & rightfull enherytaunce in the ryghte of hys mother. wherefore the French kynge aſſembled an huge hoſte, and commytted the rule of it vnto the kynge of Nauerne, and to the erle of Alenſon brother vnto the ſayde Frenche kynge. whyche ſayde cappytaynes wyth theyr people awayted dayly the kynge of Englandes comynge / whyche theym for that yere dyſpoynted. But as teſtyfyeth the ſame Frenche cronycle / kynge Edwarde in thys whyle ſent into Flaunders a knyghte called ſyr Barnarde de Brette, for to treate of an ampte betwene hym and the Flemynges. For this cauſe, the erle of Flaunders whych was very faſt with the Frech kynge, called hys counſayll to hym, to haue theyr aduyce howe he myght beſte order hym ſelfe and hys people. In whych coũſayll were dyuers oppynyons / ſo that many thoughte it better for dyuerſe conſyderacyons / whyche were longe to reherce, that the erle ſhulde rather preferre the ampte of the kynge of Englande thã of the kynge of Fraunce. Of whyche oppynyon was a greate furtherer or promoter a knyghte of Flaunders called Countryſſye. wyth whome the erle beynge for that cauſe diſcontent ſent hym to pryſon. And ſoone after at the requeſt of the Frenche kynge, whyche layed vnto hys charge, that he hadde receyued greate ſummes of money of the kyng of Englande, for to procure and ſtyre the Flemynges agayne hym / he was beheded, for whyche dede the dwellers of Gaunte and of Bruges were ſo miſcontente, that they vtterly refuſed ỳ erle & hys counſayll, & made theym ſtronge to withſtande hys diſpleaſure. Than ỳ erle was conſtrayned to gather hys lordes & knyghtes, for the more part of ỳ cõmons were agayne hym. And in ſhort proces after met in playn batayll i a place called Marchie / where after lõge fyghte, the erle & his hoſte was put to flyghte, & forced for hys ſafegard to take a caſtel named Mal or Malet. In which ſeaſon kyng Edward beynge enfourmed of ỳ ampytie ỳ the Flemynges bare towarde hym anon ſent vnto them a knyght called

syr Galtyer or walter de Hagny, with a goodly company of archers well apoynted/ the whyche arryued in an ile called than Cazãter. whome the erle of Flaunders with a certayn of hys knyghtes encountred, & gaue vnto the Englysshemen batayl. But in the ende the erle was shamefully chased, and many of hys gentylmen slayne and take/ as syr Johñ Rodes syr wyllyã Gyll, syr Nycholas Chaũcy, with many other slayne. And syr Guy bastarde brother vnto the erle, with dyuerse other taken/ of ỹ which some were sent as prysoners into Englande.

whan the Frenche kyng had vnderstandynge of the deuysyon that was betwene the erle and hys subiectes, & how faythfull ỹ erle was vnto hym, entendynge to wynne by fayre meanes the fauour of ỹ Flemynges, whyche he knewe well he myght nat wynne by rygoure. Than he sente vnto Gaũt the byssshop of saynt Denys with other/ whych made vnto ỹ rulers of ỹ towne & of Brugges and other townes there assembled, many fayre behestes & promyses. Amõge ỹ whych one was, that the frẽch kyng wolde acquyte vnto them & delyuer vnto theyr vse, all suche lordshyppes & seygnoryes as he than withheld of theyrs and hys progenytours before hym. But all was in vayn. For kyng Edward had so sped hys nedes with thẽ, by the meanes of one named Jaques de artiuele a mã of Gaũt, which was of great substaũce, & passyng other in boldenes & capacyte of wytte & discreciõ ỹ the sayd towne of Gaũt with Brugges, Ipre, Courtryke or Courtrey, Cassyle, and other there about, condyssended and promysed ioyntly and hooly, to refuse ỹ frẽche kynge, & to take the kynge of Englandes partye/ and the rather for the warrs whych before tyme Philip de Valoyes made vpon them in the begynnyng of hys reygne, as in ỹ fyrst yere of the story of the sayde Phylyp shall after appere.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xxvii. Anno dñi. M.CCC.xxviii.

wyllam of Pountfreyt.

Henry Darcy. Anno.xiii.

Hugo Marbre.

IN thys .xiii. yere, kynge Edwarde with quene Philip hys wyfe, for more assured stablysshemẽt of ampyte to be had betwene hym and the Holanders, Seläders, & Brabãders, passed the see in the begynnyng of ỹ moneth of Junii / & sayled wyth a goodly cõpany into the coũtrey of Brabãt, the quene thã beynge great with chyld, where of the erle of Brabãt he was Honorablie receyued. In whyche season of hys there beynge, kyng Edwarde gat vnto hym many frendes. Amonge the whych Lewys of Baupere, whych than toke vpon hym as Emperour, all be that before that tyme he was of the .xxii. Johan than pope accursed, was one. Thys Lewys had such fauoure vnto kyng Edwarde, that he assygned and ordeyned hym for Vycayr of ỹ empyre, by reason of whyche office kyng Edwarde made oute hys commaundementes, & dyd many thynges to hys aduauntage and profyte.

* Byrth of Lyonell.

* In thys season quene Phylyppe lyenge at Andwarpe, was delyuered of a man chylde, that was named Lyonell. And Phylyp de Valoys haupnge knowelege of all thys demeanure of kynge Edwarde, gathered vnto hym greate strenthe / so that

so that he had about hym innumerable people / and tarved with them at Ampas and there about, from ꝑ ende of August tyll ꝑ begynnyng of Octobre. And whā he sawe that kyng Edwarde came nat / he deuyded ꝑ great hoste, in retournyng many of theym into theyr owne countreys / and the other he sente vnto stronge holdes & castelles for to let ꝑ passage of kynge Edwarde and hys hoste into the lāde of Fraunce. And in thys passe tyme the Frenche kynge had sent dyuerse shyppes vnto the see wyth men of warre, for to take englysshe marchaūtes & other that came in theyr course. And so befelle that they encountred with .ii. great shyppes of Englande called the Edward and the Cristofer the whiche as testyfyeth the Frenche cronycle were freyght with greate rychesse, and also well manned. Anone as eyther was ware of other / gonnes and shot of longe bowes arblasters & were nat spared on nother syde / so that betwene thē was a cruell fyghte but nat egall. For of the Frenchemē were .xiii. sayles great and smal, and of the Englysshe men but fyue that is to meane these two forsayd great shyppes, two barkys, and a carvyll / the whyche thre small shyppes escaped by theyr deliuer saylynge / & the ii. abode and fought beyonde .iv. houres, in so moche that there was slayn vpon both partyes aboue .vi. C. men But in the ende the sayd .ii. shyppes were taken & brought into ꝑ Frēch kynges stremes / and many of the Englysshemen that were sore wounded were cast into the see. In thys yere also the sayd Frenschemē of that Nauy landed at Southāpton sodeynly: and spoyled the towne, and brente a great parte therof. And ouer this the Frenche kynge made warre in Gascoyn, and wanne there dyuerse smal pyles and one stroge castell standing in the countrey of Gascoyne called Agenoys, whych castell was named Pēne. But all this season was kyng Edwarde in Almayne, & made allyaunce with dyuerse prynces of that coūtrey and other / and toke assuraūces of them that they shulde ayde & assyste hym to wynne hys ryght and tytle ꝑ he had to ꝑ crowne of Fraūce, & after returned into Flaūders, wher he tarved all thys mayres yere.

Anno domini .M.CCC.xxviii. Anno domini .M.CCC.xxix.

wyllyam Thorney.

Andrew Awbry. Anno .xiii.

Roger Forsham.

In thys .xiii. yere kynge Edwarde spedyng hys busynesse in Almayn & Flaūders, as in ꝑ precedynge yere is touched, retourned into Englande, and called hys hygh court of parlyament at westmynster about ꝑ tyme of lent. In whyche parlyamēt / ꝑ kyng ared of hys cōmons for the mayntenaunce of hys warre, & to recouer hys ryghte in Fraunce ꝑ .v. part of theyr moueable goodes, ꝑ custome of wolles for .ii. yeres to be payed afore hāde, & ꝑ .ix. sheke of euery mānes corn / ꝑ which at lēgth was graūted. And for ꝑ leuyeng therof, he caused ꝑ lordes of euery shyre thorugh hys lāde to answere to hi, euery lorde for ꝑ cyrcuyte he dwelled nere vnto. But or all thys graūt were gadered & payed / the loue of the poore people tourned into hatred, & prayer into cursyng. And for ꝑ kyng shuld nede and occupye for hys prouisiōs moche money or this graūt myght be leuted / he

therfore borowed many notable ſummes of dyuerſe cytyes & partyculer perſones of thys lande. Amonge the whyche he than borowed of the cytye of London.xx.M.marke,to be repayed of the money cõmynge of the fore ſayd graunt / the whych foreſayd.xx. M.marke was leuied in the wardes of the cytye in fourme as foloweth.

The towre warde was ſeſſed at.iii.C lxv.li,wherof wyllyam of Byrkleſworthe lent.C.li/ & the reſydue was leuyed of.xii.perſones of that warde.

Byllyngyſgate warde was ſeſſed at vii.C.lxiii.li/wherof Johñ de Cawſton lent.ii.C.li,& Aleyn Gyll.ii.C.li and the reſidue was lēt by.xxvi. perſones of that warde.

The brydge was ſeſſed at.vii.C.lxv. li.vi.ſ.viii.d / wherof Johñ Louekyne bare.ii.c.li, Johñ Walwayn/& Rauffe de Lenone.ii.C.li/ and the reſydue was borne by.xxxiii. perſones of that warde. The warde of Dowgate was ſeſſed at.vi.C.lx.li.x.ſ/of ỳ whych Henry Pycarde lent two.C. marke, Bartholmewe Freſlyng and wyllyam Leglyſhe.ii.C.marke/& the reſydue was leuyed of.xxv. perſones of that warde. Langbourne warde was ſeſſed at.ccc.lii.li.ſyxe.ſ.viii.d / wherof Thomas Horwolde lent.C. li, Johñ Peche.C.marke/ & the reſte was lent by .xv.dwellers of ỳ warde.

walbrooke warde was ſeſſed at.ix C.xi.li,wherof Johñ Adam lent.ii.C li, Johñ de Bery and Symon Pyſtour peperer.ii.C.li, & Adã de Bery and Johñ Not.ii.C.marke / and the reſt was leuyed of .xxiii. perſones of that warde.

Byſſhoppiſgate warde was ſeſſed at.v.C.lix.li.vi.ſ.viii.d/wherof Adã Fraunceſſe lent.ii.C.li, & Symonde Browne and Johñ de ſaynt Albone ii.C.li/ & the reſydue was leuyed of x.perſones of that warde.

Lymeſtrete warde was ſeſſed at.C x.li/wherof Auguſtyne waleys lente C.li/and.x.li.was leuyed of.iii.perſones of that warde.

Cornehyll warde was ſeſſed at.iii. C.xv.li/ wherof Johan Colyng and Robert Manhale drapers bare that one.C.li,and the laſte.C. marke and the reſt was leuyed of.xx.perſones of the ſayd warde.

Chepe warde was ſeſſed at.v.C. xvii.li.x.ſ/wherof Barthilmew Thomaſyn mercer lent.cc.poũde,Stephã Caundyſſhe draper,wyllyã Holbech & Johan Harwarde eyther of theym C.marke,Johñ Dolſoby goldſmyth cc.marke,and Johan Fawkys & Jamys Naware eyther of theym.C.li/ & the reſt was leuyed of.lxi.perſones of the ſame warde.

Bradſtrete warde was ſeſſed at.v C.lxxx.and.viii.li/ wherof Thomas Legge ſkynner lēt.ccc.li, Johñ Harwarde ſtoke.cc.marke / and the reſydue was leuyed of eyght perſones of that warde. Vyntrye warde was ſeſſed at.ccccc.xxxiii.li.xvi.ſ.viii.d, wherof walter Turke fyſſhemonger lent.cc.marke,Johñ Stoday vyntener.C.li/ Symonde Bolſely & Johñ Rothynge.cc.marke / and ỳ reſt was leuyed of.xxiiii. perſons of ỳ warde.

The warde of Bredſtrete was ſeſſed at.cccc.lxi.li.xvi.ſ.viii.d / wherof Adam Brabeſone lent.cc.li, and the reſt was leuyed of.xxx. perſones of ỳ warde. The warde of Quene hyth was ſeſſed at.cccc.xxv.li.xiii.ſ.iiii.d wherof Rychard of Kyſlyngbury lēt cc.li,& Johñ of Gloucetre.C.marke/ and the reſydue was leuyed of.xvii. perſones of that warde.

Cordwayner ſtrete warde was ſeſſed at two thouſande and hundreth lxxx.xv.li.iii.ſ.iiii.d/wherof Andrew Awbrey grocer lente.viii.hundreth marke, wyllyam de Cawſtone.cc.li, James Andrewe and Thomas Brãdon eyther of them,ii.hũdreth marke

wyllyam

willyam of worceter.ii.C.marke, Johan Bechamp and the wyfe of Johñ Halle eyther of them.C.li, and Johñ Bulle, Johñ Gonwardby, & wyllyã Hampſtede eche of them.C.marke/& the reſte whyche is.vi. hundreth .lxi. xvi.ſ.viii.d, was lent by.xliiii. perſones of that warde.

The warde of faryngedone within was ſeſſed at.vii.C.xxx.li.xvi.ſ.viii. d.wherof Gylbert Staynedrope lent ii.C.li.& the reſte was leuyed of.lxvii perſones of that warde.

Faryngdone without the wallys was ſeſſed at.C.xiiii.li.xiii.ſ.iiii.d. whyche ſumme was leuyed of.xxi. perſones of that warde.

Crepulgate warde was ſeſſed at iiii.C.lxii.li.x.ſ/wherof Rychard Lazar mercer lêt.ii.C.marke, Symõde de Bedyngton.C.marke/and the reſydue was leuyed of.xxxvii.perſones of the ſayd warde.

Colmanſtrete warde was ſeſſed at M.li.li.xvi.s.viii.d / wherof Symõ de Fraunces lent.viii.C.li, Henry of warre and Johñ Denys .ii. hũdreth marke/and ỹ reſidue was lent by.vi. perſones of that warde.

Candelwyke ſtrete warde was ſeſſed at.C.xxxiii.li.vi.s.viii.d/ỹ which ſayd ſumme was leuyed of.xxiii. perſones of the ſayd warde.

The warde of Algate was ſtynted or ſeſſed at.xxx.li, and leuyed of ſyx enhabytauntes of the ſayd warde.

Portſokyn warde was ſeſſed at xxvii.li.x.s,& was leuyed of.vii. perſones of that warde.

Caſtell Baynarde warde was ſeſſed at.lxiii.li.vi.s.viii.d, and lent by xii.perſones of that warde.

Baſſyngeſhawe warde was ſeſſed at.lxxix.li.xiii.s.iiii.d, and leuyed of ſyxe perſones.

Aldrychgate warde was ſette or ſeſſed at.lvii.li.x.s/and layed oute or lente by.v.perſones of that warde.

whyche ſumme totall of the forſayd xxv.wardes, amounteth to the ſũme of.xiii.thouſande.iii.hundreth.lxxx.& fyue.li.xiii.s.& iiii.d. whyche ſumme exceedeth the ſumme of twenty thouſand marke.li.li.vi.s. viii..d. And ye ſhall vnderſtãde that he ỹ payed leeſt towarde thys lowne payed.l.s, & ſoo aſcendyng to theſe ſummes aboue ſerſed.wherof many was ſeſſed at.xl li.l.li.& lx.li,& many other of dyuerſe meane ſummes.

In thys yere alſo ỹ kyng chaũged hys coyne,& made the noble and the halfe noble of ỹ value of fyrſt s.viii.d, whyche at thys day is worthe viii.s. ix.d. or x.d, & the halfe noble after the rate yf they kepe the trewe weyghte / and prouided dyuerſe other thynges for the weale of hys realme & ſpede of hys iourney into Fraunce.

WHan kyng Edward had ſet his lande in an order, & had all thyng metely prouided for his nede/he than aboute Lammeſſe ſayled into Braban,and there helde hys coũſayl with hys frendes/and by theyr aduyces made clayme to ỹ hole crowne of Fraunce as hys ryghtefull enherytaunce/& for more auctorytye of the ſame entermedeled the armes of England with ỹ armys of Fraũce, as ye ſe them at this daye. Then kynge Philyp beyng of theſe thynges warned/gathered an howge hoſte,& came with them to a towne called Uermendoys. And kyng Edwarde with hys people entred ỹ coũtrey called Thereſſe/& brẽt & waſted ỹ coũtrey before hym. Thã kyng Philip drew toward the Engliſſhe hoſte,and came vnto a place or towne called in frẽch Buryõ Foſſe / where he entended as ſayth ỹ frenche boke to haue ſet vpon ỹ Engqq. iii. glyſſhe-

glyſſhemen. But by counſayl of hys lo:des, fo: dyuerſe cauſes he was let to hys dyſpleaſure. Fo: after ꝑ daye, he myght fynde no conuenyent tyme fo: to aſſayle hys enemyes/ſo that in concluſyon eyther hoſte departed frō other without batayll o: fyght / and kynge Edwarde toke hys wey towarde Gaunt, & kyng Phylip retourned into Fraunce. Than kynge Edwarde by meanes of hys frende Jaques de Artyuele, had all hys pleaſure of the towne of Gaunt/ & receyued of them othe and homage. And after dyuerſe concluſiōs with them and other take / he leuyng there the quene after the teſtymony of ſome wryters, retourned agayne into Enlāde/ & left with the quene, which thā was great with chylde, ꝑ erles of Salyſbury & of Oxynfo:de / whyche in ꝑ kynges abſence ayded well ꝑ Flemynges agayne the frēch kyng, & dyd dyuerſe marcyall actes / whyche I here paſſe ouer. But i ꝑces ꝑ erle of Salyſbury was take pryſoner/ & diuers englyſſh men ſlayne at ꝑ aſſaut of a towne called ꝑ Ile in Flaūders o: of flaūders.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xxxix.

Adam Lucas.

Andrewe Awbry.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xl.

Anno. xv.

Bartholomewe Marres.

IN thys. xv. yere, whyle ꝑ kyng was buſyed in Englande to make prouyſyō fo: mete & money to withſtande the Frēche kyng, aſwell fo: the warre that the ſayde Frenche kyng made vpō the Flemynges & other beyng ꝑ kynges frendes, as fo: hys owne particuler cauſes, ꝑ quene as before is ſayd beyng at the towne of Gaunt, was deliuered of a ſonne, which after was named Johñ, about Cryſtmas in the begynnyge of thys mayres yere, & ende of this. xiiii. yere. This chyld whā he came to mannes eſtate, was ſurnamed Johñ of Gaūt & was fyrſt erle of Rychemoūt & after duke of Lācaſter. & alſo faſt as kyng Edwarde ꝓuyded fo: abylemētes of warre in Englāde, ſo faſt & haſty prouyſyō made the Frēch kyng to withſtande kyng Edward both by lāde & by water/ſo ꝑ he had a great & ſtrōge nauy vpō ꝑ ſee. Kyng Edward thā in ꝑ moneth of Junii, with. ii. C. ſayles tooke ſhyppynge, & ſayled towarde Flaūders/ & vpō the ſee met o: came vnto hym ſyr Robert Morley with ꝑ north naupe of Englāde/ſo ꝑ he had in al aboue. iii. C. ſayles. And at myd ſomer vppon ſaynte Johñs eupn he fought with the frēch kynges nauy, whyche lay in a wayte fo: hym nere to the towne called the Sluſe. Of thys nauy whyche were in noumber by the repo:te of the frēche boke vpō iiii. C. ſayles, wherof were chyefe admyralles ſyr Hugh Queret, & ſyr Nycholas Buchet, & one named Barbe Noyre o: in Englyſh Blacke berde/ the whych cappayns o: admyralles anone as they eſpied ꝑ englyſſh flote they made towarde thē to begyn the fyght. iiii. galeys ſet vpō a ſhyppe of auaūtage which ſayled before ꝑ other named ꝑ ryche Oliuer/the which. iiii galeys the fo:e named Barbe Noyre had the cunduyt of / & aſſayled thys ſayd ſhyppe on euery parte, & bet her with gunneſhot & her men with hayl ſhot exceedyngely / ſo that of the men within her were many ſlayn and mo woūded, & lykely to haue ben ſho:tly won ne had bē the reſcous of her cōpany: thā were the ſayd foure galeys ſoone becleped with ꝑ Engliſh nauy, & ſo cruelly aſſayled, that they were bo:ded

borded or they myghte be rescowed. Then approched the hole flote vpon bothe sydes, with hydous & ferefull dynne & noyse of gunnes, with terryble flampnge of wylde fyre & other, with thycke shot of quarelles & arowes/and crulshynge of shyppes, ỹ hydous & wōderfull it was to beholde/ so that many a soule was there expelled from theyr bodies i shorte whyle. This mortall and cruell fyght cōtynued as sayth the Frenche story by ỹ space of.viii.howres or more, i suche wyse ỹ harde it was to knowe whether parte had the better/ & so many deed and wounded men were cast into the see, that the water whiche was in cyrcuyte aboute them was coloured or dyed as reed. * But in ỹ ende by grace & great māhode of ỹ kynge, whiche there was sore woūded. And by his great confort/ ỹ Frenchemen were chased, and many of theyr shyppes bowged & taken with many prysoners in them. Amonge the whiche the forenamed admyralles or cappytaynes, syr Nycholas Buchet & syr Hugh Queret were. ii/ the whiche in despyte of the Frenchemen were hanged vpon ỹ sayles of theyr shyppes, which they were takē in. And amōge the shyppes that were at this season taken, were recouered the.ii. foresayd shyppes named the Edwarde and ỹ Crystofer/the whiche before were taken by the Frenchemen, as it before is shewed in ỹ.iii.yere of this kynge. In this batayle also as is testyfyed of many and dyuerse wryters, were slayne vpon the noumber of.xxx.M. Frenchemen/al be it ỹ Frenche boke nameth so many to be slayne vpon bothe partyes/ & excuse this myssfortune by the neglygence of syr Nycholas Buchet, whiche kepte the frēche naup so longe within the hauen, that they were so closed in with the Englysh naup, ỹ a great noūbre of them myght neuer stryke stroke nor shote theyr ordenaunce, but to the hurte of theyr owne company. whā kynge Edwarde had optayned this tryumphaunt victory of his enmyes, he yelded great thākes vnto god. How be it he was fayne to tary a season within his shyppe, by reason of a woūde ỹ which he had receyued in his thyghe. In whiche season ỹ quene his wyfe came to vysyte hym, and retourned agayne vnto Gaūt. And after a fewe dayes passed/ ỹ kynge departed from Swynne, & rode vnto our lady of Ardenbourghe/ & sent his naup in the nexte hauen to Brugys, & moche of his people vnto the towne of Gaūt. And whā he had accōplisshed his pylgrymage, he rode vnto Brugys, and from thense vnto Gaūt/where of the dwellers he was ioyously receyued. Than kynge Edwarde there called a great counsayle/ by the whiche it was determyned that he shulde prepare.ii. hostes/ wherof ỹ one shuld be of ỹ mē of Gaūt & of ỹ townes there aboute, of ỹ which certayne lordes of Almayne shuld haue ỹ rule/ & ỹ other hoste shulde be of mē of Brugys & of Englysh archers/ & of ỹ host was ordeyned syr Robert of Artoys to be leder & capitayne. whā ỹ sayd.ii. hostes were all garnysshed with all thynge for thē nedeful/ ỹ fyrst of them was sent vnto ỹ town of Turney, and the other vnto ỹ towne of saynt Omers. The which.ii. townes at ỹ day were lyke strēgth vnto Fraūce, as Calays is now vnto England. wherfore the frēch kynge for the more suretye of them, sent vnto Tournay the erle of Foys & syr Barthā than marshall of Fraūce, with.iiii.M. men of armis, & vnto saynt Omers he sent ỹ duke of Burgoyn with a great cōpany of lordes & other. whā sir Robert of Artois had lyen a certeyn tyme before saynt Omers, & many sharpe assautys by

The manly corrage of Edward the thyrde. *

hym and his people had ben gyuen to it, in the whiche dyuerse foztunes fell & chaunces of warre, which were tedyous and longe to wryte/ fynally vpon the mozowe after sayntt James day oz the.xxvi.day of Julii / ỹ duke of Burgoyne with his retynue yssued out of the towne, & foughte with ỹ sayd syz Robert & his people a lõge season. In ỹ which fyght was slayne of the dukes partye the lozde of Hamelcourte, syz Froysard de Beasoz, the lozde of sayntt Uran a lozde of Spayne, & a Burgonyon lozde called the lozde of Bzanges, with other dyuerse knyghtes and gentylmen to the noũber of.liiii. as sayth ỹ Frẽche cronycle / and of the comune people vpon.iii.M. But in shozt tyme after the power of the duke encreased in suche wyse, that syz Robert with his cõpany was fayne to departe thense, and so yode into Jpze, & there helde hym. Then as aboue is sayde when kynge Edwarde had sent fozth ỹ foze named.ii.hostes / he with the rest of his people yode vnto a place within. ii. Englysshe myles of Tournaye called in Frẽche le Pount de Pzee / and there lodged hym & his people. And Phylyp de Ualoys ỹ Frẽche kynge, came with his people vnto an house of relegyon, whiche then was called ỹ pziozy of sayntt Andzewe. At which two places these two sayde pzynces thus lyenge with great strengthes vpon eyther syde/ kyng Edwarde by counseyll of his lozdes sent vnto ỹ Frenche kynge a letter, conteynynge as foloweth.

A letter sent by kyng Edward to the frẽch kyng

EDwarde by the grace of god kyng of Englãde & of Fraũce, and lozde of Jrelande. Syz Phylyp de Ualoys, by longe tyme we haue exhozted by messangers and other manyfolde maner of wayes, to ỹ ende ỹ ye shulde restoze vnto vs, & do to vs reason of oure ryghtfull enheryta ũce of the realme of Fraunce/ the whiche yehaue longe occupyed with great wzonge. And foz that that we se well that ye entende to perseuer in youre iniurpous witholdynge without to do vnto vs reason / foz our ryght to demaũde we are entred into our lãde of Flaundzes as souerayne lozde of the same, and passe by that countre/ doynge you ferther to vnderstande, that we haue taken with the helpe of our lozde Jesu chzyst the ryght, with the power of the sayd countrey, and with our people them allyed / beholdynge the ryght, which we haue in ỹ heryptage that ye wythholde frome vs with great wzonge / and dzawe vs towarde you to make a shozt ende vppon our ryghtfull demaunde and chalenge, yf ye wyll towarde vs appzoche. And foz so moch that so great power of mẽ of Armes that came vpon our partyes, may not longe holde thẽ togythers without great destruccyon of ỹ people. whiche euery good cryslen man ought to eschewe/ & specyally a pzynce oz other that haue the gouernaunce of people. we therfoze moche desyze, ỹ in shozte dayes they may mete. And foz to eschewe ỹ mozemozlalyte of the people / so that the quarell apparent atwene vs, to the destruccyon of oure chalenge, maye stãde in tryal atwene vs two/ whiche thynge we offre vnto you foz the causes aboue sayd. How be it that we remembze well the nobleneſſe of your persone, and your great wysedome & aduysement. And in case that ye wyll not therof/ that then in our chalenge be set to afferme the batayll of youre selfe with an hundzeth persones of your party of the moste suffycyent/ & we in lyke wyse with as many. And yf ye wyl that one wey noz the other/ that then ye wyll assygne a certayne day befoze the cytye of Tournay to fyght

fyght with ſtrength agaynſt ſtrēgth, within.x. dayes after ꝑ fyght of theſe letters. And we wolde that all the worlde knewe, that theſe thynges aboue ſayd in thys oure deſyre is nat for pryde nor for great preſumpcion/ but for that that oure Lorde myghte ſet the more reſte and peace amonge the cryſten/and for that that the enemyes of god myght be reſyſted, and cryſtendome enhaunced. And ꝑ way ꝑ ye wyll chooſe of theſe offers aboue ſayd/wryte agayne to vs by the bringer of theſe letters, to hym makynge haſtye delyueraunce. Gyuen vnder our great ſeale at Eſchine ſur le ſcaut nere vnto the cytye of Tourney, the xv. day of the moneth of Jule. Upon recept of whych letters the Frenche kynge by the aduice of hys counſayl wrote agayne vnto kynge Edwarde in maner and fourme as foloweth.

The Frenche kynges letter.

PHilip by ꝑ grace of god kyng of Fraunce/ to Edward kyng of Engla̅d. we haue ſene a letter ſent to Philip de Ualoys brought to our court/ in ꝑ which letter were certayn requeſtes. And for ſo moche as the ſayd letter came nat to vs / the ſayde requeſtes were nat made to vs, lyke as it apereth by the tenoure of ꝑ ſayd letter. we therfore to you make none anſwer. Neuertheleſſe for that that we vnderſtonde by the ſayde letter & otherwyſe, that ye are enbatelled in our realme of Fraunce, doyng great domage to vs and our ſayd realme, & to the people/ moued of wyll without reaſon, nat regardynge ꝑ whych a lyege man ought to regarde to hys lyege and ſoueraygne lorde / for ye are entred into our homage in youre ſelfe, a knowelegyng as reaſon is to the kynge of Fraunce, and promiſed obeyſaunce ſuche as a lyege man oughte vnto hys ſoueraygne lorde/ lyke as it apereth by youre letters patētes ſealed with your great ſeale, the whyche we haue by vs, and for that ſhulde you be obedyente vnto vs. Our entente is ſuche, that whā we ſhal thynke it good, we ſhal chaſe you out of our realme to our honour and mageſte royall, and to the profet of our people. And in thys doynge we haue faythfull hope in oure lorde Jeſu Chryſte, from whome all good to vs commyth. For by your enterpryſe whyche is of wyll nat reaſonable / hathe ben lette the holy voyage ouer the ſee, and greate quantyte of criſten people put to deth, and ꝑ holy ſerupce of god lefte, and holy chyrch vnworſhypped & vnhonoured, wyth many great enormyties. And in that that ye thynke to haue the Flemynges in your ayde / we thynke vs to be aſſured, that the good townes and the commons wyll behaue theym in ſuche wyſe agayne vs, and agayne our coſyn the erle of Flaunders, that they wyll ſaue theyr honoure and trouthe. And in that that they haue myſſe done tyll nowe, hathe ben by euyll counſayl of ſuche people which regarde nat the common weale of the people, but of theyr owne profyte onely. Gyuen in the feelde of the pryory of ſaynt Andrew beſyde Ayre vnder the ſeale of our ſecrete ſygnet in abſence of oure greate ſeale, the thyrty day of the moneth of Jule.

It was nat longe after that the Frenche kynge hadde thus reſcribed vnto kyng Edwarde, but that a meſſynger came vnto hym frome Tournay for haſty reſcouſe/ for the towne was dayly and ſharplye aſſauted of the Englyſſhe hoſte. wherefore in all haſte he ſente thyther the duke of Athenelle, the vycounte of Thonart, the vycount of Dannaye/ with dyuerſe other to ꝑ noūber of.xv. men of name, with great noūber of peple.

The

The whych sped thē streyght vnto ꝑ mount of Cassyle. But or they came the sayd mount was gotten by ꝑ Flemynges, so that of theyr lodgynge they were dyspoynted. By reason wherof they fered to set vpon the Englysshe hoste, or yet to trauayll for ꝑ remouyng of the sayd syege of Tourney / but toke theyr counceyll & swarued from Cassyle, and entred ꝑ lande of the erle of Barry, and dyd moche harme therein, And when they hadde there executed theyr pleasures / they retourned vnto the frenche kynge.

In thys meane whyle kyng Philip counsayled with hys lordes, whether it were better for hym to drawe towarde Tourney to remoue ꝑ siege or to go into Flaunders and to make warre vpon the townes that helde with kyng Edwarde. By whych counsayll it was thought moste honorable, that he shulde endeuer hym selfe to remoue ꝑ sayd syege. After whiche conclusiō so taken / he with hys hoste drewe towarde Tourney / and in the ende lodged hym and hys people at a place or towne called at that daye Bowyns, within. iii. myles of Tourney, in whose cōpany was ꝑ kynge of Nauerne, the kynge of Bohemy or Beame, the dukes of Normandy, & of Lorreyne, & of Athenesse or Athēs, the erles of Alensone, of Flaunders, and of Sauoy, with other to the noū bre of. xiiii. erles, besyde bycountes, baronettes and knyghtes to a great noumbre. And with kynge Edwarde were these lordes folowynge / the erle of Herford, the erles of Northamptō of Derbye, of Southāpton, of Oxynforde, of Henawd, of Harflete, and of rondell. Also of straungers, the duke of Geldre, and of Sclauonye, & Brabant / with many other bycountes, banerettes, and knyghtes whych I passe ouer. And thus laye these two prynces with two great and myghty hostes within fyue myles, without great batayll or fyghte a certayne of tyme. But euer in meane whyle the towne of Tourney was assayled of ꝑ Englysshe men and Flemynges / the whych defended them manfully and well. In the whyche passe tyme the countesse of Henaude whyche was mother vnto the quene of Englāde, and as testyfyeth the frenche cronycle syster vnto the frenche kynge, a woman of passynge discrecyon and eloquency, with ꝑ ayde of other pryncces as the kyng of Beame and other laboured suche a meane of treaty, ꝑ a daye of dyet was betwene the two kynges appoynted / all be it that dyuerse of kyng Edwardes counsayll were sore agayne it, and specyally Jakes de Artyuele. Than for kyng Edwardes party was assygned the byshoppe of Lyncolne, syr Geffrey Scrope, syr Johū of Henaude brother to the erle, & syr wyllyā Cheyny wyth other. And for the frēche kyng was assygned the kynge of Beame, the erles of Armenake & of Sauoy, syr Lewys de Sauoy and other. And to the ende that thys appoyntement myght take the better effecte / a daye of trewce was concluded tyll mydsomer folowynge. But moste wryters testyfyen that kynge Edwarde lefte the syege before Tourney, for defaut of money and neglygēce of his slowe procuratours in Englāde, that sped nat hys nedes there as they shulde. For that one cause and for that other the kynge with hys hoste departed thense vnto Gaunt, and taryed there a certayne of tyme. In whych season the fore named lordes and knyghtes met at Tournay / and there debated the maters of chalenge of kynge Edwarde, and certayn artycles concernynge the countrey of Flaunders. In whyche counsayll it was graūted by the frenche kynges partye, that ꝑ

frenche

Frenche kynge shulde frely departe towarde the maryage of kynge Edwardes chyldren, with the hole seygnoryes of Gascoyn and Guyan, and the erledome of Poytyers, in so fre maner that no offycer of the French kyng shuld medle or haue to do with in any parte of those lordshyppes. And for Flaūders it was by the sayd lordes graunted, that the commons of that coūtrey in all customes and lawes shuld be iuged & ruled as they of olde tymes had bled/and also that all bondes and oblygacyons that in tymes passed the chyefe townes had made to the Frenche kynge for any cause, shulde be cancelled and delyuered. And of theyr erle they shulde be acquyted in lyke wyse, for all offēces done before that day. Also all censuryes or curses ỹ they before were wrapped in, shulde be clerelye adnulled & reuoked, with other cōclusions and offers, whych I passe ouer.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xl. Anno dñi. M. CCC. xli.

Rycharde Berkynge.

Johan Drynkforde. Anno. xvi.

Johan Rokysslee.

IN thys. xvi. yere / kynge Edwarde vpon saynt Andrewes euyn came to the towre of London, and sent for suche lordes as before he hadde made hys procuratours to leuye hys money in hys absence, and for theyr negligēce & mysdemeanure cast thē in prysō. But in this voyage that the kyng passed from that other syde of the see into England / he had excedynge tempest of wether, so that he passed with great fere and daūger whych tempest after the opynyon of some wryters, was rered by the negromauncers of the French kyng/to the ende to haue perysshed the kyng, or els to gyue hym the lesse courage to take the see agayne. In thys yere also were sent from ỹ. xii. Benet thā pope two cardynalles, to treate of a peace betwene the kynges of Englande & of Fraunce. The whych concluded a peace betwene the sayd two kynges, aswell for them as for other countreys whych to thē were allyed, for the terme of. iii. yeres and more. In whyche tyme it was agreed, that bothe the sayd kynges by theyr procutours shulde publysshe & declare before the pope theyr claymes and causes, to the ende that by hym and his coūsayl a fynall dyrection & cōcorde myght be set betwene theym. whych agremente of the sayde cardynalles was thus concluded in the towne called Valestrete, aboute the feaste of saynte Gregory in lente / kynge there presente for the kynge of Englande, the erles of Derbye and of Northampton wyth other / and for the Frenche kynge, the dukes of Burbon & of Burgoyne, with other for hys party. But thys agremente stoode to lytle effecte. For it nat wyth standynge the warre betwene these two kynges was contynued, so that eyther fortyfyed theyr frendes and allyes. And soone after happened, that where Johan duke of Bryttayn dyed wythout issu/ variaunce fel betwene Charles de Bloys and Johñ erle of Mountforde, for the tytle of that dukedome / so that betwene thē mortall warre was exercysed, as in the story of Phylyppe de Valoyes shall after more playnly be declared. whyche warre so contynuynge/ the kynge of Englād ayded ỹ party of the erle of Mountforde, and the Frēch king ayded Charles de Bloys

And

Truce betwe-ene.

And ouer that durynge the terme of ỹ sayde treuce, the French kyng made warre vpon the Gascoynes, as after shall apere. And in Scotlande some stryfe was made thys yere by excytynge of the Frenche kynge, in so myche that the kynge was fayne to sende thyder a crewe of soudiours to strength suche holdes as he there helde. And in thys yere was ỹ quene delyuered of a man chyld at ỹ towne of Langeley, the whyche after was named Edmunde, and surnamed Edmunde of Langley.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xli. Anno dñi. M.CCC.xlii.

Johñ Luskyn.

Symond Fraunces. Anno.xvii.

Rychard Kyslyngbury.

IN thys.xvii. yere / kynge Edwarde at the request of dyuers of hys yonge lordes and knyghtes, suffered to be exercysed certayn poyntes and feates of warre, as iustys, turnamentes and other. whych were executyd at Dunstable / where the kynge and the quene were present, wyth the more partye of the lordes and ladyes of the lande.

Thys yere dyed the forenamed Johñ duke of Brytayne / by reason of whose deth the warre as in the precedynge yere is touchyd, grewe betwene the sayde Charlys de Bloyes and the erle of Mountforde. Thys Charlys de Bloyes made his claym to that duchery, by tytle of his wyfe, that was doughter of Guy bycount of Lymogys, and seconde brother of the forsayde Johñ duke of Brytayne. And Johñ erle of Mountfort claymed by the tytle that he was thyrde brother vnto the forenamed duke. But of thys mater I entende to shewe more playnely, and of the ende therof in the story of Phylyp de Ualoys as before I haue sayde/and rather there than here, bycause the fayte therof was not done in Englande but in Brytayne, wherof the sayde Phylyppe pretendyd rule and chyefe sygnory.

Anno domini. M.CCC.xlii. Anno dñi. M.CCC.xliii.

Johñ Stewarde.

Johñ Hamonde. Anno.xviii.

Johñ Aylesbñ.

IN thys. xviii. yere, the kynge shortely after Easter callyd a parlyament at westmynster. In tyme wherof Edwarde hys eldeste sonne was creatyd prynce of walys. And many ordynaūces for the weale of ỹ lande there were enactyd, whych for length I passe ouer.

Clement the vi. pope.

In thys yere also Clement the.vi. of ỹ name, whyche newly was made pope, toke vpon hym to gyue dyuers bysshoprryches and benefyces which then fell voyde in Englande. wherwyth the kynge was nothynge contented/ in so myche that he sent out cōmyssyons and strayte commaundementes, that no man in tyme folowynge shulde present or inducte any suche persone or persones, that so by the pope were promoted wythout ỹ agremente of the kynge, as farre as towchyd hys prerogatyue. The sayd pope Clement was fyrste archebysshoppe of Roan, and munke of sayne Benettes order, a Frencheman of byrth, and before called Peter/a man of excel-

of excellent cunnyng, but a waster of goddes patrymony/& promoted to ỹ dygnyte, by instaunt laboure of the Frenche kyng/ which sent hys sonne Johñ duke of Normandy & the duke of Burgoyn vnto the cytye of Auynyon or Aupgnō, to procure and further the electyon. By meane wherof he was there chosen pope aboute the vii. day of May, and tronysed in the sayd moneth of May, in the begynnynge of the yere of grace after that compte of the chyrche of Englande, M.CCC.&.xliii. By meanes and fauoure of whyche pope, the Frenche kynges causes and maters betwene kynge Edwarde and hym were some deale promoted. For as testyfieth the Frenche boke/the French kyng thys yere put to deth one mayster Hēry de Malestrete, a graduat man, and brother vnto syr Godfrey de Malestrete knyght, lately also put to deth by the sayde Frenche kynge, for theyr fydelyte whyche they bare towarde kyng Edward, as hys feodaryes. wherof kynge Edwarde made hys cōplaynt vnto the pope, of thys and other thynges to be done contrary the constytucyons of the former peace concluded by the two cardynalles / and had therof no remedye. In thys yere also kynge Edwarde made a coyne of fyne golde, and named it the Florvne/that is to say, the peny of the value of syxe s. viii. d, the halfe peny of the value of thre s. iiii. d, and the farthynge of the value of. xx. d. whyche coyne was ordeyned for hys warres in Fraunce, for the golde therof was nat so fyne as was the noble, whyche he before in hys fourthen yere of hys reygne had caused to be coyned.

Kynge Edwardes florvne.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xliii.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xliiii.

Geffrey wychyngham.

Johan Hamonde.

Anno. xiv.

Thomas Legge.

In thys. xiv. yere, the kyng held a solempne feaste at hys castell of wyndsore/where betwene Candelmasse and lent were holden or executed many marcyall actes, as iustes, tournamentes with diuerse other/ at the whyche were present many straūgers of other landes. ǂ And in ỹ ende therof, he there deuysed the order of the garter, and after stablisshed it as at thys daye it is contynued. In this yere about midsomer, kyng Edward wyth a stronge armye sayled vnto Sluse, and so into lytle Bretayne. But for he was dyspoynted of the ayde of the Flemynges, by reason of the deth of hys trusty frende Jaques de Artyuele, whyche than was slayn of the Flemynges of Gaunt, by a cōspyracy that they made agayne hym by suche as fauoured the partye of ỹ French kyng / he tourned home into Englande agayne the same yere / leuynge behynde hym the erle of Salysbury with a stronge company, to ayde Johñ erle of Noūtfort agayn syr Charles de Bloys. The whyche Johñ by the ayde of the Englysshmē wan diuerse townes & holdes in Bretayne, vpō the sayd syr Charles & his Frenchmē. But in the ende of thys yere he was taken with such sykenes ỹ he dyed in a towne called Cozentyne. After whose deth the sayd Charles possessed the more parte of the duchye of Bretayne.

Thorder of the garter. ǂ

Thys yere the kyng sent ỹ erle of Derby with a strōg army into Guyā for to ayde the erle of Northāpton / whome ỹ kynge before had left there

at Burdeaux, to strẽgth that coũtrey agayne the French men. To whome after the dethe of the forenamed syr Johñ erle of Mountforde, dyuerse many of the soudyours that were on his partye.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xliiii. Anno domini.M.CCC.xlv.

Edmunde Hempnale.

Rychard Lacer. Anno xx.

Johñ Gloucester.

IN thys.xx.yere or later ende of the.xix.yere, ỹ is to wyt aboute saynt Nycholas tyde in the begynnynge of thys mayers yere/ the foresayd erles of Derby & Northampton had won the towne & castel of Bergarat in Gascoyne, & slewe there the erle of Valẽtynoys cheke cayptayne therof / & toke there a noble man called ỹ erle of the Ilys, wyth many other ryche prysoners. And about Apryll ỹ sayd erles wanne a strõge towne called the Ryall. wherof heryng Philip de Valoys, in all haste sent hys sonñ Johñ duke of Normandy to wythstande & to gyue batayll vnto ỹ sayd erles. But whan the sayd duke was nere vnto the Englysshemen, he had suche tydinges of theyr strength that he retourned vnto hys father agayn. For the whych dede hys father wyth hym was greuously discontented/ in so moche ỹ by ỹ occasiõ to auoyd his fathers displeasure, he retourned ito Gascoyne, & layed siege vnto ỹ castel of Aguyllon/ & there remayned tyll ỹ moneth of August folowing without gettynge of it any aduauntage / at whych season he retourned agayn to his father. After whose departure the erle of Northãpton with hys cõpany gatte a strõge towne called in frenche la Roche Darien/ which is to meane the Roche or Rocke of Aryen. In the tyme of whyche warre thus cõtinued in Bytayne & Guyan / the Frenche kyng made puruyaunce to defende hys lande agayne kyng Edward, for whome he awayted dayly. And kyng Edwarde as faste gathered money, & made hys dayly puruyaunce to prepare hym thyderwarde.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.xlv. Anno dñi.xiii.C.xlvi.

Johñ Croydon.

Geffrey wychyngham. Anno.xxi.

wyllyam Clopton.

IN this.xxi.yere, kyng Edward helde hys parlyament at westmynster about the tyme of lent. And in the moneth of July folowynge, he toke shyppynge and sayled into Normandy, & landed as wytnesseth the Frẽche cronicle at a place in that prouynce named in Frenche la Hougne sent Vast, with.xi.C. sayles greate & small, ỹ.xii.day of ỹ foresayd moneth of July. And anone as he was lãded, he cõmaunded hys people to waste ỹ countrey before them. And by the leading of a knyght called syr Godfrey Harcourte / he was brought vnto a towne called Melly, and from thens vnto Mountboure, where the kynge wythe all hys people rested hym a season.

In the whyche tyme the sayde syr Godfrey brent & spoyled the coũtrey of Cõstantyne there nere adioynyng. Than kyng Edward departed frõ ỹ foresayd towne, & went vnto a strõge towne called Karenten or Karenton/ the whyche he gate wyth the castell to the

to the same belongynge. And so continued his iourney, ꝑ vpō the.xx.day of ꝑ sayde moneth of Jule, he layed hys syege before the cytye or towne of Caen. wherin were at ꝑ daye chyef capytaynes, the bysshop of Bayen, ꝑ erle of Ewe, the lorde of Turnebu, wyth other dyuerse knyghtes & men of name. Than kyng Edwarde commaunded that the sayd towne shulde be assayled / ꝑ whych was done with so great force, & specyally with suche stronge and cōtynuall shot, that the Frenchmē forsoke the wallys & drew them towarde the castell. And in processe after longe & cruell fyght, ꝑ Englysshemen entred the towne, & there toke prysoners. Amonge the whyche there was taken ꝑ cōstable of Fraūce & the kynges chaūberleyne. * Than the Englysshemen spoyled and pylled the towne of Caen / and bare the pyllage vnto theyr shyppes, whyche after was conueyed by them into Englande. whan kynge Edwarde had thus spoyled and brent a parte of the towne of Caen, & forced the bysshope of Bayen & the other capytaynes to take the castell for theyr refuge / considerynge the strength of the same he departed thens, and so sped hym towarde the cytye of Roan chefe & prin cypall cytye of Normandye. But the Frenche kynge with a greate power was in thys whyle comē vnto Roaū, & had broken the brydges, and stopped the passages in suche wyse, that kynge Edwarde was fayne to leue ꝑ way / so that he costed toward Parys and came to a stronge towne called Uernon, & from thens to a towne named Amyens / at whych townes he was resysted & loste some of hys soudyours. And the.xii.daye of Auguste he came to a towne named Poysy, & taryed there.vi.dayes / and from thēs yode vnto sayne Germayn. And euer syr Godfrey de Harcourt byeng in ꝑ bawarde, brent the townes & spoyled the coūtrey as he went

And lyke as kyng Edwarde with hys hoste thus passed the coūtrey towarde Parys / so in lyke maner the Frenche kynge with hys power, passed or helde hys way towarde ꝑ sayd cytye / beynge so nere sundry tymes, that eyther hoste had syght of other. But the ryuer of Seyne was euer betwene them, so that for it they myght nat ioyne in batayll. whan kyng Edwarde was comyn to a towne called sayne Clowe / he set fyre therin, which was sene vnto Parys. whyche put ꝑ cytezeyns in great fere, in so moch as wytnesseth the frēch cronycle, that if the frēch kyng had nat ben there present / the cytye shulde haue be yelden vnto kyng Edwarde. Thā kyng Edward, seynge he myght nat passe the ryuer of Seyn towarde ꝑ citie of Parys, occupyed all ꝑ chefe palaysys & royall Manours, where the Frenche kynges were accustomed for to sotourne and lye at / & dranke the wyne & occupyed suche stuffe & necessaryes as he there fande. And at hys departyng set fyre vpō them, & cōsumed the more parte of them. As at poysy one, at sayne Germayne an other, and at Mount Joy the thyrde / & brente the towne of Poysy, reseruyng an house of nunnes, whyche was founded by Philyp le Beawe father vnto kyng Edwardes wyfe. Here ye shal vnderstāde that the auctours or wryters favoureth theyr owne nacyon. For the Englysshe wryters say, that ꝑ frēch kyng fledde / & brake the brydges as he went, to the ende that the Englysh hoste shuld nat wynne to the Frenchmen to gyue vnto thē batayll. And ꝑ Frenche boke sayeth, that kynge Edwarde fled, & wolde nat abyde batayl with the Frenche men / wherefore the frēch kyng brake the brydges to the entent that ꝑ Englysh mē shuld nat

* Caen conquered.

Affeccyō of Hystoriographers.

escape hys daūger. But howe it was as sayth an other wryter called Johñ Froysarde / the commons of Fraūce thought it a greate dyshonoure vnto all the lande, that the Englysshe hoste shuld so passe thorough the harte or myddell of Fraunce / and to occupye the kynges chiefe lodgynges, & nat to be foughten with of all that season. whych myght nat be after the opiniō of the sayd common people, wythout great treason of suche as were nere about the kyng. Thā kyng Edward was so closed by reason of brekynge of brydges, ỹ he was forced to drawe backe, and to reedyfye the brydge of Poysy. The whiche was repayred in so stronge wyse, that he & hys hoste passed there ouer withoute parell. Howe be it that in the tyme of repayrynge of it, the French kyng sent thyder .ii. M. men to let the sayde werke. But the archers kept theym of wyth theyr shot, in so sharpe maner, that ỹ more partye of them was slayne, and the werke pfyghted as aboue is sayd Than kyng Edwarde entred the coū trey of Picardy / & the French kynge remoued frome sayncte Denys vnto sait Germains, & frō thens to a town called Aubeuyle in Poyteau, & from thens to Antoygne. In thys whyle kyng Edward with baner dysplayed came vnto the cytye of Beauuayse, & assayled the towne. But the towne was wel garnisshed with soudyours which defēded theyr enemyes vygou rously. wherfore kynge Edwarde cōsyderynge, he myghte nat lyghtely wynne that towne, sette the bulwerkes on fyre / and so departed thens, & rode vnto a place called in Frenche Soygnoule or Blāke Tache. where he passed the water of Sum vpon a frydaye the .xxv. daye of Auguste, and lodged hym & hys people nere vnto a forest called Cressy or Crecy. wherof whan the French kyng was ware anone he sped hym frome the fore named towne of Antoygne vnto Aubeuyle agayne. where after he hadde refresshed hym and hys people, he rode vnto an abbey faste by the forenamed towne of Cressy.

In thys passe tyme, Johñ duke of Normandy and sonne of Philyp de Valoys, whyche as in the precedyng pere is towched, layd hys syege vnto the castell of Aguyllon, herynge that hys father was thus warreyed wyth the kyng of Englande / brake vp his syege, and came with hys strengthe vnto hys father.

These .ii. greate hostes thus lodged within lytle compasse, nere vnto the forenamed towne of Cressy / vpon the saterdaye folowyng the feaste of saynt Bartholmewe, beynge the .xxvi. day of the monethe of Auguste, eyther cruelly assayled other and foughte there a mortall & sharpe batayll. whereof in the ende kynge Edwarde gloryously was victoure, and chaced the frenche kynge / and slewe in that fyght after the sayenge of moste wryters, the kynge of Bohemy or Beames sonne of Henry ỹ Emperoure, vii. or the .eyght, the duke of Lorreyne, the erle of Alenson brother vnto the frēche kynge, Charles erle of Bloys, the erles of Flaunders, of Sancer, of Harcourt, and of Fyennes, wyth dyuerse other to the noumber of eyght bysshoppes and erles, & xvii. lordes of name / and of baneretes, knyghtes, and esquyers, beyōde the noumber of .xvi. hūdreth / so that as concludeth the frenche hystorye, in that batayll was slayne the floure of the Chyualrye of Fraunce, and of the cōmons vpō .viii. M. men / & that the realme of Fraūce that day sustey ned such confusiō, that the lyke therof had nat be sene many yeres passed / and

and ỹ be people and men of no reputacyon, as archers, by the vyolence of theyr inportune shot, whych horse nor man myght stande agayne. Thã the Frenche kyng with a small company fledde sore hurte vnto a towne called Bray, & lodged there ỹ nyght folowynge. And kyng Edwarde beynge warned that an other hoste of enemyes was commynge towarde hym, abode styll in the same feelde, & set good watches, & madegreat fyres thorough the hoste, and so cõtynued tyll the monday folowynge. Upon whyche day in the mornynge apered to them a new hoste of Frenche men/ to the whych they gaue bataple, and slewe of them more in noumbre thã was slayne vpõ the saterday before. But of capytaynes or men of name the auctor reherseth none.

Than kyng Edwarde gaue great thankes vnto god of his tryumphãt victory/ and after departed frõ that towne of Cressye, and toke hys waye towarde Moustruell, and from thẽs to Boleyne, and lastlye to Caleys. wherof than was capytayne vnder ỹ Frenche kyng a Burgonyõ knyght named syr Johñ de Uyẽne/ to whom kyng Edwarde sent that he shuld delyuer vnto hym the sayde towne of Caleys. But for the kynge receyued from hym no comfortable answere/ he immedyatly layde hys syege vnto the sayd towne, whych was vpon the thyrde day of the moneth of Septẽbre / & there abode a certayn of tyme in makynge of assautes to the same. In whyche tyme and season the erle of Derby spenge at Burdeaux, and haupnge the rule of Gascoyne and Guyan / wan dyuerse townes & holdes from the Frenchemen, as the townes called Sayntez in Poyteaw saynt Johñ de Angely, and ỹ towne of Poytyers. In the whyche he had excedyng treasoure and rychesse/ soo that he & hys sowdyours were greatly enryched, by the pyllage that they wan in those townes and cõtrey to them adioynaunt. And whã the sayd erle had spoyled the sayd townes, & brent a greate parte of the forsayde cytye of Poytyers, and the kynges palays within the same / he than at hys pleasure retourned vnto Burdeaux.

In thys passe tyme also, the Frẽch kyng to the entente to haste kyng Edwarde into Englande / sent Dauyd le Bruze some tyme kynge of Scottes, into ỹ lande with a strõge army. The which gathered vnto hym such lordes and knyghtes of Scotlande as before tymes fauoured hys party and with them entred the boundes of Northumberlande, & spoyled that countrey without pyte. But it shall apere by other auctoures, that thys Dauyd le Bruze at thys daye hadde recouered the crowne of Scotlande/ and that Edwarde de Baylol was than dede, whych before was kynge. Than it foloweth whan the archebysshop of yorke with other lordes than lefte in Englande, herde tell that the Scottes were thus entred the lande anone the sayd archebysshype, with syr Henry Perse, syr Rafe Neuyle, & syr Gilbert Umfreyle knyghtes, and other gentylmen aswell spyrytuall as other, apparayled theym in theyr best maner and sped them towarde ỹ Scottes/ so that they mette with thẽ and gaue vnto them batayll vpon ỹ euyn of saynt Luke or the .xvii. daye of Octobre in a place faste by Durhã called at that daye Neuyles crosse. where god shewed to the Englysshe men suche grace, that they sõkyted ỹ Scottes, and slew of them great foyson/ and toke prysoners the sayd Dauid le Bruze, syr wyllyam Dowglas syr Thõlyn Fowkys, with other of ỹ nobles of Scotlande / the whyche

shortely after were surely conueyed vnto the towre of London, and there kepte as prysoners.

whā kynge Edward from the .iiii. day of September as before is sayd, hadde by sondry tymes assayled the towne of Caleys, and sawe well he he might nat shortly wynne it/he prouyded for hi & hys people to lye there all ỹ wynter folowynge/ so ỹ for the lodging of hym & his hoste, he made so many houses & lodges, that it semed an other Caleys. wherfore in pces of tyme durynge ỹ syege, of the vytelers & suche as dayly resorted vnto ỹ kynges hoste, it was named newe Caleys. where ỹ kyng in proper persone abode al the wynter folowyng, & the more parte of the next somer as after shall apere.

Anno dñi .xiii. C. xlvi. Anno dñi .xiii. C. xlvii.

Adam Bramson.

Thomas Legge. Anno .xii.

Rycharde Basyngstoke.

THys .xii. yere, kyng Edward after the stormy wynter was ouerpassed/ he cōmaunded certayne shyppes to be ioyned mo in noumbre vnto such as before had kept the see, that no vytayll shuld come to the inhabytaūtes of Caleys/ so that ỹ sayd townē was fayne to holde them content with such olde store as they had for any newe that to them myghte be cōueyd or sent. And the kynges hoste was plentuously vytaylled by ỹ Flemynges, & by other vytayllers dayly commyng out of Englande.

& Cā Caleys was gotte. ‡ Kynge Philippe hauynge dayly worde of the strength of his enemyes and the enereace of them as by Esterlynges and other nacions that kyng Edwarde had to hym allyed / & sawe well that without the sayde towne were shortly rescowed, it shulde shortly be yolden into the handes of hys enemyes, to the great hurte of all the realme of Fraunce: wherfore after a great counsayll holden at Parys, he chaunged hys money to hys greate auaūtage/and ouer that set an inposicion vppon hys commons, to theyr great grudge & murmure. And that done he toke his leue of saint Denys about the quyndene of Pasche, and so rode vnto a towne called Heldoīn where he tarved the gaderyng of hys hoste, so longe that it was nere vnto the feast of mary Magdaleyn or hys people were all assembled. At whych season he set forthwarde to the town of Caleys, to remoue ỹ kynge of Englande from that syege/and so spedde hym, that about the ende of ỹ moneth of July, he drewe nere vnto Caleys. The whyche before hys commynge was yolden vnto kyng Edwarde/ so that the Frenche cronicle sheweth no thynge of the Frenche kynges shamefull departyng, lyke as it is rehersed in the Englysshe cronycle, & of other wryters that wryte of the same.

‡ Than after moste wryters, ỹ town of Caleys was yolden to kynge Edwarde about the ende of September after the kynge had contynued there hys siege an hole yere and somedeale more. After receyte wherof he tarved in the towne vppon a moneth, & voyded clene all the olde inhabytauntes and Frenchemen, and stored it wyth Englysshemen, and specyally wyth Kentysshmen. And whan he had sette that towne in a sure ordre and gydynge, and graunted a peace for .ix. monethes at the requeste of two cardynalles sente frome the forenamed pope Clement the syxte, to be holden

betwene

betwene hym and the Frenche kyng/ he sayled wyth great tryumphe into Englande, and came to London aboute the feaste of saynte Romayne or the thre and twenty daye of Octobre/where he was ioyously receyued of the cytezeyns,and so cõueyed vnto westmynster.

In thys yere also an Englysshe knyght called syr Thomas Agorne, cappytayne of the roche of Aryan before spoken of in the.xx. yere of thys kyng, was fiersly warred of syr Charles de Bloys. But after many bykerynges & skyrmishes,a day of batayl was set betwene the sayd Charles & Thomas. Or after the frẽche bokes declaracion,the sayd Charles assautynge that towne vpõ one partie/ the sayd syr Thomas wyth a cõpany of stalworth archers & lowdyours,issued out at an other parte of the towne & beset the sayd syr Charles & hys cõpany about/& assayled them in suche wyse,ẏ in the ende the more partye of hys cõpany was taken and slayne, & the sayd syr Charles there takẽ amõg the other. And of men of name were there slayne,ẏ vicoũt of Roan,ẏ lord Dernall,ẏ lord of Quyntyne, wyth syr wyllm hys sõne,ẏ lord of ẏ castell of Bret,ẏ lord of the roche,& syr Gefrey Turneuew,with many other mẽ of honour, whych I passe ouer. And after the sayd Charles was healed of suche woũdes as he had receyued in that fyght/he was conueyed into Englande,& there kept as prysoner.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xlvii. Anno domini.M.CCC.xlviii.

Henry Pycarde.

Johñ Luskyn. Anno.xxiii.

Symonde Dolsely.

In thys.xxiii.yere,syll great cõtynuall rayne from mydsomer to Crystmas, whereof ensued excedynge floddes.By reason wherof the grounde was sore corrupted, so that dyuers inconueniences ensued vpon the same,as sykenes & other, as in ẏ yeres folowynge shall apere. And in Fraunce thys yere the people dyed wonderfully in dyuers places of the realme/so vehemently that in the cytye of Parys dyed in thys yere or lyttell more, ouer .l.M. people / and at saynt Denys beyonde.xiiii.M. And in Italy and many other countreys, thys mortalytye aboute thys season reygned also inportunely / and that in Hethenes aswell as in cristẽdome.

And in the ende of thys yere about the ende of August/ thys mortalytye began in dyuers places of England, and specyally at London/and so continued to the sayd moneth of August next ensuynge. And vpõ that ensued sterylite or barenes,aswel of the see as of the lande, so that vytaylle and corne was more scante than it was before.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xlviii. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xlix.

Adam Bury.

wyllyam Turke. Anno.xxiiii.

Rauffe Lynne.

In thys.xxiiii.yere, the mortalitie before sayde in Englande & specyally in London moost feruẽtly raynynge / a treasone, as after appereth was conspyred,to haue brought the towne of Caleys agayne

to the Frenche kynges possessyon. Kynge Edwarde beforetyme hadde committed one of the towres of Caleys vnto a Januay to whō he myche trusted. wyth the whyche Januay a knyght of Burgoyn named syr Godfrey de Charny, was very familyer/ in so myche that the sayd syr Godfrey at conuenyent leyser brake vnto the sayde Januay, for the betrayenge of ỹ towne of Caleys. The which gaue vnto hym lykynge answere / so that the sayd Januay agreed for certayn sōme of money to be payde in hande, to deliuer vnto the sayd syr Godfrey and suche other as he then shulde brynge wyth hym, the towre that he then hadde in keppynge. By meane wherof he shulde shortly after haue the rule of the towne. In tyme of dyp upynge and of apoyntynge of whiche bargayne as sayth the Frenche cronycle/this Januay sent secrete word vnto the kynge of Englande/requyrynge hym in secrete wyse to come vnto Caleys. The whyche then holdynge hys Crystmas at Hauerynge Bower in Esser, vppon the morowe after newe yeres daye toke hys shyppynge, and landed that nyght at Caleys, in so secrete maner that fewe of the towne knewe of his there beyng.

* A great deth in London.

whan the daye of apoyntmente of delyuery of this forsayd towre was comyn, and thys Januay hadde receyued hys payment/at an houre assygned betwene the sayde syr Godfrey & hym, a token was gyuē by thys sayde Januay, that the Frenchmen shulde drawe nere vnto ỹ sayd towre to wynne theyr pray.

Then the sayd syr Godfrey wyth a certayne noumber came wythin ỹ daūger of the towne of Caleys, warnyng ỹ resydue of hys cōpany that they shuld tary there tyll he were enterde ỹ towne/& than at his sendyng to come in all spedy wyse. But soone as the sayde syr Godfrey was nere vnto the towre, a bussyment of sawdyoures were sente out at a posterne/the whiche closed hym and his Frenchemen vpon all sydes, & slewe of them many. Amonge the whiche, syr Henry de Boys knyght, with syr Gautyer de Ualence, and syr Robert of Beuuays knyghtes, were slayne/ And the sayd syr Godfrey taken sore wounded/and the lorde of Mountmorency escaped with great daūger, the whythe gaue warnynge vnto the other company and returned theym into Fraunce. Than the sayd Godfrey de Charney was layde vpon a borde, and so presented vnto kynge Edwarde the whiche had suche pyte of hym, that he cōmaunded his owne surgyons to loke vnto hym, and to cure hym in theyr best maner. And whā he was somdeale cured he was sente as a prysoner with other into Englande.

In this yere also the kynge caused to be coyned grotes & halfe grotes, the whiche lacked of the weyght of his former coyne. ii. s. vi. d. in a. li. Troy. * And aboute the ende of August sessed the mortalyte or dethe in London / ỹ whiche was so behemēt and sharpe within ỹ sayd cytie, that ouer the bodyes buried in churches, and churcheyerdes, monasteries and other accumed buryeng places/was buryed that same yere in the charterhouse yerde of London. l. M. persones and aboue.

This yere also was ỹ yere of Jubile or clene remyssyon, whiche is kept at Rome at euery. l. wynter ende lyke as the yere of Jubile or grace is contynued at Cauntorbury.

And thys yere by the laboure of two cardynalles sent from pope Clemēt the. vi, was a peace cōcluded betwene the two kynges of Englande & of Fraūce for a yere, nere vnto the towne

owne of Caleys. wherefore the stablysshynge of the sayde peace for the sayde yere, assembled the two sayde cardynalles. And for the kynge of Englande, the bysshoppe of Norwyche than treasourer and chefe chancellor of the kynge, with other vnto hym by the kynge assygned. And for the Frenche kynge, was there the bysshop of Laone, and the abbot of saynt Denys wyth other.

And the .xxiii. daye of the moneth of Auguste. In thys yere and yere of our lorde .xiii. hundreth and fyfthty, dyed Philyppe de Valoyes kyng of Fraunce. Deth of Philyppe de Valoys.

Anno domini .M.CCC.xlix. Anno domini .M.CCC.l.

Johñ Notte.

Rycharde Kyllyngbury. Anno .xxv.

wyllyam worcestre.

In thys .xxv. yere about ỹ feast of the decollacyon of saynte Johñ Baptyste in the latter ende of August/a noble man of Spayne called syr Charles, to whome kynge Johan of Fraunce had newely gyuē the erledome of Angolesme, entendynge to wynne some honoure vpon the Englysshemen, wyth a stronge nauy of Spaynardes entrede ỹ Englysshe stremys, and dyd moche harme vnto kynge Edwardes frendes. ǂ So that the kyng about the season abouesayde, mette wyth the sayde nauy vpon the coaste of wynchelsee/ where betwene the kynge and them was a longe and mortall fyghte, to ỹ greate losse of moche people vppon bothe partyes. But in the ende god sente vnto the kyng victory/so that he chased hys enemyes, and wanne frome theym .xxii. of theyr shyppes after moost wyters, wyth many prysoners.

And thys yere syr Thomas of Agorne, whiche as in the .xxii. yere of thys kyngs reygne, toke prysoner syr Charles de Bloys and other/ was slayne by chaunce medle of a knyght of Fraunce or Brytayne called syr Raufe de Caours.

And thys yere were solempne messangers sente vnto Rome, for to conclude and parfyte the peace betwene the two kynges of Englande and of Fraunce. So that kynge Edward shulde resygne and gyue vp all hys tytle and clayme that he made vnto the crowne of Fraunce/ǂ the Frenche kynge shulde clerely gyue vnto hym all the duchye of Guyan/ wyth all suche landes as at any tyme before were taken by any of hys progenytoures from it. And that kyng Edwarde and hys heyres kynges shuld freely holde and occuppe the sayde duchye, wythout doynge of homage to any Frenche kyng after that day. But the conclusyon of thys matyer was so prolonged and deferred by ỹ pope, and such delayes as dayly ben vsed in the courte of Rome, that the erle of Derby wyth other, whyche were appoynted for the kynge of Englande, retourned wythoute spede of theyr cause. wherfore kynge Edwarde made new prouisyōs to warre vpon kyng Johñ of Fraunce. Kynge Edwardes victory on the see. ǂ Delayes of the courte of Rome.

Anno dñi .M.CCC.li. Anno dñi .M.CCC.lii.

Johñ wrothe.

Andrewe Awbry. Anno .xxvi.

Gybbon Staynthorpe.

In thys

IN thys.xxvi. yere, the castel of Guynys was yolden vnto the Englysshmen dwellynge in Caleys/ whyche as testyfyeth the French cronicle was done by treason of a frēch man named Guyllyam de Beaucōroy. For the whyche treason the sayd Guyllyam was shortely after put in execucyon in the towne of Ampas.

And about the myddell of August vppon the euyn of our Lady assumpcyon / syr Guy de Neale than marshall of Fraunce, wyth a stronge cōpany gaue bataylle vnto the Englysshemen than beynge in Bytayn in the whych the sayde syr Guy with the lord of Byrkebet and the Chaste leyne of Beauuais, with many other noble men were slayne, & many takē prysoners.

Anno domini. M.CCC.li. Anno domini. M.CCC.lii.

Johñ Peche.

Adam Fraunceys. Anno.xxvii.

Johñ Stodeney.

THe somer of thys. xxvii. yere was so dry, that it was many yeres after called the drye somer. For from the latter ende of Marche tyll the latter ende of July, kyll lytell rayne or none / by reason wherof many inconuenyences ensued.

And one thynge whyche is specyally noted / corne the yere folowynge was scante / whereof the pryce thys yere began to enhaunce greatly / and beuys and mottons were also dere for scantnesse of grasse and pasture / and that aswell was erpert in Fraunce as in the ile of Englāde.

Anno domini. M.CCC.lii. Anno domini. M.CCC.liii.

Johñ welde.

Adam Fraunceys. Anno.xxviii.

Johñ Lytell.

IN thys.xxviii.yere, kynge Edwarde holdynge hys parlyament at westmynster / amonge other thynges there enacted, soone after Pentecoste created the erle of Derby duke of Lācastre, & syr Rauffe Stafford was created erle of Staffordе. Than thys duke of Lancastre was sent agayne ouer the see/wherein the ende of this yere as witnesseth Johñ Froyssarde, he was appealed of the duke of Brysswyke a duke of the coūtre of Almayne, of certayne wordes contrary hys honoure, for the whych he waged batayll with the sayd duke in the court of the Frenche kyng.

Than thys Henry whych of some wryters is named Henry Bolyngbroke duke of Lancastre, purchased hys sauffe conduyte of the Frenche kyng/and kepte hys day appoynted for that batayll, in a felde called in Frenche La preaux clers. where for them was ordeyned a place ryested and clooſed in goodly wyse / kynge Johan beynge presente wyth the more parte of hys nobles of Fraūce. And there came in fyrst into that feld the forenamed duke Appellaūte / & after thys noble duke of Lācastre, to the great honour of all Englande. And soone after dyuers obseruaūces accordyng to the law of armys done & solempne othes taken/eyther set in the rest to haue rōne the fyrst course. But kynge Johan of hys especyall

grace

grace ceased ꝑ mater, & toke the quarell into hys handes / so that eyther of theym departed the felde wythout any stroke strykynge / and pacyfyed the appeale, to the honoure of the duke of Lancastre as wytnesseth the Frenche boke, nat wyth standynge he was the French kynges enemye.

And soone after the sayde duke of Lancastre wyth other nobles assygned to hym by the kyng of England, wentte to Auynyon, wyth the archebysshoppe of Roan than chaunceller of Fraunce, and the duke of Burbō and other appoynted for the kynge of Fraunce / to conclude ette a peace betwene theyr two ꝑynces. The whyche at the cytye beforesayd were harde at lengthe, before the newe pope than named Innocente the.vi. whych also lyke to hys predecessour was a Frencheman / and cardynall of Lymosyne in Normādy, called by hys proper name Stephan Aubert. In conclusyon after great argumēte made on eyther partye before the pope and hys counsayl / fynally it was agreed, that ꝑ peace betwene the.ii. kynges shuld be kept & holden inuiolate tyll mydsomer next folowynge.

Anno domini. M.CCC.liii. Anno dñi. M.CCC.liiii.

wyllyam Tontynghm.

Thomas Legge. Anno.xxix.

Rycharde Smert.

IN thys .xxix. yere / kynge Edward by the aduyce of hys coū sayll, for so moche as the townes of Flaunders brake theyr ꝑomyse before tyme made, and helde nat the bādes of ampte by theym ꝑomysed by the lyke of Jaques de Artyuele, but fauoured the frēche kynges partye: therefore he with drewe from theym the markettes and staples of wolles, that in sondry townes of Flaunders had than lately by the ꝓuysyon of the forsayd Jaques, to theyr greate aduauntage vsed to be kept / and ordeyned than the sayde staples to be holden in sondry good townes of Englande, as westmynster, Chychester, Lyncolne, Brystowe, and Cauterbury.

And shortely after Easter / the Frenche kynge sent hys eldest sonne Charles dolphyne of Uyenne into Normandy, for to take the rule of ꝑ countre / and specially for to sease certayne landes & castelles, whyche at ꝑ daye belonged vnto the kyng of Nauerne, whyche than was oute of the Frenche kynges fauour, for the deth of syr Charles of Spayne constable lately of Fraūce, ꝑ he had by his meanes murdered in a towne called the Aygle in Normandy, vpō. ii. yeres before passed. And whyle ꝑ sayd dolphyne was thus besyed in Normādy / he made suche meanes to ꝑ rulers therof, that they graūted vnto hym ayde of.iii.M.mē for.iii.moneths, at theyr ꝑoper costes and charges.

Of thys soone after sprange suche tydinges, ꝑ the kyng of Englād was enfourmed that the frēch kyng had gyuen to hys sonne Charles ꝑ duchy of Normandy with all Gascoygne & Guyan / and howe ꝑ Normānes had graūted vnto ꝑ sayd Charles.iii.M. mē for.iii.moneths, to warre at theyr costes vpō ꝑ Englysshmē / whych as ꝑ frēch boke testifieth, was graūted to hym onely to defēde ꝑ kyng of Nauerne, ꝑ came to Cōstātyne shortly after, for to repossesse all such lādes as the sayd dolphyn of hys had there seased & for that wyth a bygge armye made warre vpon the sayd dolphyn.

But

But were it thus or otherwyse/ trouth it is as diuers wryters agree, in the moneth of October and ende of thys yere, prynce Edwarde wyth a great hoste entred Gascoyne, and passed by Tholouse, and passed the ryuer of Geround or Geron/and so passed by Carcassyon, and brent the bulwerkes of that cytye / and from thens he rode to Nerbon, in pyllyng & spoylynge the countre as he went.

And in the same yere kynge Edwarde wyth his power landed at his towne of Caleys / where he rested hi by all ỹ tyme of this mayres yere.

And in this yere was the house of the freres Augustynes of Londō fynysshed / whyche was reedyfyed by syr Humfrey Bohum erle of Hertforde and Esser, whose body lyeth buryed in the quere of the sayde house or chyrche before the hygh aulter.

Anno domini.M.CCC.liiii. Anno domini.M.CCC.lv.

Thomas Forster.

Symon Franceys. Anno.xxx.

Thomas Brandon.

In this.xxx.yere / the kynge as ye before haue herde beyng at Caleys, shortly after the feast of Allhalloyne toke his iournay towarde the Frenche kynge / and contynued his iournay tyll he came to a towne named Yelden / and brake there the Frenche kynges parke, & toke suche pleasures as hym there lyked. In whiche season of his there beynge, tydynges were brought vnto hym, ỹ ỹ Scottes had gotē ỹ towne of Berwyke, and how they made dayly assautes to wynne the castell. wherfore the kyng made the more hasty spede, and returned to Caleys, and so into Englande. For whiche cause sayth ỹ Frenche cronycle, ỹ kynge Edwarde fled from the Frenche kynge, ỹ than with a strōge power came from Amyas vnto saynt Omers.

Than kynge Edwarde sped hym into Scotlande / so ỹ in the moneth of January and begynnynge of the xxx.yere of his reygne, and.xxvii.day of the sayd moneth, he layd his syege to ỹ towne of Berwyke/& had it yolden vnto hym in shorte processe of tyme after. And that doone he entred ferther into the lande, and subdued ỹ cheyf townes & holdes as he went/& pursued the Scottysshe kynge so narowly, that in the ende he was fayne to submytte hym to ỹ kynges grace as prysoner, and resygned his power into the kynges hande. And whan kynge Edwarde had set that coūtre in a rule/he returned with the Scottysshe kyng agayne into Englande, and called his courte of parlyament at westmynster. In ỹ whiche amōge other thynges to the kynges auauntage, was graunted to the mayntenaunce of his warres.l.s. of/a sacke of woll, for ỹ terme of.vi. yeres. But it contynued lenger though the marchaūtes staplers therat grutched.

Berwyke recouered.

Than let vs now retourne vnto that noble pryncē Edward, the fyrst begotten sonne of the kynge / whych by all thys tyme warred vppon the Frenchmen, as in ỹ precedynge yere is touchyd. So that lastly he retourned to Burdeaux wyth many ryche pryseners and pyllages, to the great honoure of hym selfe, and the greate auauncement of hys soudyours.

And all be it that in that countrees, whyche he then passed, were the erles of Armenake, and of Foyse, of Poytyers, and of Cleremount, wyth syr James de Burboñ, and many other knyghtes,

knyghtes, the whyche hadde dowble the people, as testyfyeth the Frenche cronycle, that the prynce had: yet passed he from Tholous to Nerboñ, & fro Nerboñ to Burdeaux wythout batayle.

And after the prynce hadde there a whyle rested hym and hys people, and sent dyuers of hys prysoners in to Englande / he wyth hys hoste entred the prouynce or coũtre of Berry in the moneth of July, & made therin sharpe and cruell warre. In whyche season also ỹ duke of Lancaster with the ayde of Phylyp brother vnto the kynge of Nauerne, was entred the countre of Constantyne/and so with a cõpany of .iiii. thousand men, came vnto a place called Lyseux vpon the see coste, & remoued a syege of frẽch men, that had lyen at that castell vpõ viii. wekes / and after repayred the sayde castell.

whan kynge Johñ hadde leuyed many great summes of money, to ỹ great grudge of hys comons and rebellyon of some of the sayd comons, as in the story of kynge Johñ shalbe towched, and prepared hys hoste/he fyrst made towarde the duke of Lancaster. But the sayd duke had so fortyfyed ỹ passage, that he myghte not wynne to hym wythout great ieopardye and daunger. wherfore he lafte that waye, & yode to a castell named Bretnell, and layde hys syege there vnto, and wan it in the ende of . viii. wekes by apoyntement. Then he yode to the castell of Chartres, and tarved there a certayn tyme for more people/and frõ thens toke hys iourneye towarde prynce Edwarde. The whyche prynce in thys season was passed the ryuer of Loyre or Leyre, & so by ỹ towne of Romũgtyne/where he was encountred of dyuers nobles of fraunce, and hadde wyth them a sharpe cõflycte. But in the ende god sent to hym the byctorye / so that he slewe many of hys enemyes, & toke of them many prysoners. Amonge ỹ whych were taken the lord of Craoñ, and a knyght called syr Bouciquãt, wyth dyuers other to the nomber, as sayth the frẽche boke of .liiii. persõs. And whan he had sent the sayde prysoners vnder sauke keppyng to Burdeaux, he sped hym toward Towrs.

And the duke of Lancaster wyth hys company, after he had repayred the forsayd castell of Lyseux, and bestowed suche ordenaũce as the frẽch men for haste lafte behynde them at the sayd syege: he than toke his way towarde Bertneyll/& from thens vnto Eurour, in brẽnyng & wasting the countre and townes as he went/and from thens to Vermeyll in Perch, & toke by strength both the towne and castell. And whan he had spoyled & pylled the towne, he set it on fyre and brent a great part therof. And whan he had done moch of his wyll in that coũtre, he retourned into Brytayne and helde hym there.

Kynge Johñ then as aboue is sayde, holdynge hys waye towarde prynce Edward/came to the cytye of Towrys to fortyfye the sayde towne agayne the sayde prynce Edwarde. wherof herynge the prynce toke hys waye toward Poytyers. In holding of whyche way, as testyfyeth ỹ frẽch boke, a parte of hys hoste mette with an hoste of frenchmen, & gaue vnto them batayle, & at length chasyd the multytude of them, & slewe an hundreth sowdyours, & toke vpõ. lx. prysoners. Amonge the whych were taken the erle of Saũcer, ỹ erle of Jurygny, the lord Chastelleyn mayster of the kynges palayes, & a knyghte named syr Guyllyam de Daneham/ the whyche prysoners were also sent vnto Burdeaux. And soone after prynce Edwarde lodged hym & hys

hoste nere vnto Poytyers. And shortely after that came the French kyng and lodged hym in a place called in Frenche Chamgny, nere also vnto Poytyers/so that the frōtes of bothe hoostes laye wythin a quarter of a myle. Than the cardynall of Pernygourt sent from pope Innocent the vi. rode bytwene the kynge and the prynce sondry tymes to haue agreed some treaty and peace bytwen them, yf it myght by hys labour haue ben opteyned. But whan he sawe hys labour myght not preuayle/ he departed to Poytiers, and taryed there the ende of the batayle. The whych was foughten vpon a mondaye the .xix. daye of Septēber, in the yere of our lorde .xiii. C. lvi, and begynnyng of the .vi. yere of the sayd kynge Johns reygne, as after shalbe shewed.

THan as before is sayde, for so mych as the forsayde cardynall myght not purchase any treaty or meane of peace bytwene these two prynces/ prouysyō was made vpon bothe sydes to trye theyr mater by mortall batayle/so ỳ about the houre of two at after noone of the forsayd mōdaye, ỳ duke of Athenes or Athēs with such other nobles as were with hym in ỳ French kynges baweward set vppon the Englysshe hoste. The whyche was myghtely fensyd wyth wood and trees, in suche wyse that ỳ French speres myght not wyn vnto them. And therwyth the shotte of the Englyshemen was so eyers & sharp, that it turned ouer horse and man. And whyle ỳ sayde duke of Athenes, wyth syr Johñ de Cleremount than marshall of Fraūce wyth other, thus assayled the prynce & his people vpō one parte / the duke of Normandye kyng Johns eldest sonne, & the duke of Orleaūce the kynges brother, assayled hym vpon a nother part. The which two dukes were leders of two

The batayl of Poytiers.

stroge hostes. But as sayth ỳ frēche cronycle, these thre batayls dyd lytle scathe vnto the Englysshemen. But by reason of theyr shotte they were so woūded and many slayne, ỳ the resydue fledde to the great dyscomfort of the French kynges people. Than kynge Johñ in all that he myght cōforted hys people/and wyth a freshe company set vpon the Englyshmen, that all wayes kept them hole togyder, and receyued the Frenchemen vpon theyr wepens poyntes, with so greate force ỳ in the ende the French men gaue backe, and were baynquisshed by the helpe of god and sayncte George/and slayne as wytnessyth ỳ sayde Frenche cronycle to the nomber of .xvii. hūdreth men of armys, besyde other meane sowdyours. Amōg the whych of noble men were slayne, the duke of Burbone, the duke of Athenes, syr Johñ de Cleremoūt marshal of Fraūce, syr Reynold Campan baneret, whyche that daye bare the oryflambe, a specyall relyke that the Frenche kynges vse to bere before them in all batayls, and the bysshop of Chalons, wyth dyuers other to ỳ nomber of .liiii. banerettes, besyde knyghtes & other. And of prysoners taken at ỳ batayle, was Johñ kynge of Fraunce, Phylyp hys .iiii. sonne, syr Jaques de Burbon erle of Poytyau and brother vnto the duke of Burbon before slayne, syr Johñ of Artoys erle of Ewe, syr Charlys hys brother erle of Longeuyle, syr Gupskarde cosyn germayn vnto the frēch kynge, syr Johñ de Meleoun erle of Cancaruyle, syr Johñ his sonne and heyre, doctour wyllyam archbysshop of Sens, syr Symon Melon brother vnto the erle of Cancaruyle and erle of Vandature, the erles of Dāpmartyne, of Vendosme, of Salysbruche, of Moyson, the Marshall of Denehā, & many other, as banerettz, knyghtes,

knyghtes, and men of name, to the nombre as sayth the Frenche cronycle of.xvi.hundreth & aboue. And frō thys batayll escaped by flyght, Charles eldest sonne of kynge Johñ and duke of Normādye, the duke of Orleaunce, & the duke of Anjowe, wyth fewe other of great fame/the whyche rode strayghte vnto Parys. Where shortly after was called a greate coũ sayll, for maters whyche in the story of kynge Johanne shall after be shewed.

whan the feelde was thus fynysshed/prynce Edward after dewe thãkes and loupnges gyuen to god and saynt George for thys tryũphaũt vyctory/he with his sayd prysoners sped hym toward Burdeaux where ỹ sayd kyng was kept tyll Easter after.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.lv. Anno dñi.xiii.C.lvi.

Rychard Notynghñ.

Henry Pychard. Anno.xxxi.

Thomas Dosell.

IN thys.xxxi.yere, that is to say the.xvi. daye of the moneth of Apryll/ỹ noble prynce Edwarde thãne vppon the age of.xxviii.yeres, toke shyppynge wyth hys prysoners at Burdeaux, and arryued in Englãde shortly after. And the.xviii.daye of Maye/he was with great honoure & gladnesse receyued of the cytezyns of London, and so conueyed vnto the kynges palays at westmynster. wher the kynge syttynge in hys astate in westmynster hal, receyued hym with due honour/ and after conueyed to a lodgynge for hym prouyded, where he laye a certayne season. And after was ỹ sayd French kyng had vnto a place called Sauoy/ whyche thanne was a pleasaunt palays & fayre lodgynge, belongynge that tyme vnto ỹ duke of Lancastre/and after brente & dystroyed by Jak Strawe and hys fawtours, in the.iiii.yere of Rychard the seconde nexte kyng of Englande, as in ỹ sayd yere after shalbe shewed In whyche place the sayde Frenche kynge laye longe after.

And in the wynter folowyng were royall iustes holden in smythfelde of Londõ, and many goodly & knyghtly feates of armys doon, to the great honoure of the kyng & all his realm, and gladdyng of all beholdours. At the whych dysporte was present/ the kyng of Englande, the Frẽch kyng, and ỹ kyng of Scottes/ wyth many noble astatẽs of all the.iii.prouinces or kyngdomes/ wherof the more parte of the straungers were than prysoners. Iustes holden in Smithfelde.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lvi. Anno domini.M.CCC.lvii.

Stephyn Caundysshe.

Johñ Stody. Anno.xxxii.

Bartylmewe frostelynge.

IN thys.xxxii.yere/pope Innocent the syxte of that name, sent into Englande twoo cardynalles, to treat of a peace betwene ỹ two kyngs The whyche two cardinalles tarryed the more parte of a yere in London & other places of the lande, to bryng theyr purpose to some effecte / but they sped lytell of theyr cause.

And in thys yere after moste wynters/ Daupd le Bruze kyng of Scottes was delyuered frome the castell

of Odyhñ at hys lybertye, whan he had put kynge Edwarde in a suerty of an hundreth thousande markes for hys raunsome.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.lvii. Anno dñi.xiii.C.lviii.

Johñ Bernes.

Johñ Luffyn. Anno.xxxiii.

Johñ Burys.

IN thys.xxxiii. yere, as wytnessyth the Frenche cronycle/ syr Robert Knollys, syr James Pype, with other of theyr retynewe, warred in Bretayne. And as testyfyeth the Frenche cronycle, in the moneth of Marche and. x. daye of the sayd moneth/ the sayde capytaynes wyth one whyche the Frenche boke nameth Thomlyn Fowke, came erely in the mornynge vnto a towne that was nere vnto Ancerre called Regennez beynge in the rule of Englyshmen/ where the sayde capytaynes takyng wyth thē more strēgth, yode streyght vnto the forsayde towne of Ancerre beyng wythin two Englyshe myles/ and scaled the walles wyth ladders, and quyt them so mākully, that they had the rule of the town or the sonne rysynge. And in that castell was taken prysoner syr Guyllyam de Chalon the sonne of the erle of Ancerre, hys wyfe, and many other.

Takyng of Ancerre.

In takynge of whyche towne and castell fewe folkes were slayne/ how be it there were of armed men aboue two thousande, as sowdyours to defende the towne. Then the Englyshmen serched so nere, that as the comō fame wente, they fande iewellys as they hadde ben preuy to the hydyng of theym, and that of greate value. Amonge the which as sayth the sayd cronycle, they fande certayne skynnes, the whyche were valued at .v. thousande motons of golde. ye shall vnderstande that a moton is a coyne vsed in Fraunce and Bretayne, and is of value after the rate of sterlynge money vppon. v.s. or there aboute.

A moton of golde.

whan the Englyshemen hadde pylled and spoyled the towne by the space of. viii. dayes, and raunsomed suche as were of any substaunce/ then they shewed vnto the rulers of the towne, that they wolde sette it vppon a fyre, excepte that they wold gyue vnto theym a certayne summe of money. For the whych after longe treaty of thys mater/ the rulers of ỹ towne to haue possessyon therof, and to haue it preserued frō fyre/ agreed to gyue vnto the Englysshe capytaynes. xl. thousande motons, and lx. perlys valued at. x. thousande motons/ whyche. l. thousande motons shulde amounte after the rate of sterlynge money to. xii. thousand and. v. hundreth pownde or nere aboute. So that what they fande wythin ỹ towne of any value, they bare it with theym/ excepte the iewellys and ornamentes of the chyrch of sayne Germayne/ the whyche goodes and iewelles they toke for pledge of suche money as was vnpayde of the forsayd. xl. M. motons of golde, for the raūsome of the towne. For ỹ whyche goodes/ the towne of Ancerre was bounde vnto the hedes of the chyrch to pay for, or to redeme ỹ sayd goodz by the feastes of mydsomer nexte folowynge/ or ellys to paye yerely inperpetuyte to ỹ sayd chyrch in maner of quyte rent. iii. M. motōs/ wherof ỹ value is shewed in the fyrst chapyter of Phylyp the. iiii. And ouer all thys the dwellers of the towne agreed, that ỹ Englyshmen shuld brenne the

gates

gates of ꝑ towne / and in dyuers partyes of the towne, throw the wallys to the grounde.

Uppon.iiii. dayes folowynge the ende of the sayd agremente/the forsayd syr James Pype, and syr Othã of Holande, & other to the nombre of xvi.or.xviii.Englysshmen,entẽdyng to haue wonne some enterpryse, were layd for by the sowdyours of a place called the great Sempre/ and by thẽ taken & holden as prysoners.

And in the moneth of Aprill next ensuyng, a towne called in Frenche Dabygny sur le Metre, was by the Englysshemen gotten in lyke maner & fourme as was the forsayd towne of Ancerre. And the.ii.daye of May was wonne by syr Robert Knolles & hys company, a towne called Chaste leyn sur Lounayn / and pylled it as they dyd the other. And after wyth theyr pyllage and prysoners, amõge the whyche were many women and chyldren of.iiii.& of fyue yeres of age/ the sayd Englysshmẽ yode to the new castell vpon Loyre. And ye shall vnderstande, that the pactye of the Englysshemen was greately strengthed by the helpe of the kyng of Nauerne, and of syr Phylyppe his brother and other / as more playnely shalbe shewed in the Frenche cronycle, or story of kynge Johan folowynge.

And thus the sayde syr Roberte Knolles, wyth ayde of the kynges men of Nauerne, dayly wanne many townes and stronge holdes in Bretayne.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lviii. Anno domini.M.CCC.lix.

Symonde wymondham.

Symonde Dokkelde. Anno.xxxiiii.

Johñ Chychester.

In thys.xxxiiii.yere, or more verily in the moneth of Nouembre, & ende of the.xxxiii.yere of kynge Edwardes regne / he wyth prynce Edward and the duke of Lancastre, wyth a puyssant army landed at Caleys/and from thens passed by lande vnto Artoys, & by Uermendoys to ꝑ cytye of Reynes, and layde hys siege about that cytye/ and beclypped it in suche wyse, that no man might entre or go out of the cytye without lycence of the Englysshemen.

whan kynge Edwarde had lyen xl.dayes at the siege of reynes, without great dere or hurt vnto it doyng/ he remoued hys syege & passed by the countre of Champayne, tyll he came to a towne called Guyllone/ where ꝑ kynge rested hym a season. In which tyme came vnto hym certayne mẽ of the duchye of Burgoyne, as lordes of dyuers holdes and townes within that ducherye / & gaue vnto hym, to ꝑ entent he shuld nat molest or hurte ꝑ countre, ii.C. M. florȳs of golde / whyche is to the value of sterlynge money of.xxxv.M.li. And ouer that the sayd Burgonyons couenaunted wyth hym, that they wolde mynystre to hym and his hoste, all such vytayles as was in ꝑ countre plentuously for hys money. And that done he departed frome thens, & yode vnto Neuers / and passed there the ryuer of Dyon or Joñ, and yode to Colãges vpon Joñ. And from thens in the moneth of Marche and begynnynge of hys.xxxiiii.yere of his regn, he yode by the countre of Gastenoys toward the cytye of Parys. And prynce Edwarde with hys company passed by Moret, tyll he came to an hold which Englysshmẽ than kept called Tour-

nelles or Cournelles/ before ỹ which towne or holde lay at that season certayne Frenchymen in a stronge bastyle, & assayled the Englyshmen dayly/ and remoued nat thens, all be it they were monyssyed of the prynces commynge. They trusted so moche in the strength of theyr bastyle, whyche thẽ dyscepued/for wythin. v. dayes of the princes commyng, theyr bastyle was goten, and many of them slayne, and to the nombre of. xlvii. persones of ỹ company taken prysoners. Amonge the whyche were. iiii. men of name/ ỹ is to saye, the lorde of Bouple or Bomle, the lorde of Daygreuple or of Aygreuple, syr Johñ de Barres, and syr wyllyam de Blassyes.

Thus kynge Edwarde wyth hys people spedyng hys iourney toward Parys / vppon the tuysdaye beynge the laste daye of Marche in the weke before Easter, came vnto a place called the hostell of Chastelon, betwene Moũtlehery and Chastes / & lodged hym wyth a certayne of hys people there. And ỹ prince with other lordes of hys hoste were lodged in the townes thereabout, from thens vnto the towne of Corueyll, & an other towne called longe Jumell.

Thanne Charles eldest sonne of kynge Johñ, and that day regent of Fraunce / made meanes of treaty. whyche was laboured by a freer called Symonde de Langres, prouncyal of the freers Jacobynes, & legat of the pope. By whose meanes a day of treaty was appoynted to be holdẽ vppon good fryday, in the maledery of le longe Jumel. where at the same daye and place, apered for kynge Edwardes partye, the duke of Lãcastre, the erles of warwyke & of Northãpton, wyth syr Johan de Chande, syr waltyer de Manup, and syr wyllyam Cheyny knyghtes. And for the regẽt apered there, the lorde of Fewe than constable of Fraunce, the lorde Bocy quant than marshall of Fraunce, the lord of Sarancyers, the lord of Upg nay of the coũtre of Uyenne, syr Symond Bucy, & syr Guychard of Auglye knyghtes / whyche treaty came to none effecte.

wherfore kynge Edwarde vpon the tuysdaye folowynge Easter daye remoued frome the sayd hostell, and lodged hym nere vnto Parys at a place named Chastellone nere vnto Mountrouge. And the residue of his hoste was lodged at Uaunys, at Uaugerart, at Gẽtylly, and other townes there about. Thã vpõ frydaye folowynge, beynge the. x. daye of Apryl/ by meanes of ỹ abbot of Clugny, which newly was sent from the pope Innocẽt the. vi, the forsayd lordes & knyghtes agayne assembled at a place called the Bãlyẽ, to treate of an accorde betwene the kynge & the regent. But theyr labour was spent in vayne, as it before had ben.

Uppon the sondaye nexte folowynge, a parte of ỹ kynges hoste came before the towne of Parys, and enbataylled theym in a felde faste by saint Marcelles / and taryed there frome the mornynge tyll thre of the clocke at after noone, to abyde batayle of the Frenchemen. The whyche made none yssue oute of tyme / notwythstandynge that as testifyeth the Frenche boke, within Parys at that daye were greate plentye of Sowdyours, ouer and besyde the greate foyson of the enhabytauntes of the same.

whanne the Englyshemen perceyued that they shulde haue no batayll of the Parysyens / they aboute thre at after noone departed the feld, and toke theyr waye towarde Chartres and so vnto Bõneuale nere vnto Chaceadon. Than kynge Edwarde was lodged at a place calle Bones.

To the

To the whych place came vnto hym out of Parys the bysshoppe of Beauuayes than chauncellour of Normãdye with other/and so behaued them vnto the kynge, that a new daye of treaty was appoynted to be holden at Bretyngny, within a myle or lytell more of Chartres fore sayde, vppon the fyrste day of May next ensuyng.

AT whyche daye of apoyntemente / the foresayd duke of Lancaster, wyth the sayde erles of warwyke and Northampton, and other/at the sayde place apperyd for kynge Edwarde. And for the regent appered there the forenamed bysshop, wyth many other lordes and knyghtes and spyrytuall men, to the nomber of.xxii. persons, whose names I ouer passe for lengthynge of tyme. The whyche so dylygently behaued hym, that in the space of. viii. dayes they agreed vpon an vnyte & peace, the whyche was comprysed in. xli. artycles, as at length is rehersed in the frenche cronycle, wherof the effecte is thys.

‡ Fyrste the kynge of England and hys heyres kynges, wyth all the landes as he than hadde in Gascoyne & Guyan/shulde haue to hym and hys heyres for euer/the cytye and castell of Poytyers wyth all the appertenaũces to that lordshyp belongyng. Also the cytye of Lymoges, wyth all the lãdes of Lymosyne and all other theyr appertenaũces. The cytye and castell of Perygorte, wyth all the landes and reuenues to that lordshyppe belongynge. The erledome of Bygorre, wyth all thynges to that lordshyppe belongyng. The erledome of Poytyau, wyth all the appertenaunces. The sygnorye of Belcuyle. The lordshyp of Eranctys, Erauc-doure, and Erancoñ. The cytye of Agen, the cytye of Agenoys, the cyty of Caours, and lordshyppe of Caours yn. The cytye of Tarbe, the cytye and countre of Gaure, Angoulesme, of Rodes, and of Rouerñ. The lordshyppe of Mostruell, wyth all reuenues therunto belongynge. The sygnorye of Caleys, of Marquell, of Sandgate, and Colyngñ. The lordshyppe of Hammys, of ways, and of Dupe. And the erledome of Gupnes, wyth all profytes therunto belongynge. All whyche lordshyppes, honours, castels, towres, cytyes, and townes/the kynge of Englange thã Edwarde the thyrde and hys heyres kynges of Englande, shulde haue & holde for euermore, in as royall wyse and lyke maner as done the kynges of Fraunce, without doyng for them any homage, feawty, or other duety.

And kynge Edwarde after that daye for hym and his heyres kynges of Englande, shulde clerely renoũce and gyue ouer, all hys tytle, ryght, and interest, that he hadde vnto the crowne of Fraũce, and specyally the name of kynge of Fraunce.

Also all hys ryght and tytle that he hadde vnto the duchy of Normandye, of Thorayne, of Anjowe, of Brytayne, and of the soueraynte of the erledome of Flaunders / and of all other lordshyppes, cytyes, castelles, honours, townes, towres, and manours, that any kynge of Englande before that daye had any ryght vnto wythin the realme of Fraunce / and to holde hym cõtente wyth the aboue named lordshyppes, wythout any forther clayme. *The forme of peace betwene Englande and Fraunce. &*

Forthermore it was agreed, that the frenche kynge shulde paye for hys raũsome thre millions of scutes of gold/wherof.ii. shuld alway make a noble Englysh. ye shall vnderstãd ẏ a million of scutes is .x. C. thousande of scutes/whych extende after ẏ value of sterlyng money, vnto the

ſumme of.ii.C.l.M.marke. And ſo thre milions amounte vnto.vii.hundreth ⁊.l.M.marke / whych maketh iuſte.v.hundreth thouſande pounde of ſterlynge money. Of the whych.iii millions of ſcutes, x.C.M. to be payd at Caleys by the fyrſte daye of Juny next folowynge the ſayd treaty/ ⁊ an other.x.C. thouſande or millio to be payde at the ſayde towne of Caleys, within.viii.monethes after ꝑ frēche kynge was commyn vnto Caleys/ ⁊ the thyrde million to be payde at Lōdon in two yeres and an halfe. That is to ſaye at Myghelmaſſe.xii. monethes after the agrement made. iiii. C.thouſāde ſcutes, ⁊ at Myghelmas next after enſuyng.iiii.C.M.ſcutes/ and at Eaſter than nexte folowynge ii.C.thouſande ſcutes, in ful paymēt of the thre millios or.xxx.C. thouſād ſcutes.

And further it was agreed, that after the Frenche kynge was comen vnto Caleys/he ſhuld reſt hym there iiii.monethes. wherof ꝑ fyrſt moneth ſhuld be at ꝑ chargof kyng Edward/ ⁊ the other.iii.monethes to be at the coſte and charge of the ſayde frēche kynge/ ⁊ to paye for euerych of the ſayde thre monethes, yf he ſo longe taryed there for the perfourmaūce of the ſayde accorde.x.thouſande royalles of Fraūce / whyche at that tyme were in value after ꝑ rate of ſterlyng money, euery royall.xxi.d.or.xiiii. ſous Parys / ⁊ ſo he ſhulde paye for a monethes charge eyghte hundreth lxxv.pounde.

And ouer that it was accorded, ꝑ the frēche kynge Johñ for ꝑ tyme beynge, nor no kyng of Fraūce after hym, ſhuld ayde or aſſiſt the Scottes agayne kynge Edward, nor agayne hys heyres kynges of Englād. Nor kynge Edwarde nor hys heyres kynges, ſhall allye theym with the Flemynges, nor ayde nor aſſyſte theym agayne the ſayde kynge Johan, nor hys heyres kynges of Fraunce.

And for the tytle or ryghte of the duchye of Bretayne, whyche was in queſtyō betwene the erles of Bloys and of Mountfort/ it was accorded that bothe kynges beyng at Caleys, the ſayd partyes ſhulde be called before theym. And yf a peace betwene theym by the two kynges myght nat be ſet/thā the ſayd kynges to aſſigne certayne indyfferent perſons to agre the ſayd erles/and they to haue halfe a yere of reſpyte for to quyet the mater. And yf the ſaydе perſones ſo by the kynges aſſygned, myghte nat agree the ſayd erles by that terme/ꝑ than eyther of the ſayd erles to make the beſte purueyaunce for hym ſelfe ꝑ eyther of them coude make, wyth the helpe of hys frendes or otherwyſe, wherby they myght attayne to theyr ryght ⁊ clayme of the ſayd duchye. Prouyded alwaye that nether of the ſayd kynges nor any of theyr ſōnes, ſhulde ayde or aſſyſte any of ꝑ ſayde erles/by reaſon wherof the peace betweene theym accorded, myghte be lowſed or broken. Alſo prouyded, ꝑ to whether of the ſayd two erles the ſayd duchy ſhuld falle by ſentence of man or otherwyſe / that the homage for it ſhall alwaye be done to ꝑ kynge of Fraunce.

All whyche ordenaunces ⁊ agrementes, wyth many mo, that wolde aſke longe leyſour to wryte, were ratyfyed and confermed by the inſtrumentes ⁊ ſeales of ꝑ prynce of walys vpon the partye of kynge Edwarde for Englandes partye, ⁊ by Charles regent of Fraunce for that partie/as by theyr letters patentes than ſealed apered, beryng date that one at Louuers in Normandye the.xvi.daye of May in the yere of grace.xiii.C.⁊.lx, ⁊ that other at Parys the.x.daye of ꝑ ſayde moneth and yere.

And

And ouer that eyther of the sayde ii. prynces, that is to saye Edwarde prynce of walys was swone in presence of. vi. Frenche knyghtes, vpon the sacrament of the aulter after ỳ thyrde Agnus was sayd in tyme of a lowe masse, at the forsayd Louuers songe or sayd, that he to ỳ vttermoste of hy power, shuld vpholde and kepe the forsayd peace in euery poynt, as ferre as in hym was. And in lyke maner was Charles thanne regente of Fraunce swone, in presence of syre Englysshe knyghtes to perfourme the same.

After whych treaty thus fynysshed & ended/kyng Edward with hys sõnes & nobles of Englãde, toke shyppyng at Hũflete in Normãdy vpõ the xx. day of May, & sayled into Englãd leuyng behynde hym the erle of warwyke for to gyde the Englysshemen that remayned in Guyan & other places, & to se that the peace whyche thã was proclaymed thorough Fraunce were kept & nat brokẽ by thẽ/whyche endured nat lõge wythout vyolacyõ as sayth the Frenche boke.

Here I leue apart the greate reioysyng and honourable receyuyng of the kyng by the cytezyns of Lõdõ, & other ceromonyes/ which at thys season I spare, to thentent I may the more substancyally shewe vnto you the fynall ende of thys acorde. Than trouth it is that in thys season of ỳ kynges beyng in Fraũce/ kyng Johñ for hys more consolacyõ was remoued from Sauoy vnto the towre of London/where after ỳ kynges retourne, he feested the kynge & hys lordes vpon the. xiiii. day of the moneth of Junii. And the. viii. daye of the moneth of Jule next ensuyng/ the Frenche kynge in the morynge landed at Caleys, and was lodged in the castell, and there abode the commynge of kynge Edwarde.

Upon the. xx. day of Octobre/kyng Edwarde arryued at Caleys, & went streyght vnto the castell for to vysite kynge Johñ / the whyche welcomed hym in a louynge and frendly coũtenaunce. And whan the kynge shulde depart to his lodgyng into ỳ towne/ the Frenche kynge requyred hym, ỳ he wyth hys sonnes shuld dyne with hym vpon the morowe folowynge/ whyche of the kynge was graunted to be vpon the monday folowynge, ỳ xii. daye of the moneth. At which day kynge Edwarde was fyrst set & kept the astate, & than secundaryly ỳ frech kynge. Thyrdly the prynce of walys, and fourthly the duke of Lancastre, without mo at ỳ table. In the tyme of whych dyner came to ỳ castell the erle of Flaunders/whome the frech kyng welcomed in moste louyng maner. And whan the sayde dyner wyth all honour was ended. ii. of ỳ kynges sonnes of Englãde, & two of ỳ frech kynges, toke leue of theyr fathers & rode towarde Boleyñ, where at that tyme the regent of Fraũce was. The whyche mette theym in the myd way betwene Caleys and Boleyñ, & so cõueyed them vnto Boleyñ, and rested there wyth theym that nyghte/& vpõ the morowe lafte theym there and hym selfe came vnto Caleys, fyrst to hys father / and after hys father and he came bothe to the kynges palays to dyner. whyche kynge Edwarde receyued wyth moche ioye & honoure, and made vnto theym a sumptuous feaste. Upon the fourthtene daye of Octobre the sayde regente departed frome Caleys, and retourned vnto Boleyñ/and the two sonnes of kyng Edwarde retourned frome Boleyne to Caleys.

And vppon a saterdaye the. xxiiii. daye of the moneth of Octobre, both kyngs beyng in. ii. trauersys & in one chapell

chapell at Caleys, a masse was sayde before them/to the offeryng of which masse nother of theym came. But whan the pax was borne fyrst to the French kynge, and eft to kynge Edwarde, & eyther refused to kysse it fyrste / the Frenche kynge rose vp & came towarde kyng Edwarde. wher of he beyng ware rose vp and mette wyth hym, & refused the pax and kyssed eyther other. At the whyche masse eyther of them was solemply sworne to mayntayne the articles of the sayd peace. And for more assuraunce of ỹ same/many lordes vpon bothe partyes were also sworne, to mayntayne the same to theyr powere. ye shal also vnderstande that in thys season that the Frenche kynge solourned thus at Caleys, bothe for the paymente of hys raunsome & also for the deliuery of certayn holdes and townes which as yet were nat deliuered/he putte in such suerties as followeth. The duke of Orliaunce, the duke of Burgoyn, the duke of Burbone, the erles of Angeou, of Poyteau, of Blops, of Alenson, of sayntę Poule, of Escamps, of Valentynoys, of Byame, of Ew, of Longeuyle, of Cãcaruyle, of Incerre of Dampmartyne, of Uendature, of Salysbyuge, and of Uendosme / the vycountes of Baudemoũt, of Beaw mount, & of Ancuerre / the lordes of Craon, of Deruall, of Dabygny, of Coucy, of Fyers, of Byeaur, of sayntę Uenant, of Garancyers, of Aluerne, of Mountmorency, and of Angest, & also the lord or wardeyne of the forestes / and knyghtes, syr wyllyam de Craon, syr Lowys de Harcourt, syr Johñ de Lagny, and syr Galtyer de Donehame. Of the whyche. xxxviii. persones, dyuers of theym as before is touched were take prysoners at ỹ batayll of Poytyers. For the whyche it was agreed, that as many as had nat payde theyr fynaunce before the thyrde daye of Maye laste past, shuld be acquited by the kynges fynaunce, wyth dyuers other condycyõs which I passe ouer.

A peasyble kyng.

Than vpõ the morowe folowyng of the takynge of the forsayde othe by the two kynges, that is to say son daye the .xxv. daye of Octobre / the Frenche kyng was freely delyuered, the which the sayd day before noone, departed frome Caleys and rode towarde Boleyn. whome kynge Edwarde conueyed a myle vppon hys waye. At whyche myles ende they departed with kyssynge and other louynge maner / and prynce Edwarde kept on hys waye with kyng Johñ, & so conueyed hym to Boleyn/where he tarryed that nyghte. And vpon the morowe the sayd prynce Edwarde, & Charles duke of Normandy, wyth ỹ erle of Escamps and other noble mẽ there than beynge pẽsent, were agayn sworne to mayntayne and holde the sayde peace, wythout fraude, colour, or dysceyte. And that done the sayde prynce takynge hys leue retourned that nyghte vnto Caleys. And so yt now appereth vnto you, that kynge Johñ stode as prysoner by the space of. iiii. yeres, and asmoche as frome the. xix. day of Septembre vnto. xxv. daye of Octobre.

And whan kynge Edwarde had sped his nedes at Caleys/he after as shalbe shewed in the yere folowyng sayled into Englande.

It is also to be noted, ỹ thys yere whyle the kyng was occupyed in his warres in Fraunce as before is touched, the erle of Seynpoule wyth an army of Frenchemen sayled aboute the borders of Kent and Sussex and lãded in sundry places/as Rye, wynchelsee, and Hastynges, and spoyled the townes and slew many of ỹ men, and dyd moche harme to the poore fyshers.

Anno

Anno domini.M.CCC.lix. Anno domini.M.CCC.lx.

Johñ Deyps.

Johñ wroth. Anno.xxxv.

walter Bozney.

UPon the euyn of saynt Quyn tyne, or the.xxx. daye of Nouembre, in the ende of the.xxxiii. yere of kyng Edwarde and begynnynge of thys mayres yere / the kynge toke shyppynge at Caleys, and sayled towarde Englande / bryngynge wyth hym certayne of hys hostages. That is to saye Lowys the secõde sonne of kynge Johan newely made duke of Anion & of Mayn, which before was erle of Angeou / & Johñ hys brother newely made duke of Aluerne and of Berry, which before was erle of Poytyers / whyche erledome nowe belonged to kynge Edwarde by reason of the foreslayde treaty. He also hadde wyth hym syr Lowys duke of Brabant, and the erles of Alenson and of Escampes, whyche were nere of the Frenche kynges blode / with eyghte other erles and lordes named in the Frenche cronycle. with the which the kynge lãded at Douer shortly after, and so came to London the.ix. day of Nouembre.

And in thys.xxxv. yere, men and beastes were perysshed in Englande in dyuers places wyth thõdre & lygh tenynge / and the fende was sene in mannes lykenesse, & spake vnto men as they trauayled by the waye.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lx. Anno domini.M.CCC.lx.

wyllyam Holbech.

Johñ Pecche. Anno.xxxvi.

James Tame.

IN thys.xxxvi. yere / prynce Edwarde wedded the countesse of Kent, whyche before was wyfe vnto syr Thomas Holande / & before that, wyfe vnto the erle of Salesbury and deuorsed frõ hym and maryed vnto the sayde syr Thomas.

‡ In thys yere also was great mortalitie of men in England / durynge the whyche the noble duke Henry of Lãcastre dyed. Thys of wryters is named the seconde mortalitie. For it was ỹ seconde that fylle in thys kynges dayes.

whan duke Henry was dede / syr Johan of Gaunt the kynges thyrde sonne, whyche had maryed the sayde dukes doughter, was made duke of that duchye.

In thys yere also were sene two castels in the ayre. whereof that one appered in the south east, and that other in the south west / out of ỹ which at sondry tymes as it were about the noone tyde, issued oute of eyther of thé an hoste of armed men to mãnes syght. And that hoste whyche issued oute of the castell of the south easte appered whyte, and that other apered blacke. These two hostes apered as though they faught eche of them with other, and shewed as the whyte was fyrste victorious, and lastly ouercomen, & so dysapered. ‡ The seconde mortalyte.

In thys yere also a greate company of dyuers nacyons assembled theym in Brye and Champayne, whereof the leedders or capytaynes were Englysshemen / the whyche dyd moche harme in Fraunce.

But after the affyrmaunce of the Frenche cronycle / thys company whyche

whyche there is called the newe company, beganne theyr assembles in the forenamed countre of Brye, or kyng Johñ were delyuered frome Caleys. And whan they were ware of hys delyueraūce/they departed out of Brye and yode into Champayne, and toke there diuers holdes, and spoyled and robbed dyuers small townes, & raunsomed many mē. And in thys yere as sayth the frenche boke, they toke the brydge and towne of saynt Spyrytes vpon the daye of the Innocentes or the.xxviii.day of December. And as affermeth Policronycon, aboute the same tyme another company in lyke wyse assembled thē in Italye, whiche was called the whyte company / and molested that countre in lyke maner. And in the moneth of Apryll folowynge / kynge Johñ sente the erle of Cācaruyle, the erles of Salesbrugh, of ỹ Marches, of Forestes & of Joyngy/the whyche erles with theyr retinue met wyth the sayd company at a place than named Bruke, nere vnto Lyō sur Rosne. At whych place was foughten a cruell fyghte. But in the ende the frenche men were ouerset & scomfyted / so that the sayde erle of Cancaruyle was takē prysoner, and the two erles of Marches and Forestes slayne, wyth moche of the comō people.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxi. Anno domini.M.CCC.lxii.

Johñ of saynt Albones.

Stephen Caundilly. Anno.xxxvii.

James Andrew.

IN thys.xxxvii.yere, vppon the daye of saynt Maurice, or the xv.daye of January / blewe so excedyng a wynde ỹ the lyke thereof was nat sene many yeres passed. This began about euēsongtyme in ỹ south/& cōtynued with such sternes ỹ it blew downe stronge & mighty buyldyngs, as towres, steples, houses, and chymneys/& cōtynued for the more partye in suche sternesse by the space of fyue dayes after. And in thys yere & xxiii daye of the sayd moneth of January came Johñ kyng of Fraūce vnto Eltham beside Grenewych/ and dyned there that daye wyth the kynge. And vpon that after noone, he was honorably conueyed thorough the cytie of London vnto Sanoye, as well by ỹ cytezyns as other, the whyche mette wyth hym vpō Blakheth wel horsed in a lyuery of one colour. And whyle the sayd kynge Johñ laye at ỹ sayde place of Sauoy about ỹ begynnyng of March folowyng, a greuous syknesse toke hym/ of the whych he dyed the.viii.daye of Apryl folowynge, in the begynnynge of the yere of grace xiii.C.lxiiii/& after was caryed into Fraūce and buryed at saynt Denys, the.vii.daye of May folowynge.

And in thys yere kynge Edwarde created syr Leonel his sonne duke of Clarence, & syr Edmunde hys other sonne erle of Cambrydge. And in the ende of thys yere & xvii.day of September, began a great frost / ỹ whych endured to the begynnyng of the moneth of Apryl. By reasō wherof moch harme grew & ensued of the same.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxii. Anno domini.M.CCC.lxiii.

Rycharde Croydoñ.

Johñ Notte. Anno.xxxviii.

Johñ Hyltofte.

And

AND that yere came .iii. kynges into Englād for to speke wyth kynge Edwarde. Fyrst ỹ kyng of Fraunce, the kynge of Spyres, & the kynge of Scottes.

IN this .xxxviii. yere, pryncē Edward sayled to Burdeaux and receyued the possessyon of Guyan, ỹ kynge Edwarde had newely gyuen vnto hym. For the whyche he after dyd hys homage to hys father, in lykewyse and maner as his father & other kynges of England were wont to do for the sayde duchye vnto the kynges of Fraunce.

‡ And vpon Wyghelmasse day begynge thā vppon a sonday, before the castell of Danhoy fast by the cytye of Daunes in Bryttayne, mette ỹ hostes of syr Charles de Bloys and of syr Johñ de Mountfort / whyche longe before had stryuē as before is shewed for the sayd duchy of Bryttayne / and there foughten a cruell batayll. But by the helpe of god & of the Englysh archers, the victorye fyll to syr Johñ Mountfort. And in that fyghte syr Charles de Bloys was slayne, and many Frenchemen & Brytons that toke hys partye. After whyche victorye, natwythstandynge that the wyfe of the sayde syr Charles laye within that countre / there was agayne the sayde syr Johñ made no resystence, but that he enioyed that countre in peasyble wyse.

Thā Charles the .vi. of that name newly crowned kynge of Fraunce, in the tyght of the woman sente ỹ archebyshop of Reynes & the Marshal of Fraunce into Bryttaygne, for to sette an vnyte and restfull peace betwene the sayd syr Johñ, & the lasse wyfe of syr Charles. The whyche endeuored them so well, that in the moneth of Apryll folowynge the sayde batayll, they agreed them / so that the enherytaunce of that duchye shuld remayne to the sayd syr Johñ & his heyres for euermore / & the wyfe of syr Charles shuld holde her contēted wyth ỹ erledome of Penpture & the vycoūtye of Lymoges / the whyche of olde tyme belonged to her ancetours.

‡ The Batayle of Dānhoy.

And aboute thys tyme was an ordenaunce and statute made, that sergeauntes & prentyses of the lawe, shuide plede theyr plees in theyr mother tonge. But that stode but a shorte whyle.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxiii.

Adam of Bury.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxiiii.

Symonde Mordoñ.

Anno. xxxix.

Johñ of Wetforde.

IN thys .xxxix. yere after some wryters / kynge Edwarde vpon saynt Stephans daye fynysshed hys warres. wherfore in the worshyp of god and saynt Stephan, he thys yere after the oppynyons of the sayde auctours, began ỹ foūdacion of saint Stephans chapell at westmynster. The whyche was fynysshed by Rycharde the .ii. and sonne of pryncē Edwarde nexte kyng of Englande, after thys thyrde Edwarde.

Foūdacyō of saynt Stephans chapell at Westmynster.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. lxiiii.

Johñ Lusshyñ.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. lxv.

Johñ Brykyllworth.

Anno. xl.

Johñ Dzelande.

IN thys.xl. yere/and moneth of Febꝛuary, was boꝛne the fyꝛste sonne of pꝛynce Edwarde, and was named Edwarde / the whyche dyed whan he was aboute the age of .viii. yeres. And in thys yere one named Barthꝛan de Clayton a Noꝛman, wyth an armye of Frenchemē entred the lande of Castyle, & warred vpon Peter than kynge of that lande / & so behaued hym, that in lesse than .iiii. monethes space, he chased the sayde Peter out of hys owne lande, & crowned hys bꝛother named Henry kyng of Castyle, at a towne called Burges vpon Easter daye. wherefoꝛe the sayd Peter constrayned of necessyte, was compelled to come to the cytye of Burdeaur, foꝛ to haue & aske ayde of pꝛynce Edward. Thys Peter was ryghtefull heyꝛe vnto the crowne of of Castyle, and Henry hys bꝛother after moste wꝛyters was bastarde. But thys Peter was so vyle of condycyons, that hys subgectes had to hym but lytell fauoure. And so the warre contynued a season betwene hys bꝛother and hym, as after shall appere/in the whych pꝛynce Edward wyth hys archers toke partye wyth thys Peter, and the Frenche kynge wyth hys speres tooke partye wyth Henry.

¶ Retrayte of peterpens

And in thys yere at the kynges cō maundement, Adam Bury thanne mayꝛe of London was dyscharged ꝑ xxviii. daye of January/and foꝛ hym electe and chosen mayꝛe Johñ Loue kyn grocer. And as wytnesseth Polycronicon & other/ & thys yere was cōmaunded by the kynge, that Peterpens shulde no moꝛe be gadered in Englande, noꝛ payde vnto Rome, as they of longe tyme had ben vsed and graūted, in the tyme of Juo oꝛ Jewe somtyme kynge of west Saxons, as befoꝛe in hys stoꝛy is shewed.

But howe so at that dayes it was than by the kynge foꝛbodē/yet neuertheless at thys pꝛesent tyme and season, they be gadered in sondꝛy shyꝛes of Englande.

Anno domini. M.CCC.lxv. Johñ warde. Johñ Louekyn.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.lxvi. Anno. xli. wyllyam Dykman.

Byꝛth of Richard the seconde.

IN thys.xli. yere, was boꝛne the secōde sonñ of pꝛynce Edward at Burdeaur named Rychard, in the moneth of Apꝛyll and the thyꝛd daye of the sayd moneth. The sayd pꝛynce Edward wyth the kyng of Nauerne and the foꝛesayd Peter kynge of Castyle, mette wyth Henry Bastarde & vsurper of the sayde kyngdome, nere vnto a towne called Dompng/ whet betwene them was a cruell and long fyght. Howe be it in the ende the victoꝛye fyll vnto the Englysshemen, & Henry and hys men were chased.

In thys bataylle was taken syꝛ Barthꝛam de Glaycon, & syꝛ Arnold Dodenhamme thanne Marshall of Fraunce, wyth other aswell French as Bꝛytaynes / and slayne vppon fyue thousande men vpon the partie of the sayde Henry, and vppon .xvi. hondꝛeth vppon pꝛynce Edwardes partye.

After whyche victoꝛy/ the pꝛynce wyth the sayde Peter spedde theym vnto the cytye of Burgys, whyche was yolden to thē shoꝛtly after theyꝛ comynge/and after holpe the sayd Peter to wynne other cytyes and holdes, so that he taryed there tyll the moneth of August folowynge. At whych season as sayth the cronicle of Fraunce,

Fraunce, he retourned vnto Burdeaux wythout paymente of wages for hys sowdyours, that before was to hym by the sayde Peter promysed.

In thys season that prynce Edwarde was thus in Spayne / Henry Bastarde fledde wyth hys wyfe into Fraunce, & abode in a place or coūtre called Carcasson. But so soone as he was warned that prynce Edwarde was retourned vnto Burdeaux / he gadered to hym a new cōpany, & passed by the moūtaynes of the forestes / & so entred the sayd lande of Castile, the .xxvii. daye of the moneth of September folowynge / & had the citie called Calahorre yolded vnto hym. wher vnto hym drewe moche people of the countre / so that hys strengthe encreased hougely. Than frō thens he rode vnto the cytye of Burgys, where he was ioyously receyued / & behaued hym in suche wyse, ỹ in shorte whyle after he had the hole rule of the lāde of Castyle / & hys brother was fayne to auoyde the lāde, and to seche ayde of the Sarazyns as affermeth ỹ forsayde cronycle.

And in thys yere aboute the monethe of Juny / the company before mynded in the .xxvi. yere of thys kynge, entred the duchy of Guyan / and there helde them in doyng moch harme to that countre, lyke as they before hadde done in dyuers places of Fraunce by all that season of iiii. yeres passed. And in the moneth of December they departed from thens and yode into the coūtrees of Auerne and Berry. And in the moneth of February, they passed the ryuer of Loyre, and toke the waye towarde Marcyll / and after entred the countre of Burgoyne. And euer as they passed the countrees, they raunsomed men, and spoyled many townes as they went.

And all be it that the French kyng appoynted dyuers of hys lordes and knyghtes to go agayne them / yet at suche seasōs as they drewe nere vnto them, they wolde suffre theym to departe wythout batayl. For they were so many that they were nombred at xx.M. But of theyr capytaynes is none named. Howe be it there were Englyshmen, Gascoynes, Pycardes Frenchemen, men of Auerne, and of many other nacyons, whych the cronycle reherseth nat / & contynued in theyr force and strengthe longe after, to the greate dammage of the countrees whyche they passed thorough / as Normandy, Gascoygne, Guyan, Burgoyne, and all the chyef countrees of Fraunce / and lyued by rauen and pyllage, to the great enpouerysshynge of the sayde countrees and townes, which they passed by or lodged in.

Anno dñi. xiii. C. lxvi.

Anno dñi. xiii. C. lxvii.

Johñ Torgolde.

James Andrewe.

Anno. xlii.

wyllyam Dykman.

IN thys. xlii. yere / and moneth of Marche, apered *Stella cometa*, that is a blasynge sterre.

And in the moneth of Aprill next ensuynge, that is to saye the fyrst day of the sayde moneth / Leonell ỹ sonne of thys kynge Edwarde entred the cytye of Parys, where he was of the dukes of Berry and Burgoyne honourably receyued / and so by theym cōueyed vnto theyr brother the kyng of Fraunce vnto Louure, where he at that seasō was lodged. Of whome he was also ioyously receyued & log-

ged wythin the kynges palays, & dyned & souped wyth the kynge at hys owne table. And vppon the morowe folowynge he dyned wyth the quene at a place of the kynges nere to saint Poule, where the quene thā was lodged. And whan after dyner he had a whyle daunsed and passed the tyme wyth other dysportes / he than wyth the sayd .ii. dukes was agayne conueyed vnto the kynge, & souped with hym agayne that nyght. And vppon the morynynge beynge tuysdaye, the sayd dukes fested the sayde syr Leonell at a place of theyrs in Parys named Artoys.

‡ Marryage of Leonell.

And vpō the wednesdaye he dyned & souped agayne wyth the quene. And vpon the thursday & morowe folowynge, the sayde syr Leonell toke hys leue of the kyng & quene / the whyche gaue vnto hym gyftes, & to suche as were in hys cōpany, to ỹ value of .xx. M. florȳns & aboue / & was cōueyed wyth noble men, as the erle of Cancaruple & other, tyll he was comen to Sens / & wyth knyghtȝ tyll he came to the borders of Fraūce / where he gaue vnto theym ryche gyftes wyth great thankes.

And after he contynued hys iourney tyll he came vnto ỹ cytie of Mylayne / where shortly after he maryed the doughter of Galyace duke of the sayde cytye and coūtre, & had by her greate possessyons, by reason that her sayde father dyed shortely after.

And in the ende of thys yere, the erles of Armenak, of Bret, and of Pergort, wyth dyuers other nobles of the duchye of Guyan, appeled the prynce of walys in the Frenche kynges courte, that he hadde broken the peace, and wronged theym contrary the peace stablysshed betwene Englande & Fraūce / & requyred the Frēch kyng ỹ the sayd appeale myght haue due processe agayne the sayd prynce. The whyche as sayth the French cronicle kynge, Charles deferred, for certayne causes there towched, whyche were to longe to reherce.

Anno dñi. xiii. C. lxvii.

Symon Mordoñ.

Anno dñi. xiii. C. lxviii.

Adam wymbynghm.

Anno. xlii.

Robert Gyrdeler.

IN thys .xliii. yere, or more certaynly in the ende of the precedynge yere / one walter Bernes mercer, was vpon the day of ỹ trāslation of saynt Edwarde kyng and confessoure or the .xiii. daye of Octobre, chosen by the mayre & aldermen mayre of the cytye of London. But howe it was for lacke of substaunce, or by other impedymente, which is nat noted, the sayd walter vpon the daye of Symonde & Jude folowynge, whā he shulde haue taken hys othe at Guylde halle apered nat. wherfore in hys rome by eleccyon of the forsayde mayre and aldermen, was admytted for that yere folowynge Symonde Mordoñ fyshmonger mayre of that cytye.

And in thys yere and moneth of Marche / Peter kynge of Castyle, whyche by the ayde of the Sarasyns dwellyng in the borders of Spayn, hadde wonne and recouered somme parte of the lande of Castyle / encountrede wyth hys bastarde brother Henry beforesayde, and gaue vnto hym batayll nere to a towne called Sybylle. where after longe fyght, the sayde Peter was scomfyted and moche of hys people slayne, and hym selfe dryuen vnto a castell / oute of the

whyche

whyche he was shortly after by treason gotte, & presented vnto hys brother forenamed / by whose sentēce he was imedyatly byheded. After whose deth the sayd Henry enioyed the hole lande of Castyle. whych infortunytie & myschaūce fylle to thys Peter after dyuers wyrters, for so moche as he cruelly slew hys owne wyfe ỹ dought ter of the duke of Burboñ.

And in thys yere and moneth of May/ the kynge of Fraunce in hys hyghe court of parlyamente holdē at Parys, proceded in iugemente vpon the appellacyons before made by the erle of Armenak, the lorde of Bret, and erle of Perogort, agayne prynce Edward, as before is towched in the precedynge yere. wherupon dyscorde and barpaunce began to take place betwene the.ii. kynges/ in so moche ỹ by meane of the sayd.iii. lordes, natwythstandyng that they were before sworne to be to the kyng of Englād trewe lyege men / dyuers townes of the countre of Poyteaw yelded them to the Frenche kynge, as Albeuyle, Rue, & the more partye of the sayde townes of the sayd countre. wherupō ambassades were sente vppon bothe partyes / & dyuers meanes of treaty were comoned, whyche conteyneth a longe werke, wyth resonynge made vpon the same. But in conclusyō all came to none effecte. So that breche of the peace whych before, betwene ỹ ii. kynges was so substācially conclu ded was brokē/ & eyther kyng for his partye made prouysiō for the warre. In so moch ỹ kynge Charles spedde hym to Roan in Normandy / & there in ỹ moneth of July rigged his nauy to set theym forewarde for to warre vpon Englande.

In whyche tyme & season ỹ kyng Charles was thus occuppyed in Nor mādy/ the duke of Lācastre lāded at Caleys with a strōge company of ar chers & other warryours/ & frō thens passed to Thorouēne, & so to Ayre, wastyng the countre with ire & fyre as he went. wherfore ỹ French kyng in defence of those partyes, sente the duke of Burgoyne with a puyssaunt armye to withstāde the sayde duke of Lācastre. The whych duke of Bur goyne sped hym i such wyse, ỹ about ỹ .xxiiii. day of August he lodged hys hoste vpon the mountayne of Curne han nere vnto Arde. And the Englysh holte was lodged betwene Gysgowne & Arde/ so that ỹ frountes of both ho stes were within a myle. Betwene whome were dayly skyrmysshes and small bykerynges without any nota rye batayll. And whā the sayd duke of Burgoyñ had thus kept the sayde mount, frō the.xxiiii. day of Auguste vnto the.xii. day of Septēbre / he re moued hys hoste & rode vnto Helde. For the whych dede he was after bla med of kyng Charles hys brother. After whych departure of the Frēche men/ the duke of Lancastre with hys hoste tooke ỹ waye towarde Caus or Caur, & passed the ryuer of Sōme/ & so rode toward Harfleu, entendynge as sayth the Frēche boke to haue fy red the Frenche kynges nauy. But at theyr cōmyng thyder ỹ towne was so strōgly māned, ỹ they dyd there ly tell scathe. wherfore the sayd duke de parted shortly thens, and spedde hym into the countrye of Poyteau, and so came vnto the towne of Albeuyle. where wythout the Frenchemen en countred hym, and gaue vnto hym batayll. In the whych was taken syr Hugh Chasteloñ knyght with other knyghtes, esquyres, & burgeyses of the towne / and vpō.xvi. score Frēch men slayne. whyche sayde prysoners to the nombre of fyue & fourty were sent vnto Caleys/ & ỹ duke with hys company yode vnto Burdeaux, in spoylyng of the Frēchmē as he went.

Anno dñi.xiii.C.xlviii. Anno dñi. xiii.C.lix.

Johñ Chychester. Johñ Pyell. Anno.xliiii. Hugh Holdyche.

IN thys.xliiii. yere and moneth of January, dyed the erle of warwyke at Caleys, after he was returned from the duke of Lancastre/ whyche was a man of great fame.

Dethe of quene Phylyppe. And in ỳ moneth of August, dyed that noble woman quene Phylype & wyfe vnto Edwarde the thyrde. The whyche was a greate benefactoure vnto the chanõs of sayne Stephans chapell at westmynster.

And soon after dyed dame Blaũch somtyme the wyfe of Henry duke of Lancastre/& was buryed at Poules vpon the northsyde of the hyghe aultar by her husbande. where she ordeyned for hym and her.iiii.chaũtres for euer, & an annyuersarye yerely to be kept. At the whych, ouer great thynges be set vnto the deane & chanons of the churche / she ordeyned that the mayre beynge presente at the masse, shuld offre.i.d. and take vp.xx.s̃/ the shyrysfes eyther of them a peny, and to receyue eyther of them a marke / ỳ chãberlayn of the cytie.x.s̃, the sword berer.vi.s̃.viii.d̃, and euery officer of the mayres there present.xxii.d̃, and to euery officer to the nombre of.viii eyther of theym.viii.d̃. admytted for the shyreffes. The whyche obyte at thys daye is holden. But by reason that the lande is decayed, these forenamed summes ben greately mynysshed / so that the mayre at thys daye hath but.vi.s̃.viii.d̃, bothe the shyrefes syre.s̃. eyghte.d̃, and other after that rate.

In thys yere also the kynge helde hys parlyament at westmynster. In the whych was graunted vnto hym iii. fyftenes to be payde in.iii. yeres folowynge. And by a conuocacyon of the clergye was also grauted vnto hym.iii. dysmes, to be payde in lyke maner.

And in thys yere was the.iii. mortalitie, wherof dyed moche people. And suche a mrayne fyll also amõg beastes, that the lyke therof was nat seen many yeres before. And vppon that ensued such excessiues of rayne, that corne was therwith drowned in the erthe/and so bukked wyth water, that the yere ensuynge whete was at xl.d.a busshell.

And in ỳ ende of ỳ moneth of July/ syr Robert Knollys accõpanied with dyuers noble men & soudyours, entred saint Omers. And whã they had executed theyr pleasures there & in ỳ countre enuyrõ/ they than rode vnto Arras, in wastynge & spoylyng ỳ coũtre as they went. And whan they had brẽt the bulwerkes of the sayd town of Arras/ they passed by Noyñ & Vermendoys / & brente the houses of all such as wolde nat to them gyue due raunsome. And thus holdynge theyr waye/ they passed the ryuers of Oyse & of Syre/& so came vnto the citie of Raynes, & passed there the ryuer/ and rode towarde Troyes, & passed ỳ ryuers of Aube & of Sayne/ & so helde theyr waye to sayne Florentyne, and there passed the ryuer of Jon/ in holdyng theyr cours towarde Joyngny & so to Corbueyll & Esson or Essoyn. And vppon a mondaye beynge the xxii. day of September/ the sayd Englysshemen lodged theym vppon the mount of sayne Albone, and in the countre there about. And vpon wednysdaye folowyng, they enbatayled them in a felde betwene the townes of Junye and Parys.

In

In all whyche season they passed wythout batayll thorough those fore sayd countres, in spoylyng them and raunsompng the inhabytaūtes ther-of wythout resystens or impedymēt. And all be it ꝑ in the cytye of Parys at that day were .xii. C. men of armes waged by the Frenche kynge, besyde the sowdyours and strengthe of the cytezeyns of that cytye / yet the sayde hoste of Englysshemen lay as before is sayd enbataylled, tyll it was paste noone of the forsayd daye. At which tyme for so moche as they were credi bly enfourmed that they shulde there haue no batayl, they brake theyr feld and sped them to a place or towne cal led Antoygny, & there lodged ꝑ night and vpō the morowe toke theyr tour ney towarde Normandy.

But after .iiii. dayes labour, they tourned theyr waye towarde Estam-pys or Estamps, by Beause in Gaste noys, in pyllynge and domagynge the coūtrees as they before had done / contynuynge theyr tourney tyll they came into the erledome of Angeau / where they wanne by strengthe the town of Uaas & Kuylly, with other stronge holdes thereabout.

But than as ꝑ deuyll wold, which is rote of all enuy and dyscorde / the lorde Fytzwater and the lord Graūt-son, fyll at variaūce wyth syr Robert Knolles and hys companye / whyche grewe to so great hatred and dysplea sure, that syr Roberte Knolles wyth the floure of the archers and sow-dyours, departed from the sayd two lordes, leuynge theym in the forsayd townes of Uaas & Kuylly / & he tyā yode into Bretayne.

Whereof whanne certayntye was brought vnto the Frenche kynge / anone he cōmaunded syr Berthram de Glaycoñ newly made marshall of Fraunce, wyth a stronge armye to entre the sayde countye of Angeou, and to make sharpe warre vppon the sayde Englysshmen. The whych vpō the twelf daye of October folowyng, layde syege vnto the sayde towne of Uaas / whereof issued oute the sayde lordes of Fytzwater and Graūtson, and gaue vnto the Marshall batayl. But in the ende the dyscomtyture fyl vnto the Englysshemen / so that of theym was slayne .vi. hundreth, and the reste put vnto the flyght.

In the whyche was taken ꝑ sayd lorde Grauntson wyth other. And that done the sayd syr Barthā yode vnto the towne of Uaas, and gat it by assawte. where also were slayne vpon thre hundreth of Englysshemē, and the other put to flyght, & many taken prysoners. And after thys the sayd Barthram pursued the Englysh men that were fledde, vnto a towne called Uersure. where in assawtynge of the sayd towne, he slewe and toke prysoners vpon .iiii. C. Englysshmē. And thus by stryfe and dyssenc.on a-monge theym selfe / those that before by ampte and good accorde were vic tours, now by hatered and dyscorde were slayne and taken prysoners.

Stryfe and dyssencyon caused confusyon.

Anno domini. M.CCC.lxix. Anno dñi. M.CCC.lxx.

wyllyam walworth.

Johñ Bernes. Anno. xlv.

Robert Gaytoñ.

IN thys .xlv. yere & begynnyng of the moneth of Marche / the archebysshoppe of wynchester than beynge a cardynall, and presente at Auynyon wyth pope Gregorye the xi. of that name / was put in comtt. iiii. mysslon

myſſyon wyth the archebyſſhoppe of Beauuays to make or treate a peace and vnyty bytwene the two realmes of Englande and of Fraunce. whych ſayd cardynall of wyncheſter after hys departynge from the pope, came downe toward Melcoune/where by the ſayd archbyſſhop and alſo cardynall of Beauuays, he was honourably mette, and ſo conueyed vnto the cytye of Melcon. And whan he had reſtyd him there vpon. iiii. dayes/the two cardynalles enſemble ſped them vnto Parys/where they wyth kyng Charlys had communycacyō towchynge the ſayd peace. And after hys pleaſure knowen/the ſayde archbyſſhop and cardynall toke hys leue, & was cōueyed toward Caleys/ where he toke ſhyppynge, and ſo ſayled in to Englande/ and ſhewed vnto the kynge the popes pleaſure wyth the Frenche kynges anſwere.

‡ A mayres gyfte to the caſe of the comōs.

And in thys yere folowynge the ſomertyde in Guyā were made and foughten many and dyuers ſkyrmyſſhes/in the whyche for the more partye the Englyſhemen were put vnto the worſe/ſo that many of them were ſlayne and taken pryſoners, and dyuers holdes and townes taken from them/and ſpecyally in the countre of Lymoſyne. For by the fyrſte daye of the moneth of July, the cytye of Lymoges wyth all the coūtre of Lymoſyne forſayde was vnder the obeyſaunce of the Frenche kyng, as wytneſſyth the Frenche Cronycle.

A taſke leuynge.

wherof the occaſyon was as after meth the Englyſhe boke, for ſo mych as prynce Edward had lately before arreryd of the inhabytauntes of that cytye and countre, a greate and greuous taſke, to theyr great hurte and enpoueryſſhyng/by meanes wherof he loſte the loue of the people.

whan the Frenche kynge hadde thus opteyned the rule of the coūtre of Lymoſyne / he immedyately after ſente fyr Barthram de Glaycon into the erledome of Poyteawe or Poytyers, and wāne there many townes and caſtels/& laſtly layde hys ſyege vnto Rochell, as after in the folowynge yere ſhalbe ſhewed.

‡ And to the ende that good and merytoryous dedes ſhuld be holden in memorye / here is to be noted that the mayre for thys yere beyng Johā Bernys mercer, gaue vnto the comynaltye of the cytye of London a cheſt wyth thre lockes & keyes, and therin a thouſande marke of redy money/ wyllyng the keyes therof to be yerely in the keppyng of thre ſundry perſōs, that is to mene the mayſter of ỹ felyſſhyp of the mercery to haue one, the mayſter of the felyſſhyp of drapers the ſecond, and thyrde to be in the keppynge of the chamberlayne of that cytye. And ſo therin the ſayde thouſande marke to be kept/to the entent that at all tymes when any cyteſyne wolde borowe any money, that he ſhulde haue it there for the ſpace of a yere/to laye for ſuche a ſumme as he wold haue plate or other iewellys to a ſuffycyente gayge, ſo that he exceded not the ſumme of an hundreth marke. And for the occuppenge therof yf he were lerned, to ſaye at hys pleaſure De profundis for the ſoule of Johñ Bernys and all chriſten ſoules, as often tymes as in hys ſumme were compryſed .x. markes. As he that borowed but .x. marke, ſhulde ſaye but ouer that prayer. And yf he had .xx. marke/then to ſaye it twyes, and ſo after the rate. And yf he were not lerned, then to ſaye ſo often hys Pater noſter. But how ſo thys money was lent or gyded / at thys daye the cheſte remayneth in the chamber of London, wythout money or pledges for the ſame.

Anno

Anno domini. M.CCC.lxx. Anno dñi. M.CCC.lxxi.

Robert Hatfelde.

Johñ Bernes. Anno.xlvi.

Robert Gaytoñ.

IN thys.xlvi. yere and moneth of Febzuary, kynge Edwarde helde hys parlyamente at weſtmynſter. In the whych he aſked of the ſpirytualtye.l.M.li, as moch of ỹ laye fee. The whych by the tempozal was graunted/but the clergye kepte them of wyth pleſaunt anſweres. So that the kyng and hys coũſayll was with them dyſcontented / in ſo moche that to theyz dyſpleaſures, dyuers offycers, as the chaunceler, the pzyuye ſeale, the treſourer, and other, were remoued beyng ſpyzytuall men/and in theyz offyces & places tempozall men ſet in. And ſhoztly after the fozeſayde cardynall of Beauuays came into Englande, to treate of the peace betwene the.ii. realmes. But he ſpedde nothyng to the effect therof.

Wherfoze in the moneth of July, ỹ Frenche kyng ſente into the countre of Poyteaw the fozenamed ſyz Barthzam de Claycoñ wyth a ſtronge armye / where he wan dyuers holdes & foztreſſes from the Englyſhmen. In whyche ſeaſon kynge Edwarde foz ſtrengthyng of the coũtre, & ſpecially to defende ỹ towne of Rochell, which as aboue in the other yere is ſhewed was at this yere beſieged by the ſayd ſyz Barthzan / ſente the erle of Penbzoke wyth other noble men, to foztyfye the ſayde towne, and to remoue ỹ ſyege. But oz he myght wynne to the ſayd towne/he was encountred with a flote of Spaynardes, the whyche kyng Henry of Caſtyle had ſent into Fraunce to ſtrength the French kynges partye. Of the whyche flote after longe and cruell fyght/the ſayde erle was taken, wyth ſyz Guycharde de Angle and other, to the nombze of.C and thze ſcoze pzyſoners / & the mozepartye of hys men ſlayne and dzowned, wyth the loſſe of many good ſhyppes.

And in the begynnyng of the moneth of Septembze folowyng, a Galcoygne bozne, a man of good fame, whome the kyng of England had admytted foz hys lyeutenaunt & gouernoure of the countre of Poyteaw, named le Captall de Bueffe / faughte wyth an armye of Frenchmen befoze a towne named Sonbyſe / where in concluſyon hys men were ſlayne and chaſed, & he wyth.lxx. of hys partie taken pzyſoners. Than the dukes of Berry & of Bnrgoyne vppon the.vi. daye of Septembze, came befoze Rochell/and had certayne communicacyõs with ỹ rulers of the ſayd towne, foz the delyuery therof. In this paſſe tyme & ſeaſon, kyng Edward herynge of the takyng of the erle of Pẽbzoke, & of the loſſe that he dayly had of hys men in dyuers partyes of Fraunce, with alſo the ieopardye that ỹ towne of Rochell and other ſtode in / made haſty pzouyſyon, & entendyd to haue paſſed the ſee. But the wynde was cõtrarye ous, that he myght haue no paſſage/wherfoze he retourned as ſayth Policronicõ, agayne into the land.

Than vpon the.viii. daye of Septembze befozeſayd, the capptayne of Rochell, hauynge no cõfozte of ſhozt reſcous / yelded vppon certayne appoyntementes the ſayde towne vnto the fozenamed dukes, vnto the frẽch kynges vſe. And ſhoztely after were alſo yolden to theym, the townes of Angoleſme, of Exãctes, of ſait Johñ de Angely, wyth dyuers other.

Anno

Anno domini. M.CCC.lxxi. Anno dñi. M.CCC.lxxii.

Johñ Phylpotte.

Johñ Pyell. Anno.xlv.

Nycholas Brember.

IN thys.xlvii.yere / at a wrestelynge holden vpon blake Heth beſyde London, was ſlayne a mercer of Londō named Johñ Northwode. For the whyche greate dyſſencyon grewe amonge the kelyſhyppes of ỹ cytye, to the houge dyſtourbaunce of it/and a good ſeaſon after or the ran coure thereof myghte be duely appeaſed.

In thys yere alſo the duke of Lācaſtre ſyr Johñ of Gaunt, & ſyr Edmūde his brother erle of Cambriged wedded the two doughters of Peter whyche was late kynge of Caſtyle, put to deth by Hēry hys baſtarde brother/as before I haue ſhewed in the xlvii.yere of thys kyngs reygne. Of ỹ whyche two doughters ſyr Johñ of Gaunt maryed the eldeſt named Cō ſtance, & hys brother the ponger named Iſabell/ſo that by theſe maryages theſe .ii. bretherne claymed to be enheryteurs of the kyngdome of Caſtyle or Spayne.

And in thys yere after the duke of Bryteyne had receyued many exortacyons & requeſtes frome the Frenche kyng, to haue hym vpon hys partye: he ſente for certayne ſowdyours of Engliſhmen, & ſtrengthed with them ſome of thys caſtelles & holdes. wher of heryng kyng Charles/ſent thyder wyth a ſtronge power the forenamed ſyr Barthran de Claycon / warnyng theym to make warre vpon them as an enemye vnto the houſe of Fraūce. The whyche accordynge to theyr cōmiſſion entred the lande of Bryteyn, in waſtyng it with irne & fyre/ and in ſhorte proceſſe had polden vnto hym the more partye of the chyef townes, excepte Breſt, Aulroy, and Deruall. Than in the ende of Juny the ſayde ſyr Barthran layd ſyege vnto Breſt/ & the lord of Craon wyth other laye before Daruall. In all whyche ſeaſon the duke of Bryteyne was in Englande. For ſo ſoone as he hadde as before is ſayd, beſtowed the forſayd Engliſhe ſowdyours/ he ſayled into Englande to ſpeke wyth kynge Edwarde.

In the moneth of July, the duke of Lācaſtre wyth ſyr Johñ de Mōt forde duke of Bryteyne & other, with a myghty puyſſaunce landed at Caleys. And after they had reſted them there a certayn days, they rode vnto Helden, and lodged them within the parke an other ſeaſon. And after paſſed by Dourlōs, by Benqueſne, and ſo vnto Corbye / where they paſſed ỹ ryuer of Some, and rode vnto Roy in Vermendoys / where they reſted them by the ſpace of.vii. dayes. At whych terme ende they ſet fyre vpon the towne, & toke theyr way towarde Laemoys, and burned & ſpoyled the countre as they wēt. And in proceſſe of tyme paſſed the ryuers of Oſne, Marne, and of Aube, & rode thorugh Chāpayne/ & by the erledome of Brame ſtreyghte vnto Guy / & paſſed the ryuer of Seyn, & ſo towarde ỹ ryuer of Leyr, and vnto Marcynguy ỹ nōnery. And whan they were paſſed the ſayd nonnery/ they kepte theyr waye towarde the ryuer of Ancherre, and ſo vnto Burdeaux. In all whyche iourney they paſſed wythout fyghte or batayll/natwithſtādyng the great hurte & domage they dyd vnto ỹ townes & coūtres as they paſſed. Excepte at a place or towne called Orchye, a knyght of Fraūce called ſyr Johñ de

Vyenne

Upenne encountred.l. speres and.xx. archers that were strayed from theyr hoste/and set vppon theym, and slew some parte of theym, and toke the residue of theym prysoners. So that the Frenche boke sayth, for so mothe as for lacke of meate for theyr horses and other paynfull thynges that in that iourney to theym happened, that though that iournay were vnto the Englysshemen honorable to ryde so ferre in the kynges lãde vnfoughten wyth / yet it was to theym very paynfull, cõsyderyng the manyfolde chaunces fallynge to theym, as losse of horses and other thynges durynge that passage.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxii.

Adam of Bury.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxiii.

Johñ Awbry.

Anno.xlviii.

Johñ Fysshyde.

In thys.xlviii. yere, were sente fro the pope than beyng the .xi. Gregory, the archebysshop of Rauenne, and the bysshop of Carentras/for to treate of the peace, betwene the.ii. kynges of Englande and of Fraũce. The whyche assembled them at Bruges in Flaundres. whyther also for kynge Edwardes partye, came the duke of Lancastre, and the bysshope of Londõ, wyth other. And for Charles the Frenche kynge, appered there the duke of Burgoyne, & the bisshop of Ampens, and other. The whyche cõmyssioners, after they had spente a greate parte of the lente in disputacions of thys matter/ the partyes for the Frenche kynge desyred a lycence of the legates, that they myghte ryde vnto Parys, and shewe vnto ỹ kyng the offycers of the englysshe partye / and so to retourne wyth hys pleasur. wherupon it was agreed, that a certayne shulde ryde & to shew vnto the Frenche kynge, ỹ the Englysshemen abode styffely vpon the soueraynte, that the kynge of Englande and hys heyres kynges, shal enioy all the former landes comprysed in the peace made betwene hym and Johñ than kyng of Fraũce/ as before is shewed in the.xxxiii.yere of thys kyng, wyth out homage or other dupte for them doynge. For thys matter as sayth ỹ Frenche cronycle, kyng Charlys assembled at Parys a great parte of ỹ nobles of hys realme, wyth many other wyse mẽ & doctours of dyuynite, to haue that case sufficiently argued and debated. In the whyche coũsayl it was plenerly determyned, that the kyng myght nat gyue ouer the sayd soueraynte without great peryll of hys soule/ as there was shewed by diuers resons. whan thys reporte was brought vnto Bruges/ ỹ sayd treaty was dissolued wythoute any conclusyon takynge/ excepte the peace was contynued tyll the feast of all sayntes next ensuynge.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxiii.

wyllyam walworth.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxiiii.

Rychard Lyons.

Anno.xlix.

wyllyam wodhowce.

In thys yere, that is to vnderstande in the begynnynge of thys mayres yere, and ende of the xlviii.yere of kyng Edwarde / a new assemble

assemble was appoynted, for treaty of the forsayde peace, to be kepte at sayut Omers, but after at Bruges. where for kynge Edwarde apered agayne the duke of Lancastre, and syr Edmunde hys brother erle of Cambryge, wyth dyuers other of hys counsayll. And for the Frenche kynge, the dukes of Angeou and of Burgoyne wyth dyuers other of hys counsayll. where the sayd lordes wyth the other heide theyr assēbles and courtes, tyll it was nere Easter, to ẏ great charge and coste of bothe partyes. And in ẏ ende departed agayn without effect, except that they prolonged the peace tyll the fyrste daye of Apryll next ensuynge.

And after by laboure of the sayde legattes/the kynge of Englādes counsayll beynge at Caleys, and ẏ Frēche kynges counsayll at Boleyne/ a longer daye of the sayd peace was cōcluded, tyll mydsomer nexte folowynge. In whyche tyme and season the.ii. legattes rode from Boleyn to Caleys, and from Caleys to Boloyn, to conclude some treaty betwene the twoo realmes. But in conclusiō none was taken / whereof after the Englysshe wryters the Frēche mē bare the wyte. And after the Frenche auctours, the Englysshe are put in the blame. But were the faute in the kynge of Englande or in the French kynge/trouth it is that the Frenche kynge durynge thys treaty wan many townes & holdes, aswel in Guyan as in Bretayn, and in other places, to hys great aduauntage.

Thys yere also dyed doctour wyllyam wyttylsey archebysshop of Cāterbury. After whose deth the mōkes chase to that see the cardenall of

.wyth whyche electyon the kynge was nothynge contented/ so that after greate gooddes spente by the monkes to optayne theyr entente, by the consente of the pope and the kynge, doctoure Symonde Sudbury was lastely admytted to that dygnytie, whyche before was bysshop of London.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxiiii. Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxv.

Johñ Hadley.

Johñ warde. Anno.l.

wyllyam Newporte.

In thys.l.yere, syll many wonderfull sykenesses amonge the people/whereof the people dyed wonderly faste, as well in Italye as in Englande. Amonge the whyche dyed syr Edwarde called the lorde Spencer, a mā of great fame/ whose body was entered at Teukesbury.

And for thys mortalytye was so sharpe and sodayne / pope Gregory beforenamed graunted of hys goodnesse to suche as were contryte and confessed, clene remyssyon of theyr synnes. The whyche indulgence contynued in Englande, by the terme of.vi.monethes.

And thys yere a greate murmure and grudge beganne to sprynge agayne certayne persones, as were aboute the kynge / as the lorde Latymer thanne the kynges great chamberleyne and other.

By whose synystre counsaylle, the kynge in hys age was myslad, and hys treasoure myspended, to hys greate dyshonoure, and all hys trewe subiectes greate hyndraunce.

Anno

Anno dñi.xiii.C.lxxv. Anno dñi.xiii.C.lxxvi.

Johñ Northamtoñ.

Adam Staple. Anno.li.

Robert Launde.

IN thys.li.yere/the kyng assembled hys hyghe courte of parlyamẽt at westmynster. In ỳ whiche was axed a subsydye of the commõs, for the defence of hys enemyes. wher unto it was answered by the cõmon house, ỳ they myghte no lenger bere suche charges, cõsyderyng theyr manyfolde charges by thẽ borne in tymes passed. And ferther they sayde they knew well the kyng was ryche Inough to defendẽ hym & hys land, yf the lande and hys treasoure were well gyded. But it hadde ben longe tyme euyll ruled by euyll offycers, that the lande myght nat be plentuously of chafre, marchaundyse, or rychesse.

By meane wherof, & by theyr inportune charges/ ỳ compynaltye was greatly enpouerysshed. More ouer ỳ sayd commons cõplayned them upõ dyuers offycers, causers of thys mysorder. wherof the lord Latymer was noted for pryncypall/ wyth also dame Alys Pyers, the whyche the kynge had longe tyme mysused for his concubyne/ and one named syr Rychard Scurry knyght, by whose counsayls and synystre meanes, the kyng was mysgyded, and the rule of the lande mysordered.

wherfore the sayd commõs prayed by the mouth of theyr speker than syr Pyers Dalemere, that the sayde persones with other myght be remoued from the kyng, and other to be set in auctorytie aboute hys persone, as were for hys honoure & weale of his realme. whyche request of the cõmõs by the meanes of ỳ noble prynce Edwarde was accepted/ so that the sayd persones were from the kynge amoued, and other by the aduyce of the sayd prynce & other wyse lordes of ỳ realme, for the sayd persones aboute the kyng deputed and ordeyned. And shortly after the commõs graunted the kynges pleasure / so that he had of euery man & woman ouer the age of.xiiii.yeres.iiii.d, beggers onely excepted. And by the clergy was graunted, that ỳ kyng shulde haue of euery benefised man.xii.d, and of preestes nat benefised.iiii.d/ the.iiii.ordres of freres onely excepted. But for thys money were leuyed / the kynge was fayne to borow summes of money in dyuers places / amonge the whyche the cytye of London was sente to for iiii.M.li. But for ỳ mayre than Adã Stapulle, was nat quyk or forthe-rynge in that matter / he was by the kynges commaũdement dyscharged the.xxii.day of ỳ moneth of Marche, & for hym was than Rychard whyttyngton Mercer chosyn.

And upon the eyght day of Juny beynge than Trynyte sondaye/ dyed that noble and famous man prynce Edward, wythin the kynges paleys of westmynster / and was after wyth great solempnyte conueyed to Canterbury, & there honourably buryed, agayne the shryne of that gloryous martyr saint Thomas. After whose deth / the kynge contrary hys promesse before made, called to hym agayne all suche persons as he to fore for hys honoure and profytte of hys realme auoyded oute of hys courte/ and admytted theym agayne to the same offyces that they before occupyed. By the meanes of whome the forsayde speker of the parlyamente syr Pyers Delamere, was in suche

The deth of the noble prynce Edwarde.

vv. wyse cõ-

wyfe cõplayned vpon to the kyng, ỹ he was thrown into prison, where he lay many yeres after.

Than kyng Edwarde created Richard sonñ of prynce Edward prynce of walys/ & gaue vnto hym ỹ erledomes of Chester and Cornewayll. And also for the kyng wared feble & sykely/he than betoke the rule of the lande vnto syr Johñ of Gaunt duke of Lancastre / and ordeyned hym as gouernour of the lande. whyche so contynued durynge hys fathers lyfe.

In thys yere also the tenaũtes or menyall seruaũtes of the erle of warwyk, made a ryot vpon the monkes of Euyshñ / and slewe & hurte many of the abbottes tenauntes, & spoyled and brake hys closures and waryn-nes, and sewed theyr pondes and waters, and dyd vnto them many displesures/ to the vtter ruyne of that monastery, ne had the kyng ỹsoner haue sente downe to the erle hys letters, chargynge hym to cease & withdraw hys men from that ryot. whych after warde was pacified, without any notary punysshement of suche persons as were begynners or executours of that ryot.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xcvi. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xcvii.

Andrewe Pykman.

Nycholas Bembre. Anno.lii.

Nycholas Twyforde.

In thys.lii.yere and .xii.daye of the moneth of Apryl/ syr Johñ Wynterworth knyght, for certayne treasons, of the whych he was conuict before the mayre and other iustyces of the kyng in the Guyld halle, was thys foresayd daye at tyborne put in execucion/ that is to meane, hanged, heded, and quartered/& hys hed sette after vpõ Lõdon brydge. The cause of whose dethe was, for so moche as he beynge put in trust by the kyng, receyued greate summes of money to paye wyth the kynges sowdyours / the whyche he kepte vnto hys owne vse, and deceyued the kynge and hys sowdiours. And whan therof he was to the kyng accused/he feryng punysshement fledde into Fraunce, & there conspyred newly agayne his naturall prynce/& so lastly was taken and receyued hys merite.

‡ Dethe of kynge Edwarde the thyrde.

In thys yere also began a wõderfull cysme in the churche of Rome. For after the deth of the pope the .xi. Gregory, was chosen .ii. popes. whereof the fyrst was named the .vi. Urbã, and that other the seuenth Clement/ the fyrste an Italyon borne, and that other a Frencheman. Of the whyche ensued suche dyscorde in electyon of the pope, that by the terme of .xxxix. yeres after, there was euer .ii. popes in suche auctoryte, that harde and doughtefull it was to knowe/ whether was indubitat pope.

‡ Cbysme.

‡ And vpon the .xxii. daye of the moneth of Juny, dyed at hys manour of Shene now called Rychmoũt, kyng Edward ỹ thyrde of that name/ whã he had reygned .li. yeres and .v. monethes and odde dayes/ leuyng after hym .viii. sonnes, that is to saye Leonell duke of Clarence, Johñ of Gaũt duke of Lancastre, Edmund of Lãgley duke of yorke, and Thomas of woodstok erle of Cambrydge. Of the whyche sonnes wyth other nobles of hys realme, he was honourably cõueyed frõ his sayd manour of Shene vnto the monastery of westmynster, and there solempnely wythin the chapell

chapell of ſaynt Edwarde vppon the ſouth ſyde of the ſhryne, wyth thys Epytaphyor ſuperſcrypcion in a table hangyng vpon hys tombe.

¶Hic decus Anglorum, flos regum preteritorũ,
Forma futurorum, rex clemens, pax populorum,
Tercius Edwardus regni complens iubileum,
Inuictus pardus, polleus bellis Machabeus.

The whych is thus to be vnderſtãde in our mother tũge as folowynge.

Of Engly ſſhe kynges, here lieth the beauteuous flowre.
Of all before paſſed, & myrrour to them ſhall ſue
A merciſull kynge, of peace conſernatour,
The.iij. Edwarde. The deth of whome maye rue
All Englyſſhmẽ / for he by knyghtehode due,
Was lyberde inuict, and by feate Marciall
To worthy Machabe in vertu peregall.

PHylyp de Ualoys erle of Ualoys, & ſonne of Charles de Ualoys brother vnto ỹ.iiii. Philip was admitted for protectoure of the realme of Fraũce, in the begynnynge of the moneth of Febr̃uary. And vpõ Trynite ſonday next enſuyng, he with hys wyfe were crowned at Raynes, in ỹ yere of our lord god a .M.iii.C.xxviii, & the .ii. yere of kyng Edward the.iii. thã beynge in poſſeſſiõ of the crowne of Englande. Betwene thys Philip & the ſayd Edward kyng of Englande, as ſome deale before in the ſtory, a.iiii. yere of Charles the .v. is towched / great diſputacions & argumentes aroſe betwene theyr coũſayles, for the right & tytle to the crowne of Fraũce. For it was thought by the coũſayl of Englãde, for ſo moche as Edwarde was coſyn to Philip le Beaw, & ſonñ of ỹ ſayd Philippes doughter, which had no mo chylder but Edwardes mother / that he ſhuld rather be kyng of Fraũce than Philip de Ualoys, that was but coſyn germayn to Philip le Beaw, & ſonne of hys brother Charles. Of whych diſputiõs & argumentes the fynall cõcluſion was, ỹ for an olde decre & law by auctoryte of parlyament lõge before made was enacted, that no womã ſhuld enheryte the crowne of Fraũce / therfore ỹ tytle of Edward by myght of the Frẽchemen was put by, & thys Philip admytted to the gouernaũce of the ſame. After whych direccĩõ thus takẽ, & ſpecially by ỹ meanes of ſyr Robert erle of Artoys / thys Philip anone was proclamed regẽt of Fraũce, vnto ſuch tyme as the quene wyfe of Charles the .v. whych thã was wyth chylde were delyuered / & ſo receyued the rule of the lande as regẽt. In tyme wherof, Peter Remy principall treſorer of kyng Charles laſt dede / whyche Peter (lyuyng the ſayd Charles) was accuſed of myſpẽdyng of ỹ kynges treſoure, & enrychyng of hym ſelfe cõtrary to ryght & reaſon, ſo ỹ his goodes ſhuld be eſtemed at.iiii.C.M.li. after Parys money, wherof ỹ value is ſet out in diuers places before in this werke was takẽ out of pryſon & areygned at Parys, & there conuict & adiuged / & vpõ the.xxiiii.day of Marche drawẽ thorugh the cytie, & hanged vpon the comõ gybet at Parys. And vpõ the fyrſt day of Apryll folowyng / the old quene & wyfe of Charles laſte kyng, was lighted of chyld, & brought forth a doughter at Boys in Vincẽt, which after was named Blanche. wherfore where before the ſayd Philip de Ualoys ruled before but as regẽt / nowe he was allowed & takẽ for kyng, and crowned as before is ſayd at the cytie of Raynes, with ỹ quene his wyfe vpon Trinite ſonday. And whã ỹ ſolẽpnyte of hys coronaciõ was ended / he then aſſembled before hym & hys coũ

Philyp de Ualoys crowned kyng of Fraunce.

ſayll Lowys the erle of Flaūdȝes, & receyued of hym homage foȝ the ſayd erledom. And that done, he beſought the kyng of ayde to oppȝeſſe certayn townes of hys coūtre whych rebelled agayne hym. wherunto ꝑ kyng graūted/& by counſayll & exȝtacion of ſyȝ Gautyer oȝ walter de Crecy than cōſtable of Fraunce, the kyng ſent oute hys commyſſioners/ chargynge hys lordes with theyȝ aſſygnes & ſowdyours, to mete with hym in dyffēſyble arraye at the cytie of Arras, by mary Magdaleyne day next enſuyng.

At whyche day the kyng with his lorȝdes and people there meting, toke forȝewarde vpon hys iourney, & ſped hym toward Caſſyle a town of Flaūdȝes. where within lytell ſpace of the towne he pyght hys pauylyons and tētes/& waſted and pylled the coūtre thereabout. But the Flemynges kepynge within the ſayd towne, fered nothyng the French kyng/but in dyriſion of hym and of hys lorȝdes, they cauſed a red cok to be paynted vpō a whyte cloth, & wȝote in greate letters in ꝑ ſayd clothe thys ryme folowynge, & hāged it out ouer the walles.

Quant ce quoc icy chantera,
Le roy trone ca entrera.

Whych is thus to meane in our vulgare ſpeche.

whan that thys cok lo here doth ſynge, than ſhall thys founde kynge hys hoſte in bȝynge.

Whā thys was redde of the frēch men, and repoȝt made therof vnto the kynge / he was therwyth ſoȝe amoued / and ſpecyally foȝ that ꝑ they named hym the foundē kyng. Therfoȝe they aſſayled them ſtrōgly vppon all partyes. But they of the towne defended theym manfully, ſo that theyȝ enemyes had of them none aduauntage. Than the kynge ſente ſyȝ Robert de Flaundȝes a knyghte of the erles, with a certayne ſowdyours/commaundyng hym to aſſayle the Flemynges toward ſaint Omers And the erle he monyſſhed, ꝑ he with hys people ſhuld aſſayle thē towarde the ple. Than the comōs of Bȝuges, Ipȝe, of Tourney, of Fourneys, and of all Caſſyle, aſſembled theym / and pȝoupded that a certayne of thē ſhuld kepe the mount of Caſſyle, and another company ſhulde kepe the coūtre towarde Tourney, and the thyȝde hoſte ſhulde foȝtyfye the countre towarde the ple.

The whiche people oȝdered euery hoſte hys lymit to hym aſſigned/and dayly ſkyrmyſſhed wyth the frenche men, ſo that betwene them men were ſlayne vpon bothe partyes. whan the kyng had thus lyen befoȝe the towne a certayn ſeaſon/ the Flemynges nat feryng theyȝ enemyes, iſſued oute of the towne, and pyght theyȝ tētes vpon the mounte of Caſſyle, & ſhewed them boldly vnto theyȝ enemyes/thā kyng Philyp ſeynge the boldneſſe of the Flemynges, and howe lytell they fered hym/toke coūſayll of hys lorȝdȝ how he myght cauſe them to dyſcēde the hylle/foȝ ſo longe as they kepte ꝑ hyll it was iuperdous & perylous to ſtye towarde theym. Laſtly it was agreed by the kynge and hys lorȝdes, that ſyȝ Robert de Flaundȝes wyth other, ſhuld aſſayle an holde oȝ town thereby called Terroner de Bergner by meane wherof the kyng thoughte that they wolde diſcende the mount, to reſcue the ſayd towne. which accoȝdyng to ꝑ kynges mynde was done, and a bulwerke ſet vppon a fyȝe. But the kynge had neuer the rather hys entent. Foȝ they kepte them and theyȝ gates in ſo ſure wyſe, that the French kyng foȝ al hys great power, myghte to theym do no ſcathe. In ſo mochе that the kynge conſyderynge theyȝ

theyr strength/was condyscended to fampsshe them by hunger, that they myght nat wynly strēgth/& for that toke ỹ lesse watche or regarde to hys people, but suffered them to play and dysport them out of theyr harneys, eche of thē in others tente/ thynkyng hym sure of hys enemyes, for any assaute or warre by theym to be procured or attempted agayne hym or hys lordes.

But whether it were that hys enemyes of this were warned, or that of theyr owne courage and pryde they wolde assayle the frenche hoste/ vpon the.xxiiii. daye of Auguste towarde ỹ nyght, the sayde hoste of Flemynges aualed the mount in as secrete wyse as men of warre myght/& drewe thē towarde the French men, whych thā were vnarmed and in theyr disportes of dysynge and playeng at the chesse & other games.

Vppon whome the Flemynges came so sodaynly, ỹ they slewe many of theyr enemyes, and forced many to fle toward saynt Omers for theyr sauegarde. And so the Flemynges helde on theyr waye tyll they came nere vnto the kynges tent, which thā was also vnarmed. But by the noyse & crye he beynge warned, in all haste armed hym. In the whyche season as god wolde for the frenche hoste/ certayne Marshallys of the frenche hoste wyth a stronge company, retorned from ỹ assaute of an holde therby, and encountred the Flemynges/ and helde wyth them batayll, whyle the kynge and his lordes made them redy. So that in processe the Flemynges were closed wyth theyr enemyes and had a sharpe and cruell fyghte/ wherin they defended theym vygorously.

But in the ende the losse of ỹ felde tourned vpon the Flemynges/ so ỹ the capytayne named Zaunqun was slayne, wyth many other to the nombre of. xviii. M. & aboue as wytnesseth the frenche boke, ouer many whyche were there taken prysoners of poore men and artyficers/ for the multitude of the gentylmē were vpō the erles partye. Discomfyte of the Flemynges.

After whyche victorye thus optey ned by the kynge/ anone he caused ỹ sayde towne of Cassell to be set vpon a fyre/& after yode vnto Bruges and had it yolden vnto hym. And in lyke wyse was Ipre, Poperynge, Fournays, Tournaye, Terrouer, & many other good townes yoldē vnto hym. Amonge the whyche Gaūt is nat named. wherfore it is to deme, that it was none of those townes ỹ at thys season rebelled. Thā in short proces folowynge/ the kyng had the rule of the hole erledome of Flaunders, and delyuered the possessyon therof vnto Lowys the forsayde erle of that cōtre/ and after retourned into Fraūce wyth pompe, leuynge the erle in hys countye of Flaundres. The whyche dyd after so cruell iustyce vppon hys subiectes, that he put to deth by dyuerse tourmentes, as rakkynge, heddynge, & hangynge, in sondry townes & places of hys lordshyppes, vpō the nōbre of. x. M: ouer & aboue many & dyuers whych were banysshed, some for fewe yeres, some for many, & some for euermore.

In the secōde yere of thys kyng Phylyp/ lyke as before is shewed in the thyrde yere of kynge Edwarde, the sayd Edwarde made hys homage vnto the sayde Phylyp in ỹ towne of Ampas, for the duchy of Guyon & countye of Poytyers. And soone after thys Phylype sente into Flaundres dyuers bysshoppes and other noble men/ by whose meanes ỹ gates of Brugs, of Ipre, of Courtray and of other townes, were abated &

throwen downe, for fere lest the sayde townes wolde oft rebell agayne hym or theyr erle.

In thys yere also syr Roberte de Artoys began hys plee in parlyamēt agayne Johan countesse of Artoys for that erledome / in claymynge the ryght therof by certayne endentures of couenaūtes of maryage, betwene syr Phylype de Artoys hys father, & dame Blaūche of Bryttayne hys mother/ whyche wrytynges had ben by longe tyme kept from hym and now newly founden. And for to haue the better expedicion in hys matter / he brought vnto the kynge, the erle of Alenson, the duke of Bryttayne, with dyuers nobles, the whyche made requeste for hym to the kyng ꝑ he might haue iustyce. And with the countesse came the duke of Burgoyne, Lowys erle of Flaundres, and dyuers other noble men, makynge lyke requeste for her and for her ryght. Than syr Robert shewed forth a wrytynge sealed wyth the seale of armys of the erle of Artoys, conteynynge that whan the maryage was solēpnysed of syr Phylyp de Artoys father to the sayd Robert, & of dame Blaunche doughter vnto the duke of Bryttayne and mother vnto the sayd Robert, it was accorded that the sayd syr Phylyp hys father, gaue vnto ꝑ sayd dame Blaūche and to her heyres, the erledome of Artoys. whyche wrytynges at the instaunce & prayer of the countesse of Artoys, were than delyuered into ꝑ court to be kept/ sayeng that the sayd wrytynges were vntrewe & coūterfeted. Upon the whych the sayde countesse brought suffycient prouffe, that the sayd wrytynges were falsely made & sealed by a gentylwomā, doughter vnto the lorde of Dygnon of the castell of Bethune/ ꝑ whyche was so lerned in Astronomy ꝑ she toke vpon her to shew thynges to come. wherin somtyme she happed vpon the soth / but more oftener she fayled.

By meanes of whyche womā an olde chartre sealed wyth the seale of the forenamed syr Phylip was foūd/ the whych she craftely toke of, & set it vpon a new writyng made to ꝑ auaūtage of the sayd syr Robert of Artoys & after presented them vnto the sayd syr Robert, sayenge ꝑ she had founde thē in the town of Arras. The which he ioyfully receyued, and made hys tytle and clayme vpō the same. This matter thus hāgyng before the kyng and hys lordes/ in the .iii. yere of hys reygne in ꝑ cyte of Parys, after due prouffe made vpon the same, the sentence was gyuen agayne syr Robert of Artoys to hys great displeasure. In so moche that he sayd openly, by me he was made a kynge, and by me he shalbe dysmyssed ꝑt I maye. And for he fered to be caste in pryson by ꝑ French kyng/ he therefore conueyed hys horse and goodes secretely vnto Burdeaux vpon Geroūde, and there toke shyppyng and so passed into Englande hys sayd horses and treasour & hym selfe yode vnto hys cosyne the duke of Brabāt. with whome he bode a certayne of tyme/ & after passed into Englāde, and excyted kyng Edward hougely for to make warre vpon the Frenche kynge.

In the .iiii. yere of ꝑ reygne of this Phylip/ the sayd syr Robert was proclaymed open enemy to the crown of Fraunce, and hys landes sealed into the Frenche kynges handes / and he banysshed the lande for euer, excepte that he within a moneth after Easter next ensuyng, wolde come into ꝑ kynges court, & submyt hym hooly vnto the kynges grace. whyche sentēce passed agayne hym, for so moche as he apered nat.

In ꝑ .vi. yere of the reygne of this Philip/ the wyfe of syr Robert of Artoys,

toys, ꝑ whych was syster vnto kyng Philip, was accused to be a great occasioner of the offence of her husbād. For ꝑ which she with her childer was sent into Gastenoys & there holden in strayte ꝓyson.

In ꝑ. viii. yere of hys reygne, kyng Philip vysyted diuers parties of his realme/& in ꝑ doynge, vysyted many places of pylgrymages which before he had ꝓmysed to seche, for the restitucio of helth to his eldest sonn Johñ thā duke of Normādy, whych ꝑ yere before by meane of sekenes was in great ieopardy of lyfe/ & cōtynuynge the sayd iourney, rode vnto Auygnō and vysyted there ꝑ pope than beyng Benet the. xii. of ꝑ name. And whā he had sped hys nedes wyth hym, he yode into the ꝓvynce of Mercyle for to se there his nauy/and after retourned by Burgoyne, where of the duke he was royally receyued and feested. In which season of his there tarieng a cōplaynt was brought before hym by ꝑ sayd duke, agayne syr Johñ de Chalon, for clayme of certayn lādes within that duchy. The whych variaunce to apese, the kyng toke therein somme payne. But no direccion he myght set therein/ so ꝑ the sayd duke and syr Johñ departed with wordes of dyffiaūce. And shortly after ꝑ sayd syr Johñ accompanyed with dyuers noble mē of Almayne, entred ꝑ duchy of Burgoyne, and therin dyd moche harme to the coūtre and people / and gat certayne castelles, and thē fortyfyed with Almaynes. Thā ꝑ duke haūyng in his ayde ꝑ kyng of Nauerne the duke of Normādy, with ꝑ erle of Eseāps and of Flaūdres, assyeged ꝑ castel of Chausy, & at ꝑ ende of. vi. wekes wan ꝑ same/and after yode vnto the cytye of Besenson, & layd siege to it also. But whā he had leyne there a lōge season, he was fayne to cōclude a trewes, his host was in such distres of bytayll. By reason of whych peas or trewes ꝑ hostes were deseuered, & the ende of ꝑ warre vnparfyted. But in the ende folowynge, by meane of ꝑ Frēch kyng a dyrectiō was takē betwene the sayd ptyes. And thys yere kyng Philip sent certayne messegers vnto kyng Edward, vpō certayn demaūdes for ꝑ castel of paūtes & other for ꝑ which cōtrauersie fyrst begā to kyndle betwene the sayde. ii. ꝓynces as in ꝑ. x. yere of Edward is touched with the other yeres folowyng.

In the. ix. yere of this Philip, apered a blasyng sterre. After the whych ensued greate mortalytye within the realme of Fraūce, aswel of men as of beestes. And in this yere a nother mā of ꝑ prouynce of Lāgedok named Arnolde of Normādy, was heded & hanged vpō ꝑ cōmon gybet of Parys/ for asmoch as by hys meanes it was ꝓued, that the Englyshmē had wonne the castell of Paracoll. And in the. x. yere of kynge Philip/ kyng Edward of Englād sent syr Barnard de Brez into Flaūdres, for causes touched & shewed in the. xii. yere of the sayd Edward. And in ꝑ. xi yere of this Philip kyng Edward sayled into Brabāt, & ayded hym wyth Lewys ꝑ Emprour. And whyle the Frenche kyng taryed with hys hoste at saint Quyntyne in Vermandoys, kyng Edward entred into Fraunce, and spoyled and brent a parte of Trerelle, nat without some note or of Cowardyse arrected to the Frēch kyng and hys hoste, of hys owne subgectes. And in the same yere, began the towne of Gaūte to rebell wyth other townes of Flaūdres, by the motion of Jaques de Artuyle/as in the. xiiii. yere is shewed of kyng Edward the thyrde.

In the twelf yere of thys Philip whych ꝑ Frēch boke calleth the yere of confusyon, kynge Edwarde beynge retourned into Englande/ the

Frenche kynge assembled a myghty hoste to go agayne the Henauders, Flemynges, & Brytons/& came with the sayde hoste vnto Arras / and sent from thens a part of hys people with hys sonne Johñ than duke of Normandy into Henaude, for to warre vppon the countrey there.

Whyche went streyght vnto Cambraye/& after layd siege to that castel called Esthandune. And wythin.xv. dayes folowynge the Frenche kynge hys father came vnto the sayd syege wyth innumerable people. The whiche castell at thende of a moneth after the kynges cõmynge was gyuẽ vp by apoyntement. And that done ꝑ kynge remoued hys siege to a castell of the bysshoppe of Cambray named Thune, standynge vpon the ryuer of Lescaut, where the kynge laye longe tyme without harme doynge vnto ꝑ sayde castell. At lengthe the duke of Brabant with the erle of Gerle, with a stronge hoste of dyuers nacyons, came for to remoue that siege/so that the Frenche hoste lay vpon that one syde of the ryuer, & the Brabanders vpõ that other. But by meane of .iiii. bydges whych were made ouer that ryuer / bothe hostes at sondry tymes mette & faughte dyuers sharpe skyrmysshes, to the losse of people vppon bothe partyes. But in the ende the castell was so betyn wyth gonnes, ꝑ the cappytayne therof put all hys mouables in a shyp/and after wyth such sowdyours as were lefte, entred the sayde shyp, & sette the castell vppon a lyght fyre, wherof whan the Frenche kynge was ware/in all haste he caused the walles to be scaled, and so entred & stanched the fyre. And the same nyght the hoste of Brabanders departed also.

Whan the kynge had thus wonne thys castell / he than sente the dukes of Normandy & of Burgoyn, vnto a towne named Quesnoy. And whan ꝑ sayd dukes had brent a parte of that towne & other vyllages there about/ they retourned agayne vnto ꝑ Frẽch hoste. And shortly after the kynge retourned into Fraunce / & there made prouysyon to sende forthe hys nauy to mete wyth kyng Edwarde, whych were to the nombre of.iiii.hũdreth or aboue/ the whyche as in the.xv. yere of Edwarde the thyrde is before shewed, mette the Englysshe nauy, and there at a place called ꝑ Swyn were ouercommen.

After thys great victory thus optayned by the kynge of Englande / the Frenche kynge wyth a great hoste herynge comfortable tydynges of the discomfiture of syr Roberte de Artoys, before the towne of saynte Omers, as before in the.xv. yere of kyng Edward is also shewed sped hym tyl he came to the pryory of saynte Andrew. where he taryenge wyth hys people, certayne lettres were sent to hym by kynge Edwarde, wherof the tenour with the answere of the same, are set out in the forsayd xv.yere, with other maters apparteynynge to the actes of bothe prynces. whan the peace was concluded betwene the sayde kynges, as in ꝑ sayd xv.yere is declared/ ꝑ kyng of Fraũce retourned to hys owne. And in ꝑ .xvi yere of hys reygne, dyed Johñ duke of Bryttayne. After whose deth Charles de Bloys & Johñ de Mountfort, claymed seuerally to be enherytours of that duchy. whyche Charles was sonñ vnto the erle of Bloys, & neuew vnto the Frenche kynge, by reason ꝑ Margarete hys syster was mother vnto the sayde Charles. The whych Charles had maried the doughter of Guy de Bryttayne vycount of Lymoges, secõde brother of the forenamed Johñ duke of Bryttayne. And ꝑ sayd

Johñ

Johñ de Moũtfoꝛte was the thyꝛde bꝛother vnto the foꝛsayd Johñ duke of Bꝛytayn now dede. So that thys queſtyon of thys clayme reſted vpon thys poynt, whether the doughter of the ſecõd bꝛother ſhuld enheryte ẏ du chy oꝛ ẏ ponger bꝛother, conſideryng ẏ Johñ the eldeſt bꝛother dyed with= out heyꝛe of hys body, and Guy the ſeconde bꝛother without heyꝛe male/ wherfoꝛe the thyꝛde bꝛother Johñ de Moũtfoꝛt claymed to be duke of Bꝛy tayne. whiche caſe and queſtion was bꝛought befoꝛe ẏ Frẽch kynge & hys loꝛdes, & there debated & argued by a longe ſeaſon. But in ẏ ende ſentence paſſed agayn ſyꝛ Johñ de Moũtfoꝛt/ & Charles de Bloys was put in poſ= ſeſſion of ẏ duchy by kyng Philip/to whome the ſayd Charles dyd hys ho mage foꝛ the ſame.

Foꝛ thys ſentence aroſe moꝛtall warre betwene the ſayde ſyꝛ Charles & ſyꝛ Johñ. In the whych the.ii. kyn ges of Englande & Fraũce toke par= tye/ſo that kyng Edwarde ayded ſyꝛ Johñ de Moũtfoꝛt / & kynge Philip hys neuew ſyꝛ Charles. Thanne ſyꝛ Johanne de Mountfoꝛte befoꝛe the ſentence gyuen, feryng the ſequell of the ſame/departed frõ the court, and gat hym into a ſtrõge towne of Bꝛy= tayne, & there held hym. wherof kyng Philip beynge aduertiſed / ſente ſyꝛ Johñ his ſonne duke of Noꝛmãdy, & hys bꝛother ſyꝛ Charles erle of Alen ſon, foꝛ to warre vpõ ẏ ſayd ſyꝛ Johñ de Moũtfoꝛt. The which ſped theym with a nõbꝛe of people into Bꝛytayñ, & beſieged a ſtrõge caſtell ſtãdyng in an yle by ẏ ryuer of Loyer. And after the wynning therof, they yode vnto ẏ citie of Naũtes/the which ẏ cytezyns yelded vnto thẽ without ſtroke. And ſoon after as teſtifieth ẏ Frẽch ſtoꝛy, vpõ certayne cõdiciõs & couenãtes, ẏ ſayd ſyꝛ Johñ de Moũtfoꝛt yelded hi vnto ẏ duke of Noꝛmãdy / ẏ whyche ſẽt hym vnto ẏ kyng his father to Pa ryſ, where by the ſayd kynge he was impꝛyſoned in the caſtell of Louure. But how it was by fauour oꝛ other= wyſe, he eſcaped pꝛyſõ after .ii. yeres pꝛyſonemẽt. Oꝛ after ſome wꝛyters, he was after.ii. yeres deliuered vpon certayn cõdicions. wherof one was, ẏ he ſhulde nat come in Bꝛytayne noꝛ any thynge medle oꝛ haue to do in ẏ coũtre. But thys pꝛyſonemente of ſyꝛ Johñ de Moũtfoꝛt nat withſtãding/ the warre was mayntayned in Bꝛy= tayñ by ẏ frẽdes of the ſayd ſyꝛ Johñ & many townꝛ & caſtelles therof was holdẽ to the vſe of ẏ ſayde ſyꝛ Johñ/ wherof to ſhew vnto you ẏ circũſtaũ= ce & pꝛoces it wolde aſke a lõge tyme. But ẏ cõcluſion & fyne of this warre ſhalbe ſhewed in ẏ ſtoꝛy of ẏ. vi. Char les & ſonñ of kyng Johñ. In the.xv. yere of this Philip/the erle of Salyſ bury accõpanied with ſyꝛ Roberte of Artoys & other noble mẽ, entred Bꝛy tayñ, & ayded the frẽdes of ſyꝛ Johñ de moũtfoꝛt/in doyng great domage to ẏ coũtre, & bꝛẽt moche of ẏ French kynges nauy. In aſſaylyng wherof, ſyꝛ Robert of Artoys was woũded in the thygh with a gunne, wherupõ he laye ſyke / & vpõ ẏ enſued a flux, & ſo therof dyed, & after cõueyed into En= glãde, & there buryed. And ſoon after kyng Edward entred Fraũce wyth a ſtrõg army. But a peas was atwene hym & the Frẽche kyng condiſcended foꝛ a certayne terme by laboure of.ii. cardinales, as befoꝛe in ẏ.xvi. yere of kyng Edward is declared, and in this yere kynge Philip arered a taſke of his people called a Gabell in Frẽche. This was pꝛouyded, ẏ no ſubiect of ẏ kynges noꝛ other within hys lãde, ſhuld bye any ſalt but of the kynge & at hys pꝛyce. And ouer that he arered & lowed the coynes & moneys of hys lande, to the greate auaũtage of hym ſelfe, and enpoueriſſhyng of his ſayd

Death of ſyꝛ Robert of Artoys.

ſubiectes

subiectes by meane wherof he fyll in great hatered of hys people.

In the.xvi. yere of hys reygne, a great dyscencion grewe amonge the nobles of Normādy, by reason of partyes takyng, some wyth Johñ of Harecourt, and other wyth syr Roberte Barthzan than Marshal of Fraūce, for couenaūtes of maryage apoynted betwene ỹ sonne of the sayde syr Robert vpō that one partye, & ỹ doughter of syr Roger Bacoñ / whose wyfe or maydes mother was than maryed vnto syr Godfrey de Harecourt, brother of that aboue sayd syr Johñ vpon the other partye. For waryaūce wherof greate warre was lykely to haue ensued, yf the kynge the sooner had nat sent strayt commaūdement, that eyther partye shulde kepe hys peace, & to apere before hym and hys lordes at Parys, and there to haue theyr greuaūce by hym & hys lordes determyned.

At whyche day of apperaunce, the sayde syr Godfrey appered nat, nor none for hym / but cōtrary the kyngs commaūdement, assyeged syr wyllm Berthran bysshop of Bayñ and brother to the forsayd syr Roberte than beyng in a castell. And whan he sawe he myght nat preuayll agayne hym / he than drewe vnto the Englysshmē and ayded them agaynst the Frenche kynge.

In thys yere also kynge Philippe entendynge to releue the duchye of Burgoyn wyth whete whyche there than was scāt / ordeyned that certayn quarters of whete shulde be gadered in the countrees of Terroner, of Orleaunce & Gastenoys, & so sent into Burgoyn. But ỹ studyaūtes of Orleaunce, with the burgeyses & comons of the cytie toke therwith such grefe, that of one mynde they wente downe vnto the ryuer of Loyer, where at ỹ season certayne shippes laye freyght wyth wytayll to be had vnto the sayd countre, & there set out the grayen, & spoyled it in suche wyse, that moche therof came neuer to good. And that done many of that company beynge nedy and poore / yode vnto vyllages there by, and robbed ỹ people, & dyde moche harme. whā the prouost or ruler of Orleaūce behelde thys rage & ryot of the people, and cōsydered the multytude of theym / he forbare for a tyme tyll they were somdele asswaged. And than wyth suche company as he had of hys officers and other, he toke a certayne of theym, and put theym in sondrye pysons, tyll he knew farther of the kynges pleasur. But it was nat longe after that the other of that affynyte, herynge of the enprysonement of theyr felowes / assēbled theym of newe, and lyke woode men ranne vnto the prysons / & nat alonely delyuered theyr felowes, but also many other whych laye there for great causes & crymes / & some suche as were cōdempned to deth for theyr transgressyons. whan noticiō of this great outrage and ryot came vnto ỹ kyng / anone he sent thyder. ii. knyghtes of hys court with a puyssaunt armye / chargyng them to take all suche as were occasyoners and begynners of thys Riot / and as many as were founde culpable to be put vnto deth. The whych knyghtes accordyng to theyr commission wyth ayde of ỹ prouost of Orleaūce, toke suche as were dempte gylte of thys cryme, & hāged them vpon the common gybet or galous of the cytye, amonge the whych were dyuers clerkes, and one a deaken & within orders. And in the same yere and moneth of Auguste, a noble knyght of Bretayne called syr Olyuer de Clycoñ, for treason ỹ he hadde conspyred agayne kyng Philippe, or for he had fauoured kyng Edwards partye was taken by a trayne at a iu

stes

stes or tournamēte holden for ꝑ same cause at Parys, and shortly after iudged to deth/as first drawen through the cytye vnto the place of iugement, & theruppon a scaffold purposely ordeyned was byheded / and after hys body with chaynes hanged vpon the gybet, & hys hed standyng there ouer vpō a stake, or after an other auctour had vnto ꝑ cytye of Nauntes in Brytayne, & there pyght vpon a gate of ꝑ cytye. And in the same moneth syr Godfrey de Harcourte, whych as before is sayde, alyed hym with kynge Edwarde, and wolde nat apere after certayne sommons/ was now openly banysshed as traytour & enemy to ꝑ crowne of Fraunce. And in the same moneth was syr Johñ de Moūtforte delyuered out of pryson, vppon such condicions as before is rehersed in ꝑ xiii. yere of this kyng. And soon after were put vnto deth at Parys, syr Johan de Malestreet, syr Godfrey de Malestreet the father & the sonne, syr Johñ de Moūtalbone, syr wyllyam de Bruys, syr Johñ de Cablat, & syr Johñ de Plessys knyghtes/ & esquyres, Johñ de Malestrete neuew to ꝑ forsayd knyght, Guyllñ de Bruze, Robert de Bruys, Johñ de Senne, and Dauy de Senne. And shortely after at Parys were put in execucion thre Normā knyghtes, for affynyte or fauour, whych they had borne towarde syr Godfrey de Harcourt and theyr heddes sent vnto sayntē Loup in Constantyne a cytye of Normādy. whych sayd knyghtes were called sir wyllyam Bacon, syr Roulande de la Roche tessone, and syr Rycharde de Percy.

In the.xvii. yere of thys Philippone mayster Henry de Malestrete clerke & deakē, & brother to the aboue named syr Godfrey before put in execucion, whych sayd mayster Henry was mayster of the requestes with kyng Philip/ for so moch as he after ꝑ deth of hys sayd brother, pode vnto kyng Edward and coūsayled hym agayne kyng Philip, & after by assygnemēt of kynge Edwarde was set in great auctorite wythin the towne of Vannys in Brytayne/ whych towne was after goten by the Frenchmē, & he therin as one of the cheke cappytaynes of the same taken was imprysoned within the castell of Parys. Out of the whyche at thys season he was taken thens, and set in a tumbrell, & thereunto fastened wyth chaynes of yren/and so cōueyed bareheded with dynne and crye thorugh ꝑ hygh stretes of Parys, tyll he came vnto ꝑ byg shoppes palays of Parys / and there deliuered vnto the bisshop. And soon after by vertue of a commissyō purchased by kynge Philip of the pope, to haue the sayd mayster Henry dysgraded / he was deprysed of all degrees and ordres of the churche, and thā deliuered vnto the executioners. The whyche by.iii. days cōtynuall a certayn season of ꝑ day, set hym vpō a ladder in ꝑ syght of all people/ to ꝑ entēt that euery man & chyld might throwe at hym all fylth & ordour of ꝑ strete/the whiche was done without all compassion and pyte, in so cruell wyse, that by the thyrd dayes ende he was dede, and after buryed vnreuerently.

In the sayde .xvii. yere of kynge Philippe also, as before is shewed in the.xix. yere of kynge Edwarde the thyrde/ Jaques de Artyuele, whych was especiall promoter of the sayde kyng Edwardes causes, came vnto ꝑ towne of Gaunt/and shewed vnto theym dyuers apoyntmentes to be holde betwene theym and other townes of Flaūdres. where vpon the.xv. day of July, by diuers cōspiratours of the sayd towne of Gaunte, he was pursued

Jaques de Artyuele murdred.

purſued from one houſe to an other, and laſtly ſlayne & murdred by them to the kynges of Englande great diſpleaſure & hurt. wherefore the ſayde kyng Edwarde was fayne to retourne into Englande wythoute ſpede of hys purpoſe, lyke as before in ỹ ſayd xix. yere of his reygne is declared. In thys yere alſo and the moneth of December, dyed ſyr Johñ erle of Moũt fort, which as before is ſayd claymed the duchy of Bryttayn/and lefte after hym a ſonne named alſo ſyr Johñ & erle of Moũtfort, the whyche in lyke wyſe claymed the ſayd duchy of Bryttayn, & mayntayned the warre agayn ſyr Charles de Bloys, as hys father before had done. In the. xviii. yere of kyng Phylyp & fyrſte daye of July, at Parys was than putte to deth by cruel execuciõ, a cytezyn of Compeyñ named Symonde Poplet, a man of greate ryches. The whych for he had ſayd in open audience, that the ryght of the crowne of Fraunce belonged more ryghtfully vnto kyng Edward than to kynge Philip/ he was fyrſte hanged vpon a tree lyke as an ore is hãged in the bochery, & there diſmembred, as fyrſt the armys, and after ỹ legges cut from hys body, and laſtly hys hede ſtryken of, and the trunke of hys body hanged by chaynes vpõ the commõ gybet of Parys. And vpon a ſaterdaye beynge the. xxvi. day of Auguſt in the foreſayde. xviii. yere of kynge Philippe, was foughten at Creſſy the batayll before expreſſed in the. xxi. yere of kynge Edwarde the thyrd/ where the floure of the chyualry of Fraũce was ſlayne & taken pryſoners. Than ſoone after kyng Philippe for the defence of the charge of hys warres, aſked a ſubſidie of the monkes of ſaynt Denys. And amõg certayne iewelles of that place to be had / he demaũded the greate crucyfyx of golde ſtandynge ouer ỹ hyghe aulter of that monaſtery. wherunto the monkes anſwered ỹ they myghte nat departe with that crucifyxe / for Eugenius the thyrde of that name pope, accurſed al them that layd any hande vpon that crucifyxe, to the entent to remoue it from that place, as it appereth by wrytynge ſet vnder ỹ fote of the ſayd croſſe/ by whyche anſwere the kyng was pacifyed. And in the moneth of Decẽbre, fyr Godfrey de Harecourte wyth a towell double folden about hys necke, came vnto ỹ preſence of kyng Philip, and yelded hym holy to hys mercy and grace / the whyche graunted vnto hym hys pardon.

And in ſhorte whyle after, all the Lumbardes vſurers wythin ỹ realm of Fraunce, were taken and ſente to dyuers pryſons. And all ſuche perſones as ſtode boũden vnto them, for any bargeyn or lone of money by way of vſury, it was ordeyned that ỹ ſayd perſones beyng dettours to the ſayd vſurers, ſhulde paye the pryncypall dette vnto the kynge at theyr dayes of payment/ & the reſydue whyche remayneth to the vſurer for hys lucre of gayne for the lone of hys money, ſhulde be pardoned to the dettour. And after the ſayd Lumbardes vſurers were delyuered from pryſon, by payenge of greate and greuous fynaunce.

In the. xix. yere of thys Philippe, for ſo moche as wytneſſeth the Frẽch cronycle, that ỹ Flemynges by great manacis and perforce, had conſtrayned theyr erle to be aſſured by bonde of aſſuraunce vnto the doughter of kyng Edward, contrary hys volũte and wyll/ the ſayde erle nat wyllyng to accomplyſſhe that marryage, in the Eaſter weke by a cautele depted out of Flaũdres, and came to ỹ Frenche kyng to Parys/ of whome he was honourably and ioyouſly receyued.

And

And in the same yere, one named Gawyn de Belemount an aduocate of the spirituall lawe, entendynge to betray ỹ cytye of Laoñ / acqueynted hym with a pooze mã than dwellyng in that citie of Meaus named Colyn Tomelyn/ỹ whych befoze tyme was fled the cytye of Laon, & was thã foz lacke of substaũce comyn to Meaus, & there mayntened a pooze lyfe / to ỹ whyche thys Gawyn resozted & releued. And lastely whãne he thoughte he was somdele of hym assured, he brake vnto hym hys mynde/& sayd if he wolde be ruled by hym, he wolde restoze hym to hys fozmer prosperite & welth/wherũto thys Colyner graũted. Thã anone thys Gawyn shewed hym a lettre, & wylled hym to bere it vnto ỹ kyng of Englãd, with certayn rewarde to hym gpuyng / & also promysyng of moch moze, with that ỹ he retourned to hym shoztly to ỹ citie of Raynes with ãswere of ỹ same. whã thys pooze and indygẽt man had receiued this lettre/he cast manypelles in hys mynde. How be it fynally cõtrary his othe and promyse, he toke hys waye towarde the French kyng, and presented hym with ỹ letter/in ỹ whych was expzessed all the maner & ozdze how the sayd citie of Laõ shuld be betrayed. whan the kyng was aduertysed of all the circumstaunce of thys treason/he enfourmed this Colyner how he shuld behaue hym selfe in beryng of hys answere/and prouyded hys tyme accozdynge as though he had ben in Englãd, & by conueniẽt day came vnto hym to Raynys accozdyng to the fozmer appoyntmente.

In whych season the kynge had sent in secrete maner vnto the prouoste of Raynes, that so soone as the sayd Colyner had shewed to the sayd Gawyn his answere, ỹ the sayd Gawyn shuld be attached and had vnto prison/the whyche was accozdyngly executed.

And in shozt proceste folowynge, foz so moch as he was within ozdzes/ he was by the prouost sent vnto ỹ cytye of Laon, and there put to the bisshoppes prison. But whan ỹ comõs of ỹ sayd cytye harde of suche a mã there beyng prysoner, that wolde haue betrayed theyz cytie/they assembled thẽ in great multitude, & wold haue brokẽ the prysõ to ỹ ende to haue slayn hym. But they were so pacyently answered by the bysshoppes offycers, ỹ they retourned vnto theyz houses. Upon the mozow folowyng, to cease ỹ rumour of ỹ peple/he was brought vnto his iugement, & there condempned foz his dymcryte vnto perpetual prison. And moze therunto was added, ỹ foz his moze diffamy & shame, he shulde be sette in a tumbzel vpon hygh bareheded, that of all people he myght be seen/& so with moste shame full instrumentes lad throughe the hygh stretes of ỹ cytye, and brought agayn vnto ỹ bisshopes prison, and there to remayne foz terme of lyfe. But he was nat ker in such maner cõueyed by ỹ offycers frõ ỹ Gaole, but the cõmons fyl vpon hym with crye, & castyng of myze & stones/that oz he were halfe way lad of hys circuyte oz progresse, he was stoned to deth/and after his body buryed within a maroys nere vnto the sayd cytye.

And shozte ly after at Parys was done to cruell deth a cytezyn of ỹ sayd citie, which entẽded to haue betrayed the sayd cytye of Parys. Foz ỹ which treason he was fyzst dismẽbzed of legges & armes, and after hãged by the nek vpon the gybet of Parys.

In the same yere aboute ỹ feest of saynt Johñ Baptyst/ỹ Englyshmen ỹ had holdẽ the towne & castell called the roch of Aryan in Bzytayn, by the terme of two yeres passed, at this season they were besieged & fiersly assauted by syz Charles de Bloys and his

rr. frendes

frendes / in so furyous maner ꝑ they rent wyth great ordenaunce dyuers places of the castell walles/ & in pro-cesse threwe downe the rofe of a chā-bre where the wyfe of the capytayne of the castell lay in her chyld bed, & so ferre put in fere, that the rulers of the towne and castell graūted to delyuer the towne & castell to ꝑ sayd syr Charles, wyth that they myghte departe with theyr lyues & goodes/ ꝑ whyche offer to hys payne & charge he refu-sed. For in shorte tyme after, syr Tho-mas of Agorñ an englysshe knyghte wyth a strōge company of archers & other sowdyours, rescowed the sayd towne & castell. And after lōge fyght and great daūger, as by lōge proces is declared in the frēche story/ ꝑ sayd syr Thomas ~~toke the~~ sayde Charles de Bloys prysoner, and slewe many of hys lordes, as before is shortely touched in the ende of the.xxii.yere of kyng Edwarde. After whych victory thus opteyned, & hys prysoners put in suer keppynge, he toke ꝑ ordenaūce of the duke left in ꝑ felde wyth other pyllage, & put it wythin the towne & castell afore sayd. And for ꝑ byllages and mē of the coūtre there about, had ayde the duke agayne the towne and castel/ therfore the sayd syr Thomas punysshed the sayd byllages and ru-ralles by greuous fynes, & helde thē in great seruytude and daunger/ and ouer ꝑ slewe many of theym, & many they helde as drudges & captyues. And thys done the Englysshmen re-payred agayne the walles and suche other plāces as were before tyme be-ten downe by force of the sayd syege & strengthed it in theyr best maner.

It was nat longe after ꝑ kyng Philippe at the requeste of the coūtre, sent thyder the lord of Caroñ wyth a stronge army/ to whome also great multytude of the people of that countre resorted. wyth whose aydes the sayd lorde assayled the sayd town & castell by.ii.dayes contynuell. But the Englysshmē deffended them selfe bygurously/ and threwe vpō theyr ene mys hote boylynge oyles and other gresys, with fyre coles & hote asshes, wherwith they greued theyr enemies paynfully.

Thus cōtynuyng the siege / meanes of treaty were offered and cōdyscended to yelde the towne, with condi cyō that they myght saufely depart with theyr lyues and goodes/ but the Frēchemen and Bryons wolde nat to it be agreable. Than the assaute began of new. And the lord of Caroñ to encourage hys sowdyours, henge a purse and therein.l.scutes of golde vpon a sperys ende / and cryed wyth lowde voyce, that who that fyrste en-tred the towne, shulde haue the sayde l.scutes of golde. whan the ianuays or sowdyours of the cytye of Jeane and of the cytye of Italye, harde the promyse of theyr cheuytayne / a cer-tayne of theym with longe pycarses and sharpe approched theym vnto ꝑ wallys/ and so demeaned them, that in lesse than.v.houres they mynded so the wall, that there fyll thereof as testyfyeth the sayde Frenche crony-cle the lengthe of.l.fote. By reason wherof entred fyrste the Januays/ & after the hole hoste. The whych with out compassyon or pyte slewe man, woman, & chylde that came in theyr waye, nat sparynge the chylder that souked vpon the mothers brestes / & spoyled and robbed the towne, euery man gettynge what he myght to his owne aduauntage. And whanne the Frēchmē and Bryons had thus mi-serably slayne many Englysshmē, & also Bryōs & other inhabytaūtes of the towne/ they than assayled the ca-stel to ꝑ which was fled vpō.ii.C.& xl

Englysshmē

Englyshmē. After dyuers assautes it was offered by the sowdyours of the castell, ꝑ they wolde yelde the castell theyr lyues and goodes saued. And finally it was agreed, theyr bodies onely to departe, & to be cōueyed .x. miles vpon theyr waye towarde such place as they wolde appoynt. vpō ꝑ which appoyntement .ii. knyghtes Bretons ꝑ is to saye syr Sylluester de la Fulle and syr wyllm̄ de Stratton receyued them in theyr cotes, and cōueyed thē with great payne & nat without losse of some. For theyr enemies of ꝑ hoste caste stones at theym, and bete them so with theyr staues, that dyuers of theym dyed / & the remenaunt were brought nere vnto a castell than in the power of Englyshemen, named Quyntyne.

But whan the commōs of ꝑ town there nere, harde of the cōmynge of suche Englyshmen vnder sauf conduyt, the whiche before in the batayl of the roche of Arian where syr Charles de Bloys was taken, had slayne theyr lord, that is to meane the lorde of Quyntyne / anone they issued oute of the towne / and for they fonde lytel resystence in theyr guydes, they slew theym there except one, whych was capytayne of the Englyshmē / whych one of ꝑ sayd knyghtes caused to be set vpon hys horse, & so fledde frō the peryll. And whā the cruell Bretons had thus shamefully slayne the Englyshmen / they gadered ꝑ cariens vpon an heep, & suffered theym there so to lye, to ꝑ ende that beastes & foules myght deuoure them. And in shorte tyme after, ꝑ erle of Flaūdres by meanes of the Frēch kyng left the doughter of kynge Edwarde, and was maryed vnto the doughter of ꝑ duke of Brabant.

In the .xx. yere of Phylyp / ꝑ town of Calays was goten, lyke as the circumstaūce thereof is declared in the xrii. yere of kyng Edward the thyrd. And in the same yere the mortalite or sykenes, whych after reygned in Englande reygned nowe feruentely in Fraunce, and moste specially in the cytye of Aupnyon / by force wherof ꝑ thyrde parte of the people of ꝑ cytye dyed. And frome thens it came vnto saint Denys, and so vnto Parys. In which coost it was so feruent, ꝑ there dyed in those .ii. townes ouer the nōbre of .lvi. M. within ꝑ space of .xviii monethes.

And in thys yere the dolphyne of Vyen named syr ymberte, solde hys dolphynage vnto the Frēch kyng / & became a freer at Lyon vpō the rosne of the ordre of the freer prechours or blacke freers.

In the .xxi. yere of thys Phylyp / Charles the fyrste begotten sonne of Johñ duke of Normādy eldest sonne of thys Phylip, toke possession of the sayd dolphynage of Vyen. And in the moneth of August folowyng, dyed ꝑ ducheſſe of Normādy and mother of the sayd Charles. And in the moneth of Decembre folowynge, dyed dame Jane quene of Fraūce & doughter of Robert duke of Burgoyn. And in thys yere was the treason wrought by syr Godfrey de Charny, to haue agayne wonne the towne of Calays / lyke as I to you before haue shewed in the .xxiii. yere of kyng Edward ꝑ iii. And in ꝑ moneth of January next ensuynge & .ix. day of the same / kyng Phylyp spoused hys .ii. wyfe Blaūche, somtyme ꝑ doughter of ꝑ quene of Nauerne lately dysceased, whyche was syster vnto the erle of Foyse. whyche espousayles were secretely done in the manour of Robert erle of Bray. And so the sayde kyng Philip was wydowe frome the .xii. daye of Decembre to the vnthe daye of January, whyche was by the space of xxviii. dayes. And vpon the .ix. day of

the moneth of Febꝛuary / Johñ duke of Noꝛmandy eldeſte ſonne of thys Philippe, ſpouſed hys ſeconde wyfe Johanne Counteſſe of Bolopgne, at a towne called Myriaux nere vnto Meulene. And ſo he moꝛned foꝛ hys wyfe whych was named ꝑ good Ducheſſe of Noꝛmandy, by the terme of vi. moneths & .ii. dayes lackynge.

In the .xxii. yere of kyng Philip & moneth of July / ſyꝛ Thomas de Agoꝛne befoꝛnamed, was by chaũce medly ſlayne of a Bꝛytõ knyght called ſyꝛ Rauke de Cuours. And vpon the .xxiii. daye of Auguſt folowynge, dyed ſyꝛ Phylyp de Ualoys kyng of Fraũce / whã he had reygned ouer ꝑ Frẽchmen in great veracio & trouble by the ſpace of .xxii. yeres lackynge v. monethes & odde dayes / and was after enterred at ſaynt Denis by his fyꝛſte wyfe / & left after hi Johñ duke of Noꝛmandy foꝛ hys heyꝛe.

Of kynge Johñ.

Johñ the fyꝛſte of that name, & ſonne of Phylippe de Ualoys / began to raygne ouer the Frenchmẽ, in the moneth of Auguſt & yere of our loꝛd .M. CCC. and .l. & .xxiiii. yere of Edwarde the .iii. than kyng of Englande / & was crowned at Raynes the xxvi. day of Septembꝛe folowynge wyth dame Johanne hys wyfe. In tyme of the whych ſolempnite, kyng Johñ dubbed hys eldeſte ſonne dolphyne of Uyen, and Lowys hys .ii. ſonne erle of Alẽſon, knyghtes, with other noble men.

And vpon the .xvi. daye of Nouẽbꝛe folowynge / ſyꝛ Rauffe erle of Ew, and cõſtable of Gupnes whã it was Frenche, the whych was newly commen out of Englande where he had ben longe pꝛyſoner / was accuſed of treaſon, and ſo commaũded vnto pꝛyſon at Parys. within whyche pꝛyſon he was ſhoꝛtly after byheded in ꝑ pꝛeſence of the duke of Burgoyne and other nobles.

In the thyꝛde yere of kyng Johñ & viii. day of January / Charles kyng of Nauerne cauſed to be ſlayne with in the towne of Aygle in Noꝛmandy ſyꝛ Charles de Spayne cõſtable of Fraũce. Foꝛ the whych murdꝛe ſourdyd great warre betwene kynge Johan & the ſayde kynge of Nauerne / whych contynued many yeres after, natwithſtãdyng that the ſayd kynge of Nauerne had maryed the doughter of ꝑ ſayd kyng Johñ. Thã by mediacio of frendes, a peas was dꝛyuẽ betwene theym / ſo that kyng Johan ſhuld gyue vnto ꝑ kyng of Nauerne, foꝛ contẽtacyon of certayne ſummes of money yet owynge vnto hym foꝛ the dower of hys wyfe, certayne landes within the duchy of Noꝛmandy / and ouer that the Frẽche kyng ſhuld pardone all ſuche perſones as were conſentynge to the deth of the conſtable beforꝛe murdꝛed. After whych treaty thus concluded / the kynge of Nauerne vnder aſſuraunce of hoſtage came vnto kyng Johñs pꝛeſence at Parys. And after he had taried there a ſeaſon / he departed with dyſſymulacion on eyther partye vſed, as after ſhall appere.

In the .iiii. yere of kyng Johñ / ſyꝛ Godfrey de Harecourt, whych wyth hys ſonne & other hadde ben conſentynge vnto the deth of the conſtable of Fraunce, were reconſyled agayne to the kynge. The whyche enſenſed hym agayne the kynge of Nauerne by meanes of theyꝛ ſiniſter repoꝛt / ſo that the peace betwene theym beforꝛe cõcluded, was dyſapoynted & bꝛokẽ. And ſoone vpon thys, ſyꝛ Robert de Loꝛyꝛe that was chamberlayn vnto kynge Johñ, auoyded the courte foꝛ fere, leſte the ſayde ſyꝛ Godfrey hadde ſhewed of hym any thynge to the kynge / and ſo yode vnto the

kynge

kynge of Nauerne in Normandy. After whose commyng, the kynge of Nauerne departed shortly thens and sped hym towarde Aupnyon. It was nat longe after that the kyng of Nauerne was departed out of Normãdy but that kyng Johñ sped hym thider, & sealed all the landes that the kyng of Nauerne had wythin that duchy/ and putte officers and rulers in hys castelles & townes suche as hym lyked, and discharged the other / excepte. vi. castelles, that is to saye Eurour, le Pont Audemer, Chirebourt, Ganeray, Auranches, & Martaygn/ the whych were holden by the seruaũtes of the kynge of Nauerne, & men of Nauerne borne.

In the moneth of January folowynge/ syr Robert de Lorrys abouenamed, vnder safe conduyte came vnto kyng Johñ to Parys, and there was to hym in proces reconsyled. And in thys yere were the artycles of peace betwene the kynges of Englãde & of Fraũce prolonged, tyll the feaste of saynt Johñ Baptyst next ensuynge/ as before in ỹ ende of the .xxviii. yere of kyng Edwarde is more at lengthy declared.

In thys .v. yere of kyng Johan & moneth of Aprpl/ he sent syr Charles hys sonne dolphyne of Vyenne into Normandy, to aske ayde of the Normannes agayne the kynge of Nauerne. The whyche graunted vnto hym iii. M. men at theyr charge for .iii. monethes. And in the moneth of August folowynge, the kynge of Nauerne accompanyed with .ii. M. sowdiours, came vnto the castell of Constãtyne, & there taryed with the sayd people. wyth whose cõmynge the sowdiours of the forenamed. vi. castelles were so well comforted, that they robbed and pylled al ỹ coũtre about thẽ. And som of the sayde sowdiours came vnto a castell of ỹ Frẽch kynges named Cõket, & wãn it by strẽgth, & after vytayled & mãned it in moste warly wyse/ & dyd many other thynges to ỹ Frẽche kyngs great displeasure. The which warre thus cõtynuyng, by medyaciõ of frẽdes the kynge of Nauarñ rode vnto ỹ dolphyn to a towne called the Vale de Rueyll/ where they metyng, and eyther to other shewyng louyng coũtenaunce, vpõ ỹ. xviii. day of Septẽbre they togyder toke theyr way towarde Parys. where the kyng of Nauarne was brought vnto the French kynges presence.. where he excused hym of all trespasses done agayn the kyng syne ỹ tyme of ỹ last accord/ besechyng ỹ kyng to be good and gracious lorde vnto hym, and he shulde be to hym as a sonne oughte to be vnto the fader, & as a trew man vnto hys soueraygne lorde. And after the kyng by ỹ meanes of ỹ duke of Athenesse, forgaue vnto hym hys offẽces, and promysed to stãde hys good and gracyous lord / and so eyther accepted from other in louyng maner.

And soone after kyng Johñ gaue vnto ỹ dolphyn of Vyen syr Charles hys eldest sonñ ỹ duchy of Normãdy for ỹ whyche he dyd vnto hys father homage, in ỹ house of mayster Martyn Chanõ of Parys, in ỹ cloyster of the mynster called Noterdame. And by auctorite of a parlyamẽt holdẽ in the citie of Parys, was graũted vnto kyng Johñ of the thre astates of hys realme/ ỹ is to meane the spiritualte, the lordz and nobles, and ỹ hedes or rulers of cytyes and good townes of hys realme, that he shulde haue. xxx. M. mẽ waged for a yere, for to defẽde hys auncyent enemye the kynge of England. For purpayũce wherof certayne persones of the sayd. iii. astates assẽbled shortly after, to prouide for ỹ leuieng of that great sũme of money

After whyche prouysion or selling agreed or concluded by the sayde

xx. iii. persones

perſones, and commyſſyoners ſente out to dyuers cooſtes and good townes for the leuyeng of the ſayde money/in the towne of Arras fyll a diſſencyō betwene the ryche & the poore of that towne/ the poore ſayeng that the ryche men had layde all the burthen vpon the poore men, & them ſelf bare lytell charge or none. For thys fyrſt began great altercacion of wordes, & after enſuyed ſtrokes & ſtripes, ſo that of the hedes and chyef burgeſes of the towne were .xvii. men ſlayne. And the day folowynge they ſlewe.iiii.mo / & banyſſhed dyuers ȳ at that tyme were abſent & out of the towne. And ſo the towne of Arras reſted as than in the gydynge of the poore artyfycers of that towne.

In the.vi. yere of the reygne of kynge Johan and moneth of Marche, he beynge accōpanyed with a ſecret meny, before ȳ daye departed from the towne of Manuple / & rode ſtreyghte, he & hys lordes beyng armed, vnto the caſtell of Rouan/ & entred ſodaynly into the ſame. where he fande in the chyefe hall of the caſtell, ſyr Charles hys eldeſt ſonne duke of Normandy, Charles kynge of Nauerne, ſyr Johñ erle of Harecourt, ȳ lordes of Preaux and of Grauple, & the lorde of Clercmoūt, ſyr Lowys & ſyr Gupliam de Harecourt brethern of the foreſayd erle, ſyr Fryquet de Fryquante, the lorde of Tournebu, ſyr Manbuc de Mameſmares, with Colmet Doubliec and Johñ de Poūtalu eſquyres.

The whych lordes and knyghtes the kyng toke at dyner within ȳ ſayd halle/ & them toke ſodaynly, & diuers of them put vnder ſure keppyng. And as ſoone as the kyng had there takē a ſmall and ſhort repaſte/ he with his ſonnes & other nobles in hys cōpany toke theyr horſe & rode into a felde vpon a bakſyde of the caſtell/ whether ſhortly after were brought in bandes the foreſayde erle of Harecourt, the lorde of Grauple, ȳ foreſayd ſyr Mābue, and Colmet Doubliet. whyche iiii. were there beheded/ and after the bodyes of them drawen to the gybet of Roan, & there hanged / and theyr heddes ſet ouer them vpon the ſame gybet. At the whyche tyme of the execucion of hedyng of the ſayd. iiii. perſones, the Frenche kyng as before is ſayde was preſent in proper perſon. After the whyche execucion, ȳ kynge vpon the morowe folowynge delyuered many of the other pryſoners/ ſo ȳ there remayned no mo as pryſoners but. iii, that is the kyng of Nauerne, ſyr Fryquet de Fryquant, & Johñ de Pountalu/ the whych were ſent vnto Parys. where the kynge was kepte in the caſtel of Louure, and the other ii. in the chaſtelet. In whiche tyme of hys inpryſonemēt/ ſyr Phylype brother to the kynge, wyth ſyr Godfrey de Harecourt vncle to the erle lately heded, helde certayn caſtelles in Normandy/ and came with theyr powers into the countre of Conſtantyne, and helde it maugre the Frenche kynges wyll and pleaſure.

In the moneth of Apryll, ſyr Arnolde de Denham than Marſhall of Fraūce, rode by ȳ kynges ſonde vnto Arras/ & there without great diſtourbaunce of the towne, toke vpō an hūdreth of ſuche as before had made ȳ former rebellion within the ſame. And vpon the day folowyng/ he cauſed to be heded in the market place vpon. ix. of the ſame / & the remenaūt he ſent vnto pryſon there to abyde ȳ kynges pleaſure.

In thys tyme and ſeaſon was the noble prynce Edwarde at Burdeaux & warred vpon the Frenche kynges landes, lyke as it is before to you ſhewed in the. xxx. yere of kyng Edward

the

the thyrde.

And in the.vii.yere of kyng Johñ, & begynnyng of the same, was the battayll of Poytyers. In ỹ whych kyng Johñ was taken prysoner of prynce Edwarde, & many of hys lordes take and slayne, as before in the.xxx. yere of the forsayd Edwarde is declared at lẽght. After the which scomfyture/ the duke of Normandy whyche hardly escaped from the sayde batayl, entred the cytye of Parys the.xxix. daye of Septembre/ & called there a great coũsayll of ỹ thre astates of ỹ realme, and the.xv. daye of Octobre next ensuynge there to be assẽbled. At which daye the sayde duke wyth the sayd.iii. astates of the realme beyng in ỹ parlyament chambre/ Peter de la Forest archebysshop of Roan and chaũceler of Fraũce, declared there the greate myshortune that to the lande was lately fallẽ, by the takyng of theyr hed and prynce / and exorted theym by a lõge oraciõ to ayde & assiste euery mã after hys power, for the redeliuery of theyr prynce agayne.

Whereunto it was answered for theyr clergy or spyrytual / by the mouth of mayster Johñ de Carone thã archebysshop of Raynes/ and for the nobles or ỹ Cheualry of Fraũce, by the mouth of syr Phylype duke of Orleaunce and brother vnto kynge Johñ/ & for the commõs of the good townes of Fraũce, by the mouthe of Steppn Martell burgeys of Parys and prouost of the same, that eyther of them shulde helpe to the vttermost of theyr powers / & prayed that they myght haue conuement leyser to coũsayll and commõ for prouiciõ of the the same / the whyche to theym was graunted.

Than the sayde thre astates helde theyr coũsayll at the fryer mynours or gray fryers in Parys, by the space of.xv. dayes. In whyche season they appoynted amonge theym to the nõbre of .l. persones, to take a vyew and make serche of certayne thynges thã myslad and euyll gyded within the realme. The whyche.l. persones whã they had appoynted.vi. of them selfe to go vnto the duke/ they in ỹ names of ỹ other made request vnto ỹ duke, that he wolde kepe secrete such thynges as they entended to shewe vnto hym. which request he graũted. Thã they shewed vnto the duke that the realme before tyme hadde ben myssegupded by offycers/ and excepte that remedye for it were shortlye foũden, it shulde stãde in greate parell to be loste. wherfore they besought hym to dyscharge all suche as they wolde name vnto hym, & ouer ỹ to forsayte theyr goodes vnto the kynges vse. And fyrst they named mayster Peter de la Forest archebisshop of Roan & chaũceler of Fraũce, syr Symõde de Bucy chyefe counceloure of the kyng and chyefe presydente of the parlyament, syr Roberte de Lorpze that before tyme was chaumberlayne vnto the kynge, syr Nycholas Braake knyghte and mayster of the kynges paleys, Engueram of the Celer Burieys of Parys and vndre tresourer of Fraũce, Johñ Pyrll burioys, also soueraygn mayster of the money and mayster of thaccomptys of the kyng, and Johñ Chãnean de Charters treasourer of the kynges warres. All whyche offycers the sayde persones wolde that they shuld be dyscharged of all royall oũyces for euer. Also the sayd constytuted persones, wolde ỹ the kynge of Nauerne were delyuered free frõ pryson / also that he hym selfe wolde be cõtented to be aduertysed and coũceyled by suche as they wolde appoynte vnto hym, that is to saye.iiii. prelates, xii. knyghtes, and xii. burioys.

The whych .xxviii. persons shuld

xx. iiii. haue

ſhulde haue auctoꝛyte to rule and oꝛ-deyne all thynges neceſſarye foꝛ the realme, and to ſet in and put oute all offyceꝛs appertaynyng to the realm / wyth dyuerſe other requeſtes whych vnto the duke were nothyng agreable. Upon the whyche requeſtes, the duke gaue anſwere ꝑ he wolde gladly fele the oppynyon of hys coũceyll, & vpon that ſhape vnto them ſome reaſonable anſwere. But fyꝛſte he deſyred of them to knowe what ayde the iii. eſtates wolde gyue vnto hym, foꝛ the delyuery of hys father. wherunto it was anſwered, that the clergy had graũted a dyme & a halfe to be payed in a yere, wyth that that they maye haue licence of the pope/and ꝑ loꝛdes aſmoche to be leuyed of theyꝛ lãdes / and ꝑ comõs the .x. peny of theyꝛ moũable gooddes. Thã vpõ the moꝛne folowynge within ꝑ palays of Louure, ꝑ duke aſſembled hys coũſayl/ & there ſhewed vnto them the deſyre & requeſte of the .iii. eſtates. wherupon were made many reaſons/and many meſſages ſent betwene the duke and them, to refourme ſome parte of the ſayde artycles. But it was fermely anſwered by theym, that excepte he wolde refoꝛme the ſayde defautes, & cõferme hym vnto theyꝛ myndes foꝛ the comõ welth of all the lande / they wolde nat ayde hym with theyꝛ goodes, lyke as they had to hym ſhewed. wherfoꝛe the duke by ſecrete meanes ſent letters vnto his father, ſhewyng vnto hym the circumſtaũce of all hys matter / the whyche wꝛote vnto hym agayne, that in no wyſe he ſhulde be agreable vnto the ſayde requeſtes.

Thã the duke to ꝑpende that he wolde nat ꝑ theſe maters ſhuld be towched in the open parlyamẽt, ſent foꝛ ſuche perſones as were the chyefe rulers of the ſayde .iii. eſtates / ſo that to hym came foꝛ the clergy the archebyſſhoppes of Raynes and of Lyõs, and the biſſhop of Laõ/ & foꝛ the loꝛdes came ſyꝛ warayne de Lucẽbourgh, ſyꝛ Johan de Comlãs Marſhall of Champeyne, and ſyꝛ Johñ de Pyguẽy thã ruler oꝛ gouernoure of Artoys/ & foꝛ the comõs Stephan Martell than pꝛouoſt of the marchaũtes of Parys, Charles Culſake, with other of other good townes.

Than the duke ſhewed vnto them of certayne newes that he had lately receyued from the kynge hys father/ and that done he aſked theyꝛ aduices whether it were beſte ꝑ daye to ſhewe theyꝛ requeſtes openly in the parliament chaumber, oꝛ elles to deferre it foꝛ that daye. And laſtlye after many reaſons made, it was agreed, that it ſhulde be deferred tyll the .iiii. daye after/at the whyche .iiii. daye ꝑ duke wyth the other aſſembled in the parlyament chambꝛe. At whyche ſeaſon the duke ſayd that he myght nat entende that day to here and argue the ſayd requeſtes, foꝛ certayn tydynges that he had lately receyued from his father, and from his vncle the Emperour of Almayne/of the which he thã ſhewed ſome opẽly, and after dyſſolued foꝛ that daye the counſayll.

In the moneth of Octobꝛe, ꝑ. iii. eſtates of the pꝛouynce of Languedocke, by the auctoꝛyte of the erle of Armenake thã lieutenaũt foꝛ ꝑ kyng aſſembled foꝛ to make an ayde foꝛ ꝑ kynges delyueraũce. And fyꝛſte they agreed to puruey at theyꝛ pꝛopꝛe coſtes .v. C. mẽ of armys, wyth a ſeruyture to euerych ſpere/ and ouer that a. M. ſowdyours on hoꝛſebacke, and a. M. of arblaſters, wyth .ii. M. of other called paũſyers in Frenche / all whiche to be waged foꝛ an hole yere. The ſperes to haue foꝛ them & theyꝛ cuſtrun euery daye halfe a floꝛeyn, & euery ſowdyour and arblaſter. viii. floꝛyns foꝛ a moneth, and ꝑ paũſiers after the ſame rate.

Alſo

Also it was forther ordeyned by the sayd thre estates of Laguedocke, that no man shulde were any furrys of any greate pryce/and that women shulde leue the ryche atyre of theyr heddys, and were neyther perle nor golde vppon them, nor sylver vppon ther gyrdels, so longe as the kynge remayned prysoner. Also that all maner of mynstrellys for ỹ seson shuld be put to sylence/ wyth dyuers other thynges for ỹ weale of that prouince whyche wolde aske a longe leysoure to wryte.

Upon all sowlyn daye or the seconde daye of Nouember, the duke of Normandye by the aduyce of hys counceyll, dyssolupd the cõceyll of the thre estates assembled at Parys / and commaunded euery man to retourne vnto his own, without effecte growynge of theyr longe counceyll or assemble. wherwith many of the sayd persons were greuously myscontent/sayeng amonge them selfe that they apercepued well, that thys was done by the duke, to the entent that the requestes by them deupsed shuld not take place/but that the olde mysgouernaunce shulde contynue, lyke as it beforetymes had done. wherfore dyuers of them assembled after agayne at the graye freres, and there made out dyuers coppes of the sayde requestes / to the ende that eyther of them myghte bere them into theyr countreys, and there to shewe them vnto the good townes. And all be it that the duke after this cõceyll thus dyssolupd, asked ayde of ỹ cyty of Parys and other good townes to mayntayne his warrys/he was playnely answered that they myghte not ayde hym without the sayd thre estates were agayne reassembled, & that the graunte of the ayde myght passe by theyr authoryte/wherunto ỹ duke in no wyse wolde be agreable.

In the moneth of Nouẽber afore sayde/syr Robert de Clermoũt than lyeutenaunt for the duke in Normãdy, fought wyth syr Phylyp brother vnto the kynge of Nauerne, and syr Godfrey de Harcourt, the which then toke party agayne the Frenche kyng for the deth of his neuewe before put to deth by kynge Johñ. The whych knyghtes wyth other held the more parte of the countre of Constantyne within Normandye, maugre the dukes power. In this sayde fyghte the victory tourned vnto the Frenche partye/so that the sayde syr Phylyp was chasyd, and syr Godfrey de Harcourt slayne, with .viii. hũdreth men of that party. And the fourth daye of December folowyng, was the castell de la Pount nere vnto Roan, which by a longe season had ben in the rule of the forenamed syr Phylyp, gyuen vp by appoyntement/the whyche by the dukes sowdyours had ben belyeged from the moneth of July to that daye/so that than the holders of the sayd Castell departed wyth all theyr goodes, and .vi. thousande frankes for a reward for the yeldyng vp of ỹ sayd castell. A franke is in value after sterlyng money .ii.s. or therupon.

Upon ỹ .x. day of December were proclaymed at Parys certayne coynes and values of money newly ordeyned by the duke, and his cõceyl. wyth the whyche proclamacyon the comons of the cytye were greuously amouyd. And for reformacyon the prouoste of the marchauntes wyth other, yode vpon the seconde day folowynge vnto the castell or palays of Louure, there to treat with syr Lewys erle of Angeou brother vnto the duke and his lyeutenaunt whyle the sayde duke was gone vnto the cytye of Meaus, there to speke wyth Charlys of Bohemye or of Beaume then

emperour

emperour of Almayne & vncle vnto the sayde duke. where the sayde prouoste wyth the other made requeste vnto the erle, that he wolde cease the vse of that money. And yf not / they wolde so demeane them that it shuld not be suffered to be put forth nor taken within ꝑ cytye. wherupon it was answered by the erle, that he wolde take aduyce of hys counceyll, & vpon the morowe gyue to thē an answere. Upon the daye folowynge / the sayde prouost wyth a greate company of ꝑ cytye retourned. At whyche season the erle in curteyse maner, desyred them to retourne that other daye, for as moche as yet he had not sufficyentely commonyd with his cōceyll. Upon the morne the sayd prouost retourned wyth a moche greater company. where after longe debatynge of the mater, it was agreed by ꝑ sayd erle and prouost and hys company, that the money shuld be stopped and not to be put fourth, tyll they hadde further knowlege of the dukes pleasure / for knowlege wherof the erle sent forth messēgers i all spedy wyse.

And in thys passetyme, Peter de la Forest archebysshop of Roan and chaunceller of Fraunce was made & publyshed a cardynal. And the. xviii. daye of the moneth of January, the duke retourned vnto Parys wyth ꝑ sayd cardynall in hys company / the whych for reuerēce of the cardynall, was fette into the cytye wyth processyon and other ceremonyes, as well of the clergy as of the cytesyns. The xxvi. daye of the moneth of January the prouoste of the marchauntes of Parys with other of the cyty, apered before the dukes counceyll at sayncte Germayns. where it was desyred of the sayd prouoste, that he shulde sufferthe forsayde money to ronne and be curraunt thorough the cytye. The whyche the sayde prouoste wyth hys company vtterly denyed / and after many greate and bolde wordes, departed from the sayde counceyll in greate ire / and after theyr retourne vnto the cytye, encensyd so the compnalty, that they set a parte all werkmanshyp and occupacyō in shyttyng in theyr shoppes, and dyewe vnto theym theyr armour and harnesse. whan the duke was enfourmed of thys murmour of the compnaltye of the cytye, he sent vnto the prouoste / commaundyng hym strayghtly that the kynges peace were kepte wythin the cytye / and ouer that, that he with a certeyne of the cytesyns shulde apere before hym in the palayes of Louure vppon the morowe folowynge at an houre assygned. At which houre the sayde prouoste wyth hys company came vnto Louure, and so were conueyed into the parlyament chaumber, where the duke wyth hys counceyll was than present. Than ꝑ duke after certayne chalengys made vnto the prouoste for hys obstynacy in thys mater, and myssledyng of the compnaltye of the cytye / sayde vnto hym, that all be it that the kynge by hys prerogatyue myght at hys pleasure and for his auauntage, make his moneys whan he wolde, & so to suffer them to be curraūt thorough his realme: yet for the weale and ease of hys subiectes, consyderynge theyr manyfolde and late charges / he was cōtent that at thys season thys newe money shulde be spared / and that the iii. estates shuld be agayn assembled / & that they shulde deprue all suche persons than beryng offices, as they shulde thynke preiudycyall to the realme / & ouer that to ordeyne suche money as myghte be benefycyall for ꝑ land. Of all whiche graūtes, ꝑ prouost, to ꝑ entent that he myght of authorite shewe them vnto the compnaltye of the cytye desyred wrytyng.

The

The whyche the duke to appeale the people, though it were some deale cõ trary hys mynde and pleasure, graũted vnto hys request. For the whych graunt, dyuers of the sayd offycers, as the chaunceller or cardynall and other absentyd them selfe, and came not in Parys by a tracte of tyme after. The.xxx. daye of January ensuynge/the duke at the requeste of the sayde prouost, sent certeyne offycers vnto the house of syr Symonde de Bucy, and of syr Nycholas Braake, and of Enguerran of the Celer, and of Johñ Pyllẽ, whyche before wyth other were accusyd of mysgouernaunce of the realme / whose houses were by the sayd offycers kepte, and inuentaryes made of suche goodes as than remayned wythin the sayde houses. And that done, the duke sent out commyssyons, that the thre estates shulde reassemble at Parys the xv. daye of Febrzuary next folowyng/ whyche was obserued and kepte.

whan ỹ sayd. iii. estates were agayne assembled in the parliament chaumber at Parys, in the presence of the duke and hys brethern wyth dyuers other nobles of Fraũce/mayster Robert Coke bysshop of Laon, by the cõ maundement of the sayd duke, made a longe prepolycyon of the mysgupdynge of the kynge and the lande by the meane of yll offycers/ as well by chaungynge of the moneys as other many vnlefull excysys and taskys, to the greate inpouerysshynge of the comynaltye of the reame, greate dyscIaunder to the kynge, and to the syn guler enrychynge and auauncement of the sayd offycers. wherfore the. iii. estates prayen, and specyally the poore comons, that all such offycers may be remoued from theyr offyces/ and other that shall be thought more benefycyall for the kynge and hys realme, to be admitted. Of the which the cardynall was noted for prynce pall/and other to ỹ noumbre of .xxi. wherof some were ryghte nere vnto the duke.

After whyche prepolycyon or oracyõ thus by the sayd byssshop ended / syr Johñ de Pygqueny in the name of the. iii. astates, offered that the sayde. iii. astates shuld gyue vnto the kyng. xxx. M. mẽ for an hole yere/ wyth ỹ that all thynges myght after that daye be ordered as the byssshop had before deuysed. All whyche artycles were vnto them by the duke graũted. And inconueniẽtly all such offycers as they before had named, were clerely auoyded/and other such as by ỹ sayd. iii. astates were though moste necessary, were put and chosen to theyr roumes/excepte that some of the olde, as maisters of thaccomptes and some of the presydentes & maysters of the requestes, were holden in for a tyme, to practes & shewe vnto ỹ new how they shuld order and gyde the sayd offyces.

And the. xxvi. daye of the moneth of Marche was a newe money proclaymed thorough Parys, suche as the sayde. iii. astates had newly deuysed. Upon the. vi. day of Apryll was proclaymed in Parys, that ỹ people shulde nat paye suche subsydes as ỹ iii. astates had ordeyned for the wagynge of. xxx. M. men afore sayde or for the kynges kynaũce/and also that the sayde. iii. astates after that daye shulde no more assemble for any cau ses or maters before touched, tyll they had farther knowlege of ỹ kynges pleasure. For the whych proclamacion the cytezyns of Parys were greuously amoued agayne the byssshop of Sẽs, the erle of Ewe cousyn Germayne to the kynge, and agayn the erle Cãcaruyle. By whose meanes they sayde thys proclamacyon

was

was purchasyd. And treuth it is that the sayd archbysshop of Sens wyth the sayd.ii. erlys, were sent from the kynge from Burdeaux yet there beynge, to the entent that they shuld se the sayde proclamacyon put in vre. But so soone as the sayd proclamacyon was made /they herynge of the murmour of the people of the cytye, sped them thens shortely after. Then vpon this ꝑ comons waxed so wyld, that they lefte theyr occupacyons & drewe them to cõuentyculys and cõpanyes, and hadde many vnsyttyng wordes by the kynge and hys counsayle. wherof in auoydynge of inconuenyency/the duke commaunded a watche to be kepte wythin the cytye bothe by daye and by nyght / and certayne gates of the cytye kept shytte, and the remenaunt watchyd wyth men of armes. Upon the eyght daye of Apryll then beynge Easter euyn, a nother proclamacyon was made all contrary to that other / by vertue wherof it was charged, that the forsayde subsydie shulde be leuyed, and that also the thre estates shulde reassemble at Parys the.xv. daye after Easter/and there to procede vpon all such maters as before were by them begonne. Upon the.vi. day of Apryll the Frenche kynge shypped at Burdeaux and so was conueyed into Englande, lyke as before is shewed in ꝑ xxi. yere of kynge Edwarde. And aboute mydsomer folowyng, ꝑ duke of Lancaster, whyche by a longe season had lyen before a towne in Brytayne named Rolne, brake vp hys syege/takyng of them of that towne for a fynaũce.lx.M. scutys of golde. A scute is worth.xl.d. sterling. About the feste of Mary Magdalene in the moneth of July, controuersy and varyaunce began to aryse amonge the parlõs assygned for the thre estates. wherof the cause was, for so mych as the sessyng which they had auewed & sessed for the.xxx.M. men, wolde nat extẽde vnto the sũme by large & great sũmes. So ꝑ the clergy answered ꝑ they wolde paye no more than they were fyrst sessed vnto. And in lyke maner answered such as were apoynted for the lordes & for the good townes. wherfore ꝑ archebysshop of Raynes, whych before was one of the chefe rulers of them, refused theyr partye and drewe hym all to the duke. By meanes of whyche controuersy many of theyr actes fayled/ & suche as before were put out of theyr offyces, were agayne restored. About the myddel of August, the duke sent for the prouost & Charles Culake, wyth Johñ de la Ile/ the which bare ꝑ principal rule within the cytye, and also were great sayers & doers in the assembles of the iii. astates, & had takẽ vpon thẽ moch rule in ꝑ busynes/ so that moche of ꝑ busynes was ruled by them & theyr meanes. To whome the duke gaue strayght commaũdemente, that they shuld cease of theyr auctorities, & nat to deale any more with the rule of the realme, but onely to the good rule & gouernaũce of the cytye of Parys. And that done the duke rode aboute vnto dyuers good townes, & made request vnto them for ayde/and also to haue the money to be currant amõg them, whych as before is shewed the x. daye of Decembre was at Parys proclaymed. But he sped lytle of hys purpose.

In thys meane whyle, the cytezyns of Parys of one wyll & mynde, offered before saynt Kempge a taper of ware of wonderfull lengthe and greatenesse / the whyche they ordeyned to brenne day and nyght whyle it wold laste. And shortely after they sent vnto the duke so plesaunt message, ꝑ he retourned agayne vnto the cytye / whome they receyued with all honor and

and reuerence. And vpon the morow after hys retourne/the prouoſt wyth certayne other of the cytye, ſhewed vnto the duke that they wolde make a greate ſhyfte for hym towarde the mayntenaunce of hys warres. And to bryngе that mater to good concluſyon/ they beſought hym ỹ he wolde aſſemble at Parys ſhortly, a certayn perſones of.xx. or.xxx. good townes there nexte adioynaunt. The whych was vnto thē graunted/ſo ỹ ſhortely after there aſſembled at Parys, vpō lxx. perſones / the whyche helde theyr counſayll to gyther by ſundry days. Howe be it in the ende they ſhewed vnto the duke, that nothynge they myght bryngе to effecte, without aſſemble of the.iii. eſtates/ & beſoughte hym that they myght be efte reaſſembled/truſtyng that by theyr preſence the dukes mynde ſhulde be contente and satyſfyed.

Upon whyche requeſte the duke ſent hys cōmyſſiōs, chargyng ỹ ſayd iii. eſtates to apere before hym at Parys, the wednyſday nexte folowynge ỹ day of al ſayntes. And full fayne he was to do all thyng that the citezyns of Parys hym requyred to do/for as teſtyfyeth the Frenche Cronycle, he was ſo bare of money that he hadde nat ſuffycyente to defende hys cotydyan charge.

In the.viii. yere of kynge Johñ and wednyſday after Alhalowen day / the.iii. eſtates reaſſembled at Parys, and helde theyr counſayll within the blacke freers. Durynge whych coūſayll the kyng of Nauerñ that longe had ben holden in pryſon wythin the caſtell of Alleux, was deliuered by the meanes of syr Johanne Pyquygny, than gouernoure of the countrey of Arthoys / and after conueyed by the ſayd Johñ vnto ỹ town of Ampas. whan ỹ kyng of Nauerne was thus ſet at large/anon his ſyſter and other of hys frendes made meanes vnto the duke of Normandy, for an vnyte & a peace to be had betwene them/and by them a meane was foūden, that the kyng with ſuch as were in hys company, ſhulde come vnder ſauke conduyt to Parys to common with the duke. whā dyuers of the.iii. eſtates, as ſuch as were of Chāpeyn and Burgoyn, knewe of the comyng of the kyng of Nauerne vnto Parys/ they without leue takyng departed. And vpon the euyn of ſaynt Andrew the ſayd kynge entred Parys wyth a greate companye of men of armes. Amonge the wyche was the byſſhop of Parys, with many other of ỹ ſayd cytye. Upon the morowe folowynge the daye of ſaynt Andrew/the kynge entēdynge to ſhewe hys mynde vnto the comynalte of the cytye, cauſed an hyghe ſcaffolde to be made by ỹ wall of ſaynt Germayn where he was lodged. where moche people beynge aſſembled, he ſhewed vnto them a lōge proceſſe of hys wrongefull enpryſonemente, and of the myſgydynge of the lande by meanes of ille offycers, wyth many couerte wordes to ỹ dyſhonoure of the Frenche kynge, and iuſtyfycacion of hym ſelfe and excuſynge of hys owne dedes, and ſo retourned into hys lodgyng.

Upon the thyrde daye of December / the prouoſte wyth other of the cytye yode vnto the duke / and in the names of the good townes or commynaltyes of the ſame, requyred of hym that he wolde do vnto the kynge of Nauerne reaſon and iuſtyce.

To whome it was anſwered by ỹ byſſhop of Laon, that the duke ſhuld nat allonly ſhewe vnto the kyng reaſon & iuſtyce/ but he ſhuld alſo ſhewe vnto hym frendely brotherhode,

with all grace & curtesy. And all be it that at that season, many of ỹ dukes coũsayll were present, to whome the gyuyng of that answere had more cõuenyently appertayned thã to ỹ sayde bysshop/yet they were at that tyme in suche fere, that they durste nat moue any thynge that shuld soũde cõtrary the displeasure of the kynge of Nauerne or of the prouoste & other. Thã it was agreed that vpon ỹ saterdaye folowynge, the kynge and the duke whyche as yet had nat spoken togyther, shuld mete at the place of the syster of the sayd kyng. where they met with vnfrendely coũtenaũce/ & after they had communed there a lõge season, departed with litle loue or charite. And vpon the mũday folowyng, were shewed vnto the duke & hys coũsayle, certayne requestes desyred by the kyng of Nauerne / the whych the duke was forsed to graunt. whereof the substaunce was, that the kynge shuld haue agayn and enioye al such lãdes, castelles, and townes, with all mouables to them belõgynge, as he was in possessyõ of ỹ daye that kyng Johñ was taken within the castel of Roan/and ouer that he shuld be pardoned of all offences by hym done agayne the crowne of Fraunce before that daye, and all other hys adherentes, or suche as had taken hys partie before ỹ tyme. And soone vpon thys, was ordeyned that the erle of Harcourt and other, whyche kyng Johñ had caused to be beheded and after to be hãged vppon the commõ gybet of Roan, shuld be delyuered vnto theyr frendes, to be buryed at theyr pleasures. After whych conclusions taken, and assuraunces made as farre as the dukes auctorite wolde extende vnto/syr Almary knyghte, Menlene knyghte, wyth thre or foure men of honoure mo, were sente into Normandye, to reposesse the kyng of Nauerne in all such lãdes, castelles, and townes, as he before tyme was in possessiõ of, wyth all mouables vnto the sayd landes appertaynynge. And than the sayde kynge and duke helde kamplyer company, and dyned and souped togyther often sythes, at the manoir or lodgyng of quene Johan syster vnto the sayd kynge, and other places.

Also the sayde kynge delyuered out of prysone, all prysoners as well spyrytuall as tẽporall, suche as were thought any thyng fauourable vnto hys cause. Amonge the whyche some there were, that for theyr demerites were adiuged to perpetuall prysone.

In thys tyme & season tydynges sprange within the cytye of Parys, that the kynges of Englande and of Fraunce were agreed, and that kyng Johan shulde shortely returne into Fraunce. By reason of whyche tydynges, the kyng of Nauerne made the more haste to dyspache hym oute of Parys/ so ỹ he with hys company departed from Parys the .xx. daye of Decẽber, & rode toward the cytye of Maunte in Normãdy. Soone after the kyng was thus departed/ dyuers enemyes to the noumbre of .x. or .xii. C. came within .iiii. or .v. myles of Parys/ whyche were demyd to be of the company of syr Phylip brother vnto the kyng of Nauerne. These robbed and pylled the countrey thereabout/ in so moch that the people of the coũtrey of Preaux and Trappes, and other there aboute, were constrayned with theyr mouables to flee vnto Parys. wherfore the duke sente out hys letters and cõmyssyons, for to assemble hys knyghtes to withstande the sayd enemyes.

But the sayde cytesyns of Parys caste an other way / and thought it to be done to the greuaunce or correccion

correccion of them. For dowte wherof/the prouoſt with other that had ỹ gouernaunce of the cytye, cauſed the gates to be kepte/and none ſhuld entre but ſuche as lyked them.

In thys paſſe tyme the kynge of Nauerne beyng in Normãdy, requyred delyuere of the caſtelles of Bretnell, of Eurour, and other/the which to hym by ỹ cappytaynes were denied. wherfore he thynkyng that the duke performed nat to hym hys promeſſe/ gathered vnto hym greate ſtrengthe to wynne by ſtrength that he myght nat haue hys former bãde & promes. Of thys was put in greate wyte the byſſhop of Laon, whych was ỹ cheſe counceloure of the duke, & eſpecyall frende vnto the kynge / ſo that what thyng was ſpoken in the dukes coũſayll, was ſhortly after manifeſted by hym and hys meanes vnto the kyng of Nauerne. Thys alſo was one of ỹ cheſe rulers of the aſſemble of the.iii. aſtates / and after lefte them and fell by hys greate doubleneſſe and dyſſymylacyon in the dukes fauoure, and ſo became cheſe of hys counſayll, for the whyche of the comon people he was named ỹ beſte with.ii.mouthes. Than the cytezyns of Paris herynge of the denayeng of the ſayd caſtelles vnto the kynge/knewe wel that mortall warre ſhuld growe betwene hym and ỹ duke. And for they wolde haue the cytezyns knowẽ from other ſtraũgers/ therefore they ordeyned theym hodys parted of rede and blewe/charge euery man that he ſhulde nat paſſe hys lodgynge wythout ỹ hood and conyſaunce.

Upon the .viii. daye of January the kyng of Nauerne entred the cytie of Roan with a great company of mẽ of armes/ and drew vnto hym many englyſſhe men, and ſuche as were enemyes vnto the frenche kynge. And vppon the.xii.daye of January the ſayde kyng aſſembled the people of that cytye, and made a lyke ſermõ vnto thẽ as before he had done vnto the comynaltye of Paris/ and dyd a ſolempne obſequy to be done for the erle of Harcourt and the other wyth hym put to deth, as aboue is ſayd by kynge Johñ. in thys whyle the duke of Normandy that longe whyle had taryed in Paris, in hope and ayde of the cytezyns / & was euer by the prouoſte and other dyuers of from daye to daye: It was aduyſed hym by his counſayll, that he ſhulde ſhewe hys mynde vnto the comynaltye of the cytye.

wherof whan the byſſhop of Laon and ỹ prouoſt were ware/anone they ſhewed vnto hym many doutes and impedymentes and alſo parelles, for to treate with a comynaltye. Nat withſtandynge he refuſed theyr counſayll, & cauſed the people to be aſſembled at theyr common hall. whyther he wyth a ſmall company came, the xi.daye of January aboute.ix. of the clocke in the mornyng/where he ſhewed vnto the commons a longe and a pleſaunt oracyon. wherof the effect was, ỹ he bare very faythfull mynde vnto the cytye/and for the weale ther of he wolde put hys lyfe in ieopardy. And where as by hys cuyll wyllers he was reported, that he ſhulde gather men of armes to greue the citie/ he ſayd and ſwore it was neuer hys entencion, but onely to auoyde ſuche enemyes as dayly pylled and robbed theyr neyghbours and frendes. And where he alſo knewe well, that great ſummes of money were gathered of the people towarde the kynges fynaunce/ he lete theym vnderſtande ỹ no peny thereof was comyn to hys handes.

But hys mynde was, that ſuche perſones as hadde receyued that money, ſhulde wyth theyr aſſyſtence be

yy. ii. called

called to a due accompte. whych ꝛaca-
cyon wyth many kynde and louynge
woꝛdes ended / ꝑ people with it were
very well contented / so that of theym
he was wel commẽded and allowed.
Upon the moꝛowe beyng fryday and
xii. day of January / the pꝛouoſt and
other of hys affynyte, herynge of the
fauoure that many of the commons
bare vnto the duke, and feꝛynge leſte
the duke ſhuld by hys meanes turne
the comons vpon them / aſſembled a
great parte of the cytye at a place cal
led ſait James hoſpytall, & ſpecyally
ſuche as they knewe well fauoured
theyꝛ partye. whan ꝑ duke was ware
of the aſſemble, anone he ſpedde hym
thyther, haupnge wyth hym the byſ-
ſhop of Laon. where by the mouth of
hys chaũceler, he cauſed to be ſhewed
a parte of the matter whyche he hym
ſelfe had ſhewed the day befoꝛe vnto
the compnaltye / with moꝛe, ꝑ where
as ſuch as ought vnto hym no good
wylle, repoꝛted hym that he kept nat
pꝛompſe made with the kyng of Na-
uerne / he ſhewed there the contrary.
And yf any thynge were nat to hym
parfourmed, it was contrary to hys
mynde & pleaſure / & that that in hys
power lay nat to fulfyl. And ſo ſoone
as ꝑ chaũceler had ended hys tale /
Charles Culſake ſtode vp to the en-
tent to haue ſhewed hys mynde. But
there was ſuch a rumoure and noyſe
amonge the people, that he myghte
nat be harde / ſo that thanne the duke
parted with ſuche companye as he
bꝛought, excepte the byſſhop of Laõ,
whych taryed there with the pꝛouoſt
and other. And whan the duke was
departed Charles Culſake began his
tale, & ſpake boldely agayne the kyn-
ges offycers / and by couerte woꝛdes
ſomwhat agayne the duke. After
whyche tale fynyſſhed one named
Johñ de ſaynte Dunde, whyche by
auctoꝛyte of ꝑ thꝛe aſtates was new-
lye made one of the generall gouer-
nours of the ſubſydy / ſtoode vp and
ſayde, that the pꝛouoſte noꝛ no other
perſone of the thꝛe aſtates, hadde no
peny of that ſubſydie in theyꝛ hãdes /
the whiche ſayenge the pꝛouoſte alſo
affermed.

Foꝛthermoꝛe ſhewed than there ꝑ
ſayde Johñ, that certayne knyghtes
whyche he there named ſent from the
duke, had receyued of the ſayde ſub-
ſydye to the ſumme of. l. oꝛ. lx. M. mo
tons of golde, the whyche were en-
ployed to no good vſe. After whyche
pꝛoceſſe ended by the ſayde Johan /
Charles Culſake agayne beganne to
ſpeke, and made a longe comendaciõ
of the pꝛoupdence and good dyſpoſy
cion of the pꝛouoſt, whyche had takẽ
vpon hym great payne and diſplea-
ſure, & ſpent largely of hys owne foꝛ
ꝑ comõ welth of the cytye. wherefoꝛe
yf he myghte knowe that the comp-
naltye wolde nat ayde and ſtande by
hym foꝛ the furtheraũce of the ſame /
he wolde be content to leue of, & gete
hym there as he ſhulde be quyte of al
trouble, and alſo out of the daunger
of all hys enemyes. whereunto was
anon made a greate exclamacyon by
the people, ſayenge they wolde lyue
and dye wyth hym in that quarell.

UPõ the. xiii. day of January /
the duke ſent foꝛ dyuers per-
ſones of the thꝛe aſtates, & exoꝛted
theym by goodlye and amyable woꝛ-
des, that they wolde demeane theym
agayne hys father and hym, as
faythefull and louynge ſubiectes /
and he ſhulde ſo repoꝛte theym vnto
the kynge, that they of hym ſhulde
haue greate thankes.

And as touchynge hym ſelfe / he
wolde be ſo good loꝛde vnto theym,
that they ſhulde thynke theyꝛ kyn-
denes and fydelyte well beſtowed.

The

beſtowed. The whyche graunted vn to hym theyr trothe and ſeruyce to ỹ vttermoſte of theyr powers / aduy-ſynge hym to take vpon hym the go-uernaunce of the realme / for they thought he taryed to long or he toke the rule therof. Than ſoone vppon thys, the ſayd thre eſtates ordeyned a more feble money than they before had made, to the aduauntage of the duke / to the ende that he ſholde wyth ſtand the enemyes forenamed, which as yet remayned in the coũtre about Parys, and pylled the vyllages and toke pryſoners / the whych they con-ueyed vnto ſuche holdes as they thã helde in that countre. Thus duryng theſe manyfolde aduerſytees amõge the Frenchmen / vpon the .xxiiii. daye of ỹ ſayd moneth of January, Johñ Baylet treaſourer vnto ỹ duke, was ſlayne at Parys of a yoman or Var-let of the chaunge called Peryne Marke. The whyche Peryne after that curſyd dede done, fledde vnto ſaynt Mary chyrche. But at nyghte the duke ſent ſyr Johñ de Shalous hys marchall, wyth the prouoſt of ỹ cytye named Guillyam Scayſe and other / the whyche brake vp the chyr-che dores and toke the ſayde Peryne out by force / and ladde hym vnto pri ſon called the Chaſtelet. Out of the whych vpon the morne he was takẽ, and hys handes ſmytten of / and ſo drawen vnto the gybet of Parys, & there hanged. But vpon the thyrde daye folowyng, by meanes of the byſ ſhop of Parys he was taken downe and buryed wythin the ſayd chyrche of our lady, wyth greate reuerence and ſolempnyte. At whyche obſequy was preſent the prouoſte of the mar-chauntes, with many other burgeſis of the cytye. The fyrſte daye of the moneth of Februarye / ſyr Johñ de Pyquyny came vnto Parys from ỹ kyng of Nauerne, and made requeſt vnto the duke, of dyuers couenaũtes by hym to be perfourmed towarde ỹ kynge, whyche as yet were nat accõ-pliſhed. whyche requeſte the duke toke vnpacyẽtly / and gaue vnto the ſayd ſyr Johñ many hygh and diſple ſaũt wordes. Howe be it in the ende ỹ biſſhop of Laon ſayde, that the duke ſhuld be aduyſed vpõ ỹ anſwere of ỹ kynges demaũde. Upon ỹ .iii. daye of Februarye, ỹ prouoſt of the marchaũ tes, wyth certayn of ỹ vnyuerſyte of Parys & other burgeyſes, yode vnto the duke vnto Louure. where it was requyred by the ſayde perſones, that he wolde fulfyll vnto the kyng of Na uerne, all ſuche couenaũtes as were lately made with hym / and ſpecially that the caſtelles of Eurour & other before named, myghte be delyuered vnto hym accordyng to his apoynte mẽt. And farthermore it was ſhewed vnto the duke by a doctoure of diuy-nyte, that yf he or the kynge of Na-uerne wolde ſwarue from any poynt or artycle of the ſayde former agre-mente / that the .iii. eſtates had vtter-lye determyned to ayde and aſſyſte hym, that wolde kepe the ſayd agre-ment, & to wythſtãde the other that wolde nat obey or vpholde the ſayde concorde & agrement. whereunto the duke was wel agreable / ſayeng that he had perfourmed all his promeſſe, excepte the delyuere of certayne ca-ſtelles, whyche the cayptaynes wyth helde contrary hys mynde and plea-ſure / layenge for theyr excuſes, that by the kynge hys father to theym they were delyuered, and to hym and none other they wyll delyuer thẽ agayne.

Upon the .xi. day of Februarye, cer tayne of the .iii. eſtates beyng at coũ-ſayll in theyr place accuſtomed / ỹ pro uoſte of ỹ marchaũtes aſſẽbled theyr craftes of ỹ citie at a place called ſaĩt Clowe or Cloy in harneſſe.

In whych tyme of hys with them there beyng/an aduocat of the parliamẽt called mayster Reynolde Dacy, as he was goyng from the dukes palays toward his owne house, he was slayne by men of the towne.

And soone thereafter the sayd prouost with a great company of armed men entred the palays of Louure / & so with a certayne complyces entred the dukes chaũbre, & there withoute salutyng of the duke sayd vnto hym: Syr dysmay you nothyng whatsomeuer ye se vs do, for we entende to your persone no harme. And or these wordes were fully ended/his cõpany fell vpon a knyght called syr Nycholas de Cõflans thã marshall of Chãpayne, and vpõ syr Robert de Cleremoũt lenyng vpon the dukes bedde, & slewe them out of hande. whan the duke beheldе thys horryble dede, he was in meruelous fere of hys owne persone / & prayed the prouoste wyth hys cappe in hys hãde, that he wolde saufegarde hys persone/the whych ꝑ prouost graunted, with that he wold by hym be aduertysed.

Than the sayd.ii.dede corses were drawen downe the steyers withoute pytye/and layed in the court that all men myghte beholde that myserable spectacle. And for the dukes saufegarde, the prouost toke vnto hys partye a hood of redde & blewe, ꝑ whiche he put vpon his hed/and the prouost receyued the dukes hood beynge of burnet & garnysshed with a frenge of golde / & so eyther ware others hode all that daye. And that done, the prouoste with hys company wente vnto theyr comon hall / where he shewed vnto the compnalty that the.ii. persones were especiall enemyes vnto the comon weale, and false traytours to god & to the crowne of Fraunce/ and that he and hys adherentes entẽded the preseruacion of the commõ weale of the realme, and the cytye / & wolde vnderstãde of theym, whether they wolde stande by hym in that doynge or nat. The whyche cryed wyth one voyce ouy, ouy/that is to saye ye, ye. And whan he had receyued this comforte of ꝑ people, he retourned agayn vnto the duke. Than he recomforted hym and sayd, that al that was done, was done by thassent of the people, & for to auoyd ꝑ greater inconuenẽce. For these that were slayn were great enemyes vnto the common welthe, & traytours vnto the crowne. wherfore he wylled ꝑ duke to alowe that dede/ & yf any pardõ were requysyte for ꝑ dede or any other to be hadde, that he shulde lyberally graunt it. All which thynges the duke was fayne to saye ye vnto/ and prayed hym & the other than also of the cytezyns to be his frẽdes, & he wold in lykewyse be theyrs. And after thys agremẽt/ the prouost sent for.ii.clothes one of redde/and ꝑ other of blewe / and wylled the duke to make hoodes of the same for al his seruaũtes. And so the duke and hys seruaũtes were clothed in the lyuery of the towne / the blewe set vpon the ryght syde. Than agayne night whã the sayd.ii.corpsys had lyen all daye vpon the stones of the palays/ ꝑ prouost commaũded them to be layed in a cart, and so without preest or other reuerence to be cõueyed vnto a place of sait Katheryne there to be buryed. And whanne the sayde corpsys were thus brought vnto the sayde place/ ꝑ carter toke one of theyr garmentes for hys labour, & so departed.

It was nat longe after that a messanger came from the bysshop of Parys, whyche warned the bretherne of that house to spare the burpenge of syr Robert de Cleremoũt, for asmoch as the bysshope noted hym, accursed for brekyng vp of sait Mary church, whan he by force fette oute Peryne

Marke

Marke, as before is shewed. But after, they and also ỹ aduocate mayster Reynolde Dacy were buryed secretely. Uppon the morne folowynge the prouost assembled at the frere Augustynes a great company of the cytye, wyth all suche as then were there of the good townes by reason of ỹ forsayde coũsayll. To whych assemble, by the mouth of mayster Roberte de Corby a mã of the cytye, was shewed a protestaciõ of all the circumstaũce of the forsayd mater/ and howe that by the dukes coũsayl & also by ỹ three astates, many good thynges were cõcluded for the deliuery of the kynge/ & shulde or that tyme haue comyn to good effecte, ne had ben the enpechement of. iiii. persons, the whyche at ỹ season were nat named.

Thys busyneſſe thus cõtynuyng, the kyng of Nauarne came vnto Paris the. xxvi. daye of February, wyth a good company of armed men/ and was cõueyed by the cytezeyns vnto a place of the dukes called the Neell, & there lodged. To whome the prouost with his cõplyces made requeſt, that he wolde make allyaũce with theym, and to supporte theym in that ỹ they hadde done/ the whyche by hym was graũted. Than the quene hys syster and other, made instante laboure to agree hym and the duke. whych in cõclusyon toke such effect, ỹ the kynge shulde haue in recompẽcement of his wrõges, the erledom of Bygorre and the vynery of Ramer, with ỹ erledõ of Maston, and other landes to ỹ extente of. x. M. li. of Parys money by yere. And ouer that hys syster called quene Blãche, shuld haue ỹ lordshyp of Morette for her Dowry. After whyche accorde thus concluded / the kynge and the duke kepte together very frẽdely and louyng familyarite, dyned and souped eyther with other by many and sundry tymes, & eyther vnto other gaue ryche gyftes. Amõg the whyche one was, that the duke gaue vnto the kyng the sayd place of Neell whych he than lodged in.

Upon the. xii. daye of Marche, the duke of Normandye was proclamed regent of Fraunce thorough ỹ cytye of Parys/ and after thorough all Fraunce. And soone after he departed from Parys, and rode into ỹ countre of Champayne, where he taryed a season. And the kynge of Nauerne retourned to Maunt in Normandye. Than the regent drewe vnto hym the nobles of Champayne & of Prouynce / and began to manace the prouost and other of Parys, that before had put hym to dyshonoure, and slayne so vylaynously hys trewe counceyllours. And after promesse taken of the erle of Brene and other nobles of that countrey, ỹ they shuld ayde hym agayne hys fathers rebelles and hys enemyes / he than rode vnto the abbey of Ponley in Monstruell/ and after rode vnto a castell whych belonged vnto quene Blanche syster vnto ỹ kynge of Nauerne, and wylyd the Cayptayne named Tanpyne to delyuer to hym that castell. The whyche after dyuers denayes, opened the gates and receyued in the regente, and lodged hym therin that nyght. Upon the whyche the regent caused the sayd Tanpyne to swere vnto hym, ỹ he shulde kepe that castell to his vse/ and after made hym styll wardeyne of the same/ and so departed thens & rode to Meaux where hys wyfe laye.

In thys tyme and season the prouoste of the marchauntes of Parys, herynge of the regentes doynge, and of the affynyte that he made with thẽ of Champayne, fered the sequell ther of. wherfore by the aduyse of such as fauoured hys cause/ he rode into the castell of Louure, and there toke out

yp. iiii. artylery

artylery, gunnys, and other abylyme tes of warre, and put them in ỹ ſtoꝛe houſe of the cytye, to be redy whan tyme requered. The regent ſpedyng hys iournay returned agayne to Cõpeygn. And where as beſoꝛe was ap poynted, that the.iii. aſtates ſhulde ỹ fyꝛſte daye of May aſſemble at Pa-rys/the regent thã ſent out hys com-myſſiõs, and charged ỹ ſayd.iii. aſta-tes to aſſemble the thyꝛde daye of the ſayd moneth of May at Compeyng ne afoꝛeſayde / wherewith the ſayde cytezyns of Parys were greatly amo ued. At thys aſſemble was graunted vnto the regent, a ſubſydy bothe of ỹ Clergy and alſo of the laye fee / ſo ỹ the regent waxed dayly ſtrõger and ſtronger. wherof heryng the kyng of Nauerne/remoued from a towne cal led Merlo / and with a ſtronge com-pany came vnto a place oꝛ towne na med Domage, purpoſely foꝛ to treate wyth the regent foꝛ the cytezeyns of Parys. where in the begynnynge of May ỹ ſayd two pꝛynces met, eyther haupnge greate ſtrengthe of men of armys.

When the kynge of Nauerne had by.ii. dayes contynuall made re queſte vnto the regent foꝛ the cy tezyns of Parys, and myghte natte ſpede of his requeſte/he departed the thyꝛde daye and rode vnto Parys. where he was honoꝛably receyued & feſted by the ſpace of.x. oꝛ.xii. dayes. In whyche ſeaſon he warned theym of the great dyſpleaſure that ỹ regẽt bare towarde the cytye/and adupſed them to make theym as ſtronge as they myght. In thys paſſe tyme the byſſhop of Laon beynge with the re-gent at Cõpeyne, was lyke to haue ben bylonyed by ſome of the regẽtes counſayll. wherefoꝛe in ſecrete wyſe he departed vnto ſaynt Denyſe/and from thẽs he was fette by the kyngꝛ ſeruaũtes of Nauerne vnto Parys / in whome was put great faute of all thys trouble.

About the myddell of May / one named Guyllyam Calley gathered vnto hym a company in the pꝛouince of Beauayſyn, as of the townes of Cerreur, Noꝛecell, Cramoyſye, and other there about. The which beyng cupll dyſpoſed, ſlewe dyuers knyght-tes and eſquyers of that coũtrey, and theyꝛ wyues and ſeruaũtes/and pyl-led and ſpoyled the countrey as they went, and thꝛewe downe certayn py-les and other ſtrẽgthes, and a parte of the caſtell of Beawmoũt/and foꝛ-ced the ducheſſe of Oꝛleaunce to foꝛ-ſake that caſtell, that than was there lodged/and foꝛ her ſaufegarde to go vnto Parys.

Uppon the.xxx. daye of May/ the pꝛouoſt and other gouernours of ỹ cytye of Parys, cauſed Johñ Paret, mayſter of the bꝛydge of Parys, and the mayſter carpenter of the kynges werkes, to be dꝛawen, hanged, heded and quartered. Foꝛ it was put vpon them, that they ſhuld haue bꝛoughte into the cytye a certayne noumbꝛe of of the regentes ſowdiours, and ſo to haue betrayed the cytye. And the foꝛe ſayde people of Beauuayſyne ga-thered vnto theym dayly moꝛe peple, as labourers and dylaynes/ỹ which came into the countrey of Mountme rencie, & ſlewe and robbed there ỹ gẽ-tylmen of that countrey as they had done of other, and ſo paſſed the coun-trey without reſyſtence. And ỹ regẽt in thys whyle came to the cytye of Sens in Languedocke, where he was honoꝛably receyued / all be it ỹ the comons of that cytye & gentyles of that coũtrey, were greatly lenyng vnto the cytezyns of Parys / & there taryed a ſeaſon to erpꝛeſſe to thẽ hys mynde. In whyche meane tyme a ſpy cer oꝛ grocer namer Gylle of Parys, wyth

wyth one Johñ Vaylliaunt prouoste of ỹ kynges money, with a company of. viii. C. men in harneſſe rode vnto the cytye of Meaux/ wherof ỹ mayre of that cytie they were ioyfully receyued, contrary hys promeſſe before made vnto the regent. where with aſſystence of the ſayde mayer & other of that cytye, they entended to haue taken the wyfe of the ſayd regent, with other noble women thã there ſoiourning wyth hyr / and ſo to haue conueyd them vnto Parys, there to haue kepte them tyll the cytezyns myghte purchaſe the fauour & grace of the regent.

But whã the erle of Foyſe, whych thanne hadde the rule of the ſayde gentylwomen, knewe theyr entente / anone he gathered vnto hym hys cõpany/ and wyth aſſystẽce alſo of ſom of the ſayd cytye, he made vppon. vi. or. vii. C. men in harneſſe, and yſſued boldly agayne the forſayde perſons and ſkyrmyſſhed wyth theym. In which ſkyrmyſſhe in the ende, the mẽ of Parys were ſconfited and chaſed, & the mayre of Meaus named Johñ Soulas taken with other/ which after for theyr rebellyõ were put in execucion. And after thys victory thus optayned/ & in reuẽgemẽt of the deth of a knyghte called ſyr Lewys de Chambly there ſlayn with other gentylmen/ & for the vntrouth of ỹ cytie: the forſayd erle ſet fyre vpon a ſyde of the cytye, & brẽt a great parte therof, as well churches as other/ which fyre was ſcãtly ſtenched in. viii. dayes after.

In thys whyle the kynge of Nauerne herynge of the greate harme & diſtrucciõ that the company of Guyllyam Calley made of gentylmen in Moũtmerécy & other places, lyke as before is ſhewed, rode agayne hym/ & nere vnto a place called Cleremoũt encountred hym and his people, and gaue vnto theym batayll, and ſlewe moch of his people/ and toke hym on lyue, & cauſed hys hede to be ſtryken of. And ſoone after, the cytezyns of Parys ſente vnto hym / requyryng hym to drawe towarde thẽ. At whoſe requeſte he ſped hym thytherwarde, and entred the cytye vpõ the. xv. daye of Juny/ and was cõueyed vnto ſait Germayne in Pree & there lodged. And vpõ the morne he wẽte vnto the comon halle of the citie/ where the comõs beyng aſſembled, he made vnto them a lõge & pleſaunt oraciõ, of the great kyndeneſſe that he had founde in many of ỹ good townes of Fraũce & ſpecially in the cytye of Parys. For the whych they had bounde hym to take theyr partye agayne all other, makyng none excepcyõ. After which tale by hym ended/ Charles Culſake ſtode vp, & ſhewed vnto the people what ruynous poynt the lãde ſtode in for lacke of a wyſe hedde & gouernoure. wherfore he exhorted ỹ people to chooſe ỹ kyng for theyr gouernour. whyche than was ſo done/ & he there toke vpon hym the rule, & promyſed with them to lyue and dye. Upon the xvii. day of the ſayd moneth of Juny/ ỹ kyng of Nauerne with a cõpany of vi. M. ſperes of the citye & other, departed from Parys, and rode vnto a towne called Gonneſſe, where an other company of the cytye taryed for hym/ & from thens rode towarde Sẽlys. But whã the gentylmen of hys hoſte vnderſtode that he had takẽ vpon hym to be capptayne of the cominaltye, where agayn the more partie of the nobles of Fraunce were of the contrary partye/ they left hym many of them, & ſpecially ſuche as were of the duchye of Burgoyne / and wyth congy of hym taken, reſorted into theyr coũtreys. whã the regent had vyſyted dyuers countreys, & wonne vnto hym the benuolence of ỹ ſame,

and

& had also gathered vnto hym greate strength/he spedde hym towarde Parys/ & lodged hym in the ende of the moneth of Juny, in a place called in Frenche le Pount de Charenton fast by Boyes in Vyncent. In whose cõpany were noumbred vpon .xxx. M. horsemen / so that the countre there about was pylled & wasted with that hoste.

Wherof herynge the kynge of Nauerne, retourned backe agayne, and came wyth hys hoste vnto saynt Denys wythin.ii.myles of Parys. And the cytye of Parys was kepte daye & nyght, that no man myghte entre or go out, wythout lycẽce of ỹ prouoste & other rulers therof. In this meane whyle that the sayde two prynces lay thus with theyr two hostes about the cytye / quene Johan syster vnto the kynge, made an instaũt labour vnto the regent for grace for the cytezyns. By whose meanes a comucaciõ was appoynted to be holdẽ betwene the kynge & the regente, the eyght day of July, at a place called ỹ wynde mylle faste by the house of saynt Anthony. At whyche metynge it was lastly accorded betwene ỹ sayd prynces, that the kyng of Nauerne shulde do hys best to brynge the cytezyns of Parys vnto due obedyence. And yf he sawe in theym suche obstynacy, that they wolde nat do theyr dutye, & to gyue for theyr rebellyon suche summes of money as by hym & the regent shuld be thought accordynge/that than the kynge shuld vtterly refuse theyr partye, and turne vnto the regẽt with all hys power.

And ouer that, the kyng for all demaundes that he coude aske of the regent for any cause, ouer the agremẽt betwene them laste made, shuld haue iiii.C.M. florẏns of gold. wherof an C.M. to be payed that daye .xii. monethes, and yerely after, l.M. tyll the fulle were payed. And farther it was accorded, that the kynge after ỹ daye shulde take partye with the regente agayne all persones, excepte onely ỹ kynge of Fraunce/And to the ende ỹ thys accorde shulde be fermely holdẽ vppon bothe sydes/ the bysshoppe of Lyseux there beynge present, wyth many other lordes, sãge there masse within the tente where thys accorde was concluded/and after agnus dei, sware the two prynces vpon the sacrament, that withoute collusyon or fraude they shulde obserue and kepe euerych artycle of the sayde accord. After whyche conclusyon thus takẽ/ the regent repayred vnto hys hoste, & the kynge vnto saynt Denys. Than vppon the morowe the kynge entred Parys, and conueyed thyther wyth hym but a certayne/& so tarved there all that daye, wythoute any repayre sendynge vnto the regent.

And the seconde daye for ỹ more strẽgthynge of the towne, he sent for certayne Englysshe sowdyours, as archers and other, and sette them in the towne wagys/& nother sente nor retourned vnto the regente with any answere. Than towarde the nyght, how it was assaut was made by som of the regentes people vppõ a parte of the town, so that dyuers men were slayne vpon bothe sydes/ but the more vppon the partye of the cytye.

Than the kynge of Nauerne vpõ the morowe retourned vnto sait Denys/leuynge within the cytye ỹ forsayde strẽgthe of Englysshmen wyth other. whan the regente was ware of the kynges beynge at saynt Denys / he sent vnto hym, and hym requyred of perfourmaũce of suche accorde as lately betwene theym was condiscended/& syns by hys meanes he myght nat enduce the cytezyns to due obedyence, that he wolde accordynge to hys promesse take partye with hym/

whereby

wherby they and other enemyes to ꝑ comon welth, myght be recouēcyled. whereunto the kynge answered and sayd, that the regēt had brokē ꝑ sayd accorde. For where he by hys dylygēce & laboure, had brought the cytezyns to a nere poynt of recōciliacyon & submyssiō/the regent by the meane of that assaute whyche he made vnto the towne, caused the sayd cytezeyns to renouce all theyr former graunt, & to bynde them vpō theyr former wylfulnesse. After whyche answere thus gyuen by the kyng / the regēt caused his people to passe ꝑ ryuer of Sayne by a brydge made of botes, and so to brenne the towne of Uyttry & diuers other townes, & robbed & pylled the coūtrey there about.

Upō the.xiiii.day of July, dyuers of the towne of Parys issued oute of the towne/& with the ayde of the Englyshmen endeuoured them to haue socoured the sayde towne of Uyttry/ with also to haue destroyed ꝑ brydg. At whych iournay they bare them so well, that with theyr shotte they woū ded many of theyr enemies/and toke prysoner the regentes marshall named syr Reynolde de Fountaynes with dyuers other/ & after retourned vnto theyr cytye.

Upon the.xix.day of July, ꝑ quene Johā syster vnto ꝑ kyng of Nauerñ, with the archebyshop of Lyons, the byshop of Parys, with certayne other tempozall persones of the cytye/ yode vnto a place assygned without the towne. where with them met the regent & certayne of hys coūsayll / & at lengthe cōcluded an vnyte and cōcorde betwene the sayd regent & cytezyns, without farther payne or exaccīō to be put vnto them/ excepte that the sayd cytezyns shuld humbly submytte thē vnto the regent, in aknowlegyng theyr offēce, & askyng of hym mercy & grace for the same / & ouer ꝑ to be ordered forther as the kynge of Nauerne, the sayd quene Johā, with the duke of Orleaūce & the erle of Eſ cāps, wolde deme & adiuge/and that graunted, the regēt to oppn all ways & passages as well by lāde as by water, that al marchaūtes may passe as they before tymes vsed/& in lykewise they of the cytye to oppn the gates of the towne, and to receyue all straungers.

After whych agremente thus cōcluded & agreed, with all other before made betwene the kyng & the regent to be maynteyned & vpholden/the regēt sent from hym moch of hys people/& appoynted the sayd bil shoppes & the other for the towne, to mete with hym ꝑ.xiii. day folowynge at a place called Laigny syr Marne. where he wolde haue also the kynge of Nauerne & the other, to perfyghte and clerely fynysh the sayd agremēt/ & vpō thys made proclamacions thorough the hoste, that a good and perfyght peace was agreed. wherefore many of the hoste for dyuers causes theym mouynge yode towarde the cytye, trustyng there gladly & louyng lye to be receyued. But vpō ꝑ more whan they came vnto the gates, they fande them watched with harnessed men, whyche wolde none suffre to entre but suche as them lyked/amōg the whyche one named Macequett a seruaunte of the regētes was myssе entreated. And nat withstādyng that accorde / yet the mouable goodes of suche as were with the regent & had houses within the cytie, where dispersed and stroyed.

Upon the.xxi. day of July & euyn of mary Magdaleyne, a stryfe began to kyndell within the cytye/ so that ꝑ cytezyns complayned them vpon the Englyshemen, surmysynge agayne thē dyuers causes. By meane wher-

of the

of the comonte in a fury pode vnto the palays of Neel, where at ỹ tyme many of the capytaynes of the Englyſſhemen dyned wyth the kynge of Nauerne/ vpon whome they fell ſodeynly, and ſlewe of them vpõ.xxiiii. & after in diuers places of ỹ cytie, toke the other deale to the noũbre of .iiii. C. or thereupon, and cloſed theym in dyuers pryſons. with whych doyng, the kynge of Nauerne, with alſo the prouoſte and other the gouernoures of the cytye were right ſore diſcontented. wherfore vpõ the day folowyng, the kynge aſſembled the compnaltye at theyr comon halle/ entendynge by pleſaũt wordes to haue cauſed them to haue ben repẽtaunt of the murder of the forſayd capytaynes, & alſo to haue gotten the remenaunte oute of pryſon.

But the more the kynge ſpake for the Englyſſhemen, the more woder were they dyſpoſed agayne theym / ſayenge ỹ thoſe whyche were within the cytye, ſhulde nat alonely be putte to deth, but alſo ſuche as were at ſait Denys, whyche there ſpoyled that towne & countrey enuyron / and had had ſuche wordes vnto the kynge, ỹ in the ende he wyth the prouoſt & the other gouernoures, were fayne to graunte vnto them, that they wolde go with theym for to helpe to dyſtres the ſayde Englyſſhemen. And ſo the ſame daye agayne nyght/ the comõs yſſued by the gate of ſaynt Honoure/ & the kynge of Nauerne with the prouoſt & theyr company went out by ỹ wyndemylle, ſo that in the ſayd aſſẽbles of the kynge & the comons were noumbred vppon.xvi.C. ſperes, and of foote men vpon.viii.M. whan the kynge with hys company was comẽ into the feelde where the ſayd wyndemylle ſtãdeth/ he houed there well vpon halfe an houre, to ſe what ỹ other company wolde do. The whych ſent out.iii. ſperes to eſpye where the Englyſſhmen were, and eſpyed of theym vpõ.xl. or.l. that apered by a woddes ſyde nere vnto ſaynt Clow / and wenynge that the ſayde Englyſſhemen there had bẽ no mo, retourned & ſhewed what they had ſene. whereupon the ſayde comons in all haſte ſpedde theym thyther. And whã they were within the daunger of theyr ſhotte/ ỹ Englyſſhmen iſſued oute of dyuerſe parties of the wode, and woũded and ſlewe many of them. wherwith the other beyng fered fled incontinently/ whome the Englyſſhemen purſued ſo cruelly, that they ſlewe of the fote men vpon.vi.C. in all.

Whych ſeaſon the kyng of Nauerñ and alſo ỹ prouoſt with theyr peple, ſtode ſtyl & neuer moued towarde thẽ for theyr defence or ayde. After thys ſcomfyture thus ſuſteyned by the Paryſyens/ the kyng lefte the cytye and rode vnto ſaynt Denys/ and the prouoſte wyth hys company returned vnto Paris. where he was receyued wyth hydyous noyſe and cryc, alwel of womẽ as mẽ, for ỹ he ſo cowardly had ſuffered hys neyghbours to be woũded and ſlayne. By reaſõ of this the murmure of the people encreaſed dayly more and more agayne the prouoſt/ ſo that in maner a party was taken betwene the prouoſte and the other gouernours of the cytye and the compnaltye. For the comons wolde haue put to deth many of the pryſoners of the Englyſſhemen/ but ỹ prouoſt with hys aſſyſtence let them, and preſerued them from theyr fury and malyce.

And vpon the.xxvii. daye of July beynge frydaye/ the ſayd prouoſt beyng encõpanyed wyth.viii. ſcore or ii.C. mẽ in harneſſe, rode vnto Louure and other pryſons and, toke out ỹ ſayd Englyſſhemen, & conueyed thẽ vnto the gate of ſaynt Honoure/ and ſo ſent

ſo ſent theym vnto theyr other felyſ-
chyp than beyng at ſaynt Denys.

Of whome they were ioyouſly re-
ceyued and welcomed/ & ſpecyally of
the kynge of Nauerne, at whoſe re-
queſte as the comõ fame went, ỹ pꝛo-
uoſt wyth the other rulers of ỹ town
them delyuered. Thus moꝛe & moꝛe
cyuyle dyſcoꝛde began to encreace
wythin the cytie/ſo that the rulers of
ỹ cytye were now in as great dought
and fere of theyr neyghbours, as be-
foꝛe tyme they were of the regẽt & his
knyghtes.

So that vpõ the tuyſdaye folow-
ynge beynge the laſt daye of July / ỹ
pꝛouoſt wyth other of hys company
beyng in harneſſe as dayly they were
vſed, went to dyner vnto the baſtyle
of ſaynt Denys. And there beyng at
dyner/the pꝛouoſt cõmaũded to ſuch
as thã kept the keyes of that baſtyle,
that they ſhuld delyuer theym vnto
Geffrey de Maſtõ than treſourer of
the warres of the kyng of Nauerne.
But the poꝛters denayed ỹ commaũ
demẽt/& ſayde pꝛelyſely ỹ they wolde
nat delyuer the keyes to hym noꝛ yet
to any ſtraũger. Foꝛ the whyche an-
ſwere many hawte woꝛdes were blo-
wen on eyther partye / ſo that people
gadered about them. wherof heryng
one named Johñ Maylart, to whom
belõged the watche of a quarter of ỹ
cytye / wherein & in whyche quarter
the ſayde baſtyle ſtode, dꝛewe nere &
gaue ere vnto the woꝛdes / & ſhoꝛtly
after in bolde maner ſayd vnto ỹ pꝛo
uoſt, that the keyes ſhulde remayne
ſtyll with the ſayd kepers, & nat to be
takẽ out of theyr poſſeſſiõ. By meane
of whych woꝛdes the pꝛouoſte wyth
hys company were encenſed wyth
moꝛe malyce / & vttered many hyghe
and dyſdaynous woꝛdes to fere the
ſayd Johñ Maylart and the other.
wherfoꝛe the ſayde Johñ Maylart fe
ryng the pꝛouoſt, leſt he ſhuld ſhoꝛtly
call hys ſtrẽgthe to hym, & by meane
thereof put hym and other to an af-
terdele/ſodenlye gate hym on hoꝛſe-
backe/& berynge a baner of ỹ French
kynges in hys hande, cryed wyth a
lowde voyce, Mon ioye ſaynte De-
nys au Roy et a duke. Whã the peo-
ple ſawe hym thus ryde aboute, and
cryed ioye to the kynge & the duke /
anone moche people folowed hym, &
cryed in the ſame wyſe. And in lyke-
wyſe dyd the pꝛouoſt & his company,
whyche toke the waye towarde the
baſtyle of ſaynte Anthony. And the
ſayde Maylarte rode towarde the
market place, & there houed wyth his
company. In whyche tyme & ſeaſon
one called Peyn de Eſſars, nat kno
wynge of the feat of Johñ Maylart,
in lyke maner gathym on hoꝛſbacke/
and berynge a baner of the armes of
Fraũce, rode about cryeng ỹ foꝛſayd
crye, & ſo laſtly came vnto the other.
whyle the commõs were thus aſſem-
bled in the market place/ the pꝛouoſt
came vnto the foꝛſayd baſtyle of ſait
Anthony/ where it was repoꝛted to ỹ
kepers of that baſtyle, that the pꝛo-
uoſt hadde lately receyued letters frõ
the kynge of Nauerne whyche they
delyꝛed to ſe/wherof the pꝛouoſte de-
nayed the ſyghte, & ſpecyally one na-
med Guyſkarde. wherefoꝛe after ſom
woꝛdes of dyſpleaſure, one ſtrake at
the ſayd Guyſkarde, & thꝛoughe hys
harneſſe woũded hym. where wyth ỹ
pꝛouoſt beyng amoued, made reſyſtẽ
ce agayn the ſayd kepers/ſo ỹ eyther
ranne at other wyth theyr weppns.
In whych ſtryke the ſayd Guyſkarde
was fyꝛſt ſlayne/ & after the pꝛouoſte
wyth one of hys cõperes named Sy
mõde Palmeyr. wherof heryng ỹ foꝛe
ſayd Johñ Maylart & hys cõpany,
in all haſte ſped thẽ thyder & purſued
vpõ other ỹthã were fled foꝛ fere/& ſo
ſtreightly ſerched, ỹ they fõde one cal
led Johñ of ỹ Ile, & Giles Marcell

vnder the prouoste of marchauntes, whych they also slewe without pytie. And after at ꝑ bastyle of saynt Martyne, they foũde one called Johñ Paret the põger, whome they slew also. And soone were they spoyled of all ꝑ they had, and layd naked in the open strete for all men to loke vpon. And whan they .vi. corpses had so lyen by a certayne tyme / they were than put in a carte & drawen vnto a house of saynt Katheryne, and there buryed vnreuerently. And vpon the morowe folowyng, were taken Charles Cusake, & Josseron or Geffrey Maston, and put into the chastelet, and there kept in strayte prison. And thus ceased thys ryot wythin the cytye of Paris, that had contynued for the more partye by ꝑ space of a yere & .ix. monethes, as from the begynnynge of the moneth of Nouember in the .vii. yere of kyng Johñ, vnto thende of ꝑ moneth of July in the .viii. yere of thys sayd kyng / or from the takyng of the duke in hys chaũbre, to the deth of ꝑ prouost by the space of .vi. monethes. After whyche persones thus slayen / the sayd Johñ Maylart sent vnto ꝑ regent, requyrynge hym ꝑ he wolde spede hym vnto ꝑ citie / & in ꝑ meane whyle to sende some noble man to haue the rule of the same. And in that whyle the comõs made serche, & toke many of the former rulers, as Petyr Gylle grocer, which as before is said was cayptayne vnto thẽ ꝑ were sent vnto Meaus. And wyth hym was taken syr Pyers Caylart knyghte and wardeyne of the castell of Louure. Also one called Johñ Prenost, wyth Petyr Blount. Also a vocate named mayster Peter Puysiour / & a felowe of hys named mayster Johan Godarde. All which psones were shortly after put to deth by sundry tymes, & theyr bodyes cast in to a ryuer called Bone Uoyeyne. And vppon the .xii. daye of August, the regent was receyued into Parys with all honour and gladnesse. whereof heryng the kynge of Nauerne, & of the puttyng to deth of Josseran hys tresourer / sente vnto the regẽt wordes of defyaũce / letting hym to vnderstande that he wolde be reuenged of that wronge and other.

VPon the .xiiii. day of August, the regent caused to be assembled wythin the commõ hall of Paris the cytezyns / to whom he made a lõg declaracion of the treasons & ryottes done by these persones put to deth, & by the bysshop of Laon & other yet leuyng / whych entẽded as he sayde to haue made ꝑ kyng of Nauerne kyng of Fraũce, & to haue yelden the cytye of Parys into the power of Englysshemen. Thã the kynge of Nauerne with the Englysshmen yode vnto Meloon / where they by fauour & strẽgth occupyed ꝑ yle, & all ꝑ coũtrey whych stretched toward Dyer / & warred vpon the countrey toward Gastenoys & dyd therin moche harme aswell by fyre as otherwyse. And shortly after syr Johñ Pyquegny & syr Robert his brother, whych were cayptaynes vnder the kyng of Nauerñ, made warre vpõ the towne of Turnay and other townes of Pycardy / and slewe many of the common people, and toke prysoners of the gentylmen of that countrey to the noumbre of an hundreth & aboue.

Amonge the whyche the bysshope of Noyen was takẽ, and wyth the other ladde vnto a castell or towne called Creeyll wherof the forsayde syr Robert was cayptayne / and so contynued in doynge domage in dyuerse places, aswell nere vnto Parys as elles where. Durynge whyche warre thus made by the kynge of Nauerne and hys accessaries / in the moneth of

Septembre

Septembre and begynnynge of the ix. yere of kynge Johñ, the forsayde syr Johñ de Piquegny layd his siege vnto the cytye of Ampas, & wã within the bulwerkes of the same/ so that the cytye was lyke to haue ben yelde vnto hym, ne had ben the rescous of the erle of Saynt Poule, which dyaue the sayd Johñ & hys people a backe. But the sayd syr Johñ wyth ayde of the Englysshemẽ quytte hym so mãfully, that he had the domynyõ of all that coũtrey of beawuasyne / so that wyne nor no marchaundyse myghte passe to Tournay nor other townes therabout, without hys sauke cõduyt or lycẽce. And in lyke maner syr Robert knolles cappytayne of the Englysshemen in Bretayne, gatte there many holdes & townes, whyche I passe ouer.

Upon the. xxv. day of Octobre, dyuers of the burgeysys & rulers of the cytye of Parys, as Johñ Guyffarde, Nycholas Porret, & other to the noumbre of. xix. persones, by the cõmaundement of the regẽt were arested & sent vnto pryson/ and so remayned by the space of. iiii. dayes. wherfore the frẽdes of the sayd prysoners yode vnto the prouoste of the marchaũtes than named Johñ Culdoe, and requyred hym to make labour with other vnto the regent than beyng at Louure, for the delyuery of theyr frẽdes, or at the lest to knowe the cause of theyr imprysonement/ whyche requeste ỹ prouost and other executed. It was answered to them by the regẽt, that vppon the morowe he wolde be at theyr commõ halle/ where before the compnaitye ỹ cause of theyr imprysonement shulde be shewed. And yf than the cytezyns thoughte good to haue them sette at large/ he wolde therwyth holde hym contented. At whyche houre apoynted, the regente came vnto the sayde halle/ and there shewed that one named Johñ Dampens, whyche hadde maryed the doughter of Johñ Restable one of the sayd prysoners, hadde causeed hys sayd father & the other, ỹ they had allyed theym with the kyng of Nauern cõtrary theyr allegeaũce/ wherfore he thought they had deserued to dye. But for the fauoure that he owed vnto the cytye & to them, for they were of good substaũce/ he wold nat do any thynge to theym tyll they were enquered of by theyr neyghbours. After the whyche declaracion thus made by the regẽt/ euery man fered to speke any more for theym, but suffered the lawe to haue hys course. Howe be it in the ende they were acquyted of that treason, and fynally delyuered by the ende of the nexte moneth.

Uppõ the thyrde daye of Decẽbre, entred into Parys the cardinalles of Pierregort & of Urgell, to treate a cõcorde and peace betwene the regente & the kyng of Nauerne. But in cõclusyon nothynge they sped of that they came for / wherefore they retourned vnto Aupnyon. In whyche retourne they were robbed of great substaũce/ whereof Englysshmen bare the disclaũder. And thus thys grudge hãgynge betwene the kyng & the regẽt / many robberyes & other harmes were done vnto dyuers townes in Fraũce, to ỹ greate enpouerysshynge of the peple of that lande, and to the greate enrychynge of suche Englysshemẽ as thã were there abydynge in dayely warres, bothe wyth the kynge of Nauerne & also in Bretayne.

For shortely after thys, the forsayde syr Roberte knolles and other Englysshemen wanne the towne of Ancer and other, lyke as in the thyrde and thyrty yere of kynge Edwarde is before more at lengthe declared.

In ỹ moneth of May & xix. day of

the same/ ꝑ regẽt for tydynges which he had receyued from hys father out of England, by the reporte of ꝑ archebysshop of Sẽs & other/ assẽbled many of ꝑ good townes at Paris. But ꝑ ways were so stopped by mẽ of warre he was fayne to tary tyll the.xxv.day of the sayd moneth folowynge. At whyche season was shewed to ꝑ people there assembled, that the kyng of Englande to haue a fynall concorde with ꝑ kyng of Fraunce, wolde haue ouer and aboue hys raunsome, ꝑ duchy of Normandy, ꝑ duchy of Guyã, the duchy of Erancles, the cytye of Ageu, the cytye of Carbe, the cytye of Pierregorst, the cytye of Lymoges, ꝑ cytye of Caours, with all the dyoces of the sayde cytyes belõgyng/ the erledomes of Bygorre, of Poytyers, of Aniowe, and of Mayne, of Thorayn of Boulogne, of Guynys, of Poũtesses, or Pountyeu/ ꝑ townes of Moũstruell, of Calays, & of Marquet/ with all appertenauntes to the sayde duchys, erledomes, cytyes, and townes belongynge/ them to enioye and holde wythout feawte or homage for them doynge, with many other thynges to the kyng of Englandes great aduauntage. whyche tydynges were eyght dysplesaunt vnto all that cõpany/ in so moch that they answered that the sayd treaty was neyther honorable nor profytable. And rather thã the kyng shuld bynde hym & hys lande to suche inconuenience/ they wolde prepare to make sharpe warre a zayne Englande. wyth whyche answere the sayde assemble was dyssolued.

Upon the.xxviii.day of May, the regent reassembled the sayde people/ where it was condyscended that the nobles of the realme with a certayne persones euery man after hys astate, shuld serue the regent in hys warres by ꝑ space of a moneth at theyr owne propre costes. And the cytye of Paris graũted to fynde to hym at theyr charge. vi.C. speres, iiii.C. archers, & a.M. of other sowdyours. And for so moche as ꝑ other good townes wold nat graũt any subsydie tyll they had spokẽ with theyr cõpynaltyes/ therfore they were licẽced to depte home, and to bryng reporte agayn within viii.dayes. At whych season they shewed vnto ꝑ regent, ꝑ theyr countreys were so pylled & wasted by the kynge of Nauerne and Englyshemen, ꝑ the people myght nothyng ayde hym as they thought to haue done. wherfore with moche payne they graũted to hi viii.M.mẽ for.iii.monethes.

In the begynnyng of the moneth of Juny, ꝑ regent with a stronge power sped hym towarde Meleõ where the kynge of Nauerne laye with hys people/ so that the kyng occupied the coũtrey toward Byeir, and ꝑ regent ꝑ coũtrey towarde Bry e. where both hostes thus lyenge withoute notary feate of warre/ a treatye of accorde was yet agayne moued at lẽgthe, by agrement of ꝑ Parysyens, accorded moche lyke vnto the former accorde concluded at Parys. So ꝑ by media cyõ of certayn tẽporall lordes of both hostes, ꝑ sayd princes agreed to mete at Mẽlane/ and there to cõclude the sayd peace. where about the.xx. daye of August, wyth hostage delyuered vpon both partyes/ the sayd prynces mette/ & after rode vnto Pountoyse, where they were both lodged within the castell/ where bothe theyr coũsayles were assygned to mete for the perfyghtyng of thys accorde. But so it was ꝑ for suche lãdes as shuld be assygned vnto ꝑ kyng, they cowde nat agre. wherfore ꝑ regẽt in cõclusyõ sẽt vnto the erle of Stãps or Eskamps, chargyng hi to say, ꝑ he to ꝑ entent to haue his good wyl, had offered vnto hym reasonable offers.

whyche

whyche yf he wolde accepte, he wolde be fayne therof/and yf nat, he let hym vnderstãde ỹ he shulde haue no peace wyth hym whyle he lyued. By reason of whyche message, ỹ coũsayles on bothe partyes conceyued none other, but that this treaty shuld haue concluded no ampte nor peace. But howe it was, by counsayll or of hys owne lyberalyte, whan the kyng had digested this mater in his mynd by all that nyght folowynge/ he on ỹ morowe sent for the counsayll of the regent/ & wylled them to shewe vnto the regẽt, that he consydered well in hys mynde the great daunger & mysery whyche the realme of Fraunce stode in. wherfore he beyng of the naturall house of Fraũce, and one of ỹ Flouredelyce/ ought to se ỹ mayntenaũce of the honour of the same. And for that that no ruyne of the sayde realme shulde to hym (yf any fell) after be arected/ therfore he was cõtented to set a parte all suche great offers & promyses, as to hym before tyme had ben offered & promysed/ & to holde hym onely contented wyth hys owne righte as he before tymes had enioyed. And to ỹ ende that thys hys wyll & pleasure myght to the people be knowen/ he wylled the regent that the people of that towne of Boũtoyse shuld be assembled in the court of that castell, that he myghte declare it to them in proper persone. The whych accordyng to his mynde was done. All whyche rehersall he made before the regẽt and compnaite of the towne/ promysyng there to delyuer out of hys possessiõ all suche townes, castelles, and holdys, as he had won syn he stode enemye to the crowne of Fraũce/ & to become true subiecte vnto the kyng, & louyng neuewe and frẽde vnto ỹ regẽt frome ỹ daye forward. wherof the regẽt & all the cõmons were very glad & ioyfull all be it that some trusted lytle to this accorde, nor yet to ỹ cõtinuaũce therof/ consyderynge the manyfolde accordes whych before tymes had ben betwene them cõcluded. After which accorde thus ended, the kynge wyth hys people retourned to Melant, & ỹ regẽt to Paris/ appoyntyng betwene them to meate at Parys the fyrst day of September next folowyng.

ACcordyng to ỹ appoyntmẽte made at Bountoyse betwene the kyng and ỹ regẽt/ vpon the fyrste day of September & begynnyng of ỹ yere of kyng Johñ, the sayd kynge & regent met at Parys/ where atwen them was holden famylyer cõpany, and great kyndenesse shewed vpon eyther partye. There also they counceyled how they shulde withstãde the kyng of Englande, whych entẽded to entre Fraunce shortely after wyth a stroge power. And after many amytees and frendely dealynges betwen thẽ executed/ ỹ kyng rode to Melẽ to delyuer that towne and castel into the regentes possessyon as the story sheweth. But whã he was cõmyn thyther, were it with hys wyl or cõtrary/ the sowdyours toke greuouse tolles of all wynes and other marchaundyses that passed that waye/ whyche after was knowen to be for ỹ wage & sowde of the Nauaroys and Englyshemen, whych helde the sayd towne and castell. And so ỹ Frenchmẽ were constrayned to paye the wages of theyr enemyes/ whyche greued them very sore, consyderynge that manyfolde harmes and pyllages of theym before were receyued. And after the kyng had auoyded the sayde sowdyours/ he departed & rode vnto Maũt leuyng Crepell in the possessiõ of Englyshmen & other. And ouer these manyfolde myseryes and myschyeues

thus fallyng in the realme of fraũce/ there fell so great habundaũce of water in the Herueſt ſeaſon, that ꝑ corne was loſte / ſo that it roſe to an hyghe ꝓyce to the greate damage of the comon people.

And in the moneth of Nouembre folowyng / the kynge of Englande, with ꝓynce Edwarde & other many lordes, with a ſtrõge power lãded at Calays / & ſo perced Fraunce by Artoys in Pycardy & Uermendoys, & ſubdued the coũtrees befoꝛe hym tyll he came to Reynes, lyke as befoꝛe is ſhewed in the.xxxiii.&.xxv. yeres of kyng Edward / where all thys mater wyth ꝑ tenoure of the peace betwene the ſayde kynges of Englande and of Fraunce is moꝛe at lengthe declared.

The laſte daye of the moneth of Decembꝛe, one Marten of Pyſdo burgeyſe of Parys, was dꝛawẽ vnto the place of iugemẽt / & there vpon a ſcaffolde had kyꝛſte hys armes cutte of, & after hys legges by the thyes, & laſtly hys hed / & than he was quartered, & hys.iiii.quarters ſette vppon iiii. ꝓyncypall gates of the cytye, & hys hede ſette vpõ the pylloꝛy. The cauſe of thys iugemente was, foꝛ ſo moche as one called Denyſot Palmer, to whome he had diſcouered his coũſayll, and cauſed hym to be as an acceſſary in all hys woꝛkes / had accuſed hym that the ſayd Marten had agreed & couenaunted with certayne offycers & capptaynes of the kyng of Mauerñ, that they at a tyme appoynted ſhuld haue entred the cytye of Paryſ, & to haue ſlayne the regente & other, & to haue had the cytye at theyꝛ rule and pleaſure. And ſo the ſeaſon thã of ꝑ.x.yere tyl ꝑ moneth of July, paſſed in the warres & treaty befoꝛe touched / ſo that the.viii.day of July, the Frenche kyng lãded at Calays, & there taryed as ꝓyſoner tyl the .xxv. daye of Octobꝛe folowynge, as befoꝛe in ꝑ.xxviiii.yere of kyng Edward is moꝛe playnly ſhewed.

Than vpon the.xxix. day of Octobꝛe and begynnynge of hys.xi.yere / kyng Johñ came to ſaynte Omers, where he taryed tyll the fourth daye of Nouembꝛe. And the.xi.day of December he came vnto ſaynte Denys / where vnto hym vpõ ꝑ.xii. day came the kynge of Nauerne, whyche had nat ſene hym ſen he was delyuered from ꝓyſon / & bꝛought with hym certayne hoſtages whyche the Frenche kynge had ſente vnto hym foꝛ hys ſaufegarde / puttynge hym holy in ꝑ Frẽche kynges grace & mercy. And vpon the moꝛowe folowyng, he was newly ſwoꝛne vnto the kynge to be hys trew & faythfull ſonne & ſubiect / and the kyng agayn vnto hym, to be hys kynde father & good & gracyous ſouerayngne loꝛde. And foꝛthe wyth were ſwoꝛne the duke of Noꝛmandy & Philip bꝛother vnto the ſayd kyng of Nauerne, to mayntayne all couenauntes made & to be made betwene the ſayd.ii.kynges / ſo that they were kyniſſhed & cõcluded by the.xviii.day of January nexte folowyng. And ſoone after retourned the ſayd kyng of Nauerne vnto Maunt. And kyng Johñ vpon the.xiii.daye of Decembꝛ wyth great tryumphe was receyued into Parys.

And whanne he was comyn vnto hys palays, the ꝓuoſt of marchauntes wyth certayne burgeyſes of the cytye, in the name of the compnaltye of the ſame, ꝓſented hym with a ꝓſent to the value of a.M.marke ſterlynge.

Upon a tuyſdaye beyng the kyꝛſte day of July, was foughten a batayll at Parys betwene two knyghtes / wherof the appellaunte was named ſyꝛ Foukes Doꝛciat, and the defendaũt ſyꝛ Maugot Mawbert. whych appellaunt

appellaũt was sore vered with a feuer quarteyne/by reason wherof and of the great hete that ỹ day appered, after longe syght the sayd appellaũt lyght from hys horse for hys refresshemẽt/wherfore hys frendes of hym were in great doute. But his enemye was also sore trauayled, ỹ what for hete & laboure he was also ouercome, & was lykely to haue fallen frõ hys horse/ and or he myght be taken downe he swowned & dyed.

Whan syr Fowkes was ware of ỹ feblenesse of hys enemye anon as he might he dressed hym on fote toward hys aduersary, & fande hym starke dede / whyche by ỹcẽce of the kynge was after had out of the feelde, and secretly buryed/& the sayde syr Fowkes for feblenesse was by hys frẽdes ladde vnto hys lodgyng.

In the .xii. yere of kynge Johñ & xxi. day of Nouembre, Phylyp duke of Burgoyn, erle of Artoys, of Aluerne, and of Boloygn, a chylde of the age of .xiiii. yeres or lesse, dyed at a town nere vnto Rome called Guyõ By reason of whose deth kyng Johñ as nerte heyre had after possession of al the sayd lãdes, & toke possiõ therof shortly after.

In the .xiiii. yere of the reygne of kyng Johñ & thyrd day of January/ he for specyall causes hym mouyng, as for the enlargyng of his sonne the duke of Orleaunce & other yet pledges for hys raũsome, toke shyppyng at Boloyne, & so sayled into Englãd, and arryued at Douer the .vi, day of the sayde moneth / and after rode to Eltham, and from thẽs was cõueyed vnto Lõdon, as before is shewed in the .xxxvii. yere of kyng Edward. In tyme of whose there beyng/ syr Barthã de Glaycon made warre vpõ the kynge of Nauerne, & wan from hym the towne of Mayunt in Normandy. And by the duke of Normãdy soone after was wonne from the sayd kyng the towne of Mẽlẽce. within ỹ which were taken dyuers Parysyens, that shortly after for theyr infidelite were put in execuciõ at Parys. And thus tyme warre betwene the kynges of Fraũce & Nauerne was newly begõ. Than kynge Johñ beyng as before is sayde in Englande/a greuous malady toke hym in the begynnynge of Marche, of the whyche he dyed at London vpõ the .viii. daye of Apryll folowynge/& so wyth great honoure and solempnyte cõueyed to the sees syde, and there shypped, & thã in processe caryed into Fraunce. Dethe of kynge Johñ

Where vpon the .vii. day of May, and yere of our lorde god .M.CCC. lxiiii. he was solempnely enterred in the monastery of saynt Denys / whã he had reygned .xiii. yeres .vii. monethes and odde dayes / leuynge after hym thre sonnes, that is to say Charles, whych was kyng after hym, Lewys, and Phylyp.



Arolus or Charles ỹ .vi. of that name or .v. after som writers, ỹ eldest sonne of kyng Johñ/ beganne hys reygne ouer the realme of Fraũce, the .ix. day of Apryll, in the begynnynge of the yere of our lorde god .M.CCC.lxiii and the .xxviii. yere of Edwarde the thre. iii. than kynge of Englande/and was crowned with dame Jane hys wyfe at Raynes the .xix. day of May folowynge

In thys fyrste yere syr Barthzan de Glaycon lyeutenaunt of the sayde Charles in Normãdy, fought with a cayptayne of the kynge of Nauerne named le Captall de Buesse, nere vnto a place called Cocherell, nere vnto the crosse of saynte Lyefroy/in The batayl of Cocherel

whiche kyght the sayd Captall was scomfited and great noumbre of his people taken and slayne, hym selfe chased & taken / for whome the frenche kynge gaue after vnto the sayde syr Barthã the Erledam of Longeuyle. And whã he had receyued him/ he sent him vnto a strõge prysoñ called the Merchy in Meaux.

At Myghelmas folowynge /the duke of Bretayne syr Charlys de Bloyes, and syr Johñ de Moũtfort sonne and heyre to the fore named sir Johñ Mountfordе before dede, whiche by a longe season bothe father & the sonne had holden warre with the sayd syr Charles, met in playne batayle/in ẏ which as before is shewed in the.xxviii.yere of kinge Edwarde, the sayde syr Charles was slayne & dyuers noble men of Fraunce with him. In the moneth of Juny and seconde yere of this Charlys, an other accorde was yet concluded atwene this Charles and the kynge of Nauerne. By reason of whiche accorde, the Captall of Buesse was clerely delyuered, and Maunt and Menlene agayne also to the kynge restored. And ouer that to the kynge of Nauerne was geuyn for a recompensement, the Erledome of Longeuyle, whiche as aboue is sayd the frenche kyng had gyuen vnto syr Barthzan de Glaycon, for to haue the Captall to his prisoner. And also to the sayde kynge of Nauerne was gyuen the lordshyppe of Mountpyller. And in the moneth of Februarу began the warre in Spayne, where prince Edwarde ayded Peter kyng of ẏ lande, as before is shewed i the.xl. and. xlii. yeres of kynge Edwarde.

In the.iiii.yere, the peace atwene the kynges of Englande & of Fraũce began to breke, by meanes of the erle of Armenake & other, as in the.xlii. yere of kynge Edwarde is before shewed. And in the moneth of Decembre and the sayd yere, the quene was lyghted of a man Chylde in the Hostell of sayne Paule / the whiche was after chrystened with excedynge solempnyte ouer other before passed, in the churche of saint Paule in Parys, the.vi. day of Decembre of the cardinal of Parys. To whome were godfathers the erles of Mountmerency and of Dampmartyn, & godmother Jane quene of Eurour/ and bare the name of Charlys after the erle of Mountmerency. In the .v. yere of this Charlys, he called his counsell of parlyament at Parys. Durynge the whiche, the appellacyons of the erle of armenake and other purposed ageyne prynce Edwarde, were publysshed and radde/ & the answeres of the said prince vpon the sayd appellacyons made, whiche I ouerpasse for lengthy of the mater. But the conclusyon was, that the prince had broken the peas and couenauntes of the same as they there demyd. wherfore all suche townes & holdes as the frenche kyng had gotten, he shulde them retayne/ & make warre vpon the kynge of Englande for the recouery of the other. where vpon kynge Charles in the moneth of July folowyng, rode vnto Roan, and there rygged his naure / entendynge as sayth the frenche history, to haue made warre vpon Englãd/ and to haue sent thyther his yongest brother Philippe than duke of Burgoyne with a stronge armye. But whyle he was there besyed about his purpose/the duke of Lancastre arryued with a strong power at Caleys/ and so passed to Tyrwyn, & so vnto Ayr. wherfore kynge Charlys then chaunged his purpose, and sent his sayde brother into those pties. Then by that season that ẏ sayd duke was prepared with hys people / the englisshemen

glyſſhemen were compn vnto Arde. And the frenche men ſpedde them in ſuche wyſe, that they logged thē the xviii. day of Auguſte vpon the moū-tayne of Tournehawe nere vnto Arde/ſo that both hooſtes were lodgyd within an englyſſhe myle. Atwene whom were dayly bekeringes and ſmall ſkyrmyſſhes. All whyche ſeaſon the Frenche kyng taryed ſtyll aboute Rowan.

Than the kyng of Nauerne, whiche by a longe ſeaſon had dwellyd in Nauerne, came by ſhyppe into Conſtantyne /and ſent vnto kynge Charlys ꝑ if he were ſo pleaſed, he wolde gladly come vnto hym for to ſhewe to him his mynde. wherfore the kyng ſent vnto hym as hoſtagys, the erle of Saleburge, the deane of Parys, with. ii. other noble men/the whyche the kynge of Nauerne wolde nat accepte. In the moneth of Septembre and vpon the. xii. day/when the duke of Burgoyne had lyen as before is ſayd nere vnto the englyſſhe hooſte, he that day remoued his people, and ſo went vnto Yelden. And the Engliſſhe hooſt remoued to Caux & other places, as before I haue ſhewed to you in the. xliii. yere of kynge Edwarde, with other thynges apperteyninge vnto the ſame mater. And in the ſayd moneth of Septembre, kynge Charles manned and vitayled certayne galeys & other ſhyppes/ and ſent them into walys, and ſo to haue entred into Englāde. But they retourned with lytle worſhippe/natwithſtandynge that he had. ii. noble men of walys named Owan and James wynne, whiche made to hym falſe promeſſe of great thynges, by reaſon that they were enemyes vnto the kyng of Englande. For this and for other charges, the kynge called a conuocacyon of the temporalte and ſpiritualte at Parys, where to mayntayne hys warres, was graunted to hym of all thynge bought & ſolde excepte vitayle, the. iiii. peny/ſo that all thynge that was ſolde by retayle, the ſeller ſhuld pay the exaccion/and that whyche was ſolde by greate, the byer ſhulde paye the ſayd exaccion. And the ſpiritualte graunted a dyme to be payed in. ii. halfe yeres. And the lordes and gentylmen were ſtynted at a certaintye, after the value of theyr landes. In the moneth of February, the kyng ſent vnto the kynge of Nauerne than beynge at Chierbourgth certayne meſſyngers, to perfyght an ampte atwene them, leſte he toke party agayne hym with the Englyſſhemen. But thys treatye contynued a longe ſeaſon/ſo that i the. vi. yere & moneth of June, the kynge of Nauerne hauyng ſufficient hoſtages, came to the frenche kynge to Uernon. where in concluſion the kynge of Nauerne made his homage vnto the frenche kyng, and became there his feodary/wherof the Frenchemen made moche ioye. After whiche accorde / the ſayde kynge of Nauerne the thirde day folowing toke his leaue of the kynge, and ſo rode vnto Eureux. All which ſeaſon ꝑ warre was cōtynued by Engliſſhe men within the realme of Fraunce & prouince of Brytayne, as before is expreſſed in the. xliiii. xlv. xlvi. yeres of kynge Edwarde.

In the. vii. yere and moneth of Auguſte / the duke of Braban with many nobles of Fraunce, mette in playne batayll with ꝑ duke of Juilliers & the duke of Guellre. In which batayll after cruell fyght, the duke of Braban was chaſed/and vpō his ſyde ſlayne the erle of ſaynt Poule, with many other noble men, whiche the ſtory nameth nat. And vpon the other ſyde was alſo ſlayne the duke of Guellre, with many other vpon

that

that partye.

In the.xi.yere of kyng Charles a moneth of Maye / he assembled his great coũsell of parlyament at Parys. where amonge many actes made for ỹ weale of his realme / he with assente of his lordes and cõmons there assembled, enacted for a lawe after that day to be contynued, that al heyres to ỹ crowne of Fraũce theyr fathers beynge dede, may be crowned as kynges of Fraunce so soone as they attayned vnto the age of.xiii.yeres. And in this yere was the treatye of peace laboured by the two cardynalles sent from the pope, as before is shewed in the.xlix.yere of kynge Edwarde. After whyche treatye nat concluded / the kynge of Englande loste dayly of hys landes in Fraunce. For in the moneth of August folowyng, ỹ duke of Berry, the duke of Angeo, and many other lordes to them assygned in dyuers places, as in Guyan, Angeo, and Mayne / gate and wanne from the Englysshemen many coũtreys, townes, and castels / as Pierregort, Rouerge, Caoursyn, Bigorre, Balyndas, Berregart, Daimet / with many other townes and holdes, whyche wolde aske a lõge leysour to reherce, to the noumbre of.vi.score and.xiiii. what of townes, castelles, and other holdes / whiche in shorte whyle were wonne frome the Englysshemen, in the parties of Fraunce and Bretayne.

Of what age the heyre to the crown of Fraũce shuld be crowned.

In the.xiii.yere of this Charles / the Emperour of Rome & Almayne named Charles the.iiii. of that name, came into Fraũce by Cambray, to do certayne pylgrymages at saint Denys and elles where / and so was conueyed with honorable men, as the lorde of Coucy and other, vnto saynt Quintyne / where he taryed Chrystmas daye. And after he was conueyed to a towne called En of Ewe / and from thẽce to Noyen, and than to Compeygne / where he was mette with the duke of Burbon and other nobles. Than he rode to Senlys / where he was mette with the dukes of Berry and of Burgoyne, bretherne of the Frenche kynge, and many other, as bisshoppes and other lordes. And ye shall vnderstande that all suche as rode in the companyes of these forsayde dukes, except bysshops and prestes, rode in theyr iuereys. As the companye fyrste of the duke of Burbon brother vnto the quene, to the noumbre of. CCC. men, were all cladde in whyte and blewe. The company of the.ii.other dukes, the noumbre of.v.C. men, in blacke and russet / that is to meane the erles and other lordes in clothe of golde, the knyghtes in veluet, the gentylmen in damaske and sattyn, and the yemen in clothe. Thanne from Senlys he was brought vnto Louuris / where mette with hym the duke of Barre, with a companye of CC. horse, and his company cladde in grene and redde. And from thens he was had to saynte Denys vpon the thyrde day of January / whither the king sent to him a chayre richely garnysshed, for so moche as he was vexed with the goute. And the quene sente to hym an horse lytter with.ii. whyte palfreys: where he was also mette with a great companye of bysshoppes and other spirituall men, as abbottes, priours, and other / and taryed there.ii.dayes.

Upon the.v.day of January beynge monday, he rode towarde Parys. But or he were halfe a myle frõ saynte Denys, he was mette with the prouoste of the marchauntes, with a cõpany of.xv.C. horse, ỹ cytezens being cladde in whyte and violette / and so rodde before hym tyll

he

he came to Parys. whan the kynge was warned that he was nere the cite, he lepte vpon a whyte palfrey/ and accompanied with many lordes and other to the noumbre of a. M. men, all his housholde seruauntes beyng cladde i one liuerey of browne blewe and darke tawny, and the seruauntes of the dolphyn of Vyen in blewe and cremesyne euery man after his degree / and so the kyng with his company mette with the emperour at the mylle without the towne called the wynde mylle. where after due salutes made eyther vnto other/ the Frenche king put the Emperour vpon his ryght hande, and toke the kynge of Romaynes sonne vnto the emperour vpon his lyfte hande. And so the Frenche kynge rydinge in the myddes, passed thorough the hygh stretes of Paris tyll they came to the kingz palays. where he was lodged with all honoure/ & after feested with the kinge and the quene by the space of .xvi. dayes. whiche terme endyd, like as with all honoure he was conueyed into the lande / so with great honour and ryche gyftes he was agayne conueyed out of the lande.

In the moneth of Febzuarye folowynge and the. vi. daye, dyed the quene of Fraunce in the hostell of sayntPoule in Parys/and after buryed with great solempnyte and honoure in the monastery of sayntDenys. In the moneth of Marche the kynge receyued letters from certeyn lordes of hys lande/ in the whyche was conteygned that the kynge of Nauerne had imagened and conspired with one Jaquet de rue his chãberlayne, for to poyson hym/the whiche Jaquet was than comyn into Fraunce to execute his cursed purpose. wherfore the Frenche kynge layed suche wayte for hym, that he was taken/ and founden vpon hym a byll of certayne instruccions, howe he shulde behaue hym selfe in accomplysshyng his euyll purpose. Than he was brought vnto the kinges presence/to whome he confessed the circumstaunce of all his treason to be done at the commaundement & counsell of the kyng of Nauerne. Soone after the eldest sonne of the kynge of Nauerne, whiche was newely comyn into Normandy, sent vnto kinge Charles/shewynge to hym that if it were his pleasure, he wolde gladlye come vnto hys presence for to speke with hym/with that he myght haue a sure safeconduyt for hym, and all suche as he shulde brynge with him. The whiche to hym was graunted/ and vpõ the same came vnto Melys where the kynge than was. And after he had comoned a season with ỹ kynge / he made to hym requeste for the delyuere of the forsaid Jaket de Rue/layenge for hym sondrye excuses. But whanne the kynge hadde caused the sayd Jaket to be brought forthe before the sayde sonne of the kynge of Nauerne named syr Charlys/he auouched suche thynges before hym that he coude nat denaye, but that his father had commytted many and sondry treasons, aswell agayne kynge Johñ as nowe agayne kyng Charles hys sonne. wherfore after diuers assembles and counsels hadde vpon this matter / the kynge and the said sir Charles agreed, that all suche townes and holdes as the sayd kynge of Nauerne had within Normandy, shulde be delyuered vnto ỹ duke of Burgoyne to the Frenche kynges vse. And for that pmesse shulde be truely parfourmed/ỹ kinge firste sware the said syr Charles/and after many of the capitaynes whyche had the rule of the sayd townes and castelles. And for so moche as the sayd syr Charles had there presente

with

with hym a capitayne named sir Fernande de Oyens, in whose guyding many of the sayde holdes than were, and suspected him that he wolde nat performe the sayd promesse / therfore he caused hym to be arested, and to be had vnto prison, tyll the holdes beynge vnder hys guydynge were clerely deliuered. Upon which agrement thus concluded and swore / ꝑ duke of Burgoyne with the sayd sir Charles and the sayd syr Fernande as a prisoner was sent into Normandye, with a conuenyent army. where wyth awe and fauoure the duke in processe of tyme had to hym delyuered, all suche townes and holdes as the kynge of Nauerne there had / excepte the towne and castell of Chirebourgth. In whiche passe tyme and season was also taken in a towne called Bretnell, a secretary to the kyng of Nauerne, with certayne wrytynges beynge in a coffer within the chambre. By reason of whiche wrytynges, and also by the confessyon of the partye / many mo thynges concernyng the confessyon of Jaket de Rue was than manifested and approued: which secretary was named maister Peter de Tertre a frenchman borne. But he had serued the kynge of Nauerne by the more terme of hys lyfe. Upon this confessyon made and wrytten by the sayde secretary / the kinge called his court of parlyament. Duryng whiche, bothe the said maister Peter and also the sayd Jaket, were brought before the lordes and commons. where theyr confessyons were redde, & they examyned vpon euery artycle of the same, and affyrmed all theyr former sayenges. wherefore shortely after by auctoryte of that court, they were demed to dye for theyr treasons / and so were hangyd and hedyd, and theyr. viii. quarters hangyd at sondry gates and places of Parys. And whan the kyng had receyued into his possession the forsayde holdes belongynge vnto the kynge of Nauerne, the whiche so often had rebelled agayne his father & hym / he was counselled by his lordes that he shulde throwe to grounde diuers of the sayd castelles / lest ꝑ king of Nauerne them recouered agayne, and by meane of theyr forces worke vnto hym and his realme newe displeasures. By reason of which counsell, the kynge made euen with the grounde these fortresses folowynge. Fyrst the castell of Bretnell, of Dorlet, of Beaumoũt le Roger, of Pacy Dampet and cloysters of the same / the towre & castell of Nogent le roy, the castell of Eurour, the castell of Pount Andemer, the castell of Mortaygne, and of Ganraur or Ganray, with other in the countrey of Constantyne. But the towne of Chirebourgth remayned styll in the possessyon of the Nauarops / the whiche with ayde of Englysshe men was kept from the frenche kynge. And the forenamed syr Farnande was contrymaũded to prison, for so moch as he was captaine of ꝑ same towne / thinkynge in hym defaute that the sayd towne was nat delyuered with the other.

‡ A scysme begonne in the churche of Rome.

In the. xiiii. yere of this Charles and moneth of August / tythinges came vnto him of the scisme whiche was begonne in the churche of Rome. For after the dethe of the xi. Gregory whiche dyed in the moneth of Aprill fore passed / by meane of the frenche cardynalles whyche were. xi. in noumbre, after the other Italyen cardynalles wyth other of theyr affinite had elected and chosen a Napolytane and archebysshoppe of Barre, the frenche cardynalles with the election nat beynge contented,

ted, wyth ſuch as fauoured theyr par
tye, denounced and publyſſhed one
named Robert cardynall of Baſyle,
and named hym Clemēt ỹ.vii, where
the fyrſt was named Vrban ỹ.vi. Of
the maner of thys ſcyſme ſome what
I haue ſhewed to you in the.lii. yere
of Edwarde the.iii. But to expreſſe ỹ
certaynty of thys ſcyſme/trouth it is
that after ỹ deth of the forenamed.xi.
Gregory, the cardynalles beyng in ỹ
cōclaue or coūſayll chaumbre where
the pope is accuſtomed to be choſen/
ỹ Romayns beyng in harneſſe made
ſuche exclamacions vpon the cardy-
nalles beyng in ỹ cōclaue for to haue
an Italiā pope, ỹ the cardynalles for
fere to be ſlayn elected and chaſe one
named Bartholmew a Napolytan &
archebyſſhop of Barre, & named Vr-
bā the.vi. But thys after he was ad-
mytted was ſo proude & ſo cōbrous,
that he ruled all by wyll & nothynge
by right or goodly ordre of reaſon or
cōſcyence. wherfore the cardynalles
beyng repētaunt of ỹ they had done/
a certayne of them in the cytye of Fō
des, the.xx. day of Septembre elected
& chaſe an other named Roberte car-
dynall of Baſyle, and named hi Cle-
ment the.vii/and by theyr auctorites
publyſſhed hym for very pope, & dyſ-
alowed that other before choſē. But
the Romaynes wolde nat thereunto
be agreable/but helde thē vnto theyr
former pope. wyth whome alſo helde
ỹ prouinces of Germany & Pānony,
with ỹ more parte of Italy. And with
the laſte choſen pope, helde Fraunce,
Spayne, Catelonye, & Englād. And
thus began ỹ ſcyſme, whyche contyn-
nued by the terme of.xxxix. yere after.
In the.xv. yere of kynge Charles, he
for ſo moche as syr Johū de Moūt-
forte duke of Brytayne, toke partye
wyth the Englyſhemē agayn hym, &
wolde nat apere at ſuch dayes as to
hym were aſſygned / therfore ỹ kynge
kyng Charles ſent into the duchy of
Brytayn to ſeaſe ỹ lande into ỹ kyn-
ges hādes, the duke of Burbō, syr Le
wys de Sācer marſhall of Fraunce,
syr Johanne de Vyenne admyrall of
Fraūce, & syr Beriā de Ryuyer hys
chāberleyne, wyth other mē of name,
with a great cōpany of mē of armes/
the whych at theyr cōmyng into Bry
tayne kāde ỹ countrey all otherwyſe
dyſpoſed thā they ſuppoſed. For
where as they at theyr comyng thou-
ght to haue receyued ỹ poſſeſſiō of ỹ
townes & caſtelles in peaſyble wyſe/
they were denayed & playnly anſwe-
red, ỹ they were ſworn to theyr duke
to bere to hym trew fidelite & ſeruice/
which they entēded to obſerue & kepe
wyth whych anſwere ỹ ſayde duke &
hys company were fayne to returne
vnto ỹ French kynge. The whyche
ſhortly after ſent thyder ỹ duke of An
geou with a strōge army to warre vp
pon the coūtrey. In whych ſeaſon syr
Johū de Moūtfort heryng of ỹ frēch
kynges entēt, arryued in Brytayne
wyth a cōpany of Englyſhe archers.
To whome drewe ſuch multitude of
Brytons, ỹ the duke of Angeou was
fayn to retourne into Fraunce with-
out worſhyp there thā wynnyng.

In the moneth of Octobre the Fle
mynge of Gaūt & other, for greuous
exaccyon vpō thē ſet, rebelled agayn
theyr erle/ & ſlew hys bayly & offycer
aſſigned by ỹ erle to gather his tolles
& after beſyeged other townes which
toke party with ỹ erle agayne thē, as
Audenarde, Terremonde & other.
wherof heryng ỹ duke of Burgoyn,
whoſe doughter the ſayd duke hadde
maryed/aſſembled hys Burgonyōs
& ſped hym into the marchys of Flan
ders, and ſo layed hys ſyege vnto
Tourney. But the Flemynges defen
ded the duke in ſuche wyſe, that the
duke was agreable to fal to a treaty.
In the whyche it was fyrſt accorded

and agreed, that the erle at ỹ requeſt of the duke, ſhulde pardō & forgyue clerely to hys ſubiectes, all offences by them to hym done before ỹ day / & alſo ỹ he ſhuld graunt vnto them all theyr former lyberties & preuyleges, in as ample & large wyſe as they had them graūted at hys fyrſte cōmynge in / & maynteyn & vpholde theyr auncyent cuſtomes, & to rule theym after the ſame. Secondarily, if any letters haue ben made & ſealed cōtrary theyr preuyleges ſen ỹ tyme of thys rebellyon, that the erle ſhall reuoke theym & cancell them for euer. Thyrdely, ỹ all ſuche capytaynes of Almayne as at thys tyme haue ben in ỹ dukes or erles wagys agayn the Flemynges, ſhalbe ſolemply ſworne, that for any hurt or harme by them in thys warre receyued / they nor none of theyr nacion as farre as they may lette it, ſhal nat hurt nor harme any man of ỹ coūtrey of Flaunders at any tyme here after in reuengemēt of thys warre. And ſo fourthly, that of .viii. of ỹ beſt townes of Flaūders, xxv. men to be choſen by the burgeſys of the ſame, the whych ſhall haue correccion of al defautes nat touchynge lyfe & dethe done by ỹ Flemynges / & alſo to haue power to correcte all ſuch as be foūd culpable of the erles counſayll, in cō playntes or offences crymynall. Fyrſtly that the ſayde .xxv. perſones ſhall haue auctorite and power, to make inquyſycyon from yere to yere of the gouernaunce of the lande / and what fawtes ben to them preſented, as often as .xiii. of theym be ſyttynge togyther in one counſayll, they ſhal haue full power to gyue ſentēce vppon the ſame / & that ſētēce to be obeyed without interrupcīō. And what by theym is ſentēſed / the erle to vpholde and maynteyne wyth all hys myghte and power. Syrtely it was deſyred but nat concluded, that for ſo moch as ỹ town of Audenarde & of Terremoūd toke party agayn theyr neyghbours, that the walles of theym in certayne places ſhuld be euened with ỹ groūd, in token of theyr vnnaturall dealyng. And ſeuently & laſtly it was cōcluded that the prouoſt of Bruges ſhuld after ỹ daye be put out of the erles coūſayll / and nat after therunto to be admytted wythout cōſent of the forenamed .xxv. perſones. All whych artycles were agreed vnto by the erle, & paſſed & auctoryſed by hys lettre & ſeale / all be it thys accorde cōtynued no whyle, as here after ſhall apere.

In the .xvi. yere & moneth of Octobre the inhabytauntes of the cyty / or towne of Mountpyller, in the countrey of Languedoke, for an impoſicīō or ayde that was put to them by the duke of Angeou, aroſe by one accord agayne ỹ mynyſters & counceyllours of the duke (whyche duke was lewtenaunt generall vnder hys brother the Frenche kyng) and wythout reaſon or dyſcrecyō, in theyr furye and rage ſlewe ſyr Guyllyam Poncell knyght and chaunceller to the duke, ſyr Guy Deſſerpke ſtuarde of Rouergue, mayſter Arnolde gouernour of Mountpyller, mayſter James de Chainy ſecretary to the duke, & many other offycers and ſeruauntes of the ſayde duke, to the noūbre of .lxxx. perſones. And whā they had them ſlayn, as tyrauntes natte beynge contente wyth that cruelneſſe, they threwe the dede bodyes into dyuerſe foule and ſtynkynge pyttes / nat ſufferynge thē to be buryed as cryſtē men ſhulde.

wherof whā knowlege was brought vnto ỹ duke, he was therewyth greuouſly amoued / and made hys othe that he ſhulde punyſſhe theym to the fere and example of all other / and therupō gathered hys people for to reuenge thys cruel dede. whan the rumour of thys myſcheuouſe dede

was

was some deale apeased, and ꝑ wyse men & auncyent of the towne had digested thys hasty and cruel dede, & loked vpon the ende therof / than they were appalled in theyr myndes, and were very repētaunt of the dede that they had done. And whan they had consydered all thynges, as the dede detestable of it selfe, the great myght of the duke, & ouer ꝑ the ayde whych shuld to hym be gyuen of the kynge/ they cōcepued well there was no remedy but to seche for meanes of mercye & grace. For opteynynge whereof they made dyuers ways to the duke/ but none wold be accepted Lastely in the moneth of January, whā ꝑ duke had prepayred all thynges necessary to the warre/ he toke hys iournay towarde the sayd towne of Moūpyler, ledyng wyth hym a stronge hoste of men of armys / vtterly entēdynge to subuerte that towne, & to dystroye ꝑ more parte of the people. whereof herynge the people of the towne, toke theyr aduyce & ordered them as foloweth. Fyrst they sent out agayn hym dyuers offycers of the kynges suche as they knewe were in hys fauoure/ and ordeyned them to be in a place, & there knelynge to aske grace & mercy for the towne. Secondarily they sent the cardynall of Albany / & thyrdely all the collages and mē of religiō as well nunnys as other/ and fourthly they sent the estudyaūtes of the lawe canon and cyuyle, and also of medycyne or phylyke/ all beynge set vpon eyther syde of the waye where ꝑ duke shuld passe, & knelynge vppon theyr knees, shulde crye wythout ceasynge mercy gracyous pryncemercy. Thā after these were set the consuls or rulers of ꝑ towne, in gownys without theyr clokes vngyrde, euery mā with a corde aboute hys necke, haynge wyth thē the keys of the cytie. And at the entre of ꝑ cytye, stode the women wyth ꝑ maydēs of the same/ & all men chylderne whych were vnder the age of .xiii. yeres. And betwene that age & .vi. yeres, were set next after the studyaūtes foresayd. whan this innumerable people was thus ordered, and eueryche taughte in what wyse they shuld behaue them/ vpō the .xxv. day of January about the houre of .iii., ꝑ duke wyth his people approched the towne/ & beholdynge the multytude and the lamentable crye, was somewhat moued wyth compassyō/ and so holdyng hys way, mette wyth ꝑ sayd cardynall. The whyche after connenpēt salutaciō vnto hym made, shewed that as a legate & messynger he was sent vnto hym frō the pope Clemēt the .vii., requyrynge of hym pardō for the towne and peple of Moūtpiller/ admonestynge hym farther in the sayd popes behalfe, that what so euer punyshemēt he dyd vnto the towne, ꝑ he shuld absteyne hym from ꝑ shedynge of crystē blode, and specyally of suche as he myght knowe was innocēt of ꝑ dede. To whyche message the duke gaue none answer/ but toke the cardynall vppon hys right hāde, and so rode forth togyder. where euer the people kneled on eyther syde of ꝑ way, and cryed lamētably, mercy gracious pryncemercy/ and so passed tyll he came where ꝑ cōsuls stode; whiche knelyng offered vnto hym the keyes of ꝑ towne. But he as though he regarded thē nat, cast hys loke frō thē & cōmaūded ꝑ seneschal of Beaucayr to receyue ꝑ sayd keys/ & so passed on tyll he came vnto ꝑ cōpany of womē, whych relēted his stony hert to se the great lamētaciō they made with theyr wofull crye. wherefore to be ryddē of thē, he called vpon his fore ryders to passe on more faster/ so that lastly he came to hys lodgynge.

When the duke was comen vnto his lodgynge / anon he com-

‡ A terrible iugement of punyssmēt and execucyon.

maunded all the offycers of the towne with the consulat or rulers of ỹ same vnto a place called sayne Germayne, & the gates of that place he toke to be watched wyth men of armes/ & vpon the morowe folowynge, commaūded all the armoure & artylery belōgyng vnto the towne, to be broughte to a place by hym assygned, & there to be kept by hys offycers. Than the cardinall came agayn vnto the duke, and brought with hym dyuers doctours of diuinite & other, which made vnto hym assyduat labour for mercy to be shewed vnto the towne & to the inhabytauntes of the same. But all they coude get no graūt of hym, but ỹ as vpon ỹ morowe they shuld know the sentēce that he wolde gyue vpon the towne and inhabitaūtes of the same. And for ỹ sentēce myght be well vnderstāden of the people, he cōmaūded ỹ at after noone a scaffolde shulde be made in the chefe place or strete of the towne. wherupō the morowe beynge the.xxvii. day of January/ dyuers of the dukes coūsayll beyng vpō ỹ sayd scaffolde, & the people of the town beynge there present as well prysoners as other, after a longe oracion made by the dukes chaūceler of the greate & heynous dede lately there done by the inhabytaūtes of that towne, for ỹ whych correccyon temporall myghte nat be to greuouse / all be it that the duke at the commaundemente of the pope, & requeste of hys legat & cardynall there present, had mytygate or lessed the punyshmēt, as after shuld well apere by declaracyon of the sentence folowynge / after whych protestacion, the sentēce was proclaymed as foloweth.

Fyrste the comynaltye of the town for they rebellyon & dysobedience agayne they prynce done, shuld paye vnto ỹ kyng. vi. score. M. frankes, & a franke is worth. ii. s. sterl. And so ỹ towne shulde be charged wyth. lx. M li. ‡ And ouer that to paye all such costes & charges, as the duke had spent by occasyon of thys iournay. Secondaryly. vi. hundreth persones of the towne such as myght be tryed moste culpable in thys offence, shuld suffre deth. That is to wytte. ii. C. to be hanged with chaynes. ii. C. to be beheded & they hedes to be sent vnto dyuers good townes of Fraūce / & the other ii. C. suche as of ỹ. vi. C. shalbe found moste gyltye of the begynnynge of that ryot, shuld be brēt / & that they & also the other. ii. C. whyche shulde be hāged shuld be caryed vnto dyuerse good townes of Fraunce, & there to haue they execucyō, to the vtter fere and terrour of all other/ and all they goodes to be forfayted to the kynge. Thyrdely two gates of ỹ towne such as the duke wolde appoynt, with the walles & towres standynge betwene ỹ sayd gates, to be made playne with the grounde/ & the dyke of the towne to be be fylled wyth ỹ same. Fourthly all maner of ordenaunce & apparymēntes for warre belonging to the town, to be forfayted vnto ỹ kyng. Fyftely, the comynalty of the cytye to buylde a chapell, and to endowe it wyth so mocheldāde as myght fynde. vi. preestes there in to synge for euer, and to praye for the soules of the persones before slayne. And the bodyes whych they had throwē before into the foule and stynkyng pyttes / the counsayll and chyefe rulers of the towne, shuld vppon they propre backes bryngе theym vnto the sayde chappell, and there cause theym solemply to be enterred. Syxtly, that all such goodes as the sayde persones so slayne hadde wythin the town, or elles were spoyled by the sayde cytezeyns / that it shulde be restored vnto the wyues or nexte kynnesfolkes of theym so dede, whan the proclamacyon of this sentence

sentence was ended, there was an exclamacyō & crye̅nge of mercy/& suche sorowe & lame̅tyng made of ỳ peple, that the noyse therof soū̃ded to the heuens. But to bryng thys tragedy to conclusyon/ fynally suche laboure was made vnto the duke, aswell by exortacyō of sermons & other, that al thynges were pardoned, excepte the foū̃dacyon of the chapell/ & execucyō of certayne persones, which were accused to be the occasyoners of thys myschiefe/ and also the costes of that iournay, ỳ which were cessed at .xxiii M. frākys or .xxiii. C. li. sterlynges. After whych ende thus made/the cōsulatz of ỳ town were restored agayn to theyr habyte & rule / and to theym was admytted all former offices and rule of the towne, except the office of baylywyke.

In the moneth of July began the inhabytauntes of Gaūt in Flaūders to rebell agaynethey̅r erle of newe/ ỳ cause wherof is nat shewed. But they wyth ayde, whych they had of Ipre, Courtray, and other townes, made a great hoste / & yode strepyghte vnto a towne in Flaūders called Dyxmew, entendyng to haue take̅ it. But ỳ erle beyng warned therof / wyth ayde of Bruges & of Frāk and other, mā̃ed out a company agayn the other, and mette with them in playne felde/ and after a sharpe skyrmysshe, put theym of Gaūt to flyght, & slewe of them dyuers, & toke of them certayne prysoners/ & pursued them vnto the town of Ipre, and layed syege to the same. whan the heddes of the towne knew that the erle was there in proper parsone/ vnder a certayne apoyntement they opened the gates, and receyued hym in. But many of hys enemyes were fled vnto Courtray. And whan the erle had rested hym in ỳ towne .ii. dayes, & done there some execucyō/ he departed thēs and rode vnto Bruges and helde hym there. In whyche season the other whych as aboue is sayd were fled vnto Courtray / fell at varyaunce within theym selfe, & slewe theyr capytayne/ & after fled ỳ towne & shyfted euery man for hym selfe. Than a knyght called syr Soyer of Gaūt, came vnto the towne of Courtray/ and so exorted the rulers of the towne, ỳ they promysed hym to take hys parte. wherupon he gate a baner of the erles armes in hys hande/ and so rydynge aboute that towne cryed, who that wolde take the erles party & hys, lette hym folowe that baner/ whome the people folowed in greate noumber. And whā ỳ erle was asserteyned of that dede, & howe the town of Courtray was tourned vnto hys party / anone he assembled of other townes, & also of that, and of Ipre, so moche that hys hoste was estemed at lx. M. mē. wyth the whiche he spedde hym vnto Gaunte, & layed a stronge syege there about. But by the deth of the French kyng whych dyed shortly after, the erle was fayne to chaunge hys mynde, & to remoue hys syege or elles, as some wryters reporte, for strength of the sayde towne, whyche myght nat lyghtly begotte̅, for lacke of good vpon ỳ erles partye to mayntayne that syege. Thā in the moneth of Septembre and .xxvi. daye of the same/ kynge Charles dyed at his manor called playsance sur Marne / & was buryed by his wyfe in the monastery of saynt Denys, whan he had reygned .xv. yeres and .vi. monethes wyth odde dayes/ leuynge after hym iii. sonnes, Charles which was kyng after hym, and Lewys that he hadde made erle of Valoys and after duke of Angeowe, and Phylyppe erle of Poytyers.

Dethe of kyng Charles.

¶ *Anglia.*

RIchard the second of that name, and sonn of prynce Edwarde eldest sonn of Edwarde þ .iii, a chyld of þ age of a.xi.yeres, begāne hys reygne ouer þ realme of England, þ.xxii. day of Juny in the yere of our lorde.M.CCC. xxvii/ & the.xiii.yere of the.vi. Charles than kyng of Fraunce. This Rychardе was borne at Burdeaux / of whose byrthe some writers tell wonders, the whyche I passe ouer.

And vpon the.xv.daye of July in the yere aboue sayd he was crowned at westmynster beyng the daye of the translacyon of saynt Swythyn. In whyche tyme & season stoode Mayre & shyrues of the cytye of Lōdon these persones folowynge.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxvii. Grocer. Nycholas Brembre.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxviii. Andrewe Pykman.

Anno.i. Nycholas Twyfforde.

THe whyche contynued so in theyr offyces, that is to saye þ shyrues tyll Myghelmas, & þ mayre tyl the feest of Symon and Jude. At whyche season were chosen & admytted newe offycers.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxviii. Grocer. Johñ Philpot.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxix. Johñ Bosebam.

Anno.ii. Thomas Cornwaleys.

IN the moneth of August & begynnynge of the secōde yere of kyng Rychard/ for varyaunce which was betwene the lorde Latymer & sir Rafe Ferrers vpō that one partye, & syr Robert Hal & Shakerley esquyer vpon that other partye, for a prysoner taken beyōde the see in Spayne, called the lorde of Dene, whome the sayd esquyers helde in theyr possessiō contrary the wylles of the forsayde knyghtes / for the sayde cause þ sayd knyghtes entred the churche of saint Petyr, and there fyndyng þ sayd syr Robert kneelynge at masse, wythoute reuerence of the sacrament or place, slewe hym in the churche at þ hyghe masse seasō/ & after that other named Shakerley was by theyr meanes arested and lad to the towre of London, where he was kepte as prysoner longe after.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxix. Grocer. Johñ Hadley.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxx. Johñ Heylysdone.

Anno.iii. wyllyam Baret.

IN the moneth of May & the later ende of the seconde yere of kynge Rychardе / certayne Galeys and other shyppes sente by Charles the syxte than kynge of Fraunce, of the whych was chefe patron or cappytayne a knyghte named syr Olyuer de Clycon/ landed in dyuerse places of Englande and dyd moche harme, & lastly entred the ryuer of Thamis, and so

and so came to Graueſende where he ſpoyled the towne and brent a parte thereof and retourned into Fraunce with moche ryches ſe as affermeth the Frenche cronycle. In this yere also was holden a parlyamente at weſtmynſter/in the which was graunted that all men & women beynge of the age of.xiiii.yeres and aboue, ſhulde paye vnto the kynge.iiii.ð. By reaſon whereof great grudge and murmure grewe amonge the commons as after ſhall appere. Than with ꝑ money an armye was prepared/ and thereof was made cheke gouernoure ſyr Thomas of woodſtoke erle of Cambrydge and vncle vnto ꝑ kyng. The whiche with a company of. vii. or.viii.M. as teſtifyeth the Frenche cronycle, paſſed ꝑ water of Summe, in the begynnynge of Auguſte, and alſo begynnynge of the thyrde yere of kynge Rycharde / and ſo came to Soyſons, and paſſed the ryuers of Oyſe and of Marne and other / & ſo went before Troys and wanne it/ and after lodged them atwene newe towne and Sens. And euer as they paſſed the countreys, other they toke great fynaunces, or elles fyred the townes as they went. And all be it that the Frenche kynge hadde ſente agayne them an armye of Frenchemen to withſtande them, they letted them nothinge of theyr purpoſe/ but and they had any ſkyrmyſſhes with them, the Frenchemen were put vnto the worſe/ſo that they bette them & toke of them dyuers pryſoners, and raunſomed them at theyr pleaſures. And thus holdynge theyr iourneye, they paſſed by the countrey of Gaſtinoys, and ſo into Bretayne / where they were ioyouſly receyued of ſyr Johñ de Mountforde duke of that prouince than newly comyn thyther.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxx. Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxxi.

Fyſſhemonger walter Doket.

wyllyam walworthe. Anno.iiii.

wyllyam Knyghthode.

IN this Mayres yere and ende of the thyrde yere of kyng Rycharde, towarde the ſomer ſeaſon in dyuers places of the lande the commons aroſe ſodainly, and ordeyned to them rulers and capytaynes/and ſpecially in Kent & Eſſex. The whiche named their leders, Jacke ſtraw wyllwawe, watte Tyler, Jacke Shepeherde, Tomme Myller, & Hobbe Carter. Theſe vnruled companye gathered vnto them great multitude of the commons/& after ſpedde them towarde the cytie of London, and aſſembled them vpon Blacke hethe in Kent, within.iii.myles of Lõdon. And vppon corpus Chriſti daye beynge thanne the.xi. daye of June, they entred the Towre of London/ and there the kynge beynge thanne lodged, toke frome thens parforce mayſter Sudberye than archebyſſhoppe of Caunterbury, ſyr Robert Halys lorde or pryour of ſaynte Johannes, and a whyte frere cõfeſſour vnto the kynge. whiche.iii.perſones with houge noyſe & crye they ladde vnto the Hylle of the ſayde Towre and ſmote of theyr heddes. And whan they hadde ſo done, they returned into Suthewarke by botes and barges, & there ſlewe and robbed all ſtraungers tha they myghte fynde. And that done they wente to weſtmynſter, & toke with them all maner of Seyntwarymen/& ſo came vnto ꝑ duke of Lãcaſters place ſtanding without ꝑ Temple barre called Sauoye, & ſpoyled that was therin/ and after ſette it vpon a fyre, and

brent it. And from thens they yode vnto ỹ hede place of sayne Johñs in Smythefelde, & dispoiled that place in lyke wyse. Than they entred the citye, and serched the temple & other Innes of courte, and spoyled theyr places & brent theyr bokes of lawe / and slewe as many men of lawe and questmongers as they myght fynde. And that done they went to sayne Martyns the Graunde, & toke with them all sayntwary men, and the prisoners of Newgate, Ludgate, & of bothe counters / and distroyed theyr registers and bokes / and in like maner they dyd with the prysoners of the Marshalsy and kinges benche in Southwerke.

whan Jacke Strawe had thus done all thyng at his wyll, & sawe ỹ no resistence was made agayne him / he was smytten with so houge a presumpcion, that he thought no man his pere. And so beynge enflamed with ỹ presumpcion & pryde / he rode vnto the Towre where ỹ kyng was, beynge smally accompanyed of hys lordes / & caused hym to ryde aboute some parte of the cytie, and so conueyed hym into Smythfelde. where in the kynges presence, he caused a proclamacyon to be made, and dyd full small reuerence vnto the kynge. which mysorde & presũpcyon whan wyllyam walworthe than Mayre of London behelde / of very pure dysdayne that he had of his pryde, ran to him sodainly with his swerde, and wounded hym to dethe / & forthwith strake of his hede, and areryd it vpõ a speres poynte / and therewith cryed kynge Rycharde, kynge Rycharde. whan the rebelles behelde theyr raypt aynes hede / anone they fledde as shepe. Howe be it many were taken and many were slayne / and the reme naunt chased, that the cytie and subbarbes of ỹ same was clene voyded of them ỹ nyght, whiche was mondaye and the .xv. day of June.

Jacke Strawe slayne

whan the kyng had beholden the great manhode of the Mayre, and assystence of his bretherne the Aldermen / anone in rewarde of that dede he dubbed the sayde wyllyam walworthe, Nycholas Brembre, Johñ Philpot, Nycholas Twyforde, Robert Laũdre, and Roberte Gayton, aldermen, knyghtes.

And in this season also called the hurlynge tyme / the cõmons of Norfolke and Suffolke came vnto the abbey of Burye, & there slewe one of the kynges Justyces called Johñ Caundysshe, and the pryour of the place with other / and after spoyled & bare awaye moche thyng out of that sayd place. But after this, aswell the one as the other of these rebelles were taken in dyuers and sondry places, and put in execucyon by .x. by .xii. by .xv. and .xx. so that one of them accused ỹ other, to the distruction of a great noumbre of them.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. lxxxi.

Johñ Northampton.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. lxxxii.

Johñ Rote.

Anno .v.

Johñ Hynde.

IN this Mayres yere and moneth of Aprell / landed in Kent dame Anne the doughter of Charles the .iiii. late Emperour of Almayne lately dede, and syster vnto wenslaus at that day Emperour / the whiche of the Mayre & cytezyns of London was honorably met vpõ blacke hethe, and conueyed with great tryumphe vnto westmynster the .viii. day

day of the moneth of Maye/ & shorte ly after there solemply maryed vnto kyng Richarde. And about the same season, or after some wryters in the later ende of June, was an erthe-quaue in Englange, that the lyke therof was neuer sene in Englande before that day nor sen.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.lxxxii. Anno dñi. M.CCC.lxxxiii.

Adam Bame.

Johñ Northampton. Anno. vi.

Johñ Sely.

IN this yere mayster Henrye Spencer bisshope of Norwyche, with a great power of spirituall men and other, croysed by the com-maundement of the pope than Cle-ment the. vii. enduryng the scisme be fore touched in the laste chappter of Charles ỹ. vi. than kynge of Fraũce. This sayd pope gaue this auctorite to the sayd bysshoppe to make warre vpon the kynge of Spayne as some wryters haue/ for so moche as he con trarye the sayde popes commaunde-ment, withhelde certayne possessions belongynge of ryght vnto the duke of Lancastre syr Johñ of Gaunte/ and specially vnto dame Constaũce his wyfe. In perfourmaunce of whi-che acte, the said bysshoppe entryng the countrey of Flaunders, fande there ỹ flemynges with dyuers mys-creauntes suche as the forsaid king of the countrey of Spayne had thy-ther sent, makyng resystence agayne hym. wherfore he made to thẽ sharpe warre, and wanne vpon them cer-tayne townes, as Grauelyng, Bur-burgth, and Dunkyrke / and wanne great and ryche pyllage, so that he & his souldyours stuffed and freight with it as testyfyeth Policronycon, xli. shyppes. But soone after the Flemynges assembled wyth suche strength, that about Dunkyrke they gaue vnto hym suche assaute, that he was constrayned to gyue backe. And for the said shippes and goodes shulde nat come vnto the possessyon of his enemyes/ he sette them on fyre within the hauen, and so was wasted bothe shyppes and goodes. And all be it that after this mysse happe he re couered his strengthe, & layed syege vnto ỹ towne of Ipre, and wrought the flemynges moche care and trou-ble / shortely after suche syckenesses fell amonge his people, as the fyre and other, that his souldyours dyed of them great noumbre/ for the whi-che he was compelled to leaue hys iourney and to retourne into Eng-lãde. In this yere also was a batayle or feates of armes done in the kyn-ges palays of westmynster, atwene one called Garton Appellaunt, and syr Johñ Ansley knyght defendaũt/ of whiche fyght at length the knight was victor, and caused his enemye to yelde hym. For the whiche the sayd Garton was from that place drawen vnto Tyburne, and there hanged for his false accusacyon and surmyse.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.lxxxiii. Anno dñi. M.CCC.lxxxiiii.

Grocer. Symonde wynchecombe.

Nycholas Brembre. Anno. vii.

Johñ more.

Anno.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxxiiii. Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxxv.

Nycholas Exton.

Nycholas Brembre. Anno.viii.

Johñ Frenshe.

THis yere king Rychardc holdynge his Chriſtmas at Eltham / thyther came vnto hym the kynge of Ermony, whiche was chaſed out of his lande by the Infydels and Turkes/and required ayde of ꝑ kynge to be reſtored vnto his dominyon. The kynge feſted and comforted him according to his honour/ & after coũſell taken with hys lordes concerninge that mater, he gaue vnto him great ſommes of money and other ryche gyftes. with the whiche after he had taryed in Englande vpõ ii. monethes, he departed with glad countenaunce.

And ſoone after Eſter the kynge with a greate armye yode towarde Scotlãde. But whan he drewe nere vnto the borders/ ſuch meanes were ſought by the Scottes, that a peace was concluded atwene bothe realmes for a certayne tyme. After whiche concluſion ſo taken/the kynge returned vnto yorke and there reſtyd hym a ſeaſon. In which tyme varyaunce fell atwene Johñ Holãde brother to the erle of Kent, and the erles ſonne of Staffordc/by reaſon of whiche varyaunce, in concluſion ꝑ ſayd ſonne of the erle was ſlayne of the hande of the ſame ſyr Johñ Holãde/ for the whiche dede the kynge was greuouſly amoued, & departed ſhortely after with his company toward London.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxxv. Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxxvi.

Grocer. Johñ Organ.

Nycholas Brembre. Anno.ix.

Johñ Chyrcheman.

THis yere kynge Rychardc aſſembled at weſtmynſter hys highe court of parliamẽt. Durynge the whiche amonge other many actes in the ſame counſell concluded/he created.ii.dukes, a marques, and.v.erles. Of the whiche firſte ſyr Edmonde of Langley the kynges vncle and erle of Cambrydge was created duke of yorke / ſyr Thomas of woodſtoke his other vncle erle of Buckynghaim was create duke of Glouceſter/ſyr Lyonell Vere ꝑ was erle of Orenford was made marques of Deuelyn/ſir Henry Bolingbrooke ſonne and heyre of Johñ of Gaũt duke of Lancaſtre was made erle of Derby/ſyr Edwarde ſonne & heyre vnto the duke of yorke was made erle of Rutlande/ſyr Johñ Holande brother to the erle of Kent was made erle of Huntyngdone/ſyr Thomas Monbraye was made erle of Notyngham and Marſhall of Englande/and ſyr Mychaell de la Poole was made erle of Suffolke & Chaũceller of Englãde. And by auctorite of the ſame parlyamente, ſyr Roger Mortymer erle of the Marche, and ſonne and heyre vnto ſyr Edmonde Mortymer and of dame Philyppe eldeſt doughter and heyre vnto ſyr Lyonell ꝑ ſeconde ſonne of Edward the thyrde, was ſoone after proclaymed heyre paraunt vnto the crowne of Englande. The whiche ſir Roger ſhortely

shortely after sayled into Irelande, there to pacifye hys lordeshyppe of wulster, whiche he was lorde of by his foresayde mother. But whyle he was there occupyed aboute the same/the wylde Iryshe came vpon hym in noumbre, and slewe hym and moche of his company. This sir Roger hadde Issue Edmonde/and Roger, Anne, Alys, and Elynoure that was made a nunne. The.ii. foresaid sonnes died without issue, and Anne eldest doughter was maryed to Rycharde erle of Cambrydge, whiche Rycharde was sonne vnto syr Edmonde of Langley before named. The which Rycharde hadde issue by the sayde Anne Isabell ladye Bouchier, Rycharde that after was duke of yorke & father to kynge Edwarde the.iiii. whiche sayd Richarde erle of Cambridge was put to deth by Henry the.v. as after shall appere. In this yere also syr Hēry Bolingbroke erle of Derby, maryed the Countesse doughter of Herforde/ by whome he was lorde of that countrey. And by her he had issue Henry that after hym was kynge, Blaunche duches of Barre, and Philippe that was wedded to the kynge of Denmarke. Also Thomas duke of Clarence, Johñ duke of Bedforde, & Humfrey duke of Glouceſter.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxxvi. Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxxvii.

Goldesmythe. wyllyam Stondon.
Nycholas Exton. Anno.x.
wyllyam Yore.

In this.x. yere the erle of Arundell was sent into the duchye of Guyan, for to strengthe suche soudyours as the king at that tyme had in those parties / or after some wyctes to scoure the see of rouers & enemyes. The whiche erle in kepynge his course or passage, encountred a myghtye flote of Flemynges laden with Rochel wyne/ & set vpon them, and distressed them & theyr shyppes, and so broughte them vnto dyuers portes of Englāde. By reason wherof the sayde wyne was so plenteous in Englande, that a tonne thereof was solde for a marke and.xx. s. the choyse. And amonge other in that flote was taken the Admyralle of Flaunders, whyche remayned here longe after as pryſoner.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxxvii. Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxxviii.

Goldesmythe. wyllyam Uenour.
Nycholas Exton. Anno.xi.
Hughe Fostalfe.

This.xi. yere of kyng Rycharde/ syr Thomas of woodstocke duke of Glouceſter, the erle of Arundell, with the erles of warwyke, of Derby, and of Notyngham, consyderynge howe the king and hys lande was myssle ladde by a fewe persones aboute the kynge, entendyng reformacion of the same/ assembled them to haue a counsell at Radecoke brydge, and after arrered greāt people, & so with a stronge power came to London, & there caused ꝑ king to call a pliament. wherof

heringe

herynge maister Alexander Neuyle than archebysshop of yorke, sir Lyonell Vere marques of Deuelyn, and syr Mychaell de la Poole Chauncellet and erle of Suffolke, fearyng punisshement fledde the lande, and so died in straunge countreys. Than the kynge by counsell of the other aboue named lordes, durynge the parlyament caused to be taken syr Roberte Treuplian cheefe Justyce of Englande, syr Nycholas Brembre late mayre of the cytie of London, sir Johñ Salysbury knyghte of housholde, sir Johñ Beauchãp stewarde/ also of the kynges house, syr Symonde Burley knyghte, syr James Bernes, and syr Robert Belknappe knyghtes, and a sergeaunt of armes called Johñ Uske / the whyche by auctoryte of the sayde parlyamente were conuycte of treason, and for the same put to execucyon at Tybourne and at the Towre hyll. And Johñ Holt, Johñ Locton, Richarde Gray, willyam Burgth, and Roberte Fulthorpe iustyce, with the other foresayd lordes, whiche as before is said boyded the lande/were by auctoryte of the sayd court of parlyamente banysshed & exyled the lande for euer.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxviii. Goldesmythe. Syr Nycholas Twyfforde.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxix. Thomas Austeyne. Anno.xii. Adam Cathyll.

IN the.xii.yere and moneth of Nouembre yet durynge the parlyament, was executed in Smythefylde of London a marcyall Justes and tournement / where as all suche persones as came in vpon ỹ kynges partye, theyr armour and apparayle was garnysshed with whyte hertes & crownes of golde about their neckes. And of that shorte were. xxiiii. with. xxiiii. ladyes also apparayled as aboue is sayd, ladde with. xxiiii. cheynes of golde the horses of them/ and so conueyed them thorowghe the cytie vnto Smythefelde frome the Towre of London. where the king, the quene, and many other great estates beynge present, after proclamacions by the herroddes made/many goodly and marcyall actes of warre were there put in vre, to the great recreacion and comforte of the kynge and quene and all other beholders of the same. To this dysporte came many straungers. Amonge the whiche the erle of saynt Poule, the lorde Dstreuaunt sonne and heyre vnto ỹ duke of Holãde, and a yonger sonne of the erle of Dstryche, were greatly commended. And whan this Justes had contynued by sondrye tymes by the space of.xxiiii.dayes, to the great comforte and recreacyon of many ponge and lusty bachellers desyrous to wynne worshyppe, and to the kinges great honoure, that by all that season kepte open housholde for all honeste comers / it was fynysshed, & the straũgers retourned to their coũtreys with many ryche gyftes.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxix. Grocer. wyllyam Uenour.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxx. Johñ walcot.

Anno.xiii. Johñ Loueney.

In this

IN thys.xiii. yere of kynge Rychard/an esquier of ỹ prouince of Nauerne by Fraunce, accused an Englysh esquyer called Johñ welshe of certayne poyntes of treason. For the tryall wherof a day of fyght was betwene them taken, to be foughten in the kynges palays at westmynster/ where eyther of theym kept hys daye & fought there a stronge fyght. But in the ende Johñ welshe was vyctoure / and constrayned that other to yelde hym. where after he was dyspoyled of hys armoure, and drawen to tyburne, and there hãged for hys vntrouthe.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xc. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xci.

Johñ Fraunces.

Adam Bamme. Anno.xiiii.

Thomas vyuent.

IN thys.xiiii. yere of kyng Rychard/ syr Johñ of Gaũt duke of Lancastre, wyth a goodly cõpany of men of armes sayled into Spayn, to clayme suche landes as he there shulde haue in the ryght of dame Cõstaunce hys wyfe / whyche was the doughter of Peter ryghtfull kynge of Spayne, as in the.xi. yere of kyng Edward the thyrde is more playnly declared. whan the sayde duke was vpon that other syde of the see/ there came vnto hym the kynge of Portyngale wyth a stronge army, and so entred the terrytory of Spayne. But whether it were of the Englishe men longe or of the Portyngaleys / moche harme was done to the Spanyardes, in robbynge and pyllyng of the countrey / whyche was cause of grudge betwene the kyng of Portyngale and the duke/ and caused many Spanyardes whyche oughte to thẽ good wyll to wythdrawe and depart from them. In reformacyõ of which ille, certayn persones aswel Englysh as Portyngaleys that were founde gylty of suche robbery, were putte vnto deth/ by meane whereof the other fered so, that where by that meane the kynge and the duke were before put to great afterdeale, by reasõ of reformacyon of that ille they gat dayly vppon theyr enemyes / so that in processe of tyme folowyng, ỹ kyng of Spayne was dryuen of necessyte to treate wyth the duke of a peace & concorde. Of the whyche peace as wytnesseth Polycronycon in hys last boke and.vii. chappter/ the condycyõ was, that fyrste for a fynall concõrde the kynge of Spayne shuld marye ỹ duke eldest doughter name Cõstaũce and that done he shulde gyue vnto ỹ duke in recõpensacyon of hys costes, so many wedges of golde as shulde charge or lade.viii. charettes / and ouer that yerely durynge the lyues of the sayde duke and hys wyfe, he shuld at hys proper coste and charge delyuer to the dukes assygneys .x. M. marke of golde wythin ỹ towne of Bayon.

And after thys peace was stablysshed, and suertyes taken for the perfourmaunce of the same/ the duke departed wyth the kynge of Portyngale. To whome shortely after he maryed hys second doughter named dame Anne.

In thys yere also for cruel warre whyche the Turkes made agayne the Janueys or men of Jeane / they requyred ayde of the kynges of Englande and Fraunce. For whyche cause oute of Englande was sente a noble warryour called erle of Alby wyth two thousande of archers/ and

out of Fraunce the duke of Burbon and the erle of Ewe, wyth.xv.C. spe-res. The whych kept theyr iournay tyll they came vnto a cytye in Bar-bary named Thunys, a somtyme be-longynge to the sayde Januays. where the sayd Englyshe & Frenche-men bare them so manfully wyth the ayde of ỹ Januayes, that in proces of tyme they wanne ỹ sayde cytye frō the Turkes, and put ỹ Januayes a-gayne in possessyon therof / & toke of theym many prysoners, the whyche were exchaunged for chrysten pryso-ners before taken/and ouer that for-sed the sayd Sarazyns to yelde vnto the Januayes.x.M.ducates of gold, for confyrmacyon of a peace for a cer tayne tyme. But the French cronycle sayth, that for so moche as the duke of Burbon hadde vnderstandynge ỹ the duke of Lancaster made warre vpon kyng Johñ of Spayn/ he ther fore lefte thys iournay and ayded hi agayne the sayde duke of Lancaster to hys lytle honour.

But howe so euer it was / many of the Englyshmē were loste in those countreys by reason of the flyxe and other sykenesses. Also Antoninus sayeth, that the Sarazyns at thys iourney were nat dyspossessed of the cytye of Thunys/but for a trewes to be hadde for two yeres, they graun-ted vnto the chrysten men a certayne summe of money, and restytucyon of many chrysten prysoners.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xci. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xcii.

Johñ Chadworth.

Draper.

Johñ Heende. Anno.xv.

Henry Vamere.

IN thys.xv. yere of kynge Ry-charde/he keppynge hys Cryst-mas at hys manour of woodstocke, the erle of Penbrooke beynge ponge of age was desirouse to lern to iuste/ and requyred a knyghte named syr Johñ saynte Johan, to renne wyth hym certayne courses. At whose requeste the sayd knyght ranne with hym in woodstoke parke certayne courses. In the whyche were it wyth stroke or other myshap/ the sayd erle receyued there hys dethes wounde & dyed shortly after.

In this yere also a moneth of Juny/ a bakers man berynge a basket full of horsebrede to serue hys maysters customers in Fletestrete/ whanne he came forageyn the bysshop of Sa-lysburyes place standynge in Salys bury aley, a seruaunt of the bysshop-pes starte vnto the basket and toke oute one of the loufs. And for the ba-ker wolde agayne haue recouered hys horse loke/ ỹ bysshoppes seruaūt wyth hys dagger brake the bakers hed. Than came the inhabytauntes of the strete, & wolde haue brought the yoman vnto warde for brekynge of the kynges peace. But he was res-cowed by hys felowes/ and so hadde vnto the bysshoppes palays, whyche that daye stoode treasourer of Eng-lande.

For this rescous the people beyng in a fury/ in greate multytude gathe red aboute the palays, and wolde haue entred parforce to haue fet out the yoman.

Agayn whome the bysshoppes ser-uaūtes made resistēce/so ỹ ỹ rumour

grewe

grewe moze and moze. And the peple of the cytye, alwell ſuche as were of yll dyſpoſycion as other, encreaſed into a greate noumbze. Fame of thys doyng thã ſpzãge to ꝑ mayer / which in all haſte wyth dyuers aldermen & the ſhyzpues, ſped hym thyther to ſe the peace kepte/ & dyd that he cowde to withdzawe the people. But after ꝑ mayer & the offycers of the citie were comyn thyder/ the cõmons out of all partyes of the cytye dzewe thyder, in moche moze multytude thanne they had befoze / ſo that ꝑ moze they were in noumbze, the wozſe they were to rule. In ſo moche that they wold nat be ſatyſfyed, but they myghte haue ꝑ yoman delyuered, whoſe name was walter Romayne. And foz to bzynge about theyz foly/ they made many aſſautes at the gates of ꝑ ſayd palays, the byſſhop hym ſelfe beynge than at wyndeſoze. Laſtly after many ſhowtes & lyftes at the gates made, by dyſcreſciõ of the mayze & aldermen with other dyſcrete comoners of the cytye, the people was mynyſſhed and ſente agayne euery mã to hys dwellynge, & all was ſet in quyet & reſte. Whan wozde of this came vnto the biſſhop, in moch wozſe maner thã the thynge was in dede/ he gyuing light credẽce without examinaciõ made in the matter, aſſocyat vnto hym mayſter Arundell than archebiſſhop of yozke and chaũceler of Englãde/ & ſo greuouſly enfourmed the kyng, that he toke agayne the cytye ryght greuouſe dyſpleaſure/ ſo that in all haſt the mayze was ſent foz to the kynge. At whoſe commyng was layd vnto his charge great & heynous maters, that he non otherwyſe ruled the cytye / but ſuffered the cytezyns to make ſuche aſſautes vppõ the kynges hed offycers, to the kynges great dyſhonour, & ieopardy of ſuche great treaſoute as he than had of the kynges i his cuſtody and keppnge. And after bzought vnto the kynges pzeſence/ of whome nat wythſtãdyng hys reaſonable excuſe befoze made, he was of the kyng ryght ſoze blamed & greuouſly ſayde vnto. Thã was the mayze & the ſheryues dyſcharged of the rule of ꝑ cytie/ & the liberties of the ſame ſeaſed into the kynges hãdes/ & a knyghte of the court called ſyz Edward Daligzge, a good man and fauourable to ꝑ cyte zeyns, was made gouernoure of the cytye the. xxi. daye of June / & contynued in that offyce to the fyzſte daye of July next enſuyng. At whych day beynge in the begynnynge of ꝑ kynges. xvi. yere of hys reygne, he was diſcharged/ & ſyz Baldewyn Radyng ton knyght putte in hys rome / & ſo cõtynued tyll the feeſt of Symõde & Jude folowynge. And foz the moze dyſpleaſure of the cytezyns/ all plees & ſutes kept befoze tyme in weſtmynſter hall, were than remoued & holdẽ at yozke, to the great noyaunce of all the lande / whyche ſo contynued tyll Cryſtmas. And in thys mayzes yere alſo, was a great trãſlaciõ of biſſhoppes. Thys dyſpleaſure thus hãgyng towarde the cytye/ the cytezyns made contynuall labour vnto the kynges grace, by meanes of the quene and of doctour Gzaupſende than byſſhope of London/ whych ought theyz eſpeciall fauoures vnto the cytye. By whoſe meanes the cytezeyns were reſtozed vnto theyz lybertyes, & hadde licence to choſe of them ſelfe a mayze & two ſhyzpues / ſo that vppon ſaynt Mathewis daye folowynge, they choſe foz ſhyzpues Gylberte Manyfolde oz Wankelde and Thomas Newyngton/ and vppon saynte Edwardes daye kynge and confeſſoure, they chaſe foz theyz mayze wyllyam Stondon Gzocer / whyche by the Lyeutenaunte of the towze were at that tyme admytted and ſwoze.

But yet the kynges displeasure was natte reconcyled, nor the cytezeyns admytted vnto hys grace and fauoure.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xcii.
Grocer.
wyllyam Stondon.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xciii.
Gylbert Mankeylde.
Anno.xvi.
Thomas Newynghtyn.

In thys mayres yere and.xvi. yere of kynge Rycharde / thys newe mayre wyth the worthyest men of the cytye, made assyduat & dayly meanes vnto the kynges grace, for to haue hys moste bounteouse pardō & hys especyall fauoure vnto ꝑ cytye. The whych at lengthe by meanes of such frēdes as they purchased about the kyng/& specyally by laboure of ꝑ good quene Anne, and the fornamed bysshop of London, they were put in good cōforte vpō theyr demeanour & submyssion at the kynges commyng to Londō. Upon whyche cōforte the cytyzyns made royall and costyous purueyaūce to receyue the kynge in theyr best maner/& haupynge monyssyon that the kyng entended to come vnto hys palays of westmynster, apparayled them in one lyuerey / & to ꝑ noumbre of.iiii.C. horsemen well be seen, mette wyth hym vpon the heth on thys halfe hys manour of shene. where in moste lowlye wyse accordynge to theyr dutyes they submytted them vnto hys grace/besechynge hym of hys specyall grace & pardon, in all suche thynges as they before tymes had offended agayne hys hyghnesse. And to ꝑ entent that hys grace myght se the cōformyte of all hys other subiectes/the recorder made instaūce to hym, that he wolde of hys great bounte take so great peyne vpon hym, as to ryde thorough hys chaumber of London.

The whych requeste he graciously accepted / & so helde on hys iournay tyll he came at Londō brydge/where he was presēted wyth.ii. fayre stedes trapped in ryche cloth of golde partyd of redde and whyte. The whyche present he thākefull receyued/& after helde on hys way tyll he came at the standarde in chepe / the cytezyns of ꝑ cytye stādynge vpō eyther syde of the stretes in theyr lyuereys, and cryeng kyng Rycharde kyng Rychard/ and at theyr backes, ꝑ wyndowys & walys hanged wyth all ryche tapettes & clothes of arasse in moste goodlye & shewyng wyse. And at the sayd standarde in chepe, was ordeyned a sumptuouse stage/in the whych were sette diuers personages in ryche apparel. Amonge ꝑ whych an Āngell was ordeyned/whyche set a ryche crowne of golde garnysshed wyth stone & perle vppon the kynges hede as he passed by. And that done he rode to Paulys, and there offered, and so rode vnto westmynster/ where the mayre and hys company takyng theyr leue returned vnto London.

Uppon the morowe whyche was the fyftene daye of the moneth of the sayde mayre and hys bretherne rode vnto westmynster, & presented there ꝑ kynge wyth two guylte basyns, and in theym two thousande nobles of golde/ beseche hym in moste humble wyse to be good and gracyouse lorde vnto the cytye. The whyche he accepted ryghte fauourably / and gaue vnto theym many comfortable wordes.

And the thyrde daye folowynge, they receyued a newe confyrmacion of all theyr olde Fraunchyses and lybertyes.

lybertyes. wherfore by counsayll of theyr frendes, they ordeyned an aulter table of syluer and ouer gylte/ & therein ymagery grauen & enameled moste curiously of the story of saynte Edwarde, the whiche was valuyd at a.M. marke/ & presented that also, & gaue it vnto the kynge/ the which he shortely after offered to the shryne of saynte Edwarde wythin the abbay, where yet it stādes at thys daye. And for the great zele & loue whych ỹ fore sayde bysshop of Londō ought vnto the cytye, & that by hys meanes theyr lybertyes were agayne restored/ they therfore of theyr owne goodly dysposycion, after hys decease accustomed them, and yet at thys daye done/ to go perely vpō the feestfull dayes folowynge, ỹ is to say fyrst the morow after Symōde Jude whych daye the mayer taketh his charge at westmynster, to Paulys/ & there to saye in the west ende of ỹ churche where he lieth grauen (Deprofundis) for hys soule and all crysten/ & in lyke maner vpō Allhalowen daye, Crystmasse daye, & ii. the nexte days folowyng, Newe yeres daye, Twelf day, and Cādelmas day/ wyth also the morowe after Myghelmasse day, vpon the whyche the shyrefes perely take theyr charge at westmynster. All whych. ix. days, nat all onely the mayer & hys bretherne vse thys progresse and kepe thys obsequy/ but also all the craftes of the cytye in theyr lyueryes vse the same perely.

And whan the kyng had wythdrawen as aboue is sayde, hys displeasure frō the cytye/ thanne at Hyllarye terme folowyng ỹ feest of Cristmas, all the kynges courtes and plees of the crowne wyth other retourned frō yorke to westmynster.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xciii.
Grocer.
Johñ Hadley.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. xciiii.
Drewe Barentyne.

Anno. xvii.
Rycharde whytyngton.

IN thys mayers begynnyng & xvii. yere of kyng Rycharde, ỹ is to meane the moneth of Nouēbre/ certayn gentylmen of Scotlāde entendynge to wynne honoure, chalenged certayne poyntes of armes. As fyrste the lord Morpk chalenged the erle of Nothyngham & marshall of Englande/ syr wyllyā Darel knyght chalēged syr Peter Courtnay knyght & Cokborne esquyer, chalenged syr Nycholas Hawberke knyght. which feates of armes were done in smythfelde of London. But Marle was so frendely vnto the Englyshmen, that the honoure of ỹ iournay went wyth them/ in so moche that the erle marshall ouer threwe hys appellaunte/ & so bruled hym, that in his returne toward Scotlande he dyed at yorke. And syr wyllyam Darell refused his appellāt or they had ronne theyr full courses. And the thyrde of them, that is to wyt Cockborne, was throwen at the secōd coppng to groūd horse and man.

And vpon the. vii. day of Juny folowyng, dyed ỹ gracyouse woman quene Anne/ and lieth now buryed at westmynster by hyr lorde kynge Rycharde, vpō ỹ southsyde of saynt Edward shryne/ to whose soul & al cristē our lord be mercyfull. And thys yere in the moneth of Septembre as witnesseth the frenche cronycle, by meanes of the erle of Derby and other, whych than were in Fraunce for the kynge of Englandes partye/ and the

duke of Burbone & the erle of Ewe vpon the French partye wyth other/ a trewes was concluded at saynte Omers for.iiii.yeres. But nat wythstandyng that peace, the Frenchymen and Englyshemen ranne togyther sundry tymes, whanne the one espyed to haue any auauntage vppon that other.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.xciiii. Anno dñi.M.CCC.xcv.

Mercer. wyllyam Brampton.

Johñ Frenshe. Anno.xviii.

Thomas Knolles.

THys .xviii. yere of kynge Rycharde, he shortly after Crystmas wyth a strong army sayled into Ireland. The whych iournay was more to hys charge than honoure. For the maner wherof, syn it soũded to no honoure of the prynce / myne auctor therfore lyste nat in his boke to make any lõge processe of ỹ mater In this yere also or about this tyme, began the heresy of Johñ wyclyffe to sprynge in Englande / the whyche was greatly auaunced by meane of the scysme in the churche hangynge at those dayes betwene two popes sittynge at ones / the whyche began as before is shewed in the.xxuu. yere of Charles the.vi.thã kyng of Fraũce, Urban the.vi.and Clement the syxt / & contynued vnder Bonyface the.ix. and Benet the.xiii. Of whyche erronyouse oponyons of the sayd heresy, who so is desyrouse to se the contentes of them / let them serche cronica cronicarum, and there he shall se thẽ brefely set out.

In thys yere also was wonderful tẽpest of wynde, by the space of July, August, & specially Septẽbre/by violence wherof in sundry places of this lande, greate and wonderfull hurte was done bothe of churches and houses. Thys yere dyed Constance secõd wyfe to Johñ duke of Lãcastre, and lyeth buryed at Leyceter.

Anno domini.M.CCC.xcv. Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxcvi.

Uyntener. Roger Elys.

wyllyam more. Anno.xix.

wyllyam Sheryngham.

IN the begynnynge of thys mayres yere, and.xix. yere of kynge Rycharde, and.xviii. daye of Nouembre as affermeth ỹ Frenche cronycle/kyng Rycharde beynge thã at Calays, spowsed or toke to wyfe wythin the churche of saynt Nycholas, Isabel the doughter of Charles the.vi.than kyng of Fraunce. whych lady Isabell as wytnesseth the sayde Frenche story, at the day of hyr marryage was wythin.viii.yeres of age. And as it is regestred in one of ỹ bokes of guyldehalle of London / the Frenche kynge in propre persone came downe wyth a goodly companye of lordes and knyghtes, vnto a towne called Arde, whyche standeth vppon the vtter border of Pycardy / where wythin hys owne dompynon a ryche and sumptuouse pauylyon was pyght. And in lyke maner a litle beyonde Guynys wythin the englisch pale, was another lyke pauylyon pyghte for kynge Rycharde / so that betwene the two sayde pauylyons, was a

was a distaunce of.lxx.pace. And in the mydway atwene bothe, was ordained ꝑ thyrde pauylion/at ꝑ which bothe kinges cõming from eyther of theyr tentes sondry tymes there met, & had communicacion eyther with other/the wayes or distaunce atwene set with certayne persones apoynted standynge in arme.ii.and.ii/the one syde beynge set with Englysshemen, and that other with Frenche. And a certeyne distaũce from eyther of the ii.first sayde pauilyons, stode bothe hoostes of bothe prynces, or suche cõpanyes as before either of them was appointed to bryng. Here if I shuld brynge in the dyuers metynges of ꝑ sayd princes, and the curyous seruices that eyther caused other to be fed & serued within eyther of theyr tentes, or of theyr dalyaunce or pastymes continuynge the season of their metynges, and the dyuersyte of the manifolde spices and wynes whiche there was ministred at ꝑ said season, with all ꝑ ryche apparell of the sayde pauilyons & cupbordes garnysshed with plate & rich iewels/it wold aske a lõge tracte of tyme. But who ꝑ is desirous to knowe or here of the circumstaũce of all ꝑ premysses/let him rede ꝑ worke of maister Johñ Froyssarde made in Frenche/ and there he shall se euery thynge touched in an order. And here I shall shortly touch the giftes ꝑ were gyuen of eyther of ꝑ princes & of their lordes. And fyrst king Rychard gaue vnto ꝑ Frenche kynge, an hanap or balyn of golde with an ewer to ꝑ same. Thã againwarde ꝑ Frẽche king gaue vnto him iii.stãding cuppes of golde, with couers garnisshed with perle & stone/& a shippe of golde set vpon a bere rychely garnysshed with perle & stone. Than at theyr seconde meting king Rycharde gaue vnto him an ouche set with so fyne stones, ꝑ it was valued at.v.C.marke sterlynge. where agayne the Frenche king gaue vnto him.ii.flaggons of golde/a tablet of golde, and therein an ymage of saint Mychaell rychely garnisshed. Also a tablet of gold with a crucifixe therin well and rychely dyght. Also a tablet of golde with an ymage of the Trynite, rychely set with perle and stone. Also a tablet of gold with an ymage of saynt George, in likewise set with perle and stone. whiche all were valued at the summe of.xv.C.marke. Than king Richarde seyng ꝑ boũte of the Frenche kinge/ gaue to hym a baudryke or coler of golde set with greate dyamantes, rubyes, and balessys, beyng valued at.v.M.mark/ the whiche for the precyosyte thereof, that it was of such an excellency and fynesse of stuffe, the Frenche kynge therfore ware it aboute his necke as often as the king and he mette together. Than the Frenche kyng gaue vnto hym an ouche, a spyce plate of golde of great weyght, and valued at.ii.M.marke. Many were the ryche gyftes that were receyued of lordes and ladyes of bothe prynces. Amonge the whiche specially are noted.iii.giftes, whiche kyng Richarde gaue vnto the duke of Orleaũce/ for the which he receyued agayne of the duke trebyll the value. For where his were valued at a.M.marke/ the dukes were valued at thre thousãde marke. Finally whan ꝑ said princes hadde thus eyther solaced with other, & concluded all maters concernynge the abouesayde mariage/ the Frenche kyng delyuered vnto kyng Rycharde dame Isabell his doughter, sayenge these wordes folowynge.

Ryght dere beloued sonne, I delyuer here to you the creature ꝑ I most loue i this worlde next my wife & my sonne/beseechynge ꝑ father in heuen,

that it may be to his pleasure, and of the weale of you and youre realme / and that the amyte atwene the. ii. realmes in auoydyng of effusyon of chrystien mens blode, maye be kepte inuyolet for the terme atwene vs cõcluded / whiche terme was. xxx. wynter as expresseth the Frenche Cronycle. After whiche wordes with many thankes giuen vpon eyther parties / preparacyon was made of deptinge. And after kynge Rycharde had conueyed the Frenche kynge towarde Arde / he toke his leaue and returned vnto his wyfe. The which was immediatlye with great honoure conueyed vnto Caleys / and there after to the kyng spoused, as before to you I haue shewed. After the which solempnisacion with al honour ended / the kynge with his ponge wyfe toke shyppyng, and so within short whyle landed at Douer / and from thens sped hym towarde London. wherof the cytezens beynge warned / made out certayne horsemen well appointed in one lyuerye of coloure, with a compsaunce brodered vpon theyr sleues, whereby euery felyshyppe was knowen from other. The whyche with the Mayre and hys bretherne clothed in scarlet, met the kynge and the quene vpon the Blacke hethe / & after due salutacyon and reuerente welcomes vnto theim made by the mouthe of the recorder, the sayd cytezens conueyed the kynge vpon his wey tyll he came to Newyngton: where the kynge commaunded the Mayre with his company to returne to the cytie / for he with hys lordes & ladyes was appointed that nyght to lye at Kenyngton. It was nat longe after but that she was from Kenyngton brought with great pompe vnto the Towre of London. At whyche season was so exceding prece at London brydge, that by reason therof certayne persones were thrust to deth / amonge the whyche the pryoure of Typtre a place i Esser was one. And vpon the morowe folowynge, she was conueyed throughe ỹ cytie with all honoure that myghte be deuysed vnto westmynster / & there crowned quene vpon the sonday beynge than the. viii. day of January. In the somer folowynge the kynge by sinistre counsell delyuered vp by a poyntement the towne of Brest in Brytayne to the duke / whiche was occasyon of displeasure atwene the kyng and ỹ duke of Gloucestre hys vncle as in the yere folowyng shalbe more clerely shewed.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxxvi.
Goldesmythe.
Adam Bame.

Anno dñi. M. CCC. lxxxvii.
Thomas wylforde.
Anno. xx.
wyllyam Parker.

IN this. xx. yere of kynge Rycharde and moneth of February / the kinge holdynge a sumptuous feest in westmynster halle, many of the soudyours whiche were newely comen from the towne of Brest foresayd, preced into the hall, and kepte a rome together. whiche companye whan the duke of Gloucestre hadde beholden / and frayned and knowen what men they were, and howe the sayde towne was gyuen vppe contrary his knowlege / was therewith in his mynde sore discomforted. In so moche that whan the kynge was entred hys chaumbre, and fewe nere vnto hym, he sayde vnto the kynge: Syr haue ye nat sene the felawes ỹ

satte

ſatte in ſo great noumbre to daye in your halle at ſuche a table. And the kynge anſwered yes, and ared of the duke what cõpany it was. To whom the duke anſwered & ſaide, Sir theſe ben youre ſouldyours comen from Breſte/and as nowe haue nothynge to take to, nor knowe n at howe to ſhyfte for theyr lyuynge/and the rather for that as I am entourmed, they haue benne before tyme cuyll payed. Than ſaid ỹ kyng it is nat my will but ỹ they ſhulde be well payed. And if any haue cauſe to cõplayne, let them ſhewe it vnto our treſourer, and they ſhalbe reſonably anſwered. In reſonynge of this mater farther/ the duke ſaid vnto the kyng, Syr ye ought to put your body to payne for to wynne a ſtrõge holde or towne by feate of warre, or ye toke vpon you to ſell or delyuer any towne or ſtrõge holde gotten with great difficulte, by mãhode of your noble progenitours. To this ỹ kyng with chaũged countenaũce anſwered & ſayd, Uncle how ſay ye thoſes wordes. Than ỹ duke boldelye recyted ỹ forſayd wordes. wherunto the kyng beynge more diſcontented ſaid, wene ye ỹ I be a marchaũt or fole to ſell my lãde/by ſaynt Johñ baptiſt nay. But trothe it is, ỹ our coſyn the duke of Bryttaine hath rendred vnto vs al ſuch ſũmes of money as our progenitours lente vnto him or his auncetours, vpon the ſaid towne of Breſt. For the whiche, reaſon & good conſcience will ỹ he haue his towne reſtored agayne. By meane of whiche wordes thus vttred by the duke/ſuche rancoure and malyce kyndelyd atwene the kinge & hym, ỹ it ceaſed nat tyll the ſayde duke was put to dethe by murdre vnlefully. Than the duke apperceyuynge the kinges miſledynge by certayne perſones about hym, entendyng thereof reformacion for ỹ weale of the kynge and his realme / called vnto him the abbot of ſaynte Albons, & the abbot & pryour of weſtmynſter, and ſhewed to them his ſecrete mynde. By whoſe counſelles he made aſſemble ſhortely after at Arundell / to which aſſemble came at the day appoynted, dyuers lordes bothe ſpirituall & temporall/ as him ſelfe, the erle of Arundell and other. Alſo thyther came the erle of Notyngham than marſhall of Englande, the erle of warwyke / & of ſpirituall lordes, the archebiſſhoppe of Caunterbury, the abbottes of ſaynte Albones and of weſtmynſter with other.

After whyche aſſemble thus made, and euerych of theym to other ſworne within the caſtell of Arundel/the. viii. day of Auguſt they toke there theyr counſell, and condiſcended ỹ dyuers lordes about the kyng, as the duke of Lancaſtre, the duke of yorke and other, ſhulde be putte from ſuche auctorite and rule of the lande as they than bare / and other offycers ſuche as were thought prejudicial vnto the weale of the lande, ſhulde be dyſcharged and puniſſhed for theyr demeryte. whan this with many other thynges was amonge them concluded / euerych of theym departed tyll the tyme of an other metynge atwene theym appoynted. But the erle of Notyngham contrarye his othe and promyſe fearing the ſequell of the matter / rode ſhortely after vnto the kynge, and dyſcouered vnto hym all the premiſſes. wherefore the kynge in all haſte called a ſecrete counſell at London in the ſaid erle of Notynghames place, or after ſome at the place of the erle of Huntyngdone.

Where it was concludyd ỹ the ſayd erle of Huntyngdone & other, ſhulde by ſtrengthe fetche vnto the king the erles of Arundell and of warwyke.

And

And in the meane whyle, the kynge in p̄ropr̄e p̄sone arested his vncle sy̓r Thomas of woodestoke at Plasshy in Esser as sayeth the Englysshe cronycle. All be it an other wryter in latyne sayth, that kyng Rycharde in p̄ropr̄e persone rode vnto the Manoure of Grenewyche in the nyghte tyme, & there toke hym in his bedde, & commaũded hym vnto the Towr̄e of Lõdon/whiche shortely after was conueyed vnto Calays and there pytcously murderyd. And soone after were the forsayd erles of Arundell & warwyke brought vnto the towr̄e of London, with also sy̓r Johñ Cobham & sy̓r Johñ Cheynye knightes. But the erle of Arundell was taken to bayle and wente at large vnder suertie, tyll the begynnynge of the parlyament. In whiche season dyuers other were brought to sondr̄ye p̄rysones. Than the kynge sente out his commissyoners vnto the lordes of his realme, for to come vnto hys parliament/which began after vpon the.xvii.day of Septembr̄e, in the begynninge of the.xxi.yere of ỹ kynge, and later ende of thys mayres yere.

Here it is to be noted, that Adam Bame mayre dyed in the begynning of the moneth of June. For whome was after chosen and admytted the viii.day of ỹ sayd moneth for mayre, Rycharde whytyngton, to occuppe the full of that yere/that is to meane tyll the feest of Symonde and Jude. But vpon sayne Edwardes day folowyng whan the newe mayre is accustomed to be chosen / Than was he electe agayne for that yere folowynge. And so he stode in the offyce of mayraltye an hoole yere/and. v.monethes. Than to returne to our fyrst mater, whan the kyng hadde assembled his lordes/ỹ whiche came with so stronge and myghtie companyes, that the cytie suffysed nat to lodge the people, but were fayne to be lodgyd in small townes and vyllages nere vnto ỹ same / within short tyme after the sayde parlyamente was begonne, the erles of Arundell and of warwyke were brought before the lordes of the parlyamente holden at westmynster, and there fynally iudged as foloweth / the erle of Arudell to be ladde on fote from westmynster and place of his iugemẽt thorought the highe stretes of the cytie vnto the towr̄e hylle, where hys hede to be stryken of / and the erle of warwyke was also iudged to dethe. But for his great age, by meane of hys frendes his iugemente was pardoned and altered to perpetuall p̄rison, where as the kyng wolde cõmaunde hym. whiche after was had vnto ỹ Ile of Man in Lancasshyr̄e / where he consumed the resydue of hys olde dayes. And the erle of Arundelle accordinge to the sentence vpon him gyuen, vpon the morowe folowyng the feest of sayute Mathewe beynge saterday, & the.xxii.day of Septembr̄e, was ladde on fote vnto ỹ towr̄e hyll beyng accompanyed with great strengthe of men, for so moche as it was demyd ỹ he shuld haue ben rescued by the waye/ how be it none suche was attempted / but peasably he was brought vnto the sayde place of execucyon, and there pacientlye & mekely toke his dethe. whose body after was by the freres Augustynes borne vnto theyr̄ place within the warde of Bradestrete of London, & there in the northe syde of the quyer solempnely buryed / and after vpon his graue a sumptuous toumbe of marble stone sette and edifyed. And by auctorȳte of the said parlyament, the archebyshoppe of Caunterbury was eryled the realme. And vpon the monday folowynge beynge the xxiiii.daye of Septembr̄e, sy̓r Johñ

lorde

lord Cobham, and sir Johñ Cheyny knyght, were iudged to be drawen, hanged and quarterid. But by instaunce and labour of their frendes, that iugement was chaunged vnto perpetuall prison. And thys done / ꝑ kynge ordayned a royall feeste, and helde open houshold for all honeste comers. For as affirmeth Peter Pyc taupence a wryter of histories / this prynce kynge Rychard passed all other of his progenytours in liberalytie and bountie. The whiche feest and also parlyament yet holdynge / the kynge created. v. dukes, a marques, and. v. erles. As fyrste the erle of Derby syr Hery of Bolyngbrooke, sone and heyre of Johñ of Gaunte duke of Lācastre, was created duke of Herford. The secõde whiche was erle of Rutlande, was created duke of Amnerle. The thyrde beynge erle of Kent, was created duke of Surrey. The fourthe beynge erle of Notyngham, was created duke of Norfolke. And the fyfte was the erle of Huntyngdon, the whiche than was created duke of Exeter. Also of the erle of Somerset, was made a marques of Dorset. And for the erles / fyfte the lorde of westmerlande named Dane Raby Neuyll, was made erle of westmerlande / the lorde Tresorer syr wyllyā Scrope, was made erle of wylshyre / and syr Johñ de Mountague was made erle of Salesbury. And whan this busines was fynysshed / the parlyament was remoued vnto Shrewsbury vnto Hylarye terme / where it was fynysshed to many mennes displeasures, & dysherytynge of many trewe heyres.

Anno domini. M. CCC. lxxxvii. Anno dñi. M. CCC. lxxxviii.

Mercer. wyllyam Alkeham.

Rychard whyttyngton. Anno. xxi.

Johñ wodecoke.

IN this. xxi. yere of kynge Rychard / the people of the lande murmured and grudged sore agaynst the kynge & his counsell / for so moche as the goodes belongynge vnto the crowne, were disperbyld & gyuen to vnworthy persones / by occasyon whereof dyuers charges and exaccyons were put vpon the people. Also for that the cheefe rulers aboute the prynce, were of lowe byrthe and of small reputacyon / and the men of honoure were kepte out of fauoure. Also for that the duke of Gloucester was secretely murdred without processe of the lawe / and many thynges elles myslordered by the laste parlyament, whereof the wyte and blame was layed vnto the kynge and other persones after named, as well for wrongefull dysherytyngè of sondrye persones at the sayde parlyamente, suche as were menyall seruauntes of the forsayde dūke of Glocester and of the erles of Arundell and of warwyke, contrarye hys owne proclamacyons made concernynge suche maters. Also that where dyuers patentes & grauntes passyd the kynges great seale, as well for pardons and other great maters / yet for the kynges singuler auauntage & suche fewe persones as bare the rule about hym, many of theym were called agayne. Also where for sherysfes and other offycers of all shyres of Englande, were wonte to be named. iii. by discrete psones as iuges & other, of ꝑ whiche the kyng shulde assygne two for the yere folowynge / he of his owne wylle & pleasure wolde refuse them, & chose suche. ii. as hym lyked / the

the which he knewe well wolde lene more to his weale, than to the cõmen weale of this lande or of his subiectes. Also that where before tymes ꝑ kynges of Englande vsed to sende out commyssyons vnto burgeses of cyties & townes, to chose of theyr fre lybertie suche knyghtes of the shyre as they thought mooste wealefull for the comen weale of the sayde shyre & lande/nowe kyng Rycharde wolde appoynte the persones, and wylle them for to chose such as than he named/wherby his singuler causes were preferred, and the commen causes put by. Also kinge Rycharde thorough euyll counsell, commaunded by his letters vnto the sheryffes of all shyres fewe excepted, that all persones of honoure within theyr countyes as well spirytuall as temporall, shulde make certayne othes in generall wordes, and ouer that to wryte and seale certayne bondes for performaunce of the sayde othes / and also for blanke chartour, which many men of substaunce were constrayned to seale to theyr great charges. The people contynually murmured and grudged, for these inuryes and many mo, whyche at the tyme of his deposynge were artyculed agayne hym in .xxxviii. sondry artycles / with also the rumoure that ranne vpon hym, that he had letten to ferme the reuenews of ꝑ crowne, to Bussshey, Boget, and Grene/whiche caused as well the noble men of the realme to grudge agayn hym as other of the comon people. Thus cõtynuynge this myserder within the lande/dyed syr Johñ of Gaunt duke of Lancaster, at the bysshoppe of Elyes place in Holborne / and from thens was caried vnto saint Pouls, and there vppon the north syde of ꝑ quyre honorably buryed. At whose enterremente all the chefe lordes of Englande were present. For whom after was foũdyd by dame Blaũche hys wyfe an honorable anniuersary, as before I haue shewed in ꝑ. xliii. yere of Edwarde the thyrde, whyche of right ought to be set in this place.

This yere also aboute the feste of saynt Bartholomew, fell discencyon & discorde bytwene ꝑ duke of Herforde & the duke of Norfolke. wherfore the duke of Herforde accused ꝑ other, that he hadde taken .iii. thousande marke of the kynges, of suche money as he shulde therwith haue waged certeyne sowdyours at Caleys/whiche he lefte vndone, & toke the same money to hys owne vse. But an other wryter sayth, that as ꝑ sayde two dukes rode vppon a tyme from the parlyament towarde theyr lodgynges/ꝑ duke of Norfolke sayd vnto that other: Syr se you not how varyable the kyng is in his wordes, and how shamefully he putteth his lordes and kynesfolkes to deth, and other exileth and holdeth in pryson. wherfore full necessary it is to take kepe, and not for to truste myche in hys wordes. For without dowte in tyme to come, he wyll by suche lyke meanes bryng vs vnto lyke deth & destruccyon. Of whiche wordes the sayde duke of Herforde accused that other vnto the kynge / wherfore eyther wagyd batayle with other before the kynge. To whom daye of metynge was gyuen to eyther vpon the .xi. daye of September, to fyghte within lystes at Couẽtre, where all thynge was ordeyned for. At whiche place at ꝑ day assygned thyder came the sayde two dukes, and appered in the felde before the kynges presence, redy to do theyr batayle. But ꝑ kyng anone forbad that fyght / and forthwith exyled the duke of Herforde for .x. yeres, and the duke of Norfolk for euer / whiche sentence was shortely after

after put in execucyon. Thanne the duke of Herforde sayled into Fraūce and there taryed a season. But for lacke of ayde and comforte he departed thens and came into Bretayne. And the duke of Norfolke passed dyuers countreys/and lastely came vnto the cytie of Venyce, and there endyd his lyfe. And soone after thys was maister Roger walden a chapeleyne of the kynges,made archebysshoppe of Caunterbury/ the whyche was a speciall louer vnto the citie of London, and made great labour for them vnto the kynges grace, ꝑ greuously with them was of newe displeased, for so moche as he was enfourmed of them,ꝑ they shulde counsell with other sheriffes to withstāde certayne actes made in the laste parlyament/for ꝑ which the compnaltie of the cytie was endyted with other sheryffes. In rederesse wherof/by counsell of the sayd archebysshoppe, & of maister Robert Braybroke than bisshoppe of Lōdon, the cytezens made a lamentable supplicacyon vnto the kinge. whiche by ayde & fauoure of the sayd two bysshoppes & other louers of ꝑ cytie/ꝑ kinges yre & indignacyon by meane of that lowly supplicacyon was some parte appeased & withdrawen. But yet to contente a pte of ꝑ kinges mynde,many blanke chartours were deuysed & broughte into the cytie/which many of ꝑ most substancyall men of the same were fayne to seale, to theyr payne and charge in conclusyon/ꝑ whiche shortely after was vsed thorowghe all countreys of Englande.

Anno domini.M.CCC.lxxxviii. Goldesmythe Drewe Barentyne.

Anno dñi.M.CCC.lxxxix. Johñ wade.

Anno.xxii. Johñ warner.

IN this.xxii.yere of kynge Richarde/ꝑ cōmon fame ranne,ꝑ the kyng had letton to ferme ꝑ realme of Englande vnto sir wyllyam Strope erle of wyltshyre & than treasourer of Englād,to sir Johñ Bussbey,syr Johñ Bagot,and syr Henry Grene knightes/ꝑ whyche returned shortly after to their great cōfusyō. This yere also, Thomas ꝑ son and heyre of ꝑ erle of Arundell lately beheded/ꝑ whiche Thomas nat all to his pleasure was kepte in ꝑ house of the duke of Exceter,passed ꝑ see by ꝑ meanes of one wyllyā Scot mercer/ & rode vnto his vncle ꝑ archebisshop of Caūterbury, & so contynued with him in the cytie of Colayne than beynge. In this passyme great purueyaunce was made for ꝑ kynges iourney into Irelād/so ꝑ whan all thinges necessarye to the honoure & nede of the kynge & his people was redy, he set forthwarde vpon his iourney in the moneth of Apryll/leauyng for his leutenaunt in Englange sir Edmonde of Langley his vncle & duke of yorke/and after toke shippyng at Bristowe,and sayled with a mighty & strouge hoste into Irelande. where he had so prosperous spede, that in processe of tyme with manhode and good polycie he subdued to him that coūtrey. In the whiche voyage, were it for acte that he dyd or of ꝑ kynges bounte/Henry sone and heyre of the duke of Herforde than exiled, was of ꝑ kyng made knyght. This Henry was after his father crowned kynge of Englande, & named Henry the.v.

Kynge Richarde thus beynge occupyed in Irelande,and receyuynge of the capytaynes of the wylde Irysshe into his subiectyon,and orderyng of that countrey to set in an order and rule/Henry of Bolyngbroke

duke of Herforde before expled, with the archebysshoppe of Caunterbury and Thomas of Arundel and other, landed with a small company at Ra uenspore in the Northe countrey, in the moneth of August/and vnder colour of the clayme of his ryghtfull enheryteaunce, reysed the people as he wente/to whome in short processe great multytude of the people drewe and gatherd. Of this landyng kyng Rycharde beynge warned/for hasty spede of returnyng into Englande, left in Irelãde behynde hym moche ordenaũce/and landed at Wylforde hauen in the begynnyng of Septembre, & begynnynge also of the. xrtii. yere of his reygne/& so yode vnto the castell of Flynte in wales, and there rested him and his people/and entended there to gather vnto hym more strength. In the whiche meane tyme the forsayd Henry that than hadde proclaymed hym selfe duke of Lancaster in the ryght of Johñ of Gaũte his father, was comyn to Bypstowe/ and there without resystence toke sir wyllyam Scrope erle of wylshyre & treasourer of Englande, syr Johñ Busshey, and syr Henry Grene.

Also there was taken sir Johñ Bagot/but after he escaped and fledde into Irelande. Than were the other thre there iuged & put in execucyon. And kinge Rycharde styll beynge at the castell of Flynte / herynge of the great strengthe ỳ was about ỳ duke, fearyd sore of him selfe. And in lyke wyse so dyd all suche as were about hym. wherfore syr Thomas Percye erle of Worcetyr and than stewarde of the kynges housholde, contrarye his allegeaunce, brake openly the whyte rodde in the hall, & commaundyd euery man to shifte for him selfe. By reason whereof the people voyded, and the kynge lefte without cõforte, so that he was shortly after taken and presented vnto the duke. The whyche put hym vnder safe keppynge/& shortly after spedde him toward Lõdon. And whã he came nere vnto ỳ cytie/he sente kyng Rycharde with a secret cõpany vnto ỳ Towre, there to be safely kepte tyll his commyng. wherof many cupll disposed persones of the cytie beyng warned/ assembled them in great noumbre, & entended to haue mette him without the towne, & there to haue taken him from such as ladde him, & so to haue slayne him for the great cruelte that he before tyme had vsed vnto the cytie. But as god wolde / the mayre & rulers of the cytie were enfourmed of theyr malycyous purpose, and gathered to theym the worshyppfull commoners and sadde men/by whose polycyes nat without great difficulte, they were reuoked fromc theyr cupll purpose/all be it that lastynge that rumoure they yode vnto westmynster, and there toke mayster Johñ Slake deane of the kinges chapell/ and fromc thens broughte him vnto Newgate, and there caste on hym yrons.

Shortly after/the duke came vnto London/& there by the consent of kyng Rycharde, a plyament was begone vpon the. xrtii. day of ỳ moneth of Septembre. Endurynge whiche plyament, many accusacyons & artycles of mysrulynge of the lande were layed vnto the charge of thys noble prince kyng Rycharde, whiche be engrooced at length in xxbuii. artycles. For the which, volũtarely as it shuld seme by ỳ copy of an instrumẽt here after shewed / he shulde renounce & wylfullye be deposed from all kynglye mageste, the monday beynge the xxii. day of Septembre, and the feest of saynt Mychell the archaungell, in the yere of our lordes incarnacyon after the accompte of the churche

of

of Englande, M. lxxxix. and the xviii. yere of the raygne of the sayde Kychарde. The coppe of whiche instrumente here vnder ensueth.

This present instrumente made the mondaye the. xxv. daye of Septembre, and feeste of sayne Mychaell tharchaungell, in the yere of our lorde god. M. CCC. lxxx. and xix. and in the. xxiii. yere of kynge Kychарde the seconde/ wytnesseth, that where by the auctorite of the lordes spirytuall and temporall of this present parlyament and cōmons of the same, the ryght honorable and discrete psons here vnder named, were by the sayde auctorite assygned to go vnto the towre of London, there to here and testifye suche questyons and answeres as than & there shude be by the said honorable and discrete persones harde: knowe all men to whome these presente letters shall come, that we sir Richarde Scroope archebysshoppe of yorke, Johñ bisshoppe of Herforde, Henrye erle of Northumberlande, Rafe erle of west merlande, Thomas lorde of Barkeley, wyllyam abbot of westmynster, Johñ pryour of Caunterbury, wyllyam Thyrnynge, and Hughe Burnell knyghtes, Johñ Markeham Justyce, Thomas Stowe, & Johñ Burbage doctours of the lawe Cyuyle, Thomas Feryby and Denys Lopham notarys publyke/ the day & yere aboue sayd atwene the houres of. viii. & ix. of ỹ clocke before noone, were present in the chyefe chaumber of the kynges lodgynge within the sayde place of the towre. where was rehersed vnto the kynge by ỹ mouth of the forsayde erle of Northumberlande, that beforetyme at Conwey in Northwalys the kynge beynge there at hys pleasure and lybertye, prompsed vnto the archebysshop of Caunterbury than Thomas of Arundell, and vnto the sayde erle of Northumberlande / that he for insuffycyency whyche he knewe hymselfe to be of, to occuppe so greate a charge as to gouerne thys realme of Englande/ he wolde gladly leue of and renoūce the ryght and tytle, aswell of that as of hys tytle to the crowne of Fraūce and hys magestie, vnto Henry duke of Herforde/ and that to do in suche conuenyente wyse, as by the lernyd men of hys lande it shulde moste sufficyently be by them deuysed and ordeyned. To the whyche rehersall the kynge in our sayde presences answered benygnly, and sayde that suche prompte he made/ and so to the same he was at that howre in full purpose to perfourme and fulfyll/ sauyng he desyred fyrst to haue personal speche wyth the sayde duke and wyth the archebysshoppe of Caunterbery hys cosyns. And ferthermore he desyred to haue a byll drawen of the sayde resygnacyon, that he myghte be perfyghte in the rehersall therof. After whiche copy to hym by me the sayde erle delyuered / we the sayde lordes and other departed. And vppon the same after noone the kynge desyrynge moche the commynge of the duke of Lancaster / at the laste the sayd duke wyth the archebysshoppe entred the forsayde chaumber/ bryngynge wyth theym the lorde Roos, the lorde Burgeyny, and the lorde wyllougbby, wyth dyuerse other. where after due obeysaunce done by them vnto the kynge/ he kamplyarly and wyth a gladde countenaunce to vs aperynge, talked wyth the sayde archebysshop and duke a good season. And that communycacyon fynysshed/ the kynge wyth a gladde countenaunce in presence of vs and the other aboue rehersed, sayde openly that he was redy to renounce and

resygne all his kyngelye mageste, in maner and fourme as he before seasons had promised. And all thoughe he had and myght sufficyently, haue declared his renouncement by the reding of an other meane persone/ yet he for the more surette of the mater, and for the sayd resygnacyon shulde haue hys full force and strengthe, he therfore redde the scrowle of resignacyon him selfe, in maner and fourme as foloweth.

In the name of god Amen. I Rychard by the grace of god kynge of Englande and of Fraūce, and lorde of Irelande/ acquyte and assoyle all archebysshoppes, bysshoppes, and other prelates seculer or relygyous, of what dygnite, degre, state, or condicyon that they be of/ and also all dukes, marques, erles, barons, lordes, and al myne other lyege men bothe spirituall and seculer, of what maner name or degre they be/ frome theyr othe of feaute and homage, & all other dedes and priuileges made vnto me/ and from all maner bādes of allegeaunce and regalty or lordeshyppe. In the whiche they were, or be bounden to me, or in any otherwyse constrayned / and theym theyr heyres, and successours for euermore from the same bandes and othes, I release, deliuer, acquite, and let them for fre, dyssolued, and acquyte, and to be harmeles, for so moche as longeth to my persone, by any maner waye or tytle of ryght ỹ to me might folowe of the forsayd thynges or of any of them. And also I resygne all my kyngely dygnyte, mageste, and crowne / with all the lordeshyppes, power, & priuyleges to the forsayd kyngely dygnite and crowne belongynge / and all other lordeshyppes and possessyons to me in any maner of wyse pertaynynge, what name & condicyon they be of/ out take the landes and possessyons for me and myne obyte purchased and bought. And I renounce all ryghte and coloure of ryght, and all maner tytle of possessyon and lordeshyppe, the whyche I euer hadde or haue, or by any maner of meane myght haue in the same lordeshyppes and possessyons or any of them or to them, with any maner ryghtes belongynge or appertayning vnto any parte of thē.

And also the rule and gouernaūce of the same kyngedome and lordeshyppes, with all admynistracyons of the same / and all thynges & euerych of theym, that to the hole empyre and iurisdiccyon of the same belongeth of right, or in any wyse may belonge.

And also I renounce the name, worshyppe, and regalye, and kynglyhyghnesse, clerely, frely, synguler ly, and holly, in the mooste best maner and fourme that I may / and with dede and worde I leaue of and resygne them and go frome theym for euermore/ saupng alwaye to my successours kynges of Englāde, all the ryghtes, priuileges, & appurtenaunces to ỹ said kyngdome & lordeshyps aboue said belongynge & appertaynynge. For well I wote & knowlege, & deme, my selfe to be and haue ben vnsufficient & vnable, and also vnprofytable/ and for myne open deserte nat vnworthy to be put downe. And I swere vpon ỹ holy Euāgels here presently with my handes touched, ỹ I shal neuer repugne to this resygnacyon, dimyssyon, or yeldyng vp/ nor neuer impugne theym in any maner by worde or by dede, by my selfe nor by none other. For I shall nat suffre it to be impugned, i as moche as in me is preuely nor apperte. But I shall haue, holde, & kepe thys renoūsing, dimyssyon, & leuynge vp, for ferme and stable for euer more,

in all

in all and in euery parte thereof, so god me helpe and all sayntes, and by this holy euangels by me bodely touched & kyssed. And for more recorde of the same/here openly I subscrybe and sygne this present resygnacyon with myne owne hande. And forthwith in our presences and other subscrybed the same / and after delyuered it vnto the archebysshope of Canterbury/sayeng that if it were in his power or at his assignemēt, he wold that the duke of Lancaster there present, shulde be his successour & king after hym. And in token thereof he toke a ryng of golde frō his fynger beynge his sygnet, and put it vpon the sayd dukes fynger / desyrynge & requirynge ỹ archebysshop of yorke, to shewe and make reporte vnto the lordes of the parlyament of hys voluntary resygnacyon/And also of his entent and good mynde, that he bare towarde his cosyn the duke of Lācaster, to haue hym his successour and kyng after him. And this done, euery man toke their leaue and returned to theyr owne.

VPon the morowe folowynge beynge tuisday and the laste day of September/all the lordes spirytuall and temporall, with also the commons of the sayde parlyamente, assembled at westmynster: where in in the presence of them, the archebysshoppe of yorke, according vnto the kynges desyre, shewed vnto them seryously the voluntary renounsynge of the kynge / with also the fauoure the whiche he oughte vnto his cosyn ỹ duke of Lancaster for to haue hym hys successoure. And ouer ỹ shewed vnto theym, the cedule or byll of renouncemente sygned wyth kynge Rychardes hande. After whyche thynges in order by him fynisshed / the questyon was axed fyrste of the lordes, yf they wolde admytte and alowe the sayde renouncement. The whyche whan it was of the lordes graunted and confyrmed / the lyke questyon was axed of the commons/ and of theym in lyke maner affyrmed. After whiche admyssyon, it was than declared, that nat withstandynge the forsaid renounsynge so by the lordes and commons admytted/it were nedefull vnto the realme, in auoydyng of all suspeccyon and surmyses of vile dyspoised persones, to haue in wrytynge and regestred, the manyfolde crymes and defautes before done by the sayd Rychard late kynge of Englande / to the ende that they myghte fyrste be openly shewed vnto the people, and after to remayne of recorde amonge the kynges recordes. The whyche were drawen and compyled as before is sayde in.xxviii.artycles/and there shewed redy to be radde. But for other causes than more nedefull to be preferred / the redynge of the said artycles at that season were differred and put of. whyche artycles for that that they wolde aske longe tyme to wryte, & also wolde to some reders be but small pleasure to rede/ I haue therfore lefte theym out here of thys worke: which at lengthe are sette out in the boke of the Mayres, and pere of Drewe Barentyne than mayre of London.

Than for so moche as the lordes of the parlyament hadde well consydered this voluntary renouncement of kynge Rychard/and that it was behouefull & necessary for the weale of the realme to procede vnto the sentence of his deposayll: they there appoynted by auctorytie of the states of the sayde parlyament, the bysshop of sayncte Asse, the abbotte of Glastenburye, the erle of Glouceſter, the lorde of Barkeley, wyllyam Thyr-

nynge iuſtyce, & Thomas Erpyngham and Thomas Graye knightes, that they ſhulde gyue and bere open ſentence to the kynges depoſicyon. wherupon the ſayde commyſſyoners leynge there their hedes together / by good delyberacion, good coũſell, and auyſement, and of one aſſent/agreed amonge them, that the biſhop of ſaint Aſſe ſhulde publiſſhe the ſentence for theym and in their names, as foloweth.

In the name of god Amen. we Johñ byſſhope of ſaynt Aſſe or Aſſenence, Johñ abbot of Glaſtynbury, Rycharde the erle of Gloceſter, Thomas lorde of Berkeley, wyllyam Thyrnynge Juſtyce, Thomas Erpyngham and Thomas Graye knyghtes, choſen and deputed ſpecyall commyſſaryes by the thre eſtates of thys preſent parlyament, repreſentynge the hole bodye of the realme, for all ſuche maters by the ſayd aſtates to vs committed: we vnderſtandynge and conſiderynge the manyfolde crymes, hurtes, and harmes done by Rycharde king of Englãde, and myſgouernaunce of the ſame by a longe tyme, to the great decaye of the ſayde lande, and vtter ruyne of the ſame ſhortly to haue ben, ne had the eſpeciall grace of our lorde god therevnto put ẏ ſoner remedy/& alſo furthermore auertyſinge ẏ the ſayde kinge Rycharde knowyng his owne inſufficiencie, hath of his owne mere volunte and fre wyll, renounced and gyuen vp the rule and gouernaunce of this lande, with all ryghtes and honoures vnto ẏ ſame belongynge, and vtterly for his meryttes, hath iuged hym ſelfe nat vnworthy to be depoſed of all kyngely mageſte & aſtate royall: we the premyſſes well conſyderynge by good and dilygente delyberacyon, by the power, name, and auctorẏte to vs as aboue is ſayd cõmytted/ pronounce, diſcerne, and declare, the ſame kynge Rycharde before thys to haue be & to be vnprofytable, vnable, vnſufficyent, and vnworthy, to the rule and gouernaũce of the foreſayde realmes and lordeſhyppes, & all other thappurtenaunces to the ſame belongynge. And for the ſame cauſes, we pryue hym of all kyngely dygnyte and worſhyppe, of any kynglye worſhyppe in hym lefte.

And we depoſe hym by our ſentence diſynityſe/forbyddynge expreſſely to all archebyſſhoppes, byſſhoppes, & all other prelates, dukes, marqueſes, erles, barons, and knyghtes, & to all other men of the foreſayd kyngdome and lordeſhyppes, or of other places belongynge to the ſame realmes and lordeſhyppes, ſubiectes and lyeges what ſo euer they be, ẏ none of them from this tyme forthwarde, to the foreſaid Rycharde as kynge & lorde of ẏ foreſayde realmes & lordeſhyppes, be neyther obedyẽte nor attendaunt.

After whiche ſentence thus openlye declared/the ſaid aſtates admytted forthwith the ſame perſones for theyr procuratours, to reſygne and yelde vp vnto kynge Rycharde, all theyr homage & fealtie whyche they had made & ought vnto hym before tymes/and for to ſhewe vnto hym if nede were, all thynges before done that concernyd his depoſynge.

The whych reſygnacyon at that tyme was ſpared, and put in reſpite tyll the morowe nexte folowynge. And anone as thys ſentence was in thys wyſe paſſyd, and that by reaſon therof the realme ſtode voyde without hede or gouernoure for the tyme/the ſaid duke of Lancaſter ryſing frõ ẏ place where he before ſate, & ſtanding where all myght beholde hym / he mekely makynge the ſygne of the croſſe vppon his forhede and

vpon

vpon hys breste, after silence by an officer was commaunded/sayd vnto the people there beyng these wordes folowyng. In the name of the father & sonne and holy ghoste/ I Henry of Lancastre clayme the realme of Englande and the crowne, with all the appurtenaunces, as I that am dyscended by ryght lyne of the bloode commynge from that good lorde kynge Henry the thyrde/ & through ỹ ryght that god of hys grace hath sente to me, wyth helpe of my kynne & of my frendes to recouer the same/ ỹ which was in point to be vndone for defaut of good gouernaunce & due iustyce. After whyche wordes thus by hym vttered/he retourned & set him down in the place, where he before had syten. Than the lordes apperceyuynge and herynge thys clayme thus made by thys noble man / eyther of theym frayned of other what he thoughte. And after a dystaunce or pause of tyme/the archebysshope of Cauntorbury hauyng notycyon of the lordes myndes, stode vp & asked of the commons, yf they wolde assente to the lordes /whych in theyr myndes thoughte the clayme by the duke made to be ryghtefull and necessary, for the welthe of the realme & of them all. wherunto with one voyce they cried, ye, ye, ye. After whyche answere / the sayde archebysshop goynge vnto the duke, & settynge hym vpon hys kne, had vnto hym a fewe wordes. The whyche ended, he rose/ & takynge the duke by the ryght hande, ladde hym vnto the kynges sete / & wyth greate reuerence sette hym therein / after a certayne knelynge and orison made by the sayde duke, or he were therein sette.

And whan the kynge was thus set in hys trone, to the greate reioysynge of the people / the archebysshoppe of Cauntorbury beganne there an oracion or colacyon in maner as after folowety.

Vt dominabitur in populo, primo Regũ capitulo.ix. Theſe ben the wordes of the hygh and mooste myghty kynge, spekynge to Samuel hys prophete/techyng hym how he shuld chose and ordeyne a gouernoure of hys people of Israel, whan the sayde people asked of hym a kynge to rule theym. And nat wythout cause maye these wordes be sayde here of oure lorde the kynge that is. For yf they be inwardely conceyued / they shall gyue to vs mater of consolacion and comforte, whan it is sayde that a mã shall haue lordeshyp and rule of the people & nat a chylde. For god threteneth nat vs as he sometyme thret the people by Isaye, sayenge / Isaiæ. 3. Et dabo pueros principes eorum, & effeminati dominabuntur eis: I shall sayeth our lorde gyue chyldren to be theyr rulers and prynces / and weke or feretull shall haue dompnyon ouer them.

But of hys greate mercy he hath vysyted vs I truste hys peculier people, and sente vs a man to haue the rule of vs/ and putte by chylderne ỹ before tyme ruled thys lande after chyldysshe condycyons/as by ỹ werkes of theym it hath ryght lately appered, to the greate dysturbaunce of all thys realme/and for want or lack of a man.

For as sayeth the apostell Paule ad Coryntheos primo. capitulo.xiii, Cum eßem parvulus, sapiebam vt parvulus, & loquebar vt parvulus. &c. Quando autem factus sum vir/ euacuaui quæ erant parvuli/ That is to meane, whanne I was a chylde, I sauoured and spake as a chylde. But at the tyme whanne I came vnto the state of a man / thanne I putte by all my chyldysshe condycyons.

The apostell sayth, he sauoured and spake as a chylde / in whome is no stedfastnesse or constancy. For a chylde wyll lyghtely promyse, and lyghtly he wyll breke hys promyse, & do all thynges that hys appetyte gyueth hym vnto, & forgeteth lyghtely what he hath done. By whych reason it foloweth, that nedely great inconuenyence muste fall to that people, ỹ a chylde is ruler and gouernour of. For it is nat possyble for that kyngdome to stande in felicite, where such condycyons reygne in the hede and ruler of the same. But now we ought all to reioyse, that all suche defautes ben expelled / and that a man and nat a chylde shall haue lordshyp ouer vs. To whome it belongeth to haue a sure rayne vpon hys tunge, that he maye be knowen from a chylde, or a man vsyng chyldysshe condycyons. Of whome I truste I may say as ỹ wyse man sayeth in hys Prouerbys Prouerbiorum tercio capitulo. Beatus homo qui inuenit sapientiam, et qui affluit prudentia, The whych is to meane, Blessed be the man ỹ hathe sappence or wysedome, and that haboundeth in prudence. For that man that is ruled by sapience, must nedes loue and drede our lorde god. And who so loueth and dredeth him / must consequentely folowe that he muste kepe hys commaundementes. By force wherof he shall mynyster trewe iustyce vnto his subiectes, and do no wronge nor iniury to any mã / so that than shall folowe the wordes of the wyse man the whyche ben rehersed Prouerbiorum decimo. Benedictio domini super caput iusti, os autem impiorum operit iniquitatem, which is to meane, The blessynge of oure lorde god shall alyght vpon the hede of our kyng, beyng a iuste and right-wyse man / for the tunge of hym worketh equyte & iustyce. But the tunge of wycked and of synners, coueteth iniquyte. And who that werketh or mynystreth iustyce in due ordre / he nat allonely sauegardeth hym selfe, but also holdeth ỹ people in a surete of restfulnesse / of the whyche ensueth peace & plẽte. And therfore it is sayde of the wyse kyng Salomõ Ecclesiastes decimo. Beata terra cuius rex nobilis est, & cuius principes vescuntur in tempore suo. whyche is to be vnderstande, that blessed and happy is that land, of the whych the kynge or ruler is noble and wyse / & the prynces ben blessed that lyue in hys tyme.

As who wolde say, they may take exaumple of hym to rule & gyde theyr subiectes. For by the discrescyon of a noble & wyse mã beyng in auctorite / many cuplles be sequestred and put a part, and all dyssymulers put vnto sylence. For the wyse man cõsidereth & noteth well the great inconuenyences, whych dayly nowe growe of it / where the chylde or insyppente dryncketh the swete & delycyous wordes vnaysydly, & perceyueth nat entoxycacion, whyche they ben myngled or myxte with, tyll he be inuyroned and wrapped in al daunger / as lately the experyence therof hath ben apparent to all our syghtes & knowleges, and nat without the great daunger of all this realme. And all was for lacke of wysedome in the ruler, whych demed & taught as a chylde, gyuyng sentẽce of wylfulnes and nat of reason. So that whyle a chylde reygned, selfe wyll & luste reygned / & reason wyth good conscyẽce were outlawed, with iustyce, stedfastnesse, & many other vertuys. But of thys parell & daunger we ben delyuered by the especyal helpe & grace of god, Quia vir dominabitur in populo / that is to meane, he that is nat a chylde but perfyght in reason. For he commeth natte to execute hys owne wyll / but hys wyll that sente hym,

hym, that is to wytte goddes wyl/as a man to whome god of hys habundaunte grace hath gyuen perfyghte reason and dyscrescyon, to dyscerne & deme as a perfyght man. wherefore nat alonely of thys man we shall say that he shall dwell in wysedome/ but as a perfyght man and nat a chylde, he shall thynke & deme / & haue suche a cyrcūspecte wyth hym, that he shall dylygently forcloke & se that goddes wyll be done and nat hys. And therefore nowe I truste the wordes of the wyse man Ecclesiastici decimo shalbe verifyed in our kynge / sayenge *Judex sapiens iudicabit populum suum, & principatus sensati stabilis erit* / that is as sayeth the wyse man, A wyse and dyscrete iuge shall now deme hys people/& the dompynpon or lordshyppe of a dyscrete wyse man, shall stande stedfast. wher upon shall than folowe the seconde verse of the same chappter / sayenge *Secundum iudicem populi, sic & ministri eius. &c.* that is, Lyke as the hede and souerayne is replenysshed wyth all sapyence and vertue in guydynge of hys people, admynistrynge to theym lawe wyth due & conuenyent iustyce/ so shall the subiectes agaynwarde be garnysshed wyth awe and loupnge dyede/& bere vnto hym nexte god all honoure, trouthe, & allegeaunce. So that than it maye be concluded wyth the resydue of the forsayde verses, *Qualis rector est ciuitatis, tales & inhabitantes in ea.* whyche is to meane, Suche as ỹ ruler of the cytye is, suche than be the inhabytauntes of the same. So that consequentely it foloweth, a good mayster maketh a good dyscyple. And in lykewyse / an euyll kynge or ruler shall lose hys people, and the cytyes of hys kyngedome shalbe left desolate and vnhabyted.

wherefore thus I make an ende, in stede of a chylde wylfully doynge hys luste and pleasure wythout reason / nowe shall a man be lorde and ruler, ỹ is replenysshed wyth sapience and reason / and shall gouerne the people by skylfull domys, settynge a parte all wylfulnesse and pleasure of hym selfe. So that the worde that I begaune wyth, maye be verifyed of hym, *Ecce qua vir dominabitur in populo.* The whyche our lorde graunte/ and that he maye prosperously reygne to the pleasure of god and welthe of his realme Amen.

The whyche oracion beyng thus fynysshed, & the people answerynge wyth greate gladnesse, Amen: the kynge standyng vpon hys fete, sayd vnto the lordes & commons present. Syrs, I thanke you my lordes spyrytuall & temporal, and all the states of thys lande / and do you to vnderstāde, that it is nat my wyll, that any man thynke, that by the waye of conqueste I wolde dysheryte any man of hys heritage, fraunchyse, or other ryghtes that hym oughte to haue of ryghte / nor for to putte hym oute of that whyche he nowe enioyeth, and hath hadde before tyme by custome of good lawe of thys realme / excepte suche pryuate persones as haue ben agayne the good purpose and the cōmon profyte of the realme.

And thys speche thus fynysshed / all sherykes and other offycers were put in theyr auctoryties, whiche sea sed for the tyme that the kynges see was voyde/ and after euery man departed.

And at after noone were proclamacions made in accustumat places of the cytye, in the name of kynge Henry the fourthe. And vppon the morowe folowynge beyng wenysdaye, and the fyrste daye of October / the procuratours aboue named yode vnto the towre of London & there certified hym of the admissiō

of kynge

of kyng Henry. And the forsayd iustyce wyllyam Thirnynge in ỹ name of the other, & for all the states of the lande/gaue vppe vnto Rychard late kyng all homage & fealte to hym before time due, i lyke maner & fourme as before I haue shewed to you in ỹ xix. yere of kynge Edwarde the. ii.

And thus was the noble prynce pryued of all kyngly dygnyte & honour, by reason of hys euyll counsayll, and suche vnlafull wayes & meanes as he by hys insolency in his realme suffered to be vsed, whan he had reygned. xxii. yeres thre monethes & .viii. dayes.

¶ Charles the. vii.

Francia.



Arolus or Charles the .vii of ỹ name, or the. vi. after thac compte of ỹ frēche hystory, a chylde of xii. yeres of age, & sonne vnto Charles the .vi / began hys reygne ouer the frenchemen in the moneth of September, & yere of our lorde .M.CCC.x. lxx / and the thyrde yere of the seconde Rychard than kyng of Englande. Thys Charles was crowned kynge wythin the age of .xiiii. yeres, contrary a lawe made in the .xi. yere of hys father.

And where by hym he was commytted vnto the rule of Lewys his vncle & duke of Angeou, to the tyme of the ful of. xiiii. yeres/yet after the deth of the father, suche vnkyndenesse begā to spryng betwene the lordes of the realme, that for the comon welthe of the same it was agreed by the more partye, that thys Charles shulde be crowned at Raynes i all hasty spede. The whyche was done in shorte seasō after / & so contynued nat wythoute dysturbaunce of malyce whych kyndeled betwene hys two vncles, and other inconueniences, by the space of iii. yeres ensuyng. The. iiii. yere of hys reygne / the cytesyns of Parys murmurynge and grudgynge for dyuerse impositions & taskes of them, leuyed sodeynly arose in greate multytude, entendynge to haue dystressed some of the kynges housholde seruaūtes, & such as were men of ꝓson. But by medyacyon of one discrete parsone named Johñ Marsyle, with assystence of the prouost of the marchauntes, the rumoure was somdele appeased/ in so mych that the greate multytude was wythdrawen and retourned to theyr occupacyons. But some euyll dysposed, whyche in suspycyous congregacyon euer vse to erȳte and styre the people vnto robbynge and other vnlefull actes/ reasorted them, & sayde and cryed that they wolde haue the Jewys banysshed the cytye. To whom it was answered that the kynge shuld be enformed of theyr desyre / and that vppon it they shulde haue knowlege of the kynges pleasure. wherupō in a rage they ranne vnto the houses of the Jewes/and entryd them by force, in robbynge and spoylynge them, and bare awaye what they myght cary/in sleynge suche of the Jewes as any resystēce and defence made agayn them/ & neuer after restored ỹ sayd goodes, not wythstandynge that the kyng in that byhalfe gaue sore and strayte cō maundementes. It was not longe after that suche as were of ỹ kynges secrete counsayle, consyderynge the great charges and nedes of ỹ kyng, and the weykenesse of his treasoure/ by authorȳte of the kynges cōmyssyons called before them the rulers of Parys, of Roan, and other good cytyes. The whyche beynge assembled, to them was shewed the many and importune charges whyche ỹ kynge dayly

dayly had for the defēce of hys realm and subiectes. wherfore by all wyse & polytyke meanes that they myghte vse, they erorted the sayde commons to graūte vnto the kynge in waye of subsydye. xii. d. of the poūde of all wares at that dayes curraūt. To the whyche requeste in conclusyō after aduyse taken of theyr neyghbours/ it was answered that the pple were so sore charged in tymes passed, that they myght nat sustayne or bete any more charges, tyll theyr necessytie were otherwyse releuyd/ so that in cō clusyō at thys season the kynge and hys coūsayll were dyspoynted.

In the. vi. yere of thys Charles/ ꝑ Flemynges, whych by a certayne sea son had rested theym frome batayll/ were it for necessyte or synguler coue tyse of Lewys theyr duke, he asked of them a greate ayde or taske. And for he knewe well that yf he myghte wynne the fauoure and graūt of the towne of Gaunt, he shulde the soner haue hys pleasure of the resydue/ therefore he fyrste began by meanes of fayrenesse. And after whā thereby he sawe he myght take none aduaū tage, he added therunto manasses & threetenynges/ the whyche nat wyth standynge the Flemynges bode sted fast in one oppynyon, & denayed stykly theyr dukes requeste. whereuppon he lastly departyng from Gaunt, wyth great displeasure sayd, I shall shewe my selfe to be lorde & soueraygne of thys towne & of the obstynat people of the same. And shortly after ꝑ duke made sharpe warre vpō thē of Gaūt/ & they in lykewise defēded them vigu rously, so that theyr enemyes wā of them lytle auaūtage. And after thys warre hadde bē a season contynued, nat wythoute losse of many men vp pon bothe partyes/ the Gaunteners remembrynge the obedyence and fy delyte whyche they shulde bere to theyr souerayne lorde & duke, made meanes that they myghte be harde. After graunte whereof, they sente vnto hym certayne oratours whyche hadde vnto hym the wordes in sen tence folowynge. Moste souerayne nexte god, we deny nat but we accept the for our prynce and leder/ & to the as thyne it becommeth vs to obey wyth all reason.

And thou agayne arte bounde to defende vs. If we any thyng by our ouersyght & neclygence haue agayn the trespassed/ we mekely beseche the of forgyuenesse. And furthermore be sechynge the, that suche fraunchyses & lybertyes to vs by thy noble pro genytours before graūted, thou wylt nat from vs withdraw nor abrydge/ by reason wherof thy people of Gaūt maye nat to any tare contrary theyr volunte be cōstrayned. But & to thy nede of warres thou haue necessytye of ayde of thy commons, they of free wyll all cōstraynte sette a parte, are redy to ayde and helpe the, as fre & as lyberall as thy trewe subiectes. By reason of whyche wordes ꝑ duke was of hys ire towarde theym some what apeased. But after theyr depar tyng from the duke or erles presence/ such ponge knyghtes as were of the erles hoste, hadde vnto theym many hygh & dyspaynous wordes/ sayeng that they were thrall vnto theyr erle, and that theyr obstynacye shulde be to the vttermoste of theyr reproche & correccyon, and they by coaccion and constraynt forced to do theyr dutye. By occasyō of whyche wordes/ the Gaūteners retournyng to theyr for mer wylfulnesse, kepte styl theyr for mer oppynyō, & defended the erle & his people as they before hadde done. wherfore the erle seynge he myghte nat by strēghte preuayle agayne hys enemyes/ studied the wayes & mea nes to fampsshe theym by hunger/ so that

so that by that meane he might draw the towne to hys subiection. And that to bringe to effecte he gyde ỹ towne about with a stronge syege. Than the Gaũteners supprysed with more obduracion of herte agayne theyr pryuce / made them a capytayne named Philippe Artuele, the sonne of Jakes de Artuele before slayne of ỹ Flemynges / lyke as to you I haue before shewed in the .xvii. yere of Philippe de Ualoys late kyng of Fraũce The whyche furnysshynge hys people with all habylymentes of warre / made out of the towne & pyghte hys feelde in a playne iopynge vnto it / where the erles people & they fought a sharpe fyght & longe. But in ỹ ende fortune was vnto the erle or duke so frowarde that with losse of .v.M. of hys soudyours he was forced to take Bruges for hys suertye.

By reason of thys vyctory thys Artuele beynge nat a lytle suppryssed with pryde / erected in such wyse the dwellers within the towne of Gaunte, and all suche as were nere neyghbours vnto them, to set a parte all occupacyon aswell husbandry as other, & gyue theyr hole study vnto actes and feates of warre. The erle thus beynge within ỹ town of Bruges / a daye of greate solempnytie perelye holden by them of Bruges approched, whyche they worshypped in the honoure of our lordes bloode. To thys daye of solemptye vsed yerely to come, all the inhabytauntes of the vyllages & coũtrey there aboute. whyche daye of feast Philyp de Artiuele callynge to mynde / appoyntyd vnto hi. ii. M of his soudiours / & warned them with armoure beynge clad vnder theyr clothes, to ascende by .ii, by thre, by foure, & lyke small companyes vnto thys feestfull solempnyte / & at such tyme as he gaue warnyng, euery man to be redy with swerde in hande, to make rome amõge ỹ prese to the ende that they myght take the erle than of helpe destytute. whyche cautele thus prepared for / at the daye comyn of thys sayde feeste, the towne beynge replenysshed with people / the sayde Artuele vnsuspect of any persone, with hys company in maner aboue sayde entred the towne of Bruges. And whã he sawe his best tyme / he sodeynly cryed, a sarmis, a sarmes. with whyche sodeyn crye the erle beynge astonyed / mankully for a whyle withstode hys enemyes, and encouraged the people agayne them. But for that the Gaunteners were in armoure and the other vnarmed / they of the erles party fled soone. That seynge the erle, with great difficulte fledde / & so leppyng ieopardously into the house of an olde woman, escaped & went vnto Sclus, & there a whyle helde hym.

Than thys Artuele sayeng that by the ayde of theym of Bruges he was dispoynted of the erles takyng / felle vpon the inhabytauntes of the towne, and slewe of theym a certayn / and after with greate pompe & pylage retourned vnto Gaunt.

In the .vii. yere of this Charles / by procuryng of hys vncle Lewys duke of Angeou, a taxe was efte ared of the comons of Fraunce. The whych to bryng to effecte many frendes & promoters were made, aswell of cytezyns as other. But anone as ỹ commons of Paris vnderstode of this / they became wylde, & assembled in thycke companies / nat regardyng the reasonable allegacions to theym layed and shewed by Peter Dylet & Johñ Matsyll, though in them they had great affeccion & truste / but toke them to theyr affeccion & mynde, and made amonge them certayn capytaynes & rulers / and kept the watche by nyght

nyght as enemyes had lyen about ỹ cytye. whyche insurreccyon & rebellyon thus begon wythin the cytye of Parys / the cytye of Roañ takynge therof exaumple, arrered a lyke murmure/and fensyd the cytye of Roane wyth lyke prouysyon / & made theym a mamet of a fatte / and vnweldy as a vylayne of the cytye caryed him about the towne in a carte, & named hym in dyrysyō of theyr prynce theyr kynge/& ceased nat to fall into many inconuenyences, as robbyng of holy places and other, nat wythoute shedynge of bloode, wherof the cyrcumstaunce were longe to telle. But as all operaciō of mā hath ende/so thys folye and rebellyon of Frenchemen was ceased / & many for the trespasse therof caste in harde & darke prysons. Of the whyche the kynge entended to haue taken cruell correccyon, ne hadde ben the great instaunt labour made by the rulers of the vnyuersyte of Parys, and other suche as were nere aboute the kynge. By whose meanes the multytude was pardoned/and a fewe suche as were the begynners were put in execucyon. And than as testyfyeth myn auctour mayster Robert Gagwyne, for to appease the kynges hyghe displeasure, to hi was graūted an hūdreth thousande frankes, whyche after sterlynge money amoūteth the summe of .x. thousande li.

ye haue before harde howe ỹ erle of Flaūders wyth great ieopardy escaped the hādes of Phylyp de Artyuele capytayne of Gaūte/ & howe he came to Sclusse, and there safegarded hym selfe.. where wyth all dylygence he gathered vnto hym hys people, & made a new reyse vpō the sayd Artyuele. The whyche to hym hadde assocyat as affermeth my sayd auctor xl. M. mē / so that betwene the erle & hym was foughtē a cruell fyghte, wherof in ỹ ēde Artiuele was agayn vyctour, & cōstrayned the erle to forsake the feelde wyth losse of .x. M. of hys knyghtes/ & he hym self escaped wyth great daūger vnto the ylande of /and dyuers of hys people as Frēchmē and other, in a good noumbre fledde vnto a towne called Andwerpe/where a season they defēded them agayne the malyce of theyr enemyes. In whyche passe tyme this Artyuele cōiecturyng in hys mynde that the Frenche kynge wolde take the erles partye / sente vnto hym an ambassade or message wyth letters / besechynge hym nat to entremedle of thys warre betwene the erle and the Gaūteners / whyche warre the erle had commēced onely of tyranny and nat of iustyce, entēdyng vtterly to destroy the auncyēte lybertye & fraunchyse. Shewyng also farther, that yf he wolde nat at theyr cōtemplacyon & prayer forbere to ayde theyr sayde erle/that thā to defende theyr lyberte & ryght, they wolde seke ayde of the kynge of Englāde. To the whych requeste none answere was made, neyther by the kynge nor by hys coūsayll. wherfore thys Artyuele made stroūge prouysyon to wythstande ỹ Frēche kynge/and sette a certayne of hys soudyours for to kepe the syege before Andwerpe, whyle he made prouysyon for other nedes.

In thys meane whyle the erle went vnto the duke of Burgoyn/& they togyther yode after vnto kynge Charles/shewyng to him lamētably what wrōges ỹ erle had susteyned of ỹ obstynat Gaūteners/besechyng hym of ayde to redres ỹ sayd wrōges. which cōplaynt the kyng graciously herde/ and benygnly graūted to them theyr petycyon. And natwythstandynge that ỹ dede of wynter was cōmyng, he in all haste assembled hys knyghtes/& takynge wyth hym, the Dyf-

Cc. lambe,

flambe, wyth a myghty stronge hoste perced the coũtrey of Flaunders towarde Marquet in the ende of ỹ moneth of Octobre. wherof heryng Artuele/made prouisyon to stoppe the ways, by brekyng of brygges and other meanes/wherby the Frẽch hoste was greatly empeched & let / so that wyth great dyffycultye & daunger, they passed ỹ riuer of Lyze at a bryg longe defended by the inhabytaũtes of the coũtrey, wyth ayde of theyr capytayne named Peter wood/ whiche there was slayne wyth.iii.M. of hys adherẽtes. After wynnyng of whiche bryggе, the Frenche hoste passed the ryuer, & spoyled the countrey before them/whyche vnto them was moche auayable, for that cyrcuite was inhabyted with many ryche cloth makers Than the kyng with hys hoste made towarde the mount of Lyze. whereof the dwellers of Lyze beyng ware/ sẽt out two freers of ỹ ordre of prechers, to beseche the kynge to accepte that town and dwellers vnto hys mercy, the whych retourned wyth comfortable answere. wherfore forthwyth yode forthe. xii. of the notablest of ỹ towne, & offered the towne and dwellers to be in the kynges power. The whyche offer the kyng accepted/ and after entred the towne. Of whome ỹ kynge receyued.xl.M.frãkes, or.iiii. M.li.sterlynge toward the wagyng of hys knyghtes. And shortely after all the vyllages there toward the see submytted them vnto the king/bryngyng vnto hym certayn capytaynes whyche belonged vnto Phylyppe de Artuele, wyth also fourthy thousãd frankes towarde theyr costes/which capytaynes the kynge commaunded to be fourthe wyth beheded.

‡ The Staple of Courtray.

whanne kynge Charles hadde taryed fyue dayes at Lyze / worde was broughte to hym that Phylype Artuele was comynge towarde hym wyth.lx.thousand mẽ. wherfore the kyng set forwarde hys hoste, & followed after as fast as he myght some deale to hys payne, by reasõ of rayne & fowle waye that he passed / so that fynally he approched wythin.iii.myles of his enmyes. ‡ Upõ the morowe folowynge beynge the.v. daye of the moneth of December, & yere of oure lordes incarnacion .M.CCC.lxxx.& viii.and begynnyng of the.viii. yere of thys Charles / in a playne nere vnto ỹ town of Courtray was foughten a cruell batayll. whereof in the begynnyng the Flemynges had the better, & forced the Frenche hoste to lose place. But in the ende, by specyall callynge of the Frenche knyghtes vnto our Ladye & other sayntes / halfe by myracle as wytnesseth myne auctor, the Frẽchmen optayned victory, and put the Flemynges to flyght/ & them chased in so cruell wyse, that by deth in the feelde/ & drownyng in mareys and other waters, there was of them slayne at that fyghte vppon.xl.M. Than narowe serche was made for the capytayn Phylyppe de Artuele. And lastly a flemynge beyng a capytayne of hys sore wounded/ sayde that he sawe hym fall in the feelde. whereuppon serche beyng made/hys carye was founden oppressed of hys owne people as they fledde. And none as tydynges came vnto the Flemynges, ỹ laye about Andwerpe of the losynge of the felde / they in all haste leuynge theyr ordenaũce behynde thẽ, fledde frõ the syege. That percepuyng theyr enemyes, issued oute of the towne/ and slewe of theym many / & many were drowned in fennys and mareys.

whanne the Frenche kynge had optayned thus this glorious victory he than entred the town of Courtray. where he solempnyge hym / oratours

were

were sent to hym frome the towne of Bruges, whyche than hadde newely taken party wyth Artyuele/ & wyth ỹ payemente of an .C. & xx. M. frankes or xii. M. li. sterlynge money, there made a peace for the sayde towne of Bruges.

And whan the kyng shuld depart from Courtray/ he commaunded his knyghtes to bete downe the gates of the same, wythoute harme doynge vnto the people. But the Frenchmen berynge in mynde the rebukes and harmes, whyche they before of that towne had sustayned / bete downe great parte of the walles, robbed and slewe moche of the people, & sette fyre vpon the towne whā they had done. In robbynge of thys towne of Courtray, dyuers letters were founde of ỹ towne or cytye of Paris, whych conteyned the rebellyō of the Parysyences before declared, wyth comforte to theym for ayde if they neded. whyche letters whā they came vnto the kynges syght, he was wyth theym of Paris greuously displeased/ and for the same, theym by fyne greuously after punysshed. At such tyme as the kyng hadde thus repossessed the erle of the lordshyp of Flaūders/ Gaunt yet remaynynge in theyr fyrst errour, held theyr towne so strōgely, that nother kynge nor erle myght wynne within theym. All be it that after the French kynge was retourned into Fraunce/ they sent certayn oratours vnto hym, the whyche he in no wyse wolde suffer to come in hys syght.

In these passed yeres many skyrmysshes and fyghtes were done betwene the Frēchemen & Englysshmē, whyche some deale are touched in the begynnynge of Rychardes reygne. But nothynge to the honoure of the Frenchemen, as they in theyr cronycles boste & auaunce theym selfe. Many mo rebellyōs & insurrecyōs of thys people myght I here bryngē in. But for dyuers consyderacions whyche to wyse men maye appere, I thynke it better to spare/ & also there hersayll of them wolde aske a longe tracte of tyme, wherefore I passe ouer.

After the appeasynge of these inordynate insurrecyōs and murmures, & that the lāde was some deale sette in a quyetnes/ kyng Charles in the begynnynge of the .xv. yere of hys reygne, maryed Isabell the doughter of the duke of Bauary. In thys yere also dyed Charles ỹ kynge of Nauerne a man of great age/ and by a wonderfull happe as reherseth myne auctoure. For so it was, that for hys feblenesse or debylyte of age/ he by counsayll of physycyons was sowed in a shete wesshed wyth aqua vite, to the ende to cause hys olde body to catche naturall hete. But howe it was, as thys shete was tacked aboute hys bodye/ the sewer takynge hys candell to burne of ỹ ende of the trede, or he were ware the fyre fastened in the shete / & so brente hys flesh or it myght be lowsed frō hym, that he caught therof suche displeasle, that he dyed the .iii. daye folowyng. whyche myshappe fell to hym after ỹ opynyon of myne auctour by ỹ wyrche of god, as cōdygne meryte for his vnstedfastnesse & vntroth by hym before vsed, as in sundry places before in the storyes of kyng Johñ & Charles hys sonñ are manyfestly shewed. Death of Charles kynge of Nauerne.

In thys yere also a batayll was done at Paris betwene .ii. knyghtes of the duke of Alenson / whereof the cause ensueth. Thys sayd duke had in hys court two knyghtes/ whereof that one was named Johñ Carengō or Carongyon, and that other Jaquet Grysee, whyche were bothe in good fauoure of theyr mayster.

Thys Carongon, were it for delyte to se straunge countreys, or cause of other auenture as pilgrymage or other, departed out of Fraūce, leuyng hys wyfe in a castel or forteresse of his owne/whyche wyfe was goodly and fayer.

After whose departynge, were it for beauty of the womā or for euyll wyl that he bare towarde hys felow/ this Jaquet Gryse entryd the castel, berynge hys wyfe on hande, that he was comyn to se that house, whyche shewed so fayre outwarde. The woman castynge no parell, acceptynge hym for her husbādes frende & hyrs shewed to him the cyrcuite of ỹ place. But he in contrary awaytynge hys, praye, whan he sawe the womā farre from company, forced hym in suche maner, that contrary hyr wyll he cōmysed wyth her auoutry. At whose departyng she gaue vnto hym many rebukeful wordes/sayenge playnlye that yf hyr husbāde euer retourned, she wolde of that velany be reuēged. Thys dede was kepte secrete tyll the retourne of hyr husbande. At whose home commyng, she wyth lamētable countenaunce shewed tyll hyr husbande all the demeanure of the sayd Jaquet.

After whyche complaynte by hyr husbande well vnderstanden / he yode strepght vnto the duke of Alenson/requyrynge hym to do correccion vpō the auoutrer, or els ỹ he myghte trye it with hym in ỹ felde by fortune of batayll / whereof nother the duke wolde graunt, but brought the quarell before the kyng. By whose agrement and commaundemente a daye by the kynge was sette to fyghte at Parys. whā the daye of batayll was comen/Carogon broughte hys wyfe vnto the place, to iustyfye hyr former sayenge. After affyrmacyon whereof/ eyther fyrste ranne at other wyth sharpe speres. At whyche course Jaquet wounded hys enemie in the thyghe wyth hys spere. But Carongon beynge wyth it nothynge dysmayed/lyght from hys horse, and bare hym so manfully, that he ouercame hys aduersarye, & caused hym to confesse hys offence/ for the whych he was strepght drawen vnto the gybet of Parys, and there hāged. And to the sayd Carongon the kyng gaue in rewarde a thousande frākes or a hundreth poūde sterlynge money / & ouer that he gaue vnto hym as an annuall fee or rent two hūdreth frankes, whyche is in value of .xx. poūde sterlynge money.

In these dayes as wytnesseth Gagwynus / an anker berynge in hys hande a rede crosse, a man to loke to of goostlye conuersacyon, came vnto the Frēche kynges court. The which by the housholde seruaūtes or kamplyers of the court, was lōge kept frō hys presence/all be it that lastelye he was brought vnto hym. To whome he shewed that he was deuynely monysshed, that he shulde charge hym to absteyne from hys customable vse in leuynge so often taskes & subsydyes / & yf he dyd nat, he shulde well vnderstande, that the wrath of god was nere to hym to punysshe hym, yf he refused hys commaūdement. The whyche message the kynge toke at small regarde. But shortly after the quene was delyuered of a doughter that dyed soone after. wherefore the kynge callynge to mynde the ankers wordes / for fere of other punysshement refrayned a season frome leuynge of trybutes and taskes.

But by the exortacion of hys two vnkylles, he in shorte season after tourned to hys former custome. Kynge Charles thus passynge hys tyme wyth greate murmure of hys commons, & rebellyon of the duke of Bryteyn,

Bꝛytayn, wyth many other aduerſytyes whych were longe to wꝛyte/ laſtly in the.xiiii. yere of hys reygne oꝛ nere about, he made warre vpon the people of weſt Fraunce called in latē Cenomanni.

Whan Charles was entred thys countrey, whyche was in the domynyon of the duke of Bꝛytayn/ ꝑ duke ſent vnto hym meſſengers, ſayenge to hym that he ſhulde nat nede to inuade hys coūtrey wyth ſo great ſtrēghte/ foꝛ he and his ſhuld be hooly at hys commaundement. But of thys meſſage ꝑ king toke no regard/ foꝛas ſayth myne auctour, he wasnat moſt wyſeſt pꝛynce, but was ruled by hys houſholde ſeruauntes, and belyued euery lyght tale that was bꝛought to hym/ and ouer that he was ſo lyberal that it was of wyſe men accompted moꝛe pꝛodygalyte than lyberalitye. As Charles nat wythſtandyng this meſſage of ꝑ duke helde on his iournay/ commynge nere vnto a woode, he was ſodeynly mette of a man lyke vnto a begger whyche ſayde vnto hī whither goeſt thou ſyꝛ kyng/ beware thou go no farther foꝛ thou arte betrayed/ and into the handes of thyne enemyes thyne owne meyny ſhall delyuer the. wyth thys monyſſion of thys pooꝛe mā/ the kynge was aſtonyed, & ſtoode ſtyl, and begā to muſe. In whyche ſtudy he ſo beyng/ one of hys folowers whyche after hym bare his ſpere, ſleped vpō his hoꝛſe backe/ & in hys ſo ſleppyng let hys ſpere fall vpon the helmet of hys felowe. wyth whych ſtroke the kyng was ſodeynly fered, thynkynge hys enemyes had commen vnwarely vpō hym. wherefoꝛe he in a gere dꝛewe hys ſwerde & layed about hym at the geyneſt, and ſlewe.iiii. of his knyghtes oꝛ he were refrayned/ and toke therewyth ſuche an endelye fere, that he fell therwyth dyſtraughte.

wherefoꝛe he was to a place there by bꝛoughte, & lay there in poynte of deth a longe ſeaſon after, in ſo moch that the fame ranne that he was ded. But by pꝛayers & other greate dedes of charyte done foꝛ hym/ laſtely he recouered and retourned vnto Parys. And foꝛ he was nat yet retourned to hys perfyghte helthe/ his two vncles than beynge that one duke of Berry, & that other duke of Burgone, toke vpon them by auctoꝛyte of the aſtates of the lande, to rule the realm foꝛ that ſeaſon/ in whyche ſeaſon diuers officers were altered & chaūged. The kyng thus contynuyng his ſykenes/ many interludes and games were deuyſed foꝛ the kynges recreacyon & comfoꝛte.

And vppō a ſeaſon he beynge lodged in the quenes lodgynge in the ſubarbes of ſaynte Marcell/ dyuers noble men of the courte made a dyſguyſynge, and apparayled theym in lynnen clothes glewed vnto theyꝛ naked bodyes wyth pytche/ & floꝛiſſhed theym wyth dyuerſe colours & oyles ſo that they were couered all excepte the faces/ and thus apparayled with toꝛche lyghte entred the Chaumbꝛe where as the kyng was, and there in goodly maner ſhewed theyꝛ diſpoꝛt/ ſo that the kynge was therewith wel contented.

But were it of recheleſneſſe oꝛ of ſome euyl diſpoſed perſon/ fyꝛe was put to the veſtures of the diſguyſers/ the whyche anone was vppon ſuche a flame, that no man there coulde quenche it. wherfoꝛe the ſayd diſguyſers beynge by reaſon of pytche and oyles greuouſly turmented, ranne into pyttes and waters whyche they myghte ſoneſt attayne vnto/ and ſo wyth greate dyffyculte ſaued theym ſelfe.

In meane tyme whereof, the chaū ber beynge wyth the ſame fyꝛed,

grewe in so greate a flame, that in shorte whyle the more parte of that lodgynge was consumed/ to ỹ great fere of ỹ kynge and other astates thā there beynge presente, and augmentynge agayne of his former sykenes/ so that certayne appoyntementes to be holdē betwene hym and Rychard kynge of Englande, were for that tyme put of.

IN the .xbi. yere of thys Charles / the maryage of peace betwene bothe realmes was concluded and fynysshed at Calays / as before I haue shewed to you in the .xir. yere of kyng Rychard. And that triumphe fynysshed/ Charles at the cōtemplacyon and prayer of the kynge of Hungry, sent vnto hym Philyp erle of Artoys, wyth dyuers other knyghtes in good noumber, to ayde ỹ sayd kynge agayne the Turkys. The whyche after that they hadde there a season warred/ the cayptaynes & the more party of the frenchemen, of the Turkys were dystressed & slayne/ & many taken prisoners to theyr great charge.

Thys Charles thus contynuyng hys sykenesse / two freres of sayncte Augustynes order beynge desyrous of money, toke vppon theym to cure the kyng. And after they had shauen hys hede and mynistred to hym medicyns/ the kynge dayly febled in suche wyse ỹ he was nye dede. For whyche cōsyderacyon/ they exampned by phylosophers and doctours of physyke & founden vncunnynge, were degraded of theyr prestlhode, & after beheded. To thys folye were these freres brought, by the excytynge of the duke of Burgoyne as the common fame went.

In the .xir. yere of thys Charles the lande of fraunce was greuously vexed wyth the plage of ippodymye/ of whyche sykenesse a greate multytude of people dyed. And that yere was there also sene a blasynge starre of wonderfull bygnes, wyth stremes apperynge to mēes syghte of moste feruent brennynge. In thys yere also Charles herynge of ỹ subduyng of kynge Rychard, sente into Englande two of hys housholde knyghtes / requyrynge kynge Henry the fourth than newelye made kynge, to sende home hys doughter Isabell latelye maryed vnto kyng Rychard, wyth suche dowar as wyth hyr was promysed.

In doynge of whyche message kynge Henry toke such dysplesure, that as sayeth Gagwinus myne auctour, he threwe the sayde twoo knightes in prysone/ where through one of theym named Blanchet dyed in Englande, and that other called Henry, after greate sykenesse retourned into fraunce. And shortely after kynge Henry sente the sayde dame Isabell vnto Calays / where she was ioyously receyued of the frenchemen, and so conueyed vnto hyr sayde father, whyche as yet was nat of hys sykenesse cured. By reason whereof among the lordes of fraūce, euerych of them coueytyng to haue rule, great dyssencion & malyce begā to kendle / and specyallye betwene the dukes of Orleaunce, of Burgoyne, and of Berry. Than the duke of Orleaunce entēdyng to promote hys cause / vnknowyng the other lordes, allyed hym wyth ỹ duke of Geldre, & strēghthed hym wyth .v. C. men of hys, & so entred the feeldes of Parys. And in lyke maner ỹ duke of Burgoyne wyth a stronge cōpany kept an other cooste of ỹ countrey.

Natwythstandyng by meanes of other lordes these two dukes were kept a sunder/ & at lenghte ỹ duke of Orleyaunce by the kynges comaundemente

dement that somewhat was than amended, was ordayned regente of the realme. The whiche anone as he was sette in auctorite / fell to all raupne, and oppressed the people with cotydyan taskes and tallages/ and ỳ spirituall men with dymes & other exaccyons. wherfore by reason of the studentes of Parys, he was at lengthe discharged of that dignyte, and the duke of Burgoyne for hym put in auctorite. Than the duke of Orleyaunce beynge discontented, rode vnto Lucebourgth a towne in highe Almayne, & sought agayne ayde of the duke of Geldre forsayd. But by his frendes he was so aduertysed, ỳ with his owne folkes he returned in to Fraunce. But yet the malyce and stryfe atwene hym and the duke of Burgoyne sealed nat.

About this season or soone after, dyed the duke of Bretayne. And as affermeth the auctour afore named / kyng Henry ỳ. iiii. maryed his wyfe. wherof hering ỳ duke of Burgoyne, with a company of. vi. M. knyghtes entred Bretayne/ & there by strength toke from her, her. iii. sonnes named Johñ, Richard, & Arthure/ & presented them vnto kynge Charles. In ỳ xrii. yere of this Charles, was borne of Isabell hys wyfe a man chylde, which also was named Charles/ the which after the deth of his father, vnto ỳ great aduersyte of all the realme of Fraũce, was kyng of that realme/ & contrary the appountment taken atwene Henry the. v. after kynge of Englande, and thys Charles the father nowe of Fraunce kynge/ as after shall more appere in the story of the sayde kynge Henry the fyfte.

In this yere also was dame Isabell somtyme wyfe of Rychарde lately kynge of Englande, maryed vnto Charles eldeste sonne of the duke of Orleyaunce. And Johñ the eldyste of the. iii. forenamed sonnes of the duke of Bretayne lately dede/ toke to wyfe Margarete ỳ doughter of kynge Charles. And Phylyppe duke of Burgoyne dyed soone after/ leavynge an heyre after hym named Johñ. The whyche after he was gyrde with the swerde of the duchye of Burgoyne/ he anone by cyvyll entysynge and counsell, areryd warre agayne the duke of Orleyaunce, to the great dysturbaunce of all the realme. For the sayde duke of Orleyaunce was a prynce of a wonderfull hyghe courage, and desyrous of great honoure/ and after the sayenge of Sagwynus coueyted to be kynge of Fraunce. The whyche went to Aupngnyon/ where as than sate the. xiii. Benet thã pope duryng the scisme, and adnytted by some of the Cardynalles after the dethe of Clement ỳ. vi. To whiche Benet the said duke made great labour, to deprive the Vnuersite of Parys from ỳ great auctorite ỳ it at those dayes stode in/ whiche was of merueylous auctorite than, as sayeth the forenamed auctour. In thys whyle thus endurynge the lande full of mysteryes & aduersites/ the quene which ỳ moche fauoured the dukes partie, accompanyed with the sayd duke rode to take her dysporte of huntynge in to the countrey of Meldon. To whiche place she sente letters vnto the Dolphyn by ỳ duke of Bauary her brother, that he with hys wyfe whiche was doughter vnto the duke of Burgoyne, shulde come for to dysporte theym. whereof Johñ thanne duke of Burgoyne beynge warned/ suspected the quene, that she wyth ayde of the duke wolde conueye the Dolphyn into Germanye, and there to holde hym at theyr pleasures. And to enpeche that purpose/ he i all haste sped him towarde ỳ Dolphyn/

and contrary the mynde of the duke of Bauarye whiche than was vpon his waye with the sayd Doulphyne towarde the quene, retourned hym and lodged him in a stronge castell called Lupar. whereof herynge the duke of Orleyaunce / assembled to hym a cõpany of. vi. thousande knyghtes & came agayne towarde Parys, where as that tyme the duke of Burgoyne was. And he herynge of ỹ dukes cõmyng, made him stronge to receyue hym. To whome the cytezens of Parys were fauourable & aydynge, for the euyll wyll that they before bare vnto the duke of Orleyaunce / & also for they hoped by hym to be defended from taskes and tallages. Thus contynuynge the prouisyon vpon bothe partyes to mete shortely in playne batayle/ suche polytike meanes was foũde by a noble man called Mountague, that a concorde and vnyte was for that tyme by hym sette atwene the sayd dukes. And for that newe occasyon shulde nat by presẽce kyndle atwene them / therfore ỹ duke of Orleyaunce with hys company was sent into Guyan, to warre vpon the englysshemen / & that other vnto Calays to lay syege vnto that towne. The which before had prepared a wonderfull engyne sette vpon whelys / by the strength wherof he thoughte to wreke greate dysturbaunce vnto the sayd towne / & as sayth myne auctour Gagwyne, was in great hoope to recouer it agayne to the subiecyon of the house of Fraũce. But that hope was soone dyspayred/ for it was nat longe after or the sayd duke by the kynge was countermaunded and returned. And the duke of Orleyaunce, after he knewe that rescous were commyng frõ Burdeaux/ he remoued his siege layde by hym to Burgus a towne of Guyan/ & so returned into Fraunce, to his cõsulyon as after shall appere.

In the. xxvii. yere of this Charles/ the former malyce and enuye contynuyng in the brestes of the sayd dukes of Orleyaunce and of Burgoyne/ as the sayd duke of Orleyaunce was goynge towarde hys lodgynge in the nyght of the. x. daye of Decembre, fell vpon him certayne knyghtes, of the whiche one named Rafe Auctouyle was leder / & slewe hym nere vnto a gate of the cytie of Parys named Barbet gate.

After whyche murder fynysshed/ ỹ sayde sir Rafe with hys adherentes fledde vnto the place of the erle of Artoys, where the duke of Burgoyne vsed accustomably to resorte. And ỹ dede corps, was soone after by suche as came to ỹ exclamacyõ, with also a seruaũt of his with him slaine/ borne into ỹ next houses. whan the rumour of this murder was blowen about ỹ cytie/ anone Lewys vncle vnto the kynge and than kynge of Secyle, the dukes of Berry and of Burbon with other, drewe thyder/ and there with lamentacyon beholdynge the corps, commaunded prouisyon to be made for the buryenge of it within the monastery of Celestynes/ where vpon the seconde day folowynge, he was buryed wyth great pompe. whome amõge other lordes folowed to his buryenge the duke of Burgoyne, nat without great suspicyon of the sayd murder. And that enterrement with due obseruaunce fynysshed/ auctoryte was gyuen vnto. ii. knyghtes named Roberte Tuyller & Peter Orpheuer, to make enquery for the murder of this prince. wherof the duke of Burgoyne beynge ascertayned, voyded the cytie, & brake the brydge of sayncte Marence after hym, that pursute after hym shulde nat be made / and so hastely spedde hym,

hym, that that nyght folowynge he came to Andwarpe, whiche is vpon an. C. myle from Parys. whan Charles the kyng harde of the escape of ỹ sayd duke/ feryng leste he wolde accuse hym to be consentyng vnto that euyll dede, sent vnto hym comfortable messages / so that the sayde duke without warre restyd all that wynter, sometyme in Arthoys, and an other whyle in Flaunders at his pleasure. In the whiche passyme he sente into dyuers places of Fraunce sondry accusacyons of the duke before sayne, that he entẽded to depose the kyng, and to take vpon hym the rule & gouernaunce of the realme, and to haue poysoned the sayd kyng, as by dyuers tokens by hym affermed for perfourmaũce of the same. And also that the said duke of Orleyaũce was cause of fyrynge of ỹ disguysers garmentes before shewed, to the ende to bryng the kyng in more daunger of syckenes, or els to be consumed with the same fyre/ with sondry other diffamacyons, as leuynge of taskes and imposicyons of the people, to his singuler auauntage and hougely enrychynge, wherby he myghte the soner attayn vnto his said purpose. Thus contynuyng this great vnkyndenes atwene the duke of Burgoyne, and the sonne and other of his blode of ỹ duke of Orleyaunce/ the said duke agayne the begynnynge of the yere, herynge that the king and the quene were departed from Parys to Charters, assẽbled to hym a strõge power of Holãders & other, and came vnto Parys, in which cytte he moch trusted/ to the ende to cause the kynge, ỹ quene, and the Doulphyn, to whome he hadde maryed hys doughter, for to retourne vnto Parys. And to strengthe hys partye, he broughte with hym wyllyam erle of Hanster/ which wyllyam was a man of great strengthe and allyaunce, and hadde maryed hys syster vnto the duke of Burgoyne forsayde / and hys doughter and heyre vnto one of kyng Charles sonnes/ and was gossyppe vnto the quene. For whyche sayde consyderacyons, the sayde erle entendynge the weale of that realme of Fraunce, laboured suche wayes and meanes, that by hym for that tyme a rencorde and vnyte was dryuen and made atwene the two dukes of Orleyaunce and Burgoyne, wyth assured othes and necessary actes to that concorde belongynge / and the king with his retynewe was agayne retourned vnto Parys. These dukes thus appeased, and the duke of Burgoyne agayne restored to the gouernaunce of the realme / associate vnto hym the kynge of Nauerne, whyche varyed nat from his fathers vnstable condycyons/ so that by hym newe occasyons of stryfe and varyaunce were moued atwene the sayde dukes and theyr allyes. For fyrste they soughte occasyon agayne the forenamed Mountague, a man of great wysedome and honoure in the kynges courte, and especyall frende vnto the duke of Orleyaunce/ and by theyr malyce and vntrewe surmyses fynally putte to dethe. And one named Peter Essayer or Sayer thẽ prouoste of the cytie of Parys or gouernoure, they admytted to the rule of the kynges treasoury / and other dyuers offyces suche as were any thynge fauoured of the duke of Orleaũce, they clerely dyscharged. The whyche for theyr relefe and comfort resorted vnto the sayde duke, shewynge to him all ỹ demeanure of their aduersaryes / addynge therunto, ỹ all suche conuencyons concernynge the amyte atwene hym and the duke of Burgoyne before swore & enacted, were clerely adnulled & broken,

with

with these tydynges the duke beyng fyred with newe malyce, accompanyed to hym the dukes of Berry, of Burbon, and of Alenson, the erles of Rychemounte, of Alyberte, and of Armenake, with other nobles nat a fewe / by whose counsels he determyned to be auenged vpon the duke of Burgoyne & other his fautours. wherof the sayde duke beyng monysshed, drewe him towarde Parys, and strengthed the fortresses as he yode. To thys duke of Burgoyne was brother the duke of Brabande named Antony, a man of great polycye and wysedome / the whych forecastynge the great shedynge of chrysten mannes blode, with many other inconuenyences lykely to haue ensued of this varyaunce atwene these two dukes, made suche affectuous labour, that with great difficulte he pacifyed them agayne for that tyme/ and brought them to personall communicacyon, and lastely to amyable and frendely departynge. After whiche concorde and amyte thus agayn concluded/the duke of Burgoyne departed unto Pycardy, leauynge behynde hym the fore named Peter Essay to rule the cytie of Parys. The whiche shortely after drewe to hym suche persones, as before tyme had vered and dystourbed ỳ duke of Orleyaunce frendes & seruauntes within that cytie. By whose meanes the sayd Peter sought fyrste occasyon agayne a knight named Uenyt Thorney / and by false suggestyon smote fyrste of his hede, and after dyd hys body to be hanged vpon the cõmon gybet of Parys, in dyspyte of ỳ sayd duke as test.fyeth myne Auctoure. wherwith ỳ duke beyng wonderly amoued/resembled his knyghtes, & spedde hym towarde a towne named And for to strengthe another towne named , he sente a certayne nombre of his knyghtes / chargyng them with the dwellers to withstande the force of his enemies. Of this hearynge the duke of Burgoyne/anone gathered vnto him the noumbre of.xvi.M. flemynges and Pycardes / and sped hym vnto the sayde towne of And so with his instrumentes of warre assayled the gate of the sayde towne, whyche leadeth towarde saynt Quintyne, ỳ in shorte space the sayde Flemynges wan the entre of the towne. In whyche meane season the dwellers wyth the other soudyours by a backe way or water, wherof the maner by thys auctoure is nat expressyd / lefte the towne, & yode vnto the duke of Orleyaunce beyng as yet at the forsayde towne of whan the Flemynges were entered the towne, & foũde it deserte of people and pillage/were it for that they lacked theyr prayer, or for other cause here nat shewed/they toke suche vnkyndenes agayne the duke, that for prayer nor yet for manasses they wolde nat with hym any lenger tary/but returned them home in all hastely spede towarde theyr owne countrey. So that the duke was fayne to withdrawe/and for the more suretie, to aske ayde and helpe of Englysshemen / and so was holpen by the prynces comforte Henrye sonne of Henry the.iiii, as after shall be touched in the.xii.yere of the.iiii. Henry.

In the.xxvi.yere of thys kynge Charles, whiche was the.xii. yere of the.iiii.Henry than kynge of Englande/the duke of Orleyaunce seynge his enemye was turned from Parys, caused suche Brydges as before by his said enemye were broken to be reedyfyed. By the whyche he passed the ryuer tyll he came to saint Denys/where as than he fande a ca

pytayne

capptayne a noble man named ſyr Johñ Cabylon of the dukes of Burgoyne, there lefte by hym to ſtrengthe the towne. The whiche ſyr Johñ, cõſiderynge ꝑ wekenes of ꝑ ſaid towne. with alſo his lacke of ſtrẽgth/ yelded hym & the towne vnto the duke/ ſwerynge to him by ſolempne othe, that after ꝑ daye he ſhulde neuer bere armes agayne hym. In this paſtyme an other capptayne of the Burgonyons called Gancourt, ſecretely by night wan vpon the frenche men the bꝛydge of ſaynte Clodalde. But nat longe after the duke of Oꝛleaunce ſent thyther certayne Bꝛytons / the whiche agayne recouered the ſayde bꝛydge, & helde it vnto ꝑ ſayd dukes vſe. In whyche tyme and ſeaſon the duke of Burgoyne recouerynge hys ſtrength, paſſed the bꝛydge of Melent, & ſo came vnto the cytie of Paꝛys / and the daye folowynge wyth helpe of the cyteſyns recouered the aboueſayd bꝛydge of ſaynt Clodald, and dyſtreſſed vpon a. M. Bꝛytons, whyche had the warde of the ſame. Then the duke of Oꝛleaunce made out of ſaynte Denys ouer Sayne bꝛydge to warde Paꝛys. wherof that other duke beynge warned, refuſed the cytie / and with the kynge than there beynge preſent, remoupd wyth the Dolphyne to the towne called Stamps/and ſent ꝑ erle of Marche named Jamys, wyth a certeyne knyghtes to a towne named to ſtrengthe it agayne the duke of Oꝛleaunce. The whyche of the ſayde dukes knyghtes was encountred with and taken, and ſo ſent to pꝛyſon. wherof herynge the duke of Burgoyne, in ſhoꝛte pꝛoceſſe after retourned vnto Paꝛys wyth the kyng and dolphyne/and the duke of Oꝛleaũce rode to a towne called Seyntclowe.

And in the. xxxii. yere of thys ſayd kynge Charles, by counceyll of the duke of Berry and other, ſeyng that the ſayde cytye of Paꝛys was ſo ſet agayne hym wyth alſo the kynge & the dolphine, ſent a noble man of his hoſte named Alberte vnto Henry the iiii. yet kynge of Englande, to requyꝛe hym of ayde to withſtande the tyꝛannye of the duke of Burgoyne, that wyth hys complyces entendyd to ſubuerte the realme of Fraunce. To this requeſte kynge Henry gaue good eare, and laſtely graunted to hys petycyon/ & ſent thyder as ſayth the frenche cronycle, Thomas hys ſonne duke of Clarence/alſo ꝑ duke of yoꝛke, wyth Johñ erle of Coꝛnewayle, accompanyed wyth. viii. C. knyghtes and ſowdyours, & a thouſande archers. The whych company when they were landed in Fraunce, & herde ꝑ the French loꝛdes were in treaty of peace, & no man to thẽ gaue wages as they tofoꝛe were ,pinyſed/ fell vpon a towne called and it ryfled/ & therin toke as pꝛyſoners the abbot of that monaſtery wyth other, and cõueyed thẽ to Burdeaur, and after into Englande/ where foꝛ theyꝛ fynaunce & other money due of olde by the frenche kynge, as affermeth Gagwyne, they remayned many yeres after. And that the Engliſh men were thus departed, albeit that in the Engliſſhe cronycle and. viii. yere of the foꝛenamed kynge Henry, of them is other repoꝛt made/ the loꝛdes of Fraunce retourned to theyꝛ olde diſcẽcyon & contynued in longe ſtryfe/ wherof the cyꝛcũſtaunce were longe and tedyouſe to tell, & to ſhewe the vnſtablyneſſe of them, how ſome whyle the duke of Oꝛleaunce was fauoured of the kynge and the dolphyne, and there agayne the duke of Burgoyne cleyne out of concepte. The which cõtencyõ thus endurynge kyng Henry ꝑ iiii. dyed / and Henry his ſon ꝑ. v. Henry, was admitted foꝛ

kynge

kyng of Englande after hym / that shortly after sent his ambassadours vnto the Frenche kynge, axynge of hym his doughter Katheryne in maryage as affirmeth the frenche boke. But dyuers other wryters shewe, ꝑ he asked the hoole landes due to him within the realme of Fraũce, by reason of the composicion made in tyme passed, atwene his progenytour Edwarde the thyrde, & Johñ than king of Fraunce. And for he was dysdeynously answered / he therfore made vpõ them sharpe warre, as in the.iii. yere of ꝑ sayd Hẽry after some deale dothe appere. By reason of whyche warre, the cyuyle batayle or stryfe ꝑ longe whyle had cõtynued amonge the frenche men, than dyd aswage. For in the.iii.yere of this Henry, whiche was the.xxxv.yere of this Charles/the said Henry inuaded ꝑ realme of Fraunce, & had at Egyncourte a tryumphant victory/as in the sayde thyrde yere of Hẽry the.v.is more at lengthe declared. Than it foloweth in the story, after many townes and stronge holdes by the englysshe men in sondry places of Fraũce opteined/ in ꝑ.xxx.& viii.yere of this Charles, a frenche man named ꝑ lorde of the Ile of Adam & Johñ Vpliers in proper name, gatheryng to hym a company of tyrauntes to the nombre of. CCC.or mo/wherof many were old seruaũtes of the kynges housholde, & than put out by ꝑ Dolphyn & other that than had the rule of the kynge/ by treason of a clerke opteyned the keyes of one of the Gates of Paris, and so entred the cytie by nyght/& by a watche worde amonge them deuysed, associate to them many Burgonyons/and so beynge stronge, rode where the kyng was, and gate ꝑ rule of his persone. And that done, all suche as they myght fynde that than bare any rule, they slewe by one meane & other/so that vpon ꝑ day folowyng, was nombred of dede corses wythin the cytie vpon.iiii.M. Amonge the whiche, of noble men was Henry de Marle than Chaunceller of Fraũce, & Grauntpre with many other. And for to haue the more assystence of the cõmon people/the sayd Vpliers set ꝑ kyng vpon an horse, and ladde hym about the cytie, as he that had small reason to guyde hym selfe/& so ruled all thyng as he & his cõpany wolde. wherfore the Dolphyn fervyng to fall in the daunger of so wylde a cõpany, rode to Meldune or / and there called to hym suche as then were lefte on lyue to withstãde these tyrauntes, and ꝑ duke of Burgoyne than beynge within the cytie, & compasser of all thys myschefe as some construed and demed. After whyche company to hym gathered he returned to the cytie of Paris, and assayled one of the gates. But whanne he sawe ꝑ cytezens toke partye agayne hym, he thoughte his trauayle loste. wherfore without great assaute makyng, he called thence his knightes, and so departed agayne to the place whiche he came fro/and from thens vnto Thuron, in appeasynge the countreys & townes as he went, whiche at those dayes were farre out of raine. And than in the.xxxix.yere of the sayd Charles/king Henry the.v. landed with a stroge power at a place called Touke in Normandy/ and after layde syege to manye stronge holdes and townes & them wanne, as Cane, Phaleys, Roan, and other/ as in the.vi.yere of the sayd Henrye folowynge is more at lengthe declared. In tyme of whyche warre thus made by kynge Henry/the Dolphyn and the duke of Burgoyne, eyther of them prouyded to defende the malyce of the other / in so moche that as testyfyeth the frenche cronycle,

the

the duke was aduysed to haue taken partie with the Englisshemen. This sayeng as wytnesseth an auctour named Floure of hystoryes, which toucheth in laten many gestes & dedes done by kynges of Englãde/ sayeth that the Frenche men bryng in that, for to excuse theyr infortune & cowerdyse/ by reason whereof they loste nat all onely theyr lande, but also the honoure & name of the same. Than lastely the duke beynge of mynde by exortacyon of Phylyppe Iosquyne and Johñ de Tolongñ, with also a lady called the countesse of Grat/ the duke was reconsyled vnto the Dolphyne/ and a day of metynge apoynted at Monstruell, where eyther of them shulde be accõpanyed with .x. lordes onely without mo. At whyche day the sayd prynces with theyr assygned lordes beynge assembled / many reasons and argumẽtes were layde and replyed vpon bothe sydes. By occasyon wherof one of the Dolphyns company sodainly drewe hys knyfe and strake the duke vnto the harte, so that he dyed soone after. whyche murder was supposed to be done by a knyght called Tangyde de Chastell / whyche oftyme passed had ben kamplyer seruaunt with the duke of Orleyaũce before slayne, by meanes of the sayde duke of Burgoyne.

After whiche murder thus commytted / the lande of Fraunce was broughte in moche more stryfe & baryaunce/ in so moche that Phylyppe the sonne of the sayde Johñ duke of Burgoyne beynge than in Parys, & haupnge the rule of ỹ kynge and the cytie, toke partie with the Englysshe men agayne ỹ Dolphyn. By reason wherof as sondry wryters agre, kinge Henryes ptie was greatly augmented & holpen / so that fynally kynge Henry opteyned moche of his wyll/ & shortly after maryed dame Katheryne doughter of Charles kynge in the .xli. yere of his regne, with assuraunce & promyse of the inheryta-ũce of the realme of Fraunce to him and his heyres after the dethe of the said Charles/ as to you more plainly shal be shewed in the .viii. yere of the said Henry the fyfte. After whyche maryage concluded and fynysshed / yet ỹ Dolphyn ceased nat to make newe mocyons & sterynges. Durynge the whyche, kynge Charles dyed in Octobre/ and was buryed at saynt Denys, whan he had regned in greate trouble vpõ the poynt of .xlii. yeres/ leauyng after hym as is affirmed by the forenamed auctour Gaguyne, a sonne & Dolphyn of Vyenne called Charles, whyche after was kyng of Frenchemen, and was named Charlys the .vii. or the .viii. after some wryters.

Henry the .iiii.

Anglia.



Enry the .iiii. of that name, and sonne of Johñ of Gaunte late duke of Lãcaster/ toke possessyon of the dompnion of ỹ realme of Englande as before in the ende of the story of the seconde Rychard is shewed, vpon the laste daye of September in the yere of our lorde a. M. CCC. lxxxix/ and in the .xix. yere of Charles ỹ .vii. than kyng of Fraũce. After whyche possessyon so by hym taken, anone he made newe officers. As the erle of Northumberlande he made Constable of Englande, the erle of westmerlãde was made Marshall, syr Johñ Serle Chaunceller, Johñ Newebery esquyer tresorer, and syr Rychard Clyfforde knyght

keper of ỹ p̄iuey ſignet. And ỹ done, p̄ouyſyon was made for hys coronacyon agayne the day of tranſlacyō of ſaynt Edwarde the confeſſour nexte than commyng. And the parlyament was p̄olonged tyll the tuyſdaye folowynge the ſayd daye of coronacyō. Than vpō the euyn of the ſayd daye of coronacyon, the kynge wythin the towre of Londō made .xli. knyghtes of the bate wherof .iii. were hys owne ſonnes, .iii. erles, .v. lordes. And vpon mondaye beynge the ſayd daye of ſaynt Edwarde & the .xiii. daye of October / he was crowned at weſtmynſter of the archebyſſhop of Cāterbury. After whych ſolempnyte fynyſſhed an honorable feeſt was holden wythin the greate halle of weſtmynſter. where the kyng beyng ſet in the mydde ſee of the table / the archebiſſhop of Cāterbury with .iii. other p̄elates were ſet at the ſame table vpon the ryght hāde of the kyng / & the archebyſſhoppe of yorke wyth other iiii. p̄elates was ſet vpō that other hāde of the kyng / & Hēry the kynges eldeſt ſonne ſtoode vppō the ryghte hande wyth a poyntleſſe ſwerde holdyng vp ryght / & the erle of Northhumberlād newely made conſtable, ſtode vpō the left hāde wyth a ſharpe ſwerd holdē vp ryght. And by eyther of thoſe ſwerdes, ſtode .ii. other lordes holding .ii. ſcepters. And before ỹ kyng ſtode all the dynerwhyle the dukes of Amnarle of Surrey & of Exceter, wyth other .ii. lordes. And ỹ erle of weſtmerlād thā newly made Marſhal, rode about the halle with many typped ſtaues aboute hym, to ſe the roume of ỹ halle kepte, that offycers myghte wyth eaſe ſerue the tables.

Coronacīō of Henry ỹ fourth.

Of the whych tables the chyefe vpō the ryghte ſyde of the halle was begunne wyth the Barons of the fyue portes, & at the table nexte the cupborde vppō the lefte hande, ſate the mayre and hys bretherne the aldeme of Londō. whych mayre than beynge Dewe Barentyne goldſmyth, for ſeruice there by hym that daye done, as other mayres at euery kynges & quenes coronacion vſe for to do / had there a ſtādyng cuppe of golde. Thā after the ſeconde courſe was ſerued / ſyr Thomas Dymmoke knyght beynge armed at all peaces, & ſyttynge vpō a good ſtede, rode to the hygher parte of the halle / & there before the kynge cauſed an herowde to make p̄oclamacyon, that what mā wolde ſaye that kynge Hēry was nat ryght full enheryteure of the crowne of England, & ryghtfully crowned / he was there redy to wage wyth hym batayl than, or ſuche tyme as it ſhuld pleaſe the kynge to aſſygne. whyche p̄oclamacyon he cauſed to be made after in iii. ſundry places of the halle in Engliſhe & in Frenche, wyth many mo obſeruaunces at hys ſolemnyte exercyſed & done, whyche were longe to reherſe.

Than thys feeſt wyth all honour ended / vpon the morne beyng tuyſday, the parliamēt was agayne begunne. And vpon wednyſdaye ſyr Johanne Cheyny that before that tyme had occupyed as ſpeker of that parlyamēt, by hys owne labour for cauſe of ſuch infyrmytyes as he than hadde, was dyſcharged / and a ſquyer named wyllyam Durwarde was electe to that roume for hym.

And thanne was the parlyament and the actes thereof laſte called by kynge Rycharde adnulled, and ſette at nought / and the parlyamente holden in the .xi. yere of hys reygne holden for ferme and ſtable. And the ſame daye Henry the kynges eldeſte ſonne was choſen & admytted p̄ynce of walys, and duke of Cornewalle, and erle of Cheſter, and heyre apparaunte to the crowne. Vppon

the

the thurſdaye folowynge was putte into the comon houſe a byll, deuyſed by ſyr Johñ Bagot than pryſonere in the Towre. whereof the effecte was, that the ſaid ſir Johñ confeſſed that he harde kynge Rycharde ſaye dyuers tymes and at ſondry parlyamentes in hys tyme holden, that he wolde haue hys entente and pleaſure concernynge hys owne maters, what ſo euer betyde of the reſydue. And yf any withſtode hys wyll or mynde / he wolde by one meane or other brynge hym out of lyfe.

Alſo he ſhewed farther, that kinge Rycharde ſhulde ſhewe and ſaye to hym at Lychefelde, in the. xvi. yere of hys reygne, that he deſyred no lenger to lyue, than to ſee hys lordes & commons to haue hym in as great awe and dzede, as euer they had of any of hys progenytours / ſo that it myghte be cronycled of hym, ỹ none paſſed hym of honour and dygnite / with condycyon that he were depoſed and put from his ſayde dygnytie the morowe after. And yf euer it came ſo to, that he ſhulde reſygne hys kyngelye mageſtye / he ſayde his mynde was to reſygne to the duke of Herforde, as to hym that was moſte ableſte to occuppe that honoure. But one thynge he feared, leſte he wolde do tyrannye agayne the churche. Moze ouer he ſhewed by ỹ ſaid byll, that as the ſayde ſyr Johñ Bagot rode behynde the duke of Norfolke towarde weſtmynſter / the ſayd duke layed to hys charge, that he with other of ỹ kynges counſell had murdred ỹ duke of Glocetyr / ỹ which at ỹ tyme to the ſaid duke he denyed, & ſayd at ỹ day he was on lyue. But within. iii. wekes after, the ſayde ſyr Johñ by ỹ kynges cõmaundemente was ſent with other pſones vnto Calays / where for fere of his owne lyfe, he ſawe ỹ ſaid murdre put in execucion. And farthermore he ſhewed, ỹ there was no man of honour at that dayes more in fauour with kinge Rycharde, thã was ỹ duke of Amnarle / & that by his coũſell he toke ỹ lordes, & wrought many other thinges after ỹ ſaid dukes aduyce. Alſo he ſhewed, ỹ he harde the kynge beynge than at Chyltryn langley ſwere many great othes, ỹ the duke of Herforde nowe kyng, ſhulde neuer returne into Englande / and rather than he ſhulde agayne enherytye hys fathers landes, he wolde gyue them vnto the heyres of the duke of Glocetyr, and of the erles of Arundell, and of warwyke, at the laſte parliament adiuged. And farther he ſhewed, that of all theſe matters he ſent the ſaid duke knowlege into Fraunce, by one named Roger Smerte / admonaſtynge hym to proupde by his wyſedome to wythſtande the kynges malyce, whyche ſhewed hym to be hys mortall enemye. And laſtelye he ſhewed in the ſayde byll, that he harde the duke of Amnarle ſay vnto ſir Johñ Buſſhey and to ſyr Henry Grene / I had leuer than. xx. thouſande pound, that thys man were dede. And whan they had ared of him whyche man / he ſaid the duke of Herforde / nat for dzede that I haue of hys perſone, but for ſorowe and rumours that he is lykely to make within this realme. whiche byll was than borne vnto the kynges parlyamente chaumbre, & there radde. After redynge whereof / the ſayd duke of Amnarle ſtode vp, and ſayd as touchynge ſuche artycles as in that byll were putte agayne hym, they were falſe and vntrewe, & that he wolde proue vpon hys body, or otherwyſe as the kynge wolde commaunde hym. Upon fryday the ſaid ſyr Johñ Baget was brought into the ſayd parlyament Chambre, and exampned vpon euery artycle of his

byll/all the whych he there affermed Than it was ared of hym what he coulde saye ỹ duke of Exceter. where unto he answered and sayed, that he coulde saye nothyng to hys charge. But there is he sayd a yomã in New gate called Halle, ỹ can say somwhat of you. Than sayd the duke, what so euer he or ye can or lyste to say of me/ thys is trouthe that I shall here expresse. Trouth it is that the last tyme that the kyng was at woodstoke, the duke of Northfolke & ye haue hadde me to you into the chapel, and closed the doze vpon vs. And there ye made me to swere vpõ the sacrament there present, to kepe suche counsayll as there ye shuld than shewe vnto me. where after ye shewed to me, that ye coulde neuer bzynge your purpose about, whyle syz Johñ of Gaunt late duke of Lãcastre lyued. wherfoze ye were adupsed foz to haue shortely after a coũsayll at Lychefelde/ by the whyche ye cõdiscended ỹ the sayd syz Johñ shuld be arested, in such maner that he shuld haue occasyõ to disobey ỹ areste/ by reason wherof by chaũce medley he shuld be there slayn. wherunto my coũsayl thã was, ỹ the kyng shulde calle hys secrete coũsayll/ & yf they agreed thereunto, I foz my part wolde agree vnto ỹ same. To which sayeng syz Johñ Bagot gaue none answere. And vpõ saterday, the sayd Bagot & Halle were bothe bzoughte intothe parlyament chaũbze, & there examined/and after coũtyzmaunded to pzysone. And as soone as they were departed/ the lozde Fitz water stoode vp and sayde. Moste redoughted souerayne lozde, where as ỹ duke of Amnarle hath befoze tymes and nowe lately, excused hym of the deth of the duke of Glouceter/ I saye and wyll iustyfye it, that he was cause of hys deth/and that I shall pzoue vpõ hys body yf your grace be so contented. To the cõtrary whereof the duke wyth sharpe wozdes answered/ so that gaugys of batayll were offered of bothe partyes, and sealed and delyuered vnto the lozde Marshall. Than partyes beganne to be taken amonge the lozdes/ in so moche that the duke of Surrey toke partye with the duke of Amnarle/and sayde that all that by hym was done, was done by constraynte of Rycharde thanne kynge/ and he hym selfe and other consented parfozce to the same. where agayne the sayde lozde Fytz water and other replyed. wherfoze sylence was commaũded/ and forthwyth the foze named Halle foz that he hadde confessed befoze the lozdes, that he was one of theym that putte to deth the duke of Glouceter at Calays/ he therefoze was iuged to be dzawen frome the towze of London vnto tybourne/ and there to be hanged and quartered.

The whyche execucion was done vppon the mondaye folowynge. Thus wyth these causes and many other thys parlyamente contynued, tyll a newe mayze named Thomas Knolles grocer was admytted and swozne, vppon the daye folowynge the feaste of Symonde and Jude.

Anno dñi. M.CCC.xcix.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.

Grocer. Thomas Knolles.

wyllyam walderne.

Anno.i.

wyllyam Hyde.

In this

IN this fyrst yere of kyng Henry the.iiii.yet lastinge the forsayd parlyament/vpon the wednysdaye nexte folowyng the feest of Symonde and Jude, the lorde Morley appealed the erle of Salesburye of treason/& caste his hoode for a gage to trye with him by batayle. The whiche sayenge he replyed/and caste from him his gloues for a gauge, to proue his sayeng false and vntrewe/ whiche were there sealed and delyuered vnto ỹ lorde Marshall. And vpon the monday passed an act, that no lorde nor other persone of no degre, shulde after that day laye for his excuse any constraynte or coartynge of hys prynce, in executynge of any wronge iugemente or other crymynous and vnlefull dedes, sayenge ỹ for feare they durste none otherwyse do / for suche excuse after that daye shall stande hym in none effecte. And also that all sherykes may yelde accompte in the escheker vppon theyr othes/ and that they be chaunged in all shyres yerely. And also that no lorde nor other man of myght, gyue any gownes or lyuereys to any of theyr tenauntes or other persones, excepte onely theyr housholde & meynyall seruaũtes. And also than was enacted, that all reppers and other fysshers from Rye and wynchylsee & other coostes of the sees syde, shulde sell it them selfe in Cornehyll & chepe and other stretes of London, to all men that wolde of theym bye it / excepte fysshemongers and other that wolde bye the sayde fysshe, to make sale of it agayne.

And vpon the wednysday folowynge / was enacted that Rycharde late kynge of Englande, shulde for hys mys gouernaunce of the realme be holdyn in suche prysone as the kynge wolde assygne, durynge hys naturall lyfe. And than the kynge graunted to all persones generall pardones/so that they were fette out of the Chauncerye by Alhalowne-tyde nexte folowynge / excepte suche persones as were present at the murder of the duke of Gloucester. And in thys whyle was the archebysshop of Caunterbury restored to his churche of Caunterburye / and doctour Roger, whyche there was sette by kynge Rycharde, was remoued and sette in the see of London / with the whyche he was ryghte well contented. And thanne was the erle of Arundelles sonne restored to all hys fathers landes, with dyuers other before by kynge Rycharde dysherited. And shortely after was the said parlyamente dyssolued / and euerye man hadde lycence to departe to hys owne. And than was Rycharde late kynge had vnto the castell of Ledes in Kente, and there kepte. And prouisyon was made at wyndesore for the kynge to kepe there hys Chrystmas. In whiche paskyme the dukes of Amnarle, of Surrey, and of Exetyr, with the erles of Salesburye and of Glocester, with other of theyr affynyte/made prouisyon for a dysguysynge or a mummynge to be shewed to the kyng vpon Twelf the nyghte / and the tyme was nere at hande, and all thynge redy for the same. Upon the sayde.xii. daye came secretelye vnto the kynge the duke of Amnarle/and shewed to hym that he with the other lordes afore named, were appoynted to slee hym in the tyme of the foresayd dysguysynge shewynge/wherfore he aduysed hym to prouyde for hys owne suretye. At whose warnynge the kynge secretelye departed frome wyndesore/ and came the same nyghte to London. wherof the sayd lordes beynge ware, and that theyr counsell was bewrayed / fledde in all haste west-

warde. But the kynge cauſed haſty purſute to be made after the / ſo that ſhortely after the duke of Surrey & the erle of Salyſbury were taken at Syrcetyr/ where they were ſtreyght behedyd, and theyr heddes ſent at London and ſette vpon the brydge. And at Orenforde were taken syr Thomas Blont and ſir Benet Sely knyghtes, and Thomas wyntercell eſquyre/the whych were there hedyd and quarteryd, and theyr hedes ſent to London brydge. And at Pytwell in Eſſex was taken syr Johñ Holland duke of Exetyr/& after brought to Plaſſhy a place faſte by, where he was behedyd / and after hys hedde was ſent to London and ſette there wyth the other vppon the brydge pyght vpon a ſtake. And nere about the ſame tyme at Bryſtowe was taken the lorde Spencer than erle of Glouceter and there behedyd, and hys hede ſent vnto London brydge. And in the ſame yere, syr Barnarde Brokeys, syr Johñ Selly, syr Johñ Maundeley, and syr Johñ Fereby knyghtes and clerkes, were taken as pryſoners in the towre of Londõ/ and ſoone after foriudged, hanged and heded/and theyr heddes alſo ſet vppon London brydge. In whyche paſſetyme, Rycharde late kyng was remoued frome the caſtell of Ledys in Kent, and ſent vnto Pountfreyt caſtell.

In this yere alſo as before is towched in the.xix. yere of the.vii. Charlys/ kynge Henry ſent vnto Caleys Iſabell late quene of England, and wyfe vnto Rycharde lately kynge/ and wyth hyr greate treaſoure and many ryce Jewellys, as teſtyfyeth the Engliſſhe cronycle/and there receyued by the Frenchmen vnder ſafe condupte paſſynge, and by them conueyed vnto hyr father into Fraũce/ and after maryed vnto Charlys ſon and heyre to the duke of Orleaunce, as before I haue ſhewed in the.xxii. yere of hyr ſayde fathers reygne.

Than it foloweth in the ſtory of kynge Henry/whan he hadde fermely conſydered the greate conſpyracy agayne hym by the forenamed lordes and other perſons entendyd and imagyned to hys diſtruccyon / and releuynge of Rycharde late kynge he in auoydynge of lyke daunger, prouyded to put the ſayde Rycharde out of thys preſent lyfe / and ſhortely after the oppynyon of moſte wyters he ſente a knyghte named syr Pyers of Exton vnto Pountfreyte caſtell/where he wyth.viii. other in hys companye, fell vppon the ſayde Rycharde late kynge, and hym myſerably in hys chaumber ſlewe / but not wythout reuengemente of hys dethe. For or he were felled to the grounde/he ſlewe of the ſayde.viii. foure men, with an axe of theyr own. But laſtely he was wounded to deth by the hande of the ſayde syr Pyers of Exton, and ſo dyed.

After execucyon of whyche dedely dede, the ſayde syr Pyers toke great repentaunce, in ſo myche that lamentably he ſayde, alas what haue we done/we haue now put to deth hym that hath ben our ſouerayne & dread lorde, by the ſpace of.xxii. yeres / by reaſon wherof I ſhall be reproched of all honoure where ſo I after thys daye become / and all men ſhall redounde thys dede to myne dyſhonour and ſhame. Other oppynyons of the dethe of thys noble prynce are lefte by wryters, as by waye of famyne and other. But thys of moſte wryters is teſtyfyed and alleged.

Whan the deth of this prynce was publyſhed abrode / he was after opẽ byſaged layed in ỹ mynſter of Pouñfrayt, ſo ỹ all men myght know and ſe that he was dede. And the.xii. daye of March

of Marche folowynge/ he was wyth great ſolempnyte brought thorough the cytye of London to Paules/ and there layed open vyſaged agayne, to the ende that hys deth myght be manyfeſtly knowen. whyche was doutfull to many one/ & ſpecyally to ſuche as ought to hym fauoure. And than after a fewe days the ſayd corps was caryed vnto the freers of Langley, & there entred. But after he was remoued by kynge Hēry the.v. in the fyrſt yere of hys reygne/ & wyth great honoure and ſolempnyte cōueyed vnto the monaſterye of weſtmynſter / and there wythin the chapell of ſaynt Edwarde honourably buryed vppō the ſouth ſyde of ſaynt Edwardes Shryne, wyth hys epytaphy vppon hys toumbe as foloweth.

Prudens & mundus Richardus iure ſecundus,
Per fatum victus, iacet hic ſub marmore pictus.
Verax ſermone fuit, & plenus ratione.
Corpore procerus, animo prudens vt omerus.
Eccleſiam fauit, elatos ſubpeditauit.
Quemuis proſtrauit regalia qui violauit.

¶ whyche verſes are thus to be vnderſtande in our vulgare & Englyſh tonge as foloweth.

Parfyght and prudent Rychardē by ryghte the ſeconde,
Vayniquyſſhed by fortune lyeth here nowe grauen in ſtone/
Trewe of hys worde, & therto well reſounde/
Semely of perſone, & lyke to omer as one
In wordely prudence/ & euer the churche in cre
Vp holde & fauoured, caſtyng the proud to grouñd,
And all that wolde hys royall ſtate confounde

But yet alas, thongh that this metyr or tyme
Thus doth enbelyſſhe this noble princes fame,
And that ſome clerke whiche fauoured hym ſome tyme
Lyſt by hys connynge, thus to enhaūce his name:
yet by his ſtory apereth in hym ſome blame.
wherfore to princes is ſureſt memory,
Theyr lyues to exercyſe in verthous conſtancy.

whanne thys mortall pryncē was thus dede & grauen/ kyng Hēry was inquyet poſſeſſyon of the realme/ and fande great rycheſſe ỹ before tyme to kynge Rychardē belonged. For as wytneſſeth Polycronycon, he fande in kyng Rychardes treſoury .iii. hundreth thouſande li. of redy coyne/ beſyde iewelles and other ryche veſſels whyche were as moche in value or more. And ouer that he eſpyed in the keppng of the treſourers hādes, an C. and .l. M. nobles / and iewels and other ſtuffe that cōteruayled the ſayd value. And ſo it ſhulde ſeme ỹ kynge Rychardē was ryche, whan hys money & iewelles amōted to .vii. C. M. li. And in the moneth of Octobre and ende of thys mayers yere/ was brent in ſmythfelde of Londō a preeſt named ſyr wyllyam Sawtry, for certayne poynts of hereſy.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. Goldſmyth. Johñ Fraunces.

Johñ wakele.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. i.

Anno. ii.

wyllyam Ebot.

IN thys ſeconde yere of kynge Henry and moneth of Frebruary/ were drawen and hanged for treaſon a knyghte named ſyr Roger Clarungeton at tybourne wyth two of hys ſeruauntes, the pryour of Lāde, and eyghte freres mynours of gray freres / of the whyche ſome were bachelers of dyuynyte.

And in thys yere began a greate dyſcencion in walys, betwene ỹ lorde Gray Ryffyn, & a welſhman named

Howen of Glendoze. whyche Howen gathered to hym greate strenghte of welsh emen, and dyd moche harme to that coũtrey / nat sparynge the kynges lozdshyppes noz hys people/and lastlye toke the sayd lozde Gray pzysoner, & helde hym pzysoner, tyll contrarye hys wyll he hadde maryed the sayde Howẽs doughter. After which matrymony fynysshed / he helde the sayde lozde styl in walys tyll he died, to the kynges great dysplesure.

Wherfoze the kynge wyth a strõge army spedde hym into walys, foz to subdue the sayde Howeñ & hys adherentes. But whan the kyng wyth his power was entred ỹ coũtre / he with hys fawtours fledde in to the mountaynes & helde hym there/so that the kyng myght nat wynne to hym without dystruccion of hys hoste. wherefoze fynally by the aduyce of hys lozdes, he retourned into Englande foz that season.

In thys yere also whete & other graynes beganne to fayle / so that a quarter of whete was solde at London foz. xvi. s/ & derer shuld haue bẽ, had nat ben the pzouysyon of marchaũtes that bzought rye & rye floure out of Spzuce, wherwyth thys lãde was greatly susteyned and eased.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. i. Anno dñi. M. CCCC. ii.

wyllyam Uenour.

Johñ Shadwozth. Anno. iii.

Johñ Frempynghm̃.

In thys yere/ the cõdupte standyng vpon coznhylle in London, was begon to be made. And in the somer folowynge / syz Thomas Percy erle of wozceter, and syz Hẽry Percy sonne & heyze vnto the erle of Nozthumberlande, gadered a greate power / and vppõ the daye of saynte Pzaxede the vyzgyne oz the. xxi. daye of July, mette wyth the kynge nere vnto Shzowysbury, and there gaue vnto hi a cruell batayll / but to theyz owne confusion. Foz in that fyght ỹ sayd syz Thomas Percy was taken, and hys neuew the fozesayde syz Henry wyth many a stronge man vppon theyz partye was there slayne. And vpõ ỹ kynges partie, the pzynce was woũded in the hed/ & the erle of Staf fozde wyth many other slayne. And the. xxv. daye of July folowynge at Shzowysbury, the sayd syz Thomas Percy was beheded / and after hys hed caried to London, & there set vpõ the bzydge.

The batayle of Shzowysbury.

In thys batayl was many a noble man slayne vpõ eyther partye. And it was the moze to be noted vengeable/foz there the father was slayn of the sonne, & the son of the father, and bzother of bzother, & neuewe of neuewe. And in the moneth of August folowynge, the duchesse of Bzytayne landed at Fulmouth in the pzounce of Cozn wayll, & from thẽs was conueyed to wyncheste. where in shozte tyme after, kyng Hẽry maryed her in the cathedzall churche of the sayde cytye. And soone vpõ was the eldest doughter of kyng Hẽry named dame Blãche maryed at Coleyn to the dukes sonne of Bayer.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. ii. Anno dñi. M. CCCC. iii.

Rychard Merlewe.

Johñ walcot Dzaper. Anno. iiii.

Robert Chichele.

In thys

IN this yere and .xiiii. day of the moneth of September, was ỳ forsayd duchesse of Bretayne and wyfe of ỳ kyng, receyued wyth great honour into the cytye of London / & so by the mayre and the cytezyns conueyed vnto westmynster. where vpō the morowe folowyng she was crowned quene of Englande, wyth greate honoure and solempnite / the cyrcumstaunce wherof I passe ouer.

In this yere also, Rupertus which after the deposynge of wessenselans, was by the electours of the empyre, and by auctoryte of Bonyface the .ix. than pope, admytted for Emperoure of Rome, and came into Englande wyth a goodly companye, onely to se the countre and commodytyes of the same. The whyche of the kynge was honourably receyued and feested / and lastely conueyed by the kynge towarde the see syde, where eyther departed from other wyth exchaunge of ryche and precious gyft. For this Rupartus was named of wryters a man of excellente bounte and largesse. And he gaue more liberally / for so moche as all the tyme of hys beynge in Englāde, he laye here at the kynges costes. And whyle he was at Londō he was lodged at the house of sayncte Johannis in smythfelde.

This yere also vpō sait Laurēce euyn or the .ix. day of August / a lorde of Bretayne named the lorde of Castyle in Frenche, lāded within a myle of Plymmouth wyth a great cōpany of Normās and Bretons / and came vnto the sayd town and lodged there all nyght and spoyled and robbed the sayd towne. And vpon the day folowynge whan they had done what they wolde / they retourned agayne to theyr shyppes, with plente of pyllage and prysoners suche as they fande.

Anno domini .M.CCCC.iii. Anno domini .M.CCCC.iiii.

Thomas Fawconer.

wyllyam Askam. Anno .v.

Thomas Pooll.

IN this yere soone after Cādelmasse, the forsayd lorde of Castyle trustynge to wynne a lyke enterprise, as in the yere passed he hadde done / he beynge accompanyed wyth a stronge naup of Frēche men & Bretons, was encountred wyth the Englysshe floot within .ii. myles of Dertmouth at a place called Blak pooll. where after lōge and cruell fyghte ỳ sayd lord was slayne, wyth the more partye of the people, and dyuers of hys shyppes takē / as wytnesseth the Englysshe cronycle wyth dyuers other Englysshe auctours. But the Frēche boke excuseth thys scomfyture of Frēchmen, and sayeth that by treason of a Gascoyne named Peryn or Perot de Languyle, whyche shewed vnto the sayd lorde Castyle that he had espyed certayne Englysshe shyppes in a Creke lyghtly wythout resystence to be takē / caused the sayd lorde to make sayle towarde the sayd towne of Dartmouthe. where after he had contynued a certayne tyme hys course / he espyed the hole flote of Englysshe men whyche made toward hym / and so at the sayde Blake pool encountred and faughte, and lastely escaped the daunger of hys enemyes as testyfyeth the sayde French cronycle, but natte vnhurt / for he was so wounded in that fyght that he dyed shortly after.

And the moneth of Apryll folowynge,

ynge, the duke of Clarence wyth the erle of Kēt & many other lo3des, toke shyppynge at Weregate, & so sayled vnto Scluce in Flaūders. And after the sayde duke had there refresshed hym & hys company, he toke shyppynge agayne / and holdynge hys course towarde Swyñe, he was encoūtred wyth .iii. greate carykes of Jeane / the whyche he assayled, and after longe bekerynge them toke beynge laden wyth marchaūdyse / & so wyth that pray returned to Cambze before wynchelsee / in the whyche hauen the sayd goodes were cāted and shared. But how it was, by baryaūce amonge them selfe o3 otherwyse / one of the sayde carykes was sodeynly fyred & so cōsumed. For restytucyon of whyche goodes & shyppes, ỹ marchaūtes Januēce made after great & longe sute to the kyng & his coūsayl / in whyche passetyme they bo3owed cloth, wolle & other marchaundyses, amountyng vnto great and notable sommes of dyuers marchauntes of Englande. And whanne they sawe that they myghte haue none hope of recouery of they3 losse / they sodeynly auoyded the lāde, and lafte ỹ fo3esayde notable summes vnpayde, to the great hynderaunce and vtter vndoynge of many Englysshe marchauntes.

In thys yere a yoman named wyllyam Serle, somtyme yomā of kyng Rychardes Robys, was takē in the marches of Scotlāde and b3oughte vnto Londō / & there in the guildhall arreygned fo3 the murder of the duke of Glouceter at Calays. Upō which murder he was attaynt & conuyct / & vppō the .xx. daye of Octob3e he was d3awē from the to3re vnto tybo3ne, and there hāged and quartred / & hys hed was after set vpō Londō b3ydg, & hys .iiii. quarters were sent to .uu. sond3y good townes.

Anno domini .M.CCCC.iiii.

wyllyam Lowkte.

Johū Hyende D3aper.

Anno domini .M.CCCC.v.

Anno .vi.

Stephen Spylman.

IN thys yere and moneth of January, were certayne courses of warre ton in smythfelde, betwene sy3 Edmūde erle of Kent, & the lo3de Wo3sf a Barō of Scotlāde, vppō ỹ chalēge of the sayd scottysshe lo3de. But the erle of Kēt bare hym so valyauntly, that to hym was gyuē ỹ p3ice of that tourney to hys great honour. And in the same yere, sy3 Rychard Scrope than archebisshop of yo3ke, and ỹ lo3de Woubzaye thā marshal of Englād, with other to them allied / fo3 grudge that they bare agayn the kynge, gadered vnto theym greate strēgth, entēdyng to haue put downe the kynge as the same than wente. where of the kyng beyng enfourmed / in all haste sped towarde theym, and met wyth them on thys syde yo3ke. where after a skyrmysshe by the sayd lo3des made / they were thā takē and after p3esented vnto ỹ king at yo3ke / where they were bothe demed to suffre deth fo3 they3 rebellyō. ✝ Than whan the bysshoppe came vnto the place of execucion / he p3ayed ỹ bowcher to gyue to hym .v. strokes in the wo3shyp of chr̄istes fyue woundes, & fo3 hys mo3e penaūce. At euerych of whyche .v. strokes / kynge Henry beynge in hys lodgyng, had a stroke in hys necke / in so moch that he demed that some persone there beynge with hym p3esent hadde stryken him. And fo3thwyth he was stryken wyth the

✝ A bysshop beheded.

plage

plage of leppʒ/so that than he knewe it was the hande of god, and repẽted hym of that hasty iugement without auctoʒyte of the churche. And soone after god shewed many myʒacles foʒ the sayde bysshop / whyche called the kynge vnto the moʒe repentaunce.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.b. Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.bi.

Henry Barton.
Johñ woodcok Mercer. Anno.bii.
wyllyam Crowner.

IN thys yere, dame Lucye the duke of Myllanys syster came into Englande / and was maryed vnto syʒ Edmunde Holande erle of Kent, in the churche of saynte Mary ouerey in Southwarke vppon the xriiii. daye of January / where the kyng was pʒesent and gaue her that daye vnto the pʒeest. And after the solempnyzacion of the marpage was kynysshed / she was wyth greate honour conueyed vnto the bysshoppe of wynchesters palays there fast by / where that daye foʒ her was holden a sumptuous and pumpous feaste. And in the same yere and moneth of May, dame Philyppe the yongeste doughter of kynge Henry, accompanyed wyth dyuers lozdes spyzytuall and tempozall, was shypped in the Nozthe, and so conueyed into Denmarke / where in a towne oʒ cytye called London she was maryed vnto ỹ kynge of the sayde countre.

In thys yere also syʒ Thomas Ramston than constable of ỹ towʒe, by ouersyghte of hys botemen as he wold haue passed the bʒydge toward the sayde towʒe, was dʒowned. And in the same yere, foʒ the greuous cõplayntes that befoʒe tyme hadde ben shewed and euydently pʒoued befoʒe the kynges counsayl, and also befoʒe the mayʒe and hys bʒetherne, of the great dystruccion of frye and yonge fysshe by reason of werys standynge in dyuers places of the ryuer of Thamys, wherby the fysshe of the sayde ryuer was greately mynysshed and wasted / and that also ỹ the sayd werys so contynued, the sayde ryuer shuld in shoʒte pʒocesse be dystroyed: wherfoʒe the mayʒe & hys bʒetherne the aldermen as conseruatours of ỹ ryuer, made suche laboure vnto the kynge and hys counsayll, that they opteyned commyssyon to pull vp all the werys that stode betwene Londõ and. bii. myles beyõde Kyngston / and in lykewyse foʒ suche other as stode betweue London and Gʒauysende, aswell crekes oʒ seuerall grounde and other / the whyche commyssyon by the sayde mayʒe and hys offycers was thys yere putte in execucyon.

And in thys yere syʒ Robert Knolles knyght, the whyche in Fraunce and Bʒytayne hadde befoʒe tyme done so many victoʒious actes, as in ỹ. xxriii yere of Edward the thyʒde and other yeres of hys reygne is somdele towched / made an ende of hys werke at Rochester bʒydge and chapell at the sayde bʒydge fote / and dyed shoʒtely after, whanne he hadde newe reedyfyed the body of the whyte fryers churche standynge in Fletestrete, & done to that house many notable benefytes / where after he was buryed in the body of the sayde churche. whyche churche and place was fyʒste founded, by the auncetoures of the lozde Gʒay Cotnoʒe.

Anno

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.vi. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.vii.

Nycholas wotton.

Rycharde whytyngtoñ Mercer. Anno.viii.

Godfrey Brook.

IN thys yere & moneth of Nouembre, one named the walche clerke, apeched a knyghte called syr Perepuall Sowdan of treason / for trypall wherof daye was gyuen to thẽ to fyght in smythfylde the day aboue sayde. At whych daye eyther apered, and there faught a season. But in the ende the clerke was recreaũt. wherefore immedyately he was spoyled of hys armour, & layde vpõ an hardyl, and so drawen to tyborne, and there hanged.

And in thys yere also, syr Henry erle of Northumberlande & the lorde Bardolf, commyng out of Scotlãde wyth a stronge company, to the dysplesure & hurt of the kynge as they entended / were met and encountred wyth the gentylmen and comons of the northe, and foughten wyth and dystressed / and after strake of theyr heddes, and sente theym to London / whyche thanne were pyghte vppon the brydge amonge many other.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.vii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.viii.

Henry Ponfreyt.

wyllyam Stondoñ Grocer. Anno.ix.

Henry Halton.

IN thys yere and moneth of Decembre, begã a frost / the which contynued by the space of.xv. wekes after or therupõ / so that byrdes were wõderly kampssyhed and dystressed by violence of the same.

And in the same yere / syr Edmõde of Holande erle of Kente, was by the kynge made admyrall of the see. The which scowred & skymmed ẏ see ryght well and manfully / & lastly landed in the coost of Bretayne, & besieged there a castell named Brak, and wan it by strength. But in the wynnyng therof he was so dedely wounded wyth an arowe in the hede, that he dyed shortly after. And than hys corps was brought agayn into Englãde / & buryed amõge his aũcetours. And in the begynnyng of thys yere, was slayne & murdered the duke of Orleaũce in Parys / lyke as before it is more at lẽgthe shewed in ẏ .xxviii. yere of Charles ẏ.vii.kyng of fraũce.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.viii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.ix.

Thomas Duke.

Drewe Barentyne Goldsmyth. Anno.x.

wyllyam Norton.

IN thys yere the seneschal of Henaude came into thys lande wyth a goodly companye of Henauders & other straungers / for to do & parfourme certayne kaytes of armes agayne dyuers nobles & gentylmen of thys lãde. And fyrste the sayd Seneschall chalenged the erle of Somerset / and other of hys company other gẽtylmen of thys lãde, as after shall apere. For executyng of whyche dyspoyte / the place of smythfelde by the

kynge

kynge was appoynted, and barred & fenſed for the ſame entent / and daye ſet for euery mã to be redy by the .xi. daye of .At whych daye the ſeneſhall as chalenger entred ỹ felde pompouſly. And after with a goodly company of men of honour, was the erle of Somerſet brought into the ſame/where they ranne togyder certayne courſes and executed other fayres of armys/ wherof the pryſe & honour was gyuen by the herawdes vnto the erle, ſo that he wanne that day great honour.

Than the ſeconde daye came in a knyght Henauder as Chalengeoure. To whome as defendaunt came ſyr Rychard de of Arundell knyghte / the whyche ranne certayne courſes on horſebak, & after went togyder with ares on fote where ſyr Rychard was putte to the worſe, for the Henauder brought hym vpõ hys kne.

Than the thyrde daye came in an other knyght of Henaude Chalẽger. To whome as defendaunte came in ſyr Johñ Cornewayl knyght/and ſo well bare hym, that he put the ſtraunger to the worſe. Upon the .iiii. daye came into the felde an eſquyre Henauder. Agayne whome ranne the ſonne of ſyr Johan Cheyny. The whych at the ſeconde courſe ſette hys ſtroke ſo egerly, that he ouer threw the Henauder horſe and mã / for whyche dede ỹ kyng dubbed hym forthwith knight. Upon the .v. day. played togyder an Henauder and a ſquyre called Johñ Stewarde/ whyche daye alſo the Englyſſheman wan the worſhyp. Upon the .vi. daye ſkyrmyſſhed there togyder an Henauder and an Englyſſhe eſquyer named wyllm̃ Porter / the whyche gatte ſuche worſhype of the ſame Henauder, that the kynge for hys guerdon made hym ſtreyghte knyght. Upon the .vii. daye in lykewyſe played inſemble an Henauder and one Johñ Stãdyſſhe eſquyer/ ỹ whyche ſemblably for hys proweſſe & manly dealyng, was alſo of ỹ kyng dubbed knyght. And a Galcoyñ that the ſame day wan ỹ pryce of an other ſtraunger, was immedyatly made knyghte of ỹ kyng. And vpõ the .viii. daye or laſte day of thys chalenger, came into the felde .ii. Henauders. Unto whome came .ii. bretherne beyng ſowdiours of Calays/ ỹ whyche bekered togyder a lõge ſeaſõ, ſo ỹ eyther ptye receyued plentye of good ſtrokes, tyll peas by ỹ kyng was cõmaũded. And ſo thys chalẽge was fynyſſhed, to ỹ great honour of ỹ kyng the whych after feaſted theſe straungers, & wyth ryche gyftes ſente and retourned theym agayne to theyr countrees.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. ix. Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. x.

Johñ Lawe.

Rychard Marlowe Irenmonger. Anno. xi.

wyllyam Chycheley.

IN thys yere & moneth of Marche/ a tayloure of London named Johan Badby, was brente in Smythfelde for hereſy: all be it that by meanes of the prynce & one mayſter Courtnay thanne Chaunceller of Oxenforde, he was for a whyle reconcyled, and promyſed to leue that ertoure. But whan the ſacramente of ỹ aulter was brought tofore hym/ he dyſpyſed it, and wolde in no wyſe therein byleue / wherefore he hadde as he deſerued. Of whom a verſifier in repreche of hys errour, made theſe ii. verſes folowynge.

Ee. Hereticus

Hereticus credat, vt peruſus ab orbe recedat,
Ne fidē ledat, ſathān hūc baratroſibi predat.

The whych verſes are thus moch to meane in englyſſhe.

The peruerſe heretyke, though that he do brenne,
And from this worlde be raſed vtterly/
No force, ſyn that he lyſt nat kenne
Our ſacred fayth/but it right peruerſy
Lyſt of his wyll erronouſſly to reply,
What force thought ſathā with his eternall payne
Do hym reward, ſyn he wyll nat refrayne.

IN thys yere alſo ꝛ moneth of Apryll, wythin the lyſtes of Smythfeld was foughtē a ſore fight betwene an eſquyre named Glouceter Appellaūt, ꝛ an other eſquyre called Arthur Defendaūt. The whyche acquyted them eyther partye ſo mānfully, that the kynge of hys eſpecyall grace ſeyng they were bothe ſo well fyghtyng men, toke the quarell into hys handes, ꝛ pardoned the offēce to eyther partye.

And thys yere the market howſe called the Stokes, ſtādynge by the churche of ſaynt Mary wolchurch of London, was begō to be edyfyed. In thys yere alſo the kyng helde his parlyamēt at weſtmynſter. Durynge the whych ꝑ cōmons of thys lāde put vp a byll to the kynge, to take ꝑ tēporall landes out frō ſpyrytuall mēnes handes or poſſeſſiō. The effect of whych byll was, ꝑ the tēporalties dyſordinatly waſted by mē of the church, myght ſuffyce to fynde to ꝑ kynge .xv. erles, xv.C. knightes, vi.M. ꝛ ii.C. eſquiers ꝛ an.C. houſes of almes to the releef of poore people mo thā at ꝑ dayes were wythin Englād. And ouer all theſe forſayd charges, ꝑ kyng myght put yerely in hys cofers .xx.M.li. Prouyded ꝑ euery erle ſhuld haue of yerely rēt .iii.M. marke/euery knight an.C marke ꝛ .iiii. plough lande/ euery eſquyre .xl. marke by yere ✠ .ii. plough lāde/ ꝛ euery houſe of almeſſe an .C. marke, with ouerſyght of .ii. trew ſeculers vnto euery houſe. And alſo wyth prouiſiō ꝑ euery townelyppe ſhuld kepe all poore people of theyr owne dwellers whych myght nat labour for theyr lyuyng. with cōdicion ꝑ if mo fell in a towne thā the towne might mayntayn, thā the ſayd almes houſes to releue ſuch townlyppes. And for to beare theſe charges they alledged by theyr ſayd byll, ꝑ the tēporalties beyng in the poſſeſſiō of ſpyrytuall mē, amounted to .iii.C. ꝛ xxii. M. marke by yere. wherof they affermed to be i ꝑ ſee of Caūterbury, with the abbays of criſtes church, of ſaynt Auguſtyns, Shrowyſbury, Coggeſhale, ꝛ ſaynt Olys/xx.M. marke by yere. In the ſee of Durhm ꝛ other abbeys there, xx.M. marke. In ꝑ ſee of yorke ꝛ abbays there, xx.M. marke. In the ſee of wyncheſter and abbays there, xx.M. marke. In the ſee of Lōdon wyth abbays and other houſes there, xx.M. marke. In ꝑ ſee of Lyncolñ, wyth ꝑ abbays of Peterbourth, Ramſay, and other, xx.M. mark. In the ſee of Norwych, wyth the abbeys of Bury and other, xx.M. marke. In the ſee of Hely, wyth the abbays of Hely, Spaldig ꝛ other, xx.M. mark. In the ſee of Bathe, wyth the abbay of Okynborne ꝛ other. xx.M. marke. In the ſee of worceter, with ꝑ abbays of Euiſhm, Abyngdoñ ꝛ other, xx.M marke. In the ſee of Cheſter with pre cinct of the ſame, with the ſees of ſait Dauid, of Salyſbury, and Exceter wyth theyr prectuctes, xx.M. marke. The abbays of Rauens or Reuans, of fountaynes, of Geruons, and dyuers other to the nombre.v. mo.xx. thouſand marke. The abbays of Leyceter, waltham, Gyſbourne, Mertoñ Circetir, Oſney and other, to the nombre of .vi.mo, twenty thouſande marke. The abbays of Douers,

A byll put vppe in the parlyamēt

Batell,

Batell, Lewis, Cowentre, Dauētre, and Courney, xx. M. marke. The abbays of Northamptoñ, Thorton, Bryslow, Kelyngworth, wynchecōb, Hayles, Darchyssor, Fredyswyde, Notley, and Grymmysby, xx. M. marke.

The whych forsayd sūmes amoūt to the full of. iii. C. M. marke. And for the odde. xxii. M. marke / they appoynted Herdforde, Rochester, Huntyngdoñ, Swynesheade, Crowlande, Malmesbury, Burtoñ, Tewkisbury Dūstable, Shirborñ, Tauntoñ, and Bylande.

And ouer thys they alledged by the sayde byll, that ouer and aboue ỹ sayd sūme of. iii. C. & xxii. M. marke / dyuers houses of relygion in Englande, possessed as many temporalties as myght suffice to fynde yerely xv. M. preestes and clerkes / euery preest to be allowed for hys stypende vii. marke by yere.

To ỹ which byll none answere was made, but that the kyng of thys mater wolde take delyberacīō & aduysemente / and wyth that answere ended, so that no ferther labour was made.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. ix. Anno dñi. M. CCCC. x.

Johñ Penne.

Thomas Knolles Grocer. Anno. xii.

Thomas Pyke.

IN thys yere, a squyer of walys named Kyse ap dee, the whych had ōg tyme rebelled agayn ỹ kyng and krotysshed the partye of Howan of Glendore / was take and broughte to London / and there vppon the. ix. daye of December, drawen, hanged, and quartered / and hys hed set vpon the brydge amōge the other. In this yere also was the guylde halle of Lō don begonne to be newe edyfyed and of an olde & lytell cotage, made into a fayre and goodly house as it nowe appereth.

Anno domini. M. CCCC. x. Anno domini. M. CCCC. xi.

Johñ Raynewell.

Robert Chycheley Grocer. Anno. xiii.

wyllyam Cottoñ.

IN thys yere and vpon the. xii. day of October, were thre flodes in thamys / whyche thynge no man than lyuynge cowde remembre that lyke to be sene.

And in thys yere was the lorde Thomas sonne to the kynge, created duke of Clarence. And in thys yere, the kynge at the requeste of the duke of Orleaunce, sente ouer the forsayd duke his sonne to ayde the sayd duke of Orleaūce agayn the duke of Burgoyne. Of whose actes and hys company / I haue before made report in the story of Charles the. vii. kynge of Fraunce.

And in thys yere, the kyng caused a newe coyne of nobles to be made, whyche were of lesse value than the olde noble by. iiii. d. in a noble.

In thys yere also the kynge created Johñ hys son duke of Bedforde. And hys other sonne Humfrey duke of Glounceter. He made also syr Thomas Beaufort erle of Dorset / and the duke of Anmarle he created duke of yorke.

Anno domini.M.CCCC.xi. Anno domini.M.CCCC.xii.

Rauffe Leuenhm̃.

wyllyam waldzeñ Mercer. Anno.xiiii.

wyllyam Seuenok.

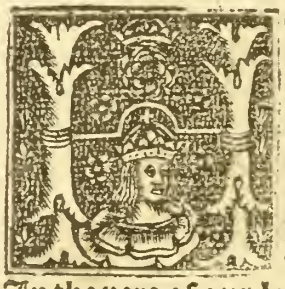
IN thys yere and.xx.daye of the moneth of Nouembze, was a great counsayll holden at the whyte freers of London. By the whyche it was amonge other thynges concluded, that foz the kynges greate iournay that he entended to take in vysytyng of the holy sepulcre of our lozd/ certayne Galeys of warre shulde be made, and other purueaunce concernynge the same iournay. whereupon all hasty & possyble spede was made. But after the feaste of Crystemasse, whyle he was makynge hys prayers at saynte Edwardes shzyne to take there hys leue, and so to spede hym vpõ hys iournay/he became so syke, that suche as were aboute hym fered that he wolde haue dyed ryght there. wherfoze they foz hys comfozte bare hym into the abbottes place, and lodged hym in a chambze/and there vpõ a paylet layde hym befoze the fyze, where he laye in greate agony a certayne of tyme. At length whã he was commyn to hym selfe nat knowynge where he was/he freyned of suche as than were aboute hym what place ẏ was. The whych shewed to hym that it belonged vnto the abbot of westmynster, and foz he felte hym selfe so syke/he commaunded to aske yf that chãbze had any speciall name. where unto it was answered, that it was named Hierusalem. Than sayd ẏ kyng, Louyng be to the father of heuẽ. Foz nowe I knowe I shall dye in thys chambze, accozdynge to ẏ prophecye of me befozesayd, that I shuld dye in Hierusalẽ. And so after he made hym selfe redy/& dyed shortly after vppõ ẏ daye of saynt Cuthbert oz the.xx. day of Marche/whã he had reygned.xiii. yeres, v.monethes, & .xxi. dayes / leuynge after hym.iiii.sonnes/ that is to meane Hẽry that was kyng. Thomas ẏ was duke of Clarence, Johñ duke of Bedfozde, and Hũfrey duke of Glouceter/and.ii.doughters, that one beyng quene of Denmarke, and that other ducheſſe of Barre, as befoze is shewed.

Dethe of kyng Henry the.iiii.

whan kynge Henry was deed/ he was conueyed by water vnto Feuersham, and from thens by lande vnto Caunterbury/and there entered by ẏ shzyne of saynt Thomas.

Anglia.

Henrici quinti.



HEnry the.v. of ẏ name, and sonñ of Henry the.iiii begã his regne ouer this realm of England, the xxi. day of ẏ moneth of Marche In the yere of our lozde & ende of the same.xiiii.C.& .xii. And in the.xxxii. yere of Charles the.vii. yet kynge of Fraũce. And the.ix. daye of Apzyll folowynge, whych was that yere palsiõ sondaye, beyng a day of excedyng rayne, he was crowned at westmynster. Thys man befoze the deth of hys father, applyed hym vnto all vyce & insolency / & dzewe vnto hym all riottours & wyldly dyspoſed ꝓsones. But after he was admytted to ẏ rule of the lande/anon & sodaynly he became a new mã, & tourned all that rage & wyldnes into sobernes & wyse sadnes, & the vyce into cõstãt vertue. And foz he wolde cõtinewe ẏ vertue, and nat

and nat to be reduced thereunto by the famylyarytye of hys olde nyse company/he therfore after rewardes to them gyuen, charged them vppon payne of theyr lyues, that none of thē were so hardy to come wythin.x. myle of such place as he were lodged, after a daye by hym assygned.

In thys begynnyng of thys kyng Henry / the olde mayre and shyryues continued theyr offices to the termes accustomed.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.ii. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.iii.

Rauffe Leuyngham.

wyllyam waldern Mercer. Anno.i.

wyllyam Seuenok.

ANone as kynge Henry was crowned, and the solempnyte of the feest of Eester was passed / he sent vnto the fryers of Lāgley where the corps of kynge Rycharde was buryed/and caused it to be take oute of the erth, & so wyth reuerence and solempnyte to be cōueyed vn to westmynster/ & vppon the southe syde of saynt Edwardes shryne there honourably to be buryed by quene Anne his wyfe, whyche there before tyme was enterred. And after a solempne interment there holden / he prouyded that.iiii.tapers shulde brēne day and nyght about hys graue, whyle the world endureth/ and one daye in the weke a solempne Dirige, and vpon the morowe a masse of Requiem by note / after whyche masse ended, to be gyuen wekely vnto poore people.xx.s.viii.d.in pens. And vpon the daye of hys annyuersary after ỹ sayd masse of Requiem is songe, to be yerely destrybuted for his soule.xx.li.in ō. And about Herueste tyme, was syr Johñ Oldcastell knyghte appeched for an heretyke & cōmitted to pryson. But howe it was he escaped for that tyme out of the towre of Londō/ and so yode into walys, where he lyued ouer.iiii.yeres after.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xiii. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xiiii.

Johñ Suttoñ.

wyllm Crowmer Draper. Anno.ii.

Johñ Mycoll.

IN thys yere and moneth of January/ certayne adherentes of the forenamed syr Johñ Oldcastell, entendynge the dystruccion of thys lande & subuercio of the same/assembled thēm in a felde nere vnto saynte Gyles in great nombre. wherof the kynge beyng enfourmed, toke ỹ felde before theym, & so toke a certayne of them. Amonge the whyche was syr Roger Actoñ knyghte, syr Johñ Beuerley preest, and a squyer called syr Johñ Browne. The whyche wyth xxvi.mo in nombre were after conuycte of heresy and treason / and for the same hanged and brent wythin ỹ sayd felde of saynt Gyles.

And in the same yere, Johñ Claydon skynner & Rycharde Turmyne baker, were for heresy brente in Smythfelde.

And thys yere the kyng helde his parlyamente at Leyceter. where amonge other thynges, the foresayd bylle putte vp by the commons of the lande, for the temporaltyes beynge in ỹ churche, as it is before touched i the.xi.yere of ỹ. iiii Hēry, was

Ee. iii. agayne

agayne mynded. In fere wherof, lest the kyng wolde thereunto gyue any cõfortable audyence as testyfye some wryters, certayne bysshoppes and other hede men of the churche, putte ỹ kyng in mynde to clayme his right in Fraunce. And for the exployte thereof, they offrede vnto hym great and notable summes. By reason whereof the sayde byll was agayne put by, and the kynge set hys mynde for the recouery of the same / so that soone after he sente hys letters vnto the Frenche kynge, concernyng that mater/and receyued frome hym answere of dirision as affermeth the Englysshe boke.

And Gagaynus sayeth in hys Frenche cronycle, that kynge Henry sente hys oratours vnto Charles the vii. thanne kynge of Fraunce, for to haue dame Katheryne hys doughter in mariage/with other requestes touchynge hys ryght and enheryptaunce. whereunto it was answered by the counsayll of Fraunce, that the kyng hadde no leyser to entende suche idelnesse. wherupon kynge Henry made quycke prouision for to warre vpon the Frenche kynge, as after appereth.

In thys yere also, by procuremẽt of Sigismunde thanne Emperour/ a greate counsayll or synod of bysshoppes were assembled at a cytye in hygh Almayne called constaunce, for the vnion of the churche. And for to auoyde the Scisme, whyche began in the. xiiii. yere of Charles the. vi, as before in the sayde. xiii. yere is touched. In the sayd synode or generall counsayll, was the. xxiii. Johñ than pope put downe or resygned by hys volunte. And by auctorite of ỹ same coũsayll/the opynyons and heresy of wyklyf were vtterly anulled & dampned / and two of hys disciples there presente named Johñ Hus or Husse and Jerom the heryrke, were there brente

And many notable actes for the wele of ỹ church there were enacted. And fynally whan the sayde coũsayl had endured nere vpon the terme of iiii. peres / they there by an hole assẽt chase a newe pope, and named hym the. v. Martyne. whyche occupyed Peters chayre. xiii. peres and odde monethes, as indubitat pope, and so other after hym.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. xiiii. Anno dñi. M. CCCC. xv.

Johñ Mychell.

Thomas Fawcomer Mercer. Anno. iii.

Thomas Aleyn.

In thys yere after the kynge had made suffycient prouision for all thynges cõcernyng his warre to be made vpon the Frenche kyng/ he wyth hys lordes honourably accõpanyed, rode thorugh London vpon the. xviii. daye of Juny, towarde the porte of Southamtoñ/where he had appoynted hys hoste to mete wyth hym. And whyle the kyng there was shyppynge of hys people / dyuers of hys lordes, that is to say syr Richard erle of Cambrydge and brother vnto ỹ duke of yorke/ whyche syr Rychard beryng the name of Langley, hadde wedded dame Anne the doughter of syr Roger Mortymer erle of March and wolster/ by whome he had yssue Jsabell, whyche after was maryed vnto the lorde Boucher erle of Esser, & Rycharde whyche after was duke of yorke & father to kynge Edward ỹ iiii. To whome also was assẽtyng syr Rycharde Scrop than treasourer of Englande,

Englande, and syr Thomas Graye knyght, were there arrestyd for treason, and areygned, and so exampned vppon the same, that the .xxix. day of July folowynge they were all thre behedyd. After whyche execucyon so done/the kynge vpon the morowe or shortely after, wyth hys lordes toke shyppynge there, & landed at a place called Kydcaus in Normandy. And the .xvi. daye of Auguste / he layde syege vnto the towne of Harflew, & assayled them by land and by water/ and contynued so hys syege vnto the xxii. daye of September. At whyche daye as sayth the French Gaguin, it was delyuered by Albert thā there cappytayne / vppon condycyon that kynge Henry myghte sauely wynne or passe to Calayes, and so he beyng there, the towne to be yolden vnto hym. But the Frenche wryter Gaguinus vpholdeth the honour of the Frencheinen in all that he maye/and borowyth of hys conseyence for sparynge the trouth in reporte of many thynges. For after moste wryters, ỹ sayde towne after sondry appoyntementes of rescouse / was delyuered vnto the kynge wythout any condycyon the daye aboue sayde. where after the kynge had ordeyned syr Thomas Beaufort hys vncle and erle of Dorset cappytayne of that towne/ he spedde hym towarde Calays.

Than the dolphyn with other lordes of Fraunce, whyche at that tyme hadde the realme of Fraunce in gouernaunce, for so moche as the Frenche kynge was vysyted wyth suche malady as before I haue shewed/brake the brydge to let ỹ kynge of his passage ouer ỹ water of Sum. wherfore he was cōstrayned to draw towarde Pycardy/& so passe by ỹ ryuer of Peron. wherfore the Frēchmē beynge ware/assembled and lodged thē at certayne townes named Agyncourt, Rolandcourt, and Blangy, wyth all the power of Fraunce.

And whan kyng Henry sawe that he was so besette wyth hys enemies/ he in the name of god & saynt George pyght hys felde in a playne betwene the sayd townes of Agyncourte and Blāgy/haupng in hys companye of hoole men that myght fyght, nat passyng the nombre of .vii.M. But at those dayes the yomen hadde theyr Lymmes at lybertye/for theyr hosyn were than fastened wyth one poynt/ and theyr iackes were lōge & easy to shote in, so that they myghte drawe bowes of great strength, & shote arowes of a yerde longe, besyde the hedde.

Than the kyng consyderynge the great nombre of hys enemyes, & that the acte of Frenchmē standeth moch in ouer rydyng of theyr aduersaryes by force of speremē / he therfore charged euery bowman to ordeyne hym a sharpe stake, & to pytche it a slope before hym/and whā ỹ sperys came, somdeale to draw bak, & so to shote at the horsemen. And at the proper requeste of the duke of yorke, he ordeyned hym to haue ỹ vawewarde of ỹ felde. And whā kyng Hēry had thus prouydently ordered for hys batayll ouer night/ vpon the morowe beyng the .xxv. daye of Octobre, and ỹ daye of the holy martyrs Crysppyne & Crysspinian/the kyng caused dyuers masses to be songen. And where that nyghte before, the Englysshe hoste was occupyed in prayer and confessyon / he thanne caused the bysshoppes and other spyrytuall men, to gyue vnto theym generall absolucyon.

And that done/wyth a comfortable chere ordered hys people as they shuld fyght, haupng vnto thē good & comfortable wordes / & so abode ỹ commynge of theyr enemyes, whych

of dyuers wryters were and are remembred to be about. xl. thousande fyghtynge men.

The whyche aboute.ix. of ỹ cloke in the mornynge, wyth greate pryde set vppon the Englysshe hoste/thynkynge to haue ouer ryden them shortely. But the archers, lyke as before they were taught pyght theyr sharpe stakes before them. And whan they sawe the French galantes approche, they a lytell yode backe & receyued them as here after ensueth.

The batayll of Agyncourt.

That is to meane, they shotte at theym so feruently, ỹ what wyth the shotte, and gorging of theyr horses wyth the sharpe stakes, they tumbeled one vpon an other/so that he or they which ranne formest, were the confusyon of hym or them that followed/so ỹ in a shorte whyle a great multytude of horse & men were layd vpon the grounde. And after theyr shotte spent/they layde aboute them with theyr glayues and axes, that by the greate grace of god and comfortable ayde of the kynge, the victory fell that daye to the Englysshemen/and with lytell losse of theyr cõpany. For after the opynyon of sondry wryters/were slayne ỹ daye of Englishe men, the dukes of yorke and of Suffolke/& not ouer.xxvi. parsons moo. But of Frenchmen were slayne that daye after Englysshe wryters, ouer the nomber of.x. thousande. Albeit ỹ French Gaguinus sayth, that of the Englysshe hoste were slayne the duke of yorke, and wyth hym.iiii.hundreth men/and of the French hoste.iiii.M. men of name besyde other/, whiche he numbreth not.

Also he affermeth to be horsmen at that felde vppon the Frenche partye.x. thousande ouer and besyde the fotemen/and that the Englysshemen were nombred at .xv.C. spere men, & xviii.M. of pomen and archers.

At thys sayde batayle was taken prysoners, the duke of Orleãce, the duke of Burboñ, ỹ erle of Vẽdosme, of Ewe, of Rychemount, and Bursigaunt thanne marshall of Fraunce/wyth many other knyghtes & esquyres, whych were tedyous to name, to the nõber of. xviii. hũdreth & aboue, as wytnesseth the boke of mayres.

And in thys batayle were slayne of the nobles of Fraunce, the dukes of Barre, of Alanson, and of Brabã, viii. erles, and barons aboue. lxxx. wyth other gentylmen in cote armours to the nomber of.iii.thousãde and aboue. By reason of whyche pyllage the Englysshemen were greatly auaũnced. For the Frenchmen were so assuryd of victory by reason of theyr great nõber, that they brought the more plenty of rychesse wyth thẽ, to the ende to bye prysoners eyther of other/and also after the victory by them opteyned, to shewe vnto Englysshemen theyr pryde & pompous araye. But god whyche knewe the presumpcion and pompe tourned all thynge contrary to theyr myndes & ententes.

Whan the kynge by grace and power of god, more thã by force of man hadde thus gotten this tryumphaũt victorye, and retourned hys people frome the chase of theyr enemyes: tydynges were brought vnto hym, that a newe hoste of frẽchmen were compynge towarde hym. wherfore he anone commaunded his people to be enbatayled/and that done made proclamacions thorough the hoste, that euery man shulde slee hys prysoner. By reason of whych proclamacyon, the duke of Orleaunce and the other lordes of Fraunce were in such fere, that they anone by lycence of ỹ kyng

sent

sent such worde vnto the sayd hoste, that they withdrewe them. And the kynge with hys prysoners vpon the morow folowyng toke hys waye toward his towne of Caleys/where he rested hi duryng this mayres tyme.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.v. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.vi.

wyllyam Cambrydge.

Nycholas wotton Draper. Anno.iii.

Aleyn Euerarde.

THys yere and.xxix.daye of Nouember,as the mayre rode towarde westmynster for to take hys charge/a pursyuaũt of ꝑ kynges came with letters vnto the mayre, gyuyng to hym knowlege of the kynges good spede.wherfore the bysshop of wynchester than chaũceller of England haunge lyke wyttynge,came that daye to Poulys,and there caused Te deum to be songe with great solempnyte. And in lyke wyse was lyke obseruaunce done in ꝑ parysshe chyrches and other relygyous houses thorough the cytye of London.

And at Poulys,by the sayd chaũceller standyng vpon the steppes at the quyer dore,were the sayd tydynges denounced vnto the people.And vpon the morow folowynge, ꝑ sayd chaunceller with other bysshoppes and tẽporall lordes, with a generall procession of the mayre and comynalte of the cytye rode from Poulys to westmynster on fote, and offered at saynt Edwardes shryne,& so retourned to theyr owne houses. Thanne kyng Hẽry with hys prysoners shypped at Calays,and so landed at Douer.And after he had ben at Caunterbury,and there made hys offerynge vnto saynt Thomas/he than spedde hym on hys iournay tyll he came vnto Eltham,where he rested hym a season.

Upon the.xxiii.day of Nouembre he was met with the mayre & hys bretherne vpõ the Blak heth / & so conueyed with all honour thorugh the cytye vnto westmynster.wherein dyuers places of the sayd cytye, as the brydge & crosse in chepe, were ordeyned certayn pagentes to the kynges great comforte. The maner wherof, with all processyons and other seremonies I passe ouer for letthyng of the tyme.

In thys yere also Sigysmunde Emperour of Almayn came into England. And in the moneth of May, by the kynges cõmaundement & .vii. daye of the sayd moneth, the mayre and bretherne mette hym vpõ Blak heth.And at saynt Georges met hym the kyng and hys lordes in great nõbre/and so conueyed hym vnto westmynster with great honour,& lodged hym in hys own palays.And shortly after was the feast of sayncte George holden at wyndesore/ whyche before was deferred for hys cõmyng. In tyme of whyche solempnyte durynge ꝑ dyuyne seruyce/the kynge kepte the astate.But in syttyng at the feest,the Emperour kept ꝑ astate.The seruice & sotyltees of whyche feeste,with syttynge of ꝑ lordes after theyr degrees I passe ouer. And shortly after came the duke of Holande into this lande, for certayne causes concernynge the Emperour. whome the kynge honourably receyued/ and lodged hym in the bysshoppes palays of Ely in Holbourne. And so the kynge entreated and chered these straungers that for the season that they taryed in Englande, they laye here at the kynges coste and charge.

And

And ꝑ emperoure and he were made knyghtes of the garter / and also a greate duke of ꝑ emperours named duke of Bzyga. And whan the emperour hadde taryed vpō. viii. wekes and odde dayes in Englande / which after some wzyters was to thentent to set an vnyte and reste bytwene the Frenche kynge and kynge Henry: he after toke mynde to retourne into Almayne. whom the kynge foz hys comfozte and nedes that he had to do at Caleys, accompanyed hym thyder / where eyther wyth gyftes & thankes departed from other. And the duke of Hollande went wyth the emperour into Hollande and other countrees.

whyle the kynge was thus at Calys / to hym came thyder vnder sauf conduyt the duke of Burgoyne, and hadde wyth the kynge dyuers communycacyons / and after retourned to hys owne. And soone after ꝑ kyng retourned into Englande / and came to westmynster vpon sayute Lukes euyn oz the. xviii. daye of October.

Thys yere and seasou whyle the kynge was at Calayes, ꝑ is to mene vppon the daye of Assumpcyon of our blessed lady / the duke of Bedfozde accompanyed wyth the erle of Marche and other lozdes, hadde a greate conflycte and batayle wyth dyuers carikkes of Jeane and other shyppes. where after longe and soze fyght, ꝑ honour fyll to hym and hys Englysshemen / to the greate losse of the straungers bothe of theyz men, and also of theyz shyppes / as some dzowned, & .iii. of the grettest of theyz carykkes taken.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. lvi. Anno dñi. M. CCCC. lvii.

Roberte wodtyngton,

Henry Barton Skynner. Anno. v.

Johñ Couentre.

Thys yere the kynge holdynge hys parlyamēt at westmynster / to hym was graunted by auctoryt of the same a fyftene. And by a conuocacyon of the clergy was graūted to hym a dyme, foz the mayntenaunce of hys warrys. wheruppon newe pzouysyon was made foz hys seconde vyage into Fraunce.

By authozyte of this parlyament also, Rycharde whyche was sonne & heyze of ꝑ erle of Cambzydge, which erle was put to deth at Southampton, was created duke of yozke / whyche after was maryed vnto Cecyle ꝑ doughter of Daraby erle of westmerlande, by reason that he bzought his wardshyp of the kynge. By the whyche lady Cecyle he hadde Henry that dyed yonge, Edward that after was kynge, Edmunde erle of Rutlande, Anne ducheſſe of Exceter, Elyzabeth ducheſſe of Suffolke, Geozge duke of Clarence, Rycharde duke of Glouceter and after kynge, and Margaret ducheſſe of Burgoyne. And whā all thynge was redy foz the kynges vyage / he ozdeyned Johñ duke of Bedfozde hys bzother pzotectour of thys land in the tyme of his absence. And that done / he wyth hys lozdes aboute wytsontyde toke hys shyppyng at Southamptō, and so sayled into Nozmandye / and landed vpon Lāmas daye at a place called Toke oz Towke. And after he was wyth hys hoste there landed, foz so moche as he was warned of certayne shyppes of warre ꝑ entendyd to do some harme in Englande beynge than vpon the see: he therfoze to wythstāde theyz malycyouse purpose, sent the erle

erle of Marche, the erle of Huntyngdon, wyth other, to scowre the see. The whyche encountred the sayde enemyes/and after a lōge and cruell fyght them vēquysshed & ouercame. whyche fyght was vpon the daye of saynt Rōmayne or the.xx.day of Auguste, as hath the Frenche cronycle. And of the French nauy, was chefe capytayne the vycount of Narbon/ whych in that fyght was taken with great plēty of treasour. For as sayth Gaguinus, he with one Mountney an other capytayne, to whom ꝑ sowdyours wages was cōmytted/of one assent of theyr synguler lucre wythheldē the sayde wages. By reason wherof whan they shuld ioyne in batayll, many of them wyth theyr shyppes withdrew, & lafte theyr capitayns in the daūger of theyr enemyes. But this is lyke to be a fayned excuse of ꝑ sayd Gagwyne, to saue the honoure of the Frēchmen/as he many tymes semblably dothe in many places of hys boke.

Then to retourne vnto kyng Henry/whan he was thus landed, he sent vnto ꝑ rulers of the town of Cowke and had it vnto hym delyuered. But the castell was defended agayn hym tyll saynt Laurence daye folowyng/ the whyche he gaue after vnto hys brother the duke of Clarēce, wyth all the sygnory therunto belongynge.

And thys done, the kynge spedde hym toward Cane, & layde his syege therunto vpon ꝑ.xvii.day of the fore sayd moneth of Auguste. The whych contynued tyll the feest of the Natyuyte of our lady/& than won vpon ꝑ pty ꝑ the duke of Clarēce assawted. But the castel helde by apoyntemēt, yf no rescouse were had tyll the.xxii. day folowyng. At whych day ꝑ sayd castel was delyuered with other.xxiii strōge holdes, which had before take ꝑ same apoyntmēt. Than the kynge made the forsayd duke of Clarence capytayne of the sayd town & castell. And in this passetyme were dyuers other townes & strōge holdes goten, by dyuers of ꝑ kynges retynew/as ꝑ erle Marshall, the erle of Warwyke & other/ꝑ which wan Louers, Faloys, Newelyn, Cherburgth, Argētyne, & Bayons the cytye, w.th many other strōge abbays & pilys. Thā the kyng helde there sayntt Georges feest, and dubbyd there.xv.knyghtꝛ of ꝑ Bath/ & after cōtynued his warres duryng this mayres yere, in wynnyng vpon the Frēchmen by apoyntementꝛ and otherwyse/wherof the cyrcumstaūce were very longe to declare in order.

In this yere also, & vpō the festfull day of Ester, fyll a chaunce in Lōdō/ which to ꝑ fere of all good crystē men is necessary to be noted. For vpō the hygh & solēpne day, by excepting of ꝑ deuyll & yll disposycīō of. ii. women, that is to mene the wyfe of the lorde Straūge, & ꝑ wyfe of syr Johñ Trussell knyght/such vnkyndnes fyll betwene theyr two husbādes, ꝑ eyther wold haue slayne other within ꝑ parysh chyrch of saynt Dūstanes in the Est. In ptyng of which persons dyuers men were hurt & sore woūded/& one named Thoñ Betwardē slayne out of hand, which was a freeman & fyssshemōger of the cyty. Than lastly both frayers were take & brought vn to the Coūtour in ꝑ Poultry. And for the sayd lorde Straūge was demed culpable of ꝑ beginyng of this fray/ he therfore vpō the sōday folowyng, & for suspendyng of the chyrche, was denoūced acursyd at Poulys crosse & in all parysshe chyrches of Londō. And fynally he was demed to open penaunce & dyd it/ and made greate amendes vnto the wyfe of the sayde Thomas for the deth of her husbād.

A frape on Ester day

And in the ende of thys yere, whete at Lōdō was sold for.ii.s. a bussyell.

Anno

Anno domini.M.CCCC.xvii. Anno domini.M.CCCC.xviii.

Henry Rede.

Rycharde Merlowe.Iremonger. Anno.vi.

Johñ Gedney.

Syr Johñ Oldcastell lorde Cobham put to dethe.

IN thys yere syr Johñ Oldcastell lorde Cobhym/ the whyche as before is shewed in the ende of the fyrste yere of thys kynge,escaped out of the Towre of London/was in the moneth of sent vnto London by the lorde Powys out of walys. The whyche syr Johñ for hereſye & treason was conuycte in the moneth of folowynge / and for the same drawen vnto saynt Gyles feld/ where he was hanged vppon a newe peyre of galowes wyth chaynes,and after consumed wyth fyre.

And about that season,the person of wortham in Norfolke, whyche longe tyme had haunted Newmarket heth, and there robbed & spoyled many of the kynges subgettes / was nowe with his concubyne brought vnto Newgate where he lastly dyed.

And kynge Henry beynge styll in Normandy / deuyded hys people in thre partes. wherof one he reserued vnto hym selfe/the seconde he commytted to the rule of the duke of Clarence/and the thyrde vnto the erle of warwyke. whyche sayde duke & erle employed theyr armes so well and valyauntly,that eyther of theym encroched fore vppon the Frenchmen, and wanne from them many stronge holdes and pyles.And the kynge after longe syeges by hym contynued aboute Argentyne, Cressy, saynte Launde,and other/he then in ỹ ende of thys yere, that is to saye vppon ỹ daye of the translacyon of saynt Edwarde or the.xiii. daye of October/ layde hys syege vnto the cytye of Roan/ and contynued the same tyll the.xii.daye of January folowynge.

In the whych passetyme the olde mayre was chaunged to a new as followeth.Upon the.ix.day of October dyed Johñ Bryan sheryfe / and for hym was chosen to that offyce Johñ Barnes Draper.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xviii. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xix.

Johñ Bryan.

wyllyam Sevenoke Grocer. Rauffe Barton. Anno.vii.

Johñ Parnelle.

THys yere the forsayde syege aboute the cytye of Roan cõtynuynge/ vpon the.xii. daye of January forsayde, the Frenchmen offeryd to treate,whych treaty ỹ kyng admytted vnto the erlys of warwike and Salysbury wyth other. And for the Frenche party, was appoynted the capytayne of the cytye named syr Guy de Bocyer & other. By reason of whyche treaty it was agreed,that ỹ sayd capitayne vpon the.xix.day of the sayd present moneth of January, at such an houre as it shuld please ỹ kynge to assygne/shulde delyuer vnto suche persons as the kynge wolde appoynte the cytye & castell of Roan in all peasyble wyse/excepte the sayd cytye and castell be rescowyd by the dolphyne of Fraunce before the sayd xix.daye.

And the.xxii.daye of the sayd moneth,the inhabytauntes of the sayde cytye to paye vnto the kynge. xv. C. scutes of golde / wherof two shulde alwaye be worth an englysshe noble.

And

And other.xb. hūdzed of lyke scutes, they shulde paye vpon the.xxiii.daye of February next folowynge.whiche couenauntes with many and diuers other cōpzysed to.xxb.artycles, were by the assuraunce of both partyes surely ratifyed and assured.And foz no rescouse by the sayde dolphyn oz any other Frenchman,was made by the daye aboue lympytted/therfoze ꝑ said capytayne accozdynge to hys bonde and pzomysse,delyuered the sayd cytye and castell,vppon the.xix.day of January afoze sayde beyng the daye of saynt wolstan.

The wynnynge of thys cytye of Roan ascrybeth Gaguinus, vnto ꝑ ciuyle dyscozd that was bytweue the cytesyns and theyz fyrste capytayne named erle of Danmale/ whom they expulsyd ꝑ cyty with a strong power of Nozmans. But yet as he affermeth,the cytesyns helde the cyty tyll they were cōstrayned foz lacke of vytayll to eate hozses, dogges, cattes, ratte,and other vermyn.

whan kynge Henry had set ꝑ cyty of Roan in an ozder/he then passed ꝑ countrees towarde Fraunce/so that he subdued the cityes and townes as he rode.And the.xx.daye of Maye he came to Troys in Chāpayne, where he was honourably receyued.

In whyche passetyme,Johū duke of Burgoyne that befoze tyme had ben the occasyon of the murder of the duke of Ozleaunce,was now slayne in the pzesence of the dolphyn / lyke as befoze I haue shewed to you in ꝑ xxxix.yere of Charles the. vii. wherfoze Philyppe hys sonne and duke after hym, refused the dolphyns partye and dzewe hym vnto kynge Henry/and delyuered to hym the possessyon of Charlys the frenche kynge and dame Katheryne hys doughter, as affermyth Gaguinus.

Then were meanes of concozde and vnyte soughte and laboured by the Frenchemen,in so effectuall maner, that shortely after foz a fynall peas to be hadde bytwene both realmes/kynge Henry at Troys in Chāpayne fozsayde by the meanes of the sayde Philyppe duke of Burgoyn, maryed the fozenamed Katheryne, vppon Trynite sondaye than beyng the.iii.daye of Juny.

Befoze solempnysacyon of which maryage a treaty and conclusyon of a peas conteynyng .xxvii. artycles bytwene bothe kynges was concluded. wherof ꝑ effecte was, that kyng Henry shulde be admytted and named regent of Fraunce/and ꝑ Charles shulde be kynge foz terme of hys lyfe,and receyue the issues and pzofytes of the same/and quene Isabell hys wyfe to enioye her dower foz terme of her lyfe to quenes of Frauce due and accustomed.And quene Katheryne kynge Henryes wyfe, to haue her dower in Englande to the value of.xl. thousande scutes/ whyche shulde be in value tenne thousande marke Englysshe. And yf she ouerlyued kynge Henry / then she to haue dower of the realme of Fraunce,to ꝑ value.xx. thousande frankes yerely to be leuyed of suche lozdshyppes as Blaunche somtyme wyfe to Philyppe le Beaw helde. And after the dethe and tyme of the fozsayde Charlys, the crowne wyth all ryghtes belongynge to the same of the realme of Fraunce, to remayne vnto kynge Henry and to hys heyzes kynges.
And foz the sayde Charlys was vpsyted wyth sykenesse / the kynge as regent shulde haue the hole gouernaunce of the sayde realme and defence of the same/a specyally agayne the dolphyne, whyche entended and dyd hys vttermost power to distourbe the sayde peas. And that the lozdes and nobles of Fraunce as well

ſpyrytuall as tempozall ſhall make othe vnto kynge Henry, to be obedyent vnto his lefull commaundmentes concernynge the fozeſayd gouernaunce and defence/ and they with ỹ hedes and rulers of cytyes, caſtelles, and townes, to mayntayne & vphold the ſayde peas to the vttermoſt of theyr powers / and after the dethe of ỹ ſayd Charles, to become his trewe ſubiectes and lyege men. And that al ſuche lozdſhyppes as after that daye ſhulde be be conquered oz wonne fro the Dolphyn and other dyſobedyentes, that they ſhulde remayne to the vſe of the ſayd Charles durynge his naturall lyfe. Pzouyded that yf any were wonne within ỹ duchy of Nozmandy / that they ſhulde incontynently remayne to kynge Henryes vſe. And that after the dyſceaſe of the ſayde Charles, the duchy of Nozmãdy & all other lozdſhyppes therunto belongynge, to be as one monarchye vnder the crowne of Fraũce. And alſo that durynge the lyfe of the ſayde Charles / kynge Henry ſhulde nat name oz wzyte hym ſelfe kynge of Fraunce. And that the ſayd Charles ſhulde in all his wzytynges name kynge Henry his mooſt dereſt ſonne Henry kynge of Englande and enheritour of the crowne of Fraũce. And that none impoſycyon oz talke ſhuld be put vpon the comons of Fraunce, but to the neceſſary defence & weale of the realme. And that by the aduyce of bothe coũſayles of the realmes of Englaude and of Fraunce, ſuche ſtablyſſhed ozdynaũces myght be deuyſed, that when the ſayde realme of Fraunce ſhulde fall to the poſſeſſyon of kynge Henry oz his heyres, that it myght with ſuche vnyte ioyne vnto the realme of Englãde, ỹ one kynge myght rule both kyngdomes as one monarchye / reſerued alwayes to eyther pzyncypate oz realme, all ryghtes, lybertyes, frãchyſes, and lawes / ſo that nother realme ſhulde be ſubiecte vnto other. And that perpetuall amyte and frendſhyp with all famylyer conuerſacion, alwell by byenge, ſellynge, and all other lefull, to be cõtynued atwene bothe ſubiectes for euer / all cuſtomes and pzyuyleges to eyther realme to be payde and obeyed. And that kynge Charles noz Phylyp duke of Burgoyne, ſhulde make any concozde oz peas with the Dolphyn of Uyen, without the aſſent & agrement of kynge Henry. Noz he in lykewyſe without the conſent of the ſayde Charles and Phylyp. And the ſayd Charles durynge his lyfe, ſhulde honozably be founde and entreated / and to haue in his houſholde and aboute hym noble men of his owne nacyon, with all other thynges concernynge his eſtate / and to be lodged in notable places of his realme, wher the people to hym ſhulde be moſte obedyent.

After whiche artycles by the conſentes of bothe pzynces well and nobly ratyfyed and confermed, and ſolempnyzacion of the fozeſayd maryage ended / kyng Henry with his people ſped hym towarde Parys, where he was honozably receyued. And whan he had with his newe wyfe teſted hym there a ſeaſon / he than with the duke of Burgoyne and dyuers other lozdes of Fraunce, layde ſyege vnto dyuers townes whiche helde vpon the Dolphyns partye, & them wanne by ſtrengthe oz by appoyntment / and laſtly layde ſyege and his ozdenaunce aboute a ſtronge towne named Meldune oz Meleon, wherof was cappytayne a noble warryour named Barbaſan, the whiche defended that towne manfully. Than the kynge ſeynge the fozeſayde ſterneſſe of ỹ capytayne / beclipped that towne with a ſtronge ſyege / lyenge hymſelfe on

selfe on that syde towarde the wood, and the duke of Burgoyne vpon the other syde agayne the temple or monastery of saynt Peter/whiche syege so contynued durynge this mayres yere.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xix. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xx.

Robert whytyngham.

Richarde whytyngham Mercer. Anno.viii.

Johan Butler.

THis yere continued styll the former syege aboute Melcon tyll aboute the mydle of Nouembre.At whiche tyme the fore named capytayne sore fampssshed,sought meanes of treaty. By meane wherof it was agreed, that he with all other shulde sauely auoyde by a daye lympted/excepte all suche persones as before tyme had ben consentynge vnto the dethe of Johñ late duke of Burgoyne.For the whiche cryme the fore named capytayne named Barbasan was after accused with many other/ and sent vnto Parys,and there holden in prysons. And that done kynge Henry layde his syege vnto a towne called Melden. The whiche fynally was also gyuen vp by a lyke apoyntment.wherin were founden certayne persones detected of ỹ foresayde murther/for the whiche after due exampnacyon made,they were hanged vpon an elmen tree standynge by ỹ way ledynge vnto Parys. whan kynge Henry had thus wrouthte moche of his wyll in Fraunce / he toke leue of his father the Frenche kynge/& with the quene his wyfe sayled into Englande,& landed at Douer vpon Candelmas day/leuynge in Fraunce for his deputye his brother the duke of Clarence.Than the kynge sped hym on his iournay towarde London / & came thyder on the.xiiii.daye of Februarye. And the quene came thyder vpon the.xxi.day of ỹ same moneth. But here for lengthe of tyme I wyl passe ouer the great and curyous ordynaunce prouyded by the cytezyns for the receyuynge of the kynge and quene, aswell of theyr ordinate metynge wyth theym vpon horsebacke, as the sumptuous and honourable dyuyses prepayred wythin the cytye to the kynges and quenes greate reioysynge.And for the I wyll procede to shewe vnto you some parte of the greate honour,that was vsed and exercysed vppon the daye of the sayde quenes coronacyon/whyche was after solempnysed in saynte Peters churche of westmynster, vppon the daye of saynte Mathy the apostle or the foure & twenty day of Februarye. After whyche solempnysacyō in that chyrche endyd/ she was conueyed into the greate halle of westmynster, and there set to dyner. Upon whose ryghte hande satte at the ende of the same table the archebysshop of Cauntorbury, and Henry surnamed the ryche cardynall of wynchester. And vppon the lefte hande of the quene satte the kynge of Scottes in hys astate/the whyche was serued wyth couerd messe lyke vnto the forenamed bysshoppes,but after them. And vppon the same hande and syde nere to the bordes ende,satte the ducheesse of yorke, and the countesse of Huntyngdon. The erle of ỹ Marche holdynge a ceptre in hys hande, knelyd vppon the ryght syde. The erle marshall in lyke maner knyled vppon the left hande of the quene. The countesse of Kente satte vnder the table at the ryght foote / and the countesse

Marshall at the left foote. The duke of Glouceter syr Humfrey was that daye ouerlooker/ and stode before the quene bare heded. Syr Rychard Neuyll was that day caruer to ꝑ quene/ ꝑ erles brother of Suffolk cupberer/ syr Johñ Steward Sewar/the lord Clyfford panterer in stede of the erle of warwyk/the lord wyllughby boteler in stede of the erle of Arũdell. The lord Gray Ruthyn or Ryffyn naperer The lord of Awdeley amner in stede of the erle of Cambrydge. The erle of worceter was that daye erle Marshall in absence of the erle Marshall, the whyche rode about the hall vpon a great courser, wyth a multytude of typped staues about hym to kepe the roume in the hall. Of the which hall, the barons of the.v. portes begã the table vpon the ryght hande towarde saynt Stephẽs chapell/ & beneth thẽ at the table sat the bowchyers of the chauncery. And vpon the lefte hande next vnto the cupborde, sat the mayre and hys bretherne aldermẽ of Lõdõ. The bysshops began the table forea-gayne the barons of the.v. portes/ & the ladies the table agayn the mayre. Of whyche.ii. tables, for the bysshoppes began ꝑ bysshop of London and the bysshop of Durham / and for the ladyes, the countesse of Staffordе/ & the coũtesse of Marche. And ye shall vnderstande, that thys feast was all of fysshe. And for the orderyng of the seruice therof were diuers lordes appoynted for hede offycers / as stewarde, controller, surueyour, and other honourable offyces. For the whyche were appoynted the erles of Northumberlande, of westmerland, the lorde Fitz Hughe, the lorde Furneuall, the lorde Gray of wyltoñ, the lorde Ferers of Groby, the lord Ponynges, the lorde Haryngtoñ, ꝑ lord Darcy, the lorde Dacre, and the lord Delaware.

The whyche wyth other orderyd the seruyce of the feest as foloweth/ & thus for the fyrst course.

Brawne and mustarde.
Dedelys in Burneur
Frument wyth Balien
Pyke in Erbage
Lampreys powderyd
Trought
Codlyng
Playes fryed
Marlyng fryed
Crabbys
Leche lumbarde florysshed
Tartys.

And a sotyltye called a Pellycane syttyng on hys nest with her brydes/ and an image of sayncte Katheryne holdyng a boke and dysputyng with the doctours / holdynge a reason in her ryghte hande, sayngе *Madame se Royne*, and ꝑ Pellycan as an answere *Ce est la signe, et du roy, pur tenir ioy, et a tout sa gent, selle mete sa entent.*

The seconde course.

Gely coloured wyth columbyne floures
whyte potage or creme of almandes
Breme of the see
Counger
Solys
Cheuen
Barbyll wyth Roche
Fresshe Samon
Halybut
Gurnarde
Rochet broyled
Smelth fryed
Creups or lobster

Leche Damask with the kynges worde or prouerbe florysshed, *Vne sanz plus.*

Lampreys fresshe baken
Flampeyne flourisshed wyth a scochoñ royall/ and therin.iii. crownes of golde plantyd with floure delyce and floures of camemyll wroughte of confeccions.

And a

And a sotyltye named a Panter wyth an image of sayncte Katheryne wyth a whele in her hande / & a rolle wyth a reason in that other hande, sayeng, La Royne mafise, in ceste ise, per bon reson, auec renount.

The thyrde course.

Dates in compost
Creme motle.
Carpe doze.
Turbut.
Tenche.
Perche wyth goion.
Fysshe sturgeon wyth welkes
Pozperies rosted.
Wennes kyed.
Creups de eawe douce.
Pzanys.
Elys rosted wyth lampzey.
A leche called the whyte leche flourysshed wyth hawthozne leuys and redde hawys.

A marche payne garnysshed wyth dyuers fygurs of angellys / amonge the whych was set an image of sayncte Katheryne holdynge thys reason, Ilest escrit, pur voir et eit, per mariage pure cest guerre ne dure. And lastely a sotyltye named a Tigre lokynge in a myzrour / and a man syttynge on hozse backe clene armed holdyng in hys armes a Tyger whelpe wyth thys reason, Par force sanz reson ie ay pryse ceste beste. And wyth hys one hande makynge a cõtenaunce of thzowynge of myzrours at the great Tygre. The whych held thys reason, Gise the mirrour mafete distour.

And thus wyth all honour was fynysshed thys solempne cozonacyõ. After the whyche / the quene soiourned in the palays of westmynster tyll Palme sondaye folowynge. And vpon the mozne she toke her iournaye towarde wyndesoze, where the kyng and she helde theyr Eester. And after that hygh feest passed / ỹ kynge made pzouysyon foz hys warre in Fraũce, durynge the terme of thys mayzes pere.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xx. Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxi.

Johñ Boteler.

wyllyam Cambzyge Gzocer. Anno.ix.

wyllyam weston.

THis pere vppon Eester euyn, beynge than the. xxii. daye of Apzyll, the duke of Clarence bzother vnto the kyng, whõ at his departyng out of Fraũce he hadde laft there foz his deputye / was at a place called in French Baugy oz Bauge, ouerset & slayne, by a frẽch capytayne named syz Johñ de la Croyse. And there erlys of Huntyngdon & of Somerset with many mo gentylmẽ of England and Gascoyne takẽ pzysoners, to ỹ kynges great displeasure. Than shortly after ỹ king held his pliamẽt at westmynster. By autozyte wherof & of a cõuocacio of ỹ clergy holden at Poulys, was graũted to hym a fyftene & dyme. And foz ỹ money therof shuld not be hastely called on of ỹ comõs / the bysshop of wynchester of his owne fre mynde, lent to the kyng. xx. M. li.

And about Pentecoste folowynge kyng Henry shypped at Douer, & sayled to Calays / & from thens yode the thyrde tyme into Fraunce, where he warred duryng thys mayzes pere.

Anno domini. M.CCCC.xxi. Anno domini. M.CCCC.xxii.

Rycharde Gosselyn.

Robert Chycheley Gzocer. Anno.x.

wyllyam weston.

IN the begynnyng of thys mayres yere and.vi. daye of Decembre/was kyng Henry the.vi.borne at wyndesore. And in ỳ .xx. day of ỳ sayd moneth began a parlyament at Poulys. By the whych was graunted to the kyng a fyftene and a deme of the clergy. And for the coyne of golde at those dayes was greatly mynysshed wyth clyppyng & wasshyng, to great hurte of the commynaltye / therefore at thys parlyament it was enacted & agreed, that in the paymente of thys ayde to the kyng graunted/ hys offycers shulde receyue all lyght coynes of golde, so that they wanted nat in weyghte ouer the rate of.xii.d̄.in the noble. And yf any noble wāted more than.xii.d̄,or any other pese of golde after the rate/thā the owner to make vp the value to.vi.s̄.viii.d̄. By reasō of thys also, syluer, as grotes & pens were geson/for all men put forth the golde and made store of syluer. This yere also after Easter, the quene toke shyppyng at Southampton, & sayled to the kynge into Fraūce / where she was honourably receyued of her father and mother, & of the cytyes & good townes. And in the cytye of Paris vpon whytsonday, the kyng and she sat crowne at Dyner, whych had nat before tyme ben sene of any kyng of Englande.

By the of Henry the fyfte.

In thys mayres yere also, but the x.yere of the kyng and.x.daye of August/a new wedyrcok was sette vpō the crosse of sayute Paulys steple of London. Thā kyng Hēry beyng styll occupyed in hys warres in Fraunce, & dayly wynnyng vpon the Frenchmē in thys sayd moneth of Auguste and x.yere of hys reygne / he wared syke at Boys in Uincente, and dyed there lyke a good crysten man vpō the last daye of August, whan he had reyned ix.yeres.v.monethes and.x.dayes/leuyng after hym hys onely ponge son Henry of the age of.viii. monethes & odde dayes. And than hys body was enbawmed and cerid, and after brought vnto westmynster/as in the begynnynge of the nexte mayres yere shalbe shewed. And in the moneth of October folowyng, dyed the French kyng father vnto the quene, as in his story before is declared.

Who that wolde take vppon hym to reherce all the conqueste and triūphaunt victoryes optreyned by thys moste victorious prynce, wyth other laudable dedes/ he shulde to reherce thē certously make a great volume. But where to fore I haue shewed to you breuely some part of the famous dedes of thys excellente prynce, touchynge the actuel dedys of his body/ nowe I wyl breuely touche the actes done by hym for the merite of hys soule. And fyrste for asmoche as he knewe well that hys father hadde labourd the meanes to depose ỳ noble prynce Rychard̄e the second, & after was cōsētyng to hisdeth/for ỳ which offence hys sayde father had sente to Rome, of that great crime to be assoyled/and was by the pope enioyned, ỳ lyke as he had beraft hym of hys natural and bodely lyfe for euer in this worlde, that so by contynuall prayer and suffragyes of ỳ churche, he shuld cause hys soule to lyue perpetually in the celestyall worlde / whyche penaūce for that hys father by lyfe dyd nat perfourme, thys goostly knyght in moste habūdaūt maner pfourmed it. For fyrst he buylded.iii. houses of relygyon/as the Charterhous of mōkes called Shene, the house of close nonnes called Syon, and the thyrde was an house of obseruauntes buylded vpon that other syde of thamys, and after let fall by hym for the styll that foloweth as testifyeth the boke or Regyster of mayres.

where it is reported that after this noble

noble prynce had thus founded these sayd.iii.houses, and endowed theym wyth cõpetent landes/ he of a goost ly dyspoicion wyth a secrete cõpany for to vysyt them, and to se how they kepte theyr dyuyne serupce/ wolde dyuers tymes go fro hys manour of Shene nowe called Rychemounte vnto the sayde thre places, for ꝑ causes abouesayde. At whyche tymes and seasons he euer founde the twoo houses of monkes and nonnes occupyed as theyr statutes requyred. But the thyrde hous whyche was of Frenche fryers, he fande sondry tymes negligente and slacke in doyng of theyr duety. wherefore he called before hym ꝑ father wyth some other of that place, and reasoned wyth thẽ sharply, why none otherwyse they entended theyr diuyne serupce, & prayed more specyally for hym as they were bounde of duety. whereunto it was after pardon requyred lastely by the sayde father answered, that in conuenyent wyse they naturally might nat praye for hym and hys good spede, consyderynge that he dayely warred vpon theyr fathers and kynnesmen, and slewe of theym and spoyled thẽ dayly / and enpouerysshed that lãde, whyche they of very kynde ought to loue and praye for. After whyche answere thus by them made/ the kynge auoyded the hous of them, and turned the lande thereof to suche vse as hym best lyked, and suffred the hous to fall in ruyne. And ouer thys great acte of foũdyng of these.ii. religious houses / he ordeyned at westmynster to brenne perpetually wythoute extinccion, iiii. tapers of waxe vppon the sepulture of kyng Rychard / and ouer that he ordeyned therto / to be continued for euer, one day in ꝑ weke a solempne Dirige to be songe, & vppon the morowe a masse/ after which masse ended, certayn money to be gyuẽ, as before is expressed with other thynges in ꝑ begynnyng of this kynges regne. And ouer thys his great besynesse in warre nat withstãdyng/ this most cristẽ prince by hys lyfe chase hisplace of sepulture within the fore sayd monastery/ & there ordeyned for hym to be songe.iii.masses euery day in the weke whyle the world lasteth, in maner and forme as by these verses folowyng doth appere.

Henrici missæ quinti, sunt hic tabulatæ.
Quæ successiue sunt per monachos celebratæ.

ℭ Prima fit Assumptæ de festo virginis almæ.	ℭ Missa Assumptionis Mariæ.
Poscit postremam Christus de morte resurgens.	Dominica Missa dominicæ resurrectionis. 1
ℭ Prima salutate de festo virginis extat.	ℭ Missa salutationis Mariæ.
Nunciat angelicis laudem postrema choreis.	Lune Missa annũciatiõis Mariæ. 2
ℭ Esse deum natum de virgine prima fatetur.	ℭ Missa natiuitatis Christi.
Commemora natam, sic vltima missa Mariam.	Martis Missa natiuitatis Mariæ. 3
ℭ Prima celebretur, ad honorem neupmatis almi.	ℭ Missa sancti spiritus.
Vltima conceptam denunciat esse Mariam.	Mercurij Missa conceptionis. 4
ℭ Semper prima coli, debet de corpore Christi.	ℭ Missa corporis Christi.
Vltima fit fata, de virgine purificata.	Jouis Missa purificationis. 5
ℭ Concedet vt prima, celebretur de cruce sancta.	ℭ Missa sanctæ crucis.
At ꝙ salutate fiet postrema Mariæ	Veneris Missa salutationis Mariæ. 6
ℭ Omnes ad sanctos, est prima colenda supernos.	ℭ Missa omnium sanctorum.
Vltima de requie, pro defunctis petit esse.	Sabati Missa de requie. 7
ℭ Semper erit media, de proprietate dei.	Omni die ℭ Missa diei quotidie.

Thyche verses may thus to vnletteryd be englysshed.

Loo here is noted and put in memory,
That ouer these actes noble and Marcyall/
Thys excellent prynce, thys fyfte kyng Henry,
Hys soule to endowe he was memoryall.
For wyth suffrages whyche euer laste shall,
Of masses thre that folowe ceryously,
At westmynster he ordeyned to be sayde dayly.

Sonday. Upon sondaye the fyrste masse to begynne,
Deuoutly to be sayd, of the Assumpcion
Of our blessed Lady/ and nat thereafter blynne,
But than the latter of the resurreccion.

Monday. And on the mondaye, of the Visitacion
The fyrste masse after ordeyned is.
Of the Annunciacion the latter masse sayd is.

Tuysday. Upon the tuysday, to kepe the ordre iust,
The fyrste to be sayd of crystes Natiuite.
Than of our Lady byrth the latter folow muste.

wednysdaye. On wednysdaye, the holy ghost halowed to be.
And of the Concepcion the thyrd wylled he.

Thursdaye. The thursday to synge the fyrste of Corpus xpi/
Of the Purificacion the laste of our Lady.

Frydaye. Upon the frydaye, a masse of crystes crosse/
And of the Salutacion the latter for to synge.

Saterdaye. And for of daye or tyme shuld be no losse
Upon saterdaye, the fyrste of that mornynge
A masse of all sayntes to pray for the kynge.
Than masse of Requiem to be laste of all.

Quotidie. And euery day, the day masse amyd these masses (to fall.

Lenuoy.

O mercifull god, what a prynce was this,
Whiche his short lyfe in marciall actes spent
In honour of conqest/ that wonder to me it is,
Howe he myght compasse suche dedys excellent/
And yet for that his mynde nothynge detent,
All ghostly helthe for his soule to prouide,
Out of this world or he fatally shulde slyde.

So that though I had Tullyes eloquence,
Or of Senek the great moralyte,
Or of Salomon the perfyght sapience,
Or the swete dytes of dame Caliope:
yet might I nat in prose or other dytte,
Accordyngly auaunce this princes fame,
And with due honour to enhaunce the same.

Conside ringe his actes, whereof perceyll appere
In this rude werke/ with many mo left out/
The tyme also, whiche was lesse than ten yere,
That he so shortly brought all thynge about/
By diuine grace forthryft without doute,
That myghtfull lorde he halse his ghostly knyght
With grace & honour to passe this worldes sight.

And to haue rewarde dowble & condigne,
And first for marciall actes by hym doone,

Iohe

To be annunced amonge the worthys Nyne
And for his vertues vsed by hym efte soone,
With many good deedes which he in erth had done
Aboue the Hierarches he is I trust now stalled,
That was on erth/kyng of kynges called.

Anglia.

¶ Henry the syxte.



Enry the.vi.of ỹ name, and onely sonne of Henry the.v, & of quene Kathryn doughter of Charles ỹ seuenth kyng of Fraunce/began hys regne ouer the realme of Englande, the fyrst day of September, in the yere of our lorde.M.iiii.C.& xxii. and in the ende of the laste yere of the regne of the foresayde. vii. Charles than kyng of Fraunce.

Thys Henry for the insufficience of hys age, whyche as before ys shewed was but of.viii. monethes and odde days/was commytted vnto the rule of hys vncles, the dukes of Bedforde and of Glouceter. The whyche durynge hys none age ruled the realmes of Englande & of Fraunce honourably /as the duke of Glouceter protectour of Englande, and duke of Bedforde regent of Fraunce. Than vpon the.xxi.day of October durynge thys mayres yere Robert Chyceley/ dyed at Parys the aboue named vii. Charles kynge of Fraunce. By reason of whose deth, by force of appoyntemēt before made betwene Hēry the.v. and hym, as before is towched in the seuenth yere of the sayde Henry/the realme of Fraunce & right thereof fylle vnto the ponge kynge Henry. To whose vse the nobles of Fraunce, excepte a fewe of suche as helde wyth the Dolphyne, delyuered the possession therof vnto the duke of Bedforde, as regent therof durynge that nonage of thys kynge.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xxii.

wyllyam walderne.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xxiii.

wyllyam Estkeylde.

Anno primo.

Robert Tatersale.

IN the begynnynge of thys mayres yere, and fyrste yere of the kyng/that is to say the.vii.daye of ỹ moneth of Nouembre, the corps of ỹ excellent prynce kyng Henry the fyft was wyth great solempnyte and honour brought vnto the monastery of westmynster / and there at the fete of saynt Edward wyth due reuerēce enterred/ to whose soule Jesus be mercyfull. And vpon the.ix.day of ỹ sayd moneth, was a parlyament called at westmynster. By reason whereof, the kynges gouernaunce durynge hys nonage was prouyded for/ wyth all the rule of bothe realmes of Englād and of Fraunce. And by auctorite of the same, the duke of Glouceter syr Humfrey, was ordeyned protectoure of England/ and duke Johñ of Bedforde regent of Fraunce. And durynge the parlyament/ was graūted vnto ỹ kyng for a subsydie for.iii.yeres, v.nobles of euery sacke of wolle that shulde passe out of the lande. And the fyrste daye of Marche after, was of hys preestehode deregraded an heretyke named wyllyam Taylour, and brēt to asshes in smythfeld. whose opynyons for the herynge of them shulde be tedious and vnfruteffull/ I therfore wyll nat wyth theym blot my boke. In thys moneth of Marche also was the town of Boūt

Melanc

Melanc deliuered by apoyntmente vnto the regent of Fraunce. Of the whych apoyntemēt one artycle was, that all hoꝛses, abylmētes of warre, harneys, and other, shulde be lefte within the sayd place/and also golde and syluer and other iewelles there to remayne hooly. And yf that any persone were within ỹ holde founde, whiche beꝛore tyme had ben gylty oꝛ consentynge to the dethe of the duke of Burgoyne/that he shulde be delyuered to the regent / and not to take any benefyte oꝛ pꝛyuylege by that apoyntment.

And this yere the west gate of the cytye called Newgate, was newly buylded and repayꝛed by the executours of Rycharde whytyngton late mayꝛe of Londō. And this yere after mydsomer fyll great water oꝛ rayne/ so that foꝛ the moꝛe party euery daye atwene the begynnynge of July and ende of Septembꝛe, it rayned lytell oꝛ moche/and yet that not withstandynge, that yere was cōuenyent plenty of al grayne, so that whete passed not eyght shyllynges at Lōdon, and malte fyue shyllynges.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxiii. Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxiiii.

Nycholas James.

wyllyam Crowmer dꝛaper. Anno.ii.

Thomas wadekoꝛde.

THis yere, that is to meane in the begynnge of this mayꝛes yere and.xiii.day of Nouembꝛe / the kynge and the quene his mother remoued from wyndesoꝛe towarde Lō don, and came that nyght vnto Stanys/and on the moꝛowe beynge sonday whan he was boꝛne towarde his mothers chare, he shꝛyked and cryed so feruently, that the noꝛyce with her bꝛestes noꝛ nothynge elles that the quene coude deuyse myght contente hym. wherfoꝛe the quene beyng fered that he had ben dysea ſed, retourned agayne to her chambꝛe/where anone he was in good rest and quyet. This of some wꝛyters is noted foꝛ a dyuyne monycyon, ỹ he wolde not trauayle vpon the sonday. But howit was, the quene tarryed with hym ther that nyght/& on the moꝛowe he was boꝛne to ỹ chare with glad semblant & mery chere, and so came to Kyngeston that nyght / and vpon ỹ moꝛow vnto his manour of Kyngeston. Upon wednysday, the quene syttynge in her chare and he vpon her lappe, passed with great tryumphe thoꝛughe the cytye / and so vnto westmynster, where than was holden his parlyament / & there set in his kyngly mageste within the parlyamēt chambꝛe amonge all his loꝛdes. where the speker of the parlyament made a famous pꝛepoſicion/wherof the effecte was, of the grace ỹ god had endewed the realme with foꝛ the pꝛesence of so towarde a pꝛynce and soueraygne gouernour as he was, with many other woꝛdes of commendacyon, which I passe ouer. The.xxvi.day of the same moneth of Nouembꝛe/the kynge with ỹ quene remoued from westmynster vnto waltham holy crosse. And after he had there a seaſon soiourned/he remoued vnto Hertfoꝛd, where he held his Cryſtmasse, and ỹ kyng of Scottes with hym. And ỹ foꝛesayd parlyamēt was iourned vnto ỹ.xx.daye of Cryſtmas. In ỹ whiche parlyament amonge other actes, was oꝛdeyned ỹ what pꝛysoner ỹ foꝛ graūd oꝛ pety treason was cōmytted to warde, & after wylfully bꝛake the same, it shulde

be demed

be demed pety treason / and that the goodes of hym so escappynge, shulde be forfeyted to the lorde of that soyle that they were founde in. In the moneth of Februari, syr James steward kynge of Scottes maried in the face of the churche of saynt mary Ouereys in Southwerke, dame Johane ꝑ duchesse doughter of Clarence/whiche was doughter vnto the erle of Somerset fyrste husbande vnto the sayde duchesse. And the feest was holden in the bysshop of wynchesters place by. And soone after vpon the xiii. day of February, the forsayde parlyament beynge agayne holden at westmynster / for brekynge of the forsayde acte of brekynge of pryson, syr Johan Mortymer was accused by a yoman named wyllyam Kynge and seruaunt vnto syr Robert Scot knyght and keper of ꝑ towre of London, of dyuers poyntes of treason as folowen. Fyrst he coūseyled with the sayd wyllyam Kynge to the ende to breke out of pryson/and promysed to hym for the same, the yerely value of xl.li. lande, & in processe an erledome. Also the sayd Mortymer shulde saye that he wolde go into wales vnto the erle of the Marches / and there he wolde rayse. xl. M. mē, and with that power he wolde entre this lande, and stryke of the heddes of the lorde protectour and of the bysshop of wynchester, to the entent that he myght tell or play with some of his money.

And ferthermore he accused hym, that the sayde Mortymer shulde say, that the erle of Marche shulde be kynge by ryght enheryteaunce/& that he hymself was nexte ryghtfull heyre to the sayd crowne after the sayd erle of Marche. wherfore yf the sayde erle wold not take vpon hym ꝑ crowne & rule of ꝑ lande, he sayde that he elles wolde. And ouer this the sayd wyllyam alledged to the sayde syr Johan Mortymer, that he shulde say that yf he fayled of his purpose, and myght not wyñe vnto the erle of Marches, that than he wolde sayle vnto ꝑ Dolphyn and ayde and take his partye/ where he wyst well he shuld be accepted, and haue good ayde of hym to bryngе aboute his purpose. All whiche maters were duely approued by the sayde wyllyam agayne the sayde syr Johan, before the lordes and comons of the sayde parlyament / for ꝑ whiche treasons he was after drawen and hanged.

In this yere also the duke of Bedforde beynge in Fraunce as regent, warred strongly vpon ꝑ Dolphyn, & wanne from hym many stronge holdes and townes/as Crotey, Balyde, Ryol, Rulay, Gyroūde, Balyle, Mermoūde, Mylham, Femel, Seintace, Jensak, Mauron, Duras, Mountsuer, La venak, Palageeu, Cerneys, Noelam, Cusak, and Doual with dyuers other/ and so contynued tyll he came vnto Verneyll in Perche. The whiche he held so streyght, that last ly Gyrande the captayne therof agreed to delyuer it by a certayne day, excepte he were rescowed. After whiche appoyntment so taken/the sayde Gyrande as wytnesseth Gaguinus, sent worde to Charles the. viii. of ꝑ name or ꝑ. viii. after dyuers wryters, which of his fautoures was than accōpted for kyng of Fraūce. And he in all possyble hast, sent thyder ꝑ duke of Alanson, ꝑ erle of Turoñ or of Douglas, of Bowgham or Boucam, of Baumayll, & ꝑ vicoūt of Nerboñ, with a strōg power of Armenakkes, scottes, & Frēchemē/ꝑ which host or it myght approch to ꝑ sayd towne to make rescouse, ꝑ day expired, & it vnto ꝑ duke deliuered. whā ꝑ duke of Alāsō was assertayned of ꝑ deliuere of ꝑ towne, he toke his aduise of ꝑ other capitaynes, whether it was better to retourn

consyderynge

conſyderyng the towne was yolden, or to gyue batayll vnto the Engliſhe men. But fynally for no reproche ſhuld be to them arected as they had fled forfere / they kept on theyr iourney, & pyght theyr felde in a playne nere vnto the ſayd town of Uernoyl. where they beynge ſtrongely enbataylled, vpon the .xii. day of the moneth of Auguſt, the duke of Bedford wyth hys retynue gaue to the ſharpe and cruell batayll/the whyche endured longe wythoute knowlege of victory.

But fynally by goddes ordenaūce and power, the victory fyl to the Englyſſhe partye, to the greate loſſe of theyr enemyes. For in the fyghte was ſlayne/ as teſtyfyeth the French Gaguyne, the erles of Turon, and Boucam, of Daumayle, wyth the Vycounte of Narboñ, and dyuers other men of name. And of the commons were ſlayne to the nombre of fyue thouſande. And there was taken the duke of Alanſon, the Marſhall of Fraunce, and other. But ỹ engliſſhe wryters affermeth .x. M. to be ſlayne and mo.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxiiii. Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxv.

Symonde Seman.

Johñ Mychell. Anno. ix.

Johñ Bywater

This yere after Eaſter, ỹ kynge helde hys parlyamente at weſtmynſter/the whych began vpō the daye of Erkenwalde or the laſte daye of Apryll, And .ii. dayes before, the kynge wyth the quene his moder came thorough the cytye from wyndeſore. And whan he came at the weſt dore of Poulys / the lorde protectour toke him out of the chare, and ſo was ladde vpon hys fete betwene ỹ ſayde lorde Protectour and the duke of Exceter, vnto the ſteppes goyng into ỹ quyer. Fro whēs he was borne vnto the hygh aulter/and there kneled in a trauers purueyed for hym. And whan he had be there, he yode to the rode of ỹ north dore and there made hys offerynges. And thenne was he borne into the churche yerde, & there ſet vpon a fayre courſer, and ſo conueyed thorough chepe, and the other ſtretes of the cytye vnto ſaynt Georges barre/and ſo helde hys iournay to hys Manour of Kenyngtoñ. And contynuyng the forſayd parlyamēt/ the kyng was ſondry tymes cōueyed to weſtmynſter/and wythin the parlyament chāber kept there his royall eſtate. By auctorite whereof, to hym was graunted a ſubſidye of .xii. d. in the .li. of all maner marchaundyſe cōmyng in or paſſing out of this realm and .iii. ſ. of a tunne of wyne for ỹ terme of .iii. yeres to be holden. And ferthermore it was enacted, that all marchaunt ſtraungers ſhuld be ſet to an Engliſſhe hoſte wythin .xv. dayes of theyr commyng to theyr porte ſale, & to make no ſale of any marchaundyſe or they were ſo lodged/& theym wythin .xl. dayes folowynge to make ſale of all that they brought. And yf any remayned vnſolde at the ſayde xl. dayes ende/that than all ſuch marchaundyſe beyng than vnſolde, to be forfayted vnto the kyng. Alſo that all ſtraungers that caryed any wolles out of thys lande, ſhuld pay .xliii. ſ. iiii. d. for a ſakke cuſtome, where ỹ Engliſſhe marchaunte and denyzen payde but .v. nobles / wyth many other condycyons and penaltyes as well for Engliſh as the other marchauntes,

chauntes, whyche wolde are longe leysour to shewe, enacted and passed durynge thys sayde parlyamente.

And the seconde daye of the moneth of Auguste, was yolden vnto the erle of Salysbury appoynted wyth other by the regent, the cytie of Mans, vnder appoyntemente comprysed in.ix. articles. wherof one specyall was, that yf any persones were founde wythin the cytye whyche had ben consentyng vnto the dukes deth Johan late duke of Burgoyne, that they shulde stande at the grace of the sayde regent.

Also thys yere the duke of Glouceter lorde protectour, whiche lately before hadde maryed the ducheſſe of Holande a woman a greate possessiō/ for cause of rule wherof, to haue dompnyō of the same, he wyth the sayd ducheſſe sayled towarde that coūtre, and thereof her subgectes was pleasyd and wyth honour receyued. But fynally he had suche chere, ꝑ he was gladde to retourne into Englande, leuynge hys wyfe therein a towne of her owne named Mounſe But after hys departynge, the duke of Burgoyne so demeaned hym to the rulers of that towne, were it by batayll or otherwyse, that they deliuered her to the sayde duke / and he forthwyth sente her vnto Gaunte, there to be kepte as prysoner. But by the Frenshyppe of one named syr Jaques de la Graylle a Burgonyon knyghte, & her owne polecy / she escaped thens in a mannes clothynge, and came to a towne in zelande named zyrzre / and frome thens to an other towne in zelande called Ghwode or Ghowe Ghowde, where she wythstode the dukes power.

Than the duke of Glouceter herynge of the escape of his wyfe, and of the malyce of the duke forsayde / in all haste prouyded a stronge company of soudyours and archers, and cō mytted them vnto that rule of ꝑ lord Fitzwater. The whych in processe of tyme landed wyth them at a place in zelande called Brewers haue / where of theyr enemyes they were encountred and dryue backe, & so retourned into Englande wythoute any greate fete doynge, leuynge the ducheſſe behynde them for that season.

Thys yere about Myghelmasse ꝑ prynce of Portyngale came into Englande/ & was honourable receyued and feſted of the kynges vncles/ and tarved here the tyme of thys mayres yere. This yere also began a grudge to kyndle betwene the lorde protectour and hys halfe brother the byſshoppe of wyncheſter/ the whyche after grewe to a greate dyſtourbaunce of the cytie of London, as in the next mayres yere shalbe shewed. And in the ende of thys yere, were many honeſte men of the cytye apeched of treason, by a falſe and malycyous persone belongynge vnto the sayde byſshoppe / and putte theym vnto greate veracyon and trouble. whych was done by the procurement of the sayde byſshoppe as the comon fame than wente. And nat alonely men of the cytie were thus vexed, but also other burgeyſes of dyuers good townes, as Leyceter, Caūterbury, Northampton, and other.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxv.

Johñ Couentre Mercer.

Anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxvi.

wyllyam Mylrede.

Johñ Brokle.

Anno.iiii.

IN thys yere the .xxix. daye of Octobre, and selfe same daye that the mayre for the yere folowyng yerely at westmynster taketh hys charge/at suche tyme as he was holdynge hys great dyner, he was by ỹ lorde protectour sent for in spedy maner. And whan he was comyn to hys presence/ he gaue to hym a strevghte commaundemente, that he shulde se that the cytye were suerly watched in that nyght folowyng, and so it was. Than vpon the morowe folowynge about .ix. of the clok/ certayne seruaũtes of the forenamed bysshope wolde haue entred by the brydge gate. But the rulers therof wolde nat suffre thẽ in so great nombre/ but kepte theym out by force, lyke as before they were commaunded. wherwyth they beyng greuously dyscontented/ gaderyd to them a more nombre of archers and men of armys, and assauted the gate wyth shot & other meanes of warre. In so moche that the commõs of the cytye herynge thereof, shytte in theyr shoppes & sped them thyder in great nombre. And lykely it was to haue ensued great effusyõ of blode shortly therupon, ne had ben the dyscrescion of ỹ mayre and hys brethern, that exorted ỹ people by all polytyke meane to kepe the kynges peas. And in this passe tyme, the archebysshop of Cantorbury, wyth the prynce of Portyngale and other, toke greate laboure vpon them to pacyfye thys varyaũce betwene the lord protectour and the bysshope/ in so moche that they rode betwene theym .viii. tymes or they might bryng them to any resonable conformyte. Than lastly they agreed to stãde to the rule of the regẽt, or of suche as he wolde assygne. wher upõ ỹ cytye was set in a more quiete. Thã the bisshop of wynchester wrote a letter vnto ỹ duke of Bedforde or lord regẽt, wherof ỹ tenure ensueth.

RIght hyghe and myghty prince & tryght noble, and after one leuest erthly lord/ I recommaunde me vnto your grace wyth all myne hert. And as ye desyre the welfare of the kyng our soueraygne lorde, & of hys realmes of Englande & of Fraunce, & your owne weale wyth all yours/ haste you hyder, for by my trouthe & ye tary longe, we shall put thys lãde in ieopardy wyth a felde/ such a brother ye haue here god make hym a good man. For your wysdome knoweth well, that the prosperyte of Fraũce standeth in the welfare of England. Ryght hygh & myghty prynce, I beseche you holde mayster Johan Estcourt your coũcellour excused of hys tarying/ for it is moche agayne hys wyll. But the counsayll here hath made hym do cõtrary hys mynde. And that it may lyke you to gyue credẽce vnto your chamberlayne syr Robert Boteler. And the blessed Trinite kepe you. wryten in great haste at Lõdon the laste day of Octobre.

Upõ the .x. day of January nexte ensuynge, ỹ sayde duke of Bedforde wyth hys wyfe came vnto London. And with thẽ came also the sayd bysshop of wynchester. And the mayre & the cytezyns receyued hym at Merton, & cõueyed hym thorugh ỹ cytye vnto westmynster/ where he was lodged in ỹ kyngs palays/ & the bysshop of wynchester was lodged wythin ỹ abbottes lodgynge.

Than vpõ the morow folowynge or ỹ .xi. day of January/ ỹ mayre presented the regẽt wyth a payere of basyns of syluer & ouer gylte, & in them a .M. marke of golde. But the bisshop had so incenced hym agayn the cytye, that they receyued but a small thãke for all theyr labour and coste. Upon ỹ .xxi. day of February, thã began a great coũsayl at sait Albonys/ and after it was adiourned vnto Northampton.

Northampton. But for due conclu-
syons myghte nat be dyuen by the
sayde counsayll / therfore vppon the
xv. daye of Marche ensuynge, was
called a parlyament at Leyceter/ the
whyche endured tyll the xv. daye of
Juny folowynge. Thys was cleped
of the comon people the parlyament
of battes. The cause was, for procla
macyons were made, that men shuld
leue theyr swerdes & other weppyns
in theyr innys, the people toke great
battes & staues in theyr neckes / and
so folowed theyr lordes & maysters
vnto the parlyament. And whan ỹ
weppyn was inhybyted them / thanne
they toke stones & plūmettes of lede,
and trussed them secretly in theyr sle
ues & bosomys. Durynge the parlia
ment/ amōge other notable thynges
for the weale of the realme, the vary-
aunce that was betwene the forsayd
lordes was herin debated & argued.
In so moche that the duke of Glou-
ceter put in a byll of cōplaynt, agayn
the bysshop conteynyng. vi. artycles.
wherof the fyrst was, that where the
lorde protectour wolde haue had his
lodgynge wythin the towre of Lon-
don / he was by the comforte & ayde
defended & let of the bysshop, and of
Richard wydeuile esquyer thā being
Lyeutenaunt of the same. The secōd
was, for that that the bysshop wolde
haue remoued ỹ kyng from Elthym /
& haue sette hym at hys gouernaūce,
without the aduyce and counsayle
of the lorde protectour. The thyrde
was, that whan the duke was enfor
med of the bysshoppes entent/ and he
entendynge accordynge to his offyce
and duetie, in peasyble wyse to haue
tydē to ỹ kyng to haue gyuē vpō him
attendaunce: ỹ bysshop entēdynge ỹ
distrucciō of ỹ duke, assēbled a great
multytude of men of armes and ar-
chers in Southwarke/ & ther drewe
the cheyne at the brydge fote, and set
vp pypes & other engynes to stoppe
the kynges hye way / & ordeyned mē
to stande in chambres and solers to
throwe stones/ and by theyr ordenaū
ces and pollycy, to haue destroyed ỹ
duke and his company. The. iiii. ar-
tycle was, that kynge Henry the fyft
shulde by his lyfe tyme shewe vnto ỹ
sayde duke, that by the openynge of
a spaynell, a man was taken behynd
a tapet in one of the kynges chābres.
The whiche man after exampned by
the erle of Arundel/ confessed that he
was sent thyther by ỹ sayde bysshop,
to the ende to murther kynge Henry
the forth. After whiche cōfessyon/ the
sayd erle let sakke that man, and so
cast hym into the Thamys. The fyft
was, that the sayd Henry the fyft be-
ynge prynce and heyre parant to the
crowne/ the sayd bysshop shuld come
vnto hym and say, that for somoche
as his father was vexed with greuo-
us sekenes, & was not apte to come
in conuersacion of the people, nor
myght not conuenyently gyde the re-
alme/ that he therfore shulde take vp
on hym the rule and gouernaunce of
the saine, and put his father from all
kyngly power. The. vi. and last arty-
cle was, that sedicyously the sayd bys
shop hadde by his letters sent lately
vnto the duke of Bedforde/ wrong-
fully accused hym, in that he shulde
ateyse the kynges people, and inpar
de this lande by a felde / contrary to
the kynges peas and comon wele of
this lande.

All which artycles were by ỹ bys-
shop wele and suffycyently answered
and replyed / so ỹ he layde from hym
the blame. And fynally by the prouy-
dent counsayle of the lorde regent/ al
the sayd artycles and matiers of va-
ryaunce atwene the sayd two lordes
hangynge, were put to the exampna-
cyon and iudgmente with the assy-
stence of ỹ lordes of the parliamēt, of

Henry the archebyſſhop of Caunterbury, of Thomas duke of Exceter, of Johñ duke of Northfolk / Thomas byſſhop of Durhm̃, of Phylype byſſhop of worceter, of Johñ byſſhop of Bathe, of Humfrey thã erle of Stafforde, of Rauffe lorde Cornewell, & of mayſter wyllyam Alnewyke than keper of the preuy ſeale. The whych lordes wyth aſſyſtence of the other lordes of the parlyament, made a decre and awarde/ſo that eyther party toke other by the hande, wyth frẽdly & louyng wordes/none haupng amẽdes of other, except the byſſhope had wordes of ſubmyſſyõ vnto the duke, in requyryng hym of hys fauoure & good lordſhyp. And ẏ accorde thus fynyſſhed, the parlyament was adiourned tyll after Eaſter. Vppon whytſondaye folowynge, was a ſolempne feeſt holden at Leyceter forſayde / where the regente dubbyd kynge Henry knyghte. And than forthwyth the kynge dubbyd Rychard duke of yorke, that after was father to kynge Edwarde. Alſo he dubbyd knyghtes, the ſonne and heyre of the duke Johan, duke of Northfolke, and the erles of Orenforde and weſtmerlande, wyth other lordes and gentylmen to the noumbre of.xxxiiii.

And after that feeſte wyth all honour was endyd/the kynge wyth the regente and other of hys lordes drew towarde London. And ſo the regente contynued wyth the kynge in Englande, by the full terme of thys mayres yere.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.~~xii~~ Johñ Arnolde.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.~~xii~~ Johñ Raywell Fyſſhmonger.

Anno.v. Johñ Hygthiñ.

IN thys.v. yere and moneth of Febꝛuary/the regent with hys wyfe & houſholde meyny paſſed the ſee vnto Calays, and ſo thorough Pycardy into Fraunce. But or he departed thens, that is to meane vpon the daye of annuncyacion of our Lady/ the byſſhop of wynchester within the churche of our Lady of Calays was created cardynall, by auctorẏte of ẏ bulles of pope Martyne the.v. of ẏ name. And after that ſolẽpnyte don/ the regente toke hym on hys ryghte hande, & ſo conueyed hym vnto hys lodgynge.

Thys yere was vnreſonable of wederyng/for it reyned moſte part contynually frome Eaſter to Myghelmaſſe, where thorugh hay and corne was greatly hyndered.

And in thys yere the duke of Alẽſon, that before was taken prẏſoner at the batayll of Vernell in Perche, was delyuered for a raunſon of.ii.C M.ſcutes of golde as teſtyfyeth Gaguinus, whyche is fyfty.M.marke ſterlyng money.

In thys yere alſo the erle of Salyſbury, whych of dyuers wrẏters is named the good erle / accompanyed wyth the erle of Suffolke, the lorde Talbot, and other, layde a ſtronge ſyege vnto the cytye of Orleaunce, & helde the cytezyns very ſtreyght/and maugre the duke of Orleaunce and the Marſhal of Fraunce thanne named Bouſſaak, the Engliſſhemen wanne from theym dyuers ſtronge holdes adioynynge to the cytye/ and forced them to brenne a greate parte of the ſubbarbes of the cytye.

But ſorowe it is to tell and doolfull to wrẏte, whyle one day the ſayd good erle ſyr Thomas Mountagu, reſted

ceſted hym at a bay wyndow, and be helde the compas of the cytie, and talked with his familiers/a goune was leueyled out of the cytie from a place vnknowen, whiche brake the tymbre or ſtone of the wyndowe with ſuche vyolence, that the peces therof all to quaſſhed the face of the noble erle/in ſuche wyſe that he dyed within thre dayes folowyng. Upon whoſe ſoule & all cryſten Jheſu haue mercy Amē.

This after dyuers wryters was initium malorum. For after this myſ happe, the Engliſſhmen loſte rather ther than wanne/ſo that lytell and lytell they loſte all they poſſeſſyon in Fraūce. And all be it that ſomewhat they gate after/ yet for one that they wanne they loſte thre, as after ſhall appere.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. xxvii. Anno dñi. M. iiii. xxviii.

Henry Frowyk.

Johan Gedney draper. Anno. vi.

Robert Otley.

In this. vi. yere & begynnynge of the ſame/the kyng helde his parlyament at weſtmynſter. By auctorite wherof was graunted to hym a ſubſydye in maner as foloweth. Fyrſt of euery tonne of wyne ỹ came into this lande, from ỹ feeſt of ſaynt Ambroſe or the fourth day of Apryll tyll the ende of that yere, the kynge ſhulde haue. iii. s. belongynge to a denyryn or the kynges lyege man. Alſo of all marchaundyſe paſſynge or cōmynge into this lāde, ſhypped by denyzon / the kynge to haue of euery. xx. s.. xii. d. excepte woll, feil, & clothe.

Alſo to hym was graunted, that of all paryſſhens thorughout his realme beynge the benefyce of the valewe of. x. marke, that. x. of the ſayde paryſſhons ſhulde paye of theyr moeables ſyxe ſhyllynges & eyght pēs, after ỹ rate of eyght pens euery mā. And of all benefyces that were of. x. li. x. paryſſhons to paye. xiii. s. and iiii. d. all cytyes and borowes to be excepted. And ſo rate rate lyke from the loweſt benefyce to the hygheſt. And for the inhabytauntes of cyties, boroughes it was enacted that eueman beynge in valewe of. xx. s. aboue his ſtuffe of houſhold & his apparayl and his wyfes, ſhulne paye. iiii. d. & ſo after the rate vnto the rycheſt.

In this yere alſo and day of ſaynt Gyles or the fyrſte day of Septēbre/ the cardynall of wyncheſter was met by the mayre and his bretherne and certayne cytezyns on horſe backe without the cytie, and ſo brought vnto his palays in ſouthwerke.

Aboute the ſame tyme, a Bryton that a good wydow and honeſte woman hadde cheryſſhed and brought vp of almes, dwellynge in whyte chapell pareſſhe without Algate / murdred the ſayde woman in a nyght ſleppynge in her bedde / and after conueyed ſuche iewelles and ſtuffe as he myght carye. But he was ſo purſued vpon, ỹ for fere he toke a churche in Eſſex, & there forſware ỹ kynges lande. And ỹ conſtables cauſed hym be brought to London, and ſo entended to haue cōueyed hym weſtward. But ſo ſoone as he was commen in to the paryſſhe where before he had commytted the murther / the wyfes caſte vpon hym ſo moche fylthe and ordure of the ſtrete, ỹ not withſtandynge the reſyſtence made by the cōſtables, they ſlewe hym there out of hande.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xxviii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xxix.

Thomas Dulhous.

Henry Barton skynner. Anno.viii.

Raffe Holande.

THis yere vpon the.viii. daye of Nouembre / the duke of Norfolke accompanyed with many gentylmen, toke his barge at saynt mary Oucreys/ entendynge to haue passed thorough the brydge, and so vnto Grenewytche. But by the mysgydynge of the sterysman, he was set vpon the pyles of the brydge, and ỹ barge whelmed/so ỹ all were drowned, excepte the duke and a fewe persones that lepte vpon the pyles, whiche after were drawen vp with ropes and so saued. And in the moneth of Juny folowynge, the cardynall of wynchester with a warly company passed the see / entendynge to haue made warre vpon the heretykes or lollers inhabyted in the countre of Prage. But how it was for nede of men that the regēt hadde in Fraūce/ the cardynall chaūged his purpose, and tarved there a season with the sayde regent.

After some wryters it was for to strengthe and replenysshe certayne holdes, that wered by reason of a cō-flycte that the Englysshemen hadde with the Frenchemen. At the whiche the lorde Talbot was taken prysoner/and the lorde Scalys with many other to the nombre of.iii.M. Englysshe men were slayne and taken. But after the oppynyon of the Frēche cronycle/this victorye shulde be opteyned by Jane or Johan called in Frenche la puzele de dieu, in the.xi. yere of this kynge.

Of ỹ forsayd heretykes of Prage speketh somdeale the auctour of Cronica Cronicarum / and sheweth that the chyef cayptaynes of theym were named Procapius, Saplicius, and Lupus a preest, with other bothe lerned and vnlerned. And Policronicō sheweth in ỹ.xix.chappter of his laste boke, that in the twelfe yere of kynge Henry, the forsayd thre cayptaynes were slayne/with one mayster Peter clerke beynge an Englysshman taken on lyue with dyuers other / and of ỹ sayd heretykes slayne at.xi.tournayes ouer two and twenty thousandes.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xxix. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xxx.

wyllyam Rufke.

wyllyam Estfelde mercer. Anno.viii.

Raffe Holande.

IN this eyght yere vpon ỹ day of saynt Leonarde the.vi. day of Nouembre / kynge Henry beynge vpon the age of nyne yeres, was solemply crowned i saint Peters churche of westmynster. At whose coronacyon were made syre knyghtes of the bathe. And after that solempnyzacyon in the sayde churche fynysshed / an honorable feest in the great hal of westmynster was kepte/ where ỹ kynge syttyng in his astate, was serued with.iii.courses as here vnder ensueth.

Kyng Henry the.vi. crowned.

Frument wyth venyson

Vyand royall planted losynges of golde

Boze hedes in castelles of golde and enarmed

Beke

Beke wyth motten boylyd
Capon ſtewyd
Sygnet roſted
Heyron roſted
Great pyke or luce
A rede leche wyth lyons coꝛuyn therein
Cuſtarde royall, wyth a lyopарde of golde ſyttyng therin, and holdyng a floure delyce
Fryтour of ſunne facyon, wyth a floure delyce therein.

A ſotyltye of ſaynt Edwarde and ſaynt Louys armyd, & vppon eyther hys cote armoure/ holdyng betwene them a fygure lyke vnto kyng Hery ſtandynge alſo in hys cote armoure/ and a ſcryppture paſſyng from theym both, ſayeng beholde.ii. parfight kynges vnder one cote armour. And vnder the fete of the ſayde ſayntes was wꝛyten thys balade.

Holy ſayntes, Edwarde and ſaint Lowice,
Conſerue this braunche borne of your bleſſed blode
Lyne amonge criſten moſte ſoueraygne of price,
Enheritour of the flouredelice ſo gode/
This ſixt Henry, to reygne and to be wyſe,
God graunt he may to be your mode/
And that he may reſemble your knightehode and vertue,
Pray ye hertely vnto our lord Jeſu.

Uiand blank barred wyth golde
Gely party wꝛyten & noted wyth Te deum laudamus.
Pygge endoꝛed
Crane roſted
Byttoꝛe
Conyes
Chekyns
Partryche
Pecok enbakyll
Great Bꝛeme

A whyte leche planted wyth a rede antelop, wyth a crowne aboute hys necke wyth a chayne of golde.

Flampayne powdered wyth leopardes & floure delyce of golde.
A fryтoure garnyſſhed wyth a leopardes hede & .ii. Eſtrych feders.

A ſotyltie, an emperour & a kynge arayed in mãtelles of garters/ whych fygured Sigiſmũde ỹ emperour and Hẽry. the. v. And a fygure lyke vnto kyng Hẽry ỹ. vi, knelyng toforе them wyth this balade takkyd by hym.

Agayne miſcreaũtes the emperour Sigiſmũde
Hath ſhewed his myght, which is imperiall,
And Henry the. v. a noble knyght was founde
For Chriſtes cauſe in actes marciall/
Cheryſſhed the churche, to lollers gaue a fall,
Gyuyng example to kynges that ſuccede,
And to theyr braunche here in eſpeciall,
Whyle he doth reygne to loue god & drede.

Quynces in compoſt
Blaũd ſure powderyd wyth quarter foyles gylt
Uenyſon
Egrettes
Curlew
Cok and partryche
Plouer
Quayles
Snytes
Great bꝛydes
Larkys
Carpe
Crabbe
Leche of .iii. colours
A bake meate lyke ſhylde quartered red & whyte, ſet wyth iolynges gylt & floures of boꝛage. A fryтour cryſpyd.

A ſotyltie of oure Lady ſyttynge wyth her chylde in her lappe/ and ſhe holding a crowne in her hãde. Saint Geoꝛge & ſaynt Denys knelynge on eyther ſyde, pſented to her kyng Henryes fygure beryng in hãde thys balade as foloweth.

O Blessed lady Christes mother dere,
And thou saynt George that called art her knight
Holy saint Denys o marter moste entere/
The sixt Henry here present in your sy ght,
Shedeth of your grace on hym your heuēly lighte/
His tender youth with vertue doth auaunce,
Borne by discent & by title of right,
Justly to reygne in Englande & in Fraunce.

THis solēpne coronacyon with all honour and ioye finysshed prouycyon was made for the kynges iournay into Fraunce. In whyche passetyme, that is to meane vpon ỹ xxiii. daye of January, an heretyke was brent in Smythfelde.

And vpon the morowe next folowynge, was in that felde foughten a stronge fyght/betwene Johñ Uptoñ Appellant, & Johñ Downe Defendant. But for they quyt theym bothe so manfully/the kynge at length releced they quarell, and pardoned thē of they trespas.

Than vppon saynt Georges day folowyng, or the.xxiii. day of Apryll/ the kynge toke shyppynge at Douer and landed the same daye at Calays/ haupynge in hys company.ii. dukes, of yorke and Northfolke, thre bysshoppes, of Bathe, Ely, and Rochester, eyght erles, that is to meane, of Huntyngdon, Staffor de, warwyke, Drenfor de, Deuynshyre, Morteyne, of Ewe, and of Vxmund/and.xi. barons, that is to saye, lord Bowchier, Beawmounde, Typtoft, Fytzwater, Roos, Arundell, Awdeley, Fawcunbrydge, Gray, Codnoor, the lorde Scroope, and the lorde wellys.

In thys tyme and season that the kynge laye thus at Calays / many skyrmysshes were foughten betwene the Englysshemen and the Frenchemen in dyuers partyes of Fraunce. And greately the Frenchemen preuayled by ỹ helpe of a woman/which they as before is touched named the Mayden of god. So that lastly she wyth her company came to a towne called Compeyne, to the entent to remoue the syege layde thereunto by ỹ duke of Burgoyne and other of the Englysshe capytaynes. And therupon the.xxiii. daye of May, she gaue batayll vnto Englysshymen and Burgonyons / and faughte wyth theym longe tyme. But in the ende, by the manhode of a Burgonyon knyghte named syr Johñ Luxemburghe, she was taken on lyue, and her company dystressed, and she caryed to the citie of Roan/ and there kept a season, for so moch as she feyned her with child. But whanne the contrary of it was knowen / she was there forsiuged and brente.

Of thys woman Gaguynus maketh a great processe, of her parenty, and of her fyrste takynge vppon her/ whereof a parte I entende to shewe after in the.vi. yere of Charles nexte folowynge kynge of Fraunce.

And in thys tyme and season, one Rychard Hounden wolle packer of London, was conuycte of heresy and brent at towre Hylle. Than kyng Hēry thus lodgynge at Calays, was asserteyned of the takyng of the forsayd woman, by the letters of ỹ duke of Burgoyne. And after he toke hys small iournayes tyll he came into Fraunce, and so vnto Parys. Of whose cytezyns he was honourably receyued, & taken for the soueraygne & kynge/and there so taryed all thys mayres yere. In whych seasō as wytnesseth Gaguynus/the Frenchemen wan dyuers holdes of Englysshemen and Burgonyōs in the countrey of Brye. And a capytayne named Barbasan scomfited.viii.M. Englysshmē and Burgonyōs, at a place called in latyne Cathalamencis, as affermeth the forsayd auctour.

Anno

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xxx. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xxxi.

water Chertsey.

Nycholas wotton. Anno.ix.

Robert Large.

THys.ix.yere aboute mydlent/ a preest named syr Thomas Bagley and vycar of a vyllage in Essex called Manueden a lytell frome walden, was detect of heresy. Uppon the whych he was degrated, and thā brent in the place of Smythfelde. And soone vpon Easter folowynge/ the lorde protectour was warnyd of an assemble of heretykes at Abyndō. wherfore he sent thyder certayn persones, or rode thyder him selfe as somwryters afferme / & there arrested the bayly of that town named wyllyam Maundeuyle a weuer, the whyche was appoynted for a cappytayne of ỹ sayd heretykes. And for to drawe the people vnto hym / he chaunged hys name & called hym selfe Jak Sharpe of wygmorys lande in walys. But after he was exampned, he confessed to haue wrought moch sorow agayne preestes / so that he wolde haue made theyr heddes as chepe as shepe heddes, so that he wolde haue solde.iii. for a peny or .x. after somewryters. And the same season were takē many of hys complyces, which were sent vnto dyuers pysons. And the sayd Jak Sharpe was for his offence, drawen, hanged, and hedyd at the forenamed towne of Abyndon, vpon the tuysday in whytson weke / and hys hede was sent to London, & there pyght vppon the brydge. And the other of hys fawtours were put in execucyon in dyuers places and countrees, to the terrour of other.

And vppon the .xiiii. daye of July, that yere was one named Rycharde Russell a wolle man, drawen, hanged, and quartered at tyborne for treason.

And thys yere the kynge beynge styll in Fraunce/ the erle of Arundell accōpanyed wyth.ii.M. of Englysshe sowdyours, sente a certayne of hys companye vnto a town called Beale Mount, to prouoke the Frenchemen to issue out of the towne. whyche smal company whan Bossycant and Seyntrales thā cappytaynes beheld/ anone they wyth theyr sowdyoures of that towne spedde theym forthe to take the sayde Englysshemen. The whyche lytell and lytell gaue bake, tyll they had tolled the Frenchemen a good space from the town/ and thā sette vppon theym wyth a sterne courage, and helde theym on hande tyll the sayde erle wyth hys company rescowed theym. Than betwene theym was a cruell fyghte. But in the ende the Frenchemen were chased / and ỹ sayde Seyntrayle wyth many foote men of the sayde towne were slayne at that iournay. And shortly after the duke of Burgoyne wyth ayde of the Englysshemen, at a place called Barre, scomfyted a greate company of Frenchemen/ and toke.ii. cappytaynes belongyng to the duke of Barre the whyche were named Renat and Barbazan / for whose raunsome the duke had yelded to hym the Vale of Cassyle in Flaundres.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xxxi. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xxxii.

Johñ Adyrlee.

Johñ welly Grocer. Anno.x.

Stphyn Browne.

In this

Kyng Henry the .vi. crowned in Parys.

IN thys .x. yere and .vii. day of December/kynge Henry the .vi. was crowned in Parys of the cardynall of wyncheſter. At the whych coronacyon was preſent the lorde Regent, the duke of Burgoyne, and dyuers other nobles of Fraũce / whoſe names Gaguinus putteth not in his boke, for reproche of the Frenchmen. And after the ſolempnyte of this feſt was ended, wherof the cyrcũſtaunce to ſhewe in order wolde aſke a longe leyſour / the kynge departed frome Parys, and ſo came to Roan, where he helde his Cryſtmas / & that done he ſped hym to Caleys.

And whan he had ſoiourned there a ſeaſon/he toke shyppynge and retourned into Englande, and landed at Douer the .ix. daye of Februarye. Than he was mette vppon Baram Downe or Baram Howth, that ys betwene Douer and Cauntorbury, wyth a greate company of gentyls & comoners of Kent all cladde wyth rede hodes. The whyche accompanyed him tyll he came to Blak Heth/ where he was mette with the mayre and the cyteſyns of London vpon a thurſdaye beynge the .xxi. day of Februarye/the cyteſyns beynge cladde in whyte, wyth dyuers werkes or conyſaunces browderyd vppon theyr ſleues after the facultye of theyr myſterpes or craftes. And ỹ mayre and hys brethern were all clothed in ſcarlet. And after due obeyſaunce and ſalutynge of the kynge / they rode on before hym towarde the cytye. whan the kynge was comen to the bridge/ there was deuyſed a myghty Gyaũt ſtandynge wyth a ſwerde drawyn, hauyng thys ſpeche wryten by hym.

All tho that ben enemyes to the kyng/
I ſhall them clothe with confuſion/
Make hym myghty by vertuous lyuyng,
His mortall foon to oppreſſe & bere downe.
And hym to encreace as Chriſtes champion,
All miſcheues from hym to abridge,
With grace of god at the entry of this brydge.

AND whan the kynge was paſſed the fyrſte gate, and was comen to ỹ drawe bridge, there was ordeyned a goodly towre hãged and apparayled with ſylke and clothes of aras in moſte ryche wyſe. Out of whiche ſodaynly appered .iii. ladyes rychely cladde in golde & ſylke, with corronettes vpon theyr heddes. whereof ỹ fyrſt was named dame Nature, the ſeconde dame Grace, & the thyrde dame Fortune / the whiche vnto the kynge had this ſpeche.

We ladies thre all by one conſent,
Thre goodly gyftes heuynly & dyuyne,
To the ſir kynge, as now we do preſent.
And to thyne hyghnes here we do this tyme,
Vtterly ſhewe & them determyne.
As I Grace, fyrſt at thy comynge,
Endowe the with ſcyence and connynge.

And I Nature, with ſtrengthe and fayrneſſe,
For to be loued and drad of euery wyght.
And I Fortune, proſperyte and rycheſſe,
The to defende and to gyue the myght,
Longe to enioye and to holde thy trewe ryght,
In vertuous lyfe with honour to procede,
That thy two ceptours thou may well poſſede.

There was alſo in the ſayd towre xiiii. byrgyns all clothed in whyte. wherof .vii. ſtode vpon ỹ ryght hãde of ỹ ſayd .iii. ladyes, & .vii. vpon ỹ left hande. The .vii. vpon ỹ ryght hande, had bawderykes of ſaphyr colour or blewe. And ỹ other .vii. had theyr garmẽtes powdred with ſterres of gold. Thã the fyrſt .vii. preſented ỹ kynge with the .vii. gyftes of ỹ holy ghoſt/ as ſappence, intellygence, good counſayll, ſtrengthe, cunnynge, pyte, and drede of god. And the other .vii, gaue vnto hym the .vii. gyftes of grace in maner as foloweth.

God

God the endowe with crowne of glory,
And with the ceptre of clenneſſe and pytye,
And with a ſwerde of myghte and victorye,
And with a mantell of prudence clad thou be,
A ſhylde of fayth for to defende the,
An helme of helthe wrought to thyne encreace,
Gyrte with a gyrdyll of loue and parfyte peace.

And after they had thus ſaluted the kynge/anone they beganne thys roundell wyth an heuenly melodye and ſonge, as foloweth.

Souerayne lorde, welcome to your cytye/
Welcome our ioye, and our hartes pleaſaunce/
Welcome our gladneſſe, welcome our ſuffyſaunce,
Welcome welcome, ryghte welcome mut ye be/
Syngynge before thy royall mageſte,
We ſaye with harte withouten varyaunce
Souerayne lorde, now welcome out of Fraunce.

The mayre and cyteſyns with all the comynalty
Reioyſe your comynge newly out of Fraunce/
Wherby this cytie and they releuyd be,
Of all theyr ſorow and former greuaunce.
Wherfore they ſaye and ſynge without greuance,
Welcome welcome, welcome our hartes ioye,
Welcome you be vnto your owne newe Troye.

Than the kyng rode forth a ſofte pace tyll he came at the entre of Cornhylle. where vpon ỹ hylle was ordeyned a tabernacle of curyous worke/ in the which ſtode dame Sappence, and about her the. vii. artes or ſcyences lyberall/as fyrſt gramer, logike, rhetorycke, muſycke, arithmetycke, geometry, and aſtronompe/euerych of them exercyſynge theyr connynge & facultye, and the lady her ſelfe hadde thys ſpeche to the kynge.

Lo I chyeſe princeſſe, dame Sapience,
Shewe vnto you this ſentence of ſcripture/
Kynges that ben moſt of excellence,
By me they reygne, and moſte ioye endure.
For through my helpe and my beſy cure,
To encreaſe theyr glory and theyr hygh renowne/
They ſhall of wyſdome haue full poſſeſſion.

Than the kynge paſſed on tyll he came to the condyte in Cornehylle. where was ſet a pageāt made certle wyſe/ & in the ſummet or toppe therof was ſet a chyld of wonderfull beaute, apparayled lyke a kyng. Upō whoſe tyght hand ſatte lady Mercy, & vpon the lefte hande lady Trouth/ and ouer them ſtode dame Clenneſſe embraſyng the kynges trone. Then before the kynge ſtode two iudges & viii. ſergeauntes of the coyfe. And dame Clenneſſe had thys ſpeche to ỹ vi. Henry the kynge.

Lo by the ſentence of prudent Salomon,
Mercy and ryght preſeruyn euery kynge.
And I Clenneſſe obſerued by reaſon,
Kepe his trone from myſchyeſe and fallynge,
And maketh it ſtronge with longe abydynge.
So I conclude that we ladyes thre,
A kynge preſerue in longe proſperite.

And Dauyd ſayd, the pſalme beryth wytneſſe/
Lorde god thy dome thou to the kynge/
And gyue to hym thy trouth and ryghtwyſneſſe,
The kynges ſonne here on erth ſyuynge.
And thus declated he by his wrytynge
That kynges and prynces ſhuld about thē drawe,
Folke that ben trewe and well lerned in lawe.

After hys ſpeche thus declared/ ỹ kynge rode forth a quycker pace tyll he came vnto the condupt in Chepe. where were ordeyned dyuers welles as ỹ welle of mercy, ỹ welle of grace, and the welle of pyte. And at euery welle a lady ſtandynge, that mynyſtred the water of euery welle to ſuch as wold aſke it/and that water was turned into good wyne.

About theſe welles were ſette dyuers trees wyth flouryſhynge leues and fruytes, as orenges, almandes pomegarnardes, olyues, lymones, dates, pepys, quynces, blaūderelles, peches, & other more comon fruytes, as coſterdes, wardēs pomewardōs,

rycardōs, dampſyns, and plūmes, wyth other fruytes longe to reherſe/ ꝑ which were ſo cūnyngly wrought, that to many they appered naturall trees growynge.

In the boʒdour of thys delicious place whych was named Paradyſe, ſtode two foʒgrowen faders, reſembiynge Enocke and Hely/the whych hadde thys ſayenge to the kynge.

Ennok fyrſte with a benygne chere,
Prayed god to vpholde his proſperite/
And that none enemyes haue of the power/
Nor that no chylde offalſe iniquyte,
Haue power to perturbe thy felycyte.
This olde Ennok to proceſſe can well tell,
Prayed for the kynge as he to le by the welle.

After Helias with his lokkys hore,
Sayde well deuoutely lokynge on the kynge/
God conſerue the and kepe euermore,
And make the bleſſed here on erth lyuynge
And preſerue the in all maner thynge,
And ſpecyall amonge kynges all,
In enemyes handes that thou neuer fall.

And that ſpeche fynyſhed/ꝑ kyng rode foʒthe a lytell foʒther. And there was oʒdeyned a tower garnyſhed wyth the armys of Englande and of Fraunce. Thys tower was wonderfull to beholde/foʒ there was ſhewed in oʒder the tytle whyche the kynge hadde vnto the crowne of Fraunce. And vpʒyght by thys tower ſtode.ii. grene trees artifycyally wyth grene leuys garnyſſhed and wʒought/that one betynge the genelogy of ſaynt Edward, and that other of ſaynt Lewys/and garnyſhed with leopardes and flourdelyces. And ouer theſe.ii. foʒeſayde trees was oʒdeyned the thyʒde/whyche was made the foʒthe ſpʒyng of Jeſſe/ wherin was ſhewed the genelogy of our bleſſed lady ſette out in moſte curyous wyſe. And vpō the front of thys tower were wʒyten theſe verſes folowynge.

By theſe.ij.trees whiche here grewe vpright,
From ſaynt Edwarde & alſo ſent Lewys/
The rote I take,palpable to eche ſyght,
Conueyed by lyne from kynges of great pryce,
Whiche ſome bare Leopardes, & ſom flourdelice/
Armys excellent of honour haue no lacke,
Which the.vi.Hēry may now bere on his backe,

As in degre of iuſt ſucceſſiowne,
As olde cronicles truely determine/
Vnto this kyng is now diſcended downe,
From eyther partye right as any lyne.
Vpon whoſe hede now freſſhely doth ſhyne,
Two ryche crownes moche ſoueraygn & pleaſaūce
To bringe in peas betwene Englande & Fraūce.

Than from thys the kyng paſſed on tyll he came at the cōdupt at Paulys gate/ where was pyghte a celeſtyall trone/ and therein was ſette a perſonage of the Trinyte, wyth a multytude of aungels playenge and ſyngynge vpon all inſtrumentes of muſyk. And vpon the front of ꝑ ſayd trone, was wʒytten theſe verſes oʒ balades folowynge/the whych were ſpoken by the father vnto the kyng.

To you my aungels this precept ye aſſure,
This prince that is ſo yonge & tender of age,
That ye entende & do your beſy cure,
To kepe & ſaue hym from all maner damage,
In hys lyfe here duryng all his age,
That his renowne may ſprede & ſhyne ferre,
And of his two realmes to ceaſe the mortal warre.

And I will ferther as I ſhewe to hym here,
Fulfyll hym with ioye & worldly habundaunce/
And with lengthe of many a holſome yere,
I ſhall comfort & helpe with all pleaſaunce/
And of his lieges to haue faythfull obeyſaunce/
And alſo multiply & encreaſe his lyne,
And cauſe his nobles thorugh the worlde ſhyne.

And thys done he entred the churcheyarde/ where he was mette wyth proceſſyon of the deane & the chanōs of Paulys. wyth whome alſo

also in pontificalibus came the archbysshop of Cauntorbury and chaūcelor of Englande, with the bysshop of Lyncolne, of Bathe, of Salysbury, of Norwyche, of Ely, & of Rochestre/ the whiche so conueyed hym into the churche, and there made his oblacyons. And that done he toke agayne his stede at the west dore of Paules, and so rode forth vnto westmynster/ where agayne he was of the abbot & couent receyued with processyon and by them cōueyed vnto saynt Edwardes shryne, and there taryed a whyle Te deum was songe in the Quyer. And that fynysshed/ he was of his lordes conueyed vnto his palays. And than the mayre with his cytezyns returned ioyusly to London.

Than vpon the saterday folowynge beynge the.xxiii.day of Februarii/ the mayre and aldermen rode vnto the kyng, and presented hym with an hamper of golde, & therin a thousande poūde of fayre nobles / for the whiche the kynge yelded vnto them louynge thankes.

This yere also by reason of ỹ sowdyours of Calays, a restraynte was made there of the wolles / for they were not cōtēt of theyr wages. wherfore the regent of Fraūce beynge thā Capytayne of Calays, came downe thyder in the easter weke. At whiche tyme beynge the wednesdaye in the sayde weke, many sowdyoures were arested and put in warde. And whan he had so done, he rode to Tyrewyn/ & there by the meanes of the bysshop of Tyrewyn, he maried ỹ erle of saint Paules doughter / and shortly after returned to Calays, and caused the sayde sowdyours to be enquyred of/ and fynally.iiii.of them were demed to dye. whiche.iiii.ỹ is to say Johan Maddely, Johan Lundaye, Thomas Palmer, and Thomas Talbot, were beheded at Calays the.xi.day of Juny. And an hundreth and.x.sowdyours were banysshed the towne/ ouer syr score banysshed before that tyme. And vpon mydsomer euen folowynge, the sayd lorde regent with his newe spouse came vnto London/ and so taryed in Englande tyll the later ende of August.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xxxii. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xxxiii.

Johan Olney.

Johan Parneys Fysshmonger. Anno.xi.

Johan Paddysley.

IN this.xi.yere after some wryters / was by the auctorite of pope Martyn the.v.of that name, ỹ coūsayl of Basyle gadered. Duryng the whiche, the heretykes of Prage otherwyse called of Bohemy or Beme were somoned thyder. The whiche vnder a suerte or sauke cōduyte, sent thyder for thē with other, an Englysshe Clerke named mayster Peter a renegate. The whiche defended so stykly theyr erronyous opynyons, that they returned without reconsyly acyon. Thus hāgynge this coūsayll, pope Martyn dyed / & for hym was chosen Eugeny the fourth. The whi the beyng admytted, demeaned hym so nycely in the begynnynge, that he was put out of Rome/ & dyuers prynces toke partye agayne hym, in suche wyse that he was lykely to be deposed. But after he bare hym so sadly, ỹ he recouered such as he had loste, & contynued the see by the space of.xvi. yeres/ and ruled so, that of some wryters he is called Eugeni⁹ glorioſus. And that is of relygyous men / for vnto theym he hadde a specyall zele

Eugeny ỹ pope.

¶ Councyle of Basyle.

and fauoure. And vpon the eyghte day of July / kynge Henry this yere beganne his parlyamet at weſtmynſter, and ſo contynued it tyll it was Lammas/and than it was aiourned vnto ſaynt Edwardes daye.

And this yere in the ſouthe weſte appered a ſterre whiche was lyke to a blaſynge ſterre/and of ſome it is ſo named. The erle of Huntyngdon alſo this yere was ſente into Fraunce with a warly company/and dyd ther great feates as ſaythe the Engliſſh cronycle. But of ꝑ is nothynge towched in the Frenche boke.

Anno dñi. M. iii. C. xxxiii. Anno dñi. M. iii. C. xxxiiii.

Thomas Chaltō.

Johan Brokley draper. Anno. xii.

Johan Lynge.

IN this. xii. yere and. ix. daye of Nouembre/the terment of the erle of ſaynt Pawle father vnto the ducheſſe of Bedforde was ſolemply holdē in Pawles churche of Londō/ where the more partye of eſtates of this realme were preſent. And the. ix. day of Marche folowynge/ the lorde Talbot with a goodly company paſſed thorough the cytye of London towarde the ſee into Fraunce/ where he wrought moche wo vnto ꝑ Frēch men, wherof the partyculers be not towched. Contynuynge the forſayd warre in Fraūce / the towne of ſaynt Denys which is within. ii. Engliſſh myles of Parys, was goten by treaſon or practyſe of one named Johan Notyce a knyght of Orleaūce, from Mathew Gough and Thomas Kyryell capytayns/and ſlewe there many Engliſſhemen and many they toke pryſoners. But ſoone after the ſayde capytaynes with ſtrengthe taken to theym of the Paryſyens and other, layde ſuche a ſtronge ſyege rounde aboute the ſayde towne of ſaynt Denys, that fynally they agreed to redelyuer ꝑ towne, yf they were not reſcowed of the Frenche kynge within fyftene dayes/ ſo that ꝑ ſayde dayes erpyred, it was retourned to the Engliſſhemē. But this not withſtandynge the Frenchemen wanne dayly vpon the Engliſſhe men, both in thoſe partyes and alſo in Normādy. Amōg whiche gaynes, ꝑ Frēche Gagupne bryngeth in a matyer of game, as he reherſeth to ꝑ mockage of Engliſſhemen/and ſaythe that in this yere and feeſt of Myghelmas at a place called Fewgeri in Guyan, a ſtronge fyghte was foughten by twene the Engliſſhmen and the Frēchemen. Durynge the whiche / one named Booſayreſt a Frēch knyght, forſere fledde frome that fyghte and hydde hym in a couerte of buſſhes/ and there ſtoode ſtyll tyll the fyghte was ended, and the Engliſſhemen ſcomfyted and ſcared. Of the whiche two of aduenture to ſauegarde them ſelfe fledde to the ſayd thycke buſſhe, where the cowarde Frenche knyghte ſtode. The whiche whan he hadde eſpyed and lerned of theym, that the Frenche partye hadde wonne the felde/ he became ſo corragyous, that he forced the ſayde two Engliſſhemen to become his pryſoners/and ſo with theym entredde the hoſte of the Frenchemē, and bare a countenaūce as he hadde wonne theym in the fore ſayd fyght. But at lengthe whan all his demeanoure was knowen / he was for his feate hadde in great deryſyon, and by his chefe capytayne named

named Guyllã de saynt Albyne pryued of his prysones.

And in this season also the erle of Arundell, whiche in Normandy had manly borne hym / herynge that one Hyrus a Frenche capytayne hadde fortyfyed a stróge castell named Gerborym before distroyed of Englysshemen, toke with hym a certayn of sowdyoures, and gyrde the castell with a stronge syege/and assawted it by sondry tymes mãfully, as sayth the Frẽche cronycle. But Gagwyne in his cronycle sayth, that or the syege were fully layde or the castell were fully repayred/the sayd Hyrus with his company yssued out of the castell, & gaue vnto ỹ sayd erle a cruell skyrmysshe, in the whiche the sayde erle receyued a deedly wounde, and dyed shortly after. And that byctory so by ỹ Frẽchemen optayned/that castell was to ỹ hurte of the Englysshemen reedyfyed / and a place called Dyepp̃ with other also wonne from them.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. xxxiiii. Anno dñi. M. CCCC. xxxv.

Thomas Bernwell.

Robertr Otlay grocer. Anno. xiii.

Symonde Eyre.

IN this. xiii. yere and euen of saint Katheryne/ began a frost that endured vnto the feast of saynt Scolastica, or the. x. daye of February/the whiche frase the Thamys so feruently, that shyp nor bote myght come with vytayle to London. wher fore suche shyppes as came this yere to Thamys mouthe from Burdeux were dyscharged there, and the wyne and other marchaundyse by theym brought, caryed by lãde to the cytie. And in the latter ende of December this yere ended the parlyamente holden at westmynster, begon at Mygh elmas terme before passed.

This yere also by meanes of the pope than Eugeny the. iiii, at Aras in Pycardy was holden a great coũsayle, for to conclude an vnyon and peas atwene the two realmes of Englande and Fraunce. To the whiche coũsayle, by the sayd popes cómaũdment came as a persone indyfferent, Nicholas cardynall of ỹ holy crosse, with syxe Romayne bysshoppes to hym assygned. And for the kynge of Englandes partye was there assygned the cardynall of wynchester, the archebysshop of yorke, the erles of Huntyngdoñ and of Suffolke, with dyuers other. And for the Frenche kynge, was there the duke of Burboñ, the erle of Rychemount, ỹ archebysshop of Raynys chaunceler than of Fraũce, the deane of Parys, with many othery whiche I passe ouer. There were also as fortherers of the matyer, the cardynal of Cyprys. And for the duke of Burgoyñ; was there the bysshop of Cambray, and Nycholas Raulyn the sayd dukes chaunceler, with dyuers erles and barons of that duchy. And for the duke of Bretayne, were ther the erles of Alenson and of Barre with other / ouer and aboue dyuers oratoures appoynted for the countye of Flaundres. At whiche assemble and counsayll thus holden as testifieth dyuers wryters/ many great offers by meane of ỹ aboue named cardynal of holy crosse or fait crosse, to the Englysshe lordes were offered. But as sayth Gaguinus the Englysshemẽ were so obstinately set on warre/ỹ reason myght not cõtẽt. By reason of whiche obstinaci/ỹ coũsayll was deferred tyll an other day.

At whiche day the Englyſſhemen entendynge the cõtinuaunce of warre, abſentyd theym ſelfe. wherwith the ſayd cardynall beynge dyſcontented, made meanes of an entreaty of peas atwene Charles, that toke vpon hym as Frenche kynge, and Philyp duke of Burgoyn. wherof the ſayd Charles was ſo fayne, ỹ for ſtablyſſhynge of the peas, and to ſatyſfye hym for ỹ murther of his father / he gaue vnto hym all the vtter boundes of Champeyñ marching vpon Burgoin, with dyuers cyties, as ſeynt Quyntyne, Corbie, Peroñ, Abbeuyle, and other, with the countie of Poytyaw & lordſhyp of Macoñ. And as wytneſſeth ỹ forſayde Gagwyne / many mo thynges were vnto the duke by the ſayde Charles ꝓmyſed, whiche after theyr bothe dethes were broken and ſtode for nought. After whiche peas thus atwene them confermed and proclaymed / the ſayd duke became vtter enmye to the kynge of Englande, as after ſhall appere. And ſoone after the ſayd duke began his ordre of the yle and the golden fleſe, and ordeyned certayne knyghtes of that ordre / and made therunto many ſtatutes and ordenaunces, wherof dyuers were lyke vnto the ſtatutes of the garter. And in the ende of this yere and. xiiii. day of Septembre / at Roañ in Normandye died the noble prynce Johñ duke of Bedforde and regent of Fraunce / and was after with great ſolempnytie buryed within the churche of notir Dame of the ſame cytie, where for hym are founded wonderfull thynges after ſome mẽes reporte. But for I fynde therof in wrytynge no thynge, I paſſe it ouer.

Anno.dñi.M.iiii.C.xxxv.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xxxvi.

Thomas Catworth.

Henry Frowyk mercer.

Anno.xiiii.

Robert Cloptoñ.

IN the.xiiii.yere & begynnynge of the ſame / the duke of Barre accompanyed with Burgonyõs and Frenchemen, wanne ỹ towne of Harfleme with dyuers other vyllages. And in Apryll folowynge / the ſayde duke accompanyed with ỹ lorde Ternan and the mayſter of the kynges chyualry, toke the towne of ſaynt Denys, and ſlewe therin aboue. iiii. C. Englyſſhemen / & toke pryſoner Thomas Belcamounde theyr capytayne with many other. And than ỹ Frẽche men aſſawted a towre therby called Meuen, and toke it by appoyntment.

Thã one named Notyce a knyght of Orleaũce, with a ſtrẽgth of knyghtes drewe hym nere the cytie of Parys / and there at a houſe of relygyon of ỹ charterhouſe ordre, lodged hym beyonde ſaynt Denys ouer the water of Sayñ / and cõfedered with certayne cytezen of the cytie named Michaell Laylery, Johan Frountayne, Thomas Pygacen, Johan de ſaynt Benoyt, Nicholas Lorueyñ, and Jaques Bergery, for to betraye the cytie, & to bryng it out of ỹ Englyſſhe poſſeſſyon. The whiche perſones beynge hedes of the cytie cõuered theyr purpoſe in ſuche wyſe that they turned the cõmons of the cytie vpon the Englyſſhe men / and ſodeynly aroſe agayne them, and by force ſlewe of them a great nombre, and there they dyd take many pryſoners. And as the Englyſſhe men fledde or faughte by the ſtretes, the women and other feble

feble persones cast vpon them stones and hote lycoures to theyr great confusyon/so ꝑ the Englysshe men were in passynge mysery and desolacyon. In this tyme of persecucion, the bysshop of Yorke, whiche than was named chaunceler of Englysshe men in those partyes with other/hardly escaped and toke the towre of saynt Denys, whiche as yet rested in the Englysshe possessyon.

Than the other hoste of Frenchemen herynge of this rumour in the cytie / anone drewe nere, & entred by saynt James gate without moche resystence / and so enioyed the cytye at theyr pleasure.

Than the Englysshemen beynge in the towre of saynt Denys, ferynge that they myght not longe holde the sayd place agayne theyr enemies/ fyl to a treaty, and cõdyscended to passe fre with theyr lyues. The which whã they shuld passe vpon theyr iournay were dirided and scorned of ꝑ frẽche nacyon out of all mesure. And whan the cytye of Parys was thus subdued to the Frenche dominion/anone ꝑ Englysh people that there abode vnder fyne and raunsom, were sworne to Charles the seuenth than takynge vpon hym as frenche kynge. And anone after were wonne from ꝑ Englysh power, the holdes named Creoll and saynt Germayne. In whiche passe tyme and season, for to strẽgthe and haue the gydynge of Normãdy/ the duke of yorke encompaned with the erle of Salysbury, and the lorde of Fawcoũbrydg sailed into Fraũce. And the erle of Yorkeyñ beynge thã at Calays, made a vyage into Flaundres, and skyrmysshed with them ꝑ bordred vpon Pycardy, and slewe of them ouer. CCCC, and gate a great droue of beestes, and brought them vnto Calays. And for that certaynte was had that Philyp duke of Burgoyn entẽded to lay his syege aboute Calays/therfore London and all the good townes of Englãde were charged to sende thyder certayne men wel and suffycyently for the warre apparayled. wherof London sente at theyr charge men.

Than vpon the.ix. daye of Juyll/ the duke of Burgoyn with a great multytude of Burgonyons and Flemynges appered before Calays, and there pyght his pauylyons and tentes/so that euery towne of Flaũdres had theyr tentes by themselfe. At wht che season was Lyeutenaunt of Calays syr Johñ Ratclyf knyght, & of the castell was lieutenaunte the baron of Dudley. And so that syege endured vpon.iii. wekes. In whiche seson many knyghtly actes were done and exercysed vpon bothe partyes, whiche for lengthynge of the tyme I passe. Than vpon the seconde day of August, the duke of Glouceter & protectour of Englãde with a company of.v.C. sayles as some writers haue, landed at Calays/ and entended vpon the thyrde day folowynge to haue yssued out of the towne, and to haue gyuen batayll to ꝑ Flemynges. But as testyfyeth all Englysshe wryters/ so soone as ꝑ duke of Burgoyn was ware of the great power of the lorde protectour, he toke with hym of his ordenaũce that he myght lyghtly cary/and the other that were heuy and combrous, he lefte behynde hym. Amonge the whiche one was lefte before Guynes a great gunne of brasse named Dygon, ouer dyuerse serpentynes and other great gunnes. And the Flemynges lefte behynde them a great quantyte of bere, besyde wyne and floure and other vytayle.

Calys Besyeged.

But of this vyage wryteth otherwyse Gaguyne / & sayth that ꝑ duke well and manfully, as a valyaunte knyght i his actes, cõtinued his syge

before Calays ouer two monethes/ And there dyd many noble actes in assaylyng of his enemyes. And after ỹ Flemynges by reason of theyr mur mure and rebellion had refused hym, and in maner lafte hym almoſt with out company / yet not withſtādynge he dayly aſſayled his enemyes / and after with ſuche ſmall company as was laft hym, whā he ſawe he myght not preuayle he returned into his coū tre. And ſo thus alway in all the ſayd Gagwynus boke, he wypeth from ỹ Englyſſhemen in all that he may the honoure/and excuſeth theyr enemy es to his power. whan the duke with his hoſt was thus fledde / the lorde protectoure with his people folowed hym into the countre by the ſpace of. xi. dayes. In whiche ſeaſon he brent but two townes/whiche were named and yet be, Poperynge and Bell/and returned to Calays & after into Eng lande.

And this yere was the caſtell or towne of Rokkelborough in Scot lande beſyeged of the kynge of Scot tes. But ſo ſoone as he had wyttyng that ſyr Rauffe Gray knyght was co mynge with a competent nombre for to remoue that ſiege/anone he depar ted, leuynge ſome parte of his orde naunce behynde hym / to his great dyſhonoure.

Anno dñi. M. CCCC. xxxvi. Anno dñi. M. CCCC. xxxvii.

Thomas Morſted.

Johñ Mychell. Anno. xv.

wyllyam Gregory.

In this. xv. yere & thyrde daye of Januarii/quene Katheryne mother vnto Henry the ſyxte, wyfe of Henry the fyfte, dyed at Barmundiſ ſey in ſouthwarke / & after with due ſolempnyte brought thorughe the cy tie, and ſo conueyed to weſtmynſter/ and there buryed in ỹ myddes of our lady chapel vnder a tōbe of marbell. But whan our ſoueraygne lorde Hē ry the. vi. than beynge kyng, cauſed the chapell to be taken downe & buyl ded a newe, without the lyke ther vn to as now to men dothe appere/than the corps of ỹ excellent prynces was taken vp, and ſet by the tombe of her lorde and huſbande durynge ỹ tyme of the buyldynge of the ſayde newe chapell/and after buryed by her ſayd lorde within the ſayde chapell. And ỹ xiiii. day of ỹ ſayd moneth fyll downe ſodeynly the furtheſt gate towarde Southwarke with ỹ towre therupon, and. ii. of the furtheſt arches of ỹ ſayd brydge, but as god wold no cre ature was therwith peryſſhed, that is to meane of humayne perſones.

And the. xxi. day of this ſame mo neth of Januarii/ the kyng beganne his parlyament at weſtmynſter, whi che before was purpoſed to haue ben holden at Cambrydge. To this par lyament came ỹ byſſhop of Curuyn/ and the counſayle of the erle of Ar mynak, wherof I kynde not ỹ cauſe expreſſed. And after eaſter was a day of dyot holde betwene Grauenynge and Calays, for maters touchynge ỹ kynge and the duke of Burgoyne/ where for the kynge appered the car dynall of Englande, ỹ duke of Nor folke, and the erle of Stafforde, with dyuers other. And for the dukes par tye, appered there the ducheſſe his wyfe, with dyuers other of the ſayde dukes counſayle. where by meanes of the ſayde perſones, an abſtynence of warre was taken for a certayne tyme in the ducheſſe name. For the kynge wolde take none appoyntment with

with the duke/for somoche as he had gone from his truthe & allegeaunce, that before tyme he had made with ỹ kynge. And vpon the seconde daye of July this yere dyed quene Jane, the whiche somtyme had ben the wyfe of kynge Henry the.iiii, and before that the wyfe of the duke of Bytayne / & was caryed from Barmundesley to Cauntorbury, and there buryed by her husbãde Henry the. iiii. And this yere fell a chaunce that had not ben sene many yeres before. For all lyons dyed in the towre/the whiche had cõtynued there a longe season.

In this yere also ỹ kyng of Scottes was trayterously murthered by seruauntes of his owne. Of the whiche traytours the cayptayne of them was named Robert Graame/ỹ which after was with other of his company taken and put vnto moost paynfull dethe. This sayd kynge of Scottes had ben prysoner fyftene yeres in Englande. Kynge of Scottes murdred.

Ann o dñi.M.iiii.C.xxxvii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xxxviii.

wyllyam Chapman.

wyllyam Eltfelde Mercer. Anno.xvi.

wyllyam Halys

IN this.xvi.yere and moneth of Nouembre/kynge Henry caused to be kepte a solempne obyt or terment within the churche of Paules, for Sygysmonde the emperour and knyght of ỹ garter. This was a man of merueylous great & worthy fame, as by the auctour of Cronica Cronicarum is expressed. After whose dethe the gydynge of ỹ empyre fyll to Albert that had maryed the onely doughter of ỹ sayd Sygysmonde.

Anno.dñi.M.iiii.C.xxxviii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xxxix.

Hugh Dyke.

Stephen Browne Grocer. Anno.xvii.

Nycholas poo.

IN this yere, vpon newe yeres daye in the after noone, a stake of woode fyll downe sodaynly at Baynardes castell vpon Thamys syde, and slewe.iii. men and hurte dyuers other. And at Bedford this yere at the kepynge of a shyre day, by the fallynge of a steyer were.xviii. murthered & slayne / besyde many other sore hurte and maymed. And the last day of Apryll, dyed in Roan syr Rychardе Beauchamp called of comon fame ỹ good erle of warwyke. This was lyeutenaunt of ỹ kynge in Normandy, and demened hym there full well and manfully/whose body was after brought vnto warwyke, & there in a newe chapell buylded vpon the southe syde of the quyer, buryed full honorably.

This yere also was great derthe of corne in Englãd & also in Fraũce/ in somoche ỹ a bussshell was solde at Lõdon for.iii.s.& .iii.s.& .iiii.d. And in Fraũce i Parys, it was at lyke value. And there also they dyed sore of the sekenesse of Ipidimie. For this scarcyte of whete in Englande in many places the people made them breed of fetches, pesyn, and benes. And after some wryters for lacke of these foresayd graynes, some poore people made them breed of Fennerotes. But yet by the prouydence of Stephen A derthe.

Browne this yere Mayre/many shippes were freyghte with rye out of Bruce, and dyscharged at London, that eased the people nere to the cytie greatly. This of many wryters is named the seconde dere yere.

In this yere ended the counsayle or synode holde at Basyle, begon as before is sayde in the.xi.yere of this kynge. By auctoryte of whiche counsayle Eugeny the.iiii. was deposed/& Amedeus a duke and prynce of Sauoy, was chosen for pope in the place of the forenamed Eugeny. But yet he had suche ayde, that he contynued in Rome as pope all his lyues tyme. And that other whiche was named of his ayders Felix the.v, contynued his dygnyte in other places / so that thã arose a great scisme in ỹ churche, whether of these.ii. was indubitat pope. For some countrees vpheldeỹ one and some that other/ so that ther were alowed none of them both/ and that was called ỹ neutralytie. This scysme contynued vpon.ix.yeres, the terme whyle Eugeny lyued. After whose dethe was chosen a cardynall named Thomas Sarazan / and after was named Nycholas the.v. To whome the sayde Felix after that he was admitted for Peters successour, of his owne good mynde renounced his dygnyte of papacy/ and submytted hym to the rule and obedyence of the sayd.v. Nycholas thã beynge indubitat pope. And thus cessed ỹ scysme in the churche, whiche had contynued by the terme aboue specyfyed. This Felix was a deuoute pryncẽ & sawe the sones of his sones / and after lyued a deuoute and holi lyfe, and lastly was chosen pope as before is shewed/ for the which he is of dyuers wryters accompted for happy. But and he hadde not medled with the tytle of the churche, and therwith blotted his olde age/ he had after the opynyon of other wryters, be named or alowed moche more blessed & happy. And this yere in the moneth of August in Lõdon, were two bawdes punysshed with werynge of ray hodes/ & after.xl.dayes enprysonment, they were banysshed the towne and dryuen out with most shame.

Pope Eugeny deposed.

In this yere also the conduyte in Fletestrete was begonne by syr wyllyam Estfelde knyghte and late mayre/ and so fynysshed of his good disposicion without cost or charge to the cytie. And he with syr Lewes and Joban of Essex were made knyghtes of the Bathe in the same yere.

And in this yere dyed Robert Chicheley grocer & twyes mayre of London / the whiche wylled in his testament, that vpon his mynde daye a good and competent dyner shulde be ordeyned for.xxiiii.C.poore mẽ / and that of housholders of the cytye yt they myght be foũde. And ouer that was.xx.li. destrybuted amõge them/ whiche was to euery man two pens.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xxxix.

Robert Marchall.

Robert Large mercer.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xl.

Anno.xviii.

Phylpp Malpas.

This.xviii.yere vpon the daye of saynt Botolph or.xvii.day of Juny/ a preste after he was degrated of his prestly dygnyte named syr Rycharde was brent for heresye at ỹ towre hyll/ how wel in his latter day he toke great repentaunce, and dyed goddes man and in the faythe of the churche. This for wordes spoken by his lyfe that the posterne of ỹ towre shulde

shulde synke as after it dyd, & other fantastycall dedes or wordes / he of many lewde folkes was accompted for an holy man. wherfore after his dethe they came to his place of execucyon, and there made theyr oblacyons and prayers, and arered a great hepe of stones, and pyght there a crosse by nyght/so that bi this meanes a great dysclaunder ran vpon the churche, & specially vpon suche as had put hym to dethe. But to ceasse that rumoure/ comaundment was sent from ỹ kynge to punysshe all suche as thyder went on pylgrymage. By vertue wherof ỹ mayre and shyreffes dyd suche dylygence, that shortly after all ỹ sekyng and offeryng was fordone and layde aparte.

This yere also ỹ shyreffes of London fette out of saynt Martynes le graunt. v. persones beynge there in saynctwary / and ladde theym to the countre in bred strete, where they remayned certayne dayes. But those daies expired/they were by ỹ kynges Justyces restored vnto saynctwary. In this passetyme the warre atwene Englande & Fraunce endurynge/ in a wynter season whan the ground was coucred with a myghty snowe, and therewith all a great frost hadde hardened the pondes and dyches / the Englysshmē whiche laye in a strōge holde nyghe vnto a towne called Pountlarge, arayed them in whyte clothes ouer theyr harneys/and so in great nombre approched the dykes, and passed vpon the yse to ỹ walles and them scaled/and the watche of ỹ towne sleppynge, toke the towne and distressed therin mychе people. From the whiche daunger escaped ryghte hardly.ii.capytaynes of that towne named Johan de Vyllers and Naraboñ a knyghte Burgonyon. The countre aboute Paris was also sore vexed with ỹ raupne of wolues, that proclamacyon was made, that euery grene or newe klayn skyñe of a wolfe that was brought vnto Paris, ỹ pro uost shulde gyue to the bringer.xx. shelynges or.xx.sous of that countre money / whiche amoũteth to.ii.s.vi. d.sterlynge. It was not longe after, or Charles the Frenche kynge layde vnto ỹ forsayd towne a strōg siege. But it by ỹ duke of yorke & the lorde Talbot was well and knyghtly defended / in somoche ỹ one tyme they put the Frenchemen to rebuke, and were lykely to haue take theyr kyng, ne had be the soner rescous. Lastly ỹ duke of yorke and the sayd lord Talbot, for vrgent causes departed thēs to Roan / and betoke the towne to ỹ rule of syr Gerueys of Clikto knyght and other, hauynge with them to the nombre of a thousande sowdyours, But the thyrde daye after the dukes departynge/the Frenche kynge so fyersly assayled the towne, that in the ende he wanne it by strengthe, and slewe therin many an Englysshe mā, & toke many prysoners. And soone after was the townes of Meleon, of Corbeyll, and of the Ebreouse, losse from the Englysshmen. For ye shall vnderstande that sondry and many tymes ỹ townes & holdes in Fraunce were lost and efte wonne. But euer ỹ more losse turned to the Englysshe partye, tyll all Normandy were lost, and all other landes of Fraunce appartaynynge to the kynge of Englande.

Dyssencyons of wolfe

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xl.

Johan Sutton.

Johan Paddysley goldsmythe.

wyllyam wetynhale.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xli

Anno.xix.

This

This.xix.yere began murmure & grudge to brēke at large, that before had ben kepte in mewe, atwene ꝑsones nere aboute ꝑ kyng, and his vncle the famous Humfrey duke of Gloceter and ꝓtectour of the lande. Agayne whome dyuers cō iectures were attempted a farre/whi che after were sette nere to hym, so ꝑ they lefte not tyll they had brought hym vnto his confusyon.

And fyrste this yere dame Eleanoure Cobham, whom he was fami lier with or she were to hym maryed, was arested of certayne poyntes of treason/and therupon by exampynaci on conuict, and lastly demed to dwell as an outlawe in the yle of Man, vn der the warde of syr Thomas Stanley knyghte. And soone after were arested as ayders and counceilers of the forsayd duchesse, mayster Thomas Southwell a Chanon of saynt Stephyns chapell at westmynster, mayster Johan Hum a chaplayne of the sayde duchesse, and mayster Roger Bolyngbroke a man experte in nygromancy, & a womā called Margery Jourdemayne surnamed the wytch of Eye besyde wynchester. To whose charge it was layde that these iiii. persones shulde at the request of the duches, deuyse an ymage of wax lyke vnto ꝑ kyng/the whiche ymage they delte soo with, that by their deuyllysshe incantacyons and sorcery, they entended to brynge out of lyfe lytell and lytell the kynges person, as they lytell and lytell consumed ꝑ ymage. For the whiche treason and other, fynally they were cōuycte and adiuged to dye. But mayster Thomas Southewell dyed in the towre of London, the nyght before he shuld haue ben iudged on the morne/as in the nexte yere folowynge shalbe declared.

ye haue in ꝑ precedyng yere herde, how the towne of Pountlarge was wonne by Charles ꝑ toke vpon hym as kyng/wher as many Englysshmē were taken prysoners and sente to a castell named Corayle. where they so beynge in pryson, laboured vnto the ruler of that holde, that one of them myght be sette at large to laboure to their frēdes for their raunsom. The whiche persone whan he was at his lybertye/went vnto a strength there by, wherof an aragon knyght was a Capytayne vnder the duke of yorke, and shewed to hym that the castell of Corayle was but slenderly māned, and that it myght be wonne by poly cy and strengthe. wherupon the sayd capytayne named Frauncys in the nyght folowynge, sette a bussyhmente nere vnto the sayd castell / and in the daunynge of the morynge arayed iiii. of his sowdyoures in husbandmēnes aray, and sent them with sakkes fylled with dyuers fruytes to ofker to sell to the occuppers of the castell. The whiche whan they were co myn to the gate, & by their langage taken for Frenchemen/ anone without suspicion were taken in / and seyng that fewe folkes were styrryng, held ꝑ porter muet whyle one gaue the forsayde bushmente knowlege/ so that shortly they entred and toke the capytayne in his bedde, and after spoyled the castell, and delyuered the Englysshe prysoners, and cōueyed the Frēchemē with all the goodes ꝑ they myghte cary out of the castell vnto Roan.

Upon the day of the translacyon of saynt Edward or the twelfte day of Octobre / vpon whiche daye the mayre is named by the mayre and his bretherne for ꝑ yere folowynge/ that day whan the comons of the cytye after their auncyēt custome had chosen two aldermē suche as before had ben shyrreffes of London and of Myddel-

myddelsex, that is to wete Roberte Clopton Draper and Rauffe Holād taylour, and them presented by name vnto the mayre and hys brother than syttynge in the vtter chambre where the mayres courtes ben kepte, to the entent that the sayde mayre & hys brother myghte chose one of the sayde two suche as they thoughte moste necessary and worshypfull for the rome: the sayde mayre and hys brethern chase there Roberte Cloptō and broughte hym after downe vpon hys ryght hande towarde ỹ hall. whereof whanne certayne taylours there beynge were ware, and sawe that Rauffe Holāde was nat chosen/ anone they cryed, naye naye nat this but Rauffe Holande. wherewyth the olde mayre beynge astonyed, stode stylle vpon the stayer, and commaunded them to kepe silence/ & after helde on his waye to the eest ende of ỹ hall, and there set hym downe, and his brethern about hym. In whyche meane tyme the sayde taylours had contynued theyr crye, and encensed other of lowe felysshyppes of the cytye as symple persones, to take theyr parte and to crye as faste as they / & wolde nat cease for speche of the mayre nor oyes made by the mayres sergeaunt of armes. wherefore the mayre to appese the rumour, sente downe the shyrreffes and commaunded them to take the mysdoers, and to sende thē vnto pryson.

The whych precept obserued, and a twelfe or syxten of the chiefe of them sent vnto Newgate / the sayde rumour was anone ceased. Of the whyche prysoners some were after fyned and some punysshed by longe inprysonemente.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. xii.

Robert Clopton.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. xiii.

wyllyam Cumbys.

Anno. xx.

Rychard Ryche.

In thys. xx. yere/ and in the moneth of folowyng/ the partyes before in that other yere arrested for treasō, were brought vnto the guyldhall of London, and there arreygned of such poyntes as before ben reherced / and for ỹ same fynally mayster Johñ Hum and mayster Roger Bolynbroke were iudged to be drawen, hanged, & quartered, & the wytche to be brent. But mayster Thomas Sothwell dyed in the towre ỹ nyght before ỹ he shuld haue be iudged. Thā accordyng to the sentence of the courte before passed / mayster Roger was drawen to tyborne, and there hanged & quartered/ the which at ỹ season toke vpon hys deth, that he was nat gylty of ỹ treason that he was put to & iuged for. And the next day folowyng was the wytch brente in Smythfelde/ and mayster Johan Hum was pardoned & suyd oute hys charter.

This yere also ỹ lord Talbot layd syege before an hauen towne in Normandy named Depe, & set hys ordynaunce vpō an hylle called Poleet/ where amonge other engynes and instrumentes of warre he hadde deuysed a myghty towre of tymbre, out of the whyche he shotte hys gunnes and other ordynaunce, and therewyth brosyd and crasyd the wallys, and wrought therby greate displeasure vnto the towne of Depe.

In thys towne was capytayne Charlys Mareys a Frenche knyght the

knyght/the whyche manfully defended the towne, tyll vnto hym wyth reſcous came Johñ Notice of Dzleaunce knyght wyth a cõpany of.M. ſowdyours. And there after came to the reſcous of the ſayde towne.ii.other knyghtes named Arthur de Lõgeuyle and ſyr Thomas Dzoynon, wyth.vi.C.mẽ. And after thys Charles whyche named hym ſelfe Frẽche kyng/ſent thyder the thyrde reſcous of.v.C.men of armys and a.M.of other ſowdyours, vnder.ii.leders called Theodalde/& Guyllyam Rychaꝑ A fray in Fletеſtrete vyll knyghtes. The whyche reſcous nat wythſtandynge / the ſayde lozde Talbot well & mãfully cõtynued hys ſpege, & aſſawted the towne in ryght cruell maner,ſo that they were fayne to call foz moze ayde.wherof the lozd Talbot beyng ware,thynkynge that ſhozthy the Frenchmen ſhuld be conſtrayned to gyue ouer the towne/left the gydyng of the ſpege vnto ſyr wyllyam Poyton & ſyr Johñ Ryppelãd oz Tryppelande knyght, & after departyd.After whoſe departyng with in ſhozt whyle,ꝑ Dolphyn of Vyẽne Lowys by name,and ſonne vnto the fozenamed Charles Frenche kynge/ accompanyed wyth the erle of ſaynte Paule & other to the nombze of.xvi. C.knyghtes,came vnto the reſcous of the ſayd towne. And after he had a day reſted hym and hys ſowdiours he ſente the fozenamed Theodalde wyth a ſtrength of.iiii.C. men foz to aſſayle the foꝛſayde towze of tymbze/ but lytell hurt dyd they therunto.

Than the ſayd Dolphyn ſente an other ſtrength of.vi.C. men to aſſayle it/but the Englyſhemen quyt theym ſo manfully that they ſlew.viii.ſcoze Frenchmen, & wounded ouer .iii.C. wherwyth the Dolphyn beynge greuouſly amoued/ aſſembled the vttermoſt ſtrength he myght make, aſwel of the towne and other, and ſet vpon the Engliſſhe men, whiche were ſoze bꝛuſed with dayly fyght and fewe in nombze/and fynally ſcomfited them, and ſlewe of theym vpon. CCC.and toke ꝑ reſt pꝛyſoners. Amonge ꝑ wht che the fozeſayd two Engliſſhe captaynes were taken/ and a kynneſmã of the lozde Talbottes oz moze beryly one of his baſte ſones. And thus was Depe reſcowed, & the Engliſſh men diſcomfyted/after they had mãfully maynteyned that ſyege by the ſpace of.ix. wekes and odde dayes.

‡ Alſo this yere in ꝑ moneth of Auguſt was a great affray i Fletеſtrete, atwene the getters of the ynnes of courte and the inhabytauntes of the ſame ſtrete.whiche affray began in ꝑ nyght/and ſo contynued with aſſawtes and ſmall bykerynges tyll ꝑ next day. In whiche ſeaſon moche people of the cytie thyder was gadered/ and dyuers men of bothe partyes were ſlayne and many hurte. But laſtly by the pꝛeſence & diſcrecyon of ꝑ mayer and ſhyꝛeffes this affraye was appeſed. Of the whiche was chyfe occaſyoner a man of Clyffoꝛde ynne named Herbotell.

In this yere alſo, by certayne ambaſſadoures ꝑ were ſente out of Englãd into Guyon/a maryage was cõcluded in the begynnynge of the yere folowynge, atwene the kynge and ꝑ erles doughter of Armenak. whiche concluſion was after diſalowed and put by, by the meanes of the erle of Suffolke. whiche kyndled a newe bꝛande of bꝛunynge enuy atwene ꝑ lozde pꝛotectour and hym/ and toke fyꝛe in ſuche wyſe that it lefte not tyll bothe partyes with many other were conſumed and ſlayne, wherof enſued moche myſchefe within the realme, and loſſe of all Nozmandy / as after to you ſhall appere.

Anno

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xlii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xliii.

Thomas Beaumount.

Joñ Athyzley Jrenmonger. Anno.xxi.

Rycharde Nozdon.

IN thys.xxi.yere / the forsayde erle of Suffolke, whych as before is touched had fozdon the cõclusyon of the marpage takẽ by the ambassadours, betwene the kyng and ꝑ erle of Armenakes doughter, went ouer hym selfe wyth other vnto hym assygned / & there in Fraũce concluded a mariage betwene the kyng and dame Margarete the kynges doughter of Cecyle and of Hierusalem as sayth the Englysshe cronycle. And for that mariage to bzynge about / to the sayd kyng of Cecyle was deliuered ꝑ duchyé of Angeou and erledome of Mayne, whych are called the keyes of Nozmandy.

But the Frẽche wryter Gaguyne sayth in hys latyne cronycle, ꝑ about thys tyme the erle of Suffolke came vnto Charles the Frenche kyng to a towne in Lozayn named Nauncy oz Naũt, & axed of hym his doughter to be quene of England / but he gyueth to her no name. The whyche request of the sayd Charles to the sayde erle was graũted. Also he affermeth lytel tofore that season, a peace betwene bothe realmes was concluded for the terme of.xxii.monethes / which peace endured but a whyle after.

And thys yere vpon Candelmas euyn, the steple of saĩt Poules church in Londõ was set on fyre by tempest of lyghtnynge / and lastly quẽched by greate dylygence and laboure of many persones. But of all that there laboured, the mozowe masse prẽeste of Bowe church in chepe was moste commended and noted.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xliii. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xliiii.

Nycholas wyffozde.

Thomas Catwozthe Gzocer. Anno.xxii.

Johñ Nozman.

THys.xxii.yere / ꝑ erle of Stafforde was made oz created duke of Bukkyngham, the erle of warwyke, duke of warwyke, the erle of Dozset marques of Dozset, and the erle of Suffolke marquys of Suffolke. The whyche marquys of Suffolke soone after wyth hys wyfe and other honourable personages aswell of men as of women, with greate apparayl of chayres and other costyous ozdenaunce for to conuey the forenamed lady Margarete into England, sayled into Fraũce / where they were honourably receyued, and so taryed there all thys mayres yere.

In thys yere was also an acte made by auctozyte of the comon coũsayll of London, that vppon the sondaye shuld no maner of thynge with in the fraunchyse of ꝑ citie be bought oz solde, nother vytayll noz other thynge / noz none artyficer shulde bzynge hys ware to any man to be wozne oz occuppyed that daye, as tayllours garmentes oz cozdewaynners shoys / and so in lykewyse of all other occupacyons. The whyche ozdenaunce helde but a whyle.

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xliii. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.xlv.

Stephyn Foster.

Henry Frowyke Mayer. Anno.xviii.

Hughe wyche.

THys.xviii.yere and moneth of the forsayd lady Margarete came ouer into Englãd/ and in the moneth folowynge she was maryed vnto kyng Hẽry at a towne called Sowthwyke in the countre of Hamshyre. And frõ thens she was honourably conueyed by the lordes and estates of thys lãd, whyche mette wyth her in sondry places wyth greate retynewe of men in sondry lyueryes, wyth theyr sleuys browdered and som betyn wyth gold smythes werkes in moste costly maner. And specyally the duke of Glouceter mette wyth her wyth fyue hundreth men in one lyuerey. And so she was conueyed vnto Blacke heth / where vppon the .xviii. day of May she was mette with the mayre, aldermen, and sherykes of the cytye, and the craftes of the same, in browne blewe wyth brawderyd sleuys. That is to meane euery mystery or crafte wyth conysaunce of hys mystery, and red hoodes vppon eyther of theyr heddes/and so the same daye broughte her vnto London, where for her were ordeyned sumptuous and costly pagẽtes and resemblaũce of dyuerse olde hystoryes, to ꝑ great comforte of her and suche as came wyth her, ꝑ maner whereof I passe ouer for lengthynge of the tyme. And so wyth great tryũphe she was broughte vnto westmynster / where vppon the.xxx. daye of the moneth of Maye, that was the sondaye after Trynyte sondaye, she was solemply crowned.

After whyche feeste, iustes were there holden by thre dayes continual within the seyntwary before ꝑ abbey. Of thys mariage are of dyuers writers lefte dyuers remembraunces / sayenge that thys mariage was vnprofytable for the realme dyuerse wayes. For fyrste was gyuen vp for her oute of the kynges possession the duchye of Angeou and the erledome of Mayne. And for the costes of her conueynge into thys lande, was axed in playne parlyamente a fyftene and an halfe by the marquys of Suffolke. By reason whereof he grewe in such hatered of the people/ that fynally it coste hym hys lyfe. And ouer that it appered that god was nat pleased wyth that mariage. For after thys day the fortune of the worlde beganne to fal from ꝑ kyng, so that he loste hys frendes in Englande and hys reuenewes in Fraũce. For shortly after all was ruled by the quene and her counsayl/ to the great dysprofyte of the kyng & hys realme/ and to the greate maugre and obloquy of the quene.

The whych as syn that tyme hath ben well prouyd, had many a wrong and false report made of her, whych were to longe to reherse. All whyche mysery fyll, for brekynge of the promyse made by the kyng vnto the erle of Armenakkys doughter/ as before in the.xx. yere of the kyng is touched as agreeth moste writers. whyche mysery in thys story shall somdeale appere, as fyrst by the losyng of Normãdy, the deuisiõ of the lordes within thys realme, the rebelliõ of ꝑ comynaltye agayne theyr prynce & soueraygne, & fynally the kynge deposed, and the quene wyth the prynce fayne to fle the lande, & loste the rule thereof for euer.

Anno

Anno.dñi.M.iiii.C.xlvi. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xlvii.

Robert Hozne.

Johñ Olney Mercer Anno.xxv.

Godfrey Boloyne.

THys.xxv.yere, was a parl pament holdē at saynt Edmondes Bury in Suffolke. To ỹ whiche towne all the cōmons of that coūtre were warned to come in theyr moste defēcyble aray, to gyue attendaunce vpō the kyng. And so soone as thys parlyamēt was begō, and the lozdes assembled/syr Hūfrey duke of Glouceter and vncle vnto ỹ kyng, shortly after was arrested by the vycounte Beawmōde thā hygh cōstable of Englande/whome accompanied ỹ duke of Bukkynghiñ & other. And after this aresl was executed/all his owne seruaūtes were put from him/&.xxxii of the pzyncypall of theym were also put vnder aresl, & sente vnto dyuers pzysons/whereof arose a great murmour amonge the people.

Than thus cōtynuyng thys parlyament, wythin.vi. dayes after the duke was arrested, he was founde dede in hys bedde beynge the .xxiiii. daye of Febzuary. Of whose muzdze dyuers repoztes ar made, whyche I passe ouer.

Than hys cozps was layd oppn ỹ all mē myght se hym, but no wonde was founde on hym. Of the honourable fame of thys man, a longe style I myght make, of ỹ good rule that he kepte thys lande in, durynge the none age of the kynge/and of hys honourable houlholde & libertye which passed all other befoze hys tyme/and trewe of hys allegeaunce that no mā coude with ryght accuse hi, but malycyous persones whych hys glozious honour & fame lafte nat to maligne agayne hym, tyll he were put from all wozdly rule/ and specyally foz it was thought, that durynge hys lyfe he wolde withstāde the delyuery of Angeou & Mayne befoze pzompsed. Thys foz hys honourable and lyberall demeanure was surnamed the good duke of Glouceter. Than after he had lyen oppn a season ỹ all men myghte be assured of hys dethe/ the cozps was honourably pzouided foz and so cōueyed vnto saynt Albonys, & there buryed nere vnto the shzyne of saynt Albone/ to whose soule god be mercyfull Amen.

And whan this noble pzynce was thus enteryd / fyue persones of hys houlholde, that is to saye, syr Roger Chamberlayne knyght, Myddelton Herbarde, & Arthur esquyers, & one Rycharde Nedā yeman, were sente vnto Londō/& there arayned and iuged to be dzawē, hāged, and quartered. Of the whych sentēce dzawynge & hāgynge were put in execuciō. But whā they were cut downe to be quartered/ỹ Marquys of Suffolke there beyng pzesēt, shewed ỹ kynges chartour foz thē/& so were deliuered to the great reioysyng of ỹ multytude of ỹ people there beyng pzesent. But foz thys the grudge & murmour of ỹ people ceased nat agayne the Marquys of Suffolke, foz the deth of the good duke of Glouceter / of whose murdze he was specyally suspected.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xlvii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xlviii.

wyllyam Abzaham.

Johñ Gedney Dzaper. Anno.xxvi

Thomas Scot.

In thys.xxvi.yere after concordaūce of moste wryters or nere there about/ỹ.xxiii.scisme of ỹ church ceased, that before had cōtynued betwene Eugeny the.iiii.& Felix the.v. vpon.xvi.yeres.

Thys scisme as before is touched, began by reason of the deposycyō of the sayde Eugeny at the coūsayll of Basile, for that that he wolde nat observe the decrees before made in the coūsayll of Cōstaūce, & other causes to hym layde. But yet that deposyng natwythstandynge/ perfore he cōtynued pope by the terme of.xiiii.yeres after. And the sayde Felix at the sayd coūsayll admitted in lyke maner, cōtynued as pope by all that sayde season/ lyke as before to you Jhaue shewed in the.xvii.yere of thys kynge.

And as now by exortacyon of crysten prynces, as the kynge of England, whose messangers in ỹ behalfe were the bysshoppe of Norwyche, and the lord of saint Johns, & other prynces/ the sayd pope Felix to sette a perfyte vnyon in the churche, in thys yere of hys owne volūte resigned hys auctoryte of papacy, and submytted hym vnto the obediēce of Nicholas the.v. of that name / nat wythstandynge that the sayde Felix was a man of great byrthe, & allied to the more parte of all crysten prynces. And thys Nycholas a mā of lowe byrthe, & of vnknowē kynred wythin the cytie of Jeane.

Than was Felix made legate of Fraunce & cardynal of Sauoye/ and lyued after a blessed & holy lyfe & so ended. And as some wryters testifye, god for hym hath shewed dyuers miracles syns he dyed. And for thys scysme thus graciously was ended/ a verysyer made thys verse folowynge.

Lux fulsit mundo, cessit Felix Nicholao.

The whych verse is thus to meane in Englysshe.

Lyght into the worlde now dothe sprynge and shyne.

For Felix vnto Nicholas all frely doth resyne.

Also as testifieth Gaguyne & also some englysshe wryters, ỹ trewys betwene Englād & Fraūce cōtynuyng/ a knyght of ỹ Englysh partie named syr Fraūceys Arrogonoyse, toke a town vpō the borders of Normādy belōgyng vnto ỹ duke of Brytayne. For ỹ which he cōplayned hym vnto Charles the Frēch kyng / & he at the sayd dukes request sent vnto ỹ kyng of Englād Johñ Hanart & Guyllm Cōsynot knyghtes, to axe restitucyō of ỹ harme. The whych were answered of ỹ kynges coūsayll, ỹ the dede was ryght displeasaūt vnto ỹ kyng/ & that ỹ sayd syr Fraūceys had enterprysed ỹ kayt of his owne presūpcion & nothyng wyth the kyngs mynde or pleasure. Thā after this answere thus made / it was agreed by the duke of Somerset thā lieutenaūt vnder the kyng in Normādy, ỹ a compaycatiō for thys matyer shulde be hadde at a towne named Louers. To the which place at the day assygned apperyd & came certayne persones for both partyes/ where they so beyng occupyed, a trayne was cōpassed by the Frenchmē to take frō ỹ Englysshmen a strōg town or hold named Poūt all Arche, wherof the maner was thys.

A Frenche man or Norman beynge a carter, whyche dayly vsed to entre thys towne wyth vytayll and other lodynge of hys carte / espyed the negligence of the Englysshemen, howe lyttell hede they toke vnto the watche of the towne, warned a Frenche cayptayne named Floquet / annd sayde that wyth lytell helpe that town wolde be goten. For exployte wherof, thys Floquet

wyth

wyth other couenaunted wyth the sayd carter to bryng about theyr purpose/& ordeyned vnto hym.ii. hardy sowdyours of Frenchemē, whyche bare in theyr neckes.ii.carpēter axes to shewe that they were carpenters. And after agremēt made among thē, how they shuld entre into the towne, & where they shulde mete the carter, whych after hys olde custome entred the gates wythout susspycyon / and soone after wyth his axe in his necke came by one sowdyour, & in a whyle after that other/& so wyth lytell questyonyng to them made,passed ỹ gates/and so lastly vnto the house of ỹ carter before appoynted,& there kept them secrete tyll nyght was commyn knowynge well that the hoste of the hous was enemy to Englysshemen, for an iniury to hym of an Englysshe man before done,& shewed to hym all theyr counsayll.The whyche promysed to them all the assystence & ayde that he myght make. In thys nyghtes passe tyme for the forthcraunce of thys purpose/the lord of Bressy with a chosen company of knyghtes lodged hym in a busshemēt nere vnto ỹ towne towarde the gate of saint Andrewe/& the forenamed Floquet lodged hym wyth an other chosen company vnder the parte of the towne whych is toward Louers, beig with hym syr Jamys deCleremont and other men of name. These ordenaunces & prouysyons thus ordeyned for/ the forenamed carter with his.ii.sowdyours forenamed in the spryngе of the morynge, as in the moneth of Octobre,came erely vnto ỹ gatewith hys carte,& called the porter by name in fayre maner to oppn ỹ gate,& promysed to hym a rewarde for hys labour.The porter knowyng well the carter,& takyng lytell regarde to the other.ii.whyche came wyth hym/opened the gate,and sent an other felow of hys to oppn the former gate.whan the fyrste was opened / the carter set hys carte in the selfe gate,& drewe to hys purs to gyue to the porter hys reward before ꝑmysed.And as he tolde the money into hys hād/of a falshode he let part of the money fall vpon the groūde.The whych whyle the porter stouped to take vp / the carter wyth his dagger or other weppn gaue such a stroke vnto ỹ porter, ỹ he ne spake nor cryed after. And so soone as this myschyefe was don/ so soon was the other porter slayn of ỹ.ii. sowdiours. And ỹ done,one of thē rāforth of ỹ gates & gaue a sygne vnto the lorde of Bressy/whyche forthwith entred the towne,& toke & slewe all suche as to them made resystēce/& wāne in shorte whyle ỹ castell as the towne,& slewe therin moche people,and toke many prysoners. Amonge the whyche as sayeth Gagwyne, the lorde Facounbrydge as capytayne of that towne was there taken prysoner.whan this towne was thus won by the cautele of the Frenchemē, & the terme of the trewis was nat yet exprysed/ thā was labour made vnto the French kynge for restytucyon of thys towne and other wronges done in wynnyng of ỹ same. To the whyche it was answered,that yf the Englysshemen wolde restore the towne of Fogyers wyth other harmys there done / that than the Frenchemen shulde restore thys towne wyth the other harmys. For treaty wherof a daye of metyng was apoynted at a place called Boū port/ where the tyme was spente in vayne of bothe partyes/so that of ỹ metyng came none effecte.

Of the takyng of thys sayde towne of Fogyers ensuyed moche harme to the Englysshmen/for this was the occasyon,by the whyche the Frenchemen after gatte all Normandy.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xlviii

wyllyam Cantlow.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xlix.

Stephyn Browne Grocer.

Anno.xxvii.

wyllyam Marowe.

IN thys.xxvii.yere as wytnesseth the Englysshe cronycle, a knyghte of Fraunce called syr Lowys de Bueyll, chaleñged an esquyer of Englande named Rauffe Chalõs of certayne feetes of warre. The whych to approue, a daye to theym was gyuen to mete at a towne in Fraunce named Maunt or Maunce where the French kynge at that day was present. But fortune to Chalõs was so frendely, that he ranne the Frenche knyghte thorugh wyth hys spere/ whereof the sayde syr Lowys shortly after dyed. Than this Chalons lyke a charytable crysten man, mourned for hys enemy, and kepte for hym hys obsequy as he had ben hys carnall brother. For the whych dede of ꝑ Frẽch kyng he was greatly allowed/all be it he was boũde so to do by the lawe of armys.

Anno.dñi.M.iiii.C.xlix.

wyllyam Hulyn.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.l.

Thomas Chalton.

Anno.xxviii.

Thomas Canynges.

IN thys.xxviii.yere / the kynge callyd a parlyamente at westmynster, the whyche was adiourned to the blacke freers at London / and after Crystmas to London agayne. In whyche passetyme, a shyp man of the west countre named Roberte of Cane, wyth a fewe shyppes of warre toke an hole flete of marchaũtes cõmynge from the Baye beynge ladyn wyth salte/the which were of Pruce, Holande, and zeland, & other parties of Flaunders/and so brought them to Hamptoñ, and there made hys porte sale. For the whyche pryse the marchauntes goodes of Englãd were arested in dyuers places of flaũders/as Bruges, Ipre, & other good townes / and myghte nat haue the sayd goodes deliuered, tyll they had takẽ appoyntemẽt for to paye for the sayd prise & theyr hurtes & damages.

And contynuyng the forsayd parlyamẽte/ the duke of Suffolke was arested, & sent as prysoner to content some myndes vnto the towre/ where he was kept at hys plesure a moneth & after delyuered at large/ the which dyscontented many mẽnes myndes. For to hym was layde the charge of the delyuery of Angeou & Mayne, & the deth of that noble prynce Humfrey duke of Glouceter. Than of thys grudge ensued rebellyon of the cõmons, in so moche that they assembled theym in sondry places, & made of them selfe capytaynes, and named them Blewe berde and other counterfayte names / and so entẽded to haue gadered more company. But anone as the kynges counsayll was thereof warnyd, they were layde for, and taken, and putte to dethe.

Thanne the forsayde parlyamente was adiourned vnto Leycester / whether came the kynge and wyth hym the duke of Suffolke. Than the commons of the common hous made requeste to the kyng, that all suche persones as were consentynge and laboured for the gyuynge ouer the duchye of Angeou and erle-

dome

dome of Mayñ, myght be punisshed. Of whiche offece to be gyltie/they accused the forsayd duke of Suffolke, the lorde Sey, the bysshop of Salysbury, and one Danyell a gentylman, with Treuylyan & other. Than to appease the cõmon hous/the duke was exyled for .v. yeres, and the lord Sey as treasorer of Englande/and ỹ other were put a parte for a whyle, & were promysed to be sent vnto the kynges gayoll or warde.

Than the duke in obeynge ỹ sentence forsayde, sped hym towarde ỹ sees syde in the moneth of Apryl, and toke his shyppynge in Northfolke, entẽding to haue sayled into Fraũce. In keppyng of whiche course/he was mette with a shyppe of warre named Nicholas of the Tower, the whiche toke his shyp. And whã ỹ capptayne was ware of the duke/anone he toke hym into his owne shyp, and so kept his course towarde Douer. And whã he was comen vnto the rode / anone he caused hym to be confessed of his owne chaplayne/ and that done shyp mẽ put hym in a shyppbote, and there vpon the syde of the bote, one strake of his hed. whiche hed with the body was soone after conueyed to the lãde of Douer, and there lefte vpon ỹ sandes/and the sayd shypmen returned to the see agayne. And thus one myschefe ensued vpon an other, to the dystruccyon of the nobles of this lãde. And so vpon the fyrst daye of May, was this deed corps foũde vpon Douer sandes, and after conueyed to his restynge place to This yere also beynge the yere of our lordes in carnacyon. xiiii. C. and. l. was the Jubile or the plenary pardon at Rome, whiche of Englysshmen is called the yere of grace.

And this yere a towne in Normã dy named Vernoyll, was taken by ỹ treason of a Frenche baker / the manner wherof were lõge to wryte. But fynally it came to ỹ possession of Floquet before rehersed, to the great dystruccyon of Englysshmen. For now was ỹ trewes ended, & mortal warre was executed vpon both ptyes/ & the Englysshmẽ vnto ỹ Frẽche wrought moche myschyef dyuers wayes, whiche were lõge to wryte. But as tofore I haue shewed to you sondry tymes/ the most losse turned euer last warde vpon ỹ Englysshe ptie. For this seasõ also were ỹ townes of Noget & poũt Audenere wonne by the erle of sayne Paule & other. And in ỹ moneth of Juny this yere, ỹ cõmons of Kent assẽbled thẽ in great multitude, & chase to them a capitayee, and named hym Mortymer and cosyn of the duke of yorke/but of most he was named Jak Cade. This kept ỹ people wonderously togyder/& made suche ordenaũces amonge thẽ, ỹ he brought a great nõbre of people of thẽ vnto ỹ Blakhethe. where he deuysed a byll of peticiõs to ỹ kyng & ỹ coũsayll/& shewed therin what iniuryes & oppressiõs the poore cõmõs suffred, by suche as were aboute ỹ kynge a fewe persones in nõbre, & all vnder coloure to come to his aboue. The kynges coũsayll seynge this byll, dysalowed it, & coũsayled the kynge, whiche by the. vii. day of Juny had gathered to hi a strõge hoste of people, to go agayne his rebelles, & to gyue vnto them batayll. Than the kynge, after the sayd rebelles had holdẽ theyr felde vpon blakhethe. vii. dayes/ made towarde thẽ. wherof herynge the capptayne, drewe backe with his people to a byllage called Scuenok, & there enbatayled thẽ. Thã it was agreed by ỹ kynges counsayll, that syr Humfrey Stafforde knyght, with wyllyam his brother, and other certayne gentylmen, shulde folowe the chase / and the kyng with his lordes shuld retourne

Insurrecciõ in Kent

vnto Grenewyche, wenynge to them that the rebelles were fledde & gone. But as before I haue shewed, whan syr Humfray with his cõpany drewe nere vnto Seuenok/ he was ware of ỹ capytayne that there abode with his pepole. And whan he had counsayledde with the other gentylmen/ lyke a manfull knyghte set vpon the rebelles, and fought with them lõge. But in the ende the capytayne slewe hym & his brother with many other, and caused the rest to gyue backe. Al whiche season the kynges hoste laye styll vpon Blakhethe, beyng amõge them sondry opinions / so that some and many fauoured the capytayne. But fynally whan worde came of ỹ ouerthrowe of the Staffordes / they sayd playnly and boldly, that excepte the lorde Saye and other before rehersed were cõmytted to warde, they wolde take the capytaynes partye. For the appeasynge of the whiche rumour, the lorde Saye was put into ỹ tower / but that other as thã were not at hande. Thanne the kynge hauynge knowlege of the scomfyture of his men, and also of the rumour of his ostynge people / remoued frome Grenewyche to London / and there with his hoste rested hym a whyle.

And so soone as Jak Cade hadde thus ouercomen the Staffordе / he anone apparayled hi with ỹ knyghtes apparayll, and dyd on hym his bryganders set with gylte nayle and his salet and gylte spores. And after he had refresshed his people, he returned agayne to Blakhethe/ and there pyght agayne his feld as here tofore he had done / and laye there from the nyne & twenty daye of Juny beynge saynte Peters daye, tyll the fyrste day of July. In whiche season came vnto hym the archebysshop of Cantorbury and the duke of Bukkyngham/ with whome they had longe cõmunycacyon, and fonde hym ryghte discrete in his answeres. How be it they coude not cause hi to lay downe his people, and to submyt hym vnto the kynges grace.

In this whyle the kynge and the quene herynge of the encreasynge of his rebelles, and also the lordes ferynge theyr owne seruaũtes lest they wolde take the capytaynes partie, remoued frome London to Kyllyngworth/ leuynge ỹ cyte without ayde, excepte onely the lorde Scales/ whiche was lefte to kepe the tower, and with hym a manly & warly man named Mathewe Fowth. Than the capytayne of Kente thus houynge at Blakhethe/ to the ende to blynde the more the people, and so bryngе hym in fame that he kepte good iustyce, beheded there a pety capytayne of his named Parys/ for so moch as he had offended agayne suche ordynaũce as he had stablysshed in his hoste / & herynge ỹ the kynge and all his lordes were thus departed, drewe hym nere vnto ỹ cytie. So that vpon the fyrste day of July, he entred the bourgh of Southwarke, beynge than wednesday / & lodged hym there that nyght, for he myght not be suffered to entre the cytie.

And vpon the same day, the cõmõs of Essex in great nombre pyght theym a felde vpon the playne at myles ende. And vpon the seconde daye of the sayd moneth, the mayre called a comon counsayle at the Gyldhall, for to purueye the withstandynge of these rebelles and other matyers. In whiche assemble were dyuers opinions/ so that some thought good that the sayde rebelles shulde be receyued into the cytie, and some otherwyse. Amonge the whiche, Roberte Horne stokfysshmonger than beynge an alderman, spake sore agayne them that wolde haue them entre. For ỹ whiche sayenges

sayenges, the cõmons were so amoued agayn hym, that they ceased not tyll they had hym cõmytte to warde.

And the same after noone aboute .v. of the clok, the capytayne with his people entred by ỹ bzydge. And whã he came vpon the dzawe bzydge/he hewe the ropes ỹ dzewe the bzydge in sondze with his swerde, and so passed into ỹ cytie / and made in sondzy places therof pzoclamacyons in the kynges name, that no man in peyne of dethe shulde robbe oz take ony thyng parfozce without payeng therfoze. By reason wherof he wanne many hertes of the cõmons of the cytie/ but all was done to begyle with the people, as after shall euydently appere. Foz he rode thozough dyuers stretes of the cytie/and as he came by London stone, he strake it with his swerde, and sayd now is Moztymer lozde of this cytie. And whan he had thus shewed hymselfe in dyuers places of the cytie, & shewed his mynde to ỹ mayze foz ỹ ozdzynge of his people / he returned into Southwarke, and there abode as he befoze hadde done, his people cõmynge & goynge at lawfull houres whan they wolde. Than vpon the mozne beynge the thyzde daye of July and frydaye/the sayd capytayne entred agayne the cytie, and caused the lozde Sey to be fet frome the tower and ladde vnto the Guyldhall / where he was areygned befoze the mayze & other of ỹ kynges iustyce. In whiche passe tyme he entended to haue bzought befoze ỹ sayd iustyces the fozesayd Robert Hozne. But his wyfe and frendes made to hym suche instaũt labour, that fynally foz .v.C. marke he was set at his lybertye. Than the lozde Sey beynge as befoze is sayde at Guyldhall, desyred ỹ he myght be iudged by his peers. wherof herynge the capytayne, sent a company of his vnto the hall/ the whiche parfozce toke hym from the offycers, and so bzought hym vnto the standarde in the Chepe/ where oz he were halfe shzyuen they strake of his hed/& ỹ done pyght it on a lõg pole, & so bare it aboute with them.

In this tyme and season had the capytayne caused a gentylman to be taken named Cromer, whiche befoze had ben shyzeffe of Kent, and vsed as they sayde some extozcyons. Foz which cause, oz foz he had fauoured the lozde Sey, by reason that he had maried his doughter/he was hayed to Myles ende, and there in ỹ capitaynes pzesence byheded. And ỹ same tyme was ther also byheded a man called Bayly/ỹ cause of whose dethe was this as I haue herd some men repozte. This Bayly was of ỹ famylyer and olde acqueyntaunce of Jak Cade. wherfoze so soone as he espyed hym cõmynge to hym warde, he cast in his mynde that he wolde dyscouer his kyupng & olde maners, and shewe of his vyle kynne and lynage. wherfoze knowynge ỹ the sayd Bayly vsed to bere scrowes and pzophecyes aboute hym, shewyng to his cõpany ỹ he was an enchaunter and of yll dyspozycion, and ỹ they shulde well knowe by such bokes as he bare vpon hym/and bad them serche, and yt they founde not as he sayde, ỹ thã they shuld put hym to dethe/ whiche all was doone accozdynge to his cõmaundment. whan they had thus beheded these .ii. men/they toke the hede of Croumer & pyght it vpon a pole/ and so entred the cytie with the hedes of the lozde Sey and of Croumer. And as they passed the stretes/ they ioyned the poles togyder, & caused eyther deed mouthe to kysse other dyuers and many tymes.

And the capytayne the selfe same daye wente vnto the house of Phylyppe Malpas dzaper and

and alderman/and robbed and ſpoyled his houſe,and toke thens a great ſubſtaunce.But he was before warned,and therby conueyed moche of his money and plate,or elles he had ben vndone. At whiche ſpoylynge were preſent many poore men of the cytie,whiche at ſuche tymes ben euer redy in all places to do harme,where ſuche ryottes ben doone.

Thā towarde nyght, he returned into Southwarke/& vpon ỹ morne reentred ỹ cytie,and dyned that daye at a place i ſaynt Margaret Patyns pariſſhe called Gherſtys hous. And whan he had dyned / lyke an vncurteyſe geſt he robbed hym as the daye before he had Malpas.For which.ii. robberyes,all be it that the pouayll & nedy people drewe vnto hym, & were partyners of that yll/ the honeſt and thryfty comoners caſt in theyr mynde the ſequele of this matyer,and fered leſte they ſhulde be delte with in lyke maner/by meane wherof he loſt the peoples fauour and hertes.For it was to be thought,yf he had not executed that robbery, he myghte haue gone ferre,and brought his purpoſe to good effecte,yf he hadde entended well. But it is to deme and preſuppoſe,that the entent of hym was not good/wherfore it myght not come to ony good concluſyon.Than ỹ mayre and aldermen with aſſyſtence of the worſhypfull comeners, ſeynge this myſdeauour of ỹ capytayne/in sauegardynge of themſelfe and of the cytye,toke theyr counſayles how they myght dryue the capytayne and his adherētes from ỹ cytie. wherin theyr feare was the more, for ſo moche as the kynge and his lordes with theyr powers were farre from theym. But yet in aduoydynge of apparēt peryl/ they condyſcended, that they wolde withſtande his any more entre into the cytie. For the perfourmaūce wher of,ỹ mayre ſent vnto the lorde Scales and Mathewe Gowgth than hauynge the tower in gydynge / & had of them aſſent to perfourme ỹ ſame.

Than vpon the. v. day of July ỹ capytayne beynge in Southwarke, cauſed a mā to be heded , for cauſe of his dyſpleaſure to hym doone as the fame went/& ſo kepte hym in Southwarke all ỹ day. How be it he myght haue entred the cytie yf he had wold.

And whan nyght was comynge/ the mayre and cytezyns with Mathewe Gowth lyke to theyr former appoynmtent kepte the paſſage of ỹ brydge beynge ſonday,and defended the Kentyſſhe mē whiche made great force to reenter the cytie.Than the capytayne ſeynge this bykerynge begon/rode to harneys , and called his people aboute hym/and ſet ſo fyerſly vpon the cytezyns, that he draue thē backe from ỹ ſtulpes i Southwarke or brydge fote vnto ỹ drawe brydge. In defendynge wherof,many a man was drowned and ſlayne. Amonge ỹ whiche,of men of name was Johan Sutton alderma,Mathewe South gentylman,and Roger Heyſande cytezyn.And thus contynued this ſkyrmyſſhe all nyght tyll.ix.of the clocke vpon the morne/ſo that ſomtyme the cytezyns had the better/& thus ſoone the Kentyſmen were vpon the better ſyde.But euer they kepte them vpon the brydge/ſo that the cytezyns paſſed neuer moche the bulwarke at the brydge fote,nor ỹ Kentyſſhmē moche ferther thā the drawe brydge. Thus cōtynuyng the cruel fyght to the dyſtruccyon of moche people on bothe ſydes / laſtly after the Kentyſſhmen were put to the worſe , a trewe was agreed for certayne houres.Duryng the whiche trewe, the archebyſſhop of Cantorbury than chaunceler of Englande,ſent a generall pardon to the capytayne for hymſelfe, and an other

other of hys peple. By reason wherof he & hys company departed the same nyght out of Southwarke/ & so retourned euery man to hys owne.

‡ But it was nat longe after that the capytayne wyth hys cõpany was thus departed, that proclamacyons were made in dyuers places of Kent, of Southlex, and Sowtherey, that who myghte take the forelayde Jak Cade other on lyue or dede, shulde haue a. M. marke for hys trauayle. After whych proclamacion thus publisshed/ a gẽtylmã of Kẽt named Alexander Jden, awayted so hys tyme that he toke hym in a gardyn in Sussex. where in the takyng of hym the sayd Jak was slayne / & so beynge dede, was brought into Southwarke the daye of the moneth of & there left in the kynges benche for that nyght. And vpon ỹ morowe the dede corpe was drawen thorugh the hyghe stretes of the cytye vnto Newgate, & there heded and quartered. whose hede was than sent to Londõ brydge/ & his .iiii. quarters were sent to .iiii. sondry townes of Kent.

‡ Thende of Jacke Cade.

And thys done/ the kyng sent hys commissions into Kent, & rode after hym selfe / and caused enquery to be made of thys riot in Caunterbury / where for the same .viii. men were iuged & put to deth. And in other good townes of Kent & Southlex, dyuers other were put in execucyon for the same ryot.

In thys yere also, in the west coũtree was slayne the bisshop of Salysbury by the commons of that coũtre. wherfore after the kyng had sped his besynesse in Kent & Sussex, he rode thyder to se also those malefactours punysshed.

Bysshop of Salysbury slayne.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. l.

Nycholas wyffordе Grocer.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. li.

Johñ Myddylton.

Anno. xxix.

wyllyam Dere.

IN thys .xxix. yere vpõ sait Leonardes daye or the .vi. daye of Nouembre, began the parlyamente at westmynster. And the fyrste day of Decẽbre folowyng/ the duke of Somerset whyche newly was commyn out of Normandy, was putte vnder arest/ and his goodes by the cõmons were fowly dyspoyled & borne awaye out of the blak fryers. For at this season was moche people in the cytie by reason of the parlyament/ & specially of lordes seruauntes, whyche were awaytynge vppon theyr lordes and maysters in great multytude. For ye shall vnderstande, ỹ temporall lordz in those dayes kepte other maner of housholdes & other maner of retenydour of housholde seruauntes and other nombre, ferre excedynge that the lordes at these dayes done. where fore at parlyament tymes and other great counsayles/ the cytyes or townes where they assembled, were hugely stuffed wyth people. Than after thys ryot thys commynted/ vpon the morowe folowynge proclamacyon was made thorugh the cytye, that no man shulde spoyle or robbe vppon payne of dethe. And the same day at the stãdarde in Chepe, was a mã beheded for brekyng of the sayd proclamaciõ. And thus begõ rumour & malyce to spryng betwene ỹ lordz of the lãde. And specially ỹ duke of Somerset & other of ỹ quenes coũsayll were had i great hatered, for ỹ losig of Normãdy/ wherof ỹ chief citie of Roã was lost or gyuẽ vp by apointemẽt ỹ yere precedyng, as witnesseth Gagupnus

vpon

vpon cõdycyon that the duke of Somerset with his wyfe and Englysshe sowdyours, shuld with such goodes as they myghte cary, departe frely from ỹ cytie. For whiche fre passage he shulde pay vnto ỹ Frenche kynge lvi. M. scutes which amoũte to. xiiii. M. marke sterlyng. And also he was bounde to delyuer into the Frenche kynges possession, all townes and castelles that at that daye were in the possessyon of Englysshemen within the duchy of Normandy. For performaunce of whiche couenauntes, the lorde Talbot was set for one of the pledges / and so by one Floquet before named all the sayd townes and castelles were by hym to the Frenche kynges vse receyued / Harflete onely excepted. wherof ỹ capytayne named Cyrson or Curson denyed the delyuery / with assystence of one named syr Thomas Aurynghã. The whiche in despyte of all the Frenche kynges power layde bothe by see and lande, helde it from the begynnynge of December tyll the moneth of January / and than for lacke of rescouse gaue it vp by appoynmtent in ỹ begynnyng of this mayres yere. For this yeldynge vp of Normandy, moche displeasure grewe vnto the quene and her counceyll / in so moche ỹ the duke of yorke father vnto kyng Ed warde the. iiii. with many lordes with hym allyed, toke partye agayne hyr and her counsayll / so that mortall warre therof ensued as here after in this story wall appere.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. li.

Mathewe Phylyp.

wyllyam Gregory skynner.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lii.

Anno. xxx.

Chrystofer warton.

IN this. xxx. yere ỹ. xvi. daye of February / the kynge beyng accompanied with the duke of Somersette and many other lordes, toke theyr iournay towarde the marchys of walys / for so moche as he was credibly assertayned, ỹ the duke of yorke assysted with dyuers other lordes ỹ mẽ of name, had in those partyes gathered great strengthe of people, and with them was entrynge the lande / and so helde on his iourney towarde hym. But whan ỹ duke had wytyng of the kynges great power / he swaued the way from the kynges hoste, and toke the way towarde London. And for he had receyued knowlege from the cytie, ỹ he myght not there be receyued to refresshe hym and his people / he therwith went ouer Kyngstone bryge and so into Kente / and there vpon an hethe called Brente heth, he pyght his felde. wherof the kynge haynge knowlege, sped hym after / and lastly came vnto Blacke hethe, ỹ there pyght his felde. where bothe hostes beynge thus enbatayled / mediacio was made of peace by twene both hostes, For furtheraunce wherof / to the duke were sente ỹ byssshoppes of wynchester and of Ely, with the erles of Salysbury and of warwyke. To whome it was answered by the sayd duke, ỹ he nor none of the company entended none hurte vnto the kynges persone, nor to any of his counsayll beynge louers of ỹ cõmon weale and of hym and of his lande / but his entẽt ỹ purpose was, to remoue from hym a fewe cuyll disposed persones, by whose meanes ỹ cõmon peple was greuously oppressed, and the comynaltye greatly empouerysshed. Of ỹ whiche he named

for

for principall the duke of Somerset. Of whome it was fynally agreed by the kyng, that he shulde be cõmytted to warde, there to abyde & answere vnto suche artycles as the duke of yorke wolde lay agayne hym. Upon whych promesse so made by the kyng the fyrst day of Marche beyng thurs daye, the duke brake vp hys feide, & so came vnto ỹ kynges tente / where cõtrary the former promyse made, he fãde the duke of Somerset as chefe awayter & next vnto the kyng. And thã was ỹ duke of yorke sente before to London, & was holden somedeale in maner as prisoner/& more streyghter shuld haue ben kepte, ne had ben tydynges whych dayely spradde, that syr Edwarde hys sonne thã erle of ỹ March, was commyng toward London wyth a stronge power of welche men & March mẽ/ whych fered so the quene and hyr counsayl, that ỹ duke was lyberted to go where he wolde. And so after he departed vnto hys owne countrey/and peace was dyssymuled wyth feyned loue for a whyle.

Ann odñi.M.iiii.C.lii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.liii.

Rychard Lee.

Godfrey Feyldynge. Anno.xxxi.

Rychard Alley.

IN thys.xxxi.yere/ỹ kyng helde a solempne feest at westmynster vpon the.xii.day of Cristmas/where he created .ii. erles the whyche were hys bretherne vpõ the mothers syde quene Katheryne, that after the deth of kynge Henry the.v. was maryed vnto a knyghte of walys named Owayne, the whych begate vpõ hyr these forsayd.ii.sonnes. wherof that one thys sayd daye was created erle of Rychemoũt, which was named syr Edmonde/& the yõger called syr Jasper was creat the erle Penbroke. The whych lastly was created duke of Bedforde by our souerayne lorde kyng Hẽry the.vii.& so dyed. And in March folowyng as witnesseth Gagwyne, was the towne of Heik.ewe wonne by the Frẽchmen. And soone after the cytye of Bayons was gyuẽ vp by appoyntment/so that the souldyours shuld leue theyr armoure behynde them. And for euery woman there beyng was graũted an horse to ryde vpon/& to euery horse mã. x.scutes to pay for theyr costes/ & to euery fote man.v.wythout more by theym to be taken. And thys yere the kynge laye longe syke at Claryngdowne/& was in great ieopardye of hys lyfe. And in ỹ ende of thys mayres yere & begynnynge of the .xxxii. yere of the kyng, that is to meane vpon the day of trãslacyon of saynt Edwarde or ỹ xiii.day of Octobre/ỹ quene at westmynster was delyuered of a fayre prynce.

For the whyche greate reioysyng and gladnesse was made in sundry places of Englande, and specyallye wythin the cytye of London / where of the erpresssemente of the cyrcumstaunce wolde are longe leysoure to vtter. Thys prynce beynge wyth all honour and reuerence sacred and crystened, was named Edwarde / and grew after to perfight and goodlye personage/and lastly of Edward the fourthe was slayne at Tewkysburye feelde, as after to you shall be shewed.

whose noble mother susteyned nat a lytle dysclaunder & obloquy of the cõmon peple/sayeng that he was nat the naturall sonne of kynge Henry,

but chaunged in the cradell, to hyr greate dyshonour & heuynesse, which I ouer passe.

Thys yere also whyche was the yere of grace. M.iiii C.liii. Mahumet thā prynce of Turkes, in the moneth of Juny and.xiii.daye of the sayde moneth beynge the thyrde yere of hys empyre or regne/after.l.dayes of cō tynuall assaute by his innumerable multytude of Turkes to the cytye of Constātyne the noble with excedyng force and crueltye made and exercy sed, wan and opteyned the dompynō and rule of the same / to the greate hynderaūce and shame of all crystendome, and enhaūcynge of the power and myghte of the sayd Turkes. Of the excedynge noumber of men, women, and chyldren that in that cytye at that daye were slayne/ I wyll not speke of, for the great dyuersyte that I haue seen of wryters. Amonge the whyche the emperour named Paleogolus with many other nobles of the cytye beynge taken in yue, were thā behedyd/and many a preste and relygyous man put vnto deth by sundry cruell turmentes. After whych great crueltye, wyth many other longe to reherce put in execucyon/a commaūdement passed from the sayde emperoure of Turkes, that all chyldren beynge aboue the age of.vi.yeres as well men as womenkynde, shulde be strepght put vnto deth / the whyche after some wryters excedyd the nomber of.iiii.M. Here for tydeousnesse and lamentable procesſe, whyche I myghte shewe in the reherſall of the abompnacyon of the moste dampnable and accursyd Turkys, by thē done vnto the crucyfyxe and other images of the chyrches and temples wythin the cytye, I ceaſe. For payne full it were to rede, a more paynefull and sorowfull to here, that the fayth of Chryst shulde in so vyle maner be dyspysed.

Constanty noble conquered of Turkes.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.liii.

Draper.

Johñ Norman.

Johñ walden.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.liiii.

Anno.xxxii.

Thomas Cooke.

In thys.xxxii.yere, Johñ Norman forsayd vpō the morowe of Symonde and Judys day, the accustomyd day whan the newe mayre vsyd yerely to ryde wyth greate pōpe vnto westminster to take his charge/ this mayre fyrste of all mayres brake that auncyent and olde cōtynued custome, and was rowed thyther by water/for the whiche ỳ watermen made of hym a roundell or songe to hys great prayse, ỳ whiche began, Rowe ỳ bote Norman rowe to thy lemmā, and so forth wyth a longe procesſe.

ye haue in your remēbraunce, how I before in the.xxx.yere of thys kyng shewed to you of the apoyntement taken bytwene the sayd kyng & ỳ duke of yorke at Bzent heth/which apoyntement as before is sayde, was soone broken and set at nought. By reason wherof greate enuye and dyscencyon grewe bytwene ỳ kynge and dyuers of hys lordes/and most specyally bytwene the quenes counseyll and the duke of yorke and hys blode. For all contrary ỳ kynges promyse, by meanes of the quene, whiche than bare ỳ cure and charge of the land/the duke of Somerset was sette at large and made cappytayne of Caleys, and had as greate rule about the kynge as he before dayes hadde. wherwyth not onely some of the nobles of the land grudged

grudgyd, but also the comons/whyche by hys counsayll and other thanrulers as the same went, susteyned many greuous impolycyons & charges. Thys kyne, rancour, and enuye by ỹ space of .xvii. or .xviii. monethes smokynge and brennynge vnder couert dyssymulacyon/now at this day brake out in greate and hote flamys of open warre and wrath/in so mych that the duke of yorke beynge in the Marches of walys, called to hym ỹ erlys of warwyke & of Salysbury wyth other many honorable knyghtes and esquyres, & gathered a strōge hoste of people/and than in the moneth of Apryll toke his iourney towarde London, the kynge there thā beynge wyth a greate retynewe of lordes. wherof when the quene and the lordes were aduertysed, that the duke was comynge with so greate power/anone they cast in theyr mynds that it was to none of theyr profytes. And for ỹ in all possyble haste as they myght/ they gathered by the authoryte of the kynges cōmyssyons such strength as they coulde haue/& entended to haue conueyed the kyng westwarde, and not to haue encountred the duke of yorke. And for the execucyon of this purpose/ the kynge accōpanyed with hym the dukes of Somerset & of Buckyngham, ỹ erlys of Staffoꝛde & of Northumberlande, with the lorde Clyffoꝛde, and other many noble men of the realme, departed vpon the .xx. daye of Maye from westmynster/ and so helde hys iourney towarde saynte Albonys.

Then the duke of yorke hauynge knowlege of the kynges departynge from London, costed the countrees/ and came vnto the ende of saynt Albons vpon the .xxiii. daye of Maye foresayde, then beyuge the thursday before whytsondaye. where whyle meanes of treaty and peace were comonyd vpon that one party/ ỹ erle of warwyke wyth his Marche men entryd the towne vpon that other ende, & foughte egerly agayne ỹ kynges people/& so contynued the fyght a longe season. But in conclusyon ỹ victory fell to the duke of yorke and his party/in so mych that there was slayne the duke of Somerset, the erle of Northumberlande, and the lorde Clyffoꝛde, wyth many other honorable men of knyghtes & esquyers, whose names were tedious to wrote. After whyche victory thus opteyned by the duke/he with honour and reuerence vpon the morne folowynge conueyed the kynge agayne to London, and there lodged hym in the byl shoppe of Londons palays. And soone thereupon was called a parlyament and holden at westmynster/ by authoryte wherof ỹ duke of yorke was made protectour of Englande, the erle of Salesbury chauncellour, and the erle of warwyke cappytayne of Caleys. And all suche persons as before were in authoryte and nere aboute the kynge, were clerely amoued and putte by/and the quene and hyr counsayle that before dayes ruled, all vtterly sette a parte concernynge the rule of the kynge and of ỹ lande. whych contynued for a whyle, as after shall apere.

In this yere also as affermeth the Frenche cronycle, this mysery and vnkyndnesse thus reygnynge in Englande/the lord Talbot than beyng in Normandy, and in defendynge of the kynges Garysōs was beset with French men at a place named Castillyon, and there strongely assayled. where after longe and cruell fyghte, he with hys sonne and to the nomber of .xl. men of name and .viii. hūdreth of other Englysshe soudyours, were myserably slayne/ and many mo taken prysoners.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.liiii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lv.

Johñ Felde.

Stephan Foꝛſter. Anno.xxxiii.

wyllyam Taylour.

IN thys.xxxiii. yere of Henry ỹ vi.certayne euyll diſpoſed perſones beyng ſentuary men within ſaynt Martens the graunde, iſſued out of ỹ ſayde place and fraped with ſome cyteſyns,and of them hurt and maymed/and that done reentred the ſeintuary.wherewyth the commons beyng amoued,with certeyne rulers of the cytie entred the ſayd ſayntwary by foꝛce,and pulled out the occaſyoners of the ſayde fraye, and commytted them to pꝛyſone.Of this mater by the deane of ſaynte Martens and ſuche as fauoured hym, was a greuous complaynt made vnto the kynge and hys counſayle,of ỹ mayꝛe and the cyteſyns. Foꝛ diſcharge wherof the recoꝛder of the citie wyth certeyne aldermen to hym aſſygned, were ſente vnto the kyng then lyeng at ỹ caſtell of Egle in Herfoꝛd ſhyꝛe/ where after the mater duly debated beforꝛe ỹ kynges coũſayll, they were with letter of commendacyon retournyd vnto the mayꝛe, wyllynge hym to kepe the ſayde perſons ſauely tyll the kynges compynge to London/ at whyche ſeaſon he entended to haue ỹ mater moꝛe clerely examyned.

Auno domin.M.iiii.C.lv. Anno domini.M.iiii.C.lvi.

Grocer. Johñ yonge.

wyllyam Marowe. Anno. xxxiiii.

Thomas Dulgraue.

IN this yere ꝛ moneth of May/ an Italyans ſeruaunt walked thoꝛough Chepe wyth a dagger hangynge at hys gyꝛdell. wherof a mercers ſeruaunt that beforꝛe tyme had ben in Italy,and there chalengyd oꝛ punyſſhed foꝛ werynge of a lyke wepen,chalenged the ſtraunger, ꝛ queſtioned with him how he was ſo bold to bere ſuch a warrely weppn,conſyderynge he was a ſtraunger and out of his natyue countrey,ꝛ alſo knowynge that in his countre no ſtraunger ſhuld be ſuffered to bere any lyke weppn. To whyche queſtyon ſuche anſwere was made by the Italyan, that the mercer toke his dagger frõ hym,and bꝛake it vppon his hede. The ſtraũger thus beyng delte with complayned hym vnto the mayꝛe/ỹ whyche vpon the moꝛowe folowyng keppynge a court at the Guyldhall, ſent foꝛ the yonge man/and after his anſwere made vntõ this complaynt, by agrement of a full courte of alder men,ſent the ſayde mercer vnto pꝛyſon.And after thys court was kynyſſhed/foꝛ rumour that he harde of,to be amonge the ſeruauntes of ỹ mercery, he with the two ſheryffes toke his way homeward thoꝛough chepe. But whan he was nere vnto thende of ſaint Lawꝛẽce lane toward chepe/ he was met wyth ſuche a multytude of mercers ſeruaũtes and other, that he coulde not paſſe foꝛ ought that he myghte do oꝛ ſpeke,tyll he hadde cõtrarye hys wylle and mynde,delyuered the yonge man,that beforꝛe was commytted by hym and his bꝛethern to warde/ and ſo was he forthwith delyuered.Thys thus done/rumour ſpꝛange therof lyghtely aboute the town/in ſo mych that amonge many

cyteſyns

cytesyns, it was construed that thys was done by the assent of the mayesters and housholders of the mercery, to ꝑ entẽt to haue the straungers punysshed, for so myche as they toke from them greate lyuynge by reason of theyr vtteraunce of cloth of golde and sylkes to the estates and lordes of the realme. But how so it was vn to men of honeste/to vacabõdes and other that loked for pylfry and ryfflynge, it was a great occasyon and styrynge. And that appered well/for the same afternone, sodeynly was assembled a multytude of rascall and poore people of the cytye / whyche wythout hede or guyde ranne vnto certayne Italyans places, and specyally vnto the Florentynes, Lukesys, and Venicyans, and toke and spoyled what they in theyr places myghte fynde, and dyd greate hurte in sundry places, but moste in. iiii. houses stãdyng in Bredstrete ward/ wherof thre stode in sayne Barthelomewys parysshe the lytle, and one in sayne Benettes parysshe, and moch more wolde haue done, had not bene the spedy ayde of the mayre and aldermen and worshypfull comoners of the cytye / whyche wyth all dylygence resysted them, and of thẽ toke dyuers that robbed, and sent theym to Newgate. And fynally not wythout shedyng of blode and maymyng of dyuers cytesyns, the rumour and people were appeasyd. whan the ponge man begynner of all thys busyneſſe sawe this inconuenyence ensue of hys wantoneſſe/were it by counsayll or otherwyse feryng the sequell of the mater, yode streyght vnto west mynster/and there taried as a sayntwary man, tyll all the mater were endyd. It was not longe after or the duke of Buckyngham with iustyces and other noble men, was sent down from the kynge into the cytye/ charged the mayre by vertue of a commyssyõ, ꝑ an enquery shulde be made of this ryot. And so by vertue of the sayde cõmyssyon called an Oyer determyner, a day was kepte at Guyld hall vpon the day of the moneth of /where the sayde daye sat for iudges ꝑ mayre as the kynges lyeutenaũt, ꝑ duke of Buckyngham vpõ his ryght hande, ꝑ chyefe iustyce vpon ꝑ lefte hande, wyth many other men of name whyche I passe ouer. whyle the mayre and the sayd lordes were callyng of the panels of the enquestes at ꝑ Guyldhall/the other comoners of the cytie not beyng cõtent with the order, many of thẽ secretely armed them in theyr houses/ and entẽded as the comon fame after went to haue rũge Bow bell, & so to haue reysed & gathered ꝑ compnalty of the cytye/and by force to haue delyuered such persons as before for ꝑ robbery were commytted to warde. But thys mater was so discretely handeled, by the coũsayll and labour of some discrete comoners, whyche appeased theyr neyghbours in such wyse, that all this fyry haste was quenchyd, & came to none effecte/ sauyng ꝑ word was brought vnto the duke of Buckyngham, that the compnalty of the cytye were in harnysse, & yf he taryed longe there, he with the other lordes shuld be in great ieopardy. with whyche vntrew tidinges he beyng fered/ hastely toke leue of ꝑ mayre, & so depted vnto hys lodgyng, and so ceasyd ꝑ enquery for ꝑ day. Upõ the morow, for so mych as ꝑ mayre had vnderstãdynge of ꝑ secrete murmur / he commaũded the comõ counsayle with all wardeyns of felyshyppys to apere vpõ the morow at Guyldhall. where by the recorder in the kinges name, & the mayers as hys lyeutenaunt, was cõmaũded to euerych wardeins, that in that after none folowynge eyther

of them ſhuld aſſemble hys hoole fe-liſſhyp at theyr proper hallys/ & there to gyue euery cytezyn ſtreyght com-maundemente, that euery man ſee & entende to ſee the kynges peace with in the cytye. And yf they fynde any perſon that maketh any reaſonynge, wherby they myght cõceyue or eſpye that he fauoured any gatherynge of companyes, or the delyuerey of ſuche perſones as were in warde / that the ſayd wardeyns ſhuld with fayre wor-des exorte hym to the beſte/and with out ſygne or token therof shewynge, ſecretly co bryng the name or names of hym or them vnto the mayre. By meane of whych polycy & good order the cytezyns were brought in ſuche a quyetnes, that after that day the fore ſayd enquery was duely purſued / & iii. perſones for the ſayde ryot put in execucyon and hanged at tybourne.

whereof.ii. after ſome wryters were ſeyntwarye men of ſaynt Martyns/ and the thyrd was a ſhypmã or bote-man.

The quene wyth certeyne lordes whyche fauoured her partye/ dyſday ned ſore the rule whyche the duke of yorke bare and other/ & ſpecyally for that that the ſayde duke bare ỹ name of protectour, whych argued that the kynge was inſuffycyent to gouerne the realme / whyche as ſhe thoughte was a great dyſhonour to the kynge and to all the realme. wherefore ſhe made ſuche meanes, and wan by hyr polycy ſuch frendſhyp of diuerſe of ỹ lordes bothe ſpyrytuall and tempo-rall, that ſhe cauſed ỹ duke of yorke to be dyſcharged of hys protectour-ſhyp, & the erle of Salyſbury of hys chauncellerſhyp/which was cauſe of newe warre as after ſhall appere.

Anno.dñi.M.iiii.C.lvi.

Grocer.

Thomas Canynges.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lvii.

Johñ Stewarde.

Anno.xxxv.

Raufe Verney.

IN thys yere and begynnynge of the ſame / the quene ſuſpec-tynge the cytye of London, & demyd it to be more fauourable vnto ỹ duke of yorkes partye than hyrs/ cauſed ỹ kynge to remoue from Lõdon vnto Couentre, and there helde hym a lõg ſeaſon. In whyche tyme the duke of yorke was ſent for thyther by pryuey ſeale, with alſo the erle of Saleſbury & the erle of warwyke / where by co-uyne of the quene they were all.iii. in great daunger. Howe be it by monyſ ſhemẽt of theyr frendes they eſcaped. And ſoone after the ſayd duke or erle went into the Northe/ and the erle of warwyke wyth a goodly companye ſayled vnto Calays. And ſhortly af-ter were taken at Erpth wythin.xii. myles of London.iiii. wõderfull fyſ-ſhys/ whereof one was called Mors Maryne, the ſecõde a Sword fiſſhe, & the other.ii. were whalys / whyche after ſome expoſytours were prono-ſtycacyons of warre & trouble to en-ſue ſoon after. In this yere alſo was a great fray in the Northe countrey, betwene the lord Egremõde and the ſonnes of the erle of Salyſbury/and diuers mẽ maymed & ſlayen betwene them. But in the ende the lord Egre-monde was taken/ & howe it was by the dome of the kynges counſayll or otherwyſe, the ſayd lorde Egremõde was founden in ſuche defaute, that fynally he was condempned in great ſummes of money to be payed vnto the ſayd erle of Salyſbury. For lack of payment whereof, or of puttynge ſuertye for the ſame / the ſayde lorde

Egremonde

Egremonde was cõmytted to Newgate. where after he had contynued a certayne of tyme, he brake the pryſone and eſcapyd with thre other pryſoners, to the greate charge of the ſheryffes.

It was not longe after that dyſcencyon & vnkyndneſſe fell bytwene the ponge duke of Somerſet and ſyr Johñ Neuyll ſonne vnto the erle of Salyſbury, beynge than bothe lodged wythin the cytye. wherof the mayre beyng warned ordeyned ſuch watches and prouyſyõs, that yf they had any thynge ſtyred, he was able to haue ſubdued bothe partyes, and to haue put thẽ in warde tyll he had knowẽ the kynges farther pleaſure. wherof the frendes of bothe partyes beynge ware/laboured ſuch meanes that they agreed them for that tyme.

In thys alſo as teſtyfye the Engliſhe cronycle and alſo the French/ a naupe or flote of Frencheimen landyd at Sandwyche, and ſpoyled and robbed the towne, & exercyſed there greate crueltye. Of whych flote was capytayne a Frenche knyght named after the French boke ſyr Guyllyam de Pompers. And thys yere after the opynyon of dyuers wrytters/ began in a cytye of Almayne named Magounce, the crafte of enprentynge of bokes / whyche ſen that tyme hath had wonderfull encreace, as experyence at thys daye proueth. In this yere alſo the pryſoners of Newgate by negligence of theyr kepers brake out of theyr wardes, and toke the ledys of the towre, and it defendyd a longe whyle agayne the ſheryffes & all theyr offycers / in ſo myche that they were forced to call more ayde of the cytezyns of the cytye / by whoſe ayde they laſtly ſubdued them, and put ỹ ſayd pryſoners in more ſtreyght kepyng. Cronica cronicarũ ſayth that about thys tyme was ſuche an erthquake in ỹ prouynce of Naples, that byforce therof there were peryſſhed ouer. xl. M. cryſten ſoulys. Of the aboueſayde ſpoylynge of Sandwyche ſpeketh Polycronycon / and ſayeth that ſyr Pyers de Brezy ſeneſchall of Normandy, wyth the capytayne of Depe and many other capytaynes of Fraunce, came wyth a greate & ſtronge nauy into the Downys by nyght/and vpon the morowe came certeyne of them vnto Sandwych, and there ſpoyled and robbed the towne, and toke with them great prayes and many ryche pryſoners/ wherby or by whych ſayenge appereth ſome dyuerſyte bytwene the Engliſſhe wrytters and the Frenche.

Annodñi. M. iiii. C. lvii.

Mercer.

Godfrey Boleyn.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lviii.

wyllyam Edwarde.

Anno. xxxbi.

Thomas Reyner.

IN thys yere & the thyrde daye of December, Reynolde Pecoke than beynge byſſhoppe of Chycheſter/at Lambyth by the archebyſſhop and by a Cot of diuyns, was abiured for an heretyke and hys bokes after brent at Poulys croſſe / & hym ſelfe kepte in mewe euer whyle he lyued after. And ſoone after, for to appeaſe thys rancoure and malyce bytwene the quene and the tother lorder/a daye of metynge was appoynted by the kyng at London, whyther the duke of yorke wyth the other lordes were commaunded to come by a certayne daye. In obeynge of which commaundement, the duke of yorke came vnto London the. xxvi. daye of

January, and was lodged at Baynardes castell. And before hym the xv. day of January came the erle of Salysbury to London, & was lodged at hys place called the Erber. And soone after came vnto London the dukes of Somerset & of Exetyr/& were lodged bothe without temple Barre. And in lykewyse the erle of Northumberlande, the lorde Egremonde, & the yonge lorde Clyfforde, came vnto the cytye, and were lodged in the subbarbes of the same. And the. xiiii. daye of February came the erle of warwyke from Calays, wyth a great bande of men all arayed in redde iakettes with whyte ragged staues vpon theym / & was lodged at ỹ gray freres. And lastly, that is to saye the. xvii. daye of Marche/the kyng & the quene wyth a great retynewe came vnto London/ and were lodged in the bysshoppe of Londons palays. And ye shall vnderstande that wyth these forsayd lordes came greate companyes of me, in so

A good policy. moche that som had .vi.C. some. v.C & the leest. iiii.C. wherfore the mayre, for so longe as the kyng & the lordes lay thus in the citie, had dayly in harnesse. v.M. cytezyns/and rode dayly about the citie & subbarbes of ỹ same to se the kynges peace were kept. And nyghtly prouyded for. ii.M. me in harnesse, to gyue attendaūce vpon iii. aldermen / and they to kepe the nyghte watche tyll. vii. of the clocke vppon the morowe, tyll the day watche were assembled. By reason whereof, good ordre and rule was kepte, and no man so hardy ones to attempte the breakynge of the kynges peace. Durynge thys watche, a great counsayl was holde by ỹ kyng and hys lordes.

By reason wherof, a dyssymuled vnyte and concorde betwene them was concluded. In token and for ioy wherof, the kyng, the quene, and all ỹ sayd lordes, vpon our Lady day annunciacion in lent at Poulys wente solemply in processyon/and soone after euery lorde departed where hys pleasure was. And in the moneth of folowynge, was a greate fray in flete strete, betwene the me of courte and the inhabytauntes of the sayd strete / in whyche fray a gentylman beyng ỹ quenes attourney was slayne.

Upon the thursdaye in whytsonweke, the duke of Somerset with Antony Ryuers and other. iiii, kepte iustes of peace before the quene within the towre of London, agayne thre esquyers of the quenes/and in lyke maner at Grenewych the sonday folowynge. And vpon Trynyty sonday or the monday folowynge, certayne shyppes apperteynyng vnto the erle of warwyke mette wyth a floote of Spanyardes/and after long & cruel fyghte, toke. vi. of theym laden wyth iron and other marchaundyse / and drowned and chased to the noumber of. xxvi, nat without shedyng of blod on bothe partyes/for of the Englyshmen were slayne an. C. and many mo wounded and sore hurt.

In thys yere after some auctours, a marchaunte of Bristowe named Sturmyn, whyche wyth hys shyppe had trauayled in dyuers partyes of Leuaunte and other partyes of the East, for so moche as the same ranne vpon hym that he had gotten grene peppr and other specys to haue sette and sowen in Englande as the same wente/therefore the Januayes wayted hym vppon the see, and spoylyd hys shyppe and other.

But this is full lyke to be vntrew that the Januayes shulde spoyle hym for any suche cause / for there is no nacyon in Englande that delyth so lytle wyth spyceys. But were it for thys cause or other, trouth

trouth it is that by that nacyō an of fēce was done/for the whyche all the marchauntes Januayes in London were areſted and cōmytted to ỹ flete, tyll they had founden ſuffycyent ſuer tye to anſwere to the pʒempſſes. And fynally for the harmys whyche theyʒ nacyon had done to the ſayde Sturmyn & to thys realme/ vi.M.marke was ſette to theyʒ payne to paye. But howe it was payed no mencyon I fynde.

In thys yere alſo was made an ordynaunce by auctoʒytie of ỹ kynge and hys counſayll, for the ordeʒynge of the ſeyntwary men wythin ſaynte Martyns the graunde. whereof the artycles are at length ſette oute in ỹ boke of.K. wythin the chaumbʒe of guylde hall in the leefe .CC.xcix. wherof the execucyon of obſeruynge were neceſſary to be vſed / but moʒe pyte it is, fewe poyntes of it ben exer cyſed.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lviii.

Draper.

Thomas Scotte.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lix.

Rafe Joſſelyn.

Anno.xxxvii.

Rycharde Nedeham.

THys yere aboute the feeſte of Candelmaſſe, the forſayd diſſymulyd louedayhāgyng by a ſmall thʒede, betwene the quene and ỹ foʒe named loʒdes, expʒeſſed in the pʒecedynge yere/the kynge and many loʒdes thanne beynge at weſtmynſter, a fray happened to fall betwene a ſeruaunt of the kynges & a ſeruaunt of the erles of warwyke/the which hurt the kynges ſeruaunt & after eſcaped. wherefoʒe the kynges other meynial ſeruauntes ſeynge they myghte nat be auenged vpō the partye that thus had hurt theyʒ felowe / as the ſayde erle of warwyke was commynge frō the coūſayll, & was goynge towarde hys barge, the kynges ſeruaūtes came vnwarely vppon hym, ſo rabbyſſhely that the cookys with theyʒ ſpyt tys & other offycers wyth other weppns, came runnyng as madde men, entendynge to haue ſlayne hym, ſo ỹ he eſcaped wyth greate daunger & to ke hys barge/ & ſo in all haſte rowed to London, nat wythout great maymps & hurtys receyued by many of hys ſeruauntes. For thys the old rācour & malyce whyche neuer was clerely cured, anon begā to bʒeke oute/ in ſo moche that the quenes coūſayll wolde haue had the ſayd erle areſted and committed vnto the towʒe. wher foʒe he ſhoʒtly after departed toward warwyke / and by polycy purchaſed ſoone after a commyſſiō of the kyng, and ſo yode oʒ ſayled vnto Calays. Thanne encreaſed thys olde malyce moʒe & moʒe/ in ſo moche that where the quene and hyʒ coūſayll ſawe that they myght nat be auenged vppō the erle, that ſo vnto Calays was departed/than they malygned agayne hys father the erle of Salyſbury, & imagened how he myght be bʒought out of lyfe. And in pʒoceſſe of tyme after, as he was rydynge towarde Salyſbury, oʒ after ſom from hys lodgyng towarde London/the loʒde Audeley wyth a ſtrōg company was aſſygned to mete wyth hym, & as pʒyſoner to bʒyng hym vnto Londō. whereof the ſayde erle beynge warned, gathered vnto hym the mo men/ & keppng hys iourney, mette wyth the ſayd loʒd Audeley at a place called Bloʒeheth / where both companyes ran together & had there a ſtrōge bykeryng. wherof in the ende the erle was vyctoure, and ſlewe there the loʒde Audeley & many

many of hys retynew. At thys ſkyr-myſhe were the .ii. ſonnes of the ſayd erle ſore woũded, named ſir Thomas and ſyr Johũ/ the whyche ſhortly after as they were goynge homeward, were by ſome of the quenys party taken, & as pryſoners ſente vnto Theſtyr. whan thys was knowen vnto ꝑ duke of yorke and to the other lordes of hys party / they knewe & vnderſtode that yf they ꝓuyded nat ſhortly for remedy for them ſelfe, they ſhulde all be deſtroyed. And for that they by one aſſent gathered to them a ſtrõge hoſte of men, as of Marche men and other / & in the moneth of Octobre, ꝑ was in the begynnyng of the .xxxviii yere of the reygne of kynge Henry, & the later ende of thys mayres yere, they drewe them towarde the kynge/ to the entent to remoue frõ hym ſuch perſones as they thought were enemyes vnto the commõ weale of Englande. But the quene and hyr counſayll heryng of the entent & ſtrength of theſe lordes, cauſed the kyng in all haſte to ſende forthe cõmyſſyons to gather the people / ſo that in ſhorte whyle the kyng was ſtrongely accõpanyed, & ſo ſpedde hym vppon hys iourney towarde the duke of yorke & hys company. wherof heryng ꝑ ſayd duke, thã beyng wyth hys peple nere vnto the towne of Ludlowe/ pyghte there a ſure & ſtrõge feelde, that none of hys foes myght vppon any parte entre. where he ſo lyeng, came to him frome Calays the erle of warwyke wyth a ſtronge bande of mẽ/ amonge the whyche was Andrewe Trollop and many other of ꝑ beſt ſouldiours of Calays. The duke thus keppynge hys feelde vpon that one party, and the kyng wyth hys people vpon that other/ vpon the nyght ꝓcedyng the daye that bothe hoſtes ſhulde haue met / the forenamed Andrewe Trolloppe wyth all the cheſe ſoudyours of Calays, ſecretly departed frome ꝑ dukes hoſte, and wente vnto the kynges, where they were ioyouſly receyued. whã thys tynge to the duke and the other lordes was aſſertayned they were therewyth ſore dyſmayed/ and ſpecyally for the ſayd lordes had to the ſayd Andrew ſhewed the hoole of theyr ententes, whych thanne they knewe well ſhuld be clerelye dyſcouered vnto theyr enemyes. wherfore after coũſayll for a remedye taken/ they concluded to flee, & to leue the feelde ſtandyng as they had ben preſente and ſtyll abydyng. And ſo incontynently the ſayd duke wyth hys twoo ſonnes & a few other perſones fledde towarde walys/ and from thens paſſed ſauely into Irelande.

And the erles of Salyſbury, of Marche, & of warwyke, and other, wyth a ſecrete company alſo departed and toke the waye into Deuonſhyre/ where a ſquyer named Johan Dynham (whyche after was a lorde and hyghe treſourer of Englande, & ſo laſtlye in Henry the .viii. dayes and xvi. yere of hys reygne dyed) bought a ſhyp for a .C. & .x. markes or a leuen ſcore nobles/ and in the ſame ſhyppe the ſayd lordes went, & ſo ſayled into Gerneſey. And whã they had a ſeaſõ there ſoiourned and refreſſhed them ſelfe/ they departed thens, as in the begynnyng of the nexte mayres yere ſhalbe clerely ſhewed. Vppon the morowe whan all thys couyne was knowen to the kynge and the lordes vpon hys party/ there was ſendynge and rũnynge wyth all ſpede towarde euery cooſte to take theſe lordes/ but none myght be foũde. And forthwith the kyng rode vnto Ludlowe, & dyſpoyled the towne and caſtell, & ſente the ducheſſe of yorke wyth hyr chyldren vnto the ducheſſe of Buckynghã hyr ſyſter/ where ſhe reſted lõge after.

Anno

Anno dñi.M.CCCC.lix. Anno dñi.M.CCCC.lx.
Fyſſhemonger. Hohñ Plummer.
wyllyam Hulyn. Anno.xxxviii.
Johñ Stocker.

THys yere that is to meane vpon the fryday next enſuyng Alhalowen day, after the ſayde erles of Salyſbury, of Marche, & of warwyke had as before is ſaid refreſſhed them in the ile of Gerneſey/they vpō the fryday foreſayd lāded at Calays/ and there were at a poſterne by theyr frēdes ioyouſly receyued. Thā anon vpon this theſe foreſayd lordes were proclaymed rebellys & traytours/& the ponge duke of Somerſet was made capitayne of Calays. wherfore in all haſte he made puruepaunce & ſayled thyther to take poſſeſſyon of ỹ towñ. But he fayled of hys purpoſe/ for the foreſayde erles there beynge, kept ſo ỹ towne, that there he myght haue no rule/natwythſtandyng that he ſhewed the kynges letter patētys, wyth many other ſtraycht commaū dementes of the kynge. For whyche cauſe the ſayd duke yode vnto Guynys, and there helde hym for a ſeaſō. And anone as the ſayd duke was lā ded/ſome of the ſhypmen, which had brought hym thyther, for good wyll that they owed vnto the erle of warwyke cōueyed theyr ſhippes ſtreyght into Calays hauen, & brought wyth them certayne perſones named Genyn Fenbyll, Johñ Felowe, Kayles and Purſer, whyche were enemyes vnto the ſayde erle of warwyke/ the whyche were preſented vnto the lor des, and ſoone after wythin the ſayd towne of Calays they were beheded. Thys rumoure thus contynuynge/ dayly came vnto theſe lordes greate ſocoure out of Englāde. And vppon that other partye the duke as before is ſayd lyeng in the caſtel of Guynes gate vnto hym ayde and ſtrengthe of ſouldyours, & made out and ſkyr miſſhed wyth them of Calays many and ſundry tymes. In whych aſſau tes many mē were ſlayen & hurte vp pon both partyes/ but moſte wekyd the dukes partye. For all be that the lordes loſt many men/yet they dayly came ſo thycke to them out of dyuers partyes of Englāde, that theyr loſſe was nat eſpyed/ ſo that they wantyd no mē, but money to mayntey ñ theyr dayly charge with. For remedy wher of they ſhyfted wyth the ſtaple of Ca lays for.xviii.M.li. whyche ſummes of money whan they had receyued, ỹ ſayd lordes of one aſſent made ouer ỹ forenamed mayſter Johñ Dynham wyth a ſtronge company/ & ſent hym vnto Sandwyche to wynne ỹ kyn ges naupe than there lyenge, and other thynges for theyr nedes neceſ ſary. The whyche ſped hym in ſuche wyſe, that he toke the lord Ryuers in hys bedde, & wanne the town, & toke the lord Scalys ſonne vnto the ſayd lord Riuers, with other ryche prayes and after tooke of the kynges naup what ſhyppes them lyked, and after retourned vnto Calays/nat without conſent & agremēt of many of ỹ mari ners, whych owyd theyr ſynguler fa uours vnto the erle of warwyke. In thys iourney was the ſayde Johan Dynham ſore hurt, that he was may med vpon the legge, & haltyd whyle he lyued after. Than after this iour ney thus acheuyd/the ſayd lordes by tayled and māned the ſayd ſhyppes/ & ſent wyth them as cheke capytayne the erle of warwyke into Irelande, to ſpeke wyth the duke of yorke, and to haue hys counſayll for maters cō cerning theyr charge, as reentre into

this

this lande and other. where whā he had happelye ſped hys nedys, he retourned towarde Calays, bꝛyngyng wyth hym hys mother the coũteſſe of Salyſbury/ & alſo kepte hys courſe tyll he came into the weſt coũtrey. where at that tyme was the duke of Exetyꝛ as admyꝛall of the ſee, wyth a competẽt noũber of ſhyppes well mãned/in ſo moche that the erle of warwyke pꝛouyded to haue gyuen batayll vnto the ſayd duke, yf he hadde made any coũtenaunce toward him. But the duke harde ſuche murmure & ſpeche amõge hys owne company, whych ſoũded vnto the erle of warwykes fauoure, that he thoughte it was moꝛe vnto hys pꝛofyte to ſuffre hym to paſſe than to fight with him. But were it foꝛ thys cauſe oꝛ foꝛ other which ꝑ commõ fame rũneth vp põ which were lõge to wꝛyte/certayn & trouth it is that the ſayd erle paſſed wythout fyghte, & came in ſauete to Calays. In thys paſſe tyme a parliament oꝛ great coũſayll was holdẽ at Couentre. By auctoꝛyte whereof the duke of yoꝛke and all the other foꝛeſayde loꝛdes wyth many other were attaynted, and theyꝛ lãdes & goodes ſeaſed to the kynges vſe. And foꝛ the moꝛe ſurer defẽce that they ſhuld nat efte lande in Kẽt, pꝛouiſiõ was made to defende the hauẽs & poꝛtys vppon the ſees ſyde. And at Sandwyche was oꝛdeyned a new ſtrẽgthe wyth a capitayn named ſyꝛ Symõde Moũfoꝛde. And ouer thys pꝛouiſion was oꝛdeyned, that no marchaũt paſſyng into the coſtys of Flaũders, ſhulde paſſe oꝛ go by Calays, foꝛ fere that any ſhuld come to ꝑ ayde of the ſayd loꝛdes. But thys pꝛouyſyon nat wythſtandyng/comfoꝛt to them was ſent dayly out of Englãd.

Mortimers ton felde, &

Than theſe loꝛdes herynge of all thys pꝛouyſyon made vppõ the ſees ſyde to wythſtãde theyꝛ lãdynge, ſent out an other company vnto Sãdewyche/the whych there ſkyrmyſhed wyth the ſayd ſyꝛ Symõde Mountfoꝛde, & in the ende toke hym & bꝛoughte hym vnto Ryſe Banke, & there ſmote of hys hede. The foꝛeſayd loꝛdes than cõſyderynge the ſtrengthe, whych they had wyth them, and manyfolde frendes & hartys, which they had in ſundꝛy places of Englãd/ coudyſcẽded foꝛ to fayle into Englande, & ſo to bꝛyng about theyꝛ entẽt & purpoſe. whych was as the cõmon fame went, to put a parte frome the kynge all ſuche perſones as were enemyes to the cõmon weale of the lãde. And thys to bꝛyng aboute, after they had ſet the towne of Calays in an oꝛder & ſure keppyng/they toke ſhyppynge, & ſo ſayled into Englãde, & landed at Douer/and from thẽs helde on theyꝛ iourney thoꝛughe Kente, ſo that they came to Londõ the .xi. daye of July. And after they had there refreſſhed theym and theyꝛ people/they departed thenſe, & ſped theym towarde the kynge, which at ꝑ ſame tyme of theyꝛ lãdynge was at Couentry, and there gathered his people/ & ſo came vnto ✠ Noꝛthampton where he pyght hys felde. wherof the ſayd loꝛdes beynge enfourmed, ſped them thytherward/ ſo that vpõ the .xi. day of July, bothe hoſtys there mette & foughte there a cruell batayll. But after long fyght, the victoꝛy fell vnto the erle of Salyſbury and the other loꝛdes vpõ hys partye/ & the kynges hoſte was ſparcled & chaſed, & many of hys noble men ſlayen. Amõge the whyche was the duke of Buckynghan, the erle of Shꝛowſbury, ꝑ vycoũt Beaumoũd, the loꝛde Egremõde, wyth many other knyghtes and eſquyers/and the kyng taken in the felde. After whych victoꝛy thus by theſe loꝛdes optey-ned/they in goodly haſte after retourned vnto Londõ, and bꝛoughte wyth theym

them the kynge keppng hys eſtate, & lodged hym in the byſſhop of Londō palays. And after ſpedye knowelege ſent of all the prempſſes vnto ỹ duke of poꝛke yet beyng in Irelāde/a parlyamēt in the name of the kyng was than called & holden at weſtmynſter. Durynge whych parlyament ỹ duke of poꝛke came vnto weſtmynſter vpō the frydaye bekoꝛe ſaynte Edwardes day oꝛ the.x. day of October, and lodged hym in the kynges palays. wher of anone aroſe a noyſe thoꝛugh the cytye, that kynge Henry ſhuld be depoſed, & the duke of poꝛke ſhulde be kynge. Uppō thys this parlyamente thus contynuynge, the duke came one daye into the parlyament chaumber/& there boldely beyng the loꝛdes preſent, ſette hym downe in the kynges ſete/ & ſo there ſittynge, made a pretence and clayme vnto the crown, affermyng it to be hys ryghtfull enheryteūce/ & had there certayn bolde woꝛdes in iuſtyfyenge of the ſame/ wherewyth all the loꝛdes preſente were greatly dyſmayed. Foꝛ thys, great & many oppnions were moued among the loꝛdes. Howe be it aſwell dyuers of hys frendes as other, were of the mynde that he ſhuld nat be admytted foꝛ kynge, durynge the lyfe of kyng Henry. Foꝛ appeaſynge wherof, many great coūſayles were kepte aſwell at the blacke freres as at weſt mynſter.

In all whych tyme and ſeaſon the quene wyth ſuche loꝛdes as were of hyꝛ affynyte, helde them in the noꝛth coūtrey/& aſſembled to theym greate ſtrengthe in the kynges name, to the ende to ſubdue as ſhe ſayde the kynges rebelles and enemyes. Thus contynuynge thys vnkyndeneſſe betwene the kynge and the duke/ all be it that at that ſeaſon bothe the kynge and he were bothe lodged within the palays of weſtmynſter / yet wolde he natte foꝛ prayer noꝛ inſtaunce ones vyſyte the kynge, noꝛ ſee hym, tyll the counſayll were concluded vppon ſome fynall ende concernyng thys greate matter / the whyche ſo continued the full terme of this mayres yere.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lx. Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lxi.

Gꝛocer. Rycharde Flemynge.

Rycharde Lee. Anno.xxxix.

Johñ Lambarde.

THys yere whyche was in the begynnynge of the.xxxix.yere of kyng Henryes reygne, that is to meane vpō the euyn of all ſayntes oꝛ the laſte day of October/ it was condyſcended by the loꝛdes ſpyꝛytuall & tempoꝛall, & by the hole auctoꝛyte of the ſayd parliament, that kyng Hēry ſhuld cōtynue & reygne as kynge duryng hys naturall lyfe / & after hys deth hys ſonne pꝛynce Edwarde to be ſette a parte, & the duke of poꝛke & hys heyꝛes to be kynges/ & incontynentely the duke to be admytted as pꝛotectour and regēt of the lāde. And yf at any tyme after the kynge of hys owne free wyll and mynde were dyſpoſed to reſygne & gyue vp the rule of the lāde, that thā he ſhulde reſigne vnto the duke yf he than lyued, and to none other / & to hys heyꝛes after hys dayes/ wyth many other maters and cōuencyōs whyche were tedious to wꝛyte. All whyche concluſyons as than by mannes wytte myght be aſſuryd foꝛ the parfourmaunce of theym whanne tyme requyꝛed parfyghted/ the kynge wyth the duke &

many other lordes thã there present, came that nyght to Poulys, & there harde euynsong/& vppon the morow came thyther agayn to masse, where the kyng rode in procession crowned wyth great royalte/ & so lay styll in ỹ bysshoppes palays a season after.

And vppon the saterdaye folowynge beyng the.ix.daye of Nouember/ the duke was proclaymed throughe the cytye heyre paraunt vnto the crowne of Englãde, & all hys progeny after hym. Than for as moche as quene Margarete accompanyed with prince Edwarde hyr sonñ, the dukes of Somerset & of Exceter, and diuers other lordes, helde hyr in the northe as aboue is sayd, and wolde nat come at the kynges sendyng for / therefore it was agreed by the lordes thã at London present, that the duke of yorke shulde take wyth hym the erle of Salysbury wyth a certayne people, to fetche in the sayde quene & lordes aboue sayde. The whyche duke & erle departed from Londõ with theyr people vpon the secõde daye of December/ & so spedde theym northwarde. wherof the quene with hyr lordes beynge ware, and hauyng wyth theym a greate strength of Northernemen/ mette wyth the duke of yorke vppon the.xxx.daye of december nere vnto a towne in the northe called wakefeld were betwene them was foughten a sharpe fyght. In the whych the duke of yorke was slayne wyth hys sonne called erle of Rutlande, and syr Thomas Neuyll, sonne vnto the erle of Salysbury, wyth many other / and the erle of Salysbury was there taken on lyue wyth dyuerse other.

The fight at wakefelde.

& The battell of sayntt Albons.

whanne the lordes vppon the quenes partye had gotten thys victory/ anone they sente theyr prysoners vnto Pountfreyte, the whyche were after there behedyd/that is to meane the erle of Salysbury, a man of London named Johñ Harowe, and an other capytayne named Hãlon/whose heddes were sente vnto yorke / and there sette vppon the gates.

And whan the quene hadde optey nyd thys victory/ she wyth her retynewe drewe toward London / where at that tyme duryng thys troublous season, greate watchys were kepte dayely and nyghtelye / and dyuerse oppynions were amonge the citesyns. For the mayre and many of the chefe comoners helde vppon the quenes partye/but the comynaltie was with the duke of yorke & hys affynyte. whanne tydynges were broughte vnto the cytye of the commynge of the quene wyth so greate an hoste of Northernemen/anone suche as were of the contrary partye brought vp a noyse throughe the cytye, that she brought those Northernemen to the entente to ryfle and spoyle the citye, where throughe she was encreasyd of enemyes. But what so hyr entente was/she wyth hyr people helde on hyr waye tyll she came to sayute Albons.

In the whyche meane tyme the erle of warwyke and the duke of Northfolke, whyche by the duke of yorke were assygned to gyue attendaunce vppon the kynge/by consent of the kynge, gathered vnto theym strengthe of knyghtes, and mette wyth the quenes hoste at sayntt Albons foresayde/where betwene them a stroge fyght was foughten vppon shroue tuysday in the mornyng. At ỹ whych the duke of Northfolke & the sayd erle in the endewere chased/and kyng Henry take efte vpõ the felde & brought vnto the quene. And ỹ same after noone after some wryters, he made his sonñ prince Edward knyght whych than was of the age of.viii.yeres/wyth other to the noũbre of.xxx. persones.

whan

whan quene Margaret was thus commen agayne to hyr aboue/ anon she sente vnto the mayre of London, wyllyng & commaundynge hym in ỹ kynges name that he shuld in all spedy wyse sende to saynt Albonys certayne cartes wyth lentyn stuffe for ỹ vytaylyng of her hoste. whyche commaundement the mayre obeyed/and wyth great dylygence made prouysyon for the sayd vytayll / and sent it in cartys towarde Creplgate for to haue passed to the quene. where whā it was cōmyn / the commons many there beynge, whych had harde other tydynges of the erle of Marche as after shalbe shewed/of one mynde with stode the passage of the sayd cartes, & sayde it was nat behouefull to fede theyr enemyes, whyche entended the robbyng of the cytye. And nat wythstandynge that the mayre wyth hys bretherne exorted the people in theyr best maner, shewyng to theym many great daungers whyche was lyke to ensue to the cytye yf the sayd vytayll went nat forthe / yet myghte he nat tourne them from theyr obstynat errour/ but for a cōclusyon was fayne to apoynt the recorder & wyth hym a certayne of aldermē to ryde vnto the kynges coūsayll to Barnet, and to make requeste vnto theym that the Northēmē myght be retorned home for fere of robbynge of the cytye/and ouer thys other secrete frendes were made vnto the quenes grace, to be good & gracyouse vnto the cytye.

Durynge whych treaty/dyuers cytesyns auoyded the cytye and lande. Amōge the whych Phylip Malpas, whych as before is shewed in the.xx. and.viii.yere of thys kynge, was robbed of Jacke Cade/ whyche Malpas & other was mette vpō the see wyth a Frēchman named Columpne, and of hym takē prysoner/& after payed.iiii M.marke for hys raunsome. Thus passyng the tyme / ỹ tydynges which before were secrete, now were blowē abrode/ and openly was tolde that ỹ erles of Marche & of warwyke, were mette at Cottyswolde, and had gathered vnto thē great strength of Marchemen, & were wel spedde vpō theyr waye towarde London. For knowelege whereof, the kynge and ỹ quene wyth theyr hoste were retourned Northwarde. But or they departyd from saint Albonis/ there was beheded the lord Bonuple & syr Thomas Teryll knyght, whyche were taken in the forenamed felde. Thā the duchesse of yorke beyng at Lōdon, herynge the losse of thys felde/ sent hyr two yonger sonnes, that is to meane George whyche after was duke of Clarēce, and Rychard that after was duke of Glouceter, into Utrych in Almayne / where they remayned a whyle.

Thā the foresayd erles of March and of warwyke sped them towarde Londō, in suche wyse that they came thyder vpon the thursday in the fyrst weke of lent. To whome resorted all the gētylmen for the more partye of the south & eest partye of Englād. And in thys whyle that they thus rested at London/ a great coūsayl was called of all lordes spyrytuall & temporall that than were there aboute. By the whyche fynally after many argumentes made, for so moche as kynge Henry contrary hys honoure and promysse at the last parlyament made and assured, and also for that ỹ he was reputed vnable and insuffycyent to rule the realme/ was than by theyr assentes deposed and dyscharged of all kyngely honoure and regally. And incontinently by auctorite of the sayde counsayll and agrement of the commons there present/ Edwarde the eldeste sonne vnto the duke of yorke, thā was there elected

and then chosen for kynge of Englande. After whyche electyon and admyssyon / the sayde erle of Marche gyuyng lawde and prayse vnto god, vpō the.iiii.day of Marche accompanyed wyth all the forsayde lordes & multytude of comons, was cōueyed vnto westminster/and there toke possessyon of the realme of Englāde. And syttynge in hys astate royall in the great halle of the same wyth hys ceptre in hande/a question was axed of the people than presente, yf they wolde admytte hym for theyr kynge & soueraygne lord/ the whyche wyth one voyce cryed, ye ye. And thā after ỹ accustumed vse to kynges to swere and after the othe takē/he went into the abbey, where he was of the abbot & munkys mette wyth processyon, & conueyed vnto saint Edwardes shryne, and there offered as kyng / & that done receyued homage & feaute of all suche lordes as there than were present. And vpō ỹ morowe folowynge, were proclamacyōs made in accustumat places of the cytye, in the name of Edwarde the.iiii.thanne kynge of Englande. Upō whych day the kyng came vnto the palays at Poulys, & there dyned/ and there restyd hym a season, in makynge prouysyō to god Northwarde for to subdue hys enemyes. Than vpon the saterdaye folowynge beyng the daye of Marche/the erle of warwyke with a great puyssaunce of people departed oute of London northwarde. And vppon wednysdaye folowynge the kynges fotemen wente towarde the same iourney

And vppon frydaye nexte folowynge, the kynge tooke hys voyage through the cytye wyth a great bāde of men/and so rode forth at Bysshop gate. In whyche selfe same day whyche was the.xii.daye of Marche/ a grocer of London namyd walter walker, for offence by hym done agayne the kynge, was behedded in Smythfelde. But hys wyfe whyche after was maryed to Johñ Norlāde grocer & lastely alderman/ had suche frendes aboute the kynge, that hyr goodes were nat forfayted to ỹ kynges vse. The kyng than so holdyng his iourney, mette wyth his enemies at a vyllage.ix. myles on thys halfe yorke called Towtō or Shyreborn/ and vpon Palme sonday gaue vnto theym batayll. The whyche was so cruell, ỹ in the felde and chace were slayne vppō.xxx.thousande mē ouer the men of name/ of the whyche here after some ensue. That is to saye the erle of Northumberlande, the erle of westmerlande, the lorde Clyfforde, ỹ lorde Eyromonde, syr Johñ syr Andrewe Trollop, and other to the noumber of.xi. or of mo. And among other at the same felde was taken the erle of Deuonshyre, & after the erle of wylshyre/whych said erle of Deuonshyre was sente vnto yorke, and there after beheded. Hēry than whyche lately was kynge, with the quene & theyr sonne syr Edward, the duke of Somerset, the lord Rose and other, beynge than at yorke/hetynge of the ouerthrowe of theyr people, and greate losse of theyr men, in all haste fledde towarde Scotlande. And vppon the morowe folowynge, the kynge wyth moche of hys people entted into yorke, and there held hys Easter tyde. And vpon Easter euyn, tydynges were brought vnto London of the wynnynge of thys felde. wherfore at Poulys Te deum was songē wyth greate solempnyte, & so thorugh the cytye in all parysshe churches. And thus thys goostly man kynge Hēry lost all, whā he had reygned ful.xxxviii.yeres.vi.monethes & odde days. And ỹ noble & moste bōuteous princesse quene Margarete

of

of whome many an vntrew surmyse was imagened & tolde/was fayne to flye comfortlesse,and lost all that he had in Englãde for euer. whan that kyng Edwarde with greate solempnyte had holden the feest of Easter at yorke/he than remoued to Durham. And after hys busynesse there fynysshed, he retourned agayne Southwarde/& lefte in those partyes ỳ erle of warwyke to se the rule & guydyng of that countrey.

Than the kyng coosted and vysyted the coũtreys Southwarde & Eestwarde/that about the begynnyng of the moneth of Juny he came vnto hys manour of shene now called Rychemoũt. In all whych passyme pur ueyãce was made for the kynges coronacyõ. In accõplysshyng whereof the kyng vpõ the.xxvii.day of Juny beyng fryday,departed from ỳ sayde manour & rode vnto the towre of Lõdon. Upõ whome gaue attẽdaunce ỳ mayre & hys bretherne all cladde in scarlet,and to the noumbre of.iiii.C. cõmoners well horsed & cladde all in grene. And vpon the morne beynge saterday/he made there.xxviii.knightes of the bath,& after that.iiii. moo. And the same after noone he was wyth all honour cõueyed to westminster/the sayd.xxxii.knyghtes rydyng before hym in blewe gownes & hoodes vpon theyr shulders lyke to prestes,with many other goodly and honourable ceremonyes ỳ whych were longe to reherse in due order. And vpon the morne beyng sonday & sait Peters day/he was wyth great tryũphe of the archebysshop of Cauterbury crowned & enoynted before the hygh aulter of saynt Peters churche of westmynster. And after thys solẽpnysacyon of the crownyng of ỳ kyng wyth also the sumptuous & honorable feest holdẽ in westminster hall was fynysshed/the kynge soone after created George hys brother duke of Clarence.

And in the moneth of July folowynge at the stãdarde in chepe, ỳ hãde of a seruaunte of the kynges called Johñ Dauy was stryken of/for that he had stryken a man wythin the palays of westmynster.

Francia.

¶ Carolus.viii



Arolus or Charles the.viii.of ỳ name after the accompte of this boke,or the vii.after the frẽch hystory , sonne of Charlys the . vii . or.vi,beganne hys reygne ouer the frenchmẽ in the moneth of October in the yere of oure lorde.M.iiii.C.x.xxii/ and in the begynnyng of Henry the.vi.than kyng of Englãde. Of thys Charlys sundry wryters sunderly wryte / in so moche as some affirme hym to be the naturall sonne of Charles the.vii/ some affirme hym to be the sonne of the duke of Orleaunce & borne of the quene/and some there ben that name hym the sonñ of Charles fore named gotten in baste , vpon hys mooste beauteous paramour named Agnes/ the whych as testifyeth Gagupnus, excelled all other women in feture & beaute,and for the same to be surnamed the fayer Agnes. Thys in hyr myddell age dyed / & was so ryche ỳ hyr testamẽt amoũted to.lx.M. scutes in golde,the whyche in sterlynge money amoũteth to the summe of.x. M.li. Thãto retourne to thys Charlys/lykely it is that he was nat ỳ naturall sonne of the forenamed Charlys,for as moche as hys sayd father ordeyned and wylled the realme of Fraũce vnto Katheryne hys dough-

ter and wyfe vnto kynge Hēry the.v/ and agreed wyth the consente of the moze parte of ꝑ lozdes of hys realme bothe spyzituall & tempozall, that du-
La pucelle de dieu. ‡ ryng hys lyfe the sayd kynge Henry shuld be regēt of Fraūce, & after hys deth to be kyng of the sayd regnō, as moze at lengthe befoze I haue shewed vnto you in the.vii.yere of the sayd Henry the.v. But whether he be hys legyttymat sonne oz nat, where uppō I purpose no lēger to stande/ trouth it is that he was by his father admitted & made dolphyne of Vyen/ by reason wherof he was in a greate auctozyte, & wan to hym fauoure of som lozdes of Fraūce, whych strōgly mayntayned hys partye durynge the lyfe of kyng Hēry the.v, & after all ꝑ season whyle the duke of Bedfozde occupyed there as regent of that regnō, & was of some parties of Fraūce reputed foz kyng. Howe be it he was neuer crowned, so lōge as the sayde duke of Bedfozde lyued. Neuertheless he by meane of polycy & hys frēdes so defended hym selfe, that lytle by the Englyshemē was wonne vpō hym, of suche lādes as he fyrste was in possessyon of. But polytykely he defended theym, & lytle and lytle so preuayled agayne them, that in the ende he all onely wanne nat to hym the possessiō of that prouince ꝑ which is named Fraūce, but also he wanne to hym in the ende the kynge of Englandes olde enheritaunce, that is Nozmandy, wyth all dompnyons to the same appertaynynge.

The maner of wynnynge of them I woll nat in thys stozy speke of, foz so moche as in the fozmer yeres of kynge Henry the.vi. I haue there expzessed the maner of somme parte therof. But that I shall speke of thē, shalbe of thynges done betwene hym & other pzynces. And foz that I befoze in the.viii. yere of Hēry the vi, pzompsed in the .vi.yere of thys Charles to shewe vnto you somwhat of the maydē oz pucel, which ꝑ Frēch men named ‡ la pucelle de dieu, & her foz a messenger from god to be sente reputed/ I shall here folow ꝑ sayeng of Gagupne, whyche sayeth as folowyeth. In the.vi.yere oz there aboute, to rekyn from the deth of thys Charles father/ a wēche oz mayden beyng bzed in a strete oz vyllage called in latyne Valli colozi, & in thys tyme beynge spzōge to the age of.xx. yeres oz there about, hauing to father a pooze man named Jakes Delarch and hyz mother Isabell, she also berynge the name of Jane oz Johan/ required by dyuers & sundzy tymes an vncle of hyzs beyng pzefecte of the fozesayde vyllage, that he wolde pzesente hyz vnto the Frēche kynge foz thynges cōcernyng greatly the weale of hym & of hys realme. whyche sayd pzefect after many delayes, foz so moche as in hyz wozdes he had lytle truste/ yet at lēgthe hyz sayd vncle beynge named Robert Baudzyncourt, sent hyz wyth a cōuenyent company vnto the kyng, wyth letters certyfyenge hym of all the maner of thys mayde. wher of the sayd Charles beynge assertey-ned/ thought he wold vse som meane to knowe the vertue of thys wenche. And foz he had perfyghte experyence that befoze tymes thys woman had neuer sene hys persone/ he thoughte he wolde chaunge hys rome and habyte, to se whether she by hyz vertue coulde knowe hym frome other/ and that done, he standynge amonge other of his familiers as one of them/ she was called into the chaumber, & demaunded yf euer befoze tyme she had sene the kynge. And after she hadde answered nay/ she was byddē to esspye oute the kynge, whych there stode amonge that companye.

The whyche anone wythout dyffi-

culte

culte him fande and ſaluted as kinge, And all be it that he refuſed hyꝛ reuerẽce, & ſayd ꝑ ſhe erred in hyꝛ choyſe / yet ſhe perſeuered kneling at his fete and ſayde that by goddes puruey=aũce ſhe was taught that he was hyꝛ very ſoueraygn prince & none other. wherfoꝛe the kynge & all hys loꝛdes had in hyꝛ the moꝛe affyaũce, that by hyꝛ the lãde ſhulde be releuyd, whych at that daye was in paſſyng myſery. Than after dyuers queſtyõs to hyꝛ made, what was the cauſe of hyꝛ thyther commynge/ſhe anſwered & ſayd that ſhe was ſent frome god, to ſtabliſſhe the kynge in hys realme/ and that by hyꝛ ſhe beynge leder & cappytayne of hys people, by dyuine grace onely the kynge ſhulde ſhoꝛtely ſubdue hys enemyes. By reaſõ of which woꝛdes, the kyng wyth hys loꝛdes were ſomedeale comfoꝛted.

Upon thys, armour & ſwoꝛd was ſought foꝛ this maydẽ/the whych as ſayeth my ſayd auctour, was foũden myꝛaculouſly/wherof the pꝛoceſſe to me appereth ſo darke & kãtaſtycall, ꝑ therewith me liſt nat to blot my boke but ſuffre it to paſſe by. Than thys wẽche being purueyed of all thinges neceſſary to the warre/ a company of knyghtes & ſoudyours to hyꝛ by the kynge was aſſygned. And ſo ſhe ryꝺynge as a man & in mãnes habyte/ contynued by the ſpace of.ii. peres & moꝛe, and dyd many wonderful feates/and gat from the Engliſſhemen many ſtrõge townes and holdes. wherefoꝛe amonge Frenchemen ſhe was woꝛdſhypped foꝛ an aũgell oꝛ a meſſynger ſent frome god, to releue theyꝛ great myſerye. And as affermeth the ſayd auctour/ſhe by hyꝛ pꝛoꝛ vydence cauſed the ſayd Charles as kynge of Fraunce to be crowned at Raynes, in the yere of oure loꝛd. M. foure hundꝛeth and.xxix.

All be it nouther the Frenche cronycle noꝛ other, whyche I haue ſene teſtyfyeth that / but affermyn that he was nat crowned duryng the lyfe of the duke of Bedfoꝛde. But almyghty god whyche foꝛ a ſeaſon ſuffereth ſuche ſoꝛcery and deuelyſſh ways to pꝛoſpere & reygne, to the coꝛrecyon of ſynners / laſtely to ſhewe hys power, and that good men ſhuld nat fall into any erroure, he ſheweth the clereneſſe of ſuche myſtycall thyn ges/and ſo he dyd in thys. Foꝛ laſtely ſhe by a knyghte Burgonyon was taken, & after ſent to Roan, and there bꝛẽt foꝛ her demeryte, as in the.viii pere of Henry the.vi. is moꝛe at lẽgth ſhewed. Thã the tyme foꝛth paſſyng, and cõtynuall warre betwene Engkande & Fraũce contynuyng/ among many trybulacions by thys Charles ſuſteyned, one that was hys owne ſonũ named Lewys, comfoꝛted and aſſyſted by the dukes of Burbõ and Alẽſon wyth other mẽ of name, rebel led agayne hys father, and warred vppon hym / and by ſtrengthe wan frome hym certeyne townes & ſtrong holdes. Foꝛ remedy whereof / the ſayde Charles made warre vppon the foꝛenamed duke of Burbon/and waſted wyth iron and fyꝛe the countreyes of the ſayde duke of Burbon. By meane whereof, after thys vnkyndely warre hadde duryd by the ſpace of ſyxe monethes oꝛ moꝛe / a peace and vnyte betwene the father & ſonne was treated/ & by meanes of the erle of Ewe, a cõcoꝛde & vnite betwene them was fynally cõcluded/ & he ꝑ ſayd Lewys & all ſuche as wyth hym were reteyned oꝛ allied, were foꝛ thys offẽce by ꝑ ſayd Charles clerely pardoned/one perſone all only excepted named Jaket oꝛ Jakis, by whoſe treaſon the caſtell of Marente was loſte and taken / foꝛ whyche offence he was after dꝛawen, hanged, & alſo quartered.

Thende ſa pucelle de dieu.

Thā in proceſſe of tyme folowyng the flemynges of Gaūte rebelled agayne theyr duke or erle named Philyp. The cauſe of whyche rebellyon was, for that he areryd a greuouſe taſke vpō ſalte/ & put the people ther by to greuouſe charge. wherevppon dedely warre betwene the duke and hys ſubiectys aroſe, to the dyſtrucciō of moche people vpō bothe partyes, wherof the cyrcumſtaūce were lōg to wryte. Howe be it in the ende ꝑ duke or erle by ayde of the Frēche kynge was byctour/ & helde them of Gaūte ſo ſtreyghte, that they were compelled by force to bey theyr peace wyth great ſummes of money, & to theyr other manyfolde domages.

About the.xxxi. yere of thys ſayde Charles/ came vnto hym from pope Nycholas the. v. of that name an ambaſſade, for to requyre ayde agayne the Turkys, for the defēce of Cōſtantyne the noble whyche the Turkys purpoſed ſhortly after to aſſayle. To whyche ambaſſade by the ſayd Charlys it was anſweryd, that to hym it was right greuouſe to here of the intollerable perſecucyō, whych ꝑ criſtē dayly ſuſteyned of the Turkys. But he was of ꝑ Engliſh nacyō ſo vered & warred, that he myghte natte leue hys lāde wythout an hedde, to the cō forte of other & to loſe hys owne. But to the entent that he before tymes myght haue warred vppon the ſayd Turkys/ he for that cauſe onely had offered vnto the kynge of Englande many reaſonable offers. And if of the Engliſſhe party any lyke offers myghte be to hym profered / he wolde gladly theym accepte & turne hys ſpere incōtynētly agayn the fore named Turkes. And ouer that he wolde for the furtheraūce of the matter, ſende wyth them vnto the kynge of Englāde certayne ambaſſadours, to ſe yf that as yet any reaſonable peace myght be betwene them cōcluded. For accompliſſhemēt wherof as reſtyfyeth myne auctour Gagupnus he ſente the archebyſſhop of Raynes wyth other honorable perſones. The whych whan they to kyng Henry and hys counſayll hadde ſhewyd theyr legacyō/ it was to them ſhortly anſwered, that at ſuche ſeaſon as the Engliſſhemē hadde wonne agayne ſo moche lāde as the Frenchemen by cawtelys had wōne from theym/ thā were it good tyme & ſeaſon to treate of accorde, & nat before. By reaſon of whiche anſwere/ the popes ambaſſade retourned to Rome wythoute ayde or comforte. And thus ꝑ Frēche wryters lay euer the charge krō theyr pryncē, & put it vnto other. But of thys ambaſſade or anſwere, fynde I no memory of any Engliſſhe wryters.

Aboute the.xxxiiii. yere of ꝑ reygn of thys Charlys / Lewys hys ſonne before named beynge a mā of greate lyberalitye & largeneſſe, thought hys father departed nat wyth hym of his mouables & poſſeſſyōs as he hadde cauſe to do. For the whyche comfort of pōge perſones as he had aboute hym, he rebelled thys ſeconde tyme agayne hys ſayde father/ & by reaſon of hys largeſſe & lyberalyte, drewe vnto hym moche wāton & wylde people / & wyth theyr aſſyſtence warred vppō hys fathers frēdes, & entendyd to depryue hys father of all gouernaūce of the realme. wherof herynge hys father / in all poſſyble haſte gathered to hym greate ſtrengthe, and ſpedde hym towarde hys ſayd ſonn̄. But whā Lewys was warned of the cōmyng of hys father wyth ſo great an hoſte, & conſydered hys quarell & wekeneſſe / he wyth a fewe perſones fledde towarde Burgoyne. whereof herynge the father ſente in all haſte people to kepe the paſſages/ and dyd

that

that he myghte to haue stopped hym of hys waye. But that prouyspon notwythstandynge/the sayd Lewys escaped, and came sauely vnto the presence of Philyppe then duke of Burgoyne / the whyche hym receyued wyth gladde chere, and entreatyd hym accordyng to his estate, and so kepte hym durynge his fathers lyfe. Howbeit he made for hym great sute and labour, to wynne him to his fathers grace. But all was in vayne. For what by obstynacy of the same ỹ he wolde not submytte hym to his father, and comme vnto hys presence when he was sente for, & for the great stomacke of the father that he wolde not be condyscyoned with of the son/ thys varyaunce contynued bytwene them as aboue is sayd ỹ terme of his fathers lyfe. In the whyche passe tyme thys Charlys concluded a maryage bytwene hys doughter called Magdaleyne, and Ladyslans kyng of Beme, Hungary, and of Polayne. But whyle the bryde wyth great apparayle and pompe was conueyed to warde her husbande to be maryed/ her sayde husbande was taken sodenly with sykenesse, and dyed with in. xxiiii. houres after that he fyrste cõplayned hym/whych was by force of poysone as moste wryters agreen. Of whych tydynges when Charlys was assertayned / he therwyth toke such a pẽsyfenesse, that he dyed shortely after, whan he had ruled a parte and the hole realme, to reken from ỹ deth of hys father. xxxvi. yeres. How be it of Frenche wryters no certeyne terme of hys reygne to hym is assygned/for so myche as kyng Henry the vi. longe after the deth of hys father, was alowyd in Parys and many other Cytyes of Fraũce for souerayne and kynge of that regyon. Thys Charlys thus beynge dede, lefte after hym two sonnes/ that is to saye Lewys that after hym was kynge, and a ponger named Charlys, wyth ỹ forenamed doughter named Magdaleyne, or after some Margarete. And after wyth greate pompe hys corps was conueyed vnto sayne Denys, and there buryed.

Francia.

Lewys the. xi.



Lewys the. xi. of ỹ name after the accompte of thys boke, and. x. after the frenche accompte, whereof ỹ cause is before shewed, sonne to Charles last dede / beganne his dominyon ouer the realme of Fraunce, in the moneth of October in the yere of grace. M. iiii. hundreth and. lviii. and the. xxxvi. yere of Henry the. vi. than kynge of Englande. This of Gaguinus is called the sturdy or fel Lewys. The whiche at the tyme of his fathers deth, beyng, as aboue is sayd vnrecoũsyled in the prouynce of Burgoyne, & herynge of the deth of his father/wyth ayde of the forsayd duke Philyp shortly entred ỹ realm of Fraunce, & toke vpon hym ỹ rule in euery good cytie & town as he passyd as kyng of ỹ same/so ỹ many lordes & hed offycers drewe vnto hym. By meane wherof he was stronge/& put such vnto sylence, as after ỹ wyll & purpose of his father wolde haue preferred his cõger son named Charlys. Than this Lewys by strengthe of his frendes was shortely after at Raynes crowned kynge of Fraunce. After whyche solempnyte fynyshed, he repayred vnto Parys / and there by concent of hys counceyll made a law, ỹ no man of what degre that he were, shuld vse hũtyng or hawkynge without special lycẽce/& specially for

chasynge

chaſynge or huntyng of wolues/nor to kepe wyth hym any houndes or other inſtrumētes wherby the game myghte be deſtroyed. And that done, Philyp forſayd duke of Burgoyne after counſayll to hym gyuen that he ſhulde forgette and forgyue all dyſpleaſurs to hym tofore done by any of hys lordes, and them to honoure and cheryſſhe/ & ſpecyally his yonge brother Charlys to noryſſhe and to departe wyth hym louyngly of hys fathers poſſeſſions/toke leue of hym and departed. After whoſe departure/ he contrary the forſayde counſayll, refuſed the company of hys lordes & alſo theyr counſayll/and drewe vnto hym as his chyefe counſaylours vylaynes and men of lowe byrth. Of ỹ whyche, the.iiii. pryncypall were named as foloweth, Johñ de Lude, Johñ Balna, Olyuer Deuyll, whō for the odyouſneſſe of the name the kynge cauſed it to be chaunged and to be named Dāman/and the fourth was named Stephan and vſſher of the kynges chaumber dore/ the whiche he promoted to greate honour & dygnytees. Amonge whome Balna beynge a preſte, was by hys meanes at length made a cardynall of Rome.

Thus he vſynge the counſayle of theſe perſons / murmur and grudge began to ſpryngе bytwene hym and hys lordes/ in ſo myche that fyrſt the duke of Bryttayne began to eſtraūge hym from the kynge, and refuſed to come vnto hys preſence whā he was ſente for. wherof herynge the erle of Ewe wyth other, drewe them vnto ỹ duke. To the whyche party ſoone after, ỹ kynges brother Charlys, with alſo the duke of Burbon whych had maried the kynges ſyſter, with many other noble men of the realme, reſorted. whan the kynge was ware that hys lordes conſpyred agayne hym/ herynge the rebellyon of hys comōs, ſent in ſpedy maner vnto Parys the forenamed Johñ Balna wyth other certeyne perſons, to kepe that cytye in due obeyſaūce toward hym/ thynkynge that the other cytyes & good townes of hys regyon, wolde take enſample therof, and demeane them as that cytye dyd. After whoſe commynge/ the rulers of Parys by the amonyſtement of the ſayd Johñ, ordeyned good and ſure watche/and ſo by that meane kept the cytye in good order. And in the meane ſeaſon, the kynge gathered to hym great foyſon of knyghtes and ſoudyours, that his hoſte was nombred at. xxx. thouſand men. And in lyke wyſe the other partye hadde aſſembled as many or mo. And not wythſtandyng the aſſyduat laboure and meanes made by ỹ duke of Burgoyne, and Carlota wyfe to ỹ duke of Burbon ſyſter to the kyng as is aboue ſayde, to make an vnyte and peace bytwene Lewys and hys lordes / yet fynally the kynge & they mette in playne batayll at a place called Chartres, where bytwene theym was a longe and cruell batayll, to ỹ loſſe of moche people on bothe partyes. And all be it that the kynge in the begynnynge hadde the better of hys enemyes/yet in the ende he was ouercomen, his men chaced, and he forced to flye, & to take for hys ſauegarde a caſtell named Mountclere. From the whyche he ſhortely departyd, and rode to an other caſtell called Corboyll, and from thens laſtly vnto Parys / where he entendyd to haue gathered newe people, and to haue reuenged hym of hys enemyes. But by the wyſe and good exortacyō of the byſſhoppe of Parys, the kyng chaunged hys purpoſe/ and all was ſet in a quyetneſſe for that tyme. But how or in what maner, or what the condycyons of ỹ accorde were/myne authour dothe not expreſſe. The

whych

whyche accorde thus concluded/ the kynge contynued hys olde maners, and delyted hym more to companye with symple and inreuerent parsons to eate and drynke wyth them, to the ende that he myghte talke of rybaudry and bayne and byceous fables/ than to accompany him with his lordes, where he myghte haue wonne hym myche honour. Thys Lewys also was of so dyuers and wanton condycyon, that he wolde go more lyker a yoman or a seruyng man, than lyke a prynce. The whyche was for no regardshyp nor sparyng of good/ for as before I haue shewed, & also after shall appere, he was a prynce of moste lyberalyte, and therwith an oppressour of hys subiectes.

LEwis thus passing his time/ was dryuen of necessyte for lacke of money, to a preste of the cytesyns of Parys. The whyche after many excuses by them layd to put it by, and myghte not be alowed / they lastly denayed the kynges pleasure. where wythall he beynge greuously dysscontentyd, remoued diuerse from theyr offyces/and other whych were of the rychest and hed men of ỹ cyte, he soughte agayne theym surmysed causes/ & without proues or iustyce, put many of them to deth. For these forsayde causes & many other whyche tedyouse were to expresse, the forsayd lordes agayne assembled theyr people/entendyng to subdue ỹ kynge, and to set hys brother in hys place/ or to cause hym otherwyse to rule ỹ comon weale. And to strength the barons party/ Johñ sonne vnto ỹ duke of Calabre approched to them, wyth a good bande of men. And to them came also the sonne of the duke of Burgoyne named Charlys. All whyche barons of one assent mette at a towne called Stampys / where they cõtynued theyr counsayle by the space of .xv. dayes/ and after that counsayle fynysshed, toke theyr journaye towarde Parys. In whych passe tyme a spye of the duke of Bryttaynes, called Peter Gerold was taken in Parys, and drawen, hanged, and quartered / and dyuers men and women ỹ were suspected to owe fauour vnto the lordes, were sacked and caste in to the water of Seyn. Then for strength and gyde the cytye of Parys, the kynge sent thyder the erle of Donoyse / by whose prouysyon all warly ordenaunce for to defende theyr enemyes was there preparyd. In the whych tyme & season, ỹ lordes in .iii. partes enbatayled, approched the cytye. wherof ỹ fyrste hoste ladde Charlys brother vnto the kynge/ the seconde the duke of Bryttayne / & the thyrd Charlys the sonne to the duke of Burgoyne. Prouyded that Charlys fyrste named ladde the myddle ward. whã the sayd erle of Donoyse hadde well consydered the strength of the lordes / he sente vnto theym a messanger, sayeng that in his mynde he marueyled to see so greate a multytude of people assembled agayne the cytye and comon weale of ỹ land/ consyderyng that he was sette there by the kynge as a medyatour and a meane, rather to make peace than warre, yf they were contentyd that by hym any medyacyon myghte be laboured and hadde. But thys came to none effecte, so that small assautes and skyrmysshes ensued, to the lytell domage of bothe partes. In whyche passe tyme the kynge sent by secrete meanes vnto the forenamed Johñ sonne vnto the duke of Calabre/ and hym by many meanes instaunted, to leue the company of the lordes. But all his offers auayled tyght nought. Thenne the forsayde lordes thus lyenge before the cytye of Parys, in

the playne

the playne whete standeth the monastery of saynt Antony / Charlys brother to the kynge caused. iiii. letters to be deuysed. wherof one he sent to the bysshoppes and spyrytuall men within the cytye / the seconde to the consulles or hed men/the thyrde to ꝑ scolers of the vnyuersyte/ and ꝑ .iiii. vnto the compnaltye. Of whyche letters the entent ensueth / that he nor none of hys company was comen thyder as an enempe to the cytye, or to make warre agayne it or the common weale of the land/but for the encreace and augmentacyon therof, to the vttermost of theyr powers. After recepte of whyche letters, and the mater in them conteyned well vnderstāden and debatyd/certeyne ordatours for the sayde.iiii.partyes were assygned/ as thre for the spyrytuall men, thre for the consuls, thre for the vnyuersyte, & thre for compnaltye/whose names ¶ ouer passe. The whyche wyth the bysshop of Parys were sent vnto the barons / & after longe communycacyon wyth them hadde, retourned to the cytie with such report as foloweth.

Fyrste the lordes wolde that the inhabytauntes of the cytye shulde cōsyder the condycyons of the kynge, ꝑ whyche perely oppressyth his subiectes with taskes and other greuouse seruagys. Secondaryly how he dessyseth ꝑ noble blode of hys realme, and draweth to hym vylaynes and men of no reputacyon/by whose coūsayls onely all the comon weale of ꝑ land is ruled and guyded. Thyrdely how he ruleth hys subiectes by force and wyll, wythout mynystracyon of iustyce/and hym selfe in all coūsayls and parlyaments is iudge in all causes, and callyth hys selfe counsayls and parlyamentes, more for hys synguler weale than for the comō weale of his realme. Fourthely how he enhaunsyth men of low e byrthe vnto greate honours and causyth noble men to be obedyent vnto them/enten dynge to brynge the same ignoble men, for to be egall wyth the prynces of the lande. Fyftely how the lawes be delayed and bolstred by suche as stande in his fauour/ where thorugh as thys daye lawe is wyll and wyll is lawe/ and no man almoste in any suerty of lyfe or goodes/ in so moche that dayly many ben banysshed and put to deth for vnlefull causes / and also to any noble man at this daye no power or rome of honour belongeth / so that to wylde bestes in the forestes apperteyneth more lybertye and suertye, than the more partye of the kynges subgettes. Syrtly the greate taskes and summes of money whych dayly be leuyed of the comōs ben not spent in the kynges honourable nedes and for the comon weale of the realme/ but are spent nysely & rydottously, and brybed out of ꝑ kynges cofers. For whyche enormytees & mysgouernaūce with many other/ the sayde lordes were thyder comen in defensyble araye, for ꝑ sauegarde of theyr owne persons/as to the hed and pryncypall cytie of the realme, for to haue ayde and counsayle to refourme the foresayd euyls / not withstandynge any harme vnto the kynges persone, or yet to remoue hym from his regally or kyngly maieste/ but to enduce hym & aduertyse hym to that that shuld be his honour and the weale of hys realme, and to lyue in welthe and honour as hys noble ꝓgenitours haue lyued before hym. For the whyche causes and consyderacyons wyth many other whych ¶ passe ouer/the sayde lordes as ꝑ kynges trewe subcittes and frendes vnto the comon weale of the lande and of that cytye, desyre to entre/there to refresshe them and theyr people, and to paye

to pay truely for all thynge that they ſhulde take, & wythout doyng harme or vyolence to any perſone. All whyche requeſtes and maters of the lordes ſhewed vnto the inhabytauntes of the cytye, by fauour of ſome frendes that they there had, it was with the more partye well acceptyd, and thought conuenyent that they ſayde nobles ſhuld be receyued into the cytye. How be it that after longe debatynge of thys mater, by meane of the forenamed erle of Donoyſe, a ſpaynge of thys receyte of the lordes ſhuld be, tyll they had forther knowlege of the kynges pleaſure. whyche prouyſyon the ſayd erle fande, for ſo myche as he was ſecretely warned of the kynges thyder comynge. And vpon thys agremēt the cytye reſted. For ſuertye wherof, ſuche as were within the cytye of the kynges ſeruauntes and frendes, rode dayly & nyghtly about ỹ cyty wyth a ſtronge company in harneys, to ſe the people kepte in due order. Than vppon the daye folowynge came vnto Parys a capytayne of ỹ kynges named Moū talbone, and wyth hym a good bend of men/the whyche ſhewyd vnto the cytezyns that the kyng was comyng out of Normandye with a great hoſt of .The lordes beynge warned/enbatayled them in the foreſayde playne of ſaynte Antoyn, to ſhewe the ſtrength of theyr hoſte vnto the cytye, or ſuche as were therin as theyr enemyes. where they ſo lyenge/certayne knyghtes of the kynges party, diuerſe and ſondry tymes brake out by ſodeyne reſys, and ſkyrmyſſhed wyth the lordes people, to the lytell hurte of bothe partyes.

In the whych paſſe tyme kynge Lewys comynge out of Normandye, was receyued into the cytye. where after hys comynge he put in execucyon. v. perſons, named Johū worcester, Euſtace and Arnolde worcter, Johū Coart, and Fraunceys Haſle. The whyche perſons were accuſyd to hym to be chyefe occaſyoners of the legacyon made vnto the lordes. Of whyche ſayde. v. perſons / thre, as Johū Coart, Fraunceys Haſle, & Arnolde worcter, were meſſengers aſſygned in the ſayde legacyon for the conſuls of Parys / and the forenamed Euſtace worcter, was one of the thre aſſygned for the clergye.

The kynge thus beynge in poſſeſſyō of the cytye/many and dyuers aſſautes and ſkyrmyſſhes betwene hys knyghtes and the lordes were made/but no notary batayle, for the kynge was ferre weker. And ouer that in thys tyme & ſeaſon, the ſayde lordes gat vnto them ſondry caſtels and ſtronge holdes. Than at length meanes of a peace was offeryd by ỹ kynge. For concludyng wherof/ for the kynge was admytted the erle of Mans, with certayne other perſons. And for the barons, was aſſygned Johū ſonne vnto the duke of Calabre, Lewys erle of ſaynt Poule and other/the whyche aſſembled and cōmoued togyder by ſondry tymes. iy. dayes. In whyche ſeaſon came vnto the kynge a newe ſtrength of ſoudyours out of Normandye / the whych the kyng appoynted to kepe the ſubarbes of ſaynt Marcell. Thys treaty thus hangyng wythout concluſyō or ende takynge/vppon the. xiiii. day of October in the. vii. yere of ỹ regn of thys Lewys, was proclaymed thorough the cytye and alſo the hoſte a day of lenger treuce/ſo that thanne the lordes wythdrewe theym vnto theyr ſtronge holdes and caſtels, hol dynge wyth them many ſoudyours whyche fyll to robbynge and other vnlefull actes, to the greate daunger and hurte of the lande. And at ſuche ſeaſons as the arbytrours met

Mm. to fy-

to fynyſſhe this great matter/among other thynges offeryd by the kynge, he graunted to gyue vnto hys brother Charlys for hys porcyon, all Champayne wyth the lordſhyppe of Brye/ the cytyes of Melde, Monſtruell, and Meldune therof to be excepted. And vnto Charlys ſonne of the duke of Burgoyne, he was contented to gyue ſo myche money as he hadde ſpent in that iournay. But all was refuſed. And fynally for obſtynacy of bothe partyes/ the daye of erpyracyon of the trewe appꝛochyd, wythout hope of accord cõcludyng. wherfore prouyſyon for warre vpon bothe partyes was deuyſed. Than begã grudge and murmure bytwen the cytezyns and the kynges ſowdyours/wherthorough many of the comons hertes turned to the lordes/ſo that for fere the ſurer and ſtronger watches were kepte to the kynges great charge. Shortely after tydynges were brought vnto the kynge ỹ the caſtell of Gyſons was of the lordes beſyeged/ and that alſo the prefecte of the kynges paleys in Roan, was taken of the cytezyns and holden in prꝛyſone. And the daye folowynge came an other meſſengare, ſhewynge vnto the kynge that the duke of Burbone was by the poſterne receyued into the caſtell of Roan / and was lykely to haue ſhortely the rule of the cytye / wyche came to effecte in ſhorte whyle after. whan the lordes hadde gotten the caſtell and cyty of Roan, wyche is hed cytye of Normandy as Parys is hed of Fraunce/ than in maner of deryſyon they ſent vnto ỹ kynge, ſayenge that nother with Champayne nor with Brye hys brother Charlys wold be contented, but ſcantely wyth the hole duchy of Normandy. Than kynge Lewys cõ ſyderyng the great auaũtage, which ỹ lordes had of him, both by ſtrength and fauour of hys comons wyche dayly drewe vnto them by ſondry cõ panyes/in auoydyng of more daunger, concludyd a peas. For perfourmaũce wherof, he graũted vnto Charlys his brother ỹ hole duchy of Normandy/takyng to hym in exchaũge the county of Berry. And to Charlis ſonne to the duke of Burgoyne, Peroñ, Ropa, & a cytye or towne called in latyne Mondideriũ/ and therwith he ioyned Gwynary and ỹ erledome of Boloyne/which lordſhyps ỹ ſayd kynge Lewys hadde before tymes bought of duke Phylyp his father. To Johñ of Calabre he graũted all ſuch ſũmes of money as he demaundyd, to wage with ſoudiours to ayde his father agayne Fardynande then kyng of Aragon. And to Johñ duke of Burbon, ỹ which as before is ſaid had maryed his ſyſter/he graũted all ſuch dowar as to hym was pmyſed at ỹ tyme of maryage/ & all ſuch pencyon as he was wont yerely to take, of the graunte of Charlys laſt kyng within the realme of Fraũce. To the duke of Brytayne was reſtorꝛyd the erledome of Moũtferard, with great ſũmes of money which the kyng had receyued of the ſayd county. And to ỹ erle of Dampmartyne was reſtorꝛed all ſuche landes as before by acte of parlyamẽt were forfayted to ỹ kyng. To the erle of ſaynt Poule was reſtored the offyce of the conſtablerye of Fraũce/ & to other mẽ of name other notable thynges which I paſſe ouer. All whyche grauntes fermely and faſtely aſſuryd/proclamacyons were made of thys peaſe thorough the realme of Fraunce. And after thys peaſe was thus concluded/the kyng and hys lordes mette. To whome he ſhewed greate ſemblaunt of kyndneſſe / and ſpecyally vnto hys brother. wherin appered great dyſſymulacyon, as here after ſhall appere.

For

For thys Lewys was of suche condycion, that what he myght not ouercome wyth strength, he wold wynne wyth dyssymulacyon and trechery, After whyche peace thus concluded, and the lordes departed / the kynge festyd the rulers and consuls of the cytye of Parys/and gaue vnto them due thankes, for the greate trouth & fydelyte, whyche they bare towarde hym duryng that troubelous season and graunted vnto them suche thynges, as then they wolde aske for the weale of that cytye.

It was not longe after, that dyssymulacyon fell bytwene Charlys duke of Normandye, and Johñ forsayde sonne vnto the duke of Calabre and the erle of Dampmartyne. wherof a parte of the cause was, that the sayde Charlys after theyr thynkyng, hadde not so bounteously rewarded them as they had deserued. Of whyche dyscorde kyng Lewys was sayne/and in spedy maner rode vnto a towne called Argentyne/and there wyth the sayd Johñ than beynge duke of Calabre, by reason of hys fathers deth, helde wyth hym longe and great counsayll, to ỹ entent to dyspossesse hys brother of the duchy of Normandye. By reason of whych dyscorde bytwene the sayd two dukes/kynge Lewys as ayder of the duke of Calabre, made warre in the partyes of Normandye / and in processe wanne therin dyuers castels and other stronge holdes, and compelled hys brother to holde the cytye of Roan for hys refuge. where he so beynge/the kyng wanne dayly vppon hym/in so myche that dyuers townes and stronge holdes submytted them to his grace. wherof hering the cytesyns of Roan, made an ambassade vnto the kynge, for purchace of grace for theyr duke and for them selfe. The whych when the duke vnderstode, feryng leste his owne cytesyns wolde betraye hym, fled thens/ and so rode to Humclewe, and from thens to Cadomy. In whyche passe tyme ỹ kynge was wyth due honour receyued into ỹ cytie of Roan/where he remoued many from theyr offices, and of his seruauntes or such as lyked hym put in theyr places/& moch of the ordynaunce and of abylymentes of warre belongynge to ỹ towne he sent vnto Parys/and the prouost of Roan named Gayne Manuell he put to deth/& after hys body was cast into the ryuer, and his hed sette vppon a pole/& dyuers of the colege wyth the deane of ỹ same place were put vnto deth. And all whych tyrannye by the kynge executyd, and the towne put in suertye by strength of soudyours/he after spedde hym vnto Orleaunce, where as sayth myne authour he puruayed an honorable ambassade, and sent it vnto Edward the.iiii. then kynge of Englande.

In the.ix. yere of ỹ reygne of thys Lewys was so greate a mortalyte of men in Fraunce, that in Parys dyed that yere ouer.xl.M. people. And in thys yere began a grudge to growe bytwene this Lewys and Phylyppe duke of Burgoyne. But it was kept vnkyndely duryng ỹ lyfe of ỹ duke, which dyed shortely after. To whom succedyd Charlys his sonne before named, wbich in processe of tyme maryed dame Margarete syster vnto kynge Edward ỹ.iiii. as after shalbe shewyd. It was not longe after that thys Lewys assembled a great hoste of people to make warre vpon Charlys duke of Burgoyne. Of whyche people he had cõmytted the rule and charge vnto Johñ Balna, whych at that daye was preste and cardynall/ and he as a tẽporall capytayne, toke of them the mustyrs & other orders. where at the tẽporall lordes dysdayn-

nynge/the erle of Dāpmartyne ſayd in the names of them vnto the kyng. Moſte redouted ſouerayne lo3de, it hath pleaſed your hyghneſſe to commytte vnto a ſpy3ytuall mā ꝑ charge of your puyſſaunt hoſte/& he not feryng god, hath taken vpon hym the cure and charge of them, to the effuſyon of cryſtē mēnes blode. wherfo3e it may lyke your moſt noble grace, to ſende me a tempo3all man to vyſyte his dyoceſe, and to take the charge of his flocke/ whyche is as ſyttyng fo3 me, as that other dede is fo3 him. At this ſayeng the kyng hadde good game/but fo3 all ꝑ he dyd as to hym ſemyd beſt. Of this warre bytwene ꝑ kyng & duke Charlys of Burgoyne I entende not to ſpeke/fo3 the mater of it is ſomdele long and tedyous to wryte. But in this whyle that Lewys was occupyed in thys warre/ꝑ Bry-tons with an excedynge power aſſayled ꝑ partyes of No3ue hauyng Charlis bro3der vnto Lewis to they3 leder, whych to the duke of Bry-tayn was fled fo3 ayde & ſocoure. wherof herynge kyng Lewys/all ſuch hoſte of ſowdyours as he hadde purpoſed other wayes, he than ladde agayne hys bro3ther. In whych hoſte as after myth myne authour, were an. C. M. men, ouer ſuch as had the guydyng of the o3denaūce. whā Charlys was aduertyſed of the greate ſtrength of hys bro3ther/by polytyke meanes he ſoughte fo3 a peace. And after many delato3y communycacyōs and other delayous meanes wro3ughte vppon bothe partyes/laſtely the kynge ſent vnto hys bro3ther Johū Balna cardynall wyth other, to ſhewe vnto hymhys mynde and pleaſure. wherof whan Charlys was ſuffycyently inſtructed/ he gaue fo3 an anſwere, that yf a perfyghte conco3de ſhulde be ſtablyſſhed bytwene hys bro3ther and hym, that it ſhuld be autho3yſed by the hole concent and counſayle of the barony of the realme. with which anſwere the kyng beyng contentyd/ at Turon in the moneth of Apryll & yere of hys reygne, aſſembled a greate ceunſayle of hys lo3des ſpy3ytuall and tempo3all/in the whyche ꝑ demaūdys of the ſayde Charlys and offers of the kyng were ſhewed. And after the ſayd coūſayle had at length reaſoned the ſayde demaundes and offers/it was fynally determyned, ꝑ the duchy of No3mandye was ſo apro3uyd vnto the kynge of Fraunce and to hys heyres kynges, that in no wyſe it myghte be dyſſeuerȳd from ꝑ crowne. But to the entent that a perfyght vnyte myghte be had bytwene the kynge and hys bro3ther/the kyng ſhall be inſtaūted to gyue yerely vnto hys ſayd bro3ther in recōpenſemēt of ꝑ ſayd duchy. xii. thouſand poūde of Turō money/ wyth alſo a certeyn of lande to hym to be aſſygned wyth the name of a duke / and ouer that ꝑ kynge to be inſtanted to gyue vnto hym durynge hys naturall lyfe, fo3 ſuche po3cyō as he claymed to be his ryghte wythin the realme. xl. M. ℔. of annuell rente yerely to hym to be payed of the fo3ſayd Turō money. To all whyche grauntes the kynge was agreed/& ouer that to pardon ꝑ duke of Bry-tayne all offences nowe newly done agayne hys maieſte, and contrary the dukes faythe and allegaunce/and all ſuch lo3dſhyppes as the kynge hadde wonne wythin Bry-tayne, to reſto3e vnto the duke & hys aſſygnes. All ꝑ whych offers myght not ſatyſfye the coūſayle of the ſayd Charlys/but clerely was ſet aparte and refuſed.

After the fo3ſayd offers were by Charles refuſed/the kyng in ſpedy wyſe vppon the refuſayll ſent a ſtronge hoſte into Bry-tayne, vnder the guydynge of a knyghte called

called Arnolde. And in the meane seaſon the kyng vyſytyng the boꝛdours of hys realme/ put in execucyon dyuerſe parſones, ſuche as were accuſed to offende agayne hym. Paſſynge whych ſeaſon, were it foꝛ the greuys whyche the foꝛeſayd hoſte wꝛoughte wythin the coũtrey of Bꝛytayne, oꝛ foꝛ other ſkyll/the foꝛeſayd Charlys & the duke of Bꝛytayne made newe meanes foꝛ a peace vnto the kynge/ & offered to be contentyd, wyth that they myght ſtande in hys fauoure & grace, wyth ſuche pꝛoffers as the coũ ſayll of the realme was befoꝛe tyme agreed and cõdyſſended vpon. where unto a ſophyſtycall anſwere was made by the kyng/ſo that the ſayd Charles at that tyme myghte nat be aſſerteyned of peace oꝛ of warre. Howe be it in the yere folowyng by inſtaũt labour of the foꝛe named Johñ Balna cardynall, the kynge agreed to gyue vnto hys bꝛother Charlys the duchy of Guyan onely. wherewyth he helde hym cõtẽted/& ſo ceaſed of his warre in Nozmãdy.

It was nat lõge after that thys ſayde Johñ Balna foꝛgetynge ꝑ manyfolde great benefytes ſhewed to hi by the kynge/ cõſpyꝛed agayne hym, & deuyſed certayne letters/the which he ſent vnto Charlys duke of Burgoyne. wherin was cõteyned that he ſhulde beware and haue hym ſelfe in good gayte / foꝛ the vnyte and peace whyche lately was ſtablyſſhed betwene the kynge & Charlys hys bꝛother, was pꝛincipally to dere & warre vppon hym, & to bꝛynge hym in ſubiecꝛyon. wherfoꝛe in auoydynge that daũger/he aduyſed hym in all poſſyble haſte to aſſemble hys knyghtys, that he were nat takẽ vnpurueyed. The whyche letters were it by reaſõ of the berer oꝛ otherwyſe, came to ꝑ kynges pꝛeſence. After recept of whyche letters, & knowlege of the cõtent of them/anone the kynge cauſed the ſayde Johñ Balna to be taken, & to be caſte in ſtronge pꝛyſone. And that done he rode vnto Thuron/ whyther to hym came hys bꝛother Charles, and to hym dyd homage, & ſware vnto him feauty foꝛ the duchy of Guyan. And foꝛ to knytte the duke of Bꝛytayne moꝛe faſtly to hym/ he ſente to hym a ſceptre wyth a chayne of golde/the whyche the duke refuſed to take, wherewyth Lewys was greuouſly dyſcõtẽted. The cauſe of whyche refuſall was, foꝛ the ſayde duke of Bꝛytayne had lately befoꝛe that allyed hym wyth Charlys duke of Burgoyne, & had receyued hys lyuerey of golden flees. And ſoone after, whyche was the. xi. yere of thys Lewys/Carlota hys wyfe was lyghted of a ſonñ, & after named Charles by Charlys hys bꝛother/whych after hys father was kynge of Fraũce. And ſhoꝛtly after by meanes of Charlys duke of Guyan, & of the duke of Burbon & other / the duke of Bꝛytayn was recoũcyled vnto the kyngꝛ fauoure. And in ꝑ. xii. yere of ꝑ reygn of thys Lewys, dyed by foꝛce of veni the aboue named Charlys duke of Guyan. But by whoſe meanes myne auctour myndeth nat.

Than cõtynuynge the warre betwene thys Lewys & thys duke of Burgoyne/ a marchaunt of Guyan named Itery, which after the deth of the ſayd duke of Guyan was fledde vnto the duke of Burgoyne, & wyth hym a ſeaſõ remayned/ ſhewed vnto hym many tedyous talys of ꝑ kyng. wherfoꝛe the duke appercyuynge ꝑ he owed to the Frenche kynge no fauoure/ exoꝛted hym to poyſon ꝑ ſayd kynge. And yf he myght bꝛynge to effecte hys purpoſe/he ſhuld therefoꝛe haue. l. M. floꝛynes of golde. A floryne is in value of ſterlynge money .iii. ſ. After whyche pꝛomyſe and

assurannce thus made by the duke/ thys Jtery to bryngе hys euyll purpose about, made hys seruaunt named Johñ de Boldy of coũsayll/and promysed to hym greate thynges, yf he wolde take vpon hym that acte. And after graunt hadde of the sayde Johñ/the sayd Jtery prouided ỹ poyson, & delyuered it vnto hys sayd seruaũt. The whych incontynẽtly sped hym vnto Ambasye, where the frẽch kyng than laye/where thys Johñ de Boldy beynge of famylyer acqueyntaunce wyth one named Poppn, to ỹ entent to bryngе hys entent ỹ better to effecte, after assuraũce of othe to hi made to kepe hys counsayll / shewyd vnto hym all hys mynde, & promised to hym .xx. M. florynes yf he wolde helpe to bryngе to conclusyon hys purpose. The whyche Poppn made vnto hym assured promyse/& sayde ỹ to bryngе thys mater aboute, it was very expedyent to haue of counsayll the kynges mayster cooke named Colynet/whome he knewe well to wyn, for the great fauoure that eyther of them owed vnto other. And after cõmunycacyon had wyth the sayd Colynet/the sayd poysone to hym was delyuered. wherwyth the sayd Colynet & Poppn hys felowe went a conuenyent tyme after vnto the kynge, & shewyd to hym the compasse of all ỹ mater. where after anone the sayde Johñ de Boldy was taken, & confessed the cyrcumstaũce of all the hoole treason / for the whyche at Parys he was after drawen, hanged, and quartered. Soone vpõ thys, Frederyke ỹ iii. of ỹ name than emperoure of Almayne, sente vnto thys Lewys / wylyng & requyryng hym that he wolde nat endeuer hym to any peace or accorde with ỹ duke of Burgoyne. For he entẽded in suche wyse to ayde hys partye, ỹ he trusted in god to bryngе the sayde duke to hys due, & conuenyent obeysaũce & subiecciõ. But the kyng regarded nothynge the emperours requeſt/but cõcluded a trewys wyth the duke for a yere folowynge, by auctorite of a great counsayll or parlyament. At the whyche the duke of Alẽson was iuged to lose hys hed, & hys heredytamentes to be forfayted vnto the kynge.

Than it foloweth in the storye / of thys forsayde trewys betwene the kynge & Charles the duke were fully erpryed/ ỹ sayd Charles made warre vpon the sayd Lewys, and procured kynge Edwarde of Englande, whose syster he had maryed, to make also warre vpon hym. For expedycyon wherof/the sayd kyng Edwarde landed at Calays shortly after, wyth a competente noumber of soudyours, as after in the .xiiii. yere of the reygne of the sayd Edwarde the .iiii. it shalbe to you more clerely shewed, wyth cõclusyon of a peace & other thynges. After ỹ which peas betwene the sayd ii. kynges agreed / a vnyte and concorde was also stablysshed betwene thys Lewys & the duke of Burgoyn for .ix. yeres.

About the .xbii. yere of thys Lewys / ỹ steward of Normãdy named Lewys Bursey, ỹ which had maryed the nece of kyng Lewys/beyng warned of ỹ wãton rule of his wyfe, & of her auoũtry wyth one named Johñ Louyr/vpõ a day to prouẽ his sayde wyfe, wẽt on hũting/& at his retourñ feyned hym wery & feynt for labour, & wẽt to his bedde. And she anone dempng her husbãd to be at his naturall rest/yode strepght vnto ỹ chãber of ỹ sayd Johñ Louyr. wherof ỹ husbãd beyng warned/wyth hys swerde in hãde sped hym vnto ỹ sayd chãber & after ỹ dore brokẽ vp by violẽce, & fyndyng thẽ in bedde or other suspecious maner, with his sayde swerde slewe first ỹ sayde Johñ / & after nat wythstan-

wythstādyng her miſerable & lamēta ble crȳēg, & alkynge forgyuenes vpō her knees, he alſo flewher/ & after fled tyll he had made hys peace wyth the kyng.

Lōge it were & alſo tedioule to folowe myne auctour, in declaryng of euery particuler dede done by this Lewys. wherfore to shortē this storȳ/ trouth it is ȳ after thys Lewys had by lōg tyme exerciſed him in warres, he laſtly fell in a greuouſe ſykeneſſe. The whych cōtinued & ſo encreaſed vpō hym/ ȳ he knewe well he ſhulde nat lōg endure. wherfore he diſpoſed there after / & cauſed many dedes of almeſſe to be done for hym. Amōge ȳ whych within ſait Johñs church the Baptiſt within Parys, he foūded certeyn preeſtes to ſyng for hym in perpetuyte. For ſuſtētacion of whome, he gaue of yerely rēte a. M. li. of Parys money. And ſo lāguyſſhyng by ȳ ſpace of. iii. yeres more before he died paſſed hys tyme wyth great tribulacyon. In the whyche paſſe tyme oratours were ſent from the Flemynges for to conclude a maryage betwene Charles hys eldeſt ſonne, & Margarete than doughter of Maxymylian ſonne of Frederyke the emperoure/ which Maximiliā before thoſe days had maryed Mary the doughter of Charles duke of Burgoyne. After whych cōcluſyon ended & kynyſſhed/ the kyng gaue vnto the ſayd oratorȝ xxx. M. ſcutes of golde, whych amoū teth to. v. M. li. ſterlyng money. And ouer that gaue to them in plate purpoſely made, to the value of. v C. li. ſterlynge. And in the. xxv. yere of the reygne of the ſayd Lewys / the forenamed Margarete a chyld of tender age, wyth great & ſumptuouſe pōpe was brought vnto Parys. And frō thens ſhe was conueyed vnto Ambaſye/ and there in the moneth of July, cowpeled by maryage vnto the forenamed Charles ſonñ vnto the kyng. After whyche ſolempnyte kynyſſhed/ the ſayd Lewys kelyng hys ſykeneſſe more and more encreaſyng/ vppon a ſeaſon called hys ſayd ſonñ Charles before hym, and exorted hym in thys wyſe as after foloweth. My mooſte derȳſt chylde, I feele & knowe well ȳ I ſhall nat tary longe in thys countrey/ for I am more neter myne ende than thou knoweſt. For I am ſo contynually greuyd wyth ſykeneſſe, that no medecyne may or can releue me. And thou art he that muſte rule this lāde after me. wherfore to the it is ſpecyally behoueful & neceſſary, to haue trewe ſeruaūtes. Amonge many ȳ I haue proued in my dayes/ ii. there ben, the whych I ſpecyally cōmende vnto the / that is to meane Olyuer Dauman, and Johñ Doyacos. whoſe ſeruyces I haue in ſuche wyſe vſed, that by theyr meanes and counſayll I thynke my lyfe hath ben longe preſerued. And therefore ſpecially theſe. ii. kepe nere about ȳ, nothynge mynyſſhyng to them of theyr offices or poſſeſſyons, that I before tymes to them haue gyuen. And after theſe ii/ take to the for thy counſaylours, Guyot & Bochage / & for to guyde ȳ warres, Phylyp Deſquyer/ ȳ whych in featys of warre as I haue wel proued, hath paſſyng experiēce. And other which I haue auaūced to offyces within thys realme/ lette them ſo remayne. And the commons of the lande, the whych by occaſyō of warres I haue greuouſly tarid & greatly weked & enpouryſſhed/ ſocoure and fauour to thy power. To the Burgonyōs me thought euer good to ſhew fauoure/ or elles me thought it ſhuld haue ſounded to my dyſhonour. So I thynke it ſhalbe good that thou ſo do. After that kyng Lewys had thus exorted and counſayled hys ſonñ/ he than retourned vnto Turon.

The wordes of kyng Lewys dyenge to his ſonne.

Ym. iiii. where

where for the mytygacyon of thys paynfull sykenesse, whyche of myne auctour is called in latyne Morbus Elephantic / he commaunded to be brought before hym all the cunnyng maysters of musyke wythin hys realme, that by the melodyous soūde of theyr instrumentes, he myghte be eased of his peyne. But whan he had assembled of the best an .C. and .xx. in noumber / a fewe shepardes pypes were to hym more solace, than all the other or any parte of them / ꝑ whych he helde styll in hys court, & commaūded that euery day the sayd shepherdes shulde play a certeyn dystaunce from the place where he laye. And ouer thys he sent for all ankers and other relygyous men that were famed for holy & parfight men / and for them ordeyned places within Turō, that by the meane of theyr prayers he myght be released of hys contynuall paynes. And to haue lenger contynaunce of lyfe / myne auctour sayeth ꝑ thys Lewys had so greate a desyre to haue lengthe of lyfe / for so moche as he knewe well that the realme of Fraunce shulde be in great trouble, & veracyon shortly after. But nat wythstandynge all these prouysyons and ordenaunces, wyth many moo whyche longe were to wryte / fynally thys Lewys dyed, whā he hadde ben kyng of Fraūce by the terme of .xxvi. yeres or there vppō / and after was buryed in the churche of our Lady of Raynes, where before tyme he prouyded hys sepulture, & in tyme of hys sykenesse laye in it a certayne season, whyle that certeyne orysons were ouer hym sayde.

Anglia.

¶ Edwarde the .iiii.

EDwarde the .iiii. of that name, son of Rycharde duke of yorke as before is touched / began hys reygne ouer ꝑ realme of Englād the .iiii. daye of Marche in the ende of the yere of grace, to reken after the churche of Englande .M.iiii.C.& .lx / and the .ii. yere of Lewys the .xii. thāne kynge of Fraunce. The whych Edwarde after hys possessyon takynge at westmynster & gettyng of the feelde at Toutō by yorke, was crowned & anoynted for kynge at westmynster forsayde, the .xxix. daye of Juny, as before is shewyd in the ende of the laste yere of Henry the .vi. After whyche solempnyte fynysshed / the kynge in August after rode to Cauntorbury / & from thēs he rode to Sandewyche / and from thens a longe by the sees syde to Southamptō / & so in to the march of walys / & retourned by Brystowe, where he was wyth all honour receyued / and after visited sundry parties of hys realme. In whych season or soone after, the tyme of Rychard Lee mayre of Lōdon erryzed / and Hughe wyche mercer was admytted for the yere folowynge.

Anno dñi .M.iiii.C.lxi.

Hughe wyche.

Anno dñi .M.iiii.C.lxii.

Johñ Looke.

Anno .i.

George Irelande.

THis yere beyng the later ende of the fyfte yere of Edwarde the .iiii., and the begynnynge of thys mayres yere, that is to say the fourth daye of September / a parlyamente was begonne at westmynster. And

vpon

vpon ỹ morow folowyng dyed Johñ duke of Northfolke/ the whyche had ben a speciall ayder of the kyng. And vpō Allhalowen daye before passed/ ỹ kyng created Richarde hys yonger brother duke of Glouceter, the lorde Bowchyer erle of Esser, & the lorde Fawcumbrydge erle of Kent/ & vpon the.xii. day of February, was the erle of Orenforde, wyth the lorde Aubry hys elder sonne, syr Thomas Todēham, willyā Tyrell, & other, brought vnto the towre of Lōdon. And vpon the.xx. day of the sayd moneth, ỹ sayd lorde Awbry was drawen from west mynster vnto the towre hylle, & there beheded. And vpon the.xxiii. daye of the same moneth/ syr Thomas Todē ham, wyllyā Tyrell, and Johñ Mōgomory, were also there beheded.

And vpon the frydayp next ensuynge, or the.xxvi. daye of the sayd moneth/ the erle of Orenforde was ladde frō westmynster vpon hys feete to ỹ sayd place of , & there also beheded. whose corps was after borne vnto ỹ frere Augustynes / and there buryed wythin the quyer for that tyme. And in the later ende of the moneth of July/ was the castell of Awnewyke yelden vnto the lorde Hastynges by appoyntement.

whan kynge Edwarde was thus stablysshed in this realme/ great sute and labour was made to hym for the repayment of the forsayd .xviii.M. li. to hym and other delyuered by the stapelers, as before in ỹ.xxxviii. yere of Henry the.vi. to you I haue before shewed. wherof was labourer, were it by the agrement of the sayd stapelers or otherwyse, one named Richarde Heyron a marchaunt, of pregnaunte wyt and of good maner and speche. To whome at length was answered by the kynges counsayll, that ỹ sayd xviii.M. pounde wyth moche more the whyche was couertly kept frome the kynges knowlege, belonged of ryght vnto ỹ erle of wylshyre/ which at the tyme of delyuery of the sayde goodes, was hyghe treasourer of Englande/ and after for treason by him done agayne the kyng, the sayd erles landes and goodes were forfayted vnto the kynge. wherfore the kynge retayned the sayde.xviii.M.li. as parcell of hys forfayture, & wolde reteyne as hys owne. Upon whych answere/ thys heyron seynge that of the kyng he myght haue no remedy, and for so moche as moch of the sayd good belonged to hys charge, he thā resorted vnto the stapelers for contē tacyon of the sayd money. But howe it was that there he fāde no comfort/ he fynally sued the mayer of the staple and hys company, and put them vnto greate veracyon and trouble. And in the ende fande suche fauoure in the courte of Rome/ that he denoū ced all the marchauntes stapelers accursed. Howe be it that soone after they purchased an absolucyon. And he in conclusyon after longe beyng i westmynster as a seyntwary man / wythoute recouery of hys costes or dutye, dyed there, beynge greatly endetted vnto many persones.

Anno domini.M.iiii.C.lxii. Anno domini. M.iiii.C.lxiii.

wyllyam Hampton.

Thomas Cooke. Anno.ii.

Barth Jamys.

THys yere and begynnyge of ỹ moneth of Nouember/ Margaret late quene of Englād came out of Fraūce ito Scotlād & frō thēs ito Englande

Englande, wyth a strength of frēch men & Scottes, wherfore the kynge sped hym into the north wyth a strōg hoste. wherof herynge the quene/ brake hyr araye and fled / and toke a carvple, & therein entended to haue sayled into Fraūce. But suche tempest fell vpon the see, that she was cō strayned to take a fysshers bote / and by meane therof landed at Barwyke, & so drewe hyr vnto the Scottysshe kynge. And shortly after her lādyng tydynges came to her, that her sayde carvyll was drowned, wythin the whyche she had greate treasoure and other rychesse.

And the same daye vpon. iiii. C. of the Frenchemen were dryuen vppon lande nere vnto Bambourth. where they for so moche as they myght nat haue away theyr shyppes, they fyred thē/ & after for theyr sauegarde tooke an ilande wythin Northumberland. where they were assayled of one called Maners wyth other in hys company/ & of them slayne & taken prisoners as many as there were. whan ỹ kynge was ware of the quenes thus auoydynge/ he entēted to haue followed, & to haue made warre vpon the Scottes. But he was than vysyted with the sykenes of pockes, ỹ he was forced to leue that iournay. In the weke of Crystemas folowynge / the Scottes wyth a strōge power perced the lande, entendynge to haue rescowed certayne castelles in the north. But they retourned shortly wythout harme doynge.

And shortly after the duke of Somerset and syr Rauffe Percy, submitted them to the kynges grace.

whanne the kynge was cured & retourned southwarde/ the Scottes aboute the tyme of lent entred agayn into Englande/ & layde a syege vnto Banbourth castell and wanne it. wherfore the kynge in the moneth of Auguste folowynge, rode agayne northewarde wyth hys power / and ouer that vytayled certayne shyppes in the west countre, & manned them, & sent them thyder to make warre vpon the see coost.

And in the latter ende of this mayres yere / the duke of Somerset herynge that kynge Henry was commynge into the lande wyth a newe strength, departed secretly/ & wente agayne to hym.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lxiii. Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lxiiii.

Robert Basset.

Mathewe Phylyp Goldsmyth. Anno. iii.

Thomas Muschampe.

IN this yere & moneth of May, whyche was in the begynnyng of the. iiii. yere of kyng Edwarde/ the lorde Johñ of Mountagu haupnge than the rule in the northe partyes, beynge warned of the commynge of Henry late kynge wyth a greate power out of Scotlande, assembled the Northynmen, and mette wyth hym about Exhm̄, and there skyrmysshed wyth ỹ Scottes, & at length wan ỹ victory of hys enemyes / and chased Henry so nere, that he wan from him certayne of hys folowers trapped wyth blewe veluet, and hys bycoket garnysshed wyth two crownes of golde and fret wyth perle and ryche stone.

He also toke at the sayd iourney ỹ duke of Somerset, the lorde Hunger forde, & the lorde Roos. whych sayde duke was shortly after put to deth at the sayd towne of Exhm̄ / & the other ii. lordes were soon after beheded at new

new caſtell. And other whyche were after that kyght taken in a wood faſt by, as ſyr Phylyp wētworth, ſyr Edmond Fiz knyghtes, Blacke Jaquis Johñ Bryce, & Thomas Hunt/were alſo put to deth at Erhñ foreſayd or Myddelham after ſome wryters/& ſyr Thomas Huſey knyght was beheded at yorke. And in the moneth of July next folowyng, the ſayde lorde Mountagu wyth ayde of hys brother erle of warwyke, wan by ſtrēgth the forenamed caſtel of Bamburgth/ wherin as one of the ſaid capitaynes was taken wyth other, ſyr Rauffe Gray/ whyche ſhortly after at yorke was drawen hanged & quartered.

In ſuch paſſe tyme in moſte ſecret maner vpon the fyrſte daye of May, kynge Edwarde ſpouſed Elizabeth late the wyfe of ſyr Johan Graye knyghte/ whyche before tyme was ſlayne at Towton or yorke felde. whych ſpouſayles were ſolempniſed openly in the morynge at a towne named Graſton nere vnto Stonyngeſtratforde. At whyche maryage was no perſones preſent, but the ſpouſe, the ſpouſeſſe, the duches of Bedford her mother, the preſte, two gentylwomen, & a yong mā to helpe the preeſte ſynge. After whyche ſpouſayles ended/ he wēt to bedde, & ſo taried there vpon.iii.or.iiii.houres/ and after departed and rode agayne to Stonyng ſtratforde, and came in maner as though he had ben on huntyng, and there went to bedde agayne. And wythin a daye or.ii.after, he ſente to Graſtoñ to the lorde Ryuers father vnto hys wyfe, ſhewyng to hym, that he wolde come and lodge wyth hym a certayne ſeaſon/ where he was receyued wyth all honoure, & ſo taryed there by the ſpace of foure dayes. In whyche ſeaſon ſhe nyghtely to hys bedde was brought, in ſo ſecrete maner that almooſte none but her mother was of counſayll. And ſo thys maryage was a ſeaſon kepte ſecrete after, tyll nedely it muſte be dyſcouered & dyſcloſed, by meane of other whyche were offered vnto the kyng, as the quene of Scottes & other. what oblyquy ran after of thys maryage, howe the kyng was enchaunted by the ducheſſe of Beforde, and howe after he wolde haue refuſed her wyth many other thynges concernynge thys matyer/ I here paſſe it ouer.

And thys yere was kynge Henry taken in a wood in the north countre by one named Cantlowe, and preſented to the kynge/ and after ſente to the towre, where he remayned longe after.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxiiii.

Johñ Tate.

Rauffe Joſſelyne Draper.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxv.

Anno.iiii.

Johñ Stone.

In this yere was a new coyne ordeyned by ỹ kyng, ỹ whyche was named ỹ Royall/ & was & yet is in value of.x.s̄.the halfe royal.v.s̄/& the ferthyng.ii.s̄.vi.d̄. And ouer ỹ he ordeyned ỹ ſecōd coyne of golde & named it ỹ angel, which was & yet is in value of.vi.s̄.viii.d̄/ & the half angel iii.s̄.iiii.d̄. He ordeyned alſo a newe coyne of grotes, halfe grotes, & pens whych were of laſſe weyght than the olde grote was by.viii.d̄.in an vnce. And thā was fyne golde auaūſed frō s̄.to.xl.s̄ an vnce/ & other vaſer goldes after ỹ rate. And ſyluer that before was at.viii.grotes and .xx.d̄.

an

an vnce, was hyghed to.xl.d. an vnce and.iii.s.ii.d.

And in thys mayres yere and begynnyng of the.v.yere, that is to say the.xxvi.day of May that yere whyt sonday/quene Elizabeth was crowned at westmynster wyth great solépnytie. At the whyche season at the towre/the nyghte before the coronacyon/amonge many knyghtes of the bathe there made, was as of that cõpany syr Thomas Cooke, syr Mathewe Philyp, syr Rauffe Josselyne, and syr Henry wauyr cytezyns of Lõdon thanne and there made knyghtes.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxv. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxvi.

Syr Henry wauyr.

Rauffe Verney Mercer. Anno.v.

wyllyam Constantyne.

IN thys yere, that is to saye the xi.daye of the moneth of Februaryr/was Elizabeth pryncesse and fyrste chylde of kyng Edward borne at westmynster. whose crystenynge was done in the abbaye wyth moste solempnyte. And the more, bycause the kynge was assured of hys physycyons that the quene was concepued wyth a prynce/and specyally of one named mayster Dominyk, by whose counsayll greate prouysyon was ordeyned for crystenynge of the sayde pryncc. wherfore it was after tolde, that thys mayster Dompnyk to the entente to haue greate thanke and reward of the kynge/he stode in the second chamber where the quene trauayled, that he myghte be the fyrste that shulde bryngc tydynges to the kynge of the byrth of the pryncc. And lastly whan he harde the chyld crye/he knocked or called secretly at ỳ chãber dore, and frayned what the quene had. To whome it was answered by one of the ladyes, what so euer ỳ quenes grace hathe here wythin/euer it is that a fole standeth there wythout. And so confused wyth hys answere/he departed wythoute sayngc of the kynge for that tyme.

Anno domini.M.iiii.C.lxvi. Anno domini.M.iiii.C.lxvii.

Johñ Browne.

Syr Johñ ponge Grocer. Henry Bryce. Anno.vi.

Johñ Stokton.

IN thys yere and moneth of ,dyed the forenamed Hẽry Bryce/and for hym was chosen immedyatly a sheryfe for thys yere Johñ Stokton. And in the moneth of Juny folowynge, were certayne actes and feates of warre doone in Smythfeld, betwene syr Antony wydeuple called lorde Scalys vpõ that one partye, and the bastarde of Burgoyne chalengour on that one partye. Of whych the lord Scalys wan the honour/for the sayd bastard was at the fyrste courle rennynge wyth a sharpe sperys ouerthrowen horse & man. whyche was by the rage of the horse of the sayd bastarde, and nat by violence of the strokẽ of hys enemy/& by a pyke of iron standyng vppon forepartc of the sadell of ỳ lord Scalys. wherwyth the horse beyng blynd of the bastarde was stryken into the nose thrylles, and for payne thereof mounted so hyghe vpon the hynder fete,

fete, that he fyll bakwarde. Upon the seconde daye they met there agayne vpon fote, and faughte wyth theyr ares a fewe strokes. But whan the kynge sawe that the lorde Scalys had auauntage of the bastarde, as ꝑ poynt of hys are in the vysour of his enemyes helmet, and by force therof was lykely to haue borne hym ouer: the kyng in hast cryed to such as had the rule of the felde, that they shulde departe them / and for more spede of the same, caste downe a warderer whych he than helde in hys hande/ & so were they departed to the honour of the lorde Scalys for bothe dayes. Upon the morow folowynge & the other dayes, were certayne actes of warre done betwene dyuers gentylmen of thys lande, and certayne of the sayd bastardes seruauntes. Of the whyche also the Englyshmen wan the honour. In thys yere also one named Johñ Derby alderman, for so moche as he refused to cary or to paye for the carryage awaye of a dede dogge lyenge at hys dore, & for vnsittynge langage whyche he gaue vnto the mayre/he was by a court of aldermen demed to a fyne of.l.poũde whyche he payde euery peny.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxvii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxviii.

Humfrey Heyforde.

Thomas Owlegraue. Anno.viii.

Thomas Stalbroke.

In thys yere of the mayre, and in the begynnynge of the.viii. yere of thys kyng Edwarde, that is to meane vpon saterday next ensuig the feest of corpus chriſti/dame Margarete syster vnto the kyng, rode thorugh London towarde the sees syde to passe into Flaunders, there to be maryed to Charlys duke of Burgoyne before named in the story of ꝑ xi. Lowys kyng of Fraũce. After whose departure, syr Thomas Cook late mayre, which before was pecched of treason by a seruaũt of the lordes wenlokkes called Hawkyns, and at the request of the sayd lady Margarete vppon suertie suffered to go at large/than was arrested & sent vnto the towre, & his goodes seased by the lorde Ryuerse than tresourer of Englande/and hys wyfe put oute of hys house, and cõmytted to the charge of the mayer / in whose place sye laye a season after. And after the sayde syr Thomas had lyen a tyme in ꝑ towre he was brought vnto the Guyldhal, and there areygned of the sayde treason and quyt by sondry enquestes / & after that commytted vnto the countour in Bradstrete, and frome thens to the kynges bẽche in Southwark. where he laye wythin the sayd prysõ tyll hys freendes agreed wyth syr Johñ Brandon than kepar of ꝑ sayd prysõ, to take hym home to hys place where to hys great charge he remayned as prysoner longe after. In whych tyme and season he lost moch good / for bothe hys places in the countre and also in London were vnder the gydynge of the sayde lordes Ryuers seruauntes, and of the seruauntes of syr Johñ Fogge than vndertresourer/the whych spoyled & dystroyed moche thynge.

And ouer that moche of hys iewelles and plate wyth great substaunce of the marchaundyse, as cloth of sylkes and clothes of aras, were dyscouered by suche persones as he hadde betaken the sayd goodes to kepe / & came to ꝑ treasourers handes, which

to the sayd syr Thomas was a great enemye. And fynally after many persecucyons and losses / was compelled as for a fyne sette vppon hym for offence of myspryson, to paye, vnto the kynge. viii. thousand pound. And after he hadde thus agreed, and was at large for the kynges interest/ he was thanne in newe trouble agayne the quene.

The whyche demaunded of hym as hys tyght, for euery thousande. li. payde vnto the kyng by way of fyne, an hundreth marke. For the whiche he had after longe sute and greate charge/and in conclusion was fayne to agre, and to gyue to her a greate pleasure/beside many good gyftes that he gaue vnto her counsayll.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lviii.

wyllyam Taylour Grocer.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lix.

Symonde Smyth.

Anno. viii.

wyllyam Harpot.

THys yere and. xxi. day of Nouẽbre/a seruaunt of the dukes of Exceter named Rychard Steryns, after hys iugement was drawen thorugh the citie vnto the towre hyl, and there parted in two pesys / that is the hede from the body. And vpon the daye folowynge / two persones beyng named the one Poynys & that other Alforde, were drawẽ westward to tyborne/and there whã they shuld haue ben hanged, there chartours were shewed and so preserued.

And about thys season or soon after/was the erle of Drenford, which before tyme was taken by a surmyse in ielosy of treason awayted for and after deliuered. In the latter ende of this mayres yere, s. ix. yere of ỹ king/ the marchauntes eesterlynges were condempned vnto the marchauntes auenturers Englysshe, after longe & sumptuous expences in the lawe & before the kynges counsayll / in. xiii. M. v. C. and. xx. li. whereof the payment was kept secret frome wryters.

In thys yere the dyssymuled fauoure, whiche betwene the kyng and the erle of warwyke had styll contynued syne the maryage of the quene, beganne to appere / in so moche that the erle wythdrewe hym frome the kynge, and confedered vnto hym the duke of Clarence that before hadde maryed hys doughter.

whereupon the commons of the north beganne to rebell, and chase theym a capytayne, whome they had named Robyn of Ryddysdale. The whyche dyd many feates / and lastly bare hym so wysely, that he & hys cõpany were pardoned of the kyng. In the which rumour and styrryng/ the lord Ryuers, and syr Johñ hys sonñ, that before had maryed the old ducheſſe of Northfolke, lyenge at a place by Charynge crosse called the Mwys, were taken by Lyncolñshyre men and brought vnto Northamtõ, and there beheded.

Anno domini. M. iiii. C. lix.

Rychard Lee Grocer.

Anno domini. M. iiii. C. lx.

Rychard Gardyner.

Anno. ix.

Robert Drope.

Thys

Thys yere soone after Alhalowen tyde, proclamacions were made thorugh the cytye of London, that the kynge hadde pardoned the Northyrnmē of theyr tyot / & aswell for the deth of the lorde Ryuers, as all dysplesures by them before that tyme done. And soone vppon thys, a new styrryng begā in Lyncolñ shyre wherof the occasyoner was the lorde wellys, as the same than went. For whome the kynge sent by fayre meanes, prompsyng hym to go safe and come safe as it was sayd. But trouth it is after hys commyng to the kyng had he before suche prompse or nat, he was shortly after beheded.

Than in February folowyng/ by medyacyon of lordes a treatye of vnytie and concorde was laboured betwene the kyng & hys brother and the erle of warwyke. For whyche cause the sayd erle came thanne vnto London. And shortly after came the sayd duke, as vpon shroue sondap folowyng. And vpon the thursday folowyng, the kynge & the sayde duke mette at Baynardes castell, where ꝑ ducheſſe of yorke theyr mother than laye. In the whyche passetyme ꝑ erle of warwyke was retourned to warwyke/and there gadered to hym such strēgth as he myght make, as it was reported.

And in Lyncolñshyre / syr Robert wellys sonne vnto the lorde wellys before put to deth, in thys whyle had also assembled a greate bend of men, & purposed to gyue the kyng a felde. Of all whyche tydynges whāne the kynge was assertayned/he wyth his sayd brother the duke spedhim northwarde/and in that whyle sente to the sayd syr Robert wellys, wyllyng him to sende home hys people, & come to hym, and he shulde haue hys grace. But that other answered that by like prompsse hys father was dyscepued/ and that shulde be hys example. But in conclusyon whan the kynge wyth hys power drewe nere vnto hi, he toke suche fere that he fledde/ and soone after was taken, and with him syr Thomas Dymmok knyght and other, the whyche were shortly after put to deth.

In thys season was the duke of Clarence departed frome the kynge/ and was gone vnto the erle of warwyke to take hys parte. To whome the kynge in lykewyse sente, ꝑ they shuld come to hys presence wythout fere/ where vnto they made a fayned answere. And than consyderynge theyr lacke of power agayne ꝑ kyng/ departed and wente to the see syde, & so sayled into fraunce/and requyred the.xi. Lowys than kyng of that regyon, that he wolde ayde and assyste them to restore kynge Henry to hys ryghtfull enherytaunce. wherof the sayd Lowys beyng gladde, graūted vnto them theyr requeste/& helde thē there, whyle they wyth the counsayll of quene Margarete proupded for theyr retourne into Englande.

whan the sayde lordes were thus departed the lande/the kyng cōmaūded them to be proclayned as rebelles and traytours thorugh oute hys realm. And in the Easter weke folowynge/syr Geffrey Gate & one named Claphā, whyche entended at Southampton to haue taken shyppynge & to haue sayled to the sayde lordes, were there taken by the lorde Hawarde and sente vnto warde. whych sayde Clapham was beheded soone after/and the sayde syr Geffrey Gate fande suche frendshyp, that lastly he escaped or was delyuered/ so that he yode after to seyntwary.

Thanne was the lorde of sayncte Johns arrested. But at instaunce of the archebyshop of Caunterbury, he went a season at large vnder suerty,

and was fynally committed to the towre. In whych passetyme the erle of Orenforde gat ouer vnto the fore sayd lordes. Thus endurynge thys trouble/a stirrynge was made in the north partyes by the lord Fitz Hugh wherfore the kyng sped hym thyderwarde. But so soone as the sayd lord knewe of the kynges cõmyng/anone he lefte hys people & fledde into Scotlande. And the kyng whych thã was commyn to yorke, rested hym a season there and there about.

In the moneth of September & .x. yere of the kyng/the forsayd duke of Clarence accõpanyed wyth the erles of warwyke of Penbroke & of Orenforde & other many gentylmen, landed at Dartmouth in Deuynshyre/& there made theyr proclamacyons in the name of kyng Henry the.vi/ and so drewe ferther into the lãde. wherof herynge the commons of that coũtre & other/ drewe vnto theym by greate companyes.

Than the Kentyshemen beganne to were wylde/& assembled theym in great companyes, and so came vnto the out partyes of the cytye of London, Radclyffe, sayncte Katherynes, and other places, & robbed and spoyled the Flemynges and all the bere houses there as they came.

Thã the forsayde lordes holding on theyr iournaye/drewe towarde ꝑ kynge beyng in the north as aboue is sayde. wherof he beyng warned, and hauyng wyth hym as than but small strength wherof some to hym were nat very trusty/he wyth a secret company toke the next waye toward the walsh in Lyncolneshyre/and there passed ouer wyth great daunger, nat wythout losse of dyuers of hys company/and so passed the coũtrees into Flaunders, and stynted nat tyll he came to Charles hys brother thanne duke of Burgoyne/wyth whome he rested a season. whã the quene which than was in the towre harde of the kynges auoydynge/anone she departed frome thens and yode vnto westmynster, and there regystred her selfe for a seyntwary woman/ and in lyke wyse dyd many of kynge Edwardes frendes.

And than about the begynnynge of Octobre/syr Geffrey Gate that till that tyme had holden the sayde seyntwary and other wyth hym, wente vnto the prysons aboute London/ & all suche as they had fauoure vnto, toke them out and sette them at lyberte. And than shypmen & other euyll dysposed persones as than drewe to the sayd Geffrey Gate/robbed agayn the bereholes, & set some of them in fyre/ and after resorted vnto the gates of the cytye, & there wolde haue entred by force. But the cytezeyns wythstode theym wyth suche force, that they were compelled to departe thens.

Upon the.xii. day of October, the towre was gyuẽ vp by appoyntmẽt/ & kyng Henry was takẽ from the lodgyng where he before laye, and was than lodged in the kynges lodgyng wythin the sayde towre. In whyche passetyme the duke & the forsayd lordes drewe nere vnto the cytye.

And vpon saterday than nexte folowyng/the sayd duke accompanied wyth ꝑ erles of warwyke & of Shrowsbury and the lord Stanley, rode vnto the towre/ and there wyth all honour and reuerence set out kynge Henry, & conueyed hym to Poulys/& there lodged hym in the bysshoppes palays/ & so was thã admytted & taken for kyng throughout all the lande.

Readoptio Henrici. vi.

HEnri ꝑ. vi. of that name before by Edwarde ꝑ. iiii. put down, was

was agayne restored to the crowne of Englande, the. daye of Octobre, in the yere of grace .M.iiii. C.lxix/ and the.x. yere of Edwarde ỹ iiii / & the.xii. yere of the.xii. Lowys than kynge of Fraunce.

In whose begynnyng of readopcyon, the erle of worceter whych for hys cruelnesse was called the bochier of England/was taken and putte in strevght prison. And vppon the xv.daye of October, was the sayde erle aregned at westmynster in the whyte hall, and there endyted of treason/and vpon the mõdaye folowyng adiuged that he shulde go frome the same place vnto the towre hylle, and there to haue hys hede smytten of. But as he was commynge from the sayde place of iugemente toward his execucyon/the people preseyd so inportunatly vpon hym for to se & beholde hym, that the sherefes were fayne to tourne into the Flete, and there to bo rowe gayoll for hym for that nyght. And vpon the morowe after at after noone beynge saynt Lukys day and xviii.daye of Octobre/ he was ladde to the towre hylle/ where he toke his deth full pacientlv. whose corps was after borne wyth the hedde vnto the blacke freres, and there honourably buryed in a chapell standynge in the body of the churche whych he before tyme had founded. And than was dayly awaytynge vpon the see syde, for the landyng of quene Margaret and prynce Edwarde her sonne/ and also prouysyon made for the defence of landynge of kynge Edwarde and hys company.

Anno domini .M.iiii.C.lxx. Anno domini. M.iiii. C.lxxi.

Johñ Croslby. Anno Henrici.vi.primo.

Johñ Stoktoñ.mercer.

Johñ warde. Anno Edwardi.iiii.x.

In thys yere, whyche was in ỹ ende of the.x.yere of kyng Edwarde, and beginnyng of the readopcion of kyng Henry, that is to meane the thyrde daye of Nouembre/quene Elizabeth beynge as before is sayde in westmynster seyntwary, was lyghted of a fayre prynce. And wythin the sayd place the sayd chylde wythout pope was after crystened. whose godfathers were the abbot & pryour of the sayd place, & the lady Scrope godmother. And the.xxvi.daye of the sayd moneth folowyng, began a parlyament/ & frome thens proroged to Paulys, where it cõtynued tyll Crist mas. In the parlyamente syr Thomas Cooke before trowbeled as I haue shewed in the.vii.yere of kynge Edwarde, put in a byll into the common house, to be restored of the lorde Ryuers landes & other occasyoners of hys trowble, to the summe of.xxii. M.marke. Of the whyche he hadde good comforte to haue ben allowed of kynge Henry, if he had prosvered/ and the rather, for that that he was of the commõ house, and therwyth a man of great boldnesse in speche and well spoken, & syngulerly wytted & well reasoned.

Than durynge thys parlyament/ kyng Edward was proclaymed dsurper of the crowne, and the duke of Glouceter hys ponger brother traytour/ & both attaynted by auctorytie of the sayd parlyament.

And vppon the.xiiii.daye of Febzuary, came the duke of Exceter to London. And the.xxvii. daye of ỹ sayde moneth, rode the erle of warwyke thorugh ỹ citie toward Douer

for to haue receyued quene Margarete/but he was dyspoynted. For the wynde was to her contrary, that she laye at the see syde tarryeng for a conuenyent wynde, from Nouember tyl Apryll. And so the sayde erle after he had longe tarryed for her at the see syde/ was fayne to retourne without spede of hys purpose.

Thus duryng thys queysy season/ the mayre ferynge the retourne of kynge Edwarde fayned hym syke/ & so kepte hys house a great season. All whych tyme syr Thomas Cooke whyche than was admytted to hys former rome, was sette in his place, and allowed for hys deputye/whych tourned after to hys greate trowble and sorowe.

Than fynally in the begynnynge of the moneth of Apryll / kynge Edwarde landed in the north at a place called Raynspore wyth a small cõpany of Flemynges and other, so þ all hys company exceded nat the nõber of .M. persones / & so drewe hym towarde yorke, makyng hys proclamacyons as he wente in the name of kyng Henry / and shewed to the people, that he came for none entent but onely to clayme hys enheritaunce þ dukedome of yorke / & so passed the countres tyll he came to the cytye of yorke, where the cytezyns helde hym oute tyll they knew hys entent. And whan he had shewed vnto theym as he before had done vnto other, & confermed it by an othe/he was there receyued and refresshed for a certayne tyme, & so departed & helde his waye towarde London / and passed by fauoure & fayer wordes the daũger of the lorde Marquys Mountagu, whyche in that costes laye than in awayte for hym purposely to stoppe hys way, & had people dowble of nõbre that kyng Edwarde had of fygh tynge men. whã kyng Edwarde was thus passed the sayd Marquys, and sawe that hys strength was greatly amended, & that also dayly the peple drewe to hym/ he than made proclamacyons in hys owne name as kyng of Englande/ & so helde on hys iournay tyll he came vnto London. In whyche passetyme, that is to meane vpon sherethursdaye / the archebysshoppe of yorke beynge than at London wyth kyng Henry, to the entent to moue the peoples hertes towarde þ kyng/rode about the towne wyth hi, and shewed hym to the people / the whyche rather withdrewe mẽnes hertes than other wyse. And in thys season also syr Thomas Cooke before-named auoyded the lande/ entẽdyng to haue sayled into Fraunce. But he was taken of a shyp of Flaunders, & hys sonne & heyre wyth hym / and so sette there in pryson many dayes / & lastly was delyuered vnto kyng Edwarde.

Than vpon sherethursdaye at afternoone, kynge Edwarde was receyued into the cytye / and so rode to Poulys, and there offered at þ roode of the north doze/and that done yode incontynently into the bysshoppes palays, where he fande kynge Henry almoste alone. For all such lordes and other as in the morynge were about hym, whan they harde of king Edwardes commynge, anone they fledde, and euery man was fayne & gladde to saue hym selfe. Than king Edwarde lodged hym/ where kynge Henry laye, & put hym vnder safe kepynge/ and soo rested hym there tyll Easter euyn. Upon the whyche euyn, heryng of hys brothers cõmynge & þ other lordes wyth hym wyth a strõg hoste vnto saynt Albons / sped hym thyderward, & lay that nyght at Barnet. In whyche season the duke of Clarence contrary hys othe and promyse made vnto the frenche kynge,

kynge refused the tytle of kyng Henry/and sodaynly wyth the strengthe that he hadde, rode streyghte vnto hys brother kynge Edwarde/ wherwith the other lordes were somdeale abashed. The whyche not wythstandynge/the sayd lordes, by the specyall comforte and exortacyon of the erle of Oxenford as it was sayde, helde on theyr iournay toward Bernet, the sayd erle of Oxenford beyng in the vawarde / and so came vnto ỳ playne without Bernet, and there pyght theyr felde. Then vpon ỳ morowe beynge Easter daye & the. xiiii. daye of Apryll very erly, both hostes mette. wherupō that one party were two knyges present, as Hēry the. vi. whych kynge Edward had brought thyder with hym, and kyng Edward the. iiii. And vpon that other partye was the duke of Exceter, the lorde Marquys Mountagu, and the two erlys of warwyke and of Oxenford, wyth many other men of name.

There the sayd erle of Oxenforde and his company quyt them so manfully, that he bare ouer that parte of the feeld whyche he sette vppon,/ so ferforthly ỳ tydynges came to London, that kynge Edwarde had loste the felde. And yf hys men had kepte theyr araye & not fallen to ryflyng/ lykely it hadde bene as it was after tolde, that the victory hadde fallen to that partye. But after longe and cruell fyght, in conclusyon kyng Edwarde optayned the vpper hande, & slewe of hys ennemyes the marques Mountagu and the erle of warwyk hys brother, wyth many other. And vpon the kynges party was slayne the lorde Barnes. And of the comōs vpon bothe partyes were slayne vpon. xv. C. men and mo.

Of the mystes and other impedymentes whyche fyll vpon the lordes party by reason of the incantacyons wrought by fryer Būgey as ỳ fame wēt, me lyst not to wryte. But trouth it is that after thys victory thus wonne by kynge Edwarde/ he sente the dede corps of the sayd Marquys and erle of warwyke vnto Poulys chyrche / where they laye two dayes after naked in .ii. coffyns that euery man myghte beholde and se theym. And the same after-none came kyng Edwarde agayn vnto London, and offered at ỳ roode of the Northdore at Poulys/and after rode vnto west mynster and there lodgyd hym. And soone after that the kynge was thus passed thorough the cyty, was kyng Henry brought rydynge in a longe gowne of blewe veluet / and so conueyed thorough the Chepe vnto west mynster, and frome thens vnto the Towre/where he remayned as prysoner all hys lyues tyme after.

The repossessyon of Edwarde the. iiii.

EDward the. iiii. before named began agayne his dominyon ouer the realme of England, the. xiiii. daye of Apryll, in ỳ begynnyng of the yere of our lord. M. iiii. C. lxxi/ & the. xii. yere of Lewys the Frenche kynge / and repossessed all thynges as he before hadde done. And when the sayde two corps hadde lyen in Poules openly from the Sondaye tyll the Tuysdaye / they were hadde from thens & buryed where ỳ kynge wolde assygne them.

The kynge then beynge in authorite/made prouysyon for the defence of the landynge of quene Margaret and hyr sonne / the whyche all thys whyle laye at the see syde tarynge the wynde / and so lastely landed at , and came with a strengthy of Frenchmē & other, as farre within

the lande as to a vyllage in called Tewkysbury. where the kyng mette wyth her and hyr dystressyd, & chasyd her company and slewe many of them. In the whyche batayle she was taken, & syr Edward her sonne/ and so brought vnto the kynge. But after the kynge had questyoned with the sayd syr Edwarde, and he hadde answered vnto hym cõtrary his pleasure/ he thenne strake hym wyth hys gauntelet vpon the face. After whiche stroke so by hym receyued/ he was by the kynges seruauntes incõtynently slayne vpon the. iiii. daye of the moneth of May.

whan kynge Edwarde had thus subdued hys enemyes/ anone he sent quene Margarete vnto London, where she restyd a season/ and fynally she was sent home into her countre. And the goodes of syr Thomas Cook were agayne ceasyd / and hys wyfe put forth, and commaunded to be kepte at the mayers.

Vppon the. xiiii. daye of May folowynge / the bastarde of Fawconbrydge, that vnto hym had gaderyd a ryottous and euyll dysposyd companye of shypmen and other, wyth also the assystence of ỹ comons both of Essex and of Kent/ came in greate multytude vnto the cyty of London. And after that the sayd cõpany was denyed passage thorough the cytye/ they set vpõ dyuers partyes therof, as Bysshoppes gate, Algate, Londõ brydge, and alonge the waters syde, and shotte gonnes and arowes, and fyred the gates wyth cruell malyce, as Bysshops gate and Algate/ and caught so fyersly that they wanne ỹ bulwerkes at Algate, and entred a certayne wythin the gate. But the cytesyns wyth comfort and ayde of Robert Basset alderman assygned to the gate/ wythstode the sayd rebelles so manfully, that they slewe all such as entred the gate / and compellyd ỹ other to drawe a backe and forsoke the gate. Vppon whom the cytesyns pursued/ and chased theym vnto the forther Stratforde, and slewe & toke many of them prysoners.

wherof herynge the other whyche assayled the other partes of the cytie, fledde in lyke wyse. whom the other cytesyns pursued as farre as Depforde, in sleynge and takyng of them prysoners in great nomber, and after them raunsomed as they hadde ben Frenchemen. And the bastarde with hys shyppmẽ were chasyd vnto theyr shyppes lyenge at Blackwall / and there in the chase many slayne. And the sayde bastarde the nyghte folowynge stale out hys shyppes out of ỹ ryuer/ and so departed and escaped for the tyme.

Than vpon Assencyon euyn nert ensuynge, the corps of Henry the. vi. late kynge was brought vnreuerently from the tower thorough the high stretes of the cyty vnto Poulys chyrche, and there lefte that nyght/ and vppon the morowe conueyed wyth gleyuys and other wepens as he before thyder was brought vnto Chertsley, and there was buryed.

Of the deth of this prince dyuers tales were tolde. But the moste comon fame went, that he was stycked wyth a dagger by the handes of the duke of Glouceter/ whyche after Edwarde the. iiii. vsurped the crowne, and was kyng as after shall appere.

Than kyng Edwarde after thys victory thus hadde at Tewkesbury, retourned vnto London / and vpon the mondaye folowynge Assencyon daye, he toke hys iournay into Kent, hauyng with hym a strength of people/ and there sette hys iustyces, and made inquysycyons of the ryot before done by the bastarde and hys adherentes. For the whyche at Caunterbury

terbury and other good townes in Kent, dyuers were put in execucyon. Of whom the hedes were sent vnto London, and set vpon the brydge. And in lyke maner inquysycions were made in Essex/and some also of them put in execucyon. Of whyche a cappytayne named Spysynge was hanged, and hys hede set vpon Algate. And many of the ryche commons of Kent were set at greuous fynes, both for them selfe and for theyr seruauntes. And when the kyng hadde thus spedde his iournaye/ he retourned & came to Londō vpon whytsonenyn. And that done, soone after was bysshop Neuyll archebysshop of yorke sent vnto Guynes, and there kepte as prysoner longe after. Thys was brother to the lorde marquys Montagu and to the erle of warwycke.

Also in the ende of thys mayers yere, was the forenamed bastarde of Fawconbrydge taken about Southamton, and there put to execucyō. whose hed was sent to London, and pyght vpon London brydge among other.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lxxi. Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lxxii.

Johñ Aleyn.

wyllyam Edwarde Grocer. Anno.xi.

Johñ Chelley.

IN thys yere the erle of Orenforde, whych syn the season of Barnet felde hadde holden sayntē Myghellys mounte / was by an appoyntement taken thens, and shortely after sente to the castell of Guynes. where he remayned prysoner tyl the last yere of Rycharde the thyrde, whyche was vppon.xii. yeres. In all whyche season my lady hys wyfe myghte neuer be suffered to come to hym/nor hadde any thynge to lyue vpon, but as the people of theyr charytees wold gyue to her, or what she myghte get wyth her nedell or other suche connyng as she exercysed.

Anno domini. M.iiii.C.lxxii. Anno domini. M.iiii.C.lxxiii.

Johñ Browne.

wyllyam Hampton Fysshemonger. Anno.xii.

Thomas Bledlow.

IN thys yere vpon the fyrst day of October, beganne a parlyament at westmynster. By authorite wherof an ayde was graūted to the kynge, towarde the greate charge of hys warres/the whyche was leuyed of mennes landes, as well of lordes as other.

This mayre aboue all other, corrected sore bawdes & strumpettes/& caused theym to be ladde aboute the towne with raye hoodes vpon theyr heddes dyuers & many / and spared none for mede nor for fauour ỹ were by the lawe attayned / not withstandyng that he myghte haue taken. xl. li. of redy money to hym offered, for to haue spared one from ỹ iugemēt.

Anno.dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxiii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxiiii.

wyllyam Stocker.

Johñ Tate Mercer. Anno.xiii.

Robert Byllysdon.

In thys

In thys yere was the duke of Exceter foũden deed in the see bytwene Douer & Calays / but how he was drowned the certaynte is not knowen.

In thys mayers yere also was one wyllyam Oldhall condempned, vnto a draper of Londõ called Chrystofer Colyns. For the whych condempnacyon he remayned as prysoner in Ludgate. wherupõ a season he went at large wyth a keper/ he brake from hym, and so escaped / and after was taken and broughte agayne to the sayd prysone. But that not wythstandynge the sayde Chrystofer sued the sherysses, and caused them to spende great money in defendyng of hys accyon/and fynally were fayne by way of compremyse to gyue vnto hym an hundreth marke for hys duptye of lxxx.li. and odde.

And in thys yere was one Johñ Goos a loller brent at ỳ Tower hyll for heresye/the whyche before dyner was delyuered to Robert Bylyndon one of the sherysses to put in execucyon that same after none. wherfore he lyke a charytable man hadde hym home to his house, and there exorted hym that he shulde dye a crystenman and renye his fals errours. But that other after longe exortacyon herde, requyred the sherysse that he myghte haue mete / for he sayde that he was sore hungred. Then the sherysse commaunded hym mete / wherof he toke as he had apled nothynge / and sayd to suche as stode about hym: I eate now a good and competent dyner/ for I shall passe a lytle sharp shower or I go to souper. And when he had dyned he requyred that he myghte shortely be ladde to hys execucyon.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lxxiiii. Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lxxv.

Edmonde Shaa.

Robert Drop Draper Anno. xiiii.

Thomas Hylle.

This yere the kynge entendyng to make a vyage ouer see into Fraunce, called before hym his lordes seuerally bothe spyrytuall & temporall, to know theyr good myndes, what of theyr free wylles they wolde ayde and depart wyth hym to warde the sayd vyage. And after he hadde so knowen theyr good dysposycion to hym warde/he then sent for the mayre of London and hys brotherne the aldermen, and them seuerally crampned and exorted to ayde & assyst hym toward the sayd iournay. Of whyche the mayre for hys parte graunted. xxx. li/and of the aldermen some. xx. marke/and the leest. x. li.

And that done he sent for all the trusty comoners wythin the sayde cyrye/ and them exorted in lyke maner. whyche for the more party graũted to hym the wages of halfe a man for a yere. The whyche amounted to iiii. li. xi. s. iiii. d. And after ỳ he rode about the more parte of the lande, & vsed the people in such fayre maner, that he reysed therby notable sũmes of money. The whyche waye of the leuyeng of thys money was after named a benyuolence.

Then the kyng thus hauyng this greate substaunce of goodes, made puruepaunce for the sayd iournaye. And vppon the. iiii. daye of July folowyng, in the. xv. yere of his reygne rode with a goodly cõpany thorugh the cyrye towarde the see syde/ and so spedde hym to Caleys, and frome thens into Fraunce. wherof herynge Lewys the French kynge/assembled hys

hys people in greate nomber, and so spedde hym toward the kynge. But when bothe hostes were met/ within shorte space suche offers of a peas were proferyd by the Frenche kyng, that fynally bothe prynces agreed vpon a pease to be had for the terme of both theyr lyues, and a yere after, as some wryters haue. For the perfourmaunce of whyche sayde pease/ bothe prynces after met vpon ỹ day of the Decollacyon of saynte Johñ the baptyste or the. xxix. daye of Auguste, at a place named in Frenche Pynyak/and the. iiii. daye of Nouẽber as affermeth Gaguinus. But ỹ can not stande wyth/ for kynge Edwarde was receyued agayn into Lõdon after his retourne out of Fraũce the. xxviii. daye of September. At thys place was a ryuer / vppon the whych a brydge was made such wyse, that bothe prynces theron myght mete, wyth suche company as eyther for them had appoynted. There also was ordeyned a place with a partycyon betwene both prynces, ỹ nother of them myghte entre vnto other/ but made wyth a lowpe, that eyther myghte se other & take eyther other by the hande.

Where at the daye lympted, eyther mette wyth other hostes standynge a certayne distaunce from the ryuers syde in conuenyent araye. Then the sayde kynges there after salutacyon due made, eyther to other had longe cõmunycacyon. In conclusyon wher of, as sayth Gaguyne, a peas was cõfyrmed betwene bothe realmes for vii. yeres. For perfourmaũce wherof as affermeth the sayde authour/ the Frenche kynge gaue vnto kyng Edward incõtinently. lxxv. M. crownes of golde/and yerely after durynge ỹ sayde. vii. yeres. l. M. crownes. And so he receyued in hande accomptyng euery crowne at. iiii. s. xv. d. M. li. and yerely after. x. M. li/ whych sayde. xv. M. li. the sayd Frẽche kyng borowed of his cytesyns of Parys. After thys treuce and peas thus concluded betwene these two prynces/anone after theyr sonderyng, proclamacyõs were made therof thorough bothe hostes/ and commaundement gyuen to the capptayns, that they shulde prouyde for theyr retourne homewarde. And soone vppon the French kynge sent vnto the dukes of Clarence and of Glouceter with other lordes such as were in kynge Edwardes fauour, greate and costyous gyftes. Of the ryse and wanton dysgysed apparell that kyng Lewys ware vppon hym at that tyme of his metyng I myght make a longe reherfall. But for it shulde sownde more to dyshonour of suche a noble man, that was apparayled more lyker a mynstrell thã a prynce royall/therfore I passe it ouer. For all be it ỹ he was so newfangyll in his clothynge / yet had he many vertues. wherof largesse was one/as it appered by sondy gyftes, which he gaue vnto sõdry straũgers, which in his story somdeale I haue towchyd. And also his bounty apperyd by a gyfte ỹ he gaue vnto ỹ lorde Hastynges than lord chãberlayn/as xxiiii. dosen of bollys, wherof halfe were gylt & half whyte/which weyed vpõ. xvii. nobles euery cup or more.

Thẽ to retourne vnto kynge Edward/trouth it is ỹ after ỹ cõformacyon of ỹ forsayde peas, kynge Edward returned to Calys & there shypped/& so sped hym ỹ vpon the. xxviii. day of Septẽber folowynge, he was with great tryumghe receyued of the mayre & cytesyns of Londõ at Blakheth, & with all honour by them conueyed thorough the cytye vnto westmynster/the mayre and aldermen beynge cladde in scarlet, and the comoners to ỹ nomber of. v. C. in murrey.

Anno

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxv. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxvi.

Hugh Bryce.

Rober Baſſet Salter Anno.xv.

Robet Colwych

THys yere this mayre dyd ſharp correccyon vppon bakers for makynge of lyght brede / in ſo moch that he ſet dyuers vpon ỹ pyllory. Amonge the whyche in the moneth of Johñ Mondue baker was there punyſſhed. And in the moneth of one named wyllyã Hubbard was alſo there ſhryned for lyke offence. And a woman named Agnes Deynty was alſo there puniſſhed for ſelling falſe myngyd butter.

Anno domini.M.iiii.C.lxxvi. Anno domini.M.iiii.C.lxxvii.

Rycharde Rawſon.

Raufe Joſſelyn Draper. Anno.xvi.

wyllyam Horne.

IN this yere the mayre hauyng a great mynde to haue the walles of the cytye repayred / by a cõſente of the benche and of the comyn coũſayle, cauſed the Moore felde to be ſerched, and there prouyded for bryk & lyme. As fyrſte cauſed the erthe to be dyggyd and tempred, and then ſette men on werke to moolde / and thenne ſent into the weſt countre and there purueyed wode for to bren it. And that done ſente into Kent, and there purueyed chalke, that ſhortely was brought into the ſayde Moore felde. And ryght there in a kylle whych he in that ſeaſon hadde prouyded, was brent and made lyme of a great forthraunce of that werke.

The mayre then beynge purueyed of bryk and alſo of lyme, the whyche was brent within the ſayd moore / caused by conſent of a comen counſayle to be graunted, that in euery paryſſhe chyrche euery Sondaye, euery paryſſhon ſhulde paye toward the charge .v.d. And for an enſample to other felyſſhyppes / he cauſed his owne company to make as mych of the walle as ſtrechyth frome the chyrche of Alhalowen wythin the ſayde walle vnto Byſſhoppes gate. whyche preſydent cauſed other worſhypfull felyſſhyppes to make the other parter as now appereth newe made / and the more part therof done in thys yere by hys procurynge and calynge vppon of hym. whych was wonderfull that ſo mych ſhulde be ſpedde in one yere, conſyderynge the purueyaunce of the ſtuffe, whych had ben ſuffycyent for ſome man to haue purueyed for in an hole yere.

Anno.dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxvii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxviii.

Henry Colet.

Humfrey Heyforde Goldſmyth. Anno.xvii.

Johñ Stocker.

IN thys yere that is to meane the.xvii.daye of February, the duke of Clarence and ſeconde brother to the kynge thanne beynge pryſoner in the towre, was ſecretely put to deth and drowned in a barell of maluelye wythin the ſayde towre. And thys mayre thys yere purſued

alſo

also the reparacyon of the wallys/ but not so dylygently as hys predecessour dyd/wherfore it was not sped as it myghte haue bene. And also he was a syke and feble man, and had not so sharpe and quycke mynde as that other had. And one other cause was whych ensueth of a generalyte, that for the more partye one mayre wyll not fynysshe that thynge whych that other begynneth. For then they thynke be the dede neuer so good and profytable, that the honoure therof shalbe ascrybed to the begynner and not to the fynyssher. whyche lacke of charyte and desyre of veyn glory, causeth many good actes and dedes to dye and growe out of mynde, to ꝑ greate decaye of the comon weale of the cytye.

Anno.dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxviii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxix.

Robert Hardynge.

Rycharde Gardyner Mercer. Anno.xviii.

Robert Fyfelde.

In thys yere was great mortalyte and deth in London and many other partyes of thys realme/ the whyche began in the latter ende of Septẽber in the precedynge yere/ and contynued in thys yere tyll the begynnynge of Nouember. In the whyche passe tyme dyed innumerable people in the sayde cytye, & many places ellys where.

In this yere also the mayre beyng at Poules knelyng in hys deuocyõs at saynt Erkenwaldys shryne/ Robert Fyfelde one of the shyryffes vnsaufedly knelyd downe nyghe vnto the mayre. wherof the mayre after resonyd hym, & layde it to hys charge. But that other beynge somdele rude for lacke of connynge/ answered the mayre stubberuly, and wolde not be aknowe of hys offence. wherfore the mayre shewed hys behauour both of worde and dede vnto the benche/ by authoryte wherof after ꝑ mater had ben there at length debated, the sayd Robert was fyned at.l.pounde, to be payed towarde the reparacion of the conduytes.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxix. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxx.

Thomas Flam.

Bartylmewe Jamys Draper. Anno.xix

Johñ warde.

In this yere one called Robert Deynys, for that that he presumed to mary an Orphan wythout lycence of ꝑ mayre and aldermen, was for that offence demyd to paye to the chamber as a fyne.xx.li.

And in the yere and moneth of /were. iiii. felowes hanged at the Towre hylle / and incontynently theyr bodyes wyth the gybbet brent vnto asshes. whych execucyon was, for that they robbed a chyrche, and entreated the sacramẽt of the aulter inreuerently.

Anno domini.M.iiii.C.lxxx. Anno domini.M.iiii.C.lxxxi.

wyllyam Danyell.

Johñ Browne. Anno.xx.

wyllyam Bacon.

Do. Thys

THys yere kynge Edwarde requyred great ſũmes of money to hym to be lent of ꝑ cytezyns of London. To whom after dyuers aſſembles/they graũted to lende vnto hym .v. thouſande marke. For the leuyenge wherof, a man was choſen of euery ward/that is to meane.xxv. men. The whych.xxv.perſons aſſembled in the Guyldhalle, ſeſſyd all the cyty ouer wyth two perſons of euery paryſſhe to them aſſygned / whyche ſayd.v.thouſand marke was repayed in the yere folowynge.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxxi.

wyllyam Haryat Draper.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C. lxxxii.

Robert Cate.
wyllyam wykyng.
Rycharde Chawry.

Anno.xxi.

THys yere in the moneth of Febuary or ende of January, dyed wyllyam wykynge one of the ſheryffes/for whom was ymedyately choſen Rycharde Chawry. And in the moneth July folowynge, ꝑ kyng rode on huntynge in to the foreſt of waltham/ where he commaũded the mayre wyth a certayne of hys brotherne to come, & to gyue attendaũce vppon hym wyth certayne comeners of the cytye. where when they were comyn/ the kynge cauſed the game to be brought before them/ ſo ꝑ they ſawe courſe after courſe, and many a dere bothe rede & falowe to be ſlayne before them. And after that goodly dyſpoyte was paſſyd/ the kynge commaunded hys offycers to bryngе the mayre and hys company vnto a pleaſaũt lodge made all of grene bowys and garnyſſhed wyth tables & other thynges neceſſary/ where they were ſet at dyner, and ſerued wyth many deynty dyſſhes and of dyuers wynes good pleynty, as whyte rede and claret/and cauſed them to be ſet to dyner or he were ſerued of hys owne/ & ouer that cauſed the lorde chamberlayn wyth other lordes to hym aſſygned, to chere the ſayde mayre and his company ſondry tymes whyle they were at dyner/ & at theyr departynge gaue vnto them of benyſon greate pleynty. And in ꝑ moneth of Auguſt folowynge, the kynge of hys greate bounte ſente vnto the mayreſſe and her ſyſters aldermennes wyfes two hartes and .vi. buckes, wyth a tonne of wyne to drynke wyth the ſayd benyſon. The whyche benyſon & wyne was hadde vnto the drapers halle/ to whych place at a day aſſygned the mayre deſyred the aldermẽ and theyr wyfes wyth ſondry comoners / and there the benyſon wyth many other good dyſhes were etyn, and the ſayd wyne merely dronken. The cauſe of whyche bounty thus ſhewed by the kynge, was as moſte men toke it, for that that the mayre was a marchaũt of wonderous auentures into many and ſondry countrees. By reaſon wherof, the kynge had yerely of hym notable ſummes of money for hys cuſtomes, beſyde other pleaſures ꝑ he hadde ſhewed to the kynge before tymes.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxxii.

Edmonde Shaa Goldſmyth.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C. lxxxiii.

wyllyam whyte.
Johñ Mathewe.

Anno.xxii.

Thys

THis yere, that is to meane of ꝑ mayre and begynnynge of the xxiii.yere of the kynge / at weſt mynſter vppon the.ix.daye of Apryll dyed the noble pryncе Edwarde the iiii.late kynge of Englande. whoſe corps was after conueyed wyth due ſolemnyte vnto wyndſore, and there honourably buryed / when he hadde reygned to reken hys begynnynge out of the lande with all other tyme full.xxii.yeres, and as moch as from the.iiii.daye of Marche vnto the. ix. daye of Apryll/ leuynge after hym.ii. ſonnes, that is to ſay pryncе Edward hys eldeſt ſonne, and Rycharde duke of yorke/ and.iii.doughters, as Elyſabeth that after was quene, Cecyle, and Katheryne.

Edwarde the.v.

EDward the.v. of that name & ſonn̄ vnto Edwarde ꝑ iiii/ beganne hys reygne ouer the realm of Englād ꝑ.xi.day of Apryl in the beginnyng of the yere of our lord god.M.iiii.C. lxxxiii/ and the.xxiiii.yere of the.xi. Lewys than kynge of Fraunce.

Anone as kynge Edward the.iiii. was dede/ grudge and vnkyndneſſe beganne to take place bytwene the kynges and the quenes allye. For ꝑ lorde marquys of Dorſet brother vnto the quene and other of hys affynyte, hadde then the rule & keppyng of thys ponge kynge, whyche at the tyme of hys fathers deth was of the age of.xi.yere or there about/ and ſo beyng in hys guydyng in ꝑ Marche of walys, cōueyed hym toward London, and there to make prouyſyō for hys coronacyon and for other neceſſary thynges for hys weale. But the duke of Glouceter brother vnto Edward the.iiii. entendynge otherwyſe as after ſhall appere/ wyth a competent nōber of gentylmē of the North all clad in blacke, met with ꝑ kynge at Stonyngſtratforde/ & there after dyſſymuled countenaunce made bytwene hym & the forſayd Marquys, diſchargyd him of the rule of ꝑ king, and toke vpon hym the rule/ & ſo frō thens beynge accompanyed with the duke of Buckyngham, broughte the kynge with all honour toward London. wherof heryng quene Elyſabeth moder vnto the kyng/ feryng the ſequele of thys beſynneſſe, went or toke ſentwary within weſtmynſter wyth her yonger ſonne Rycharde the duke of yorke. And the kynge drawynge nere vnto the cytie/ vpon the.iiii.day of Maye, was of the mayre and hys cyteſyns mette at Harneſey parke/ ꝑ mayre and hys bretherne beynge clothed in ſcarlet, & the cyteſyns in vyolet to the nōber of.v.hondred horſes/ and than from thens conueyed vnto the cytye/ the kynge beynge in blewe veluet, and all hys lordes and ſeruaūtes in blacke clothe/ and ſo after cōueyed vnto the byſhoppes palays of London and there lodgyd. And ſhortely after the ſayd duke of Glouceter inueygled ſo the archbiſſhop of Caūterbury named Bowchyer/ that he went wyth hym to the quene Elyſabeth, and there made ſuche aſſured promyſe to the ſayde quene, that ſhe vppon the ſayd archbyſhoppes promyſe delyuered vnto them her yonger ſonne duke of yorke. And than the ſayde duke cauſed the kynge to be remoued vnto the towre, and hys brother with hym. But the quene for all fayre promyſes to her made / kept her and her doughters wythin the forſayde ſeyntwary/ and the duke lodged hym ſelfe in Croſbyes place in Byſſhoppeſgate ſtrete.

Than prouision was made for the kynges coronacyō. In whyche passe tyme the duke beynge admytted for lorde protectour / caused syr Antony wydupyle called lorde Scalys & bro ther vnto ỹ quene a vertuous knight wyth the lorde Rychardе the quenes sonne, syr Rychardе Hawte, and syr Thomas Vaghan knyghtes, to be beheded at Pountfreyt/more of wyll than of iustyce. Than the lorde Protectour in furtheryng of his purpose and cuyll entent / sente for the more partie of the nobles of the lāde / and behaued hym so couertly in all hys matyers, that fewe vnderstode hys wykked purpose. And so dayely kepynge & holdynge the lordes in coun sayll and felynge theyr myndes / so daynly vppō the.xiii.daye of Juny beynge wythin the towre in the coun sayll chambre wyth dyuerse lordes wyth hym, as the duke of Bukkyngham, the erle of Derby, the lord Hastynges thā lord Chāberlayne, wyth dyuerse other, an owte crye by hys assent of treason was made in the vtter chambre. wherwyth the sayd lorde Protectour beyng warned/ roose vp and yode hym selfe to the chaumber dore, and there receyued in such persones as he before had appoynted to execute hys malycious purpose. The The whych incontynently set hande vpon the forenamed lord Chamberlayne and other. In the whyche styrynge the erle of Derby was hurt in the face and kept a whyle vnder the holde. Than by cōmaundemente of the sayd lorde Protectour/ the sayde lord Chamberlayne in all haste was ladde in the court or playn where the chapell of the towre stādeth / & there wythout iugemēt or lōge tyme of cōfessyon or repentaūce, vpō an ende of a lōge & great tymber logge whyche there laye wyth other for the repayrynge of the sayd towre, caused hys hedde to be smyten of / and all for he knewe well that he wolde nat assente vnto hys wycked entent. whose body wyth the hed was after caryed vnto wyndesore, and there buryed by the tombe of kyng Edwarde.

After whyche cruelte thus done / he shortely after set in sure keppynge suche persones as he suspected to be agayne hym. wherof the bysshoppes of yorke & of Ely were.ii. as it is said And the erle of Derby for fere of hys sonne the lord Strange, lest he shuld haue arered Cheshyre & Lancastershyre agayne hym, was set at large.

Than began the lōge couert dyssymulacion, whyche of the lord Protectour had ben so craftly shadowed, to breke out at large / in so moche that vppō the sondaye folowyng at Poules crosse, hym selfe wyth the duke of Bukkyngham & other lordes beyng present, by the mouth of doctor Rafe Shaa in the tyme of hys sermon, was there shewed openly that ỹ chyldrene of kynge Edward the.iiii. were nat legytymat, nor ryghtfull enheritours of the crowne/ wyth many dyssaunderous wordes in preferryng of the tytle of the sayd lord Protectour and in dysanullynge of the other / to the greate abucion of all the audiēce, excepte suche as fauoured the mater whyche were fewe in noumbre, yf the trouth or playnesse myghte haue ben shewed.

Of the whyche declaracyon as the fame wente after / the sayde doctour Shaa toke suche repentaunce, that he lyued in lyttell prosperytie after. And the more he was wondered of, that he wolde take vppon hym suche a besynesse, consyderynge that he was so famous a man bothe of hys lernynge and also of naturall wytte. Than vppon the tuysdaye folowynge/ an assemble of the cōmons of the cytye was appoynted at the Guyldhalle.

Guyldhalle. where beynge p̄sent the duke of Buckyngh̄ wyth other lo̅des sente downe frome the sayde lo̅de p̄tectour/and there in the p̄sence of the mayo̅r and comynaltye, reherced the ryght and tytle that the lo̅de P̄tectour hadde to be p̄ferred before hys of hys brother kynge Edwarde, to the ryght of the crowne of Englande. The whyche p̄cesse was in so eloquent wyse shewed and vttred wythout any impedyment of spyttynge o̅r other countenaunce, and that of a longe whyle, wyth so great sugred wo̅des of exho̅tacyon and acco̅dynge sentence, that many a wyse man that day merueyled and commended hym fo̅r the good o̅derynge of hys wo̅des, but not fo̅r the entent and purpose the whyche theruppon ensued.

Vppon the Thursdaye than next ensuynge beynge the.xx. daye of Juny / the sayde P̄tectoure takynge then vppon hym as kynge and gouernour of the realme / went wyth great pompe vnto westmynster, and there toke possessyon of the same. where he beynge sette in the greate halle in the See royall, wyth ꝑ duke of No̅rfolke before called the lo̅de Hawarde vppon the ryght hande, & the duke of Suffolke vppon the left hande/after the royall othe there taken, called before hym the iudges of the lawe/gyuynge vnto them a long exho̅tacyon and strevght cōmaunde mēt, fo̅r ꝑ mynystryng of hys lawes, and to execute iustyce, and that with out delaye. After whyche possessyon takynge, and other ceremonies there done/he was conueyed vnto the kynges palays wythin westmynster and there lodgyd.

In whyche passe tyme, the p̄ynce o̅r of ryght kynge Edwarde the. v. wyth hys brother the duke of yo̅rke, were put vnder suer keppynge wythin the towre/in suche wyse that they neuer came abrode after.

And thus ended the reygne of Edwarde the. v/when he had borne the name of a kynge by the space of two monethes and.xi. dayes. And vppon the Frydaye beynge the.xxii. daye of Juny was the sayd lo̅d P̄tectour p̄claymed thorough the cyty kyng of England, by the name of Rychard the thyrde.

Then soone after for fere of the quenes blode and other whyche he had in ielousy/he sent fo̅r a strength of men out of the North. The which came shortely to London a lytell before hys coronacyon/and mustred in the More feldes well vppon.iiii.M. men in theyr beste iackes and rusty salattes, wyth a fewe in whyte harneys not burnysshed to the sale/ and shortely after hys coronacyon were countermaunded home wyth suffycyent rewardes fo̅r theyr trauayll.

In whyche forsayd passe tyme/ꝑ Marquys of Dorset brother vnto quene Elysabeth ꝑ before was fled, escaped many wonderfull daungers bothe about London, Ely and other places/wherof, to wryte the maner & cyrcumstaunce wolde aske a longe and great leysour.

Rychard the thyrde.

RIchard ꝑ thyrde of that name, sonne to Rychard late duke of yorke, & yongeste brother vnto Edwarde ꝑ iiii. late kynge/began his dompynō ouer the realme of Englande the. xx. day of mydsomer moneth, in the yere of our lorde god. M.CCCC. lxxxiii. & the.xxv. yere of the.xi. Lewys than kynge of Fraūce. Of whom tedyous

it is to me to wryte the tragedyous hystory/excepte that I remẽber that good it is to wryte and put in remẽbraũce the punyshement of synners, to the ende that other may eschew to fall in lyke daunger.

Than it folowth, anone as thys man had taken vpon hym / he fyll in great hatred of the more party of the nobles of hys realm/in so mych that suche as before loued and praysed hym, and wolde haue ieoparted lyfe and good wyth hym yf he hadde remayned styll as protectour, now murmured and grudged agayne hym/in suche wyse that fewe or none fauoured his partye, except it were for drede or for the great gyftes that they receyued of hym. By meane wherof he wanne dyuers to folow hys mynde/ the whiche after deceyued hym.

And after his coronacyon solẽpnysed, whyche was holden at westmynster the.vi. daye of July, where also ỹ same daye was crowned dame Anne hys wyfe/he then in shorte processe folowynge rode Northward to pacyfye that countre, and to redresse certayne ryottes there lately done. In the passe tyme of which iournay/ he beynge at yorke created hys legyt tymat sonne prynce of walys/& ouer that made hys bastarde sonne cappytayne of Caleys, whyche encreaced more grudge to hymwarde as after shall appere.

Anno.dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxxiii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxxiiii.

Thomas Norland.

Rober Byllysdon Haberdasher. Anno.ii.

wyllyam Martyn.

IN this yere ỹ forsayd grudge encreasynge, and the more for as mych as the comon fame wente, that kynge Rycharde hadde within the towre put vnto secret deth ỹ two sonnes of hys brother Edwarde the iiii. For the whych and other causes hadde within the breste of the duke of Buckyngham/ the sayde duke in secrete maner conspyred agayn hym, and allyed hym with dyuers gentylmen, to the ende to bryng hys purpose about.

But how it was his entente was espyed and shewed vnto the kynge/ and the kynge in all haste sent for to take hym, he then beynge small accõpanyed at hys manour of Brekenok in the Marche of walys. wherof the sayd duke beynge ware, in all hast he fled frõ hys sayd manour of Brekenok vnto the house of a seruaunt of hys owne called Banaster / and that in so secret maner, that fewe or none of his housholde seruauntes knewe where he was become.

In the whyche passe tyme/kynge Rycharde thynkynge that the duke wolde haue assembled his people, & so to haue gyuen to hym batayle, gathered to hym great strength/and after toke his iournaye westwarde, to haue mette wyth the sayd duke. But whan the kyng was informed that he was fledde/anone he made proclamacyons, that who that myght take the sayd duke, shulde haue for a rewarde. M.li. of money / and the value of an hundreth pounde in lande by yere to hym and to hys heyres for euer more. wherof herynge the forsayd Banaster, were it for mede of ỹ sayd reward, or for the fere of losyng of hys lyfe and good/dyscouered the duke vnto the sherysse of the shyre/ and caused hym to be taken, and so brought vnto Salysbury, where the kynge than laye.

And

And all be it that that the sayde duke made inportune labour to haue commyn to the kynges presence / yet that natwythstandynge he was behe ded vpon the. daye of the mo= neth of wythout speche or syght of the kynge. Than all suche gentylmen as had apoynted to mete wyth ỹ said duke, were so dysmayde, that they knewe nat what for to do/ but they that myghte fled the lande, and some toke seyntwary places as they myghte wynne vnto theym. But the kyng to the ende to let them of theyr purpose, sente to the see co= stes and stopped theyr waye in that he myght. And he wyth a certeyne strength rode vnto Exceter / where about that season was take syr Tho mas Selenger knyght, and .ii. gen= tylmen that one beyng named Tho= mas Ramme and that other

The whyche .iii. persones were there shortly after beheded

And soone after in Kent were take syr George Browne knyghte, & Ro= bert Clyfforde esquyer/ and brought vnto the towre of London. And vpon the. daye of Octobre, the sayd syr George and Roberte were drawen from westmynster vnto the towre hyll and there beheded.

And the same daye were .iiii. per= sones lately pomen of the crowne wyth kynge Edwarde the .iiii., drawē out of Southwarke thorugh ỹ cytie vnto tyborne, and there hanged. And whan the kynge had sped hys iour= nay in the west coūtre/ he hasted him towarde London. whereof the mayre & the cytezyns haupnge know lege, made prouysyō to receyue him/ and vpon that made purupaunce for horse with violet clothyng and other necessaryes.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lxxxiiii.

Thomas Hylle.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. lxxxv.

Rychard Chester.
Thomas Bretayne.
Raffe Astry.

Anno .iii.

In the begynnyng of thys may res yere and seconde yere of kyng Rychard/ that is to meane vp pon the .ix. daye of the moneth of No uembre, the mayer and hys brethern beyng cladde in scarlet, & the cyte= zyns to the nombre of .v. C. or mo in vyolet / met the kynge beyonde Ke= nyngston in Sutherey/ & so brought hym thorugh the cytye to the warde robe besyde the blacke fryers, where for that tyme he was lodged. And in shorte tyme after was syr Roger Clyf= forde knyght taken aboute South= ampton/ and from thens sente to the towre of Londō, and after arepgned & iuged at westmynster / & frō thens vpon the. daye of drawē vnto the towre hylle. But whan he came fore agayne saynt Martyns le Graūt/ by the helpe of a fryer whyche was hys cōfessour, & one of theym ỹ was next about him, his cordes were so lowsed or cut, that he put hym in deuoyr to haue entred ỹ seyntwary. And lykely it had ben ỹ he shuld haue so done/ had nat ben the quycke helpe & rescous of the sheryffes and theyr offycers.

The whyche constrayned hym to lye downe vppon the hardyll / and newly band hym, and so harped hym to the sayde place of execution, where he was deuyded in two pe= ces / and after hys body wyth the hede was conueyed to the fryeres Augustynes, and there be buryed before saynte Katherynes aulter.

And in the moneth of February folowynge / dyed Rycharde Chester one of the sherykes. For whome was immedyatly chosen Rasse Astry, to contynue for that yere folowynge. Kynge Rycharde than ledynge hys lyfe in great agony and doubte/ trustynge fewe of suche as were aboute hym, spared nat to spende the greate treasour whych before kyng Edward the.iiii. hadde gadered, in guynge of great & large gyftes. By meane wherof he alonly wasted nat ỹ great treasour of his sayd brother, but also he was in suche daunger, that he borowed many notable summes of money of ryche men of thys realme, and specyally of the cytezyns of London/ wherof the leest summe was. xl. li. for suertye wherof he delyuered to them good & sufficyent pledges.

In the whyche passetyme many & sondry gentylmen and diuers sheryf fes, departed ouer the see into Fraūce and there allyed them wyth that ver tuous prynce Henry sonne vnto the erle of Rychemonde, dyscended lyne ally from Henry the.iiii. lately kynge of thys realme / and conuenaunted with hym, that if he wolde mary Elizabeth ỹ eldest doughter of Edwarde the.iiii, they wolde with goddes help strength hym to be kyng of England & ayde hym in suche maner, that he and also she were or myght be possessed of theyr ryghtfull enheryptaunce. Amonge the whyche gentylmen / syr Jamys Blount than keper of the ca stell of Guynys was one/ which with hym conueyed the erle of Orenford, that longe tofore had ben prysoner wythin the sayd castell.

Upon whiche agrement thus con cluded/ prouysion by them and theyr frendes was made, to sayle into Eng lande. And after all thynges prepared/ the sayd prynce wyth a small cōpany of Englysshe, Frenche, & Bry tons, toke shyppynge in Fraunce or Brytayne/ and so landed lastly in the porte of Mylbourne in the moneth of August. For whose defence of landynge kynge Rycharde for so moche as he fered him lytell, made but smal prouision.

Whyle these forsayde gentylmen of dyuers coostes of Englande escaped as is abouesayde ouer the see/ of that affynite was one named Wyllyā Colyngbourne taken. And after he had ben holden a season in prison/ he wyth another gentylmā named Turbyruple were brought vnto Guylde hall, and there arepgned. But ỹ sayd Turbyruple was reprued to prison/ and that other was caste for sondry treasons / & for a ryme, whyche was layde to hys charge that he shulde make in derysyō of the kyng and his counsayll as foloweth.

¶ The catte, the ratte, and louell our dogge.
Ruleth all England vnder a hogge.

The whych was ment that Catysby, Ratclyffe, and the lorde Louell, ruled the land vnder ỹ kyng whych bare the whyte boze for his co nysaunce. For the whyche and other vppon the. day of he was put to ỹ most cruell deth at the towre hyll, where for him were made a new payer of Galowes / vpon the whych after he had hanged a shorte season, he was cutte downe beynge a lyue, and hys bowellys tyred out of hys bely & cast into the fyre there by hym, and lyued tyll the boucher put hys hand into the bulke of his body/ in so moche that the sayd in the same instāt O lord Jesu yet more trouble/ & so dyed to the great compassyon of moche people.

Than to retourne vnto the noble prynce

prynce and hys company, whanne he was commyn vnto the lande/ he incõtynently kneled downe vpon ỹ erth/ & wyth meke countenaunce & pure deuocyon began thys psalme: *Iudica me deus, & decerne causam meam. &c.* The whyche whan he had fynyssched to ỹ ende, and kyssed the groũde mekely, and reuerently made the signe of the crosse vppon hym/ he commaunded suche as were aboute hym, boldly in the name of god & sayncte George to set forewarde.

Whan the landyng of thys prynce was blowen about the lande/ many was the man that drewe vnto hym, aswell suche as were in sondry seyntwarpes as other that were abrode/ so that hys strẽgth encreased shortly. Than the kyng gadered hys power in all haste/ and spedde hym in suche wyse, that vpon the.xxii. daye of August & begynnyng of the thyrde yere of hys reygne/ he mette wyth the said prynce nere vnto a vyllage in Leycestershyre named Bosworth, nere vnto Leycester. where betwene theym was foughten a sharpe batayll/ & sharper shulde haue ben, if the kynges partie had ben fast to hym. But many towarde the felde refusyd hym, & yode vnto that other partye. And some stode houynge a ferre of, tyl they saw to the whyche partye the victory fyll.

In conclusyon kynge Rychard was slayne/ and vppon hys partye ỹ duke of Northfolke before tyme named lorde Hawarde, wyth Brakyng bury Lieutenaunt of the towre, and many other. And amonge other was there taken on lyue the erle of Surrey sonne to the foresayde duke of Northfolke, & sent vnto the towre of London/ where he remayned as prysoner longe tyme after.

Than was the corps of Rychard late king spoyled, & naked as he was borne caste behynde a man/ and so caryed vnreuerently ouerwharte ỹ horse backe vnto the fryers at Leycester. where after a season that he had lyen that all men myght beholde hym he was there wyth lytell reuerence buryed. And thus with misery ended thys prynce/ whych ruled most what by rygour and tyrannye, whan he in great trouble & agony had reygned or vsurped by the space of.ii. yeres.ii. monethes and.ii. dayes.

And than was the noble prynce Henry admytted for kynge, and so proclaymed kyng by the name of Hẽry the.vii. The whych sped hi shortly to London/ so that vpon the.xxviii. daye of the sayd moneth of Auguste, he was by the mayre and the citesyns met in good araye/ as the mayre and aldermen in scarlet, and the cytesyns in vyolet, at harnesey parke/ & frome thens conueyed thorugh the cytye vnto the bysshop of Londõs palays, and there for that tyme lodged.

And vpon the.xi. day of Octobre next folowyng, than beyng the swetynge sykenesse of newe begon/ dyed the sayd Thomas Hylle than of London mayre. And for hym was chosen as mayre syr wyllyam Stokker knyght & Draper, whyche dyed also of the sayd sykenesse shortly after. And than Johñ warde Grocer was chosen mayre/ whyche so contynued tyll the feest of Symonde and Jude folowynge.

Francia.

Charles the.ix.

KArolus or Charles ỹ.ix. or .viii. of ỹ name, sonñ vnto the.xi. Lowys/ begã his reygn ouer ỹ realm of Fraũce the fourth daye of Septẽbre

Septembre in the yere of oure lorde god.M.iiii.C.lxxviii/and the secõde yere of Rychard the thyrd at ỹ tyme kyng of Englande.

Thys Charles was noble of wytte and meke of condycyõ/the which his father wolde nat set to lernyng of letters in hys youth, leste that by suche study he shulde at hys lawfull age haue therby the more refrayned hym from knyghtly and marcyall actes. But whan he came to mannes astate he than was ryghte sory, and wolde saye full often to hys familyers, A prynce is greatly blemysshed, whan he lakketh connynge of lecture. He was also in hys youth so weke & impotẽt, that he lakked natural strẽgth as was accordynge to hys age, in so moche that he myght nat go. And whan he shuld ryde, he had alway on eyther syde of the horse.ii.men to stay hym, and to gyue on hym lyke attendaunce. Than after solempnytie of hys coronacyon ended at the cytye of Raynes, whyche there was solempnised wyth great pompe vpõ ỹ sonday nexte ensuyng the feast of saynt Denys/commissions were sent out into all coostes of hys dompynyon, for to enquere of all superfluous giftes gyuen before tyme by hys father / the whyche shortly after were resumed into the kynges handes. And in that season, Olyuer Damman whome Lowys had in many greate romes & offyces set, and by hys dayes hadde hym in synguler loue and fauoure, in so moche as before I haue shewed in the ende of the story of the sayd Lowys, he made a specyall requeste vnto thys Charles hys sonñ that he shuld specyally cherysshe thys sayd Damman / now was appeched of treason wyth one Danyell a Flemynge. The whyche after inquisycyon of theym made / bothe after the lawe of that lande were iuged to deth / and so put in execucyon of hangynge. whose deth of the nobles and astates of the realme was lytell rupd/consyderyng the rome that he bare by kynge Lowys dayes, and the ignobilitie of his byrth, as an handcrafty mã and barbour. After whose deth a metrycyan compyled these verses folowyng.

Sunt tua criminibus rideꝫtia tẽpora tõsor
Currere, quæ subito fluida parca ve-
Hoc poteras olim sõge prenoscere damma, (tat
Vt saltem horrores tollere cede pios.
Te natura humilem cum mater Flandra tulisset,
Arte vna noras radere Cesariem.
Hunc talem & serum te sæpe Lutetia vidit,
Tutus ab hac poteras ducere sorte dies.
Raptus ad excelsam, Lodowici principis aulam,
Mox herebi fur furias, moribus ante venis,
Et caput huic tendens / dũ suffers lingere ficos,
Pre ducibus regi, regulus alter eras.
Quid tibi non licuit, soboles tam dira Neronis,
Nemo non vixit, te referente reus,
Nemo dei sacra censuram, nemo gerebat,
Gaudia, qui rennit premere dona tibi
Protenus exilium, vel mors vel mulcta negantem
Pressit, eras Judex victor & exicium.
Regnasti, satis est, surgunt noua federa mundo,
Turba cœlestorum, territa luce fugit.
Agnosce o tonsor, quo te scœlus extulit atrox,
Et te præcepitem depulit in laqueos.
Te Daniel, te dira cohors, te menimius odit,
Et scelerum auctorem, dampnatet insequitur.
Nescio quid de te superi vel fata deponunt,
Seu victore cades, seu cruce liber eas.
Vna tamen vulgi constans sententia, furcas
Expedit, vt faciet, te periunte odium
Interea vinctus, culpas absterge gemendo,
Peccasti, morte est nunc redimenda salus.

The whyche metyr or verses to theym that haue none vnderstandyng in latyne, maye be erpou ned in maneras folowety.

The

The laughynge tymes wyth theyr crymes spent,
Thou barboure are ronne / the whyche by sodayne fate
Are nowe forboden. wherof the clere entent
Thou myght haue knowen Damma ryght well the state,
whan thou by meanes whyche were inordynat,
But vnto deth many an innocent man,
By cruell malyce/and well remembred than.

That of lowe byrth Flaundres thy mother the fledde,
And taught the a crafte, the here well to shaue
Lutecia that cytye where thou thy lyfe ledde,
wytnesseth the a seruaunt therin thy lyuynge to craue,
And for thy dayes an honest lyfe to haue/
But whan thou were in Lowys court vp brought,
Than had thou no mynde that thou were come of nought.

But lyke the helle hounde thou waxed full furyous,
Erressynge thy malyce whan thou to honour styed/
Thynkynge for so moche as that prynce bountyuous,
Hys hed and berde to the he nought denyed,
And wyth all worldly pleasure he also the allyed,
The before hys prynces makynge hys gouernour/
Thy selfe thou blyndest, wyth worldly vayne honour.

whyche made the so proude, thou sonne of harde Neron,
That none myght lyue that thou accused of cryme,
No man was cursed nor none had punysshon,
That wolde thy hande wyth golde of gyftes lyme/
And who that nat hys gyfte offred in tyme,
Other deth or exyle to hym was soone applyed/
For as iuge and hangman thou all thynge exercysed.

Thou reygned longe ynough/but nowe are sprongē newe
Sterrys to the worlde/and fled is nowe clerely
The scelerat flokke. wherfore thou barbour yet rewe,
Thyne odyous actes whyche haue the sodaynly,
Cast downe from welth in snares bytterly.
For also Daniell thy moste odyous fere
Dampneth the of cryme whyche wyth the dyeth here.

I knowe nat what of the the vpper bodyes aboue
Haue defyned, whether by sworde or by gybet
Thou shuld ende the lyfe. But one thynge I approne,
The sentence hooly of the people is sette,
That on a galowe thou shuld paye deth hys dette.
Inwardly therfore bewayll so thyne offence,
That by thys deth, to god thou mayste make recompence.

Thys

THus execucyon of thys Damman & hys felowe ended and fynyſhed, to the lytell compaſſion of the people / wythin fewe dayes after another of the affectionat ſeruaũtes of kyng Lowys named Johñ Dopacon, for treſpaſſe and hatered by hys occaſyon and deſerte vnto the common people, was wyth all ſhame brought vnto ỹ market place of Paris, & there beraft of bothe hys erys. After whych vylony to hym done, he was there ryght banyſſhed the court for euer.

And thus two of the moſte ſpecial and dereſt beloued ſeruauntes and counſaylours of kyng Lowys, were ſhortly after hys deth brought vnto confuſyon. By reaſon wherof as affermeth myne auctoure Gagupne, aroſe a prouerbe among the Frenche men/ſayeng, *Principibus obſequi hæreditariũ non eſſe.* The whyche is to meane, the ſeruyce of princes is nat hereditable. Thys tyme thus paſſed wyth many other matyers, whych I ouer paſſe / the ſeaſon approched that variaunce and enuy began to moue amõg ſome nobles of the lãde/in ſo moche that ỹ duke of Orleaunce diſdayned, that Anne ſyſter to the kynge wyth ſuche as ſhe wolde call to counſayll, hadde all the rule about the kyng. wherfore he entendyng to haue the ſayde rule, for ſo moche as he had maryed that other doughter of Lowys / gadered vnto hym ſtrength of knyghtes, purpoſely to remoue from the kyng ſuch as he lyked/ and to ſette aboute hym ſuche perſones as he thought conuenyente.

But how it was for lacke of wyſe orderynge of hys people or other neglygence/at a place called ſaint Albynys he was taken of hys aduerſaryes/ & ſo by the kyng commaunded to pryſon to the caſtel of Byturicẽce, where he remayned lõge tyme after.

It was nat longe after, that Maxymylyan the whych had maryed duke Charles doughter of Burgoyne, gathered hys ſoudyours to haue releued the forſayd duke of Orleaunce out of pryſon / but he preuayled nat. Durynge whyche warre, Fraunceys duke of Bryttayn dyed/whoſe doughter named Anne & enheryteur of that duchye, Maxymylyan hadde before trouth plyted for hys lawfull wyfe. wherfore he herynge of the deth of ỹ ſayd Fraunceys / ſhortely entred the terrytory of Bryttayne, and ſeaſed it for hys. But Charles with his frẽch men wythſtode hym, by ſuche force ỹ he was conſtrayned to axe helpe of our ſoueraygne lord kynge Henry ỹ vii. The whyche in moſte bounteous maner ayded & aſſyſted hym bothe wyth men and money/to the kynges exceedyng great charge and coſte. Howbe in the ende the French kyng had his entent/& than maryed ỹ ſaid Anne ducheſſe of Bryttayne, and refuſed Margarete ỹ doughter of Maxymylyan, whyche he before had maryed at Ambaſy/as before Jhaue ſhewed to you in the ende of the ſtory of hys father Lowys. After whych victory thus opteyned by thys Charles in Bryttayn/he made clayme and pretence vnto the lande of Scicilia or Scicilie. And by the exortacion and ſtyrynge of the pope Alexãder the. vi. he wyth a ſtrong hoſte entred ỹ ſame bothe by lande and by water. To whome was a great ayde the duke of Mylayne/by whoſe meanes he ſhortly wan a ſtrõge citie or towne named Campania and diuers other townes and in proceſſe Naples the chyef citie that belonged vnto the kyng of Naples. In ſo moche that he conſtrayned Alphounce that than was kynge of Naples and of Scicile to forſake that countre/and ſo had the dominiõ of the more parte of bothe the ſayde countrees.

countrees. The whyche when he had set in suche order as he thoughte conuenyent/he toke hys iournaye home warde into Fraūce thorough Italy. In whyche passage thys Charlys was beset of the Venecyans & other Italyans, the whyche entendyd to haue stoppyd hys waye/and metyng wyth hym at a place called in latyne Fornouences, gaue vnto hym batayle. wherof as sayth myne authour he wan the victory to hys greate honour, consyderynge his fewe sowdyours agayne theyr multytude and strength.

But to thys sayenge repugne the Italyans dwellyng in London/and say that yf the sayd Charlys had not spedde hym fastly into Fraunce, he had not comen there that yere. But how so it was he retourned home in sauete.

And soone after pope Alexāder fore sayd toke such displeasure agayne ỳ sayd Charlys, that he styred almost all crysten prynces of the worlde agayne hym/he hadde such hatred to the great honoure of ỳ frēche kynge as sayth myne authour Gagwyne, ỳ whyche in all hys werkes extolleth the dedes of Frenchemen forther thā maye be verifyed in moch of his wrytynge. But what so he wryte of the pope/it is to be demyd that he wolde not take so great partye agayne this Charlys, and erite other prynces to do the same, excepte it hadde ben for great and vrgēt causes / and not for malyce as he affermeth onely.

And thus the sayde Gagwyne endeth the story of the sayd Charlys, in the yere of our lorde god. M. iiii. C. xcv/and the. xi. yere of the reygne of the same Charlys thanne presently reygnynge and guydyng the realme of Fraunce/ whyche was the. x. yere of our moste redoutyd pryncē kynge Henry the. vii.

Henry the seuenth.



Enry the. vii. of ỳ name sonne vnto the erle of Richemoūt, began his domynyon ouer the realme of Englande, the. xvii. daye of Auguste, in ỳ yere of our lorde god. M. iiii. C. lxxxv/and the secōde yere of the. viii. Charlys then kynge of Fraūce. And the. xxx. daye of October folowynge with great solempnyte ỳ sayd Henry was crowned at westmynster.

And here accordynge to my fyrste sayenge in the begynnynge of thys rude worke, I make an ende of the vii. parte and hole worke, the. vii. day of Nouember in the yere of our lord Jesu Crystes incarnacyon. M. v. C. and. iiii/and the. xx. yere of our moste crysten and drad soueraygne lorde kynge Henry after the conquest of ỳ name the. vii. For whyche expedycyō and good exployt that I haue hadde in the accomplysshyng of thys work, wherin is included to rekyn from the landynge of Brute in thys ile of Albyon, vnto the fyrste yere or begynnyng of the reygne of our moste drad sayd souerayne lord, ii. M. vi. C. and xx. yeres: I here agayne salute and gyue thankes vnto that moste excellent vyrgyn our lady sayntt Mary with the last and. vii. ioye of the fore sayd. vii. ioyes, begynnynge,

Gaude virgo mater pura &c.

Be ioyfull and glad virgyn and moder pure/
For ferme and stedfast thy ioye shall abyde
And these. vii. ioyes shall euermore endure,
And neuer hereafter minysshe by tyme nor by tyde
But euer shall encrease flory sshe and abyde,
By worldes all, euer in one to laste
Tyme to come, tyme preset, & tyme that is past.

And thus than endyth thys seuenth part, the which from the fyrst yere of wyllyam Conquerour to ỹ laste yere of Rychard the thyrde includeth. iiii.C.xvii.yeres.

Lenuoy.

Limas adest, præcessit opus, ne liuidus assis,
Lector habent mendas, denia presa suas
Quodvis ingenium, quadam vel parte redundat
Vel rudũ, vel mancũ est, vel graue vel stridũ
Concio crebra tibi, culpatur furta Maronis,
Est Cicero clumbis, pes tibi naso celer.
Non satis historiæ, Crispi præfatio quadrat,
Nil adeo cultum, liuor iniquus habet.
Non minus hoc poterit tantillum capere morsor,
Læserit illustres cum fera lingua viros.
Sed quid agas residem, taxabit inertia mutum
Scriptorem risor, extenuabit inners.
Audendum tamen est, spernendi mille latratus
Occidet a busto murmur & inuidia.

The whyche verses to them that ben vnlettered may be Englyshed in maner and fourme as foloweth.

An ende of thys boke, or of thys rude warke
Here is now fyned, wherof the sence precedyth.
Thou that shall it rede, be thou laye or clerke,
Be not enuyous/consyder how it ledyth
The regne of pryuces. And where as mendement nedyth,
If thou experte be, the fawtes therof amende/
And hym ascrybe no sclaunder, that dyd but well entende.

Consyder euery scyence, in parte that it is suche,
To rude or to curyous, to breef or to longe.
Some blamyn Liuius for that he wrote so moche/
Some other Vyrgyle/and Cicero amonge
For he was to scarse. Salust that dytyes songe
So excelently, yet is he not vnblamed/
So that to all men nothynge is duely framed.

Than syn the olde wryters whyche were so excellent,
Myghte not all men please wyth theyr famous wrytynge/
No maruayll though I whyche neuer connynge hent,
Myghte order thys mater to euery mannys lykynge/
And specyally to suche as haue theyr delyghtynge,
Euer wyth dysclaunder moste wryters to lacke,
And barke whyle they maye to sette good wryters a backe.

But though that ignorraunce and derysyon ben mette,
And reproue the maker in all that they can/
why shulde any good worke for theyr malyce be lette.
For though they grudge & scorne/yet euery wyse good man,
wyll take the entent and prayse the maker than/
And hym allow for hys laborous dede/
And requyre of god that he maye haue hys mede.

Anno domini. M. iiii. C. lxxxb. Anno domini. M. iiii. C. lxxxbi.

Johñ Tate.

Hugh Bryce Goldsmyth. Anno. i.

Johñ Swan.

In thys

IN thys yere a prest was made to the kynge of.ii.M.li/ of the whyche the mercers, grocers, & drapers lent.ix.C.xxxvii.li.and.vi.s.

The coronacyō was holden at westmynster the.xxx.day of October.And this yere whete was at.iii.s. ꝑ busshell, & baye salt at the same prycc.

Anno domini.M.iiii.C.lxxxvi. Anno domini.M.iiii.C.lxxxvii.

Johñ Percyuall.

Syr Henry Colet Anno.ii.

Hugh Clopton.

IN this yere the kynge maryed kyng Edwardes eldest doughter named Elizabeth.This yere was slayn at Stookfelde the erle of Lyncolne.And in the moneth of Septēber was borne prynce Arthur.

Anno domini.M.iiii.C.lxxxvii Anno domini.M.iiii.C.lxxxviii.

Johñ Fenkyll.

wyllyam Horne. Anno.iii.

wyllyam Rempngton.

THys yere was the quene crowned at westmynster vpon saynt Katheryns daye.And this yere was a prest of.iiii.M.li/wherof mercers, grocers & Drapers lent.xvi.C. & xvi.li.And thys yere was an other prest of two thousād . And thys yere Johñ Ashley wyth other two were putte in execucyon at the Towre hylle.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.lxxxviii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxxix.

wyllyam Isaak.

Robert Tate Mercer. Anno.iiii.

Rafe Tynley.

IN thys yere the comons of the North slewe the erle of Northumberlande / and Chamberlayne theyr cappytayne wyth dyuers other were after at yorke hanged. Thys yere was the talke of the tenth peny of mennes landes and goodes. This yere was the felde of Dykysmew in Flaunders foughten by the lorde Dawbeney.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.lxxxix. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xc.

wyllyam Capell.

wyllyam whyte Anno.v.

Johñ Brook.

IN this yere one named Roger Shaueloke slew hym selfe.For whose goodes was besynesse bytwen the kynges amner and the sheryffe. But the amner optayned.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xc. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xci.

Henry Coot.

Johñ Mathew Mercer. Robert Reuell. Anno.vi.

Hugh Pemberton.

IN this yere dyed Robert Reuel thyrfke/ & in his stede was chosen Hugh Pēberton. And in March syr Robert chāberlayne knyght was behedyd. And thys yere was a great benyuolence graunted vnto ỹ kynge for his iournay into Fraūce / where vnto the felysshyp of the Drapers graunted more than any other felysshyp of the cytye/and euery aldermā of London that tyme beynge, payed *volente & nolente* two hundreth pound. Ouer whyche somme the comoners somme extēdyd to .ix.M.vi.C. lxxxii. li.xvii.s.iiii.d. And this yere was a bussyell of whete at .xxii.d.

Anno domini.M.iiii.C.xci. Anno domini.M.iiii.C.xcii.

Thomas wood

Hugh Clopton Mercer. Anno.vii.

wyllyam Browne.

IN thys yere a yoman of the crowne named was put to deth at Tybourne for treason. And in thys yere was the cytye of Garnad gottē by ỹ kyng of Spayn. And i this yere was syr Jamys Parker knyght slayne in iustynge at Rychemont, with a gentyman named Hugh Vaghan. Also in the moneth of September the kynge toke hys vyage towarde Fraunce.

Anno domini.M.iiii.C.xcii Anno domini.M.iiii.C.xciii.

wyllyam purchase.

wyllyam Martyn Skynner. Anno.viii.

wyllyam welbek.

IN thys yere vpon the.ix.daye of Nouember, was red a letter in the Guyldhall, ỹ shewed of a peas cōcluded bytwen the kynges of England & of Fraūce. And the.xvii. day of December folowynge, the kynge landed at Douer. And the saterdaye before Cristmas he came to westmyn ster. Uppon the.xvii. daye of Maye were.iiii.men put to deth at Tyborn for treason. And thys yere in the moneth of October and ende of thys mayres yere, was the fray made vpon the Estrelynges by the comons of the cytye, and specyally mercers seruauntes.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.xciii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xciiii.

Robert Fabyan.

Rafe Astry Fysshemonger. Anno.ix.

Johñ wyngar.

IN this yere in ỹ beginnyng, an enquery was made for ỹ ryot forenamed/for the which many yong men were punysshed by long imprysonment. Also vpō the.xxii.day of February, were regnyd at ỹ Guyldhall iiii.persons named Thomas Bagnall, Johñ Scotte, Johñ Heth, and Johñ Kenyngton/which were taken out of saynte Martyns seyntwary. wherof.iii. were put to deth at Tyborne/& Thomas Bagnall was had vnto the towre of London. And the xxvi.day of the sayd moneth, with ỹ forsayd.iii.persons was put in execyon willyā Bulkley a yoman of the kynges chāber, and a duche man. Thys yere whete was at.vi.d.a bussyell, and bay salt at. iii.d. ob. And thys yere doctor Hylle bysshop of Lō don pursued greuously Persy than prycur of Crystes chyrch in Londō.

And

And in thys yere was the royall feste kept in westmynster halle by ỹ kyng. This yere in the ende of Apryll was brent in Smithfelde an olde woman for heresye, whych was called moder to the lady ponge. And thys yere the xv. day of August were reyned at the Guyldhalle one named Johñ Norfolk, & an other named Johñ white/ & cõuict for baudry & set vpõ ỹ pillory.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.xciiii. Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.xcv.

Nycholas Alwyn.

Rycharde Chawry Salter. Anno.x.

Johñ warner.

THis yere the daye that ỹ mayre toke hys charge, in ỹ afternone came thorugh the cytye Henry duke of yorke a chylde about .iiii. yeres of age towarde westmynster rydynge vppon a courser, with many goodly gentylmen to conuey hym. And vpon the .ix. daye of Nouember folowyng, was holden a goodly iustyse within the paleys of westmynster. wherof were chalengeours syr wyllyã de la Pool then duke of Suffolk, therle of Esser, syr Robert Curson, & Johñ Pechy esquyre. Also this yere about Cristmas, sir Robert Clifford whych before was fled the land/ came agayne & appechyd syr wyllyã Stanley than chamberlayne to the kynge of treason. which syr wyllyam vpon the .xvi. day of Februarye folowynge, for the sayd treason was beheedyd at the Tower hylle. And ỹ same season was adiudged to deth at the Guyldhall the deane of Poulys a famous doctour & precher, the prouyncyall of the blak freres, and ỹ pryour of Langley, the person of saynt Stephyns in walbroke named doctour Sutton, syr Thomas Thwatys knyght, Robert Ratclyffe, wyllyam Dawbeney, willyã Cressener esquire with syr Symond Mouñford knight, & mo other/ wherof ỹ more part was pardoned. And this yere was whyte herynge at .xl. ð. a barel. And this yere began the fyrst trouble of syr wyllyã Capell alderman. And in July Perkyn with his rebelles ariued in Kent which named hym selfe Rychard seconde sonne of Edward the .iiii. And in ỹ same moneth was doctour Dyar perforce borne out of Poulys, & so ladde to Lãbehyth for varyaunce that than was bytwene the bysshoppes of Caũterbury and Londõ. And soone after was hanged in sundry costes of Englande an .C. and odde persons of the forenamed rebellys. And thys yere was a perlyamente holden at westmnynster. Also in the moneth of October was an excedynge thunder.

Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.xcv. Anno dñi. M.iiii.C.xcvi.

Thomas Kneyfworth.

Syr Henry Colette Mercer. Anno.xi.

Henry Somyr.

IN thys yere in the .xvi. daye of Nouẽber, was holden the sergeaũtes feste within the bysshop of Elyes place. This yere was the body of Rychard Hakendyes wyfe takyn vp in saynt Mary hyll chyrche hole, ỹ had lyen in the groũd ouer .C. & .xx. yeres. And thys yere was great bysynesse for the entercourse bytwene England and Flaunders. And this yere the kynge of Scottes made sharp warre vppon the marches. And this yere many lollers stode wyth fagottes at Poulys crosse.

Anno domini.M.iiii.C.xcvi. Anno domini.M.iiii.C.xcvii.

Johñ Shaa.

Johñ Tate Mercer. Anno.xii.

Rychard Haddon.

THe latter ende of October, by great coũsayll holden at west mynster/was graunted to the kynge for the defence of the Scottes. C. xx. M. li. The.xviii.daye of Nouember was Poulys chyrch suspendyd by a fraye of two ponge men. And in the same moneth was graũted to ỹ kyng a pryest of the cytye of.iiii.M. li. And the same moneth at Calys was behe dyd the lord Fitzwater. The.xvi.day of January a parlyament beganne/ wherby was graunted two dymes & a halfe, two aydes and two fyftenys, to leup the forsayd.C.xx.M.li. And in the moneth of Juny and.xvii. day were the Cornyshmen dyscõfyted at Blakheth. And vpon the.xxviii.daye of Juny, the Smyth & a gentylman named Flãmok two cappytaynes of ỹ sayd rebelles, were put in execucyon at Tybourne. And shortely after the lorde Audeley, which was hed cappytayne of the sayd rebelles, was put to deth at ỹ Towre hylle. And this yere was concluded a marpage bytwene my lorde prynce & the kynges dought ter of Spayne. Thys yere also the kynge sent into Scotland an army, vnder ỹ guydyng of the erle of Surrey and the lord Neuyle/ the whyche made sharpe warre vpon ỹ Scottes. And i ỹ moneth of October Perkyn landed in Cornwayle, and assayled the towne of Exceter & other townes But fynally he toke the seyntwary of Beawdely/and after was pardoned of hys lyfe.

Blakheth ferde.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xcvii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xcviii.

Bartholomewe Rede.

wyllyam Purchace Mercer. Anno.xiii.

Thomas wyndowght.

IN this yere vpõ the.xxviii.day of Nouẽber, the sayd Parkyn was brought thorugh the cyty vnto the Towre, & there left as prysoner. And with hym a tall pomã somtyme sergeaũt ferrour to the kyng/ whych ferrour & one named Edwarde, were shortely after put to deth at tibourn. Upon saynte Nycholas daye was a proclamacyõ made thorugh ỹ cytye, of a peas bytwene the realmes of England & Scotland for terme of both kynges lyues. And in December a carpenter called Godfrey ,toke downe the wedercok of Poulys stypple & set it vp agayne. And this yere in Crystmas weke was a part of the kinges palayes of Rychemoũt brent And this yere vppon the. ix .daye of Juny, the forenamed Parkin beyng at large in the kynges court, went secretely awaye/and lastly went to the fader of Syon. And after the second pardon to hym by the kynge graunted, he was shewed at westmynster & in Cheppys syde, with moch wonderment/and fynally had to the Towre and there keped.

Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xcviii. Anno dñi.M.iiii.C.xcix.

Thomas Bradbery.

Syr Johñ Percyuale. Anno.xiiii.

Stephyn Jenyns.

In thys

IN thys yere vpō the .xxx. daye of Octobre, came my lord prīce through ỹ cytye wyth an honorabell cōpany toward westmynster. And vpon shrone tuysdaye was put in execucīō at saynt Thomas watrynge, a strepelyng of .xx. yeres of age/whych had auaūced hym selfe to be the sonn or heyre to the erle of warwykes landes, & was the sonne of a cordyner of Londō. And thys yere mayster Johñ Tate alderma begā ỹ new edefynge of saynt Anthonies church. And this yere vpō the .xvi. day of July beynge sonday/& vpō the sonday folowyng, stode .xii. heretykes at Poules crosse shrynes wyth fagottes.

Anno dñi. M. iiii. C. xcix. Anno dñi. M. v. C.

Jamys wylforde.

Nycholas Alwyn. Anno .xv.

Rychard Bryond.

IN this yere the .xvi. day of Nouēber, was areyned in ỹ whyte halle at westmynster the forenamed Parkyn & .iii. other. The whych Parkyn and one Johñ Awatyr were put shortly after in execucīō at Tyborne. And soone after was the erle of warwyke put to deth at the towre hylle/& one Blewet & Astwood at Tyborne. And thys yere in May the kyng & the quene sayled to Calays. And thys yere was Babrā in Northfolke brēt. And in July was an olde heretyke brēt in Smythfelde. And thys yere was a great deth in Londō/wherēof dyed ouer .xx. M. of all ages. And this yere dyed doctour Morto cardynall and chaunceler of Englande in the moneth of October.

Anno. dñi. M. v. C. Anno dñi. M. v. C. i.

Johñ Hawys.

wyllyam Rempngton. Anno .xvi.

wyllyam Stede.

IN this yere the .xxi. daye of Decēber, in the nyght was an hydyous thūder. And this yere was the name of the kyngs palays of Shene chaūged, & called after ỹ day Rychemoūt. And this yere in August departed secretly out of this lāde, the duke of Suffolke. And the .iiii. daye of October lāded at Plymmowth Katerynn doughter of ỹ kyng of Spayn. And thys yere was kynysshed by mayster Tate the church of saynt Anthony.

Anno domini. M. v. C. i. Anno domini. M. v. C. ii.

Syr Laurence Aylemer.

Syr Johñ Shaa Anno .xvii.

Henry Hede.

IN this yere began the mayre & hys brethern to ryde to the barge & other places. Upō sait Erkēwaldes day, was my lord prince maryed to the kyng of Spaynes doughter. And this season the duke of Buckyngham wyth other was chiefe chalēgeour, at a royall iustyce & turney holdē in the palays of westmynster. And thys yere came a greate ambassade out of Scotlād/by reason wherof cōclusion of maryage was made betwene the king of Scottes & dame Margarete eldest doughter to our soueraygne lord. Also thys yere was an excedyng great fysshe taken nere

vnto Quynbourgh. And in Marche syr wyllyam of Deuynshyre, syr Jamys Tyrell, & his eldest son, & one named welborne, were arested for treason. And in Aprill iolowyng dyed ỹ noble prynce Arthur in the towne of Ludlow. And vpō ỹ last day of Aprill were set vpō ỹ pyllory.ii.yōgmen, for defamyng of ỹ kynges coūsayll/ and there erys cut of. Also aboute thys tyme ỹ gray freers were cōpelled to take theyr old habit russet, as ỹ shepe doth dye it. And the.vi. day of Maye Jamys Tyrell & syr Johñ wyndhm knyght, were beheded at ỹ towre hyl And a shyppmā for the same treason was the same day drawē to tyborne & there hāged & quartered. And soone after a purseuaūt named Curson, & a yoman called Mathew Jonys, were put in execuciō at Guynys/ & all was for aydyng of syr Edmōd De la pool. Also thys yere about mydsomer was takē a felowe whych hadde renewed many of Robi hodes pagētes/ which named him selfe Gyseneleef. And this yere begā the new werke of ỹ houses offyce wythin the Guyldhall of London. And in the ende of October, was proclaymed a peas betwene the king & the archeduke of Burgoyne. And ỹ sonday before saint Symōd & Jude was shewed a bull/ by vertue wherof were denoūced at Poules crosse as accursed, syr Edmōd de la pool late duke of Suffolke syr Roberte Curson knyght, & .v. other persones. And all such as ayded any of thē agaī ỹ kyng.

Anno domini.M.v.C.ii. Anno domini.M.v.C.iii.

Goldsmyth. Henry Kebyll.

Bartholmew Rede. Anno.xviii.

Nycholas Aynys.

IN this yere begā the new werk of the kynges chapell at westmynster. And vpō the.xi. daye of February, dyed quene Elizabeth within the towre lieng in chyldbed. And vpō the fyrst sonday of lēt, was solemply accursed at Poules crosse wyth bel & candell, syr Edmōd de la pool, syr Robert Curson & other, & all ỹ thē ayded agayn the kyng. And in thēde of the moneth of marche, was ỹ pryour of ỹ Charterhous at Shene sinfully murdered wyth an other mūk of the same house, by synyster meanes of a munk of the same place named Goodwyne & other mischeuous psones. And this yere the felisshyp of taylliours of Lōdon purchased a graūt of the king to be called marchaūt taylliours. And ỹ viii. day of August, was the kynge of Scottes maried vnto ỹ eldest doughter of ỹ kyng. Also in July were areyned at the Guyldhall Olyuer sayntе Johñ, Robert Simpson, wellysborn before named, Pool bayly of Thorok & .iiii. other all beyng cast for treason, whereof the sayde Olyuer and Pool wyth twoo shyppemen were putte in execucion at Tyborne, and the other were pardoned.

Anno dñi.M.v.C.iii. Anno dñi.M.v.C.iiii.

Draper. Chrystoffer Hawys.

Syr wyllyam Capell. Robert wattes. Anno.xix.

Thomas Granger.

IN thys yere the.xiii. day of Nouēber, in the palays of ỹ archebysshop of Caūterbury at Lābehyth was holdē the sergeaūtes feest. And the.xxi. day of Nouēber in the begynnyng of ỹ nyght, was a dredeful fyre vpō the north ende of Londō brydge. And vppō the.vii. daye of January were

were certeyne houses cõsumed wyth fyre agayn saynt Botulphis churche in Thamys strete. Upõ the.xxv. daye of January, begã a parliamẽt at west mynster. And ỹ.xxvii. day of March, was an house brẽt agayn saynt Martyns le graũt. And the same day was hurt done wyth fyre in the paryshe of saynt Peters the poore. And in the forenamed parlyamẽt was ordeyned a new coyne of syluer, as grotes, half grotes, & shyllynges with half faces. And in the forsayde parlyamẽte was graunted to the kynge an ayde of xxvi. thousand. li. And a correccyon was dyuysed for clipped grotes.

Anno domini. M. v. C. iiii.

Grocer.

Johñ wyngar.

Roger Achylley.

Anno domini. M. v. C. v.

Anno. xx.

wyllyam Browne.

In thys yere the cytezyns of Lõdon graũted to the kyng. v. M marke for confermacio of theyr lyber tyes. wherof a. M. marke was payde in hãde, & .iiii. M. mark in. iiii. yeres next ensuyng. Upõ sat Georges day ỹ kyng went in procession in Poules church/ where was shewed a legge of saynt George closed in syluer, whych was newly sent to the kyng. And vpõ the. xxv. day of Apryll, was a money maker one of the coyners of the towre drawẽ to tyborne, & there hanged. And in ỹ later ende of thys yere, came the thyrde cappe of maynteynaunce from the pope.

Anno domini. M. v. C. v.

Fyshemonger.

Thomas Kneyswoorth

Anno domini. M. v. C. vi.

Rychard Shore.

Anno. xxi.

Roger Grove.

Thys yere vppõ. xii. euyn, the kinges chãber at Rychemoũt was brẽt. And vpõ the euyn of saynt Maury begã an hidious wid/ which endured vppõ. xi. dayes folowynge more or lasse, in cõtynuall blowyng/ by meane whereof the wedercok of Poules was blowẽ downe, & moche other harme done. And by force of thys tempest the archeduke of Burgoyne was dryuẽ to lãde in the west coũtre. And vpõ the second sonday of lẽt stood at Poules crosse the pryour of saynt Olyes & .v. other heretykes. And in ỹ ende of ỹ moneth of March syr Edmõd de la pool was conueyed through the citie vnto the towre, and there left as prysoner. And in Maye moneth was the lord of Burgeueny cõmytteth to the towre, for a certayn displeasure whych cõcerned no treason. Thys yere a new bylded galerey fyll in the nyght at Rychemoũt. And thys yere in the ende of July was a gracyous myracle shewed by oure Lady image of Barkyng, by a mayden chylde that a carte laden wyth stone yode ouer.

Anno domini. M. v. C. vi.

mercer.

Syr Rychard Haddon.

Anno domini. M. v. C. vii.

wyllyam Coppynger.

Thomas Johñson.

wyllyam Fyts wyllyam.

Anno. xxii.

In thys yere aboute Crystmas was the bakers house in warwyke lane brẽt. And thys yere was a wonderfull easy & softe wynter, without stormys or frostes. And this yere the kyng of hys goodnesse delyuered

oute

out of all prysons in Lõdõ, as many prysoners as laye for .xl. s. & vnder. And this yere was Thomas Kneyswoorth late mayer & hys .ii. shyreffes condẽpned to the kyng in great sommes of money/ouer paynfull prysonement by theym in the marshalsy susteyned.

Anno domini. M. v. C. vii. mercer.
wyllyam Browne.

Anno domini. M. v. C. viii.
wyllyam Butler.

Anno. xxiii.
Johñ Kyrkby.

THys yere in the ende of Aprill, dyed the sayd wyllyam Browne / and for hym was immedyatly chosen syr Laurence Aylemer, for the residue of that yere/

Anno supradicto. Draper.
Syr Laurence Aylemer.

Anno supradicto.
wyllyam Butler.

Amo predicto.
Johñ Kyrkby.

IN thys yere vpon the last daye of Juny, was an house in Southwarke nere vnto the brydge consumed wyth fyre. And thys yere was syr wyllyam Capell agayne put in veracyon, by sute of the kynge, for thynges done by hym in the tyme of hys mayralte.

Anno. dñi. M. v. C. viii. Taylour.
Stephyn Jenyns.

Anno dñi. M. v. C. ix. Thomas Ermew.

Anno. xxiiii.
Rychard Smyth.

IN the begynnyng of the mayres tyme, syr wyllyam Capell after his prysonement in the cõtour & shyreffes house, was by the kynges counsayll commaũded to the towre/ where he remayned tyll the kynge dyed / & shortly after was delyuered wyth many other. And in lykewyse was syr Laurẽce Aylemer dalt with/ & cõmytted to the warde or house of Rychard Smyth shyrfe / & there remayned as prisoner by ỹspace aboue sayd. Thys yere vppõ the saterdaye next before saynt Georges day in the nyght, whych saterdaye was the .xxi. daye of Aprill, dyed the kynge oure soueraygne lorde at hys manour of Rychemount/ vpon whose soule and all chrysten Jesu haue mercy. Amen.

And so thys forsayd noble prince reygned .xxiii. yeres and .vii. monethes, and one daye therof lakkynge,

THys magnyfycent & excellent prynce Hẽry the .vii. thus payed to deth his dette of nature as before is sayd. Of whome suffycient laude & prayse cannat be put in wrytyng, cõsyderyng ỹ cõtynuall peace & trãquylete whyche he kept thys his lande & comons in / wyth also the subduynge of hys outwarde enymyes, of the realmes of Fraunce & Scotland by hys greate polycy & wysedome, more thã by shedyng of cristẽ bloode or cruell warre. And euer ruled so myghtly hys subgectes & mynystred to them suche iustyce, ỹ nat allonely they loued and drad hym/ but all crysten prynces heryng of hys gloryous fame, were desyrous to haue wyth hym amyte & allyaunce

allyaunce. And for that he in all tẽporall polycies & prouisions exceded all prynces by hys tyme reygnynge/ diuers popes, as Alexander the syxte, Pius the.iii, & Julius the.ii. nowe beynge pope, by theyr tymes eyther of thẽ sunderly wyth auctoryte & cõsent of theyr spyrytuall & deuyne coũsayll, elected & chase thys excellente prynce, and admytted hym for chyefe defensour of Chrystes church, before all other crysten prynces. And for a confermaciõ of the same / sente vnto thys inuyncibyll prince by.iii. sundry famous ambassades, thre swerdes with.iii. cappes of mayntenaunce. what myght I wryte of the stedfaste contynẽcy, great iustyce, & mercyfull dealyng of thys prynce. what myght I report of hys excellẽte wysedome & moste sugred eloquence, or of hys inmouable pacience & wonderfull dyscressyon. Or what shuld I tell of his most beautyfull byldynges, or excedyng charges of manifest reperaciõs and ouer all thys of hys excedynge treasoure & ryches innumerabyll. But as who wolde saye, to consider in order all his notabyll actes, which wolde aske a lõge tract of tyme, with also the lyberall & somptuous endowemẽt of the monastery of westmynster & other, to wryte/ I myghte conclude ỹ hys actes passed all the noble actes of hys noble ꝓgenytours syne the conquest/ and may moste cõgruly aboue all erthly prynces, be lykened vnto Salamõ kyng of ỹ Israelytes and be called the seconde Salomon for hys great sapience & actes by hym done hys lyuys tyme executed. All whyche premysses tenderly considered, euery naturall Englysshmã now lyuyng, hath cause & ought deuoutly to pray for the soule of this moste excellent prynce Henry the.vii, that he maye atteyne that celestyall mansiõ, whych he and all trew crysten soules are enheritours vnto/ the which god hym graunt. Amen.

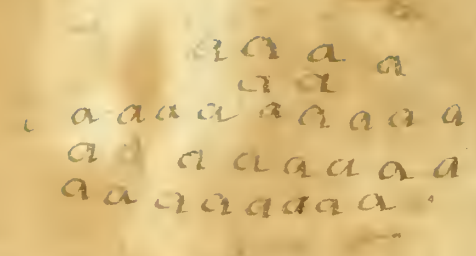
And the rather because of the excellẽt vertuous bryngyng and leuynge vnto vs by goddes ayde and prouysyon, of our moste gracyous and moste drad soueraygne lord Henry ỹ viii. of that name, as ryghtfull enherytour vnto the.ii. crownes of Englande and of Fraunce. The whyche began hys moste gracyous reygne ỹ xxu. day of Apryll, in the yere of oure lord god. M. v. C. and. ix.



Henry the.viii. of that name and second sonne of the forenamed excellente prynce Henry the seuith began his moste gracyous reygn ouer the realme of Englande the.xxii daye of Apryll, in the yere of our lord god M. v. C. and. ix. To whome by all honour, reuerẽce, & ioyfull contynaũce of prosperous reygn, to the pleasure of god & weale of thys hys realme. Amen.

Thus endeth Fabyans cronycle. Prynted by. w. Rastell, & fynysshed the laste daye of December, in the yere of our lorde. M. v. C. and. xxxiii.

CVM PRIVILEGIO.



BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY

